THE

HOLY BIBLE

ACCORDING TO THE AUTHORIZED VERSION (A.D. 1611)

WITH AN EXPLANATORY AND CRITICAL

Commentary

AND

A Revision of the Translation

BY BISHOPS AND OTHER CLERGY

OF THE ANGLICAN CHURCH

EDITED

By F. C. COOK, M.A., Canon of Exeter

Late Preacher at Lincoln’s Inn, Chaplain in Ordinary to the Queen

NEW TESTAMENT

Vol. III.

ROMANS TO PHILEMON

NEW YORK

CHARLES SCRIBNER’S SONS

743 AND 745 BROADWAY

1881
CONTENTS OF VOL. III.

ROMANS.

INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE REV. E. H. GIFFORD, D.D., RECTOR OF MUCH HADHAM, EXAMINING CHAPLAIN TO THE BISHOP OF LONDON.

pp. 1-238.

§ 1. Authorship ........................................ 1

§ 2. Time and Place of Writing .......... 1

I. Notes of Time and Place in xv, xvi. .......... 2

II. Indications of Time in Rom. i. 10-13 .......... 2

§ 3. Language ......................................... 3

§ 4. Jews in Rome ..................................... 3

§ 5. Christians in Rome ......................... 4

§ 6. Occasion of Writing .......................... 8

§ 7. The Purpose of the Epistle .............. 9

Additional Notes:
On chap. i. 1, 4, 8, 12, 13, 15, 17, 20, 23, 24, 32 ..... 68
On chap. ii. 8, 16 ................................ 81
On chap. iii. 9, 25 ................................ 96
On chap. iv. 1, 2, 25 ................................ 108
On chap. v. 1, 6, 7, 8, 11, 12 ....................... 122
On chap. vi. 5, 6, 13, 17, 21 ....................... 133
On chap. vii. 1, 5, 6, 21, 25 ....................... 144

§ 8. Integrity of the Epistle .................. 20

I. Testimony of the early Fathers .................. 20

II. Testimony of existing Manuscripts .......... 22

III. Internal Evidence ............................ 25

(a) The Doxology .................................... 25

(b) Chapters xv, xvi. ............................... 26

§ 9. Authorities for the Text ................... 30

§ 10. Contents of the Epistle .................... 32

Appendix.—"The Law," "The Flesh" ............... 41

Additional Notes:
On chap. viii. 2, 3, 9, 11, 28, 29, 35 .......................... 164
On chap. ix. 5, 6, 8, 15, 17, 19, 31 ............... 178
On chap. x. 4, 15, 17 ................................ 190
On chap. xi. 7, 9, 12, 13, 32 ....................... 203
On chap. xii. 1 ...................................... 215
On chap. xiv. 11 ................................... 221
On chap. xvi. 7, 25 .................................. 238
### CONTENTS

#### I. CORINTHIANS.

**INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES.** BY THE REV. CANON EVANS, PROFESSOR OF GREEK IN THE UNIVERSITY OF DURHAM.

pp. 239–376.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Additional Notes</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>On chap. i. 2</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. vi. 3</td>
<td>284</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. vii. 9, 21</td>
<td>294</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Additional Notes</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>On chap. viii. 1, 3, 5</td>
<td>299</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. xi. 4, 28</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. xv. 3, 29</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### II. CORINTHIANS.

**INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES.** BY THE REV. JOSEPH WAITE.

pp. 377–481.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Additional Notes</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>On chap. i. 3</td>
<td>398</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. ii. 5</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. v. 3</td>
<td>424</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Additional Notes</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>On chap. vi. 16</td>
<td>432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. xi. 28</td>
<td>466</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. xii. 1, 7</td>
<td>474</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### GALATIANS.

**INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES.** BY THE VERY REV. J. S. HOWSON, DEAN OF CHESTER.

pp. 483–536.

- § 1. Date and Occasion of this Epistle
- § 2. History and Character of the Galatians
- § 3. Contents and Doctrine of this Epistle

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Additional Notes</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>On chap. i. 10</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. ii.</td>
<td>510</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Additional Notes</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>On chap. iv.</td>
<td>526</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On chap. v.</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CONTENTS.

EPHESIANS.

INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE REV. F. MEYRICK, PREBENDARY, EXAMINING CHAPLAIN, TO THE BISHOP OF LINCOLN, RECTOR OF BLICKLING.

pp. 537–578.

| § I. St. Paul at Ephesus. | 537 | 2. Internal Evidence | 538 |
| § II. St. Paul's Epistles from Rome | 538 | 3. Corroborative Evidence | 539 |
| § III. To whom the Epistle to the Ephesians was addressed | 538 | § IV. Whence it was written and when | 540 |
| 1. External Evidence | 538 | § V. Its purpose and subject | 540 |
| | | § VI. Analysis of its contents | 543 |
| Additional Notes: | | § VII. Genuineness of the Epistle | 543 |
| On chap. i. 22, 23 | | | 548 |

PHILIPPIANS.

INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE VERY REV. J. GWYNNE, DEAN OF RAPHOE.


| I. Occasion, and Character of Epistle | 579 | IV. Contents | 585 |
| II. Philippi and its Church | 580 | V. Genuineness and Integrity | 589 |
| III. Place and Time of Writing | 583 | VI. Analysis | 591 |
| Additional Notes: | | | |
| On chap. i. 1, 8, 9, 13, 16, 17, 18, 22, 23 | 604 | On chap. iii. 2, 8, 20, 21 | 629 |
| On chap. ii. 6, 30 | 617 | On chap. iv. 3, 10 | 641 |

COLOSSIANS.

INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE LORD BISHOP OF DERRY.

pp. 643–685.

| 1. Colosse | 643 | (a) The "Phrygian heresy" | 644 |
| 2. St. Paul's relation to it was, probably, not directly personal | 643 | (b) The case of Onesimus | 644 |
| 3. Circumstances which caused him to write | 644 | (c) St. Paul's captivity not inconsistent with freedom of external communication | 644 |
I. THESSALONIANS.

INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE LORD BISHOP OF DERRY

pp. 687–731.

I

1. St. Paul’s visit to Thessalonica 687

2. Thessalonica—Contexture of circumstances to which the Epistle was addressed 688

II.

1. Dogmatic element. 689

Importance of this in the first of St. Paul’s Epistles 689

View which is taken in it 689

A. Of Christ.

B. Of His Work.

A. View of Christ 689

(a) Jesus is Lord 689

Force of this 689

(b) Jesus is worshipped 690

Force of this 690

The First of St. Paul’s extant Epistles abounds in direct prayer to Christ — St. Paul’s teaching a reproduction of St. Stephen’s 691

B. View of Christ’s work in this earliest among St. Paul’s Epistles 691

2. Eschatological element in the Epistles to the Thessalonians 693

The supposed error of St. Paul, and of the New Testament generally, as to our Lord’s coming 693

3. Moral and Social elements 696

(a) Stress laid upon industry 697

(b) Importance of the early recognition of industrial virtues 698

4. Ecclesiastical element in this Epistle 698

Existence, expressly recognized, or by implication, of—
CONTENTS.

(a) A Church
(b) Baptism
(c) Holy Communion
(d) Public Reading
(e) Stated Ministry

5. Local element

(a) Allusion to position of Thessalonica
(b) Character of Thessalonians

6. Scriptural element

(a) References to the Old Testament
(b) References to our Lord's teaching

III. Analysis of the First Epistle to the Thessalonians

IV. Authenticity of the Epistle

(a) Baur's objection
(b) External witness

ADDITIONAL NOTES:
On chap. ii. 7, 8, 19
On chap. iii. 2, 3

On chap. iv. 8, 16
On chap. v. 23

II. THESSALONIANS.

INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY, AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE LORD BISHOP OF DERRY.

pp. 704, 733-748.

I. Analysis

II. Authenticity

III. General Conclusions

ADDITIONAL NOTES:
On chap. i. 8, 12
On chap. ii. 3
On the Man of Sin, ii. 3, seqq.

734
739
740

704
704
705

746
747

TIMOTHY AND TITUS,

THE PASTORAL EPISTLES.

INTRODUCTION. BY THE REV. H. WACE, M.A., PREACHER OF LINCOLN'S INN, PROFESSOR OF ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY IN KING'S COLLEGE, LONDON.
CONTENTS.

COMMENTARY AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE LORD BISHOP OF LONDON.

pp. 760–818.

I. TIMOTHY.

ADDITIONAL NOTES:

| On chap. i. 3 | On chap. ii. 26 | TITUS.
| 770 | 799 |

II. TIMOTHY.

| On chap. iii. 1, 8, 16 | On chap. ii. 13 | 814 |
| 779 |

PHILEMON.

INTRODUCTION, COMMENTARY AND CRITICAL NOTES. BY THE LORD BISHOP OF DERRY.

pp. 819–844.

| 819 | 822 |

2. Analysis of its contents
| 820 |

§ II. The rhetoric of the Epistle to Philemon | § IV. External Testimony to the Epistle
| 820 | 829 |

ADDITIONAL NOTES:

On verses 2, 9, 15, 16
| 843 |
INTRODUCTION.

§ 1. Authorship

The title of the Epistle in the oldest manuscripts is simply πῶς Ρωμαῖος, "To the Romans"; but the first word of the Epistle itself names St. Paul as its author, and it has been universally accepted in all ages as his genuine work.

It is quoted very early, though not, as some have supposed, in the New Testament itself.

Thus in 2 Pet. iii. 15 there is an allusion to St. Paul's teaching, which in consequence of a slight resemblance in the language has been thought to refer especially to Rom. ii. 4; but St. Peter, as the context clearly shows, is referring to the moral exhortation found in all St. Paul's Epistles, based as it commonly is on the expectation of Christ's second coming.

The supposed allusion in St. James (ii. 14) to St. Paul's teaching in the Epistle to the Romans is inconsistent with the friendly and confidential intercourse of these two Apostles (Acts xv. 4, 25; Gal. ii. 9), and with the earlier date at which St. James most probably wrote. On this point, however, the reader must refer to the full discussion in the Commentary on St. James.

But the Epistle is certainly quoted New Test.—Vol. III.

§ 2. Time and Place of Writing

The passages which contain definite historical statements indicating the time and place at which the Epistle was written are all contained in the last two chapters, xv. 25-31; vi. 1, 2, 21, 23.

But the time and place of writing can also be inferred with great probability from indirect evidence contained in i. 10, 11, 13.

This latter proof is quite independent.
INTRODUCTION.

Yet the spring was not far advanced, for after travelling through Macedonia to Miletus (Acts xx. 16) he still hoped to reach Jerusalem by Pentecost.

We can fix the season even more exactly: for St. Paul and his company spent "the days of unleavened bread" at Philippi (Acts xx. 6), and must therefore have left Corinth some time before the Passover.

The proof that the Epistle was written from Corinth is well stated by Theodoret: "First, he commends to them Phoebe, calling her a deaconess of the Church at Cenchrea (xvi. 1); and Cenchrea is a port of the Corinthians. And then he also speaks thus: 'Gaius mine host saluteth you' (xvi. 23). Now that Gaius was of Corinth is easy to learn from the First Epistle to the Corinthians, for he writes to them thus: 'I thank my God that I baptized none of you, save Crispus and Gaius' (1 Cor. i. 14).

To these arguments of Theodoret we may add that four of the seven persons named in Rom. xvi. 21-23 — Timotheus, Sosipater, Jason, and Gaius — can be shown with great probability to have been with St. Paul during his second abode at Corinth. The conclusion from these various proofs is that the Epistle to the Romans was written from Corinth shortly before Easter A.D. 58.

II. Indications of Time in i. 10-13.

We read in this passage that the writer has not yet been at Rome, but is longing to visit the believers there, and has "oftentimes purposed" to come unto them, but has been "hindered hitherto." This purpose of visiting Rome St. Paul publicly declared during the latter part of his abode at Ephesus: "After these things were ended Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome" (Acts xix. 21).

We do not know how long the Apostle had entertained the purpose here for the first time recorded: there is no indication nor probability that it entered into the plan of his first journey to Europe.

of the former, and when combined with it forms an undesigned coincidence between the first and last chapters of the Epistle, and a valuable confirmation of the genuineness of chapters xv. and xvi., which of late years has been much disputed.

I. Notes of Time and Place in xv., xvi.

At the time of writing this Epistle St. Paul was going to carry to the poor saints at Jerusalem a contribution made for them in Macedonia and Achaia (xv. 25, 26), and he hoped afterwards to visit Rome on his way to Spain (xv. 28).

If we compare these passages with Acts xix. 21 and xx. 3, it is clear that the Epistle must have been written after the Apostle's arrival in Greece on his third missionary journey, when he spent three months in Corinth.

The same conclusion follows from comparing Romans xv. 25-28 with 1 Cor. xvi. 1-5, and 2 Cor. viii. 1-4, ix. 1, 2. In presence of the hostile criticism which is directed against the historical value of the Acts, it is worth notice that this second proof is independent of St. Luke's narrative.

Assuming, however, as we justly may, the authenticity and accuracy of St. Luke's history, we can fix almost within a week the date at which our Epistle was despatched.

For we learn from Acts xx. 3 that, as St. Paul was about to sail from Corinth into Syria, the Jews laid wait for him, and on this account he changed his route at the last moment and determined to return through Macedonia.

The Epistle, if written after these incidents, would almost certainly have contained some reference to them, and especially to the plot of the Jews, which the Apostle could not have failed to notice in alluding to the enmity of his countrymen in ch. xv. 31. We may, therefore, confidently infer that the letter was despatched before St. Paul actually left Achaia, and yet not long before (xv. 25).

The winter was at an end and navigation had recommenced, for "he was about to sail into Syria" (Acts xx. 3).
INTRODUCTION.

(Acts xvi. 9—xviii. 18). But we may conjecture with some probability that the desire to visit Rome had been first kindled by St. Paul’s intercourse with Aquila and Priscilla when they had lately come from Italy to Corinth (Acts xvii. 1), and fostered by constant association with them during the journey from Corinth to Ephesus (Acts xvii. 26; xix. 1, 10; 1 Cor. xvi. 19). The distinct purpose therefore of visiting Rome could hardly have been formed before St. Paul’s abode at Ephesus, nor could the statement in Rom. i. 10–13 have been made before the latter part of that period, a considerable lapse of time being implied in the words “aftentimes I purposed to come unto you, but was let hither to.”

Again, by comparison with the contents of the Corinthian Epistles it may be clearly proved that the Epistle to the Romans must have been written after 2 Corinthians (see Bp. Lightfoot, ‘Gallatians,’ p. 48) : that is to say, after the latter part of the year 57. Thus we are brought very close to the time indicated in Rom. xv., xvi., and have found an independent proof of the correctness of the dates given in those chapters.

§ 4. JEWS IN ROME.

When we pass from the author to his readers, our thoughts turn first to the origin of the Jewish colony in Rome. The first embassy sent from Jerusalem to Rome by Judas Maccabeus, B.C. 161, obtained from the Senate a treaty of mutual defence and friendship, which was renewed successively by Jonathan, B.C. 144, by Simon, B.C. 141, and by John Hyrcanus, B.C. 129: see 1 Macc. viii. 17, xii. 1, xiv. 24; and Josephus, ‘Antiq.’ xiii. 1.

Of the Jews who came to Rome in the train of these frequent embassies some would certainly settle there, for the commercial advantages of residence in the great capital would not be neglected by the enterprising race which was rapidly spreading over all the civilized world.

The first notice in Latin literature of the Jews in Rome seems to be the well-known passage in Cicero’s defence of L. Valerius Flaccus (c. 28), where we learn that the Jews were accustomed to send gold every year from Italy to Jerusalem, and formed in Rome itself a faction so numerous and formidable that the great orator points to them as throning at that moment the steps of the Aurelian tribunal, and lowers his voice in pretended terror lest they should overhear his words. These wealthy and influential Jews must have been settled in Rome long before the captives whom Pompey brought from Jerusalem to adorn his triumph only two years before the date of Cicero’s oration, B.C. 59.

But Pompey’s captives were in course of time set free by those who had bought them for slaves (Phil. Jud. ‘de Legat.’ c. 23), and the Jewish community in Rome was thus greatly increased. Julius Caesar treated them with singular favour; and expressly sanctioned their worship.
in their synagogues (Jos. 'Antiq.' xiv. c. ro, 8), and the same privileges were continued by Augustus and Tiberius (Philo, ib.). "The great division of Rome which is on the other side of the Tiber was occupied by the Jews" (Philo), and so numerous were they, that when Archelaus came to Rome (A.D. 2) to secure the succession on the death of Herod, 8000 of the Jews dwelling in Rome took part against him (Jos. 'B. J.' ii. 6; 'Antiq.' xvii. c. ri, 1).

The favour of the Cæsars was in marked contrast to the contempt and hatred with which the Romans in general looked upon the Jews. Cicero calls them a nation "born for slavery" (De Prov. c. ro), and their religion a barbarous superstition, abhorrent to the ancestral institutions of Rome and to the glory of its empire ('Pro Flacco,' c. 28). Horace refers to their proselytising zeal (Sat. iv. 143), their seeming credulity (v. 100), and the mingled contempt and fear with which their religious rites were regarded (x. 69-72). Josephus ('Antiq.' xviii. 3, 5) tells how the fraud which four Jewish impostors practised on one of their female converts moved Tiberius to expel all Jews from Rome and send 4000 of them to serve as soldiers in Sardinia. But neither exile nor persecution, though repeated under successive Emperors, could drive the Jews permanently from Rome. They soon returned, and their power so increased that, in Seneca's words (August. de Civ. D.' vi. 11), "the conquered race gave laws to its conquerors."

§ 5. CHRISTIANS IN ROME.

If we ask at what time and by whom the Gospel was first preached at Rome, we have to consider sundry answers presented by ecclesiastical tradition.

First we are told in the Clementine Homilies that in the reign of Tiberius tidings came to Rome "that a certain one in Judæa, beginning in the spring season, was preaching to the Jews the kingdom of the invisible God," and working many wonderful miracles and signs (Hom. i. c. 6).

"In the same year in the autumn sea-son a certain one standing in a public place cried and said, "Men of Rome, hearken. The Son of God is come in Judæa, proclaiming eternal life to all who will, if they shall live according to the counsel of the Father, who hath sent Him" (c. 7).

These statements of the Pseudo-Clement are of course purely fictitious.

Another marvellous story is recorded by Tertullian ('Apologeticus,' c. 5): "Tiberius, accordingly, in whose days the Christian name made its entry into the world, having himself received intelligence from Palestine of events which had clearly shown the truth of Christ's divinity, brought the matter before the Senate, with his own decision in favour of Christ. The Senate, because it had not given the approval itself, rejected his proposal."

The tale bears on its face all the marks of untruth (Neander, 'Church History,' i. 128), and Tertullian, who was no critic, had probably been deceived by some of the many spurious "Acts of Pilate."

We come next to two traditions, perfectly distinct in their origin, which ascribe the foundation of the church at Rome to St. Peter.

A. The founder of these traditions, which represents St. Peter as preaching at Rome in the reign of Claudius, arose as follows:—

(1) Justin Martyr in his first Apology, addressed to Antoninus Pius, writes thus (c. 26): "There was one Simon, a Samaritan, of the village called Gitton, who in the reign of Claudius Cæsar, and in your royal city of Rome, did mighty feats of magic by the art of demons working in him. He was considered a god, and as a god was honoured among you with a statue, which statue was set up in the river Tiber between the two bridges, and bears this inscription in Latin:"

"'Simoni Deo Sancto,'"

which is,

"'To Simon the holy God.'"

The substance of this story is repeated by Irenæus ('adv. Hær.' I. xxiii. i), and by Tertullian ('Apol.' c. 13), who re-
INTRODUCTION.

proaches the Romans for installing Simon Magus in their Pantheon, and giving him a statue and the title "Holy God."

In A.D. 1574 a stone, which had formed the base of a statue, was dug up on the site described by Justin, the island in the Tiber, bearing an inscription: "Semoni Sanco Deo Fidio Sacrum," &c. Hence it has been supposed that Justin mistook a statue of the Sabine God, "Semo Sancus," for one of Simon Magus. See the notes in Otto's Justin Martyr and Stieren's Irenæus.

On the other hand Tillemont ("Mémoires," t. ii. p. 482) maintains that Justin in an Apology addressed to the emperor and written in Rome itself cannot reasonably be supposed to have fallen into so manifest an error.

Whichever view we take of Justin's accuracy concerning the inscription and the statue, there is nothing improbable in his statement that Simon Magus was at Rome in the reign of Claudius. Only we must observe that Justin says not one word about St. Peter's alleged visit to Rome and his encounter with Simon Magus.

(2.) Papias, "a man of very small mind" (Euseb. 'Eccl. Hist.' iii. 39) says that the Presbyter John used to say that Mark, "the interpreter of Peter," recorded his teaching accurately.

Here there is no mention of Simon Magus, nor of the time and place of St. Peter's preaching.

(3.) Clement of Alexandria (c. A.D. 200), quoted by Eusebius ('E. H.' vi. 14), repeats "a tradition from the elders of former times," that "after Peter had publicly preached the word in Rome," Mark at the request of the hearers wrote what he had said, and so composed his gospel.

Here again the time of Peter's preaching at Rome is not mentioned.

Before we pass on it is most important to observe that these traditions preserved by Papias and Clement have not the slightest connexion of persons, time, or place, with Justin Martyr's story of Simon Magus.

(4.) Eusebius in his 'Ecclesiastical History' (c. A.D. 325), quotes Justin Martyr's story about Simon Magus ('E. H.' ii. c. 15), and then, without referring to any authority, goes on to assert (c. 14) that "immediately in the same reign of Claudius divine Providence led Peter the Great Apostle to Rome to encounter this great destroyer of life," and that he thus brought the light of the Gospel from the East to those in the West.

As the date of this visit to Rome Eusebius in the 'Chronicon' gives A.D. 42, and says that Peter remained at Rome twenty years (see Canon Cook's article "Peter" in the 'Dictionary of the Bible').

This arbitrary and erroneous combination of traditions, which had no original connexion, may possibly have been suggested to Eusebius by the historical connexion between Simon Magus and St. Peter in Acts viii., or more probably he may have borrowed it from the strange fictions of the 'Clementine Recognitions' and 'Homilies,' and 'Apostolic Constitutions.' (See 'Recognitions,' iii. 63-65; 'Homilies,' I. xv. lviii.; 'Epistle of Clement to James,' c. i.; 'Apost. Constit.' vi., viii., ix.)

That St. Peter was not at Rome, and had not previously been there, when St. Paul wrote his Epistle to the Romans, may be safely inferred from its silence concerning him, and from the fact that there is not a particle of trustworthy evidence in favour of any earlier visit.

B. The other tradition, which represents the Roman Church to have been founded by St. Peter and St. Paul jointly, rests on the following authorities.

(i.) Irenæus III. c. 1: "Matthew published a written Gospel among the Hebrews in their own language, at the time when Peter and Paul were preaching the Gospel at Rome and founding the Church. But after their departure (or according to a various reading, after Matthew's publication) Mark also the disciple and interpreter of Peter handed down to us in writing what was preached by Peter." Eusebius ('Eccles. Hist.' v. 8) cites this passage without noticing that it is inconsistent with his own statements in ii. 15 concerning the earlier foundation of the Roman Church by St. Peter, inasmuch as it expressly ascribes
the foundation (θεμελιώσεως) of that church to the simultaneous preaching of the two Apostles, which cannot possibly be assigned to that earlier date in the reign of Claudius.

(2.) Irenæus III. c. iii. 2: "The greatest and most ancient and universally known Church, founded and established in Rome by the two most glorious Apostles Peter and Paul."

Id. III. c. iii. 3. "Having therefore founded and built up the Church the blessed Apostles entrusted its episcopal ministration to the hands of Linus."

(3.) Euseb. 'Eccl. Hist.' ii. 25: "Paul is related to have been beheaded in Rome itself, and Peter likewise to have been crucified in his (Nero's) time. And the story is accredited by the appellation of Peter and Paul having prevailed up to the present time on the tombs there (κοιμητηρίων)."

(4.) Ibid. Dionysius of Corinth writing to the Romans calls both their Church and that of Corinth a joint plantation of Peter and Paul, and adds that "having gone to Italy and taught together there they died as martyrs at the same time."

The tradition embodied in these passages clearly refers to the time of Nero's persecution, six or seven years later than the Epistle to the Romans, and throws no light upon the origin and earliest organisation of the Roman Church.

The Epistle itself, compared with the narrative in Acts, is the only trustworthy source of information on these points.

From i. 8–13 and xv. 23 it is certain that there had been for "many years" in Rome a considerable body of Christians whom St. Paul had a great desire to visit in person, but had hitherto been hindered.

This desire to visit them, and to have some fruit among them (i. 13), combined with his declared unwillingness to build on another man's foundation (xv. 18–24), and with his boldness in admonishing them (xv. 15) by virtue of his Apostolic authority, forbids us to suppose that the Roman Church had been founded by any other Apostle.

We may however assume, almost with certainty, that the rise of the new faith in Jerusalem, and the great events by which it had been ushered in, must have been quickly known in Rome. Tacitus in fact expressly asserts this in his account of Nero's persecutions of the Christians, 'Annals' xv. 44: "The name was derived from Christ, who in the reign of Tiberius suffered under Pontius Pilate, the procurator of Judæa. By that event the sect of which he was the founder received a blow which for a time checked the growth of a dangerous superstition; but it revived soon after, and spread with recruited vigour not only in Judæa the soil which gave it birth, but even in the city of Rome, the common sink into which everything infamous and abominable flows like a torrent from all quarters of the world."

There was constant intercourse between the two great cities, and "some who had gone forth from Rome as Jews may well have returned thither as Christians" (Fritzsche). It is not improbable that some of the "strangers of Rome," i.e. Romans resident in Jerusalem, who witnessed the wonders of the day of Pentecost (Acts ii. 10) may have been among the first to bring back the good tidings to the capital.

M. Godet (‘Introduction,’ p. 63) is unwilling to admit this explanation of the origin of the Church of Rome, as seeming to prove that the Gospel was spread in the city by means of the Synagogue. But the clear and positive statement of Tacitus, that Christianity soon after the death of its Founder spread even to the city of Rome, cannot be set aside for fear of any inferences that may be drawn from it.

Nor does it by any means follow that the Synagogue must have been the sole or chief channel through which a knowledge of the Gospel was diffused in Rome. If the first believers were Jews and Proselytes, to these there would soon be added Gentile Christians, who being either provincials had brought their new faith to Rome, or being Romans had learned it in the provinces; here a faithful centurion, and there a devout soldier of the Italian cohort, would bear witness at Rome of the things which he had seen and heard in Jerusalem.
INTRODUCTION.

The number of believers would rapidly increase: as the first teachers of the Gospel were driven forth by persecution, or by their own missionary zeal, beyond the bounds of Palestine (Acts vii. 4; xi. 19; xii. 17; xiii. 3), every province that was traversed by an Apostle, every city in which a Christian church was founded, would help to swell the number of Christians drawn together in Rome from all parts of the empire.

But believers, few or many, scattered over a great city do not constitute a Church such as those which the Apostles founded. Did such a Church, duly organised, exist in Rome when St. Paul wrote this Epistle? No trace of such organisation is found either in the Epistle itself, or in the narrative of St. Paul’s subsequent residence at Rome (Acts xxviii.).

If we put aside the circular letters, “Ephesians” and “Colossians,” we find that in all St. Paul’s Epistles addressed to Churches which are known to have been fully organised there is some mention of “the Church” (i. ii. Cor., i. ii. Cor., Gal.), or of “the Bishops and Deacons” (Phil. i. 1). But in “Romans” there is nothing of the kind, either in the address, or in the body of the letter, or in the final salutations.

The only “Church” mentioned is the little assembly in the house of Aquila and Priscilla (xvi. 5): the only reference to ecclesiastical ministers, teachers, or rulers is in xii. 4-8, a statement of the general principles of Church order, which proves the need rather than the existence of such an organisation in the Christian community at Rome as would secure the well-regulated exercise of individual gifts.

The whole tone of the exhortations in chapters xii., xiv., and especially in xii. 10, seems to imply a community of Christian brethren, in which none had yet been invested with superior authority.

The evidence thus furnished by the Epistle itself is too strong to be set aside by mere conjecture. We cannot agree with Meyer’s opinion (p. 20, E. Tr.) that the existence of “a Church formally constituted may be gathered from the general analogy of other Churches that had already been long in existence”: much less with his further assumption, —“Especially may the existence of a body of Presbyters, which was essential to Church organisation (Acts xiv. 23), be regarded as a matter of course.”

The formal organisation of a Church, and the existence of a body of Presbyters, can be inferred from the analogy of other Churches, only in a case where it is known that Apostolic authority has been exercised. Meyer himself thus writes (p. 22) concerning the Roman community at an earlier period: “Individual Christians were there, and certainly also Christian fellowship, but still no organised Church. To plant such a Church there was needed, as is plain from the analogy of all other cases of the founding of Churches with which we are acquainted, official action on the part of teachers endowed directly or indirectly with Apostolic authority.”

Meyer evidently argues in a circle: ‘Other Churches, namely those which had been founded by Apostles, were formally organised: Therefore we infer, by analogy, that Rome was formally organised: Therefore Rome must have been Apostolically founded.’

Setting aside such precarious inferences from an unproved analogy, we gather from the Epistle itself that the Christians at Rome were not as yet a Church fully and formally organised. Rather they were a large and “mixed community of Jew and Gentile converts,” well described by Bishop Lightfoot (‘Phil.’ p. 13) as “a heterogeneous mass, with diverse feelings and sympathies, with no well-defined organisation, with no other bond of union than the belief in a common Messiah; gathering, we may suppose, for purposes of worship in small knots here and there, as close neighbourhood or common nationality or sympathy or accident drew them together; but, as a body, lost in the vast masses of the heathen population, and only faintly discerned or contumeliously ignored even by the large community of Jewish residents.”

We may gather from the Epistle that
INTRODUCTION.

St. Paul had before his mind all the chief elements of this mixed community of Christians, as well as the unconverted Jews and heathens among whom they lived.

There were Jews of the Synagogue to whom the Gospel had not yet been preached, or by whom it had been long since rejected, and who appear three years later to have been still wrapped up in contemptuous ignorance of "this sect," which "is everywhere spoken against" (Acts xxviii. 22). As in St. Luke's narrative the Apostle's first care within three days after his arrival in Rome is to call "the chief of the Jews together," and to expond unto them "the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus:" so in the Epistle he writes (i. 16), "I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek."

Again when he writes, "Oftentimes I purposed unto come unto you, that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles: I am debtor both to the Greeks and to the Barbarians" (i. 13, 14), it is clear that he hopes to preach the Gospel to Gentiles at Rome who had not yet heard it.

Within the Christian community itself there were many various sections: Jews of Palestine, some of whom, like Andronicus and Junias, Paul's kinsmen and fellow-prisoners, were of note among the Apostles in Jerusalem, and were also in Christ before Paul himself (xvi. 7): Jews of the Dispersion, like Aquila of Pontus and his wife Priscilla, Paul's chosen disciples and devoted friends: proselytes of Rome, now turned to Christ: Gentile Christians, of whom some, like the well-beloved Epenetus the first-fruits of Asia unto Christ (xvi. 5) had been St. Paul's own converts; others, like Amplias, Urban, Stachys, his helpers in Christ or friends beloved in the Lord; others again unknown by face, whom yet he salutes by name as "chosen in the Lord," or "approved in Christ," while of the great majority he only knew that their faith was spoken of throughout the whole world.

§ 6. OCCASION OF WRITING.

Dean Alford hasjustly observed that in answering the question, with what object was the Epistle written? critics have not sufficiently borne in mind that "the occasion of writing an Epistle is one thing,—the great object of the Epistle itself, another."

The distinction is in the present case most appropriate, for while the determination of the main object of the Epistle is one of the most disputed problems of modern criticism, the immediate occasion of writing is clearly stated by the Apostle himself. He had heard the faith of the Roman Christians everywhere spoken of (i. 8), and for many years had felt a longing desire to visit them (i. 11; xvi. 23): he had often definitely purposed to do so (i. 13), and had been as often (và πολλά, xv. 22) hindered.

A year before, when at Ephesus, he had purposed in the Spirit to go through Macedonia and Achaia, and thence to Jerusalem (Acts xix. 1), "saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome." He had completed that portion of his journey which brought him nearest to Rome, and was now turning back from Corinth to the far East, going bound in the Spirit to Jerusalem, and already foreseeing that danger awaited him there from the unbelieving Jews (xv. 31).

He still longs and hopes to see Rome (i. 10), but already he is looking beyond it to the distant West: Rome is to be, as he hopes, a resting-place for brief sojourn on his way to Spain (xv. 24, 28).

The cause of this change or extension of his plan is not stated, but it probably sprang from the great conflict of the past year against Jews and Judaizing Christians, the records of which are his Epistles to the Corinthians and Galatians. Hitherto he had preached the Gospel everywhere to the Jews first, but their general rejection of it was now an established fact (ix. 1; x. 3), over which he mourned, but in which he saw an intimation of God's will that he should now devote himself more exclusively to his own sphere of Apostolic labour, and go far off unto the Gentiles.
INTRODUCTION.

His visit to Jerusalem with the alms of the Gentiles might be perhaps intended as a farewell token of his love (Gal ii. 10). A considerable time must elapse before he could reach Rome, and then his stay must be short: an Epistle would be useful for the present needs of the brethren there, and by preparing the way for his personal ministration would render his short sojourn more profitable.

Phoebe, a servant or deaconess of the Church in Cenchreae, had business to transact in Rome (xvi. 1), and to her charge the Epistle would naturally be entrusted.

§ 7. THE PURPOSE OF THE EPISTLE.

In comparing the Epistle to the Romans with the Epistles addressed by St. Paul to other Churches, we perceive at once that it is distinguished from them all as containing a more general and systematic statement of Christian doctrine. It is quite natural that this most striking peculiarity should have been the first object of attention to any who were seeking to discover the chief aim and purpose of the writing.

In the Muratorian Fragment, which contains the earliest extant catalogue of the books of the New Testament, written about 170 A.D., the author thus describes the four greater Epistles of St. Paul: “First of all he wrote to the Corinthians forbidding party schism, next to the Galatians forbidding circumcision; but to the Romans he wrote at greater length concerning the plan of the Scriptures, showing at the same time that their foundation is Christ.” (See Hilgenfeld, ‘Einleitung in d. N. T.,’ pp. 88–107; Routh, ‘Rell. Sacr.’ i. 394 sqq.; and Westcott on the Canon of the New Testament, p. 241.)

We observe that this earliest of Critics, while assigning to the Corinthian and Galatian letters special motives arising out of the particular circumstances of those Churches, attributes none but a perfectly general didactic purpose to the Epistle to the Romans.

Origen, in the preface to his Commentary, notices the difficulty of the Epistle, its indications of St. Paul's progress towards Christian perfection, and the time and place of writing; but not the purpose.

Chrysostom observes that St. Paul wrote to different Churches from different motives and on different subjects, and finds the motive of this Epistle in his desire to embrace the whole world in his ministry and to instruct the Romans, “because saith he, of the grace that is given to me of God, that I should be the minister of Jesus Christ” (xv. 15).

Theodoret says that the inspired Apostle offers in this letter varied doctrine of all kinds.”

Ecumenius, after noticing the personal introduction (i. 1–15), says “for the rest he makes his Epistle didactic.”

Luther says in his Preface to the Epistle, that it “contains in itself the plan of the whole Scripture, and is a most complete epitome of the New Testament or Gospel, which Gospel it exhibits in the briefest and clearest manner.”

Calvin writes: “The whole Epistle is so systematic, that even the exordium itself is composed according to the rules of art.” He then gives an outline of the contents, in which he regards “justification by faith as the principal question of the whole Epistle,” and the destiny of Israel (ix.–xi.) as a subordinate subject.

The Epistle is described in like manner by Melanchthon as a “compendium of Christian doctrine,” and by Grotius as “addressed specially to the Romans, but containing all the defences (munimenta) of the Christian religion, in such wise that it well deserved that copies should be sent to other Churches.”

Reiche in his Commentary on the Epistle, p. 84, abides “by the view that the Epistle to the Romans is to be regarded according to its material aim as a universal, popular representation, adapted to the time, of the necessity, glory, and divine excellence of the Christian method of salvation, with reference to manifold objections especially of the old Theocracy, combined with a brief exhibition of genuine Christian feeling and conduct; but that its formal aim must be held to be
INTRODUCTION.

establishment in Christian faith and Christian virtue."

Tholuck also, in his earlier editions, regards the design of the Epistle as "universal and not founded on the peculiar circumstances of the Roman Church."

St. Paul, he thinks, undertakes an exposition of the entire scheme projected by the Divine Being for the salvation of mankind according as it is revealed to us in the Gospel; and afterwards, as an appendage to this, which is the larger portion of the letter, proceeds to the peculiar circumstances of the Church, so far as they were known to him.

Some of these statements are evidently exaggerated; but we must not on that account reject the truth which they contain. The Epistle does not "contain in itself a plan of the whole Scripture," nor is it "a complete epitome of the Gospel"; for there are whole provinces of revealed truth on which it scarcely touches. The range of its dogmatic teaching is rightly indicated in Melanchthon's question: "Is it not in reality on the Law, on Sin, and on Grace, that the knowledge of Christ depends?" And when Tholuck writes that St. Paul "wished to show how the Gospel, and the Gospel alone, fully answers to the soul's need of Salvation, a need which neither Paganism nor Judaism could satisfy," we can accept this representation as true in itself, but not as a complete or sufficient account of the whole purpose of the Epistle. It is, as all must admit, more didactic, methodical, and universal in its teaching than most of St. Paul's Epistles; and no statement of its purpose can be satisfactory which does not give full importance to this characteristic feature. Baur himself regards the Epistle "as a systematic work, dealing with a massive body of thought," and contrasts it with the Epistle to the Galatians, "the one being the first sketch of a bold and profound system as conceived in its characteristic and essential features, the other the completed system, developed on all sides, and provided with all necessary arguments and illustrations."

("Paul," i. 309).

But this dogmatic system is not the only element that must be taken into consideration. What lies before us is not a manual of Christian doctrine nor a theological treatise, but a letter; and it is of the very essence of a letter that it arises out of special relations between the writer and his readers, by which its purpose is in great measure determined. In regard to this Epistle it has been too lightly assumed that a special motive is inconsistent with a general didactic purpose.

"The question," writes M. Godet, "stands thus If we assign a special practical aim to the Epistle, we put ourselves, as it seems, in contradiction to the very general and quasi-systematic character of its contents. If on the contrary we ascribe to it a didactic and wholly general aim, it differs thereby from the other letters of St. Paul, all of which spring from some particular occasion, and have a definite aim." (p. 80).

We cannot regard this as a correct statement of the case: the supposed dilemma is purely fictitious. There is no necessary or natural opposition between a more general and a more special purpose: the two become opposed only when it is arbitrarily assumed that either of them is the complete and exclusive purpose; and to suggest an opposition which has no real existence is only to create an imaginary difficulty for the sake of refuting it.

The real difficulty lies not in the co-existence of a general and a special purpose, but in determining the exact nature of each, their respective limits and mutual relations.

We pass on then to consider the views of other interpreters who have endeavoured to discover the special circumstances which influenced the Apostle in writing this Epistle, in other words to determine its historical origin and purpose. We have seen already in § 5 that the Christians at Rome must have formed a community of diverse elements drawn from various nations and creeds, in which we may well believe that every variety of Christian thought and feeling found a place. We have
INTRODUCTION.

also seen that in comparison with St. Paul's other letters "the great character of the Epistle is its universality" (Bishop Wordsworth).

But this very character of universality, both in the letter and in the Community to which it is addressed, makes it more than usually difficult to determine the mutual relations of the different classes of Christians at Rome, and the special motive and purpose of the letter.

Another circumstance which adds to this difficulty is that St. Paul had not yet been at Rome, and consequently we have none of those life-like pictures and graphic strokes which set so vividly before our eyes the inner life of those Churches to which his earlier Epistles were addressed, Thessalonica, Corinth, and Galatia.

In such circumstances speculation has free scope, and theories are more easily formed than refuted. By exaggerating some features and disregarding others, it is easy to give an air of plausibility to very different views of the prevailing tendencies of thought and practice in the Christian Community at Rome, and of the corresponding purpose of the Epistle.

There is however one historical circumstance to which a primary importance is almost universally conceded. The great religious difficulty of the time was unquestionably "the relation of Judaism and Heathenism to each other, and of both to Christianity" (Baur, 'Paulus' i. 316), and more especially the fact that contrary, as it seemed, to God's promises, His chosen people were superseded by Gentiles (p. 317). No one can read the sections i. 18—iv. and ix.—xi. without perceiving that they have this as their common subject, treated in different ways.

Olschauen, of whom Baur speaks as exhibiting "the extreme point of the purely dogmatic view" (p. 312) finds in the Epistle to the Romans a purely objective statement of the nature of the Gospel, "grounded only on the general opposition between Jews and Gentiles, and not on a more special opposition in the Church itself between Judaizing and non-Judaizing Christians" ('Commentary,' p. 47).

This view, which is very similar to De Wette's, seems to err in insisting that the general question of the opposite relations of Jew and Gentile to the Gospel is the only historical ground of the Epistle, and in allowing even to this too little influence upon its main purpose.

Baur, by whom their views are keenly criticised, puts forward an entirely different theory, in support of which he is obliged "to advance a view of the occasion and purpose of writing the Epistle, which is radically different from the common one" ('Paul,' i. 310).

Although Baur's theory has not been accepted even by his own followers without great and essential modifications, it has formed the starting point of nearly all subsequent treatment of the subject, and must therefore be at least briefly examined.

(1) The three chapters ix.—xi. are "the germ and centre of the whole, from which the other parts sprang; and we should take our stand on these three chapters in order to enter into the Apostle's original conception, from which the whole organism of the Epistle was developed, as we have it especially in the first eight chapters. For this purpose we have first to examine the contents of chapters ix.—xi."

This assumption is by no means self-evident. At first sight it would appear at least more probable that to trace out the Apostle's line of thought correctly we should follow the order in which he has himself presented it; and if, in order to understand his discussion in i. 17—viii. 39, any indication of the occasion and purpose of his writing is necessary, it must certainly be right to seek that preliminary indication in i. 8—16, rather than in ix.—xi.

It is obvious also that by this mode of interpretation Baur, the professed champion of historical criticism, has justly incurred the charge brought against him by Schott (p. 4), that he has entirely ignored the historical method, and constructed the history out of his own dogmatic interpretation.

(2) The contents of ix.—xi. having been briefly and fairly stated, Baur rightly
concludes that the subject treated by the Apostle “is both the relation of Judaism and heathenism to each other, and the relation of both to Christianity” (p. 316). He adds, “It certainly appears that he cannot have devoted so large a part of his Epistle to answering this question without some special outward reason prompting him to do so, such as may have arisen out of the circumstances of the Church at Rome.”

The words which we have emphasized mark, as we believe, the prime fallacy of Baur’s theory. He confuses the occasion of the letter with its main object: he seeks a special and local cause, when a general one is needed: he fails to distinguish a reason for addressing the letter to Rome, from the reason for writing a full and systematic discussion of a great question by which the whole Christian Church was at that time agitated, and which was and ever must be of the deepest interest to all Christians alike.

(3) The error in principle, which we have just noticed, leads to an ill-founded and, as we believe, mistaken view of the actual condition and circumstances of the Christian Community at Rome.

“I think,” he writes (i. 331), “we are entitled to take it for granted that the section of the Roman Church to which the Epistle is addressed must have been the preponderating element in the Church; and if this be so, then the Church consisted mainly of Jewish Christians.”

This being a point of chief importance not only in estimating Baur’s theory, but in forming any correct view of the purpose of the Epistle, we must briefly examine the evidence which bears upon it.

In i. 2, 3 Baur thinks that “Old Testament ideas are studiously introduced, which show that the Apostle had Jewish-Christian readers in his eye when he addressed himself to the composition of the Epistle.”

That a portion of St. Paul’s readers were Jewish Christians is admitted by all on much surer evidence than is contained in these verses: but if the introduction of Old Testament ideas is supposed to prove that the Jewish Christians were the preponderating element, it might as well be argued, on the same ground, that the Churches of Corinth and Galatia must have consisted mainly of Jewish Christians.

The meaning of the passage i. 5, 6 (ἐν πάσιν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν, ἐν ὅλης τότε καὶ ὑμεῖς κλητοὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ) is keenly discussed. It is claimed on the one side as proving decisively that the majority of the readers addressed were Jewish Christians.

“In respect of the Jewish Christians, he speaks of the universality of his calling; it extended to all nations alike, and the Jewish Christians of Rome were not beyond its scope. In order to meet the objection that he was an Apostle of the Gentiles and had nothing to do with Jewish Christians, he speaks of the Jews as one people under the general term of the ἔθνη (the nations). He shows his credentials with regard to the Jewish Christians, to justify the Epistle which he is going to write” (Baur, ‘Paul,’ i. p. 333).

Volkmann (‘Paulus Römerbrief,’ p. 141) supports the same view:

“1–14. I seem indeed to be merely a Gentile-Apostle, but through the Christ have I been called to bring non-Gentile Christians (Messianer) also to the religious obedience which consists in faith in Christ, and thereby to help towards the establishment of peace even in a Church which is a stranger to peace.”

This view, untenable as it really is, has unfortunately been attacked on the wrong points.

The rendering “among all nations,” which is that of our A.V., is not only admissible, but in this context even preferable to that which is proposed instead of it,—“among all the Gentiles.” See the note on the passage. Those who, like M. Godet, would affix to the words “a definite, restricted, and quasi-technical sense, the nations in opposition to the chosen people,” seem to forget that they themselves acknowledge that there were some Jewish Christians among the readers addressed. Which meaning then
of the word "nations" is most suitable to the opening address, the natural meaning which includes all the readers without distinction, or the technical meaning which pointedly excludes a portion of them?

An impartial student, who has no a priori theory to support, will be disposed to admit that, in a letter addressed to a mixed community of Jewish and Gentile Christians, St. Paul could not possibly mean to exclude any by words which might be so understood as to include them all.

This comprehensive sense of the words "among all nations" is confirmed by the true meaning of v. 6, "Among whom are ye also [the] called of Jesus Christ." Neither Baur nor his critics have seen the true connexion between this and the preceding verse. For while it would be superfluous to inform Gentiles as such that they were included "among all the Gentiles" (Godet), and equally superfluous to inform Jewish Christians that they as Jews were included "among all the nations" (Baur), it is neither superfluous nor irrelevant to remind both Jewish and Gentile Christians that their being already "called of Jesus Christ" is an actual proof that they are included in the commission of one who had received through Jesus Christ Himself "grace and apostleship for obedience to the faith among all nations."

The great mass of the Gentile world was not as yet so called: the great mass of the Jews had rejected the calling. Thus the Apostle gracefully acknowledges the position of privilege which his readers had already attained, and turns it into a proof of his right to address them.

This meaning of v. 6 is well expressed by M. Reuss: "et vous aussi, vous vous trouvez dans ce nombre comme appelés de Jésus-Christ."

Another much disputed passage is i. 13, 14, "that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles," where the last words are better rendered "as among the rest of the Gentiles."

Here also Baur and Volkmar (p. 73) assume that ἑνων means simply "nations," and draw the conclusion that St. Paul "speaks of the Jews as one people under the general term ἑνων." But we have not here the same emphatic universality which in v. 5 demands the comprehensive sense "all nations."

Even if we admit that here also ἑνων may mean simply "nations" without reference to the distinction between Jew and Gentile, we are still far from the conclusion that the Apostle has any thought in his mind of the Jews as a nation, or of Christians at Rome as Jewish Christians. For the antithesis must then have been "among you (Jews), as among the rest of the nations": whereas now it is clearly this—"among you (Romans), as among the rest of the nations." Even with this sense of ἑνων therefore, the readers are regarded not as Jewish Christians, but simply as Romans.

However, we cannot but agree with the great majority of both ancient and modern interpreters (including among the latter Meyer, Reuss, Weizsäcker, Godet, Davidson) that this passage, v. 13, distinctly proves the Christian Community at Rome to have consisted mainly of Gentiles. See note on the verse.

In connexion with these two passages and the introduction of which they form part (i. 1-15), we must notice another mistake into which many writers have fallen in the eagerness of their opposition to Baur and his school. According to these latter, St. Paul wishes "to meet the objection that he was an Apostle of the Gentiles and had nothing to do with Jewish Christians" (Baur, 'Paul,' p. 333).

"Paul the Apostle of the Messiah Jesus wishes grace and peace to the Church of God in the capital of the World! I seem indeed to you to be merely an Apostle of the Greeks, but I am called by God Himself through Jesus Christ, to preach the Gospel of God's Son in the Spirit to all nations, even Non-Hellenes, as ye Mosaic followers of Messiah for the most part are" (Volkmar, p. 1; compare p. 141).

"Moreover he brings forward in new forms of speech the universality of his office as an Apostle for the obedience of
INTRODUCTION.

faith among all nations. For he, who at first had grounded his Apostolic claim upon the fact that he was called by God to be the Apostle of the Gentiles, as Peter to be the Apostle of the Jews (Gal. ii. 7), could now win the right to send a letter of Apostolic preaching to the Jewish Christians at Rome only in such a form by bringing prominently forward the universality of his commission " (Holsten, "Der Gedankengang des Römerbriefes," in the 'Jahrbücher für protestantische Theologie,' 1879, No. 1, p. 101).

This representation of St. Paul as having been hitherto exclusively an Apostle of the Gentiles has been too lightly accepted by those who seek to draw from it an exactly opposite conclusion. It will be sufficient to quote as an example of this view the words of Weizsäcker in his excellent article "Upon the earliest Christian Church at Rome" in the 'Jahrbücher für deutsche Theologie,' 1876, Part ii. p. 250: "Here it is not a question of the interpretation of the word (ἰδρημένος) in itself merely. He appeals to his own proper Apostolic mission, consequently to his Gentile Apostleship. By that alone the meaning is at once decided beyond question. St. Paul could not possibly express himself as he does in this introduction to the Epistle, if the Christians at Rome were even but for the more part a Jewish Christian Church. They belong to him because he is a Gentile Apostle. As such he has not to do with the circumcised, as is shown by his conversation with Peter, Gal. ii. 7, 8."

We may confidently say that St. Paul never took so limited and narrow a view of his Apostleship as is implied in the words which we have printed in italics. When he says that through Jesus Christ he "received grace and apostleship for obedience to the faith among all nations" (v. 5), he is certainly not thinking of the arrangement made with St. Peter (Gal. ii. 7-9), but of that Apostleship which was "not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead" (Gal. i. 1), of that voice which had said to Ananias, "Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel" (Acts ix. 15), and of the words of Ananias himself: "Thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard" (Acts xxii. 15).

It is true that each Apostle chose for his missionary labours a special field, one going unto the heathen, another unto the circumcision (Gal. ii. 9); but as Apostles they all dealt with all members of the Churches, irrespective of their race, knowing that "in Christ Jesus there is neither Jew nor Gentile" (Gal. iii. 28).

To imagine St. Paul implying that because he was an Apostle of the Gentiles he had as such nothing to do with the Jews, is to impute to him a thought of which he was incapable, and one which is directly opposed to his own statements in various passages of this Epistle, such as i. 16, ii. 9, iii. 19. The error has in fact arisen from the very general misinterpretation of his words in xi. 13, which distinctly imply that he was not an Apostle of the Gentiles only, but that this was one part (μία), though doubtless the chief part, of his office: see our note on the passage, and Introduction to 1 Peter, § 3, note 3.

This same passage xi. 13 is misinterpreted in another respect by Baur, p. 332.

"The very fact that when the Apostle turns to the Gentile Christians, he makes it appear that he does so, and addresses them specially (xi. 13-24) shows that in the rest of the Epistle he had Jewish much more than Gentile Christians before his mind. The main argument being concluded, they are singled out as a part of the community, they are addressed specially (ὑμών γὰρ λέγω τοῖς ἑθνοῖς, xi. 13), and thus appear as subordinate to the general body, in addressing which no special designation is required."

This bold stroke of interpretation will not bear examination.

In the first place there is no turning from a general body of readers to a portion specially singled out. The words ὑμῶν τοῖς ἑθνοῖς do not mean, as Baur supposes "you the Gentile part of my readers," but "you my readers
INTRODUCTION.

who are Gentiles” : see our note on the passage, and compare Green, ‘Grammar of the N. T. Dialect,’ p. 199.

Throughout the whole section, ix.—xi., though so deeply interesting to every Jew, there is not the slightest indication that St. Paul “had Jewish more than Gentile Christians before his mind,” as Baur asserts. Only once before in this section are the readers described, and then simply, as “brethren” (x. i.) : they are distinguished throughout from the Jews, of whom he speaks “as third persons” (Meyer). He calls them “my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh,” not “our brethren, our kinsmen,” as would be natural if his readers were for the most part Jews.

Baur himself writes: “The whole section which concludes this part of the Epistle, xi. 13—36, is certainly devoted to the Gentile Christians: this is shewn by the repeated ἡμῖν in vv. 28, 30, 31, and by the drift of the passage vv. 15—29, when correctly understood. But this section is of the nature of a digression, and the argument then returns to its proper object” (p. 333). This concession is fatal: for no one who has impartially studied the train of thought in ix.—xi. and the close connexion between ch. xi. and xii. 1, will be easily persuaded that xii. 13—36 is a mere digression or anything less than the grand conclusion of the whole argument upon the destiny of Israel, nor will believe that the readers addressed in the repeated ἡμῖν in vv. 28, 30, 31 are only a small Gentile fraction of the whole body to whom the Apostle says in xii. 1, “I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God” : see the notes there.

Having now examined all the passages specially alleged by Baur as proving that the readers were for the most part Jewish Christians, we must notice more briefly a few other passages which may be supposed to support the same view.

In ii. 17—39 it is too obvious to need more than a passing remark that the Jew so sternly and sarcastically addressed cannot possibly be thought of as one of the readers; nor is there any need to dwell on Volkmar’s strange notion that the passage iii. 1—8 “is a dialogue between the Jew in the Jewish Christian and the man who is slandered as wishing to overthrow the Law that through this evil good may come.”

In iv. 1, Abraham is called “our father,” or “our forefather.” Does the pronoun “our” imply, as is alleged, the Jewish origin of the Christians of Rome? “Yes,” replies M. Godet, “if the translation were: our father according to the flesh.”

M. Godet accordingly has recourse to the forced and unsuitable connexion, “What shall we say that Abraham hath found according to the flesh?”—and gives to προκαθόρα the sense of “spiritual forefather.” There is however nothing in the immediate context to justify such an anticipation of the spiritual fatherhood of Abraham, which first comes into notice in v. 11; and without such anticipation the supposed difficulty is not removed by the change of construction.

The very simple explanation is that the question is naturally put from the standing-point of a Jew, whether St. Paul himself or an imaginary objector is of no consequence. What else then could he say than “our” forefather? Speaking to Gentiles concerning the Jews in general, a Jew would say, as St. Paul says in ix. 3, “my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh”; but in speaking of Abraham, or of Isaac, as in ix. 16, no one Jew could separate himself from his nation and say “my forefather Abraham,” or “my father Isaac.”

Weizsäcker (ib. p. 259) puts the question rightly: “In 1 Cor. x. 1 Paul speaks of the Israelites in the wilderness, and there calls them quite in the same way ‘all our fathers.’ But who would thence wish to conclude, in spite of all evidence to the contrary, that the Corinthian Church was an especially Jewish Christian one?” See our foot-note and additional note on iv. 1.

In vii. 1 the Apostle writes “Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law) &c.” and the parenthesis is supposed to point to Jewish readers. But Meyer’s answer is complete: “Looking to the close connexion subsisting
between the Jewish and Gentile-Christian portions of the Church, to the custom borrowed from the Synagogue of reading from the Old Testament in public, and to the necessary and essential relations which Evangelical instruction and preaching sustained to the O. T., so that the latter was the basis from which they started, the Apostle might designate his readers generally as γεννησκοντες [των] νόμον, and predicate of them an acquaintance with the Law." This strong argument becomes even stronger, when for the A. V. we substitute the more correct rendering required by the absence of the Article before γεννησκοντες and νόμον: see foot-note on the verse.

We may add that in the case of born Jews a knowledge of the Law would have been too much a matter of course to require this special mention, which is on the other hand perfectly natural in the case of Gentile converts who had not always known the Law. Thus in Galatians iv. 11, St. Paul asks, "Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?" Yet who would infer from this that the Galatian Churches were of Jewish origin?

Volkmar indeed ventures to say (p. x1) that in Rom. vii. 1 "born Hebrews are directly addressed, as the root-stem of the Church": but we may confidently reply, with Weizsäcker (p. 259) that "If anyone will lay stress upon this expression, it speaks much more in favour of Gentile than of Jewish readers."

The passage xv. 14-16 is usually and justly regarded as a clear proof that the readers addressed were for the most part Gentiles. Dr. Davidson does not admit this ("Introduction to N. T." i. 125): "Here Paul announces himself the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, that the offering of the Gentiles might be acceptable to God. But the context does not necessarily limit the offering of the Gentiles to that of the Roman Christians, as is assumed." This objection is quite beside the mark: it is not assumed at all that the offering is limited to Roman Christians: but it is manifest that St. Paul justifies himself for writing boldly to the Romans on the ground that he is a minister of Christ to the Gentiles. The conclusion is inevitable, that the readers thus addressed were Gentiles.

This passage is treated in a different way by the Tübingen critics, who represent it as an addition made by one of the Pauline party at a later period to remove or soften "the bad impression" made by the genuine Epistle upon a Jewish Christian Church which was already gaining pre-eminence over other Churches, and claiming another Apostle, St. Peter, as its founder. See Baur, 'Paulus,' pp. 355, 365. Apart, however, from this passage we have found abundant evidence in that portion of the Epistle of which the genuineness has not been questioned, to prove that the majority of the Christians at Rome, when St. Paul wrote to them, were not of Jewish but of Gentile origin: and herewith we have removed the corner-stone of Baur's own theory and many subsequent modifications of it.

Without dwelling on these various theories, we proceed to consider the several historical circumstances, which tend to throw light on the purpose of the Epistle.

In doing this we cannot limit our view, as Baur has done (p. 310), to the special circumstances and doctrinal tendencies of the readers addressed. We must look also to the position of St. Paul himself at this time in relation to Rome, to Jerusalem, to the Gentile Churches, to the whole course of his Apostolic work, and to the great questions which were at that time most intimately connected with the truth of the Gospel which he preached.

(a). It is universally admitted that there were both Jewish and Gentile Christians in the Roman Community. From evidence furnished by the Epistle we have concluded that the Jewish element was not predominant. Bp. Lightfoot, who at one time admitted "the existence of a large, perhaps preponderant, Jewish element in the Church of the Metropolis before St. Paul's arrival" ("Philippians" p. 17), seems to withdraw this opinion in a subsequent essay in the 'Journal of Philology,' 1869,
INTRODUCTION.

No. 4, p. 228: “St. Paul, if I mistake not, starts from the fact that the Roman Church stood on Gentile ground, and that very large and perhaps preponderating numbers of its members were Gentiles. This is his justification for writing to them, as the Apostle of the Gentiles. It never once occurs to him that he is intruding on the province of others.”

If the majority of the Roman Christians were, as we believe, of Gentile origin, it may still be thought that they had been subject for the most part to Judaizing influences, and were strongly prejudiced against St. Paul. “M. Renan insists that the Roman brotherhood must have been founded and built up by emissaries from Palestine. But why should the Christianity of Rome be due to Jerusalem solely, and not also to Antioch and Corinth and Ephesus, with which cities communication must have been even more frequent? Why at Rome alone should the Judaic element be all-powerful and the Pauline insignificant?” (Bp. Lightfoot, ‘Journal of Philology,’ p. 289.)

There is in the whole Epistle only one short reference to false teachers (xvi. 17–20), and in this, if the persons meant were, as is assumed and that with great probability, Judaizing adversaries of St. Paul, we have a distinct proof, that the teaching hitherto prevalent in the community was not Judaistic but the contrary, in the words “mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned.” In our notes on the passage we follow the usual supposition that it was written, like the rest of the Epistle, before St. Paul’s imprisonment at Rome: but see the concluding paragraphs of § 8.

Bleek has treated this point with great clearness and moderation in his ‘Introduction to the N. T.,’ i. 442: “The probability is that it (Christianity) was not conveyed thither by any special or prominent teachers or missionaries sent for the purpose, but that residents in the city, Jews and Gentiles, became acquainted with it and were converted elsewhere, and upon their return made converts among their friends. This may have been the case especially with many Jews who either were driven from Rome by the edict of Claudius, and when this edict was forgotten or revoked, returned again, or went to reside there for the first time. They may have been converted to Christianity partly by St. Paul’s preaching, or by that of his companions or in some of the Churches planted by him, and partly in other places, e.g. in Jerusalem itself.”

We know beyond doubt that differences of belief and practice existed in Rome as in other Churches. One class would not eat flesh nor drink wine (xiv. 2, 21) lest they should be defiled (v. 14), and also observed certain days as more holy than others (v. 5); while another class regarded all kinds of food, and all days, alike. These were inclined to despise the former as superstitious, the former to condemn them as profane (xv. 3, 10). Bp. Lightfoot thinks that the asceticism here described may possibly be due to Essene influences (‘Colossians,’ p. 169), while Baur asserts that the characteristics “are such as are found nowhere else but with the Ebionites.” The rigid observance of the Sabbath and other holy days, and extreme simplicity in eating and drinking, were common to both Essenes and Ebionites. Baur confesses that there is no express statement that the Ebionites abstained from wine.

Of the Essenes Josephus (‘Bell. Jud.’ ii. 8, 5) thus writes: “When they have taken their seats quietly, the baker sets loaves before them in order, and the cook sets one dish of one kind of food before each. The word ‘food’ (ἐδήμα, ‘pulmentum’) does not exclude flesh (Plato, ‘Timæus,’ 73, Ἰ.), and there is no mention of abstention from wine either here, or as we believe in any of the other notices of the Essenes by Josephus (‘Vita,’ 2; ‘Ant.’ xiii. 5, 9, xviii. 1, 5), or by Philo Judaeeus (‘Quod omnis probus liber,’ xii., xiii.; Fragm. apud Euseb. ‘Praepar. Evang.’ viii. 8).”

There is however a description of the Therapeuta, a Jewish sect whom Philo distinguishes from the Essenes (‘Vita Contempl.’ iv.), which combines all the characteristic scruples mentioned by St. Paul: “They eat nothing of a costly
character, but plain bread and a seasoning of salt, which the more luxurious of them do further season with hyssop: and their drink is water from the spring."

In another passage (ib. ix.) he says, in describing their feasts, "wine is not introduced, but only the clearest water; cold water for the generality, and hot water for those old men who are accustomed to a luxurious life. And the table too bears nothing which has blood, but there is placed upon it bread for food and salt for seasoning, to which also hyssop is sometimes added as an extra sauce for the sake of those who are delicate in their eating."

These Therapeutae were numerous in Egypt, but were also met with in various places, in Greece and in the country of the Barbarians (ib. iii.).

It is thus quite clear from contemporary evidence that ascetic practices, such as St. Paul describes, were in his time common among the religious Jews, and not unlikely to be adopted by Jewish Christians: while from the tone in which St. Paul speaks of these brethren weak in faith, we may safely infer that they, i. e. the Jewish Christians, were a minority both in numbers and influence, whose conscientious scruples should be treated with kindness and forbearance. They did not put themselves forward "in an aggressive anti-Pauline attitude: they were men not of hostile, but only of prejudiced minds, whose moral consciousness lacked the vigour to regard a peculiar asceticism as unessential" (Meyer).

In the desire to abate the dissension between these two classes, we see a sufficient motive for one portion of the Epistle (xiv.—xv. 13), but no sufficient ground for the great doctrinal argument which precedes (i. 18—xi.). In other words the main purpose of the Epistle is neither a polemic against Jewish Christians nor an attempt to reconcile Jewish and Gentile believers, occasioned by the local circumstances and special tendencies of the Christian Community at Rome.

(b.) Another important point in reference to the motive of the Epistle is St. Paul's own position at this time with regard to Rome and other Gentile Churches.

His earnest desire to visit Rome (i. 10—15, xv. 22—24) formed part of a great plan of carrying the Gospel into the distant regions of the West. It is acknowledged even by those who doubt the authenticity of Rom. xv. that the design here mentioned may well have been entertained by the Apostle, and that the mention of it is in fact an argument for the genuineness of the passage. There is no historical evidence (unless it be the much disputed and doubtful phrase. ἐν τῷ τέμνα τῆς δύσεως ἄλων in the Epistle of Clement of Rome, 'Cor.' v.) that St. Paul ever visited Spain: and though it is not at all improbable that he may have entertained a purpose which he was never able to accomplish, it is in the highest degree incredible that a forger should think of inventing for him a design which did not correspond with any known event in his life. Compare Baur ('Paulus,' p. 180), Lucht (p. 192) Hilgenfeld (p. 485).

In this design then we find one chief cause of the Apostle's earnest desire to visit Rome. His work in the East, so far as it required his personal presence, was accomplished: he had preached the Gospel "from Jerusalem and round about unto Illyricum." Jerusalem itself, Damascus, Caesarea, Tarsus, "the regions of Syria and Cilicia" (Acts ix. 19—30; Gal. i. 21; ii. 1, 2) are all naturally included in the general phrase which describes the extent of his early labours in the East, "Jerusalem and round about." Quite recently he had paid a second visit to Macedonia and "had gone over those parts" (Acts xx. 2), passing so far to the West as to reach Illyricum, which borders upon Macedonia (Faley's 'Horae Paulinae,' Ch. ii. No. 4).

Never before had he been so near to Rome, and now that his mind was full of the great design of carrying the Gospel beyond Rome itself into those far regions of Western Europe, where Christ was not yet named (xv. 20; 2 Cor. x. 15, 16), he had the strongest motives for forming more intimate relations with the Christians at Rome,
motives quite independent of the internal condition of their Community. His keen eye could not but discern the vast importance of securing a base of operations in the Capital of the Western World. Hence in part his fervent desire to visit Rome, hence also a motive for writing this Epistle in order to secure at once the sympathy and help of his brethren there. We may admit with Bleek (p. 445) that St. Paul “discerned the great importance of the Church in such a centre, and of the tendencies which it adopted, as influencing the Church of Christ at large, and how desirable it was that the Christians there should not be disturbed and rent asunder by internal disputes and party strifes.” It was natural that the Apostle, being unable at once to visit Rome, should gladly take an opportunity of sending by Phoebe “a letter containing his Apostolic instructions and exhortations” (Bleek). The reality of this motive cannot be doubted, though its importance may be exaggerated: it accounts for St. Paul’s writing to Rome, though not for his writing so remarkable an Epistle: we cannot, with Schott, find here the key to unlock the whole meaning and purpose of the Epistle.

(c.) Another historical circumstance mentioned in the Epistle is St. Paul’s intended journey to Jerusalem: when this intention is first announced at Ephesus (Acts xix. 21) it is connected with the desire to visit Rome. What then was the motive which urged the Apostle, in spite of warnings and prophecies and his own forebodings of danger (Acts xx. 22, 23, 28; xxi. 4, 11-14), to persist in his resolution to go up to Jerusalem? It was evidently the desire to vindicate himself against the calumnies of the Judaizing adversaries who had so maliciously assailed his character, denied his Apostolic authority, and hindered his work in the Churches of Corinth and Galatia. These adversaries were not Jewish Christians of the ordinary type, much less were they the authorised agents of the original Apostles: they were the same bigoted and uncompromising partisans of the circumcision, of whom we read at an earlier period (Acts xi. 2, 3) that they contended with Peter, “saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.” And was there not cause for St. Paul to fear that these bitter enemies would stir up strife in Rome and try to frustrate his labour in the West, as they had already in the East? This fear would be most naturally suggested by the Apostle’s very recent experience at Corinth. There he had won a hard victory over those “overgreat Apostles” (2 Cor. xii. 11) who were nothing else than “false Apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into (the) Apostles of Christ” (2 Cor. xi. 13): their slanders had reached the ears of the many thousands of Jewish believers in Jerusalem: they might even raise a prejudice against him in the minds of the true Apostles, and of James and the elders of the Church. His personal presence and report of what “God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry,” supported by the testimony of the faithful brethren who accompanied him, and by the substantial proof which they carried with them of the goodwill of the Gentile Churches towards the poor Saints at Jerusalem, would remove the unjust suspicions of Jewish converts assembled from all parts for the feast at Jerusalem, and win fresh confidence and sympathy for the Apostle himself in entering upon his new sphere of missionary work in Western Europe. If such were the Apostle’s motives for undertaking the perilous journey to Jerusalem, it can hardly be doubted that this Epistle, written at the same time, was due, in part at least, to the same desire to repel the false accusations of Judaizing opponents, to conciliate the goodwill of Jewish Christians in general, and to promote in Rome and elsewhere a closer union between Jewish and Gentile believers.

(d.) But when we examine the record of St. Paul’s life at this period, we find that his most dangerous and deadly enemies were not Jewish Christians, nor even Judaizing teachers, but unbelieving Jews.

In the terrible catalogue of sufferings written a few months before his Epistle
to the Romans, he tells of perils by his own countrymen, as well as by Heathen and false brethren; he tells also how of the Jews five times he had received forty stripes save one (2 Cor. xi.). If we turn to St. Luke’s narrative we find the Apostle in Ephesus sparing no effort, shrinking from no danger, in preaching to his brethren according to the flesh and “persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God.” Driven after three months from the Synagogue in which, as Dr. Farrar ingeniously conjectures, some of those five scourgings had been patiently endured, he still continued by the space of two years preaching both to Jews and Greeks the word of the Lord Jesus (Acts xix. 8–10).

Again, within a few weeks after writing to the Romans, he reminds the Ephesian elders at Miletus of temptations which, as they knew, had befallen him “by the lying in wait of the Jews.” In Jerusalem itself the “bonds and afflictions” which awaited him (xx. 23) came, as had been foreseen, not from Judaizing Christians but from fanatic “Jews which were of Asia” (xxi. 11, 27).

It is evident that dissensions within the Churches between Jewish and Gentile Christians were but a faint reflection of the bitter and unceasing enmity with which St. Paul was pursued by the unbelieving Jews: and thus it is in the great conflict between “the Jews’ religion” and the Gospel of Christ, that we find the true cause and purpose of that great doctrinal treatise (i. 18–xi.), which forms the main subject of the Epistle, well described by Baur as “the relation of Judaism and Heathenism to each other, and of both to Christianity.”

If then we remember the distinction formerly noticed between the occasion of writing, and the main purpose of the Epistle, the former may be referred to the personal circumstances of the Apostle, and his relation to the Christian Community at Rome; while in the local circumstances and special tendencies of that community we may discover both the occasion and purpose of certain subordinate portions of the letter (i. 1–16, xii.–xv.); but as the main purpose of the whole Epistle we can acknowledge nothing less comprehensive than the desire of the Apostle, at a momentous crisis in his own life’s work and in the history of the whole Church of Christ, to set forth a full and systematic statement of those fundamental principles of the Gospel, which render it the one true religion for all the nations of the earth, and meet especially those deepest wants of human nature, which Judaism could not satisfy, righteousness in the sight of God, and deliverance from the power of sin and death.

In chapters ix.–xi. we have no mere historical appendix or corollary, but an intensely earnest and practical application of the principles previously discussed to the great religious difficulty of the time, the rejection of the Gospel by the mass of the Jewish nation, and the acceptance of the Gentiles in their place as the chosen people of God.

§ 8. Integrity of the Epistle.

Under this head we have to consider two questions which depend in part on the same evidence: Is the doxology (xvi. 25–27) genuine? Do chapters xv. and xvi. belong wholly, or in part, or not at all to this Epistle?

The origin and nature of these questions will be best explained, if we begin with the testimony of the early fathers.

I. Tertullian, writing A.D. 207–210 against Marcion’s “Antitheses,” or Contradictions between the Old and New Testaments, says (adv. Marc. v. 13): “What great gaps Marcion made especially in this Epistle (to the Romans) by expunging whatever he would, will be clear from the unmitigated text of our own copy. Some passages however, which ought according to his plan to have been expunged, he overlooked: and it is enough for my purpose to accept these as instances of his negligence and blindness.”

In his subsequent argument Tertullian quotes no passage from chapters xv.–xvi., and refers to xiv. 10–13 as being at the close of the Epistle (“in
INTRODUCTION.

... clausula...): but as he uses only such passages as Marcion had retained, this only tends to prove that the last chapters were wanting, not in his own copy, but in Marcion's.

In the treatise on Baptism, ch. xvii., Tertullian refers to the 'Acts of Paul and Thecla': now in that fiction there is frequent mention of a certain Tryphaena, who though living at Antioch in Syria is evidently connected with Rome, being called the kinswoman of Caesar. There can be little doubt that this name Tryphaena has been taken, like other names in the same work, Onesiphorus, Demas, and Hermogenes, from St. Paul's Epistles. Hence it follows that Rom. xvi. was known, if not to Tertullian himself, at least to an earlier writer whom he quotes.

It must however be admitted that in Tertullian's other works no clear reference to these chapters has been found, though all the other chapters are frequently quoted.

The case is the same with Irenaeus and Cyprian, except that Cyprian fails also to quote from Rom. iv.

But this argument from silence is worthless, as may be easily shown from the parallel case of 1 Cor. xvi.

Cyprian quotes from every other chapter, about 101 times in all; Irenaeus quotes every other chapter except xiv., about seventy-seven times in all; yet neither Irenaeus nor Cyprian appears to have ever quoted 1 Cor. xvi.

Tertullian, in his work against Marcion, quotes every other chapter of 1 Cor., 129 times in all, yet never refers to ch. xvi.: in his other works there are more than 300 quotations from the Epistle, including every chapter except xvi., from which there is possibly one quotation, though we have failed to verify Tischendorf's reference 'Pudicitia,' 14.

When therefore Lucht concludes from this silence that it is possible that Tertullian, Cyprian, and Irenaeus had no knowledge of Rom. xv., xvi., we may reply, It is equally possible and neither more nor less probable, as far as this silence is concerned, that the same fathers had no knowledge of 1 Cor. xvi.

A more probable explanation is that Irenaeus and Cyprian, using only such passages as suited their own immediate purpose, like Tertullian in his treatise against Marcion, found no occasion to refer to Rom. xv., xvi. In fact these chapters, like 1 Cor. xvi., are in great measure made up of personal matters interesting chiefly to the Apostle and his immediate correspondents at Rome.

Clement of Alexandria quotes passages from both chapters frequently, and describes them as belonging to the Epistle to the Romans, without the least apparent consciousness that this could possibly be doubted.

Origen. A most important though much disputed testimony to the genuineness of these chapters is found in Origen's Commentary upon the Epistle ('Opera,' tom. vii. p. 453, Lommatsch; tom. iv. p. 687, ed. Ben.). After quoting the Doxology (xvi. 25-27) in its usual place at the end of the Epistle, Origen proceeds:

"Marcion, who tampered with the writings of the Evangelists and Apostles, entirely took away this paragraph; and not this only, but also from that place where it is written, Whatsoever is not of faith is sin (xiv. 23), right on to the end, he cut all away (cuncta dissectic). But in other copies, that is, in those which have not been corrupted by Marcion, we find this very paragraph differently placed. For in some manuscripts after the passage above mentioned, Whatsoever is not of faith is sin, there follows in immediate connexion (statim cohaerens), Now unto him that is of power to establish you: but other manuscripts have it at the end, as it is now placed."

This passage from Origen does not prove, as some have inferred, that Marcion regarded the Doxology in particular as spurious, nor that he appealed to earlier MSS. as omitting it, nor that Origen found it omitted in any other MSS. besides those which had been mutilated by Marcion.

It does prove that Origen knew of copies corrupted by Marcion, which omitted all after the last verse of ch. xiv.

It implies that, as far as Origen knew, (Lucht, p. 39) no other MSS. omitted the
INTRODUCTION.

Doxology, but some placed it between xiv. and xv.

Thus we have evidence of a diversity of position before Origen’s time, and regarded by him as independent of Marcion’s mutilated copies. But we have no evidence of omission before Marcion, who was at Rome propagating his views about A.D. 138–140. He probably disliked St. Paul’s statements concerning the use of the Old Testament in xv. 4, 8, and possibly may have found an existing diversity of position to afford a pretext for his omission of xv., xvi.

We may further observe that when Marcion said he had expunged and cut away (‘abstulit,’ ‘dissecuit’) the two chapters and the Doxology, it is clearly implied that these were genuine portions of St. Paul’s Epistle omitted first by Marcion.

That this was the opinion of Origen himself, not merely of his translator Rufinus, is admitted and proved by Lucht himself (p. 36) and Origen’s judgment may well be preferred to Lucht’s baseless conjecture (adopted from Baur, ‘Paulus,’ p. 350) that Marcion may have omitted the two chapters because they were not written by St. Paul, but added by a forger (Lucht, p. 41).

II. From the testimony of the early fathers we pass to that of the existing MSS.

(a) Chapters xv., xvi. are not omitted in any known MS.

(b) The Doxology (xvi. 25–27) is variously placed, repeated, or omitted.

(1) It is placed at the end of xvi., and only there, in K, B, C, D, E, f, Vulg., Syriac (Schaaf), Memph., Aeth., and the Latin fathers. The cursive MS. 66 after the διψήν of v. 24 puts τέλος, to mark the end of the Epistle, but then adds the Doxology, and has in the margin this note: “In the ancient copies the end of the Epistle is here (i.e. after the Apostolic benediction, v. 24), but the rest (i.e. the Doxology) is found at the end of the 14th chapter.”

(2) It is found at the end of xiv., and there only, in L, most cursive, the Greek lectionaries, Syr. (Harclean), and Greek Commentators, except Origen.

(c) It is found in both places in A, P, 17, Arm.

(d) It is omitted in both places in F, G; but in F a blank space is left in the Greek after xvi. 24, and the corresponding space in the Latin (f) is occupied by the Doxology; while in G a blank space is left in the Greek, and consequently in the interlinear Latin, between xiv. and xv.

(c) In many manuscripts of the Latin Bible, especially codex Amiatinus, and Fuldensis, both of the 6th century, there is a division into sections (capitulatio) marked by numbers in the text, and a prefixed table of contents with corresponding numbers, in which the subject of each section is briefly described.

The 50th section in the Codex Amiatinus “On the peril of one who grieves his brother by his meat,” corresponds with xiv. 15–23. But the next and last section, “On the mystery of the Lord kept secret before His passion, but after His passion revealed,” answers to nothing else in the remainder of the Epistle except the Doxology. It is therefore a natural conclusion that this capitulation was first adapted to a Latin MS. in which the Doxology was placed immediately after xiv. 23 and xvi., xvi. omitted. On these capitulations see Bp. Lightfoot, ‘Journal of Philology,’ 1871, No. 6, pp. 196–203.

(d) In one MS. (G) all mention of Rome in the Epistle is wanting.

In i. 7 for τοῖς οὖν ἐν Ὀρώμῃ ἀγαπητοῖς Θεοῦ, we find in G, τοῖς οὖν ἐν ἀγαπητοῖς Θεοῦ, the Latin (g) corresponding.

In i. 15 the words τοῖς ἐν Ὀρώμῃ are omitted in G and g.

One cursive manuscript (47) has a marginal note that some one, apparently an ancient commentator, “makes no mention of the words ἐν Ὀρώμῃ either in the interpretation or in the text.”

In this evidence the statement of Origen respecting Marcion (confirmed by the incidental expression of Tertullian), the absence of quotations in several early fathers, and the capitulation (or capitulations) of the Latin Bibles,” Bp. Lightfoot writes, “we have testimony various, cumulative, and (as it seems to me) irresistible, to the existence
INTRODUCTION.

of shorter copies of the Epistle, containing only fourteen chapters with or without the doxology, in early times."

"The theory, by which I sought to combine and explain these facts, was this: that St. Paul at a later period of his life re-issued the Epistle in a shorter form with a view to general circulation, omitting the last two chapters, obliterating the mention of Rome in the first chapter, and adding the Doxology, which was no part of the original Epistle" ('Journal of Ph.' 1871, No. 6, p. 203).

The theory was subjected to a friendly but keen and searching criticism by Professor Hort ('Journal of Ph.' 1870, No. 5), and defended in the following number by Bp. Lightfoot.

It is almost needless to say that the views of both writers are set forth with consummate skill, and the three papers are of great and permanent value to every student of the Epistle.

Professor Hort tries to prove, but as we venture to think unsuccessfully, that Marcion (as represented by Origen in the original reading of his comment) omitted only the Doxology, and not the two whole chapters: he attaches no great importance to the absence of quotations in Tertullian, Irenæus, and Cyprian: and thinks that the Doxology may have been transferred from the end of the Epistle to the position which it now holds in some Greek MSS., after xiv. 23, because chapters xv., xvi. were not much used in the Church lessons, "and yet some Church, for instance that of Alexandria, may have been glad to rescue the striking Doxology at the end for congregational use by adding it to some neighbouring lesson... Scribes accustomed to hear it in that connexion in the public lessons would half mechanically introduce it into the text of St. Paul (i.e. after xiv. 23)... Then in the course of time it would be seen that St. Paul was not likely to have written the Doxology twice over in the same epistle, and it would be struck out in one place or the other" (p. 72).

This alternative hypothesis is rejected by Bp. Lightfoot as "devoid alike of evidence and probability." He maintains that the capitulation of the codex Amiatinus has no trace of being intended for lectionary use (p. 202), that it was framed originally for a short copy of the Old Latin, yet maintained its ground as a common mode of dividing the Epistle, until it was at length superseded by the present division into sixteen chapters in the latter half of the 13th century."

Bp. Lightfoot upholds his theory simply as "the most probable explanation of the facts, until a better is suggested" (p. 194): and it is certainly less difficult to suppose that St. Paul himself at a later period of his life adapted the letter in a shortened form to general circulation (p. 214), than to accept M. Renan's complicated theory of four or five original editions addressed to different Churches, all at last brought together and compounded into our present Epistle.

But even this hypothesis of a shorter recension issued by the Apostle himself, put forth at first by Rücker and since so ably advocated by Bp. Lightfoot, seems to involve some serious difficulties.

(1) The capitulations are supposed to have been formed originally from a Latin copy of the Epistle ending with ch. xiv. yet no other trace whatever of such an abbreviated Latin codex now exists.

(2) If the abbreviated recension were made by St. Paul himself, and the Doxology added to it, and this at Rome, as Bp. Lightfoot suggests (p. 214), it is strange and almost unaccountable that no copy of this genuine abbreviated recension has been preserved, and that no known Latin codex contains the slightest trace of the position of the Doxology after xiv. 23. The blank space in the Latin, corresponding to that in the Greek of G proves nothing, as the Latin is interlinear.

(3) The assumption that the Doxology was originally placed after ch. xiv., and thence transferred to the end of the Epistle, is opposed to the evidence of the primary Uncials, ν, B, C, of Origen's express statement concerning Marcion, of all Latin MSS., and of the Latin fathers; these all agree in placing the Doxology at the end of the Epistle, and there only.

(4) When St. Paul is represented as
converting his original Epistle to a new purpose by "omitting the last two chapters, obliterating the mention of Rome in the first chapter, and adding the Doxology," the process seems hardly in keeping with the truthful simplicity of the Apostle's character. There is truth in what Meyer says on this point: "Rückert's conjecture, that Paul himself may have caused copies without the local address to be sent to other Churches, assumes a mechanical arrangement in Apostolic authorship, of which there is elsewhere no trace, and which seems even opposed by Col. iv. 16."

(5) Bp. Lightfoot suggests (p. 213) that Marcion, who is known to have resided for many years in Rome, may have fallen in with a copy of the short Recension, and welcomed it gladly.

When we take into consideration Origen's express statement that Marcion himself expunged and cut away the last two chapters, it seems much more probable that the incomplete documents, from which the Capitulations were framed, were nothing else than copies of Marcion's own mutilated text, with the Doxology added. A mutilated Recension, known to be the work of an arch-heretic, was much more likely to have disappeared altogether, than an abbreviated Recension known as the genuine work of St. Paul himself.

(6) If, as Origen states, Marcion mutilated the Epistle by cutting off chapters xv., xvi. entirely, he would have a motive for removing Ἐν Θεῷ also in i. 7, 15: for a letter addressed by St. Paul to the Christians at Rome, in whom he was so deeply interested, could not possibly end so abruptly as at xiv. 23, without a single allusion to his own personal state or theirs, without a single greeting, without even his usual Apostolic Benediction. Marcion therefore is much more likely than St. Paul to have obliterated the mention of Rome in the 1st chapter.

Another possible explanation is suggested by Meyer, that "perhaps some Church, which received a copy of the Epistle from the Romans for public reading, may for their own particular Church-use have deleted the extraneous designation of place, and thus individual codices may have passed into circulation without it." Volkmar adopts a similar explanation (p. 74).

But on this supposition we should expect to find some of the Lectionaries omitting the words, whereas they all, apparently, contain them.

On the whole we cannot but admit the force of Lucht's conclusion (pp. 65, f.) that if the Doxology was written by St. Paul himself, its original place must have been at the end of the Epistle, and not after xiv. 23.

(e) The Benedictions. According to the received Text there are three concluding formulae, the Apostolic Benediction at xvi. 20 (ὑπὸ χάριν κ. τ. Λ.), the same Benediction repeated at xvi. 24, and the Doxology.

The Benediction at xvi. 20 is undoubtedly genuine, being omitted only in those MSS. (D F G) which also omit the Doxology at the end, and leave the Benediction at xvi. 24 as the conclusion of the Epistle, the motive of these changes evidently being to reduce the Epistle to the accustomed form.

The Benediction at xvi. 24 is omitted in the chief uncials (A B C), in Amiat. Fulda, and other MSS. of the Vulgate, in the Coptic and Aethiopic Versions, and in Origen.

It is found in this place in D, F, G, L, 37, 47, the Vulgate (Dem. Tol. and other codices), the Syriac (Harclean), and the Gothic, and in most of the Greek Commentators. It is put after the Doxology in P, 17, Syriac (Schaar), Arm. Aeth.

Upon this evidence the Benediction at xvi. 24 is rejected by Lachmann, Tregelles, and in his last edition (8) by Tischendorf. Bp. Lightfoot, and Professor Hort reject it, but it is retained by Meyer, Fritzsche, Lange, Hofmann, Lucht (p. 82), Hilgenfeld ("Einleitung" p. 326), Reuss, Volkmar, as well as by older interpreters generally. The question therefore of its genuineness must be regarded as still under discussion.

Our own belief is that the Benediction is genuine in both places, and that in v. 20 it forms the conclusion of a later letter to the Church at Rome, of which
INTRODUCTION.

the fragment vv. 3–20 became incorporated with Romans. We thus account at once for the seeming repetition of the Benediction at v. 24, and also see a motive for its omission there in so many good MSS, there being no other example of such repetition.

III. Internal Evidence.

(a) The Doxology. Objections to the genuineness of the Doxology drawn from its special character are directed either against its form, its phraseology, or its ideas.

(1) The Form. It is alleged that the beginning and the end (τῷ δὲ δυναμών ὕψας στήριξα ... μοῦν σοφῷ Θεῷ διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, φι ἡ δόξα κ. τ. λ.) show that there is a mixture of two different forms of Doxology. The whole difficulty lies in the superfluous Relative (φι), and its position. This relative is omitted in the Vatican Codex and two cursives (33, 72), in B, the Latin of F, in Schaaf's Syriac, and by Origen (or Rufinus) in his commentary on the passage. Dr. Hort ('Journal of Philol.' No. 5, p. 57) thinks that "φι is probably an intrusion, notwithstanding the presumption in favour of an irregular construction." Godet thinks that when St. Paul began the sentence, he did not mean it to end thus—"to him be glory"—but with some such thought as—"to him I commend you" (ἀνωτάτητι ὕψα, Glöckler).

He adds "We give glory to him who has done the work; but in regard to him who is able to do it, we look to him to do it, we claim his help, we express our confidence in him and in his power." But this reasoning is at once refuted by a glance at Eph. iii. 20, τῷ δὲ δυναμών ... αὐτῷ ἡ δόξα κ. τ. λ.

Meyer joins διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ with σοφῷ. "God who through Jesus Christ has shown himself the only wise," the object of this harsh connexion being to avoid the supposed necessity of referring φι to the person last named, Jesus Christ, and so ascribing the glory to Him. This necessity is neither more nor less than in Heb. xiii. 21; 1 Pet. iv. 11, where see the notes.

Ewald translates as if the order were φι διὰ 'I. X. ἡ δόξα, and supposes this natural order to have been changed for the sake of throwing an emphasis on "through Jesus Christ."

We can accept his translation as rightly expressing what St. Paul meant, but not his explanation of the unusual order, which is the main difficulty.

Upon the whole we are disposed to agree with Dr. Hort that "φι is probably an intrusion," though of a very early date. We must admit that with so great a preponderance of external authority φι ought to be retained in the text now, whatever may have been its origin. But on the other hand the authorities for the omission are varied and of considerable value; while the intrusion might very easily have been caused by the presence of φι in the parallel passages Gal. i. 5; 2 Tim. iv. 18; Heb. xiii. 21; 1 Pet. iv. 11. Rückert rejects φι, and Reiche, in his Critical Commentary, concludes that the writer of the Doxology borrowed it from Heb. xiii. 21 or Jude 25.

The objection that St. Paul does not end his Epistles with a Doxology comes with little force from those who, like Baur and Luch, count only three Epistles, besides Romans, to be genuine.

That the last clause of the Doxology is characteristic of St. Paul is seen in its close resemblance to xi. 36; Gal. i. 5; and its difference from 1 Pet. iv. 11; v. 11.

When Lucht urges that Doxologies forming long and complete sentences are not found in St. Paul's Epistles, but only in Eph. iii. 20, 21; Phil. iv. 20; 1 Tim. i. 17; 2 Pet. iii. 18; Jude 24, 25; we can only reply that the three Epistles first named are to us St. Paul's, and as such they help by their many points of resemblance to the Doxology in Romans to confirm its genuineness.

Other objections to the length of the Doxology, to its numerous intermediate clauses, and to the mixture of strong emotion with profound doctrinal statements, are refuted by a due appreciation of the peculiar character of the Epistle. "The whole Epistle could hardly have a fitter close than a Doxology embodying the faith from which its central chapters proceed" (Hort, p. 56).
INTRODUCTION.

"The leading ideas contained in the whole Epistle, as they had already found in the introduction (i. 1–7) their preluding key-note, and again in xi. 33 ff., their preliminary doxological expression, now further receive, in the fullest unison of inspired piety, their concentrated outburst for the true final consecration of the whole" (Meyer).

(2) Dictum. Lucht acknowledges that every single expression in the Doxology (except σεσυγμένον) may be found in St. Paul's genuine Epistles, by which he means Romans, Corinthians, and Galatians.

The Passive συγάθυμα is found nowhere else in the N. T. or LXX: but St. Paul's use of σεσυγμένον is fully justified by such passages as Eurip. 'Iphigenia in Tauris,' 1076, πάντα συγγε-
θησαν, Pindar, Ol. ix. 156, σεσυγμένον όσ' σκαλατέρον χρῆμ' ἐκαστον, and many others.

The objection that the several words and phrases of the Doxology, though found in the four great Epistles, are there used only in other meanings or connexions, will for most readers be sufficiently answered by Lucht's further objection, that the Doxology in all these points agrees with what he calls non-
Pauline writings, the Epistles to the Ephesians, Colossians, Timothy, and Titus.

These points of agreement are indicated in our foot-notes: and it is only necessary to add that the expression "everlasting God" (αἰώνιος Θεός), to which Lucht objects, is fully justified by the usage of the LXX not only in Job xxiii. 12, αἰώνιος γὰρ ἐστιν ὁ ἐπάνω βρότων, but also in the very striking passage Gen. xxii. 33, ἐπεκαλύπτω ἐπὶ τὸ ἄνω Κυρίων, Θεός αἰῶνος. Here "Jehovah is called the everlasting God as the eternally true, with respect to the eternal covenant which He established with Abraham xvii. 7" (Keil & Delitzsch). So remarkable a title must have been familiar to St. Paul, and its use here in reference to the same eternal covenant is so appropriate that the supposed objection is really a strong argument for St. Paul's authorship.

(3). Ideas.—Lucht's attempt to prove that the Doxology has a Gnostic ten-
dency, and must therefore be of a post-Apostolic date, is rightly dismissed by Meyer as based only upon misinterpretation and a pre-supposition that all except the four greater Epistles of St. Paul are spurious.

(b.) Chapters xv., xvi. The objections brought by Baur, and the extreme par-
tisans of his School, against the genuineness of these two whole chapters can have little weight except for those who accept his general theory of the purpose of the Epistle, which we have already examined in § 7 and found untenable. Assuming the preponderance at Rome of a Judaizing party to whom the earlier portion of the Epistle would have been distasteful, Baur sees in the last two chapters the work of a later "Paulinist writing in the spirit of the Acts of the Apostles, seeking to soothe the Judaists, and to promote the cause of unity, and therefore tempering the keen anti-Judaism of Paul with a milder and more conciliatory conclusion to his Epistle" ('Paulus,' i. p. 365.

Lucht, less bold than Baur, does not venture to treat the two chapters as wholly spurious: admitting that the original Epistle could not have ended at xiv. 23, he thinks that portions of the genuine conclusion are still to be found in chapters xv. and xvi. His theory is that the Roman clergy, fearing lest offence might be given by the Apostle's treatment of ascetic scruples as "the infirmities of the weak" (xv. i.), withheld the conclusion of the letter from public use, and laid it up in their archives togeth-
er with a letter to the Ephesians which by mistake had been brought to Rome; and that these genuine Pauline materials were worked up by a later writer into the present form of the last two chapters.

According to Volkmar (pp. 129–132) the latter part of the genuine letter was either lost or purposely suppressed, and in the 2nd Century two attempts were made to supply a fitting conclusion to xiv. 23: in the Eastern Church the Doxology was added (xvi. 25–27), in the Western Church the greater part of the last two chapters, namely xv. 1–32, xvi.
INTRODUCTION.

3–16, and 17–20. Afterwards both additions were combined in various ways, and under this "Catholic conglomerate" of conciliatory matter lay the genuine conclusion long hidden, yet accurately preserved in two passages xv. 33—xvi. 2, and xvi. 21–24.

To all these arbitrary hypotheses we may apply the remark of Hilgenfeld ("Einleitung," p. 233): "What is here regarded as un-Pauline only shews, according to my conviction, that since Marcion's time there has been a one-sided picture of St. Paul, to which some still desire to make the true Paul correspond." Compare in this Commentary the Introduction to 1 Peter, § 3.

As regards the xvth Chapter we may confidently say that the result of modern criticism has been to prove beyond reasonable doubt that it is both the genuine work of St. Paul and an original portion of the Roman Epistle. "It is undeniable that xv. 1–13 belongs to xiv. and that xv. 14–33 forms the conclusion of the Epistle" (De Wette, 'Kurze Erklärung,' p. 204). Pfeiderer ('Paulinism,' ii. 41, note) expressly maintains with Hilgenfeld, "in spite of Baur, Lucht, and Lipsius," that the chapter is genuine. The opposite opinion has now few advocates even in Germany.

In regard to Chapter xvi. the case is rather different. According to the conjecture of Schulz, adopted by Ewald, Renau, Reuss, Farrar and others, the greater part of the chapter belonged to a genuine letter of St. Paul addressed, not to Rome, but to Ephesus.

In considering this theory it will be convenient to examine each portion of the chapter separately.

vv. 1, 2. The Commendation of Phoebe.

It is objected that St. Paul could not have written this commendation of Phoebe to a distant Church, because he had shortly before expressed a disparaging opinion of commendatory letters (2 Cor. iii. 1). But if the Apostle in vindicating his authority asserts that he has no need of "epistles of commendation," it by no means follows that he thought them unnecessary for all persons. A woman undertaking a journey to a distant city might well need to be commended to the care of the Christian community, especially if she was (as is generally supposed) the bearer of the Apostle's own Epistle: compare the commendation of Timothy in 1 Cor. xvi. 10, 11.

Another objection is brought against the description of Phoebe as being "a servant (διάκονος) of the church which is at Cenchreae," on the ground that the office of "deacons" was of later origin. The objection would have had some force if the title (διάκονος), which was of later origin, had been used. We read in 1 Cor. xvi. 15 that the household of Stephanas had devoted themselves to the ministry of the saints (τὰς καυχήσεις τῶν διακόνων τῶν ἁγίων): and such self-dedication to a special work, though quite consistent with a formal designation to the office, would even without it have been sufficient to justify the application of the general term διάκονος as descriptive of Phoebe in her work at Cenchreae. See our note on the passage.

In whatever way Phoebe had been "a succourer (προστάτης) of many," and of St. Paul himself also, there is nothing in such service inconsistent with his frequent assertions that he had not accepted any maintenance from the Churches of Achaia, for these assertions are all of an earlier date (1 Cor. ix. 15–18; 2 Cor. xi. 7–12; xii. 13–18).

For the opinion that this commendation was addressed to the Church of Ephesus, not to Rome, we can discover no reason at all: the suggestion that from Cenchrea she would be sailing towards Ephesus and away from Rome is sufficiently answered by saying that she may have been sailing not from Cenchreae, but from Lechaenum, the port on the Corinthian Gulf, and in that case would pass through Corinth on her way. Legal business would be more likely to take her to Rome than to any other city.

vv. 3–5. Salutation sent to Aquila and Priscilla.

We learn from Acts xviii. 1, 2 that these persons being Jews of Pontus were driven from Rome by the edict of
INTRODUCTION.

Claudius (A.D. 52); they were joined by St. Paul at Corinth, and thence sailed with him to Ephesus in the spring of the year 54, where they remained (Acts xviii. 19), and established "a church in their house" (1 Cor. xvi. 19). From Ephesus they sent a salutation to Corinth in St. Paul's 1st Epistle about April A.D. 57. Ten or twelve months later St. Paul, according to Rom. xvi. 3, sends a salutation to them "and to the church that is in their house" at Rome. In answer to M. Renan's objection that this would assign to them "too nomadic a life," Bp. Lightfoot asks with good reason, "Is there any real difficulty in supposing that they returned to Rome in this interval of a year more or less, and that St. Paul should have been made acquainted with their return, seeing that his own travels meanwhile had lain mainly on the route between Ephesus and Rome" ('Journal of Philology,' 1869, p. 276). In answer to the further objection that Aquila and Priscilla appear again at Ephesus (2 Tim. iv. 19) the Bishop asks with equally good reason, "Is it at all improbable that after an interval of nearly ten (eight?) years they should again revisit this important city? They were wanderers not only by the exigencies of their trade, but also by the obligations of their missionary work" ('J. of Phil.' p. 277).

So far as the internal character of the passage is concerned it might have been addressed either to the Church of Ephesus or to Rome: in favour of the latter destination a prima facie presumption is raised by its appearance in the Epistle to the Romans. It contains no indication of the time at which it was written.

v. 5 b. It does not follow from the description of Epaenetus as "the first-fruits of Asia unto Christ" that this greeting was sent to him in Asia, i.e. in Ephesus. Being named in immediate connexion with Aquila and Priscilla it is very probable that he, like Apollos, had been instructed by them and had attached himself to their company, whether at Ephesus or at Rome.

Of the 22 other persons named in vv. 6–15 not one can be shewn to have been at Ephesus, but it is assumed that only at Ephesus could St. Paul have had so many friends as are here saluted. Against this assumption we have to set several unquestionable facts.

(1) "Urbanus, Rufus, Ampliatus, Julia and Junia are specifically Roman names" (Lucht, p. 137).

(2) Besides the first four of these names ten others, Stachys, Apelles, Tryphaena, Tryphosa, Hermes, Hermas, Patrobias (or Patrobius), Philologus, Julia, Nereus, are found in the sepulchral inscriptions on the Appian way as the names of persons connected with "Caesar's household" (Phil. iv. 22) and contemporary with St. Paul. Bp. Lightfoot in his most interesting essay on the passage has pointed out that while some of these names are too common to afford any safe ground for identifying the persons, others (Stachys, Tryphaena, Patrobias, Philologus, Nereus) are comparatively rare, and yet are found on the monuments of the imperial household at this period. The household of Aristobulus and the household of Narcissus could be only at Rome. "A combination such as Philologus and Julia," writes Bp. Lightfoot, "affords [more] solid ground for inference: and in other cases, as in the household of Narcissus, the probable circumstances suggest a connexion with the palace. If so, an explanation has been found of the reference to members of Caesar's household in the Philippian letter. At all events this investigation will not have been useless, if it has shewn that the names and allusions at the close of the Roman Epistle are in keeping with the circumstances of the Metropolis in St. Paul's day: for thus it will have supplied an answer to two forms of objection; the one denying the genuineness of the last two chapters of this letter, and the other allowing their genuineness, but detaching the salutations from the rest and assigning them to another epistle."

The answer seems to be conclusive both as to the genuineness of the salutations, and as to the place to which they were addressed, namely, Rome and not Ephesus.

But it does not remove what is after all the chief difficulty of the chapter, that at the time of writing his Epistle to
the Romans, St. Paul cannot easily be supposed to have had such an intimate knowledge of so many of the Christians at Rome. In the 'Journal of Philology,' 1869, No. 4, p. 274, Bishop Lightfoot, in reply to M. Renan, has suggested another explanation: "Will not a man studiously refrain from mentioning individual names where he is addressing a large circle of friends, feeling that it is invidious to single out some for special mention, where an exhaustive list is impossible? On the other hand, where only a limited number are known to him, he can name all, and no offence is given." In support of this explanation, it is urged that in other Epistles of St. Paul the number of names mentioned is in inverse proportion to his familiarity with the church to which he is writing: to Corinth, Thessalonica, and Philippi no salutations properly so called are addressed. "On the other hand, in the Epistle to the Colossians, whom the Apostle had never visited, certain persons are saluted by name." When we turn, however, to Colossians, we find only one salutation properly so called, i.e. addressed to a particular person by name: "Nymphas and the church which is in his house." The example is therefore no parallel to the Roman salutations in which, including Aquila and Priscilla, twenty-four persons are saluted by name, besides several households.

This serious difficulty, and some others, are wholly removed, if, as we believe, the whole passage vii. 3–20, belonged originally to a second letter addressed by St. Paul to the Roman Church after his release from his first imprisonment at Rome. On that supposition, the unusual number of salutations is at once explained, and the indications of intimate personal knowledge of so many members of the Church, some of whom seem to have belonged to "Caesar's household," not only raise no difficulty, but become the strongest proofs of a genuine letter.

In that case, Aquila and Priscilla may well be thought to have either preceded or followed St. Paul to Rome, and there to have alleviated his wearisome imprisonment, and even risked their lives for his sake.

Andronicus and Junia (v. 7), being as kinsmen of St. Paul, Jews by birth, well known to the other Apostles, and "in Christ" before St. Paul himself, must have been converted elsewhere than in Rome, most probably in Jerusalem. But when were they fellow-prisoners of St. Paul? If this description was written before his first imprisonment at Rome, we are left to conjecture that they may have shared some one of his many imprisonments, of which nothing more is known. But how much more forcible and appropriate is the description, if after his release and departure from Rome, he sent this salutation to two of those who had been his fellow-captives there. The word itself (συναριθμητός) confirms the conjecture, for it is used nowhere else in the N.T., except concerning Aristarchus (Col. iv. 10), and Epaphras (Phil. 23), both of whom were Paul's fellow-captives in Rome.

It has been thought a difficulty that none of the persons named in vv. 3–16, are mentioned in the Epistles written from Rome during the first imprisonment. "How is it" (asks Dr. Farrar), "that not one of these exemplary twenty-six are among the three Jewish friends who are alone faithful to him, even before the Neronian persecutions began, and only a few years after this letter was despatched (Col. iv. 10, 11)?"

The answer is easy, if the passage (vv. 3–16), was addressed to Rome after the first imprisonment. For in Philippians, the salutations are only general: "The brethren which are with me greet you. All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Caesar's household" (iv. 21, 22); in Colossians and Philemon, the persons named as sending salutations are St. Paul's companions and fellow-labourers, and there is not the slightest reason to believe that any one of them was a permanent inhabitant of Rome. It was not likely, therefore, that St. Paul, writing from a distance to Rome, should send them greeting: they probably left Rome when he did, if not before.

In like manner, it will be found, that
most of the difficulties felt in regarding vv. 3–16 as written at Rome in A.D. 58, are easily removed, if we suppose it to have been written after his first imprisonment. The accumulation of names, the endearing epithets, the characteristic descriptions of so many of the Roman Christians, no longer present any difficulties, but are, on the contrary, most natural after the Apostle's long imprisonment, with its many opportunities of gaining converts to the faith, of forming intimate friendships, and of receiving much necessary help and kindness.

The warning against false teachers (vv. 17–20) is not merely consistent with this supposition of a later date, but adds much to its probability. For during his imprisonment at Rome St. Paul writes to the Philippians (i. 15–17), "Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will: the one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds: but the other of love." It is evident that the warning (Rom. xvi. 17–20) is much more natural and forcible, if written after St. Paul had quitted Rome, leaving these false Teachers behind him.

If this theory, that Rom. xvi. 3–20 is part of a letter written to Rome after St. Paul's imprisonment there, be accepted as in itself probable, it will help to confirm the tradition of a second imprisonment, and the authenticity of the Pastoral Epistles.


1 Uncial Greek Manuscripts.

(a) The same as for the Gospels and Acts.

N Codex Sinaiticus contains the Pauline Epistles entire.

A. Codex Alexandrinus: wants 2 Cor. iv. 13—xiii. 6.

B. Codex Vaticanus: Heb. ix. 14—xiii. 25 by a later hand.

C. Codex Ephraem Syri: wants the following passages,—
Rom. ii. 5—iii. 21; iv. 6—x. 15; xi. 31—xiii. 10.

1 For references in the notes to § 9 for discussions on "The Law," and "The Flesh," see Appendix to this Introduction.
INTRODUCTION.

I. Codex Angelicus, formerly Passionei, of the 6th century, contains Acts (beginning at vii. 10), the Catholic Epistles, St. Paul’s, and Hebrews as far as xiii. 10.

P. Codex Porfirianus, a palimpsest of the 9th century, edited by Tischendorf in the 5th and 6th volumes of his “Monumenta Sacra Inedita.” It contains Acts, all the Epistles, and the Apocalypse, but is defective in the following among other passages: Rom. ii. 15—iii. 5; vii. 33—ix. 11; xi. 22—xii. 1. See Scrivener, p. 150.

The readings of all the MSS. hitherto mentioned, are quoted by Tischendorf (8), and of all except E, by Tregelles. The letters F, H, I, M, indicate certain ancient and valuable fragments of uncial MSS., of which notices will be found in Scrivener, pp. 154—160.

(2) Of Cursive Greek MSS. there are for St. Paul’s Epistles, nearly 300: the following are cited by Tregelles throughout his text, and frequently by Tischendorf.

17 (= Evang. 33), on parchment, of the 11th century, at Paris.
37 (Ev. 69), of the 14th century, at Leicester.
47, in the Bodleian, of the 11th century.

Tischendorf also names 67** as containing remarkable readings, very similar to B.

3) Versions.

The most ancient versions, especially the Latin, are of great importance for the criticism of the Greek text, being credible witnesses of its form at a time one or two centuries earlier than the oldest extant MSS.

The Old Latin, or Itala (it.), dating from the 2nd century, is represented in St. Paul’s Epistles chiefly by the Latin versions (d, e, f, g), attached to the Greek Uncials D, E, F, G. Tischendorf also quotes (g) certain fragments of the 6th century, attached to the Gothic version of the Wolfenbüttel palimpsests (Codex Guelferbytianus), which contain Rom. xi. 33—xii. 5; xii. 17—xiii. 1; xiv. 9—20; xv. 3—13.

A few fragments (f), have also been found on the covers of the Frisingen MS. at Munich, containing parts of Rom. xiv., xv., and other passages of St. Paul’s Epistles enumerated by Tischendorf (7), Proleg. p. ccxlv.

The Vulgate, or Latin version corrected by Jerome, is best represented by the two following MSS. of the 6th century.

Codex Amiatinus (am), edited by Tischendorf, and adopted by Tregelles as the basis of his Latin text, was formerly in the Monastery of Monte Amiata, but is now at Florence. “It was written about the year 551, by the Abbot Servandus” (Tisch. 8, p. ccxlvii.).

Codex Fuldensis (fu), in the Abbey of Fulda, in Hesse Cassel, was written in 546, by order of Victor, Bishop of Capua, and corrected and dated with his own hand. It is remarkable for the peculiar system of capitulation prefixed to the Epistle to the Romans, on which see above, § 8, p. 22.

On the Syriac, and other ancient versions used for criticism of the Text, the reader is referred to Tischendorf, Scrivener, or the Introductions to the N. T. by Tregelles, Bleek, and Hilgenfeld.

(4) Fathers.

Among the Greek Fathers, Origen stands pre-eminent as “the prince of ancient Critics” (Tischendorf). In his Commentary on the Romans, various readings are often expressly discussed, and in such cases his testimony is indisputable. Next to him Tischendorf ranks Clement of Alexandria, and Ireneæus: the work of the latter “Against all Heretics,” is extant for the most part only in a very ancient Latin translation; but an illustration of its great value will be found in our Additional Note on Rom. v. 6.

Chrysostom’s Homilies on all the Pauline Epistles are often useful to the critic of the text, as well as invaluable to the interpreter.

The earliest Latin Commentary on St. Paul’s Epistles is that which is found in the works of St. Ambrose, and usually ascribed to Hilary the Deacon (Ambrosiaster), who is supposed to have lived at the close of the 3rd century.

On the value of the Fathers as witnesses to the Text, see Tischendorf (7) pp. ccxl.—ccxix.
INTRODUCTION.

§ 10. Contents and Argument.

The main Divisions of the Epistle are clearly marked:

I. The Introduction, i. 1–15;
II. The Doctrine, "The Righteousness of God by Faith," i. 16—viii.;
III. The Doctrine reconciled with Israel's unbelief, ix.—xi.;
IV. Exhortation to Christian Duties, general and special, xii. i—xv. 13;
V. Conclusion, xv. 14—xvi. 27.

I. The Introduction:

(a) Address of the Epistle (i. 1–7);
(b) The Writer's Motives (8–15).

(a) The Introduction is marked throughout by an earnest desire to win for himself and for his Gospel the confidence and goodwill of an important Christian community to which as yet he was personally unknown. This motive is seen in the threefold description of the official character which gives him the right to address them, as being Christ's servant, duly called to the Apostleship, and set apart as a chosen vessel to carry a message of glad tidings from God (v. 1).

In that message God's promises to His ancient people are fulfilled in Him who was both born of the seed of David to be Israel's Messiah, and proved by the Resurrection to be that Son of God who giveth life unto the world and hath all the Heathen for His inheritance. The Apostle of One who is thus manifested as the Saviour of the world must speak in His name to "all nations," and therefore to those at Rome also who by a Divine calling are already His (vv. 2–6: see above, pp. 12, 13). To all such who are in Rome, whether Jew or Gentile, beloved of God as partakers of His holy calling, Paul the Apostle sends this greeting: "Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ" (v. 7).

(b) To make his Apostolic claims the more acceptable St. Paul expresses his personal interest in the welfare of his readers, in thanksgiving for their faith (v. 8), in prayer that he may be permitted to see them (vv. 9–12), and in an assurance that he has long desired and still is eager to fulfil the duty of preaching the Gospel at Rome (vv. 13–15).

II. The Doctrine: "The Righteousness of God by Faith."

(a) The Theme (i. 16, 17);
(b) The universal need of Righteousness (i. 18—iii. 20);
(c) The Universality of Righteousness by Faith (iii. 21—v.);
(d) The Sanctification of the Believer (vi.—viii.).

(a) Theme of the Epistle.

The mention of the Gospel, which St. Paul would fain have preached at Rome in person, leads naturally to a description of it as the great Theme of his Epistle (vv. 16, 17). In this brief statement of the subject we discern already the leading thoughts and main scope of the treatise which follows. The Gospel is no mere word of man, but (1) a "power of God" directed to man's salvation; a power which can not only do "what the Law could not do" (viii. 3), save from sin, but also create and impart a new life of righteousness.

(2) This "power of God unto salvation" is universal in its purpose, being needed and intended for "every one;" and in this universality "the Jew" is expressly included by name with "the Greek" or Gentile world. The priority assigned to the Jew in the received reading (πρῶτον) does not mean that he is to have a preference and advantage, but only that the salvation long promised to the Fathers is to be offered to him first: its condition is the same for him and for the Gentile: God's salvation is (3) for "every one that believeth." This definition of the Gospel as bringing salvation to every believer is confirmed in v. 17, on which see the notes.

(b) The Universal Need of Righteousness is seen in the unrighteousness of all, first of the Gentile (i. 18—32), and then of the Jew (ii. 1—iii. 20).

The foundation which St. Paul lays in this section (i. 18—32) is too broad and deep for an argument intended only to serve some occasional purpose arising out of the peculiar circumstances of the
INTRODUCTION.

Christians at Rome. Had it been his sole or chief purpose to remove the prejudices and abate the claims of Jewish Christians, there would have been no adequate motive for his elaborate description of the depravity of the Heathen world. So terrible a picture of sins against God and against nature, from some of the worst of which the Jews were comparatively free, must have been intended primarily to arouse the conscience of the Heathens themselves, and to prove their need of righteousness. Subordinate to this main purpose is the rhetorical use which the Apostle makes of the moral indignation which such a description could not fail to rouse in the Jew against the "sinners of the Gentiles."

Looking back from this point at the Introduction (vv. 1–15) we can understand St. Paul's anxiety to commend himself and his Gospel to the Romans, without assuming any intention either to attack or to conciliate an adverse Judaizing majority. His motive, which we can now clearly discern, was simply an earnest desire to win from all a favourable hearing for a Gospel which must at the outset be unwelcome both to Jew and Gentile, and more especially to the Jew, because it is founded on the fact that all alike are under sin, and exposed to God's wrath. The same motive explains why the order of v. 17 is reversed, and the Gentile first brought in guilty with the full assent of the Jew, who suddenly finds himself involved in the same condemnation: compare the note on ii. 1.

Knowing even more clearly than the Heathen "the judgment of God, that they who do such things are worthy of death," the man who judges them, and does the same, is without excuse (ii. 1, 2). No personal privilege can exempt him from judgment, for God is no respecter of persons, but will render to every man according to his deeds, to the Jew first and also to the Gentile (vv. 3–11). The law will not benefit the Jew unless he be a doer of the law: even the Gentile will be judged by the law written on his heart (vv. 12–16). In vain therefore the Jew glories in a law which he does not keep, and in a circumcision which is only that of the flesh, not of the heart (vv. 17–29).

iii. 1–8. The Jew's Objections Answered.

Has then the Jew no real advantage? Yes, the oracles containing God's promises. Though disbelieved by some, their truth is unimpaired: they shall yet be fulfilled (vv. 1–4: compare ix. 6; xi. 25–32).

Man's unbelief exalts God's faithfulness. Is God unrighteous then in punishing this unbelief? Nay, for then it would be unrighteous to judge any sin. Yet if sin is overruled unto His glory, why judge the sinner? Why should we not rather go on sinning to His greater glory? The very thought deserves God's righteous condemnation.

iii. 9–20. The Scriptures Confirm the Charge of Universal Sinfulness.

If the Jew is exempted from Judgment neither by the Law, nor by circumcision, nor by the promises which remain true in spite of his unbelief—What then remains? Can we claim to be better in fact than the Heathen? Can we say that we Jews are "doers of the law"? Nay, in no wise: for the charge before made, that all are under sin, is confirmed by our own Scriptures. They testify that all, Jews as well as Heathens, are transgressors of God's law: and that law is binding on the Jew to whom it directly speaks God's commandments, that his mouth as well as every other may be stopped, and all brought into judgment before God, because by law man cannot attain to righteousness, but only to knowledge of sin.

Even apart from the repeated mention of the name "Jew" in this and the preceding chapter, it is evident that the errors which St. Paul uproots, and the sins which he condemns, are not those of the Jewish Christian, but of the unbelieving Jew. In the readiness to judge others, and the presumptuous hope of personal exemption from God's judgment (ii. 1–10), in the arrogance, hypocrisy, and self-
complacency of the sinner who in the midst of his sins makes his boast of God and the Law, and is confident that he is "a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness" (17-24), in the absolute reliance on circumcision (25-29), in the daring protest, "Why yet am I also judged as a sinner?" (iii. 7), repeated in ix. 19, "Why doth he yet find fault?"—in all this we see something very different from the legal and ceremonial tendencies of Jewish Christianity, we see the glaring sins and errors of Judaism itself in its worst state of corruption.

(c) The Universality of the Righteousness of Faith.

From the universal need of the salvation described in i. 16, 17 St. Paul now passes on to its actual manifestation. He has shown that all alike are under sin, all exposed to God's wrath: the privileges of the Jew, though real and great, do not exempt him from judgment, nor does the law enable him to attain by his own works to righteousness. "But now," in the new dispensation of the Gospel, in contrast to wrath revealed from heaven against the unrighteousness of man, we see the "righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith." This is the second point in the proof of the Thesis laid down in i. 16, 17.

iii. 21-26. The Righteousness of God Made Manifest.

The essential characteristics of the righteousness of God are here combined.

(1) Independent of "Law" as a condition of earning righteousness, it is witnessed by "the law" as a Divine revelation (v. 21).

(2) The mode in which man receives it is "through faith in Jesus Christ," in which definition faith is seen to be the principle of that personal living union between Christ and the believer (v. 22) which is the root in man of all justifying and all sanctifying righteousness.

(3) Its universal destination "unto all and upon all them that believe" results from the nature of faith, as a condition corresponding to the true relation of all mankind to God, and therefore fitted to supply the universal want of "the glory of God" (vv. 22, 23; compare the notes on i. 16, 17 as to the nature of faith).

(4) The free and gratuitous character of God's salvation is seen, in that all who partake of it are justified not by merit but "freely by His grace" (v. 24).

(5) The substance of salvation, the gift which God's grace bestows and man's faith accepts, is "the redemption that is in Christ Jesus" (v. 24).

(6) The first cause of this redemption is God the Father's love: its method, "propitiation," i.e. an expiation for sin by which man is restored to God's favour: the efficient cause of propitiation, the one true sacrifice, Christ "in His own blood:" the appropriation by man of this redemption, "through faith:" the purpose of God in thus setting forth Christ,—"for an exhibition of his righteousness" because He had suffered the sins of former generations to pass unpunished in the forbearance which He exercised "in view of the exhibition of his righteousness" in this present time," that now He might be both righteous Himself as condemning sin and the author of righteousness to him, "that is of faith in Jesus," i.e. who sees in the death of Christ the death for sin which he has himself deserved, and the death unto sin of which he is henceforth to partake.

iii. 27-31. Justification by Faith Independent of Law.

The righteousness of God, not being earned by works of law, excludes man's boasting (vv. 27, 28), recognises one God as the author of salvation for Jew and Gentile (vv. 29, 30), and far from abolishing "Law," establishes it in its true character as a law of faith: compare viii. 4.

iv. 1-25. The Righteousness of God is Witnessed by the Law and the Prophets.

Even Abraham, the great pattern of
righteousness, was justified by faith and not by merit of works (vv. 1-5), in accordance with David’s description of the blessedness of free and undeserved forgiveness (vv. 6-8).

The righteousness of God is for all, not for the circumcised only: for circumcision was not the cause but the sign and seal of Abraham’s justification by faith, marking him out as the father of all them that believe (vv. 9-12).

The inheritance of the Promise, depending not on law but on faith, is made sure to all the seed (vv. 13-17).

Abraham’s faith, both in its strength, and in its object—“God who quickeneth the dead,” is recorded for our example (vv. 17-25).

V. 1-11. Redemption by the Death of Christ.

The blessings received by those who are “justified freely by God’s grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus” (iii. 24, 25) are Peace, Joy, and Hope of glory, all founded on God’s love, which having reconciled enemies by Christ’s death will much more surely save the reconciled by His life.

V. 12-21. The Universality of Salvation by Faith, like the Universality of Sin, is Based on the Unity of Mankind in Adam and in Christ.

In the preceding argument the universal sinfulness of man has been established as a fact to which experience and Scripture both bear witness, but simply as a fact without any declaration of the cause of its universality.

On the other hand the universal salvation which God has prepared depends on Christ alone: instead of each man earning the pardon of his sins by virtue of his own repentance and subsequent obedience to the law, One dies for all, and for His sake not only forgiveness but righteousness and life are bestowed on all that believe in Him (v. 6-11). The universality of salvation is thus traced to its cause in the principle that “the many,” “the all,” are included in “the One.”

The Apostle now extends and completes his argument by showing that the Old Testament traces the universality of sin and death to the same principle: the one man through whom sin and death came into the world, and passed upon all men, is a type of the One through Whom come righteousness and life to all (vv. 12-14).

But this comparison involves also a contrast: God’s grace is greater and more abundant than man’s transgression: righteousness and life are in their nature mightier powers than sin and death. If sin and death could pass from one to all, much more shall righteousness and life (vv. 15-19).

We notice in v. 18 a pregnant phrase “justification of life,” which combines and reconciles two leading elements of St. Paul’s doctrine of salvation. On these two elements taken separately two opposite systems of doctrine have been raised, namely justification by imputation only, and justification by or on account of actual righteousness wrought in man by faith working through love.

The phrase “justification of life” occurs at a point of St. Paul’s argument where these two elements of his teaching meet: for the doctrine of justification by faith without works of law ending with c. iv., and the doctrine of life in Christ, as the remedy for inherent sin and source of inherent righteousness, beginning at c. v., are both included in “justification of life.” Faith, whereby we receive God’s justifying sentence, is also the means by which we receive the new “life” that brings forth righteousness or holiness of living.

“If there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by law” (Gal. iii. 21). But no place has yet been found for law in this “justification of life.” St. Paul, however, now proceeds to show that “law” itself was in one way subservient to grace, even by multiplying transgression (vv. 20, 21).

Reserving his explanation of this purpose of the law to Ch. vii., the Apostle hastens at once to meet the formidable difficulty which so strange a statement could not fail to raise in the
mind not only of a conscientious Jew but of every thoughtful reader.

(d) The Sanctification of the Believer.

In iii. 8, St. Paul has alluded very briefly to a false charge that by his teaching he encouraged the wicked thought, “Let us do evil that good may come.” His doctrine of grace has in fact in all ages been misrepresented by unscrupulous opponents and perverted by hypocritical supporters. His own answer to the question, “Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?” should have made such perversion of his teaching impossible. That answer is founded on the same mystical union between Christ and the believer which is also the ground of his justification: and the doctrine of God’s free grace through faith in Christ is thus found to be the only sure foundation for holiness of life.

vi. The Moral Effects of Justification by Faith.

The believer baptized into the death of Christ both dies with Him to sin, and rises in Him to newness of life (vv. 1-11). Let this truth be realised henceforth in your lives (vv. 12, 13), for this is the right effect of being no longer “under law but under grace” (v. 14), that you are released from the bondage of sin, and set free for the service of God (vv. 15-23), free, and yet “servants to righteousness unto sanctification.”

vii. Deliverance from the Bondage of Law and of Sin.

Hitherto St. Paul has spoken of the law in a negative sense: he has shown that it had not in fact enabled the Jew (Ch. ii.), and according to the Scripture could not enable any man, to attain to righteousness by works, but only to a knowledge of sin (iii. 20); that it has no part in the manifestation of the righteousness of God, except as a witness (iii. 21); that as a law of works it could not exclude man’s boasting (iii. 27); that it was not attached as a condition to the inheritance of Abraham’s blessing (iv. 13); that it worketh wrath (iv. 15); that its effect was the imputation of sin, and the multiplication of transgression (v. 13, 20); and thus under law men were brought into bondage to sin (vi. 14).

Such a disparaging view of the law must have been a grievous obstacle to a conscientious but unenlightened Jew: it needed both to be explained and supplemented.

It is explained by the principle that the power of law is terminated by death: for example, as a wife is released from the law that binds her to her husband by his death, and is free to marry another, so the believer by the death of “the old man” with Christ (vi. 6) is released from the law, and free to be united to another, even Christ, who is raised from the dead (vii. 1-6).


If that former union was a bondage to sin, and if to be free from sin we must be free from the law, the question arises, “Is the law sin?” In answer to this question St. Paul proceeds to supplement his account of the law by showing its true nature, and its actual relation to sin (vv. 7-13). Sin, or in other words the perverse opposition of man’s will, is roused into activity by the law, and exhibits its exceeding sinfulness as a power working death by means of the law which was ordained to life. For the law in itself is holy, just, and good: it is “spiritual,” as being a Divine revelation, but it is not a life-giving spirit, and therefore cannot enable man to overcome the power of sin.


The Apostle confirms his vindication of the Divine Law by an analysis of the working of sin, as he had observed it in his own inner experience. At first he speaks of himself as if that part of his nature which in action predominates were the whole man; “The law is spiritual; but I am of flesh, sold under sin.” But closer observation reveals an inner conflict: the flesh, in
INTRODUCTION.

which dwelleth no good thing is not the whole man (v. 18), there is another “I,” consenting unto the law that it is good;” this better self, “the inward man” (v. 22), “the mind” (v. 23), or what St. Paul calls in 1 Cor. ii. 11, “the spirit of man that is in him,” delights in the law of God, but is overpowered by the sin which rules as a law in the members of the outward man. This true self cries in anguish, “Who shall deliver me?” and the cry is at once turned into thanksgiving by remembrance of the deliverance already wrought by God through Jesus Christ (vv. 24, 25).

viii. The Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus brings Liberty to the Children of God, and Comforts Them with the Hope of Glory.

The doctrine that man is justified freely by God’s grace through union with Christ (v. 12—21) has been defended against two chief objections of the Jew. It has been shown (1) in Ch. vi. that far from encouraging continuance in sin, the union with Christ implies in principle a death unto sin, and an entire release from its dominion; and (2) in Ch. vii. that the Law, though holy and spiritual in itself and recognised as such by man’s mind or spirit, cannot overcome the power of sin in the flesh, but rather becomes an occasion of strengthening its dominion.

The question, “Who shall deliver me?” is now to be answered: “The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus.” Sin already condemned in the flesh by Christ’s death is to be destroyed by “the Spirit of life” which He imparts for the fulfilment of the righteousness of the law (vv. 1—4). This Divine Spirit not only subdues “the mind of the flesh,” which “is enmity against God” and therefore “death,” but will at last give life even to the body now dead because of sin (vv. 5—13).

The same Spirit of Christ testifies that we are sons of God, and partakers of His inheritance of glory if we partake of His sufferings now (vv. 14—17). No present suffering is to be compared with that glory, for which the whole creation is groaning and sighing, and we ourselves are waiting in hope of its completion by the redemption of our body (vv. 18—25). Already we have help for our infirmity in the Spirit’s intercession (vv. 25—27), and the knowledge “that all things (even sufferings) work together for good to them that love God,” because they “are called according to His purpose.”

For whom He foreknew as loving Him, He predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, and that predestination cannot fail to be accomplished in their calling and justification, and glorification, because nothing can separate them from God’s love (vv. 28—39).

We pause for a moment to establish our interpretation of this most difficult and important passage by the authority of the first Christian Father, Clement of Rome, “who had seen the blessed Apostles and conversed with them, and still had the preaching of the Apostles ringing in his ears and their tradition before his eyes” (Iren. iii. 3, § 3). In the newly recovered portion of St. Clement’s Epistle to the Corinthians (lix. 9) we find a clear reference to Rom. viii. 28 in the words: “Who dost make many nations upon earth, and out of all didst choose them that love thee through Jesus Christ thy beloved Son, through Whom Thou didst chasten, sanctify, and honour us.”

III. The Doctrine reconciled with Israel’s Unbelief.

The purely doctrinal portion of the Epistle is concluded. Each part of the Theme proposed in i. 16, 17 has now been developed in a clear and closely connected argument. Without Christ all nations alike are lying under the wrath of God, all without excuse, the Heathen condemned by his own conscience (i. 32), the Jew by the law to which he trusts in vain to justify him by his own works (iii. 20). But now in Christ the righteousness of God is revealed from faith to faith, independent of law yet witnessed by the law and the Prophets, extending unto all them that believe God’s gifts of peace and hope and everlasting life.
INTRODUCTION.

That St. Paul has treated the doctrine of justification by faith with especial reference to the prejudices of the Jews is obvious. But it is not a necessary inference from this mode of treatment, that a Judaizing tendency prevailed among his readers.

The objections brought forward on the part of the Jew are inherent in the subject itself, and must have entered into a discussion of the doctrine to whomsoever addressed.

Moreover St. Paul’s own mind was full of the questions concerning Judaism, and the mode of treating it. The Epistle to the Churches of Galatia had been written but a short time before; there the Judaizing party had striven to the utmost to accommodate Christianity itself to Jewish prejudices. St. Paul had vehemently opposed this retrograde movement both in person and in his Epistle. Now he could regard the whole question of the relation of Judaism to the Gospel more calmly, deliberately, and comprehensively. For he was writing to a Church in which he had no personal antagonists, and where party-spirit had not yet embittered the great controversy: a Church moreover set in the midst of so numerous a colony of unbelieving Jews, that the question of their rejection was seen in all the greatness of its proportions.

Hence we see that the subject discussed in Chapters ix—xi. cannot possibly be regarded as a mere historical appendix, nor as a corollary to the previous doctrine: it is in fact the reconciliation of that doctrine to the great and pressing difficulty which had arisen from the rejection of the Gospel by the great mass of the Jewish people.

ix. 1–5. MOURNING OVER ISRAEL.

With seeming abruptness, yet in close connexion of thought, St. Paul passes from the joyful assurance of salvation for all the elect of God (viii. 28–39) to the mournful and mysterious contrast presented by the exclusion of the chosen people on whom so many and great privileges had been bestowed.

vv. 6–13. GOD’S PROMISE HAS NOT FAILED.

The present rejection of Israel is not to be regarded as a failure of God’s promise; the unbelief of some does not make the faithfulness of God of none effect, iii. 3; for the promise was not to all the seed of Abraham after the flesh, but to the chosen seed, not to Ishmael but to Isaac, not to Esau but to Jacob.

vv. 14–18. NOR IS THERE ANY INJUSTICE IN GOD.

Far be it from us to say that God is unjust in thus choosing one and rejecting another, before they have done good or evil. His choice is not determined by the merit of man’s works, but by His own free and undeserved mercy, for it is proved by His words to Moses and to Pharaoh that “on whom he will, he hateth mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.” On the reference to Pharaoh in v. 17 see the foot-note and the Additional note at the end of the chapter.

vv. 19–21. GOD’S ALMIGHTY WILL MAY NOT BE QUESTIONED.

If God’s will is absolutely free and irresistible, “why dost He yet find fault?” Why hold man responsible?

The Apostle first rebukes the arrogance of thus contending with God, and asserts that His rightful power (ἐξουσία) over man is as absolute and unquestionable as that of the potter over the clay that he fashions.

Had this been the only answer, the Jew could not have found fault with it, for it is drawn from his Scriptures; but St. Paul has another answer.

vv. 22–29. GOD’S JUSTICE AND MERCY VINDICATED.

After asserting God’s unquestionable right to deal with the creatures of His hand according to His Will, the Apostle proceeds to justify God’s actual dealing with Israel, as characterised by long-suffering towards those who were deserving only of wrath, and by mercy towards those whom He called both from
INTRODUCTION

among Jews and also from among Gentiles to be His people.

Moreover both the calling of the Gentiles, and the rejection of all except a small remnant of Israel, had been foretold by the Prophets,—a proof that there had been no failure of His promise in its true meaning.

v. 30—33. THE PARADOX EXPLAINED.

It is a strange result that Gentiles who were not consciously seeking righteousness attained to righteousness, while Israel, who sought, did not attain unto a law of righteousness. And wherefore? Because the Jews did not seek what the Gentiles attained, a righteousness of faith, but sought righteousness by works of law, and so stumbled against the Rock which was laid in Zion for a sure foundation to every one that believeth.

We must not leave this Chapter without drawing attention to the great importance of the statement of Christ's Deity in v. 5, and to the general misunderstanding of the passage concerning Pharaoh (v. 17) consequent on the defective translation of the original passage in the A. V. Both points are fully discussed in the Additional Notes to the Chapter.

x. 1—4.—THE CAUSE OF ISRAEL'S STUMBLING.

They sought to establish their own righteousness by works of law, and refused to submit to God's righteousness which is attained by faith, because they were ignorant that "law," regarded as a way of attaining to righteousness before God, is at an end in Christ, in order that righteousness may be extended to every one that believeth

v. 5—10. THE TESTIMONY OF MOSES.

Israel ought not to have been ignorant of "the righteousness which is of faith," for Moses himself not only "described the righteousness which is of law," but also speaks of another kind of righteousness, a religion of the heart, which is the righteousness of faith in Christ.

v. 11—21. THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF FAITH IS OFFERED TO ALL, BUT REJECTED BY ISRAEL.

St. Paul emphatically asserts the universality of the statement already quoted in ix. 33, "Whosoever believeth on Him shall not be ashamed" (Isai. xviii. 16) as proving that in the righteousness of faith there is no difference between Jew and Greek; and then from two other passages (Joel ii. 30; Isa. lii. 7) proves that the Gospel must be preached to all.

"But they did not all obey the glad tidings:" yet it was not from want of hearing, nor of warning, for Moses and Isaiah foretold both the reception of the Gentiles, and the disobedience of Israel.

xi. THE RESTORATION OF ISRAEL.

 Twice already the Apostle has intimated that the unbelief of the great mass of the Jews has not annulled the faithfulness of God's promises (iii. 3; ix. 6). The same thought is here brought into close connexion with the certainty of salvation for God's elect (viii. 28—39), "God hath not cast away His people, which He foreknew," the true Israel. But who are the true Israel? Not the unbelieving mass (compare ix. 6), but the "remnant according to election of grace." The existence of such a remnant of believing Israelites amid a general apostasy proves now, as in Elijah's days, that God had not rejected Israel as a people.

And as He has not rejected the people on account of the unbelief of the majority, so neither has He preserved the remnant on account of their own merit, but only of grace (v. 1—6).

What then is the result? The mass of Israel seeking righteousness of works obtained it not; the elect, foreknown of God, and chosen to be His people, obtained righteousness of grace through faith: and this hardening of the mass is what the Prophets have foretold as a just judgment from God (v. 7—10).

But what is God's purpose herein? Is it that they should fall finally? Far from it: already their stumbling has brought salvation to the Gentiles, and this transfer of God's favour shall provoke the Jews to jealousy, and so end in the
restoration of God's ancient people, and a new life of the world (vv. 11-15). Such a restoration is natural, for the holy root of the chosen race makes its branches holy: ye Gentiles are but grafts of wild olive enriched by that holy root. Boast not that natural branches were broken off to make room for you; for if God spared not them neither will He spare thee, and if they turn from their unbelief, the goodness and power of God which grafted thee contrary to nature into the good olive, shall much more surely graft in again the natural branches (16-24).

This Divine purpose, that the hardening of Israel should bring salvation to the Gentiles, and so lead at last to the restoration of all Israel, is a mystery revealed now, and long since indicated in Isaiah: and God's gracious purposes can never fail, but even disobedience is so overruled that He may have mercy upon all (25-32).

O depth of God's wisdom surpassing all that man's heart could conceive! O depth of inexhaustible riches, receiving from none but giving freely to all! For from Him as their first cause all things begin, through Him still working in them they work together, and unto Him they tend as the final cause of all: “To Whom be the glory for ever, Amen” (vv. 33-56).

It is impossible to look back on the whole course of the Apostle's argument, from the revelation of God's wrath against an ungodly world (i. 18) to this mystery of God's all-embracing mercy, without feeling that, whatever local, temporary, or personal circumstances may have induced St. Paul to address this letter to Rome, such an exposition of the Gospel could only have proceeded from the mind of one who was moved by the Holy Ghost to write for all ages and for all mankind. "A more far-reaching glance was never cast over the Divine plan of the history of the world" (Godet).

IV. EXHORTATION TO CHRISTIAN DUTIES.

The doctrinal part of the Epistle now concluded is followed by an exposition of Christian duty closely connected with it, and hardly less systematic and comprehensive. It consists of two main portions:

(a) The general duties of the Christian life (xii., xiii.);
(b) The special duty of mutual forbearance and charity in regard to things non-essential (xiv. 1-xv. 13).

(a) xii., xiii. The Christian's Duties towards God, and towards Man.

The Apostle has set forth "the mercies of God" in his survey of the Divine purpose and method of salvation. These mercies he now applies as motives to holiness, beginning with the central thought of self-consecration. Conform not even outwardly to the fashion of this world, but be inwardly transformed, your bodies being devoted to God's service, your minds renewed to know His perfect will (1, 2).

Presume not on special gifts, but as members of one body in Christ employ them for the good of all (3-8). Let love, the soul of all Christian virtues, animate your conduct towards your brethren in Christ, and towards all men, even your enemies (9-21).

Obey the rulers of the State, as powers ordained of God (xiii. 1-7). Fulfil the royal law of mutual love (8-10), and remembering that the day of Christ is at hand, put on the armour of light, put on the new man (11-14).

(b) xiv. 1—xv. 13. Special Exhortation to Mutual Forbearance between Christians.

Despise not the scruples of the weak conscience, neither condemn the freedom of the strong. We are all God's servants: do all things as unto the Lord: and prepare for His judgment, instead of judging one another (1-13). In things indifferent give no offence; for meat or drink lead not thy brother into sin (24-23).

Let the strong bear with the weak, as Christ has borne with us: receive one another, as Christ has received us (xv. 1-7). He came to fulfil God's
promises to Israel, and to extend God's mercy to the Gentiles: rejoice in Him, for ye are all His people (8–13).

The Apostle's reason for addressing to the Christians at Rome this special exhortation to mutual forbearance is to be sought in the divergence of views between the Jewish and Gentile believers: see above, pp. 17, 18.

V. CONCLUSION:

(a) The writer's motives and prospects (xv. 14–33);
(b) Concluding salutations (xvi.).

(a) Bear with my boldness in admonishing you, for I am a minister of Christ, to present the Gentiles as an acceptable offering (14–16). I glory therefore, yet only in what Christ has wrought through my preaching His Gospel to them who had not heard His name (17–21). Often hindered by this duty, I now am free to come to you on my journey into Spain, as soon as I have carried to Jerusalem the alms of the Gentile Churches here (22–29). Pray for my deliverance from the unbelieving Jews, for the acceptance of my service by the saints, and for my coming to you in joy. "And the God of peace be with you all" (30–33).

(b) Commendation of Phoebe (1, 2); Apostolic greetings (3–16); Warning against false teachers (17–20); Salutations from St. Paul's companions (21–23); Benediction (24); Doxology (25–27).

On the contents of this Chapter compare § 8, pp. 24–29.

There is a close correspondence between the Introduction and the Conclusion of the Epistle, both in form and thought. The section (a) answers to i. 8–15, while in (b) we find in the Doxology a fulness of thought and majesty of expression which harmonize well with the character of the opening address (i. 1–7).

APPENDIX.

"THE LAW," THE FLESH.

In several important passages of this Epistle it is essential to a right understanding of St. Paul's argument that we should be able to determine the exact meaning of the word "law" (νόμος) with and without the Definite Article.

"It must be admitted," says Bp. Middleton, 'On the Greek Article,' p. 303, "that there is scarcely in the whole N. T. any greater difficulty than the ascertaining of the various meanings of νόμος in the Epistles of St. Paul."

One of the earliest remarks on the subject is that of Origen on Rom. iii. 21: "Moris est apud Graecos nominibus ἀπὸ παραποιεί, quae apud nos possunt Articuli nominari. Si quando igitur Mosis legem nominat, solitum nominem praemittit Articulum: si quando vero naturalem vult intelligi, sine Articulo nominat legem." Though the form of the first sentence ("apud Graecos," "apud nos") shews that it is due to the Latin translator Rufinus, the rule about the use of the article seems to have proceeded from Origen himself: for it is the basis of his whole interpretation of Rom. iii. 21, both in the Commentary and in the Philocalia, cap. ix.

It is admitted on all hands that this rule, so far as it refers to the Law of Moses is generally true, i.e. that where the law of Moses is meant νόμος usually has the Article prefixed.

Is the rule true without exceptions?

If there are any exceptions, are they merely arbitrary, or can they be explained on any known principle, so as not to destroy the general rule?

In other words does St. Paul use νόμος and ὁ νόμος indifferently to signify the particular law of Moses?

Bp. Middleton maintains the general truth of the rule, admitting "no other exceptions than those by which words the most definite are frequently affected." We must first inquire on what principle the general rule is founded, and then consider the alleged exceptions.

A clear view of the nature of the Article, and of the effect of its insertion or omission, was long since given by Mr. T. S. Green, "Grammar of the N. T. Dialect," 1842, p. 132. "The Article is prefixed to a word, when it conveys an idea already in some degree familiarized to the mind, and in so doing
expresses something definite. Definiteness attaches to the general idea, when this idea is identified with one which has been already impressed upon the mind. The Article is a sign of this identification, and thus is closely but not primarily connected with definiteness.” (Slightly abridged.)

Again, p. 165: “Since the Article is prefixed to a word when its idea is already familiarized, and is a mark or intimation of that circumstance, the natural effect of its presence is to divert the thoughts from dwelling upon the peculiar import of the word, and is adverse to its inherent notion standing out as a prominent point in the sense of the passage, it being an unquestionable law that, while novelty excites attention and scrutiny, familiarity is commonly associated with a passing glance.”

The first passage to which Mr. Green refers (p. 171) as illustrating “the tendency of the presence of the Article to divert the attention from the peculiar inherent meaning of a word to which it is prefixed, and of its removal to recall it” is Joh. i. 1, Ὁσεὶ ἐπὶ τοῦ Λόγου: “Had the Article been prefixed, the sense would have been, that the Word was identical with the entire essence of the sole Deity. In the actual words Ὁσεὶ is the predicate; that is, all that is involved in the notion of Ὁσεὶ is predicated of the Word, namely the proper nature and attributes of Deity. The absence of the Article, further, admits of the Divine Word being possessed of this nature in common with other beings or Persons.”

The importance and correctness of this statement will be at once seen by referring to Professor Westcott’s note on the same passage in this Commentary: “It is necessarily without the Article (Ὅσος not Ὁσεὶ) inasmuch as it describes the nature of the Word, and does not identify His Person. It would be pure Sabellianism to say the Word was Ὁσεὶ.”

Again on Joh. v. 27, Dr. Westcott writes: “The omission of the Article concentrates attention upon the nature, and not upon the personality of Christ.”

Again on xix. 7: “The omission of the Article (υἱὸς Ὁσοῦ) concentrates attention upon the nature and not upon the personality of Christ.”

We thus see that the principle on which Mr. Green founded the general rule for the insertion or omission of the Article is accepted by Professor Westcott: we shall find presently that it is no less clearly recognised by Bp. Lightfoot.

Unfortunately Mr. Green was not consistent in applying his own principle to St. Paul’s use of the word νόμος: this, he writes, “is precisely a case in which it might be expected that the constant and familiar use of the word would lead to the dropping of the Article; and that such was the actual effect, may be concluded from such passages as the following: Rom. x. 4, τέλος γὰρ νόμου Ἰσραήλ, i Macc. ii. 21, καταληπτικὸς νόμον καὶ δικαιώματα.” (p. 228).

Mr. Green infers that we cannot safely conclude “that the Apostle never uses the anthropous word to signify the Jewish Law.” “But,” he adds, “it would scarcely be too Hardy an assumption, that the Apostle has been precise with respect to the Article in those passages of his writings where any ambiguity was undesirable.”

This uncertain mode of speaking virtually abandons many passages to the caprice, or preconceived opinions of individual Commentators. It will be made clear by a few examples that the question can hardly be said to have been as yet expressly and finally settled.

Dean Alford writes on Rom. ii. 12 ff. “Νόμος throughout signifies the law of Moses, even though anthropous, in every place except where the absence of the Article corresponds to a logical indefiniteness, as e. g. λαοῦς ἤ τιν νόμος, v. 14: and even there not “a law”: see note.” The note on v. 14 is, ‘are to themselves (so far) the law, not ‘a law, &c.’

Again, on ii. 13 (οὶ ἀκοραστικοὶ νόμοι), “νόμος was indisputably the law of Moses.”

These statements seem directly opposed to Mr. Green’s view of the effect produced by omission of the Article. They are equally opposed to Dr. Vaughan’s careful distinction of νόμος
INTRODUCTION.

We may first observe that the word (νόμος), of which νόμος is the usual rendering, has a very wide range of meaning. According to Fürst it means "doctrine, instruction, teaching paternal and Divine; hence the whole Mosaic law, and also the whole word of God, both law and ordinances, then the law specially, and particular laws and precepts, then metaphorically system and method (2 Sam. vii. 19)."

For an instance of the more general sense of the word we may refer to the note in this Commentary on Mic. iv. 2, "for the law shall go forth of Zion." "Rather, for out of Zion shall go forth a law. The Hebrew word for law literally signifies instruction. The old law is not what is here meant, but the fulfilment of it (Matt. v. 17, 18), the teaching of Christ."

Another point to be noticed is that in regard to the use of the Article the Septuagint follows the Hebrew very closely.

Thus the word νόμος is used to translate לֹא about 187 times, and only in about six passages do the Hebrew and the Greek differ as to the insertion or omission of the Article. In four of these places (Prov. xxviii. 4 (twice), xxi. 18, Isai. xxiv. 5) the LXX have improperly inserted it, as is well explained by Delitzsch in his note on Isai. xxiv. 5: "Understanding the earth as we do in a general sense, 'the law' cannot signify merely the positive law of Israel. The Gentile world had also a תורה or divine teaching within, which contained an abundance of divine directions (תורה)." With this view agree Jerome, Aben-Esra, Vitringa, Rosenmüller.

In Mal. ii. 8, 9 (אֶל הָעוֹלָה) the LXX have overlooked the Article in הָעוֹלָה.

Nor does this close agreement imply a departure from the general use of the Article in Greek: for "in Hebrew the Article is employed with a Noun to limit its application in nearly the same cases as in Greek or German (or English), namely, only when a definite object, one previously mentioned, or already known, or the only one of its kind, is the subject of discourse" (Gesenius, 'Hebrew Grammar,' § 109).
INTRODUCTION.

Of the 187 passages above mentioned 
\(\delta\ \nu\dot{\omega}m\) is used in 120 with other defining words which render the Article necessary; these examples need no discussion.

The same may be said of five other passages, in which \(\tau\omicron\nu\dot{\omega}m\) is dependent on a Noun which has the Article, either \(\tau\omicron\beta\beta\nu\lambda\omicron\nu\) or \(\tau\omicron\lambda\omicron\gamma\omicron\nu\omicron\) (2 Ki. xxii. 11, xxiii. 24, 2 Chr. xxxiv. 19; Neh. viii. 3, 9); and in one passage 2 Ki. xxii. 8, \(\beta\beta\nu\lambda\omicron\nu \tau\omicron\nu\dot{\omega}m\ \epsilon\rho\omicron\nu\), where \(\tau\omicron\nu\dot{\omega}m\) seems to be dependent on an anarthrous Noun, the Article before \(\beta\beta\nu\lambda\omicron\nu\) has been improperly omitted by the LXX from a literal adherence to the Hebrew, in which the antecedent Noun is in the construct state and therefore without the Article.

In eight passages (2 Chr. xxxi. 21; Ezr. vii. 10; x. 3; Neh. vii. 2, 7; x. 34, 36; xiii. 3) \(\delta\ \nu\dot{\omega}m\) has the Article because "the Law of Moses" is meant, i.e. the Pentateuch as a whole, or possibly in Ezr. x. 3 the particular law about the marriage of Priests. In Jer. ii. 8 (ὑποταγήν ἔστω) the LXX have added \(\mu\omicron\nu\) unnecessarily. In Zeph. iii. 4 Tromm reads ἀνεβοιν ἐστίν ὁν \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\), but Field has ἀνεβοισιν \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\), which agrees with the Hebrew.

Adding the four passages above mentioned in which the LXX have improperly inserted the Article, we have 140 passages in which \(\delta\ \nu\dot{\omega}m\) occurs, and out of these there are only eight, in which, without some further definition, it stands for "the Law" of Moses. In fact it is only in the later books 2 Kings, 2 Chronicles, Ezra and Nehemiah, that this limited sense of "the Law" is found.

It remains for us now to examine the forty-seven passages in which \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\) is used without the Article.

In twenty of these passages \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\) is followed by a Genitive defining the giver of the law \(\kappa\omicron\rhoï\omicron\nu\omicron, \Theta\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron, \tau\omicron\omicron\ \Theta\omicron\omicron\omicron, \mu\omicron\omicron\omicron\omicron, \mu\omicron\).

In three other passages (Neh. ix. 13; Mal. ii. 6; Prov. xiii. 15) \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\), followed by a Genitive, has a perfectly general sense "a law of truth," "a wise man's instruction."

In three passages \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\) is found with the Preposition \(\epsilon\omicron\) 2 Chr. xv. 3, \(\epsilon\omicron\ \sigma\omicron\ \nu\dot{\omega}m\), where it is perfectly indefinite, and Mal. ii. 8, 9 \(\epsilon\omicron\ \nu\dot{\omega}m\), on which see above, p. 43.

In two passages the genitive \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\) depending on an anarthrous Noun seems at first sight to mean definitely "the law."

But in the first of these passages 2 Chr. xxxiv. 15, \(\beta\beta\nu\lambda\omicron\nu \nu\dot{\omega}m\), the LXX have been again misled, as in 2 Ki. xxii. 8, by the omission in Hebrew of the Article before the Noun in the construct state: there they wrote \(\beta\beta\nu\lambda\omicron\nu\) \(\tau\omicron\nu\dot{\omega}m\), here more consistently \(\beta\beta\nu\lambda\omicron\nu \nu\dot{\omega}m\), while in both passages \(\beta\beta\nu\lambda\omicron\nu\) \(\tau\omicron\nu\dot{\omega}m\) would have been the right rendering.

In the other passage, Prov. vi. 23, ἰλίκως ἐντολὴ τοῦ νόμου καὶ φῶς is a mistranslation of the Hebrew, which means a "commandment is a lamp, and instruction (Torah) is light," the Articles being wrongly inserted in the A.V. See Delitzsch on the passage, and at p. 42 of his Commentary on Proverbs: "In vain do we look for the name Israel in the Proverbs, even the name Torâh has a much more flexible idea attached to it than that of the law written at Sinai: compare xxviii. 4; xxix. 18, with xxviii. 7; xiii. 14, &c."

In four of the remaining nineteen passages we find \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\) \(\epsilon\omicron\), which needs no remark. In three more (Deut. xxxiii. 3; Neh. ix. 14; Isai. ii. 4) the A.V. renders \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\) rightly without the Definite Article. In twelve passages (Prov. xxviii. 7, 9; Isai. ii. 3; viii. 16, 20; Jer. xviii. 18; Lam. ii. 9; Ezek. vii. 26; Mic. iv. 2; Hab. i. 4; Hag. ii. 11; Mal. ii. 7) the meaning is indefinite, "instruction" or "law," and the Article is wrongly inserted in the A.V., not being found in the Hebrew.

We thus arrive at the general result that \(\nu\dot{\omega}m, \text{without the Article, and without some defining Genitive, never means "the law" of Moses as a definite whole.}

This result is confirmed by the twenty-two passages in which \(\nu\dot{\omega}m\), with or without the Article, is found in the Apocrypha.

When it means definitely "the law," it either takes the Article (Ecclesiasticus xlix. 4; 2 Macc. iv. 17; vii. 9; Sus. vi. 62) or is followed by a defining Genitive or
INTRODUCTION.

Relative (Ecclesiasticus xxiv. 23; xxxix. 1, 8; xlii. 8; xlii. 2; xlv. 20; xlv. 17; xlv. 14).

In seven passages (Ecclesiasticus xxxii. 15, 24; xxxiii. 2, 3; xxxiv. 8; xxxv. 1; xlv. 5) the general meaning (Divine instruction, a precept, a law) is evident.

In 1 Mac. ii. 21 (καταλείπουσιν νόμου καὶ δικαιώματα), the passage quoted by Mr. Green, the omission of the Articles may be explained by the principle of enumeration” (Winer, p. 149, note 2; Middleton p. 99), or we may very properly retain the literal rendering (“to forsake law and ordinances”), thus bringing out into prominence the inherent force of the ideas. The three remaining passages (1 Mac. x. 37; xi. 34, 57) have no bearing on the question before us.


When we turn to the New Testament, we find that in the Gospels νόμος occurs thirty-two times, and has the Article in all except three passages. In Luke ii. 23, 24 ἐν νόμῳ Κυρίου, the Article is omitted either because a particular law is meant (Ex. xiii. 12; Lev. xii. 6), or more probably on account of the anarthrous Κυρίου, as frequently in the LXX.

In Joh. xix. 7 (“We have a law”) νόμος refers indefinitely either to the whole law, or to the particular law Lev. xxiv. 16,—indefinitely because the speakers do not assume that it was previously known to Pilate, or else to draw attention to the authoritative character of the code, as law which ought to be carried out.

These three exceptions in no way affect the truth of Origen’s rule when applied to the Gospels, that when the law of Moses is meant the Article is always used (δ νόμος). We also observe in the Gospels that δ νόμος, without further definition, has become the recognised title of the Mosaic Law, or Pentateuch.

In Acts δ νόμος occurs nineteen times, νόμος only once xiii. 39 (ἐν νόμῳ Μωυσείου), where the defining Genitive renders the Article unnecessary.

In the Epistle of St. James the word is found ten times. Twice only (ii. 9, 10) it means “the law” of Moses as a whole, and has the Article.

In three passages the omission of the Article brings out emphatically the character of the particular law meant as “a perfect law” (i. 25), a “royal law” (ii. 8), “a law of liberty” (ii. 12).

In the five remaining instances, ii. 11, and iv. 11, where νόμος recurs four times, it is to be rendered simply “law” as in the perfectly similar passage Rom. ii. 25, where see note.


Before proceeding to examine St. Paul’s usage of the word, let us remind ourselves that the question is whether νόμος without the Article is ever used, like δ νόμος, simply as a Proper Name of “the law” of Moses. We have found no such use in the LXX, Apocrypha, Gospels, Acts, or Catholic Epistles. Is it to be found in St. Paul?

The best mode of answering the question will be to classify the uses of the word first in other Epistles, and then separately in Romans.

In St. Paul’s Epistles, other than Romans, the word occurs forty-seven times, not including i Cor. vii. 39, where νόμυμ is interpolated.

(1) δ νόμος. In eighteen passages it has the Article i Cor. ix. 8, 9; xiv. 21, 34; xv. 56; Gal. iii. 10, 12, 13, 17, 19, 21, 24; iv. 21; v. 3, 14; vi. 2 (τ ν του χριστου); Eph. ii. 15; 1 Tim. i. 8.

In all these passages it means the law of Moses, except in Gal. vi. 2, and probably i Cor. xiv. 21.

(2) νόμος. (a) In three passages it is evidently, from the form of the sentence, indefinite: Gal. iii. 21, ἐὰν γὰρ ἐδόθη νόμος δ δοθένον κ θ. λ. ν. 23, κατὰ τῶν τούτων οὐκ έστι νόμος (a quotation from Aristotle: see note on Rom. ii. 14), 1 Tim. i. 9, δικαίω νόμος οί κείναι.

(b) In six passages we have the phrase ἐκ ἑργῶν νόμου (Gal. ii. 16, thrice; iii. 2, 5, 10), on the meaning of which see our note on Rom. iii. 20, and Bp. Lightfoot on Gal. iii. 10.

On this point we refer with pleasure to Mr. S. C. Green’s excellent ‘Handbook to the Grammar of the Greek Testament,’
INTRODUCTION.

p. 218; "Rom. iii. 20: ἐκ ἔργων νόμον κ. τ. λ., by deeds of law shall no flesh be justified, for by law is the knowledge of sin."

The omission of the Article shows the truth to be universal, applicable to all men, and to every form of law. Compare v. 28; Gal. ii. 16; iii. 2, 5, 10, in all which passages the Article is consistently omitted."

St. Paul's work would have been but half done, if he had only proved that man could not be justified by the works of the Law of Moses. What he has proved, and what gives to his Epistle its eternal significance is that by no works of law, by no legal obedience, can man in any age or nation earn for himself righteousness before God: if he could, Christ's death was needless (Gal. ii. 21).

(c) In Gal. ii. 19, νόμος ἀπόθανον, the law of Moses is regarded in its nature as "law": non quia Mosis, sed quia lex. "I died to law," as a principle of justification.

In Gal. vi. 13, οδόθε γὰρ οἱ περιτιμονομονοι αὐτοί νόμων φιλάσσοντον, the meaning is that the circumcisionists, who enforce the particular ordinance, are not themselves in the full and true sense "doers of law," because they omit "the weightier matters of the law—judgment, mercy, and faith." In both passages the absence of the Article gives prominence to the general idea "law," and the Apostle's thought gains breadth and force by the more exact rendering.

In the remaining eighteen passages νόμος without the Article is governed by a Preposition διά, ἐκ, εἰς, κατά, ἐντό: 1 Cor. ix. 20 (four times); Gal. ii. 19, 21; iii. 11, 18, 21, 23; iv. 4, 5, 21; v. 4, 18; Philipp. iii. 5, 6, 9.

The notion that in these passages νόμος is anarthrous simply because it is governed by a Preposition has nothing in its favour: it is opposed to the constant usage of the LXX, Apocrypha, and Gospels, in none of which (as we have seen above) is there a single passage where νόμος meaning "the law" of Moses loses its Article on account of being governed by a Preposition, except where the LXX overlooked the presence of the Article in the Hebrew. On the other hand in every passage where the Article is omitted, the context not only admits the exact rendering "law" but gains by it a more forcible and comprehensive meaning.

As a crucial test we may take the passage Rom. iii. 31, νόμον σον καταργούμεν διὰ τῆς πίστεως; μη γένοντα, ἄλλα νόμον λογάνομεν. Dean Alford's note is as follows: "νόμος not 'law' but 'the law,' as everywhere in the Epistle. We may safely say that the Apostle never argues of law, abstract, in the sense of a system of precepts—its attributes or its effects—but always of The Law, concrete,—the law of God given by Moses, when speaking of the Jews, as here: the law of God, in as far as written on their consciences, when speaking of the Gentiles."

Can we really believe that St. Paul meant, what is thus attributed to him, "we establish The Law," concrete, the law of God given by Moses to the Jews? Before answering, let the reader study what St. Paul had written a few months before to the Galatians (ii. 18) with Dean Alford's own commentary upon it: "If I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor." The force of the verse is,—You, by now re-asserting the obligation of the law, are proving (quod te) that your former step of setting aside the law was in fact a transgression of it."

It appears inconceivable that St. Paul, after this, should say "we establish the law," but it is perfectly natural that he should say, "we do not annul, nay we establish, law in its true character and essential nature as a revelation of the holy will of God," which can be fulfilled only through faith in Christ (viii. 4). See our notes on the passage.

We proceed to classify the various uses of νόμος in the Epistle to the Romans.

I. We find ὁ νόμος about thirty-five times, sometimes in a tropical sense (as in vii. 21, 23; viii. 2), but usually meaning the law of Moses.

II. In about forty passages νόμος is without the Article, and its meanings may be classified as follows:—

(a) νόμος "law" in a tropical sense, "a ruling principle."
INTRODUCTION.

Rom. ii. 14, ίαντος εἰσὶ νόμοι.
" iii. 27, διὰ νόμον πάτητω.
" vii. 23, ἐτέρων νόμων ἐν τούτῳ μέ-

λει τούς.
" 25, νόμῳ ἀμαρτίας.
ix. 31, νόμοι δικαιοσύνης.
" 14, εἰς νόμον [δικαιοσύνης].

No one could think of applying these
passages to the Law of Moses.
(8) νόμου "law" in an unlimited sense,
in negative or interrogative sentences.

iii. 27, διὰ τοῦ νόμου;
iv. 15, οὗ γάρ οὐκ ἦστιν νόμος.
v. 13, μὴ δικαίως νόμοι.

To these passages we cannot hesitate to add

ii. 14, τὰ μὴ νόμοι ἐχοντα,
" " ὅστις νόμον μὴ ἔχοντες.

See the notes on this verse.
(9) In another class of passages the
omission of the Article brings into pro-
minence the nature of "law" as a
general principle:

ii. 17, ἔπαινατην νόμοι.
" 25, ἐὰν νόμον πράσσητο.
" " ἐὰν δὲ παραβάσης νόμον ἴα.
" 27, παραβαύταις νόμοι.

iii. 31, νόμοι οἷς καταργοῦμεν;
" " ὅλα νόμοι ἴσονον.
v. 20, νόμος δὲ παρεισηλθεν.

vii. 1, γινώσκοντες γὰρ νόμον λαλ.
vii. 2, ἀνεδροφείται νόμος.
x. 4, τέλος γὰρ νόμου Χριστοῦ.
xiii. 8, νόμου πεπληρωμένον.
" 10, πληρώματος οἷς νόμου ἡ ἀγάπη
After carefully studying these pas-
sages we shall feel no doubt that the
same general idea of "law" is to be
found in the following passages:

ii. 12, δοῦν τὸ νόμον ἤμαρτων.
" διὰ νόμου κρίθησονται.
ii. 23, δὲ εἰς νόμον καυχᾶσα.
iii. 20, διὰ γὰρ νόμου ἐπέγνωσε σο-
ματις.

iii. 21, χαρίς νόμοι δικαιοσύνην πεφα-
νώστα.
iv. 13, οὗ γάρ διὰ νόμου ἔπαγγελλα.
iv. 14, οἳ ἐκ νόμου.
v. 13, ἀκοὶ γὰρ νόμου ἀμαρτία ἤ.
vi. 14, οὗ γάρ οὐτοσ ἐπὶ νόμον.
" 15, οὖς ἔσχαν ἐπὶ νόμον.

vii. 7, ἀμαρτίαν οὐκ ἔγραψεν εἰ μὴ διὰ

νόμου.
" 8, χαρίς γὰρ νόμου ἀμαρτία νεκρά.
" 9, ἔδωκεν χαρίν νόμον ποτέ.
iii. 20, εἰς ἔργων νόμοις ὁ δικαιοθῆται.
" 28, χαρίς ἔργων νόμος.
ix. 32, ὅτι εἰς ἔργων [νόμοι].

In the only remaining passage vii. 25,
νοτ δουλεύσαι νόμῳ Θεοῦ, we might ex-
plain the omission of the Article as in
Luke ii. 23, but the antithesis νόμῳ
ἀμαρτίας shows that the proper render-
ing is "a law of God" "a divine law."
See note.

In this last class (9) are found the
passages, which have been thought to
prove most certainly that νόμος is used
indifferently with ὁ νόμος as a Proper
Name for "the Law" of Moses.
For a more correct interpretation we
must refer to the foot-notes on each
passage.

We may however refer here to one
or two passages in which, at first sight,
it may seem difficult to maintain the
correct translation of the indefinite νόμος.

In Phil. iii. 5, κατὰ νόμον Φαρισαῖος
(cited above, p. 43), if we introduce the
definite sense "the Law," we should be
obliged to include the Oral Law, for it
was the fundamental principle of the
Pharisees to make the Oral Law as
binding as the written Law of Moses.
The real meaning however is that St.
Paul had been as strict as any Pharisee
"in regard to law," because he had
looked upon law as the principle of
justification before God.

In 1 Cor. ix. 20, τοὺς ὑπὸ νόμου ὡς
ὑπὸ νόμοι, οὐκ ἔστιν οὐτὸ νόμοι, St.
Paul's meaning is that he was not, like
the unconverted Jews, "under law"
as a condition of righteousness. In no
other sense could he say that he was not
himself under the law, unless the law
were limited to the Ceremonial as dis-

tinct from the Moral Law.

But can we adopt this distinction?
Can we say that St. Paul's expression,
"Ye are not under the law, but under
grace," applies only to the Ceremonial
and not to the Moral Law? It is clearly
impossible. For what is the example
chosen by the Apostle to prove that we are delivered from the Law? It is no outward ordinance, no ceremonial observance, but a moral precept, the deep heart-searching principle of moral obedience. "Thou shalt not covet" (Rom. vii. 7, μὴ ἐπιθυμήσῃς). This is the law of which St. Paul says that it wrought in him all manner of concupiscence, and that sin took occasion by it, and slew him. How could these deadly effects result from the moral law which is holy just and good, ordained to life, except from its being perversely regarded as a means of earning justification, which its nature as law forbids?

Lastly, as the best apology for a long discussion, we will quote the weighty words of Bp. Lightfoot, "on a fresh Revision of the New Testament," p. 99. "The distinction between νόμος and δὲ νόμος is very commonly disregarded, and yet it is full of significance. Behind the concrete representation—the Mosaic law itself—St. Paul sees an imperious principle, an overwhelming presence, antagonistic to grace, to liberty, to spirit, and (in some aspects) even to life—abstract law, which, though the Mosaic ordinances are its most signal and complete embodiment, nevertheless is not exhausted therein, but exerts its crushing power over the conscience in diverse manifestations. The one—the concrete and special—is δὲ νόμος; the other—the abstract and universal—is νόμος. To the full understanding of such passages as Rom. ii. 12 sq., iii. 19 sq., iv. 13 sq., vii. 1 sq., Gal. iii. 10 sq., and indeed to an adequate conception of the leading idea of St. Paul's doctrine of law and grace, this distinction is indispensable."

We will only add that "law" assumes this form of an imperious principle opposed to grace and liberty only when it is viewed as the condition of justification, the means of attaining to righteousness before God through the merit of good works. Viewed according to its true idea as the expression of God's will, and the guide of man's obedience, it "is holy, just, and good," "spiritual," and "ordained to life" (vii. 10, 12, 14).

The Flesh.

The word "flesh" (σῶμα) occurs twenty-eight times in Romans, and frequently in St. Paul's other Epistles, especially Galatians: it has various meanings which must be carefully distinguished, if we wish to have a clear understanding of the Apostle's teaching in many important passages. The inquiry has been made more necessary by the efforts of recent writers to show that St. Paul's use of the words "flesh" and "spirit" agrees not so much with the Old Testament as with the dualism of the Greek philosophy of his age.

This view of St. Paul's doctrine of "the Flesh" is adopted with various modifications by Holsten, R. Schmidt, Lüdemann, and Pfleiderer. Their several views are briefly stated and compared by Wendt in a good monograph "Die Begriffe: Fleisch und Geist;" Pfleiderer's views are contained in his 'Paulinism,' pp. 35-67. We can only notice the chief points of the theory. The Finite and the Infinite, Man and God, are said to be conceived by St. Paul as "Flesh" and "Spirit." These are contrasted first in a physical sense. "Flesh" is the earthly, material, living substance of man's body; even the "soul" (ψυχή) is included in the "flesh," being the vitality or animating force of its earthly matter. The antithesis to "flesh" is "spirit," a higher material but not earthly substance, belonging exclusively to the Divine nature, and having as its essential characteristic a life-giving force. According to one view (Holsten's) the whole man is made up of "flesh": "spirit" forms no part of his nature, but is simply transcendental and Divine (Wendt, pp. 80, 86).

"Flesh," in its physical aspect, is weak, transient and perishable: in the intellectual world it is the principle of error: in the sphere of morals, it is the principle of evil, and here it comes into direct conflict with "spirit," as an opposing force (ib. p. 81).

"Thus from the opposition of physically different substances, as set forth in 1 Cor. xv. results the dualism of antagonistic moral principles" (Pfleiderer, i. p. 54).
INTRODUCTION.

"Flesh and Spirit both are to Paul not inert but active substances (Rom. vii. 5 ff.). The flesh works as sensual desire, the spirit as non-sensual will" (Holsten, 'Das Evangelium d. Paulus,' p. 127).

This idea of the "flesh" is supposed to pervade St. Paul's system of doctrine: it explains his view of the Law, of Sin, of Christ's Person and work.

(1) Disregarding the ceremonial ordinances as having reference only to the "flesh," he recognises the Moral Law as spiritual and divine.

(2) Sin has its natural source in the "flesh," which is in itself unholy, in opposition to "spirit" which is holy. But the sin thus actually grounded in man's nature (ἁμαρτία) is at first unconscious and guiltless, and is thus distinguished from conscious transgression (παράβασις). Indwelling sin is thus a real though unconscious tendency of the "flesh" to strive against the "spirit," and the spiritual law, and thus it inevitably and of necessity produces conscious transgression and the sense of guilt (ib. p. 82).

(3) Christ even in His pre-existent state is regarded as man, the heavenly spiritual man: His "flesh" belongs not to His permanent Being, but only to His earthly life.

Sin (ἁμαρτία, not παράβασις) dwelt in His flesh as in that of other men: and hence the indwelling power of sin was destroyed in the destruction of the earthly substance of His flesh.

The "new life" of believers consists in the gift of the Divine spirit whereby they appropriate and realise in their own persons this effect of Christ's death, by continually subduing the flesh to the spirit, a process which will be perfected only in the end of the world, when matter, in its grosser form, will be wholly overpowered by spirit (ib. p. 83).

It is evident even from this brief and imperfect sketch that in this so-called Pauline doctrine we have quite another gospel, and not that which St. Paul has been usually supposed to preach. The theory, in all the various forms under which it is presented, is mainly founded upon the assumption that St. Paul regards the "flesh" as essentially sinful.

"It thus involves the necessary consequence that our blessed Lord not only bare "the likeness of sinful flesh," but that His flesh itself was sinful: see note on viii. 3.

It will not then be thought a needless labour if we try to ascertain what meaning the Apostle really attached to a word so important in his teaching as "the flesh."

1. In its original and proper meaning σάρξ denotes the material of the living body, whether of man or of other animals, as in Lev. xvii. 11.

In this sense it occurs in ii. 28, "circumcision, which is outward in the flesh": compare Bp. Lightfoot's note on Col. i. 22, "in the body of his flesh." It must be observed that in xiv. 21, "to eat flesh," the Greek word is not σάρξ but κρέας, which means dead flesh, a distinction rightly observed by the LXX in translating the Hebrew word (食べ) which means flesh either dead or living.

2. In the common Hebrew phrase "all flesh" (Gen. vi. 12, 13, 19; vii. 21) all earthly living things are included with man, except where the context limits the meaning to mankind (Job xii. 10; Ps. lxv. 2; Joel. ii. 28). In Rom. iii. 20, ὃ διακαταθήκηται πάσα σάρξ ἐκτὸς ἁπέρον, a quotation from Ps. cxlii. 2, St. Paul has substituted "no flesh" for "no man living," and the change may have been made on purpose to strengthen the contrast between man, in his imperfect nature, and the God before whom he stands.

3. "Flesh" is applied by St. Paul to human kindred, as in ix. 3, "my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh;" xi. 14, "my flesh." This usage, like the preceding, is derived from the Old Testament: see Gen. xxxvii. 27, "he is our brother, and our flesh." We cannot see that it necessarily implies, as Wendt supposes, p. 159, a contrast between the merely human relation, and the relation of man to God, or between "flesh" and "spirit." The nature derived by kinsmen from a common ancestor is simply described by that part of it which is visible and palpable.

In ix. 8, on the other hand, there is an express contrast made between "the
INTRODUCTION.

children of the flesh" and "the children of the promise," equivalent to the contrast in Gal. iv. 29 between him "that was born after the flesh" and "him that was born after the Spirit."

In iv. 1, where Abraham is called "our forefather according to the flesh," a similar contrast seems to be implied between a merely natural and a spiritual relation.

In neither passage however does the contrast, expressed or implied, involve a judgment upon the moral quality of "the flesh," but it is distinguished from "the Spirit," as that which is merely natural from that which is above nature.

In this usage ὁμός represents man's purely natural, earthly condition, a condition in which he is subject to infirmity, suffering, and death, subject also to the temptations which work through the senses and their appetites, but not originally and essentially sinful.

It is in this sense that Christ is said in i. 3 to have been "made of the seed of David as to the flesh," and in ix. 5 to have sprung "as concerning the flesh," from Israel. In both passages ὁμός denotes what was simply and solely natural in his earthly life.

4. Though "the flesh" is not essentially sinful, it is essentially weak, and hence the word is used to describe man in his weakness, physical, intellectual, or moral.

As connoting mere physical weakness ὁμός is found in several passages of St. Paul's Epistles (2 Cor. iv. 11; vii. 5; xii. 7; Gal. ii. 20; iv. 13) but not in Romans. We may remark that such a passage as Gal. ii. 20, "the life that I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God," is decisive against the notion that "flesh" is something essentially sinful.

Yet mere physical weakness of the flesh may be a hindrance to man's spirit, as in Matt. xxvii. 41, "the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak;" and the human spirit thus hampered by the weakness of the flesh is so far unfitted to be the organ of the Spirit of God.

This opposition of "the flesh" to all that is spiritual is more clearly marked, when "the flesh" is regarded as the cause of intellectual weakness: this is the case in Rom. vi. 19, "I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh," a passage which should be compared with 1 Cor. ii. 4, iii. 1.

5. Before we proceed to examine the passages in which St. Paul speaks of "the flesh" in its ethical quality as affected by sin (ἁμαρτία), it will be desirable to notice how those who would prove that the Apostle regards "the flesh" as essentially sinful endeavour to remove the obstacle presented by Rom. v. 12 to the acceptance of their theory.

It is admitted by Pfleiderer ('Paulinism,' p. 45) that the words sin entered into the world "undoubtedly imply the entrance of something new, which consequently did not previously exist at all," and therefore "it is quite out of place to introduce here the doctrine of the ὁμός as the natural principle of sin, for this passage expressly exhibits the principle of sin not as natural, but as of historical origin."

This evident meaning of Rom. v. 12 is admitted to be inconsistent with the doctrine attributed to St. Paul in Rom. vii., that "the flesh" is originally and by its own nature, prior to the first man's transgression, the principle of sin. But instead of regarding this formal contradiction as a reason for doubting his own view of the doctrine in Rom. vii., Pfleiderer finds in it a reason for setting aside what he has already admitted to be the unquestionable meaning of v. 12:

"If we are compelled to confess that there is a formal contradiction between Rom. v. 12 f. and Paul's doctrine of the sinful ὁμός, we are all the more justified in penetrating through the obvious form of the doctrine in Rom. v. 12 f. to the speculative idea embodied in it, which is so plainly suggested by the actual words of Paul, where he identifies the act of Adam with the common act of all. So soon as we grasp the thought that it was not in truth the first man as an individual who was the subject of the fall, but man as man, we see the historical beginning to be merely the form which expresses the universality of the principle which has no beginning; and thus the sub-
stantial agreement of the passage with the line of thought in Rom. vii. is placed beyond doubt."

Before we can consent thus to set aside the obvious and acknowledged sense of Rom. v. 12 in favour of a "speculative idea" altogether contradictory to "the Jewish theological doctrine" (Pfleiderer, p. 46), we ought to be fully convinced that the proposed interpretation of the Apostle's line of thought in Rom. vii. is at least as obvious and as certain, as his meaning in Rom. v. 12 is acknowledged to be. In other words, it ought to be shown that in Rom. vii. "the flesh" is distinctly declared to be originally and in its own nature sinful, and that no other interpretation is admissible.

We proceed to examine this point.

In vii. 5, "when we were in the flesh" St. Paul speaks as one who is "in the flesh" no longer: "the flesh" therefore cannot here mean the material substance of the body per se, nor this earthy bodily state per se, but only as subject to some quality formerly attached to it, namely, as the context shows, a predominant sinful propensity. This quality is therefore accidental and separable, and not of the essence of "the flesh" considered as the material substance of the body: and so St. Paul can write "the life that I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God" (Gal. ii. 20), a passage which, as clearly as Rom. vii. 5, refutes the notion that "the flesh," i.e. the material living substance of the body, is essentially sinful.

The next passage in which the word occurs is vii. 18, "For I know that in me, that is in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing." Here not only is the moral weakness and worthlessness of "the flesh" asserted in the strongest possible terms, but the utter absence of good is alleged as evidence of something worse than weakness, of positive indwelling sin (v. 17).

"The flesh" then is regarded by St. Paul as a dwelling-place, and seat, not necessarily the only seat, of sin: but it is important to observe that his judgment is the result of practical experience (οἶδα), not of any speculative analysis of the ideas of "flesh" and "sin." He found as a fact sin dwelling in his flesh: we may add that he regarded this as a fact of universal experience (vii. 9—20): but we have no reason to suppose that he regarded sin as inseparable from the very essence of "the flesh": we are still far from the conclusion that in the Apostle's mind "the flesh is by its nature and from the beginning the principle of sin" (Pfleiderer, p. 62).

We pass on to vii. 25: "So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin."

Here the form of the sentence distinguishes "the flesh" from "the sin" which gives law to it, as clearly as it distinguishes "the mind" from God whose law it serves. Sin in fact appears not as an essential property of the flesh, but as a power which has brought it into bondage.

The flesh thus ruled by sin becomes a chief source of opposition, not only to the better impulses of "the mind," but also to the law of God and to the influence of His Spirit. Hence it naturally becomes personified; and that which was a mere material substance, morally inert, is invested in the Apostle's thought with a spontaneous energy and a living will, with affections and lusts, that war not only against the soul, but against God, so that "the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these are contrary the one to the other" (Gal. v. 17).

It is in this sense that "the flesh" is so often mentioned in Rom. vii. as a principle pervading all man's earthly life, and ruling it in opposition to all that is spiritual and Divine: compare the notes on viii. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 12, 13; xii. 14: also see the notes on vii. 14 (σάρκινος) and xv. 27 (σαρκωμός).

The preceding references include every passage in the Epistle in which σάρκις and its derivatives occur. But one of these passages (viii. 3) requires to be further noticed.

Its true interpretation depends on our holding fast the original meaning of "the flesh" under every modification to which it is subjected in the Apostle's use. When it is said that the law
"was weak through the flesh," we see that St. Paul is regarding "the flesh" in that point of view which he has fully explained in vii. 14–25, that is to say, he regards "the flesh" not only as morally worthless, devoid of all good (vii. 18), but as positively opposed to the law which is spiritual (v. 14), and as exercising such dominion over man's whole life that while the mind consents unto the law that it is good (v. 16), the will is not able to give effect to its better impulses, but is forced, as it were, unwillingly to do that which the conscience hates (v. 15). Against this controlling power of "the flesh" the law was weak.

But God sent his own Son in the likeness of this same flesh, which had in all men become "flesh of sin." In our notes on this passage we have fully discussed the meaning of the expression "likeness of flesh of sin," and have, as we believe, proved that it does not by any means imply that Christ's own flesh was sinful. It may be well to state the opposite view in the words of one of its most able and moderate advocates: "By means of the πνεῦμα δύναμινος, which constituted His personality (Rom. i. 4), Christ was free from personal sin; not merely from sinful actions, but from any personal inward experience whatsoever of sin as His own: He was one "who knew no sin," 2 Cor. v. 21.

Notwithstanding this, He partook according to the flesh, or according to His outward man, of the universal human principle of sin, for He had as the material of His body the same flesh of sin as all other men" (Pfeiderer, 'Paulinism,' i. 152). This view is further connected, as we might expect, with a theory of Christ's pre-existent nature very different from that which St. Paul is usually supposed to teach. According to Pfeiderer Christ "was essentially and originally a heavenly man" (p. 132). He is the perfect image of God only so far as the Divine essence is "capable of manifestation." "But this being the very image of God is so far from being equal to Him, that on the contrary Christ's Lordship over the community and the world implies his unconditional subordination to God" (p. 135).

His being "in the form of God" (Phil. ii. 6) "by no means implies that He Himself was also God (Θεός ὁ Λόγος); on the contrary, the Pauline notion of being in the image of God distinctly includes within itself that of being the pattern of humanity" (p. 138).

In this theory we see one of the necessary results of the writer's misinterpretation of the "likeness of sinful flesh": if Christ's own flesh is assumed to be sinful, we can escape from the intolerable thought that sin was in the Manhood taken into God, only by denying the Godhead of the Son.

On the contrary hold fast throughout, as the same writer frequently insists, that "the flesh" is everywhere "the material substance of the body" (pp. 48, 49, 57), and be content to combine with this what the same author (p. 52) calls "the common Hebraic notion of σάρξ, according to which it signifies material substance which is void indeed of the spirit but not contrary to it, which is certainly weak and perishable, and so far unclean, but not positively evil,"—which in all men except Christ is corrupted and defiled by sin, but is neither sin itself, nor the original source of sin, nor in its essence sinful,—and so we can understand how Christ by taking his flesh in its pure essence without sin, and preserving its sinlessness in every stage of our earthly existence through life and unto death, "condemned sin in the flesh," condemned it as having no rightful place or power there, condemned it as an enemy to be by His help conquered and cast out.

The method of interpretation which we have now applied to every passage in which the word σάρξ occurs in the Epistle to the Romans is equally applicable to its use in other Epistles, and in the Bible generally. There is not, as we believe, a single passage which contains the doctrine that the flesh is the source of sin and essentially sinful,—a doctrine which dishonours not only man's nature, but the Father who created us, and the Son who for our redemption was made flesh, and dwelt among us.
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE

ROMANS.

CHAPTER I.

1 Paul commended his calling to the Romans, 9 and his desire to come to them. 16 What his gospel is, and the righteousness which it shows, 18 God is angry with all manner of sin. 21 What were the sins of the Gentiles.

PAUL, a servant of Jesus Christ,
called to be an apostle, *sepa-
rated unto the gospel of God,
2 (Which he had promised afore
by his prophets in the holy scrip-
tures,)

called to be an apostle.] A called apostle.
In proof of his authority St. Paul now adds the more special designation of his office: he is an "apostle" in the full and proper sense, like the twelve whom Christ so named (Luke vi. 13), and, like them, not self-appointed, nor of man's choosing, but "called," and sent by Christ himself (Gal. i. 1; Acts xxvi. 17, ἐκ Θεοῦ ἐποιήθη εἰς).

separated.] Set apart. The Divine call at Damascus, in which God's electing purpose was accomplished (Gal. i. 15), was the crisis in St. Paul's life which determined his future course: henceforward he was a chosen vessel to bear Christ's name before Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel" (Acts ix. 15; xxii. 14, 15.) Thus he had been for ever "set apart" from other men not called to the same office, and from other pursuits, "unto the gospel of God." "Gospel" means here the actual announcement, the living utterance of "good tidings," not only the facts and doctrines contained in the gospel (see note on Mark i. 1, and 1 Cor. i. 17; Gal. ii. 7; 1 Thess. iii. 2). Here, as in Gal. i. 6, 2 Cor. xi. 4, εὐαγγέλιον is used without the article, because St. Paul would indicate the nature and quality of the Gospel as a Divine message—"good tidings from God."

2-5. From himself and his office St. Paul passes on, with thoughts kindling and expanding at the mention of the Gospel, to declare its relation to ancient prophecy (v. 2), and its great subject, the Son of God, in His Incarnation (v. 3).

His Resurrection and Lordship (v. 4), and His manifestation to the world through His Apostles (v. 5).

2, 3. The connection with the previous
3 Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh;

verse must not be interrupted by brackets, as in the Authorised Version: both sense and construction flow on—"the glad tidings of God which he promised concerning His Son."

The prophets foretell both the publication of the Gospel and its contents: "the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem" (Mic. iv. 2), "O Jerusalem, that bringest good tidings, lift up thy voice with strength" (Isai. xl. 9), "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace" (Isai. lii. 7; Nah. i. 15). These are but a few out of many passages which foretell the future proclamation of a message from God, apart from any description of its contents. But St. Paul not only seeks to enhance the majesty of the Gospel as thus heralded by prophecy; he also calls God's chief ambassadors "his prophets," as witnesses to the truth of its contents.

For in vv. 3, 4 he brings forward two historic facts of paramount importance, which identify the Son concerning whom glad tidings were promised with Jesus whom Paul preaches. The prophets speak of One who is to be born of the seed of David (Ps. lxxxix. 16; Jer. xxiii. 5), and is to be raised from the dead (Ps. ii. 7; xvi. 10; Acts ii. 25-32; xiii. 32-37); the Gospel tells of Him who was born and was raised. That these two facts form the very foundation of St. Paul's teaching is clear from this passage and a Tim. ii. 8: "Remember Jesus Christ raised from the dead, of the seed of David, according to my gospel." Compare Acts xiii. 23, 30.


Concerning his Son. The essence of the Gospel, as divinely imparted to St. Paul (Gal. i. 16) and preached by him (2 Cor. i. 19), was the revelation of "the Son of God," his own Son (viii. 3, compare viii. 32, Isiou, and Col. i. 13-17; Phil. ii. 6). St. Paul seems never to have applied the title "Son of God" to Christ in any other than the highest sense, certainly not here, where the Son of God is declared to be the one great subject of the Gospel and of Prophecy. See on v. 4.

which was made, (Gr.) In order to fulfill that which had been promised concerning Him, the Eternal Son must both become the Son of Man and be manifested as the Son of God. For this cause He "was made, or born, of the seed of David," an expression which points to Christ's human birth "as derived from the greatest of Israel's kings, and in fulfillment of the sure word of prophecy." (Elliot, 2 Tim. ii. 8). Compare John vii. 42, "Hath not the Scripture said, that Christ cometh of the seed of David?" Meyer, Reuss, and others try to represent St. Paul's words as inconsistent with the supernatural generation of Jesus. But that Mary, as well as Joseph, was of the lineage of David is clearly implied in the history of the Annunciation, recorded by St. Paul's constant companion, St. Luke, ch. i. 31-35: see note there. Thus, while Jesus was the Son of David according to the customary and legal view, "being as was supposed the son of Joseph," He was at the same time, by actual descent, "of the fruit of David's body" (Ps. cxxxii. 11, 12).

Into these distinctions, however, St. Paul does not here enter: he states that which according to either view is true, and which is everywhere regarded as a notorious fact in the Gospel history, that Jesus" was descended from David." (Matt. ix. 7, 27, xx. 24; xx. 28; Mark. x. 30, 31; xxii. 9). See notes on Matt. i. 16, 18.

The importance of St. Paul's testimony to the Davidic descent of Jesus is greatly enhanced by the fact that Gamaliel, at whose feet he was brought up, being grandson of the great Hillel, was himself of the house and lineage of David.

For as Christ must be the Son of David, the first and simplest test of the claims of Jesus was his descent; and this was a matter most easily and surely ascertained by a reference to genealogies so carefully kept as those of the royal family of Judah. Had the slightest shadow of doubt ever been cast upon the descent of Jesus from David, it must have been known to Gamaliel: and his disciple Saul could never have accepted as the Messiah one whose claim to a place in the royal lineage, which Gamaliel shared, was false or doubtful. See Taanith, cap. iv. § 2: "Rabbi Levi saith: They found a roll of genealogies at Jerusalem, in which was written, Hillel from David.

according to the flesh. As to the flesh. The sense is the same as in ch. ix. 5, "of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came." In Gal. iv. 23, 29, the words καρα σώμα, καρα πνεῦμα, after the flesh, and after the Spirit, are used in a sense quite different from that in which they are here applied to Christ's flesh and Spirit.

"Flesh" in its limited and proper sense denotes the material substance of the living body, but its significatio in Scripture is much more extensive and varied: see note on vii. 5. As denoting human nature on that side of
4. And 'declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:

which our senses take direct cognizance, it is most appropriate here, where the purpose is to declare that Christ was truly man.

4. And declared, &c.] A higher aspect of Christ's nature is now presented in a second clause set side by side with the former, and rendered emphatic by the absence of any conjunction, and by an exact repetition of the same form:

"Which was born of the seed of David—
Which was designated the Son of God."

declared.] The Greek word (ονομαζεται) means either "defined" mentally, as in logic, (Xen. Mem. IV. vi. 4, 6) or "designated" actually: the latter sense, which is closely connected with that of "instituting," "appointing," or "ordaining," is the only sense which the word has in the New Test. (see Acts x. 42; xvii. 31).

the Son of God.] Bishop Pearson, 'Creed,' Art. ii., shews that Christ is so called (besides other reasons) because He is raised by God immediately out of the earth unto immortal life; because after His Resurrection He is made actually Heir of all things, but above all because He was begotten of the Father before all worlds.

The direct and proper proof of this last meaning of the title is the express teaching of Christ and His Apostles: yet even in this sense He was indirectly proved by the Resurrection to be the Son of God.

For the resurrection was (1st) a signal manifestation of Divine power (whether exercised by Christ Himself, or by the Father in His behalf); and therefore (2ndly) a testimony to the truth of Him Who claimed to be "the Son of God;" and also (3rdly) according to St. Paul's preaching, in Acts xiii. 33, it was the prophetic sign which God had set upon His Son in the second Psalm. By it, therefore, He was marked out, or designated, as the Son of God. "Although His precepts, His miracles, His character, His express language, all pointed to the truth of His Godhead, the conscience of mankind was not laid under a formal obligation to acknowledge it, until at length He had been designated to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead" (Liddon, 'Bampton Lect.' p. 60).

We must add that the resurrection of Jesus not only proved and shewed what He was, but also wrought an actual change in the mode of His existence (Godelet). For He who in the Incarnation became One Christ, by taking of the Manhood into God, by His resurrection entered for the first time as the One Christ both God and Man into the glory of the Son of God. Thus was He (in Pearson's words) "defined or constituted and appointed the Son of God" ('Creed,' Art. ii.).

with power.] By the resurrection Christ was designated 'with power' as Son of God, because power was the Divine attribute pre-eminentely displayed therein. So St. Paul speaks, in Eph. i. 19, of "the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power (lit. of the might of his strength), which be wrought in Christ, when he was raised from the dead."

according to the spirit of holiness.] The phrases as to the flesh—as to the Spirit are so strictly parallel, that the second must necessarily represent, as the first does, a constituent part of Christ's own being.

Moreover, the peculiar phrase "Spirit of holiness," found only in this passage, is evidently chosen to distinguish the holy spiritual nature of Christ from "the Holy Spirit," who is the Third Person of the Trinity. See Note at the end of the Chapter.

The two clauses thus present two sides or aspects of the One Incarnate Son of God; the "flesh," that side on which He is visibly one with us, "very man," "born of a woman:" "the Spirit of holiness," that side on which He—the same Son of Man—is proved by the Resurrection to be the Son of God.

This "Spirit of holiness" (whether with older interpreters we take it to mean the essential Deity of Christ, or, as seems to be more exact, the Spirit at once Divine and human of the Incarnate Son) was in either case the sphere and organ of His Divine power. In it He triumphed over death: see 1 Pet. iii. 18, "being put to death in (the) flesh, but quickened in (the) Spirit;"—a passage which confirms the meaning we have given to "flesh" and "Spirit."
5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name:

Jesus Christ our Lord.] In the authorized version these words are wrongly placed in v. 3, after "his Son." Their right position is at the end of v. 4. The Son of David and Son of God is thus finally described by three well-known titles; "Jesus" which identifies Him as the crucified Saviour, "Christ" the promised Messiah, "our Lord" the exalted King, to whom all power is given in heaven and in earth.

6. By whom we have received.] Rather, "Through whom we received grace and apostleship." From the mention of Christ as "Our Lord," St. Paul takes opportunity to describe more fully than in v. 1 the authority which he had received from Him as "head over all things to the Church" (Eph. i. 22). Thus from the majesty of Christ's Person he tacitly implies the dignity of the Apostolic office.

The plural here is most appropriate, for by it St. Paul asserts his own authority in a form which does not exclude, though it does not expressly include, the other Apostles. Thus, in addressing a Church which no Apostle had yet visited, he happily ignores any distinction of authority by using the indefinite plural: on the other hand in Gal. ii. 8, 9 observe how carefully he asserts his own individual claim, even to the exclusion of Barnabas.

St. Paul often speaks of his call to apostleship as "the grace that was given" to him by God (Rom. xv. 15, 16; Gal. ii. 9; Kep. iii. 7-9). But we must not on that account take the two terms together as equivalent to the "grace of apostleship," nor yet entirely separate them as if St. Paul had first received the personal grace of salvation, which is common to all believers and then afterwards been called to the Apostolic office: the two moments were in him united, and the "grace" of which all partake was enhanced in his case by the special gift of "apostleship." From being "a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious" (1 Tim. i. 13), he was called at once to "preach the faith which once was destroyed" (Gal. i. 23). Thus the sense of his unworthiness mingling with every thought of his Apostolic office makes it to himself the great memorial of God's exceeding mercy: "Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ" (Eph. iii. 8).

for obedience to the faith.] Render, for obedience to faith: not, as in Acts vi. 7, "to the faith," i.e. to the gospel or doctrine of the faith, for the Greek Article is here omitted.

"obedience to faith" is man's surrender of himself in mind and heart to faith as the principle and power, "the organic law," of the new life in Christ.

Margin, "to the obedience of faith." But the meaning "obedience to faith" is confirmed by the similar phrases obedient to the faith (Acts vi. 7), "obey the Gospel" (Rom. x. 16; 2 Thess. i. 8), and the construction of the genitive is not unusual: compare "in obeying the truth," lit. "in the obedience of the truth" (1 Pet. i. 22), and "the obedience of (i.e. to) Christ" (2 Cor. x. 5).

Among all nations.] St. Paul's original commission, of which he is here speaking, embraced both Jews and Gentiles (Acts ix. 15; xxi. 17, 20): and though special prominence is given both in this Epistle (i. 13; xi. 13; xv. 16) and elsewhere (Acts xxii. 13 and 21; Gal. i. 16) to his mission to the Gentiles, yet here in the salutation it is more natural that his Apostolic office should be set forth in its fullest extent, and its dignity enhanced by the world-wide purpose for which it was bestowed. The actual association of Jews and Gentiles in the Church of Rome, and the desire to unite them in closer bonds of Christian fellowship, required that both should be included in the address. These considerations are confirmed by the usage of the words in the N. T. For though οἰκουμένη and τὴν ὀικουμένην commonly mean Gentiles as distinguished from Jews, the expression πάντα τὸν ἐν νόμῳ retains the fuller sense in which it is first employed, in the blessing of Abraham, Gen. xviii. 18, xxii. 18.

for his name.] Or, "for his name's sake." The end and purpose of "obedience to faith among all nations" is to promote the glory of Christ, that "in his name every knee should bow," and "every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father" (Phil. ii. 10: compare Acts v. 41; ix. 15, 16; xxi. 13).

6. Among whom are ye also.] Having described his commission in v. 5 as embracing all nations, the Apostle now expressly tells his readers at Rome that they are included in it, implying thereby that he has authority to address them.

the called of Jesus Christ.] More literally "Jesus Christ's called ones:" compare the expression "God's elect" (viii. 33), and "Israel, my called" (Isai. xlvi. 19). Christ's "called"
Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

are those who belong to Him as having been called by God the Father, to whom the act of calling is always ascribed.

By adding this description of those whom he addresses, St. Paul, while asserting his own authority, at the same time recognizes their position as being already members of Christ's Church.

7. Through the crowd of thoughts which had pressed in upon his mind with the first mention of the Gospel, v. 1, St. Paul has now come back to the direct relation between himself and his readers, and so proceeds to address his letter to them, and concludes the address with his usual salutation.

"To all that be in Rome, beloved of God." Rather, "To all God's beloved that are in Rome." The direct connection is with v. 1: "Paul . . . to all God's beloved." God's people are called in the O. T. "his beloved" (Ps. ix. 5; cxvii. 6; cxviii. 3): St. Paul applies the term to Israel in ch. xi. 28, and to Christians in general, Tim. vi. 2. One bond between the Apostle and his readers is that they are in common the objects of God's love, a second their common consecration to His service as called saints (Goyet).

On the omission of the words "in Rome," in G. g, see Introduction, § 8.

called to be saints.] Lit. "called saints." Compare v. 1: "a called Apostle." "God's beloved" are also His "called saints," separated by the Divine call from the world, and made a holy or consecrated people; like Israel of old (Ex. xix. 5, 6), they are not simply "called to be holy" (A. V.), nor called because holy, but "holy because called" (Augustine). The holiness is not primarily that of individual moral character, but that of consecration to God's service, and is therefore ascribed to all Christians, who are, however, bound by this very consecration to personal holiness of life. See note on viii. 30.

Grace to you and peace.] The form of address most usual in a Greek letter is seen in Acts xv. 23; xxxii. 26; James i. 1. But the "joy," or "health," or "prosperity" was sometimes omitted, and nothing written but the names and descriptions of the writer and reader. St. Paul having adopted this shortened form of address, now adds to it an independent sentence containing an essentially Christian salutation, in which "grace" is the Divine love manifesting itself towards sinful man in free forgiveness and unmerited blessing, and "peace," the gift of God's grace, is the actual state of reconciliation:

see note on v. 1. "For when through grace sins have been forgiven and enmity done away, it remains for us to be joined in peace to Him from whom our sins alone did separate us" (Augustine). The fuller form found in the Pastoral Epistles, "Grace, mercy, and peace," confirms the interpretation which thus gives to "grace" (χάρις) and "peace" a fulness of meaning not found in the Greek χαίρετα or the Hebrew דוד.

from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.] The original source of "grace and peace" is "God our Father," who has made us His children by adoption (viii. 15); the nearer source from which they flow to us is "the Lord Jesus Christ" as Head of the Church. It is clear from the salutations in the Epistles of St. Peter and St. Jude, where the sentence is completed, "grace . . . be multiplied," that St. Paul's salutation also must be understood as a benediction or prayer. Thus in the apostolic letters the forms of common life are hallowed by Christian love, and a passing courtesy is transformed into a prayer for heavenly blessings.

8-15. INTRODUCTION.

The salutation (1-7), which declares St. Paul's official relation to the Christians at Rome, is followed by a brief introductory statement of his personal feelings towards them, in which he declares his thankfulness for their faith (v. 8), his remembrance of them in prayer (v. 9), and his desire to visit them and to labour among them in preaching the Gospel (10-15).

8. First I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all.] The thanksgiving, with "such the Apostle begins this and most of his epistles, is not to be ascribed to mere rhetorical art or courteous tact in winning the good will of his readers, nor to any fond lingering over an ideal picture of a perfect Church. That for which St. Paul gives thanks to God is no imaginary excellence, but the fact that everywhere, in the Churches which he visits, he hears tidings of the faith of those who have embraced the Gospel in Rome. The instinct of love leads him to touch first on that which is thankworthy in his brethren: "It was meet to make a prelude with thanksgiving" (Eccumenius), because they not only believed, but so openly declared their belief, that it was published throughout the whole world. Observe that the Apostle does not praise them for their faith; it is too divine and excellent a gift for praise. "The greatest
For God is my witness, whom I serve \* with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers;

blessings call not for praise, but for something greater and better" (Aristot., 'Nic. Eth.', I. xii. 4); and St. Paul gives solemn thanks to God for his brethren's faith.

for you all. See note on the reading at end of chapter. He regards their faith as a gift to himself, for which he is bound to give thanks to God: see 2 Thess. i. 3; ii. 13.

It is this feeling of personal interest in their welfare that prompts the loving, trustful word, "my God," that is, "the God who has given me a fresh proof of His love in your faith." Compare Phil. iv. 19.

through Jesus Christ.] "To render thanks to God is to offer a sacrifice of praise: and therefore he adds 'through Jesus Christ,' as through the great High Priest." (Origen.)

Meyer argues that Christ is the Mediator of thanksgiving only as the causal agent of the blessings for which thanks are given, and not as the Mediating Offerer. But that the thanksgiving itself is offered through Christ is certainly the view presented in 1 Pet. ii. 5: "to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ." Equally clear is the meaning of Heb. xiii. 15, Col. iii. 17, and Ephes. v. 20. We must therefore retain the earlier and more usual interpretation that St. Paul gives thanks through Jesus Christ, not only because the particular blessing flows from Him, and not only because by Him alone we are brought into such a relation to God that we can offer Him thanksgiving, but because our thanksgiving itself and "All our services need to be cleansed and hallowed by passing through the hands of our most holy and undivided High Priest, to become sweet and savoury (or to receive that savoury savour) which St. Paul speaks of), from being offered up in His Censer." (Barrow, 'Sermon on Col.' iii. 17).

9. For God is my witness.] St. Paul confirms the sincerity of his thanksgiving for the Christians at Rome by declaring his constant remembrance of them in prayer (v. 9), and his longing desire to see them (v. 10). This declaration he introduces by a very solemn appeal to God as witness of its truth (2 Cor. xi. 31; Phil. i. 8). Is such language too strong for the occasion? Is St. Paul, as some have thought, so carried away by the intensity of his feelings, or the fervid style of his age and country, or any other cause, as to invoke the name of God thus solemnly without an urgent reason? Or does he speak the words of truth and soberness? We must remember that the Apostle is writing from Corinth, where his sincerity was recently called in question, because his visit to that church had been postponed: to that charge he gave a full and deliberate refutation (2 Cor. i. 15-24), in the course of which (v. 23) he used even a stronger protestation than in the passage before us. Moreover, he is writing on the eve of undertaking a journey from Corinth—a city comparatively near Rome—to Jerusalem, which was far distant. He thus appears to be turning his back upon the Romans, just when it seems most natural to pay his long intended visit; and he has therefore reason to fear lest he should be suspected of fickleness or insincerity, or even of being ashamed to preach the Gospel in the great centre of learning and civilization.

At present he cannot prove his sincerity, he can only assert it; he cannot show what is in his heart, he can only call the heart-searching God to witness.

whom I serve with my spirit.] He whose servant and minister I am, to whom I offer no mere outward service in preaching the Gospel of His Son, but therein serve and worship Him in my spirit (xv. 16).—He is my witness that I long and pray to do His work among you (2 Tim. i. 3). He knoweth "that of (rather how) without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers" (Eph. i. 16; Phil. i. 3, 4).

10. Making request, &c.] Making request if by any means I shall ever at length be prospered in the will of God to come unto you. How beautifully the Apostle's language reflects the inward conflict of his feelings! The remembrance of past hindrances is combined with the foresight of future difficulties, and the eagerness of desire is tempered by resignation to the will of God, who will bring all to a prosperous issue in His own way, and at His own time.

The combination ἢν νόμος with a Future assigns to a long-expected event an early (ἡν) but uncertain date (νόμος). Compare Viger 'de Idiotsism Gr.' p. 413; Phil. iv. 10; Aristoph. 'Ranæ' 931.

be prospered.] See 1 Cor. xvi. 2; 3 John 2; and compare the use of the same word in LXX 2 Chron. xiii. 12; Ps. i. 3; Prov. xviii. 8 (Meyer).

11. For I long to see you.] The reason of
may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established; 12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me. 13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, (but was let hitherto,) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles.

his earnest prayer is the desire to see, face to face, his brethren at Rome, in whose welfare he is already deeply interested. Compare xv. 23, and notes there. The word "I long" (ἐσπαρναίω) expresses both the desire that draws him to them, and his regret that he has not been able to come sooner (Grodet).

some spiritual gift.] The word "charisma" is never used in the N.T. of a gift from man, but may be applied to anything which comes from God's free grace, whether it be a providential deliverance from death (2 Cor. i. 11), a moral virtue, as continence (1 Cor. vii. 7), God's favour to Israel (Rom. xi. 29), the gift of eternal life in Christ Jesus (v. 15, 16; vi. 23), or any of the manifold gifts of the Spirit (xii. 6; 1 Cor. xii. 4), whether miraculous (1 Cor. xii. 9, 10), ministerial (1 Tim. iv. 14; 2 Tim. i. 6), or simply personal, as faith (1 Cor. xii. 9). A gift of this last kind is here meant. St. Paul hopes that in Rome, as elsewhere, his personal ministry may be attended with some gift of God's Holy Spirit, that may confirm and strengthen his brethren in the principles and practice of the Christian life. Increase of knowledge, love, or hope, or of all these combined, would be such a Spiritual gift; but the next verse shews that the strengthening of faith is foremost in the Apostle's thoughts. Such a gift is called spiritual, not as pertaining to man's spirit, but as proceeding from the Spirit of God. St. Paul can impart it only because he has received "grace and apostleship," for this very purpose. Compare xv. 29.

12. That is, that I may be comforted together with you.] A beautiful example of St. Paul's humility! He never forgets that those whom he addresses are Christians as well as himself. At the very outset he gives thanks to God for their well-known faith; and here he does not say "that I may establish you," but "that ye may be established," namely by God. But, lest even thus he should seem to represent the benefit of his visit as all on their side, he hastens to correct his expression, and to place himself beside them, as sharing in the benefit of mutual comfort. He drops the idea of their needing to be established as persons weak in faith, and joins himself with them as needing to be encouraged by their faith, no less than they by his; for by "mutual faith," is here meant "the faith which each sees in the other." The whole verse may be thus rendered:—That is, that we may be together comforted among you by the other's faith, yours as well as mine. For the construction, see note at end of chapter.

13. Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren.] St. Paul's usual mode of announcing some new and important point (see note on xi. 25). His first thought has been of the present and future welfare of his readers (vv. 8—12): he is thankful for their faith, and longs to help in establishing it. But then comes the question, Why has he never yet visited them? and if this he has not answered, it may throw doubt upon the sincerity of his present profession. He therefore assures them that he not only now longs to see them, but has often actually formed the purpose of coming to them.

(but was let hitherto).] And I was hindered until now. Again he shows his love in another way. For neither when I was hindered, says he, did I cease from the attempt, but was always attempting and always hindered and never desisting (Chrysostom).

The nature of the hindrances is explained afterwards, xv. 22: here the Apostle only alludes to them in a brief parenthesis, lest he seem to have changed his purpose lightly, and so hastens on to the motive of his oft-intended visit.

that I might have some fruit.] The same modesty, which is so conspicuous in v. 11, 12, may be traced again in the words "some" and "fruit." The emphasis is on "some" (rum) which here, though not usually, stands first. The good which St. Paul hoped to do among them, whether much or little, he represents as a benefit to himself. In any increase of their faith and holiness and good works, he would reap a harvest to reward his labour (compare vi. 22; Phil. iv. 17, and Joh. iv. 35—38). See note at end of chapter.

among you also, even as among other Gentiles.] Read, the rest of the Gentiles. The "you" can only mean here, as throughout the context, the Christians at Rome;
14. I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians; both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15. So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17. For therein is the righteous-
For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men,

Psalmist's three chief words, "salvation," "righteousness," "revealed," and of the parallelism between "salvation" (v. 16) and "righteousness" (v. 17).

the righteousness of God.] Rather "a righteousness of God." This term occurring in a summary statement of the great theme of the Epistle is more likely to be used in a comprehensive than in a restricted sense. We must therefore be content, at present, to define its meaning only so far as it is determined by the form of the expression, by the immediate context, and by St. Paul's previous usage. We thus find that it is a righteousness having God as its author, and man as its recipient, who by it becomes righteous: its effect is salvation, and its condition faith: it is embodied first in the person of Christ, "who is made unto us the righteousness from God, and righteousness in him." (1 Cor. i. 30), and it is bestowed on us because of Christ's redeeming work, wherein He "was made sin for us, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him" (2 Cor. v. 21). See more in notes on iii. 21-25.

revealed from faith to faith.] This is the only connection permitted by the order of the words, and it teaches us that, so far as man is concerned, the revelation of the righteousness of God begins from and leads on to faith.

The just shall live by faith.] This connection "shall live by faith" is required in the Hebrew of Hab. ii. 4, and corresponds best with St. Paul's application of the passage: for he does not say that "righteousness by faith is revealed," but that "righteousness is revealed from faith to faith," and as the righteousness revealed and appropriated by faith is the power of God unto salvation, "the righteous shall live—i.e., shall find life—by faith." Compare Gal. ii. 20, "the life which I now live in the flesh I live by (rather in) the faith of the Son of God," &c. See notes on Hab. ii. 4, and note at end of chapter.
who hold the truth in unrighteousness; 
19 Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.

20 For the invisible things of him 

faith.] The Hebrew word so rendered means properly "steadfastness," "faithfulness," "fidelity," "trustworthiness," rather than the active "trustfulness"; i.e., it means the faith which may be relied on, rather than the faith which relies. "But it will at times approach near to the active sense: for constancy under temptation or danger with an Israelite could only spring from reliance on Jehovah. And something of this transitional or double sense it has in Hab. ii. 4." (Lightfoot, Gal. iii. 11.)

CHAP. I. 18—III. 20. THE UNGODLINESS OF MAN.

St. Paul here enters upon the proof of his great theme, that both for Jew and Gentile salvation is only to be found in the revelation of the righteousness of God by faith.

First he shows, as a matter of fact and experience, that neither Gentile (i. 18—32) nor Jew (ch. ii.) has any righteousness of his own by which he can be justified before God; then, after answering objections relating to the case of the Jew (iii. 1—8), he confirms the testimony of experience by the declarations of God's word (iii. 9—20).

18—32. St. Paul here gives us, not a history, but a Christian philosophy of history: he is not narrating the growth of idolatry and vice in this or that nation, but showing in a broad generalized view the condition of the heathen world and the causes of its corruption.

The allusions to specific forms of vice and idolatry show plainly that he is describing the heathen; but the principles which he lays down, being of universal application, involve the Jew also in like condemnation, as is seen in ch. ii.

the wrath of God is revealed from heaven.] An exordium terrible as lightning" (Melanchthon) is formed by the sudden and striking contrast to the preceding verses. There is a twofold revelation: in the one on is seen a "power of God unto salvation," in the other, the destroying power of God's wrath: there the righteousness of God, here the unrighteousness of man.

Righteousness is revealed in the Gospel; wrath is revealed "from heaven" because there "the Lord hath prepared his throne" (Ps. ix. 7; xi. 4), and thence "His judgments go forth as the lightning" (Hosea vi. 5, and note there). The power unto salvation is for "every one that believeth"; the wrath is against them "that hold down the truth in unrighteousness" (ch. vii. 6; 2 Thess. ii. 6). The meaning of this verse is more fully explained in the passage which follows. We there see that "the truth" means the knowledge of God (vv. 19 and 25), and that the wilful suppression of this truth struggling in the heart is what aggravates the ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, leaving them without excuse. We see also how the wrath of God is revealed, namely, in the debasing vices and conscious misery to which the sinner is given over (24—33).

ungodliness and unrighteousness.] I.e. impiety and immorality, are both regarded as sins against God. "Un godliness" is the stronger expression, but "ungodliness" the more comprehensive and general (Aristotle, ἁζισίν ἀκρασία, vii. 1; Polit. iii. c. 13, 3): this latter alone is repeated in the following clause, whence the ideal order of development is seen to be (1) ungodliness, (2) suppression of the truth concerning God, (3) unrighteousness and increased unrighteousness.

19. Because, &c.] The cause of God's wrath implied in the close of v. 18 is here distinctly stated, that men have a knowledge of God which they wilfully suppress, and so leave themselves without excuse.

that which may be known of God.] The word τὸ γνωστὸν occurs nowhere else in St. Paul's epistles; but in Acts xiii. 38 and xxvii. 28, where St. Paul is the speaker, it is used, as in the N. T. generally, in a less precise sense, "known," "notable," or "notorious." Here, however, the whole context rises into the region of Christian philosophy, and our translators have done well in rendering the word more strictly. See Fritzsche, and Grimm, 'Clavis N. T. Philolog.'

That which may be known must not, however, be pressed to mean all that can possibly be known; but, as the next verse plainly shews, it means that knowledge of God which is or which may be gained by man's natural faculties exercised upon God's manifestation of Himself in creation.

is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.] Rather, "for God manifested it to them."

"In them" does not mean "among them," as though this knowledge were limited to a few of the wise and learned, nor "in their consciousness" (Meyer), but "in them" as being what they are, in their very nature and constitution as men. If men had not a faculty to receive "that which may be known of God,"
from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

21 Because that, when they knew

He could not be said to have manifested it "to them." The verse, therefore, teaches that there is both an external manifestation of God to men, and a faculty in them to receive it; and these are the two ideas that are developed in the next verse.

Calvin's note is striking: "In saying that God manifested it, he means that the purpose for which man is created is to be the spectator of the fabric of the world; the purpose for which eyes have been given him is that by gazing on so fair an image he may be led on to its Author."

20. Explanation of the statement, "God manifested it to them."

the invisible things of him.] St. Paul puts in the foremost place the invisible nature of God's attributes, just because men sinned by substituting visible images for His invisible perfections. The plural represents the invisible nature of God in its manifold properties, as explained by what follows.

from the creation of the world.] Most modern interpreters understand this merely as a mark of time, "since the creation." See note at end of chapter. But the older interpretation has more force, and is not really liable to the charge of tautology. "The creation of the world," viewed as a whole, is first presented as the source from which man derives a knowledge of the unseen God; and then the method is further described; the manifold invisible attributes become clearly seen, being conceived in the mind by means of the various works.

The invisible lying behind the visible as its cause, the unchangeable upholding all the changes of the world, the wisdom whose thoughts are written in heaven, and earth, and sea, the power which makes those thoughts realities,—these and the other Divine attributes are conceived in the mind (nousmen), and so discerned by means of the things that are made. The spontaneous act of reason by which the mind grasps in creation the idea of a Divine Author, St. Paul assumes and asserts as an admitted and unquestionable fact; this fact is indeed the true intellectual basis, as conscience is the moral basis, of all natural religion. On the process by which the mind ascends from the sensible impressions of things that are seen to the idea of the invisible God, "and so as it were resounds and re-echoes back the Great Creator's name," see Godworth, 'Immutable Morality,' p. 177; and a fine passage quoted from Leibnitz, "Essais de Théodicée," Part I., by Saisset.

*Essai de Philosophie religieuse,* Part I. § 5.

his eternal power.] Among "the invisible things" of God "power" alone is specified, because it is the attribute first and most prominently displayed in Creation. It is clearly seen to be eternal, because by it all things temporal were created. The other attributes of God which are clearly seen in His works, such as wisdom and goodness, St. Paul sums up in one word, not Godhead, but Divinity; the word is not that which expresses the being or essence of God, i.e. Deity (Col. ii. 9), but a kindred and derived word, signifying the Divine quality or perfection of God as seen in His attributes.

so that they are without excuse.] That they might be without excuse. The words (εἰς τὸ εἶναί) express not a mere result, but a purpose. See i. 11; iv. 11, 16, 18; vi. 12; vii. 4, 5; viii. 29; xi. 11, &c.

On 2 Cor. viii. 6 see note there.

Most modern Commentators have missed the true connection of this clause, and of the whole passage (ver. 19-21).

The sentence, "For the invisible things of him . . . are clearly seen . . . ." is an explanation of the statement God manifested it unto them; and as the mode in which this manifestation was made to them is the mode in which it is made to all men, at all times, the explanation is put in the most general and abstract form (Present Tense and Passive Voice), without any limitation of times or persons; while the preceding and following statements (marked by the historic Aorists) refer definitely to those whom St. Paul is describing (αὐτοὶς, v. 19, αὐτοῖς, v. 20, αὐτῶν, v. 21), the men that hold down the truth in unrighteousness.

Thus the sense flows on without interruption, and the whole passage may be rendered as follows:—For God manifested it unto them; for the invisible things of him, his eternal power and divinity, from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made: That they might be without excuse, because that when they knew God they glorified him not as God.

Chrysostom's objection, often repeated by others, that it could not be God's purpose in manifesting Himself to deprive men of excuse, although this was the result, is discussed in the note at the end of the chapter. Here it may be enough to say, God's purpose was
22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,
23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image a

\[\text{Ps. 106.}\]

\[\text{I Sam. xxvi. 21: } \text{"I have played the fool (μπαρακλησιαμι) and have erred exceedingly," in their imaginations.}\]

The word διαλογισμὸς is commonly used of evil thoughts both in the LXX and New Test. It is variously rendered: "imagination" (Lam. iii. 60); "reasoning" (Luke ix. 46); and most frequently "thoughts" (Matt. xv. 19; 1 Cor. iii. 30). Here it means the false notions which men formed for themselves of God in opposition to the truth set before them in His works. "Wherein exactly did this vanity (of their thoughts) consist? In two things: (1) in the absence of a foundation in truth; and (2) in the positive absurdity of the idle fancies embodied in the Heathen Mythology and worship." (Bishop Thirlwall.)

and their foolish heart was darkened.] The heart is in Scriptural language the seat of intellectual and moral as well as of animal life, and out of it proceed evil thoughts (Matt. xv. 19, &c.). Thus their heart was already proved to be "foolish" or "void of understanding" when they failed to discern, or discerning did not love, the truth which God had set before them. They turned from the light and their foolish heart was darkened: this was a worse state than the former (Ephes. iv. 18). The abuse of reason impaired the faculty itself, and by following their vain thoughts they were led into a lower depth of spiritual darkness.

22. Self-conceit and folly go hand in hand:

\[\text{while professing themselves to be wise, they became fools} \]

(1 Cor. i. 19–24). Most modern interpreters agree with Calvin that the Apostle does not refer to the special profession of wisdom among Greek philosophers; for they were not the authors of idolatry, nor was it peculiar to them to think themselves wise in the knowledge of God. He is describing the conceit of wisdom which is necessarily connected with a departure from Divine truth, and out of which therefore idolatry in its manifold and fantastic forms must have sprung. “For heathenism,” adds Meyer, “is not the primitive revel in God, of which men gradually advanced to the knowledge of the true God; but it is the consequence of, falling away from the primitive revelation of God in His works.”

The same original belief in one God may be traced in Egyptian, Indian, and Greek mythology, and this accordance of early traditions agrees with the Indian notion that
made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

Paul's statement to this, that God simply permitted the heathen to fall into uncleanness. But the force of the Greek words cannot be thus softened down: see 2 Chron. xxxii. 11; Matt. x. 21, xxiv. 9; 1 Cor. v. 5.

23. And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man. In their folly and as the outward expression of it men exchanged the worship of God for that of idols. The contrast between the incorruptible and the corruptible serves to aggravate the folly.

into an image made like to corruptible man. Read, for an image of the form of corruptible man. The language, partly borrowed from Ps. cxi. 20, means not that they changed God's glory into an image, for this is not possible either in thought or act; but that they exchanged one object of worship for another. On the grammatical construction see note at end of chapter.

That St. Paul is here describing the origin of actual outward idolatry is clear from the whole context, and especially from the allusions to Ps. cxi. 20 (which describes the worship of the golden calf), and to the Egyptian worship of "birds and four-footed beasts, and creeping things," the ibis, the bull, the serpent and the crocodile. The statues of the gods of Greece by which St. Paul was surrounded at Corinth may have been in his mind as he wrote, but idols in human form were common in all heathen countries, and the Apostle is here giving a view of the origin and growth of idolatry in general, not a description of any particular form of it existing in his time. His language is partly taken from the Book of Wisdom (see xi.-xiii. and particularly xi. 15, xiii. 13) which itself echoes the thoughts of Isaiah (xiv. 13). Compare Deut. iv. 15-18 and Ps. cxv. 4-7.

24-32. THE DIVINE RETRIBUTION.

This is shown first in the abandonment of the Heathen to unnatural vices (24-27), and then in their complete and utter depravity (28-32).

24. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts. Read, Wherefore God gave them up in the lusts of their hearts to uncleanness. What is the nature of this Divine agency?

1. Permissive. Chrysostom (elagis), Theodoret (ουικαμος), and others reduce St.

New Test.—Vol. III.
25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature:

27 And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another;

men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet.

28 And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient;

29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, co-

honoured God by their idols, so He gave them up to dishonour their bodies by impurity.

25. To make more distinct this correspondence between the sin that was punished and the sin that was its penalty, St. Paul again points to the cause for which God gave them up,—a cause lying in their own character as “men who exchanged the truth of God for the lie.” (See note on v. 23.) “The truth of God” is His true nature as manifested in His works, the glory of the Creator (v. 23). “The lie” is the false substitute to which the idolater gives the honour that is due to God only (Is. xlv. 20; Jer. xiii. 25, xvi. 19).

more than the Creator.] Marg. “rather than the Creator.” The context shows that they did not worship the Creator at all, but passing by Him worshipped the creature in preference to Him.

who is blessed for ever. Amen.] A natural outburst of piety in the familiar language of the Old Testament (Ps. lxxix. 52). However the Heathen may dishonour God, His glory is not thereby really impaired: He still “inhabits the praises of his people” (Ps. xxii. 3), He is still “blessed for ever” (2 Cor. xi. 31).

26, 27. For this cause.] A second time the Apostle points to the apostasy of the Heathen (v. 25) as the cause why “God gave them up unto vile affections,” or “shameful passions.” The sin against God’s nature entails as its penalty, sin against man’s own nature. “Their error” was that of apostasy in exchanging the truth of God for the lie (v. 25): “the recompense which was meet,” i.e., which according to God’s appointment they must receive, was their abandonment to these unnatural lusts. Those who know what Greek and Roman poets have written on the vices of their countrymen can best appreciate the grave and modest simplicity of the Apostle’s language.

28—31. The unnatural lusts already described were the most striking proof that the Heathen world was lying under the wrath of God. But such shameful sins, however common, were by no means universal, nor were they the only sins in which a Divine retribution was to be traced. St. Paul therefore adds a comprehensive summary of other sins to which the Heathen were given over.

28. And even as they did not like.] For the third time the Apostle insists on the correspondence between the impiety which rejected God, and the penal consequences of that rejection. This correspondence is heightened in the original by a play on words which can hardly be reproduced in English: “Even as they repudiated (lit. did not approve) keeping God in knowledge, God gave them up to a reprobate mind.” By “a reprobate mind” is meant a mind that is condemned and rejected as worthless (1 Cor. ix. 27; Tit. i. 16). The words “they did not approve” imply that their rejection of God was not unconscious, but deliberate and disdainful. Instead of improving their first knowledge of God (γνώρις, v. 21) into fuller knowledge (ἐπερωτάσις) by attention and reflection, they put it from them, and so became “the Heathen that knew not God” (1 Thess. iv. 6).

“Mind” here means the whole reasoning faculty, intellectual and moral, all that conspires in doing a good action, or, as here, in doing “the things which are not befitting” (xii. 2; Eph. iv. 17).

29—31. The moral condition of the Heathen whom God has given over to a reprobate mind. In this catalogue of sins there is no strict system of arrangement, but traces of a sort of natural order may be seen in the grouping of kindred ideas, and even of words which sound somewhat alike in Greek. The force of the passage is much increased by the absence of all connecting particles.

29. In the first group we must omit the word “fornication” with the best MSS. (M, ABCK, &c.), and read “Filled with all unrighteousness, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness.” “Unrighteousness” comes first as the
vetouiness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers.

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despicable, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents,

31 Without understanding, covetousness, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful:

32 Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

most general term, and one already used to describe the state against which God's wrath is revealed (v. 18).

By "wickedness" (pótemia) is meant the active mischievousness which is connected with the inward disposition expressed by "maliciousness" (kakia) (Trench, Syn. of N.T. 2nd Ser.). The two words are connected in 1 Cor. v. 8, the old leaven of malice and wickedness.

envy, murder.] The natural sequence of these ideas is more emphatic in Greek by the alliteration of φοβος, φόνοι. Compare Eurip. 'Troades,' 763, and Lightfoot, Gal. v. 21. For "debate," read "strife." (Malignity) (kακοθεία) is a disposition to take all things in the worst sense, a characteristic of the aged and the callous (Arist. Rhet. ii. xii. 3; iii. xv. 10).

30. "Backbiters" or "slanderers" is a more general term than "whisperers," including all who talk against their neighbours, whether openly or secretly.

"Hatred of God." The word elsewhere has always a passive sense, "hated of God" (Vulg. Syr.), and is explained by Meyer in that sense as being "a summary judgment of moral indignation respecting all the preceding particulars, so that looking back on these it forms a resting-point in the disgraceful catalogue." But in the earliest notice of this passage (Clement, 'Ep. ad Cor.' c. 35), an active sense is ascribed to the word (γιατρυγία, "hated of God"); it has the same sense "haters of God" in the Pseudo-Clement, Hom. 1. c. 12, and is so understood here by Theodoret, Cursiennus, and Suidas. This active sense is undoubtedly better suited to a catalogue of sins, and the position of the word is most striking at the head of a descending series of the forms of arrogance, first towards God and then towards men. The ascending order is found in 2 Tim. iii. 1 "boasters, proud, blasphemers."

"despicable, proud, boasters." The worse forms of the sin come first.

The "despicable," or "insolent" are injurious in act (1 Tim. i. 13): the "proud" overweening in their thoughts towards others; "boasters" vain-glorying about themselves (see Trench). "Inventors of evil things" are strikingly described in Ps. xxxvi. 4, and Prov. vi. 12-15.

In 2 Macc. xii. 31, Antiochus is called "the author of all mischief" (πάρογος χασίας εἰπορείως), and Philo describes the advisers of Flaccus (c. iv.) as "sowers of sedition, busybodies, devisers of evil" (εἰπορείς χασίως, disobedient to parents.) The want of dutiful affection in the family stands first among a series of sins indicating (by the very form of the Greek words) the want of every principle on which social morality is based (Meyer). The same sin has the same bad pre-eminence in a similar series in 2 Tim. iii. 2. "Disobedient to parents, unthankful, unbelieving, without natural affection, truce-breakers."

31. The word here rendered "implacable," and in 2 Tim. iii. 3 "truce-breakers" has probably been brought in from that passage. Omitting it we may translate the verse thus: Without understanding, covetous breakers, without natural affection, without money; "Covenant breakers" (δαυδιτικον) is the same word which is thrice applied to "treacherous Judah" in Jer. iii. 7, 8, 10.

32. The "reprobate mind" reaches the last stage of wickedness in men that are conscious of the deadly guilt of such sins as have been described, and yet not only do them, but also take pleasure in their being done by others.

On the various readings in this verse see Note at end.

Who knowing.] Men that well knowing, i.e. men of such a character that though they well know, &c.

"The judgment of God" (δικαίωμα) is that just sentence which He ordains as the Lawgiver and enforces as the Judge of all mankind; see ii. 16. St. Paul here speaks of it as a judgment fully known even to the reprobate, and therefore as that one which has been stamped indelibly upon man's conscience.

commit.] Read practice: see on ii. 1, 3. worthy of death.] See Luke xxiii. 15; Acts xxiii. 29; xxiv. 11, 25; xxvi. 31, in all which passages "death" means simply capital punishment. But it is evident that the Apostle here speaks of death (1) as a punishment of sin and therefore not merely as the natural end of this life; (2) as a punishment ordained
by God, and therefore not simply the last penalty of human law; (3) as a Divine punishment recognized by the Hebraists, therefore not only as revealed in the Mosaic Law or the Scriptural account of the first entrance of death.

not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them] not only do them, but also have pleasure in them that practise them. "Not only... but also:" the climax thus expressly indicated is in fact double: (1) To "practise" is more than to "do," implying more of deliberation and habit; (2) A man may "do" evil under the incentive of passion, for the sake of the attendant gratification or gain; he can approve evil in others only as evil, for its own sake.

The word rendered "have pleasure in"

AUXILIARY NOTES on Chap. I., vv. 1, 4, 8, 12, 13, 15, 17, 20, 23, 24, 32.

1. Christ Jesus. This order, found in B. am. fuld. Arm. and a few Fathers, is preferred by modern critics as less usual, and therefore more likely to have been altered. It is also characteristic of St. Paul, to whom the Lord was first made known, not as the man Jesus, but as the risen and glorified Christ. The same order is found in the salutation in 1 Cor., 2 Cor., Eph., Phil., Col., 1 Tim., 2 Tim. (Tisch. 8).

4. "The Spirit of holiness."] This title has been interpreted as meaning (1) The Holy Ghost, the 3rd Person of the Trinity; (2) The essential Deity of the Son; (3) The Spirit of the Incarnate Son.

(1) Chrysostom and Theodoret explain that Jesus was proved to be the Son of God in accordance with the pouring out of the Holy Ghost upon the Apostles after His resurrection.

Others find the proof of His Divine Sonship in the miracles which He wrought according to the power of the Holy Ghost dwelling in Him, or in the predictions of the Prophets who spake of Him as they were moved by the Holy Ghost, or in the Resurrection itself supposed to be effected by the special operation of the Holy Ghost (see note on viii. 11).

Against all these interpretations there are two decisive objections, that they disregard the peculiar title πνεύμα ἁγιωσινης, and that by giving a different sense to the Preposition (εαρα) they destroy the parallelism of the two phrases - "according to the flesh," "according to the Spirit." (2) The "Spirit of holiness" is supposed to mean the essential Deity of the Son, that pre-existent Divine Nature to which the Human Nature was added in the Incarnation.

(3) The "Spirit of holiness" is the Spirit of the Incarnate Son, the God Man, and therefore at once human and Divine.

Either of these two latter interpretations is consistent with the language of St. Paul, and in choosing between them, it is well to recall the wise caution of Dean Jackson, 'Creed,' Bk. vii. Chap. 30. "The manner of the union between the Son of God and the seed of Abraham is a mystery (that one of the blessed Trinity alone excepted) most to be admired by all, and least possible to be exactly expressed by any living man of all the mysteries we profess in this Apostles' Creed."

If we adopt the former of these two interpretations, we must admit that St. Paul does not here give a complete account of Christ's twofold nature. For otherwise we must either deny that Christ had any human spirit, which is the Apollinarian heresy, or say that His spirit was included in the "flesh" derived from the seed of David.

The difficulty is discussed by Origen in his comment on the passage, by Augustine, 'Enchiridion,' c. 38, and very fully by Aquinas, 'Summa Theologica,' Pars III. Qu. 32, where the statements of Ambrose and Jerome are quoted.

The Catholic doctrine can hardly be more exactly stated than by Jackson, 'Creed,' Bk. viii. ch. 30: "Neither the substance which the Son of God took from the blessed Virgin, nor the reasonable soul which was united unto it, had any proper existence before their union with the Divine nature." "Christ's reasonable soul was not in order either of time or
nature first created, then assumed, but it was created while it was assumed, and assumed while it was created."

This statement of Dean Jackson's seems fully to justify the third interpretation, namely that Christ's human spirit is included, not in the "flesh," but in the "Spirit of holiness," as being the Spirit of Christ.

The same distinction of "flesh" and "Spirit" in the Incarnate Son is found in 1 Tim. iii. 16, "Who was manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit," where Bp. Elliott rightly maintains that "the Spirit" is not itself the Deity, but the "higher principle of spiritual life," in which Christ "was shown to be the All-holy and the All-righteous, yea, manifested with power to be the Son of God."

The student who may wish to pursue the subject should observe that in the passages which describe the Incarnation (Matt. i. 18, 20; Luke i. 35), and also in the early Greek Fathers and Creeds, πνεῦμα ἐγον stands without the Article. This distinction was of course lost in Latin, and this makes it the more remarkable that the Latin Fathers so generally interpret "Holy Spirit" in those passages of the Son; see Tertullian, 'c. Praxam,' § 26, 'de Carne Christi,' § 18, 'c. Marciamen' iv. §. 18, Hilary, 'de Trinitate,' X. "Assumptà Sibi per Se ex Virgine carne, Ipse Sibi et ex Se animam Conceptum per Se corporis co-aptavit." Compare the Preface to the works of S. Hilary, § 57; Bishop Bull, 'Defensio Fidei Nicene,' pp. 53, 53, 159, 203; (Oxon. 1846); Donner, 'Person of Christ,' l. ii. pp. 367 ff; 'Protestant Theology,' II. 457; Pfeiderer, 'Paulinism,' I. 125.

8. For ὅτι προσνωθήματι with preponderance of authority. A comparison of Ephes. i. 16 (ὅτι) with 1 Cor. i. 4; 1 Thess. i. 2; 2 Thess. i. 3; ii. 13 shows that ὅτι might have been used in the same sense as προσνωθήματι.

9. There is a little irregularity in the grammatical construction. Meyer, in order to find a subject for συμπαρακληθήσωμεν it makes parallel to ἰδεῖν: "For I long to see you, &c.; that is, to be comforted among you."

The objections to this construction are:
1. It passes over the nearer connection with εἰς τὸ σταυριθμὸν ἡμᾶς to the more distant ἰδεῖν.
2. It makes St. Paul's correction of his expression apply to ἰδεῖν κ.λ., which does not as a whole need correction, instead of the part εἰς τὸ σταυριθμὸν ἡμᾶς which is the direct cause of the correction.
3. It supplies as a subject for συμπαρακληθήσωμεν only ἡμᾶς, which does not agree with the following phrase τῆς ἐν ἀλληλοίᾳ πίστεως ἡμῶν τα καὶ ἡμοί.

For these reasons it is much simpler, and in fact necessary, to understand ἡμᾶς = ἡμᾶς καὶ ἡμοί as the subject.

If it be objected that where a new subject is introduced it ought to be distinctly expressed, it is sufficient to answer: 1st, that ἡμᾶς could not be here expressed in the sense required (ἡμᾶς καὶ ἡμοί), because the formal antithesis εἰς τὸ σταυριθμὸν ἡμᾶς, τόιοῦ τε ἐστιν ἡμᾶς, συμπαρακληθήσωμεν would have limited ἡμᾶς to a sense excluding instead of including ἡμοί; and secondly, that St. Paul indicates the subject, which he could not express, by the στάσιν in συμπαρακληθήσωμεν—a compound found nowhere else in the New Test. or LXX.

13. καροὶ σχῆμα.] "Εἰς ἐν τοῖς ἐνσώματοι, ἅδευ, κ.ο., signifies 'αἰνεῖται' and so here." (Tholuck.)

This is a wrong explanation of the right meaning of σχῆμα, "that I might get." The verb ἔχω means to have, hold, or possess: but the aorist has a momentary and, as it were, initiative force, which may often be expressed by "get": see John iv. 52; Matt. xxi. 38; Mark ii. 25; Acts xxv. 26; Phil. ii. 27; 1 Thess. i. 9.

15. ὅτα ἐκ τοῦ ἑμῶν προθυμίαν. Various constructions have been proposed.
A. το εις κ. προηγήσατο«as subject» (1) to a sentence στίτω ἐστίν — "in accordance with this duty is the readiness on my part to preach."
(2) to a sentence ἐστίν εἰσαγεγραμμένη. "Accordingly the desire on my part is to preach."
B. το κατ' ἑμῶν taken apart from προθυμίαν.
(1) as an adverbial phrase: "thus there is — so far as in me lies — a readiness;" &c.
(2) as subject to προθυμίαν ἐστίν. "So my part is ready; so I for my part am ready." The choice lies between A (2), which is harsh, and B (2), which is supported (though not fully) by Phil. i. 12, and is decidedly to be preferred as giving a proper grammatical construction.

17. The just shall live by faith.} The accents in the Hebrew do not indicate the connection, "the just by his faith," but show that the stress of the sentence is on "faith," which is placed emphatically before the verb: "The just . . . by his faith shall he live." See Delitzsch on Hab. ii. 4 quoted by Pusey, who adds, "the expression just by his faith does not occur either in the Old or New Test. In fact, to speak of one really righteous (as it always is) as being righteous by his faith would imply that men could be righteous in some other way." ('Commentary on the Minor Prophets.')

The δὲ in δὲ διὰ τὸν, retained by St. Paul, shows that the antithesis is between "the
proud” and “the just,” not between “the just by faith” and “the just” in any other way.

The LXX, εἰ κτίσως μοῦ (or as in some MSS ἐ δὲ δίκαιος μοῦ εἰ κτίσως) seems to have arisen from mistaking γίνομαι for γίνεται. St. Paul omits the erroneous μοῦ without inserting αὐτοῦ, as unnecessary for his purpose. See on Gal. iii. 11, and on Heb. ii. 4.

20. ἀπὸ κτίσως κόσμου.] The phrase seems to occur nowhere else in LXX. or N. T.

When the Creation is employed as a mark of time, the phrases are:
(2) ἀπὸ ἀρχῆς κτίσεως, Matt. xxiv. 21.
(3) ὁ ἄρχος κτισμάτων, Mar. x. 6; xiii. 19; 2 Pet. iii. 4; Apoc. iii. 14.

The Peshito Syriac gives the same rendering here as in Matt. xxv. 34, John xvii. 24, “from the foundation of the world.” And in Ps. Salom. viii. 7, ἀπὸ κτισμάτων ὁ παλαιός καὶ γῆ, is certainly a mark of time.

The Vulgate, on the other hand, for its usual renderings “a constitution mundi,” or “ab initio mundi,” here gives “a creature mundi,” meaning “the created universe.”

Theodoret, Eusebius, Cyril, Photius, Luther, Calvin, &c., regard creation as the source of the knowledge.

That they might be without excuse.] The difficulty found in this hard saying since the days of Chrysostom, being due not to St. Paul but to his interpreters, must not induce us to deny the plain grammatical sense of the Apostle’s words.

1. The rule that εἰς τῷ with an Infinitive expresses an end or purpose, not a mere consequence, seems to have no exception in the N. T.

The strongest apparent exception (2 Cor. viii. 6), has received its true interpretation from the fine insight of Meyer, following the clue given in the words διὰ θελήματος Θεοῦ: “In the fact that the increase of charity wrought by God’s will in the Macedonians, had encouraged him to bid Titus extend the collection to Corinth, St. Paul sees the fulfilment of the Divine purpose which he therein serves.”

2. The speculative objection that “it can hardly be thought that “the conviction, confusion, and condemnation of men was any part of the Divine plan in Creation, although it follows as a consequence from it” (Bp. Wordsworth) is set aside by the distinction which Hooker has so clearly established between the “principal” will of God, and His “occasional” will. (See Appen-

21. It is to be carefully observed that the purpose ascribed to God in making Himself known is not “the conviction, confusion, and condemnation of men”; it is not that they might be punished for sinning against knowledge, but that they might have no excuse for not knowing.

22. The construction ἀλλάτειν τι ἐν τῷ is not found in classical Greek, but was adopted by the LXX in imitation of the Hebrew נָלָלַע “to exchange” followed by ס of the thing with which anything is exchanged: see Lev. xxvii. 10; Ps. civ. 20; Sirac. vii. 18, מִהוֹלָלְזֵהַ פִּילוֹ דְּלִילוֹ מֵדֶד דֵּלֶלָהוֹ נַגְנָנָה אֶבַּרוֹז שְׁוָאֶרְי.

23. τοῦ αὐτοῦ.] This is the reading of modern critical editors (Tisch. 8), and is to be rendered that their bodies should be dishonoured among them. The rendering “so that,” &c. (Alford) is scarcely admissible.

The use of τοῦ with Inf. to express merely the event unmixed with the design, is very questionable. St. Paul commonly uses it to express the purpose, or at least the tendency of an act: Rom. vi. 7, vii. 3, xi. 8, 10; 1 Cor. x. 13; Gal. iii. 10. The reading εἰς αὐτοῖς is found in the majority of later uncials, in good cursive 17, 37, 47, in the Vulgate, Origen, Chrysostom, and Theodoret. It requires the Middle sense of αὐτοῖς, against which the absence of other instances is not decisive. εἰς αὐτοῖς, retained by Meyer, expresses more clearly than would εἰς ἄλλους the sin against their own, as well as against each other’s body.

32. The Vatican MS. (Tischendorf, 1867) for ἐπιγονοῦστε reads ἐπιγονῶστε, and for θέοναι, συνεδοκοῦσιν, the participle παροικότες, συνεδοκοῦσιν. Clement of Rome (Cor. c. 35) after de-
nouncing some of the sins mentioned by St. Paul in v. 29, 30, adds: ταύτα γάρ οἱ πράγματες συγεγοροῦν τῷ θεῷ ὑπέργοιν, οὐ μόνον δὲ οἱ πράγματες αὐτὰ, ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ συνευδοκοῦντες τοῖς πράγματοις.

Hence it has been supposed that Clement found in Romans the reading,—οὐ μόνον δὲ οἱ πράγματες ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ συνευδοκοῦντες τοῖς πράγματοι.

But it is far more probable that the transcriber of B, or some earlier MS., having the passage of Clement by his side, substituted the Participles in the text of Romans by mistake.

The sentence being thus incomplete, as in B, later Copyists tried to complete it by various additions: οὐκ ἔνοιχαν D E, οὐκ ἔγνωσαν G.

For a full discussion see Reiche, 'Comment. Critic.'

CHAPTER II.

1 They that sin, though they condemn it in others, cannot excuse themselves, 6 and much less escape the judgment of God, 9 whether they be Jews or Gentiles. 14 The Gentiles cannot escape, 17 nor yet t. e. Jews, 25 whom their circumcision shall not profit, if they keep not the law.

CHAP. II.—THE JEW BROUGHT INTO JUDGMENT.

1-20. St. Paul pursues his proof of the universal need of such a saving power as is contained in the revelation of the righteousness of God by faith.

He has traced the downward course of mankind from the first wilful rejection of the knowledge of God through all the stages of idolatry and vice, showing the mutual reactions of moral depravity and mental darkness. Under general terms, and without once naming the Gentiles, he has painted the prominent features of the heathen world in bold and vigorous strokes. As the picture draws towards an end the shadows deepen, until at last in v. 32 we see that final stage of corruption in which men, having lost all natural virtue themselves and even the hatred of vice in others, retain only the consciousness of their misery and guilt, knowing the just sentence of God on them which do such things.

But there were some among the heathen and many among the Jews to whom this description could not be applied in its strongest external features of blind idolatry and hideous vice. They had not lost all knowledge of the true nature of God; they did not practise, still less applaud, the grosser forms of vice; their moral sense was keen enough to condemn the sins of others: yet they too must be brought to feel themselves guilty before God. How does St. Paul effect this? He strikes at the conscience, and strikes suddenly and sharply: "thou that judgest doest the same things: therefore the moral sense which judges others, but does not restrain thyself from evil, increases thy condemnation: for God will judge thee according to thy deeds" (vv. 1, 2).

1. Therefore thou art inexcusable.] Wherefore thou art without excuse (see i. 20). With startling suddenness the Apostle states his conclusion first, merely hinting by the one word "wherefore" its dependence on the principle stated in i. 32, "that they under commit such things are worthy of death:" and then in the words "O man, whosoever thou art that judgest," he singles out each reader as the very man addressed, and at the same time extends his argument to all, in order that he may eventually apply it to the Jew.

The success of such an appeal to conscience rests on the fact that every man recognizes in himself at least the germs of those sins which he condemns in others. St. Paul uses the argument with admirable skill and power: he has roused a just indignation by his description of flagrant sinners, and as the stern sentence of condemnation is bursting forth, he seizes and turns it back upon the judge himself. "The man that hath done this thing shall surely die." "Thou art the man."

The argument, set in its logical order, would stand thus: Thou judgest that they which do such things are worthy of death: Thou that judgest doest the same things: Therefore in judging thy neighbour thou condemnest thyself, and art without excuse. St. Paul inverts this order by using his conclusion first and proving it afterwards. The repeated description "thou that judgest," though applicable to all men, is especially characteristic of the Jews, whose condemnation of "sinners of the Gentiles" (Gal. ii. 15) was unsparing.

The accusation brought in the words "thou dost the same things" is renewed against the Jew by name in vv. 17-27.

2. St. Paul now completes and confirms his argument by an express assertion of the principle, already assumed in it, that God’s judgment against the doers of evil applies equally to all—to those who judge even as to those who take pleasure in them that practise such things.

For the truth of this principle he appeals to the conscience of his readers (as in iii. 19): "We know," it is a certain and well-known truth "that the judgment of God" (unlike that inconsistent judgment of man, v. 1) is directed "according to truth," i.e., without error and without partiality (see v. 11) against the doers of evil.

3. And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and dost the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? But thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which practise such things, and dost them, &c. In contrast to the sure truth of God’s impartial judgment of evildoers, stand the errors by which men evade its application to themselves: and first, the delusive hope of personal exemption. "But thinkest thou this—that thou shalt escape being judged at all?" The folly of such a thought is made more prominent by the description of the person supposed to entertain it: "O man, that judgest them which practise such things, and dost them." Dost thou, who art thus inexcusable and self-condemned (v. 1), think that thou of all men shalt be exempt from judgment?

No answer is needed: as soon as the thought is clearly stated, its folly is transparent. Yet it is a common form of self-deception: men are almost unconsciously influenced by a vague and undefined hope of impunity which they do not acknowledge even to themselves. The Jews, however, openly claimed exemption from God’s judgment as the common privilege of the children of Abraham. "All Israelites will have part in the world to come?" "Abraham sits beside the gates of hell, and does not permit any wicked Israelite to go down to hell." (See the citations in Bull’s ‘Harm. Apost.’, cavi. § 6, and in McCaul, ‘Old Paths,’ p. 450.) "They who are the seed of Abraham according to the flesh shall in any case, even if they be sinners and unbelieving and disobedient towards God, share in the eternal kingdom." (Just. Mart. Dial. c. Tryph., c. 140.) It is the same notion that is rebuked by John the Baptist, "Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: and think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father" (Matt. iii. 8, 9.) Thus without naming the Jew St. Paul already indicates him by one of his most characteristic errors.

4. Or despisest thou, &c.]. The Apostle now puts an alternative question, suggesting another explanation of the disregard which men show in practice to the acknowledged truth of a future judgment. The effect of God’s patience upon a heart hardened in sin is only to produce a contemptuous feeling of security: "Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily, therefore the heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil." (Eccles. viii. 11; Ps. x. 11, 13; Sirach v. 5, 6.) God’s "goodness" is a gracious benignity that would gladly bless and not punish: His "forbearance" suspends the stroke, when sin cries for vengeance: His "long-suffering" endures repeated provocations and is still slow to anger. "The riches of God’s goodness" he only can despise, who is ignorant of the purpose for which it is manifested: it is a moral blindness only that can mistake God’s patience for a weakness or indifference from which final impatience may be expected (c. ix. 22). The Divine "goodness" is here presented in a twofold manner: There is not only a gracious disposition (χηρστερίσεως) in God, that makes Him willing to lead sinners to repentance: the same gracious quality embodied in God’s dealings (ράχηρστερίσεως) has a real action in leading to repentance even those who nevertheless do not repent: God’s leading is as real as man’s resistance to being led.

5. The false views implied in the two preceding questions are now refuted by a direct assertion of the true nature and consequences of the impenitent sinner’s conduct: the delu-
thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;

sive hope of personal exemption (v. 3) is especially dealt with in vv. 9 f.; and the second error of despising God's goodness is thus at once exposed in a direct and vivid contrast. God's goodness leads to repentance; but an impenitent heart will not be led, and as an effect of this obduracy the store of wrath is increased by the riches of goodness rejected. The Apostle says not "God treasureth up wrath," but "thou treasurest up wrath unto thyself." "He adds to His long-suffering, thou to thine iniquity. And what thou layest up a little each day, thou wilt find a mass hereafter." (Augustine, Enarr. In Ps. 93.)

wrath against the day of wrath. Read "wrath of the day of wrath." The expression sets forth with terrible emphasis the hardened sinner's doom. But while to him the Judgment Day is above all a day of wrath, it has also a more general character as a day which reveals to all, both good and evil, men and angels, that God is a righteous Judge (b helicopter; 2 Macc. xii. 41); that not only in that last great act of judgment, but in all His dealings and dispensations, He judgeth righteously. This revelation of God's character as a righteous Judge (b helicopter, v. Pseudo-Just. Mart. Quastt. Gent. 28), will consist in His rendering to every man according to his deeds.

6. This verse is an exact quotation from the Septuagint (Prov. xxiv. 12), and the same fundamental truth of a future universal judgment according to men's works, is constantly taught in the New Testament no less than in the Old (Matt. xvi. 27; xxv. 31-46; 2 Cor. v. 10). Against vain pretensions and imaginary privileges, St. Paul sets the acknowledged truth that God will judge and reward every man according to his actual life and true character.

The contrast here is not between works and faith, but between a man's deeds as realities and all that is unreal, between doing and knowing, between being and seeming, practising and professing. Thus we need not discuss modes of reconciling this passage with the doctrine that "man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law" (iii. 38). There can be no discrepancy, as the contrast between "faith" and "works of the law" has no place at this stage of the Apostle's argument. He is maintaining here that the rule of God's judgment will be real deeds of righteousness or unrighteousness. He will afterwards show that those "works of the law," which he contrasts with faith, are not real works of righteousness.

Again, we must not on the one hand so strain the sense of the passage, as to infer that each man's deeds earn by their own intrinsic merit that reward which God will render; nor on the other hand limit the sense, as if the Apostle had written "Who will render to every man according to the evidence of his deeds" (Calovius, Meyer). What St. Paul means by the accordance between each man's deeds and his reward, he himself explains in the following verses, and no narrower limitation of his meaning is admissible. The closer definitions attempted in the interests of controversy rest on distinctions which are not contained in the Apostle's words, and are quite out of place in this stage of his argument. See notes on iv. 4, and Augustine, as there cited, and compare Acts v. 34, 35: "Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him."

7-10. The accordance between "the deeds done in the body" and the future reward is now shewn in two great classes into which all mankind are divided, according to the moral aim of their lives.

7. Some interpreters (as Reiche, Ewald, and Hofmann) would arrange the verse thus:—"To the one, seeking eternal life, he will render according to their patience in well-doing, glory and honour and immortality." They argue that the words "according to patience in well-doing," must answer to the clause "according to his works" (v. 6), and so must express "the rule by which God will judge." But the older interpretation followed by our translators is to be preferred, because it both preserves the natural order of the original words, and gives at least as good, perhaps a better, sense; for St. Paul, instead of merely repeating the statement that judgment shall be according to works, brings out a new thought, that the rule of God's future judgment must also be the rule of man's present life, and so the reward must be sought in the way of (eare) patience in well-doing.

The last words might be rendered more exactly "perseverance in good works:" not this or that good work is meant, but the life of the righteous is viewed as a whole in its unity of purpose, as one good work patiently pursued (c. xii. 3; Gal. vi. 4; 1 Pet. i. 17; Rev.
continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life:

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

9 Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as have sinned

xxii. 12). That this life of righteousness can be fully realized only in the Christian believer will be shewn at a later stage of the Apostle's argument (vi. 11-23). What he here sets forth is not the specific realization, but the general idea of the life which God will reward. Its form of outward manifestation will be "perseverance in good work;" its inner motive the longing after a higher state, in which man's perfected nature will shine forth in "glory," his faithfulness will be crowned with "honour," by God's approval, and his happiness secured for ever by the new gift of "immortality."

These three elements, "glory and honour and immortality," are combined in "eternal life," and our Authorized Version has the advantage of representing the various elements of happiness which man has longed for, as being all united in the reward which God will bestow.

8. But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth. But unto them that are factious and disobey the truth. The unrighteous are described as "the men of factiousness," an idiom which represents "factiousness" as the root of their moral character. (See notes on iii. 26; iv. 12, 14; Gal. iii. 10.)

On the word ἐπιθυμία see Note at end of chapter. The context helps to define its meaning here: it is a "factiousness" which consists in "disobeying the truth, but obeying unrighteousness." Allegiance is due to "the truth" (which answers to righteousness, 1 Cor. xii. 6; Eph. iv. 24; 2 Thess. ii. 10-13): to transfer this allegiance to the opposite power "unrighteousness" is factious.

[wrath and indignation.] There shall be wrath and indignation. To complete the sentence we must not supply as in v. 7, "God shall render," but both here and in vv. 9, 10, "there shall be." The sudden change is significant: "Salvation is God's own work, punishment will be the effect of the sinner's obduracy" (Ecumenius).

In the right order "wrath and indignation," the stronger word comes last, adding the idea of hot burning anger. St. Paul teaches us that the sense of God's wrath will be a chief element in that "eternal destruction" (2 Thess. i. 9), which we might have expected him to name here as the opposite to "eternal life."

9, 10. St. Paul now repeats the thoughts of vv. 7, 8, with special emphasis upon the universality of the judgment as including Jews as well as Gentiles, and so refutes the Jewish error indicated in v. 3. The previous order of ideas is inverted, the thought of God's wrath against Sin being continued from v. 8; so that the words which describe the sinner's doom are heaped together with terrible effect.

That which coming from God appears under the form of "wrath and indignation," becomes when endured by the sinner, "tribulation and anguish."

The former word denotes the pressure of a crushing burden, the latter the "straitness" of confinement, and the consequent helplessness, which forbid all hope of escape.

"Every soul of man" is not a mere circumlocution for "every man:" such explanations rob language of half its life and power. It is the soul that suffers (Matt. xxvi. 38, Acts ii. 43), under the wrath of God, even when the pain reaches it through the body. See xiii. 1.

The two words "worketh," v. 10, and "doeth," v. 9, fail to represent the distinction between the simple verb in the Greek, and its compound (καταργείς): punishment is inflicted on him who "worketh out evil" to its full end (v. 9): while he "that worketh good" is rewarded for the effort itself without reference to the successful accomplishment of the work. See vii. 15.

the Jew first.] The Jew, who is here first expressly included in the judgment, has a priority in responsibility and punishment, as well as in privilege and reward: see on i. 16. But this priority will not interfere with the application of the same rule of judgment according to every man's works.

Gentile.] Greek: See on i. 16.

11. The reason why Jew and Gentile will be judged by the same rule lies in that freedom from partiality, which is part of God's character as the Righteous Judge (Deut. 5.
without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; 13 (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

14 For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the Sabbath day, and lives in professed obedience to it. Thus "law" constitutes the moral state in which he lives: if he sins, he sins "in" or under, or "with law," and therefore "by law" he shall be judged.

13. The application of law as the rule of judgment, is an idea quite opposed to the fancied privilege and exemption of the Jews; St. Paul therefore confirms it by referring to the known principle of, all law: "for they who are hearers of law" (and nothing more than hearers) shall be just before God, but the doers of law shall be justified. This general principle is asserted by the Jewish law itself (Deut. xxvii. 26), and St. Paul here evidently assumes, as known to his readers, what he expresses elsewhere: "For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them" (x. 5).

The word "justified" is used here for the first time in the Epistle, and we cannot have a better opportunity of considering its meaning, which is clearly defined by the context.

(a) It cannot mean "pardoned," for he that is justified as a doer of law, has nothing to be pardoned for; nor (b) can it mean "made just" for he is just already by the supposition. It means to be "acknowledged and declared just:" it is the exact contrary to being "condemned." There is no ground on which to condemn one who fulfills the law, he must therefore be justified. The word has evidently the same meaning in iii. 4, 20. In the present passage the meaning is confirmed by the parallel clause: "to be justified is the same thing as to be just before God," i.e., according to his judgment (1 Cor. iii. 19; 2 Thess. i. 6).

14-16. St. Paul has shown how the general principle that God "will render to every man according to his works," applies to the Jews: they will be judged by law, and only law-doers be justified. He now shows that the same principle is applicable to the Gentiles also, though under another form. For although they have no "law," in the stricter sense of the word, that is to say, no revealed and written law like "the law" of Moses, yet substantially they have a law, or rather they "are a law unto themselves."

Thus in v. 14-16, St. Paul shows that the principle stated in v. 13 is in fact universal, and that the formal distinction between Gentile and Jew, v. 12, does not involve any
things contained in the law, these
having not the law, are a law unto
themselves:
15 Which shew the work of the
law written in their hearts, their
conscience also bearing witness, and
their thoughts the mean while ac-
cusing or else excusing one an-
other;
16 In the day when God shall
judge the secrets of men by Jesus
Christ according to my gospel.

essential difference between them in reference
to the Divine Judgment. The real existence of
the inward law in the Gentiles admits a
double proof, the one derived from outward
acts (v. 14), the other from the working of
conscience (v. 15).

14. For when the Gentiles.] The sense
of the verse is made clear by translating it
with due attention to the use of the Greek
Article: "For whenever Gentiles which
have not a law, do by nature the things
of the law, these not having a law are
a law unto themselves." It is clear that
here, as throughout the chapter, the Gentiles
of whom St. Paul speaks are heathen; and
by "nature," as contrasted with the teach-
ing of an outward law, he means the moral
faculty, which is born with every man, how-
ever much or little it may be afterwards
developed. But the Apostle does not speak
of "the Gentiles" as a whole, nor of their
rendering a complete obedience; occasional
good deeds, such as "the law" approves,
done by persons who have neither that nor
any other outward law, are sufficient proof of
an inward principle, by virtue of which such
persons are "a law unto themselves." It is
remarkable that St. Paul here uses the exact
words of Aristotle, who says concerning men
of eminent virtue and wisdom: καὶ ἐὰν τῶν
τοιούτων ὡς ἔσται νόμος αὐτοῖς γὰρ εἰς νόμος
('Polit.' III. xiii. 14). The first clause is
quoted in Gal. v. 23 and the second here.
Compare also Arist. 'Eth. Nicom.' iv. 8 (14)
ὁ δὲ γὰρ καὶ ἄθεους ὑπὸ τούτων ἐξίσου, ὅλου
νόμου λαοῦ τωρίᾳ, in reference to jesting.

15. Which show.] "As much as they
show." Gentiles, such as have been described
in v. 14, are proved to be a law unto them-
selves, because in their good deeds they show
that "the work of the law," though not its
word, the substance though not the form, is
"written in their hearts" by the finger of
Him who made them. Compare Sanderson,
'De Obligatione Conscientiae,' iv. 25, and Cic.
'de Rep.' iii. 22: "Est quidem vera lex recta
ratio naturae congruens, diffusa in omnes,
constans, semperina, quæ vocet ad officium
jubendo, vetando a fraudae deterret.

their conscience also.] With the outward
evidence of acts done in accordance with the
laws there agrees also (συμμαρτμήσεως) an
inner witness, the moral sense, exercising itself
upon men's own acts and upon those of their
fellows. The Authorized Version is inaccurate
in rendering περιέχει here "the meanable,"
translate thus:—"their own conscience
joining witness, and between one an-
other their thoughts accusing or else
exposing (them)."

How does St. Paul's use of the word con-
science correspond to the modern use? and
what difference, it may be asked, is there
between "the work of the law written on the
heart," and "the conscience bearing witness?"
The former is the suggestive or prospective
conscience that spontaneously forbids or com-
mands prior to action; the latter is the sub-
sequent or reflective conscience that passes
judgment on deeds done, either by ourselves or
others. Compare Fleming, 'Vocab. of Philo-
sophy,' Art. 'Conscience.' "This faculty is
called into exercise not merely in reference to
our own conduct, but also in reference to the
conduct of others. It is not only reflective
but prospective, in its operations. It is ante-
cedent as well as subsequent to action, in its
exercise; and it is occupied de faciendo, as
well as de facto." See also Mansel, 'Pro-
legomena Logica,' Appendix, note F. San-
derson, 'De Conscientiâ,' I. § 27.

16. There is no need to put υἱοῦ, 13-15 in a
parenthesis, so as to connect v. 16 directly with
v. 12. The words "in the day," &c.,
refer to the whole subject discussed, from
v. 12, or even from v. 6, to v. 15. The same
words are appended in the same informal,
but impressive, manner in 2 Thess. i. 10.

That v. v. 14, 15 are not connected with
v. 16, is seen in the thought that "the secrets
of men" shall be judged; the Divine judg-
ment shall penetrate to the inner sphere of
conscience, and correspond to "the work of
the law written on the heart."

Why does St. Paul say, "according to my
Gospel?" His arguments hitherto have been
drawn from principles universally admitted;
a judgment too of some kind was acknow-
ledged both by Jews and Greeks; but what
Jesus Christ would be the Judge, by neither.
This is a distinctive doctrine of the Gospel
(John v. 22; Acts x. 42; xvii. 31; 1 Cor. iv.
5); and as St. Paul has already, in his intro-
duction (i. 1-5, 9, 15, 16), spoken of the
preaching of that Gospel as the work to which
he was set apart, he here very naturally calls
it "my Gospel," on the first occasion of bringing
Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God,
18 And knowest his will, and 
provest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law;
19 And art confident that thou forward in his argument one of its peculiar doctrines. For other interpretations see Note at the end of the chapter.

17-27. The minor premiss of the syllogism in verse 1, "Thou that judgest dost the same things," is here proved against the Jew by name.

17-24. Behold.] Read "But if." The dramatic "Behold!" is not unsuited to the "splendid and vehement eloquence" of this apostrophe; but the connection is made clearer by the right reading.

"But" implies that the conduct to be described is opposed to the principle just established, that not the hearers, but the doers of the law shall be justified. In vv. 17-20 a supposition is made ("if") in which the boasted privileges of the Jew (17, 18), and his assumed superiority over others (19, 20), are for the moment admitted: and then a series of pungent questions, founded on these admissions ("Thou then," v. 21), and put in startling contrast with them, brings out the flagrant inconsistency between profession and practice (21, 22).

If with the Authorized Version, and most editors, we make v. 23 also a question, we must suppose that this and the preceding questions are regarded as admitting no possible denial. But in the Greek a slight change of construction from the Participle to the Relative (v. 23), probably indicates the transition from the series of questions to the assertion which gives a comprehensive answer to them all, and closes the searching inquiry with a decisive condemnation (Meyer, Lange). The verdict, whether thus declared in v. 23 or assumed after it, is confirmed in v. 24, by its accordance with the language of the Old Testament, in such passages as Isaiah i. 5; Ezekiel xxxvi. 20-23.

17. art called a Jew.] The name Jew, which first occurs in 2 Kings xvi. 6, was extended after the captivity to the whole people, and as distinguishing them from the heathen, was associated with national prerogative and Messianic hopes. The Jew, therefore, is represented as priding himself upon his national name (Job 28, 29; ix. 4; Gal. ii. 15; Rev. ii. 9; iii. 9).

restest in the law.] "Restest upon law." As the confidence of the Jew reposed on the mere fact of God's having given him a law, not on the particular character of the law so given, the more exact translation is 

"restest upon law;" the Greek article is omitted by the critical editors. Compare v. 25, and introduction, § 9.

The real foundation of the prerogative of the Jews was the promise given to Abraham, the covenant of the law being subordinate and temporary. But the Jew had lost sight of this truth, and because God "shewed his word unto Jacob, his statutes and judgments unto Israel, and had not dealt so with any nation" (Ps. cxlvii. 19) the Jew rested supinely upon the possession of a law as an assurance of God's favour, instead of using it as a rule of life, and a light to the conscience. The same Greek word is used in the Septuagint (Mic. iii. 11), "Yet will they lean upon the Lord, and say, Is not the Lord among us? none evil can come upon us."

The same spirit is indicated in the next clause.

and makest thy boast of God.] "and boastest in God." An arrogant perversion of the glorying which God commends, "Let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth Me, that I am the Lord which exerciseth loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the Lord." This passage of Jeremiah (ix. 24) may have been in St. Paul's mind; for the last clause rendered in the LXX., "in these is my will," τό θέλημά μου, seems to be echoed in his next words.

18. And knowest his will.] Literally, "the will," which may mean either simply "his will," as in A. V., or perhaps by way of excellence, "the one perfect will." See Barrow. Serm. iv. p. 34, and note on Acts v. 41. Dr. Lightfoot ('Revision of New Testament,' p. 106) shews that θέλημα, even without the Article, means the Divine Will in 1 Cor. xvi. 12, and in several Epistles of St. Ignatius.

and approvest the things that are more excellent.] δικαιωμα means (1) to "test," "prove," "discern" (c. xii. 2; 1 Cor. iii. 11; xi. 28; 2 Cor. viii. 8, &c.); and (2) to "approve" as the result of testing (c. i. 28; xiv. 2; 1 Cor. xvi. 3; 1 Thess. ii. 4; and especially Phil. i. 10, εἰς τὸ δικαιώματι ὑμῶν τὰ διαφέροντα). Many interpreters prefer the former meaning here, and understand by διαφέροντα "the things that differ," either morally, as good and evil, or that differ from "the will" of God. But these interpretations are very
thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness,

20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law.

21 Thou therefore which teachest

feeble when compared with that of the Vulgate and A. V. It would be a small thing to say of the Jew who prides himself on possessing the law and knowing the will of God, that he discerns the difference between good and evil. What St. Paul says is much more: "thou approvest (in theory) the more excellent things." The Jew thus says, as it were, of himself, "Video meliora—proboque," and feels that this refinement of his moral sentiment is an advantage which he derives from "being instructed out of the law," which was publicly read and explained to him on the Sabbath. See below on § 20.

Though the language is just what the Jew would have used to describe himself, there is in the Apostle's use of it a latent irony which becomes more strongly marked in the following verses. Here the Jew's own privileges are enumerated; there the claims of superiority over others which he founded upon those privileges.

19. And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind.] It was part of God's purpose in choosing Israel that they should become the witnesses and teachers of His truth: their sin lay in making a vain boast of the privilege, instead of fulfilling the duty. The language is such as was current among the Jews in regard to proselytes, and to the heathen generally; but St. Paul heaps phrase upon phrase, and "is lavish in what seem to be their praises," to strengthen the contrast, "exalting the one and abusing the other, that he may smite the more sharply, and make his accusation heavier." (Chrysostom.)

20. subiect hast.] Rather, as having. As in § 18, so here again more emphatically, the law is brought forward as the ground of this presumptuous confidence: "Thou art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind... as having the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law."

"The form" (μορφὴ, "formation") here means the ideally perfect presentation of knowledge and truth, the outward conformation answering to their inner nature. (Chrysostom, Grotius, Meyer, Ewald, Fritzsche, Philippi.) It is not opposed to the substance as the unreal to the real, or the outward to the inward; for not even St. Paul himself, much less the Jew, whose thoughts he is here expressing, believed that in the law there was a mere empty form of knowledge. The Jew believed that he had in the law the sole embodiment of all knowledge and truth in their most perfect "form," or (if we must express the Active sense of the original word), that he possessed in the law "the forming of knowledge and truth," that he could give to knowledge and truth their right form, and so was the proper teacher of the world. (Sirach xxiv. 8-12.) Compare Rabbi Artom, Sermons (1873) p. 110: "If the earth is to be full of the knowledge of the Lord as the waters cover the sea, it must be through our agency. We must infuse that knowledge: we possess the best materials for that instruction, and we must make it a duty and a glory to enlighten the world."

21. "At length the Apostle turns to strike." (Jowett.)

The arrogant claims and professions of the Jew, as just described, are strangely inconsistent with his actual conduct; and it is this inconsistency that forms the ground of the Apostle's questions.

The whole course of thought, and the two sins first specified—theft and adultery—seem to be suggested by Psalm l. 16: "What hast thou to do to declare my statutes, or that thou shouldest take my covenant in thy mouth? Seeing thou hastest instruction, and castest my words behind thee. When thou sawest a thief, then thou consentedst with him, and hast been partaker with adulterers."

We need not suppose, therefore, that these sins were more flagrant at this time among the Jews than at other times, or among other nations; but that they were flagrant is both historically certain, and implied in St. Paul's argument.

The teaching and preaching is not that of official persons only, but all the Jews are addressed as one person; a loud and ostentatious denunciation of sin was part of the national character.


dost thou commit sacrilege?] "dost thou rob temples?" The third offence charged is sacrilege, or temple-robbing. But does St. Paul mean to charge the Jews with robbing heathen temples, or their own temple?
23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?
24 For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is "written.
25 For circumcision verily profifieth, if thou keep the law: but if

Does he refer to breaches of the law laid down in Deut. vii. 25, 26, and repeated by Josephus (Ant. iv. c. 8, § 10), "Rob not foreign temples, nor take an offering inscribed with the name of any god?" Or, does he mean that the Jews robbed God of His offerings (Mal. i. 8, 12, 13, and iii. 8-10) and by their extortion and fraud made His temple "a den of thieves"? To these latter practices the original word is not elsewhere applied, perhaps is hardly applicable; and the mention of "the idols" in the opening clause, points decisively to the robbing of idol temples. Compare Acts xix. 57.

Sharp as the contrast is between theory and practice in the former questions, the sarcasm here reaches a climax of severity. Idols and all things belonging to them were by the law utterly accursed and abominable; yet covetousness could prevail even over the abhorrence of idols.

This interpretation is confirmed by v. 24, which shows that the sins specified are such as would fall under the notice of the heathen; and nothing would more surely make them blaspheme God's name than the robbery of their temples by those who made their boast of God.

23. Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God]
24. Thou that gloriest in the law, by thy transgression of the law dishonourest God.

The first clause is a summary of v. 17-20, the last a decisive answer to "the four questions of reproachful astonishment" (Meyer), in vv. 21, 22. The contrast between privilege and practice that runs through the whole passage is thus used again, to increase the force of the final condemnation.

24. The statement that the Jew by his transgression of "the law," dishonours "the God," who gave it, is now confirmed and explained in language borrowed from Isaiah iii. 5, but applied in a new sense. The Prophet means that because God's people are suffered to fall under the oppression of their enemies, these last hold His name in contempt. St. Paul's meaning is that the vices and sins of the Jew make his religion and his God contemptible in the sight of the heathen. There is nothing in the Hebrew of Isaiah corresponding to the words "among the Gentiles:" but they occur repeatedly in a passage of Ezekiel (xxxi. 21-23), which seems also to have been in the Apostle's mind, and they are naturally suggested by the last clause of v. 22. The addition thus made by St. Paul to the words of Isaiah, seems to have crept into the Septuagint Version of the original passage; a more remarkable instance of interpolation, due to the same cause, will be observed in the next chapter. See note on iii. 13 ff.

Because of you.

25-28. It has been shown that none but doers of the law shall be justified, and that the Jew, though making his boast in the law, is not a doer of it (12-24). But no mention has yet been made of his other great privilege, circumcision; if this is the seal of an unconditional blessing, he may yet escape. St. Paul, therefore, goes on to confirm and complete his preceding argument, by showing that the benefit of circumcision depends on the same condition as that of the law.

25. "For circumcision, I admit, is of use if thou practise law; but if thou be a transgressor of law, thy circumcision has become uncircumcision." The Article is wanting, because "the stress is laid, not upon the law which God gave, but upon law as given by God" (Cremer). What St. Paul requires is the practice of moral obedience, "if thou be a law-doer." Compare note on v. 13; Lightfoot, 'Gal.' ii. 19, iv. 5, and Dr. Vaughan's good note on this passage.

St. Paul is not here stating the necessity for an exact fulfilment of the whole law, and the effect of an individual act of transgression; he supposes in the one case an habitual practical regard to law (ὑποκάλεσαν ἥπαξ), and in the other an habitual transgression of it. He is describing, not the condition on which a Jew could earn righteousness, but that on which he might hope for a promised blessing. The nature of this blessing is explained afterwards (v. 11; ix. 4). The effect of habitual transgression is that the covenant is annulled; circumcision has thereby become uncircumcision, so far as any benefit from it is concerned. St. Paul's words of course bear this figurative meaning, but similar language is used in a literal sense by the Rabbis: "Let not heretics, apostates, and impious men, who are Israelites, say, 'Since we are circumcised, we go not down to hell.' What then does the Holy and Blessed God? He sends an angel, and turns their circumcision into uncircumcision, so that even they go down to
thou be a breaker of the law; thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.
26 Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?
27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the law?

v. 26. The disobedience of the Jew and the obedience of the Gentile supposed in v. 25, 26, are here both assumed.

"The natural uncircumcision" means the Gentile, this or that individual, who remains as he was by nature, uncircumcised. Such an one, fulfilling the law, shall by contrast judge the Jew that transgresses it.

The Jew, that was so ready to judge others (δικαιώματε, v. 1), is thus himself brought to judgment.

"Scripture" seems more suitable than "letter," which is too narrow. The contrast is not between "letter" and "spirit," as in v. 29, but between a written law and the unwritten law of nature (v. 14).

Accordingly, there is no disparagement of the written law; rather it is regarded, like circumcision (v. 28), as an advantageous circumstance to the Jew, but one under which, through his own fault, he comes to no better result than being a transgressor.

For a similar use of the Greek preposition ἄνω to denote the attendant circumstances, see IV. 11; XIV. 20.

28, 29. The reason why circumcision avails so little in the case just discussed (25-27) is, that it is not the true circumcision of the heart, but only the sign, without the grace.

28. This verse is well rendered in A. V. In v. 29, the Subjects only are expressed in the Greek, and the Predicates must be mentally repeated from v. 28: thus: "But he who is inwardly a Jew (is truly a Jew), and circumcision of heart in spirit not in letter (is true circumcision)."

"Circumcision of heart," as a figurative expression for inward purity, is as old as the Book of Deuteronomy. See x. 16; xxxi. 6; and Jerem. ix. 26. In the N. T. the idea is found only in St. Stephen's memorable speech, and in St. Paul's Epistles.

The element in which this true circumcision takes place is "spirit;" that is, the inner life which man lives under the influence of the Divine Spirit.

In contrast to this, "letter" is the mere outward element of written law; and circumcision "in spirit not in letter," is a circumcision which does not stop short at
inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on verses 8 and 16.

8. τοις ἐπιθλ. See Fritzschel's elaborate exegesis on this passage. ἐπιθλός, a labourer, a hireling. ἐπιθλον, to act as a hireling, i.e. in a mercenary self-seeking spirit (ἐπιθλόνας μὲν τι τῷ περιπιθλοῦντος μὴ βουλεθεῖν, Schol. ad Soph. Aj. 83).

Hence ἐπιθλόνας (Arist. Polit. v. 3) and ἐπιθλοπιθλομα (Polyb. x. 22, 9) have the sense of canvassing or hiring partisans and forming factions in the State; and ἐπιθλία (Arist. Polit. v. 2 and 3. p. 1302, and p. 1303) means a self-seeking ambitious rivalry, party spirit, or factiousness.

It is so explained by Suidas; and Chrysostom, Theodoret, and Theophylact interpret it as "contentiousness" or "factiousness," a meaning which is easily adapted to the context in the N. T. passages (Rom. ii. 8; 2 Cor. xii. 20; Gal. v. 20; Phil. i. 17, ii. 3; Ja. iii. 14, 16).

16. according to my gospel.] The right interpretation is given by Origen, who, after remarking that the secrets of men can be judged only by God who searcheth the heart, proceeds thus: "Which judgment nevertheless according to the gospel of Paul, that is, the gospel which Paul preaches, will take place through Jesus Christ: 'for the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son.'"

This interpretation is confirmed by the other two passages in which St. Paul uses the expression "my gospel," in both of which he refers to distinctive and fundamental doctrines of the Gospel which he preached, namely in xvi. 25 to the extension of Christ's kingdom to the Gentiles, and in 2 Tim. ii. 8 to the resurrection and Davidic descent of Christ.

Calvin's comment, "He calls it his gospel in reference to his ministry," though not sufficient here, is quite applicable to 2 Thess. ii. 14, and 2 Cor. iv. 3.

Others less correctly regard κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγελίον μου as expressing the rule by which God will judge.

Thus Meyer: "Paul was so certain of the sole truth of the Gospel committed to him (xvi. 25; Eph. iv. 20 f.) which he had by revelation of God (Gal. i. 11 f.) that he could not but be equally certain that the future judgment would not be held otherwise than according to his Gospel, whose contents are conceived as the standard of the sentence." But the standard has been already stated in v. 13; God will judge every man "according to his works"; and the thought that the Gospel preached by St. Paul will be the standard by which God will judge Jews and Gentiles is very inappropriate at this stage of the argument.

LANGE: "The day on which God judges the secrets of men according to the Gospel of Paul, is the day when the Apostle preaches the gospel to them." This explanation is excluded by the evident fact that the whole context points to the day of final judgment.

The notion that by "my gospel" St. Paul means the Gospel according to St. Luke is mentioned by Eusebius, ‘H. E.’ III. iv., in a way which implies that he gave no credit to it (φασὶν ὅσοι ἀπὸ κ. τ. λ.).

That he cannot mean to characterize his Gospel as different from that preached by the other Apostles, is evident from the fact that they also from the first had announced as a distinctive doctrine of the Gospel that Christ would come again to judge the world. (Acts iii. 19-21; x. 42; compare Matt. xxi. 31; John v. 22.)
CHAPTER III.

1. The Jews' prerogatives: 3 which they have not lost: 9 howbeit the law convinced them also of sin: 20 therefore no flesh is justified by the law, 28 but all, without difference, by faith only: 31 and yet the law is not abolished.

What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?

2. Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

3. For what if some did not be-


St. Paul has shown that the Jew's superior knowledge of God was useless, without practical obedience (ii. 17-24), and that circumcision without inward purity was no better than uncircumcision (ii. 25-29).

Yet the people whom God had chosen for Himself out of all nations, must have some real advantage over the heathen; and the covenant, of which circumcision was the sign, must confer some benefit, for God Himself was the author of it.

St. Paul expresses these thoughts in the opening questions of ch. iii., in a form which assumes the reality of Jewish privilege.

1. What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision? "What then is the advantage of the Jew? Or what the benefit of circumcision?"

The summary answer, "Much every way," is not the boast of an imaginary Jewish opponent, whose argument (1-3) is cut short by St. Paul in v. 4: but it is the Apostle's own conviction, as is clear from the parallel passage, ix. 4, 5. While exposing with just severity the Jew's hollow pretences to personal merit or impunity, he yet recognizes with the spirit of a true Israelite the good gifts which God had bestowed upon His people. Compare Deut. xxxiii. 29.

2. chiefly, because that unto them were committed, &c. "For first [it is much] that they were entrusted with the oracles of God." St. Paul does not expressly say, as in A.V., that the possession of the oracles of God was the Jew's chief advantage, but implies as much by giving it the first place in his intended enumeration of the blessings of the covenant. Compare Ps. cvii. 19, 20: "He shewed his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel. He hath not dealt so with any nation."

The oracles," is applied in the New Testament only to the revelations made to Moses (Acts vii. 38), and to the Divine utterances generally (Heb. v. 13; 1 Pet. iv. 11).

"I am not unaware," writes Philo, "that all the things which are written in the sacred books are oracles delivered by him (Moses): and I will set forth what more peculiarly concerns him, when I have mentioned this one point, namely, that of the sacred oracles some are represented as delivered in the person of God by His interpreter, the divine prophet, while others are put in the form of question and answer, and others are delivered by Moses in his own character as a divinely prompted lawyer, possessed by divine inspiration." (Life of Moses, c. xxiii. Compare "On the Virtues and Office of Ambassadors," c. xxxii.) The corresponding term in the Old Testament (סֶפֶר הַלּוֹהֵי, תַּאֱלֹהִים תַּאָלֹהַם) is used of any Divine revelations (Num. xxiv. 4, 16), of the precepts of God's Law (Ps. cvii. 11; cxix. 148, 158), and especially of God's promises (Ps. cxix. 38, 49, where see notes).

That which gave to "the oracles of God" in the Old Testament their highest value was the promise of salvation in Christ, which ran through the Law and the Prophets: and that promise being made, not to one generation, but to "Abraham and his seed for ever," not to one nation, but to "all the nations of the earth," the oracles which contained it were a trust committed to the Jews for the common benefit of mankind.

And over and above their share in the general promise, the Jews had a great and special advantage in having this trust committed to them.

For the trust not only brought with it the various blessings which distinguished the Jews under the old covenant above all the nations of the earth, but was further accompanied by special and peculiar promises given to the Jews as a nation, that they should themselves be heirs of the promised salvation. And this natural prerogative has not been, and cannot be, lost, as St. Paul proceeds to show,—thus dropping the enumeration of other privileges.

3. For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect? For what if some disbelieved? shall their want of faith make the faithfulness of God of none effect? St. Paul is not speaking, as some have supposed, of disobedience to the Law, or unfaithfulness to the covenant, but of disbelief of the oracles and their fulfilment in Christ. The Greek word does not mean "disobedience," but "unbelief." Nor could it be supposed that the
lieve? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar; as

Ps. 51. 4 it is written, That thou might-

est be justified in thy sayings, and

mightest overcome when thou art

judged.

5 But if our unrighteousness comm-

mand the righteousness of God, what

disobedience of former generations had for-

feited the national privilege: for the promise

had been renewed from age to age as long

as prophecy continued. All former unbelief

did but foreshadow the great national apostacy now well-nigh accomplished

in the rejection of Christ by the Jews. This

subject, here briefly touched to meet a pos-
sible objection, is the main theme of ch. ix. —

xi. And we there see how anxious St. Paul

was to assure himself and others that "the
gifts and calling of God are without repen-
tance," and that His faithfulness would surely

accomplish His promises to Israel in the ages
to come. Thus in the question, "Shall their

want of faith make the faithfulness of

God of none effect?" the future tense has

its simple and proper meaning.

Even the present unbelief of the Jews was

not universal: "Some did not believe: some of

the branches were broken off" (xi. 17); "blind-

ness in part is happened to Israel" (xi. 25).

This is not an inaccurate mode of speaking,

nor an attempt to soften down an unwelcome

truth; still less is it an expression of irony or

contempt, as though unbelievers, however

many, were of little account. For St. Paul

is not distinguishing between "some" and

"many," but between "some" and "all," not

thinking of the comparative number of Jewish

believers and unbelievers in his own genera-

tion, but looking forward to the time when

"all Israel shall be saved" (xi. 26).

It is to be remarked that "some" in the

original signifies a part of the whole, but not

necessarily a small part of it. It may be a

very great part and majority of the whole,—
as in Hebrews iii. 16, where it is said, "Some

when they heard provoked, howbeit not all that

came out of Egypt with Moses." All did

provoke God on that occasion except Joshua

and Caleb, and those who were still too

young to bear arms... (Chalmers.) The ques-

tion being, What is the advantage of the

Jew? the some must be some of the Jews.

In every generation there were a few found

faithful, and so in the generation to which the

Gospel was preached. And though the great

majority of that generation, and of all that

have succeeded it, did not believe, still the

country is not finally rejected (xi. 1, 25, 26).

Moreover, even in the case of those who did

not believe, God's promise was proved faithful:

they had the advantage, though they would

not use it.

4. God forbid; yea, let God be true.] Not

so be it: but let God be true. It is not

enough to reject with righteous abhorrence

(μὴ γείωντο) the thought that the unbelief

of some could make void God's faithfulness

to others. God's truth is absolute and inde-
pendent: it cannot be impaired, even if man's

falsehood be universal.

Nay more, God's truth is the only truth;

it will be found in the end that He alone is

holy and righteous, and every man, in himself,

unholy and unrighteous. So let it be: "let

God be true, but every man a liar."

The last clause, expressed in the exact

words of Ps. cvxi. 11 (Septuagint), is an essen-
tial part of the argument, that truth must be

ascribed to God, and none but God.

St. Paul adopts the apt words of the

Psalmist to express his own thought, and this

is why for "unbelief," and "faithfulness" (v. 3)

he now substitutes the correlative ideas "truth"

and "falsehood:" these again give place to

"righteousness" and "sin" in the quotation

which follows from the 51st Psalm.

It is clear, from the objection introduced

in v. 5, that St. Paul quotes the words of

David as a declaration that man's sin serves

to establish God's righteousness.

And this is David's own meaning, when he

says, "Against Thee, Thee only, have I

sinned... that mightiest thou be justified." (See

note ix. 17. Hupfeld and Perowne on Ps.

li. 4, and Winer 'Gk. Gr.' liii.) When David's

conscience is awakened, he beholds his sin in

its most heinous aspect as essentially opposed to

the holiness of God: and in that opposition

he sees that his own sin serves to establish the

truth that God alone is righteous.

We have thus a fine climax in the Apostle's

thoughts: "Shall the unbelief of some make

void the faithfulness of God? Nay, let God

alone be found true, and all men false: for

the sin of man serves to show that "boli-

ness belongeth unto God." This is no digres-

sion: for it is over the self-righteousness of

the Jew that St. Paul must win his way to

the great truth that "all have sinned" (9, 19).

5. The truth stated in vv. 3, 4, might

easily be perverted into a false claim of

im-purity. If the unrighteousness of us men

establishes and commends God's righteous-

ness, what conclusion shall be drawn?

The term "righteousness of God" here
shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)
6 God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?
7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?
8 And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that
denotes the Divine attribute in its comprehensive sense, as including God's faithfulness (v. 3) and truth (v. 4). The argument is capable of universal application, but is here aimed at the conscience of the Jew, from whom the Apostle would cut off all false pretexts of impurity.

Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? Is God that infliceth his wrath unrighteous? We know that God's wrath is revealed against unrighteousness (i. 18, ii. 8): "Is He as the inflicter of that wrath unrighteous? Is it unjust in Him to punish the sin that confirms the sole glory of His righteousness?"

Is God unrighteous? The very form of the question, in the Greek, implies that the answer must be negative. And yet even in this form St. Paul cannot state such a thought as coming from his own mind: "I speak," he says, "as a man," i.e. "according to the foolish and unworthy thoughts of God, entertained by man."

6. When he begins to speak as a Christian teacher, according to his own higher standard, he can only reject such a thought as impious: "God forbid! For, (if God that infliceth his wrath is therein unjust,) how shall God judge the world?"
The argument is very simple; it does not go beyond the limits of the thought in Gen. xviii. 25. "Shall not the judge of all the earth do right?"
The supposition of injustice in God's infliction of his wrath is directly contrary to the fundamental truth that God shall "judge the world in righteousness" (Heb. vi. 2; Acts xvii. 31).

That truth as one of the first elements of religion is so certain, that whatever contradicts it must of necessity be false. Thus by a rapid appeal to the first elements of religion, St. Paul is content to show that the supposition of injustice in the punishment of sin, because it establishes God's righteousness, must be false. Where the fallacy lay in the process of reasoning that could lead to such a false influence, he does not stop to show. The explanation commonly given is that God's righteousness is established not by sin in itself, but by sin as dealt with by God, punished by His holy vengeance, pardoned by His grace, or overruled to good effect by His wisdom.

A simpler view and more suited to the context is, that as the sinner does not wish or intend to establish God's righteousness, no merit for this result is due to his sin, which remains under an undiminished curse.

"We cannot say truly that as God to his own glory did ordain our happiness, and to accomplish our happiness appoint the gifts of His grace, so He did ordain to His glory our punishment, and for matter of punishment our sin. For punishment is to His will no desired end, but a consequent ensuing sin; and in regard of sin, His glory an event thereof, but no proper effect, which answereth fully that repining proposition,—'If man's sin be God's glory, why is God angry?':" (Hooker, 'E. P.,' Bk. V., App. No. 1.; and ed. Keble, vol. ii. p. 572) Compare also Archbishop King, 'Origin of Evil,' vol. ii. p. 440.

7. The argument of v. 6 is continued. If, because sin commends the righteousness of God, it is unjust for Him to punish the sinner, all judgment becomes impossible. For I, or any man, may on this ground protest against being judged, and plead thus at the last day:—If God's truth was more abundantly manifested by my lie, and His glory thereby increased, is not that enough? Why farther am I also, on my side, brought to judgment as a sinner?

The tenses show that the scene is laid at the last Judgment; and the emphatic pronouns in "my lie," and "I also," set clearly before us the individual sinner on one side, and God on the other.

For the general term "sin," or "unrighteousness" (v. 5), "lie" is used in reference to the words "every man a liar," in v. 4. "The truth of God," as His attribute, is not capable of increase, but it may abound more unto His glory by being more fully manifested in the contrast with man's sin.

8. The false plea, just proved to be inconsistent with the certain truth of a future Judgment, is now shown to be destructive of all morality. The sinner, who speaks in v. 7, is about to continue his daring protest, Why am I judged? and why may I not do evil that good may come?

But the thought occurs to St. Paul, that the very charge slanderously brought against himself and those who followed his doctrine was, that they practised and taught this impious maxims.
good may come? whose damnation is just.

9 What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin;

And not rather, as we be slanderously reported,] And why not, as is slanderously reported of us. The sentence beginning, "And why not," is interrupted by the sudden thought, "as is slanderously reported of us, and as some affirm that we say;" and the interrupted conclusion is then attached to this intervening sentence, and necessarily expressed in the Plural, "Let us do evil that good may come." The slander to which St. Paul thus alludes, was evidently directed against his doctrine that man is justified by faith, not by the works of the law (see vi. 1, and 15 ff.). But the refutation of the slander here is only incidental; the main purpose of the passage (vov. 5-8) is to cut off from the Jew all claim of exemption from God's judgment.

Accordingly the concluding sentence is directed, not against the slanderers just mentioned, but against those who object to being judged as sinners: "whose judgment is just." The fine irony of this summary decision, and the connexion of the passage, are rather obscured by substituting, as in A.V., "condemnation" for "judgment."

9-20. Confirmation from the Jewish Scriptures of the Charge that all are under sin.

9. What then? are we better than they? The privileges of the Jews (vov. 1-4) might lead them to infer, as we know they did infer (see on ii. 3), that they were better than others in God's sight, and in view of His judgment. This false presumption is now brought prominently forward in order to be completely refuted. See note at end.

No, in no wise.] Οὐ πάνως has two meanings. (1) "Not altogether" (1 Cor. v. 10).

(2) "Not at all." A clear example of this latter meaning is found in the Epistle to Diognetus, c. ix. 1-6; τί πάνως εφεδρίζεστε τοις ἐκμυκθέντις ἡμῶν (2 Thess.). This sense, required by the context, is forcibly expressed in the A.V.

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one:

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of

as Gentiles are all sinners before God (v. 19).

Compare i. 16 and ii. 9, 10, for a like priority assigned to the Jews, and for the use of "Greeks," as equivalent to "Gentiles" in general.

that they are all under sin.] The expression denotes subjection to sin as a power that practically rules the life of all men, in their natural state, unrenewed by God's grace. Compare vii. 14; Gal. iii. 22.

10-20. As it is written.] At this point, St. Paul turns to the testimony of Scripture, as being in accordance with the charge of universal sinfulness which he has already made on other grounds.

10-12. This first quotation is from Ps. xiv. 1-3, which is almost identical with Ps. lxxx. 1-3. St. Paul seems to quote from the LXX, with noteworthy variations.

There is none righteous.] Hebr. and LXX, "There is none that doeth good," as in v. 13 (Ps. xiv. 3). The word "righteous" gives the same sense in a form more exactly agreeing with the Apostle's general argument: "Δίκαιος aptum verbum in sermone de justitia." (Bengel.)

no, not one.] LXX, ἡδίκαιον ἦν ἴκος, which same words occur below in v. 13 (= Ps. xiv. 3). The Hebrew has corresponding words there, but none here; the addition was apparently made by St. Paul, and carried back at an early period into the LXX. See note on v. 12. The words thus added to the first sentence cited by the Apostle, serve to bring out in substantial agreement with the Psalmist, only more emphatically, the universal prevalence of sin, which admits no exception. This is more in accordance with St. Paul's manner of quotation, than to suppose that after the formula "as it is written," and before the words of Scripture, he has interpolated his own summary of all that follows.

11. There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.] Hebr. and LXX, Ps. xiv. 2: "The Lord looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God." In abridging the passage, St. Paul rightly expresses the negative sense which is implied in the original.

In the right reading (ὁ ἐννοοῦν), observe (1) the form ἐννοοῦν, usual in the LXX, in
way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips:

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness:

15 Their feet are swift to shed blood:

16 Destruction and misery are in their ways:

17 And the way of peace have they not known:

18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know what that

the nominative singular only, for ἐνεπάσης, which occurs in Ps. xxxii. 15; (2) the Article, "non est qui intelligat," (3) the idea of sin as folly, in accordance with the opening thought of the Psalm, "The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God."

18. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable.] This agrees exactly with the LXX. The Hebrew word rendered "unprofitable," means literally "corrupt," as sour milk. See note on Ps. xiv. 3.

there is none that doeth good, no, not one.] Heb. "not even one;" LXX, "there is not even to one."

Here the quotation from Ps. xiv. ends; but the other passages quoted in v. 13-18, from various Psalms and from Isaiah, are interpolated in Ps. xiv., in some MSS. of the LXX, in the Vulgate, and thence in our Prayer Book Version. Probably the whole passage from Romans was written at first in the margin, and thence crept into the text of the Psalm. Other examples of this reflex action of quotation upon the text of the LXX are found in Ps. xiv. 1; Isa. lii. 5, &c. See note on ii. 24.

13. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit.] Taken exactly from the LXX of Ps. v. 9. As the grave that stands ready opened will presently be filled with death and corruption, so the throat (larynx) of the wicked opened for speech will be full of corrupt and deadly falsehood. Compare Jerem. v. 16: "Their quiver is an open sepulchre."

have used deceit.] Literally, "were deceiving:" for the form ἐδολοιπον see Winer, P. ii. 113. 2 f. The Hebrew of Ps. v. 9, means literally "make smooth their tongue," A.V. "flatter with their tongue," cf. Prov. ii. 16.

the poison of asps is under their lips.] Ps. cxxi. 3. The venom of falsehood is as deadly as adder's poison.

14. Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness.] Ps. x. 7; compare Job xx. 14, 16. The poison of asps was supposed to lie in the bitter gall, and hence "bitterness" is a figure for venomous malice. "Throat," "tongue,"

" lips" mark the successive stages by which speech comes forth: the "mouth" sums up all in one (Bengel).

15-17. Abridged from the LXX of Isai. lix. 7, 8, where see Notes.

18. From Ps. xxxvi. 1 (LXX.)

We must now ask how far these passages confirm the charge of universal sinfulness, in support of which they are alleged.

In Ps. xiv. 1-3, David declares that the Lord looking down from heaven upon the children of men could find none righteous; no, not one. It seems impossible to frame a more positive assertion of universal sinfulness: and if in v. 4, 5, we find a people of God, and a generation of the righteous, the inconsistency between this and the former statement of the Psalmist is only apparent and external. In the deep inner sense which St. Paul gives to the passage, "the generation of the righteous" would be the first to acknowledge that they form no exception to the universal sinfulness asserted in the opening verses of the Psalm.

The quotations in v. 13, 14, from Ps. v. 9, cxxi. 3, and x. 7 refer to the Psalmist's enemies, or to the wicked as a class, and contain no assertion of universal sinfulness.

The passage quoted in v. 15-17, from Isaiah lix. 7, 8, is distinctly directed against the unrighteousness of Israel. The last quotation (v. 18) from Ps. xxxvi. 1, describes the state of a wicked man, without any reference to the universality of sin.

Thus the first quotation confirms in its whole extent the Apostle's statement that Jews as well as Gentiles are all under sin, while the other passages supply particular illustrations of the general truth, and some of them are directed to the very point of the Apostle's argument, that the Jews are not exempt from the general sinfulness.

It may possibly be objected that the charge of universal apostasy in Ps. xiv. applies only to some particular generation, and not to all time.

If the objection were valid, it would not affect St. Paul's argument: the quotation would still prove as much as he uses it to prove, and more. For the nature of the
things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law; that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

Therefore by the deeds of the law shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for through law knowledge of sin.

19. This verse is generally understood as an assertion that all the Old Testament Scriptures, and therefore the passages just quoted from the Psalms and Isaiah, speak to the Jew in order that his mouth, as well as every other, may be stopped by the denunciation of his sin.

But this interpretation is open to serious objections.

(1) It rests on the very doubtful assumption that St. Paul may have included the Prophets and Psalms under the name of “the Law;” whereas this extension of the name is found only in two or three passages of St. John’s Gospel, and is contrary to St. Paul’s usage, 1 Cor. xiv. 21 being the one doubtful exception.

(2) This extended meaning of “the Law,” even if it were not unusual in St. Paul’s writings, would be inadmissible here, being opposed in two respects to the immediate context. (a) In v. 21 “the Law” is expressly distinguished from “the Prophets.” (b) In the sentence “the Law speaks to them that are under the Law,” the term must evidently have the same meaning in both places, and in the latter it clearly means the Mosaic code.

(3) The usual interpretation does not agree with the course of the argument at this point.

The passages from the Psalms and Isaiah have been brought to confirm the charge already made against Jew and Gentile, “that they are all under sin.” But it was necessary to prove more than this in the case of the Jew, in order that his “mouth might be stopped” and that he might “be brought under the judgment of God.” For we have seen already that the Jews openly claimed exemption from final condemnation, even for wicked Israelites: See note on ii. 3.

The purpose therefore of v. 19 is not to show that the Scripture describes the Jew as a sinner, but that, being a sinner, he is in danger of the judgment. These three reasons, and especially the last, compel us to reject the common interpretation of this verse, and to take a different view of the connexion of the whole passage, v. 9-20, which is as follows:

“We are not in any way claiming a superiority (or, putting beforehand an excuse) which may exempt the Jew from condemnation. For the charge which we before brought (cc. i. ii.), and which Scripture confirms (iii. 10-18), is that all, Jew as well as Gentile, are under sin.

But the law, far from giving to the Jew
law there shall not flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

21 But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;

22 Even the righteousness of God

impunity for his sin, speaks in all that it says, especially to him as its subject, in order that he first (and so all the world), may be put to silence, and brought under God's judgment."  

it saith [it speaketh]. In all that the Law "saith" (λαμβάνει), i.e. in all the commandments which it contains, it speaketh (λαμβάνει) to those who are "under the Law," as the Dispensation in which they live.

that every mouth may be stopped] Compare Job v. 16; Ps. lxxii. 10; cvii. 42. The mouth is stopped, when every excuse is taken away.

become guilty before God] Some under God's judgment, or more exactly, "become accountable to God" (ἐνδεχόμενος τῷ Θεῷ). The word is not used elsewhere in the N. T. or LXX, but is common in Plato and the Attic Orators: it means "liable to prosecution," and a Dative following it refers either to the violated law, or to the rightful prosecutu. God is thus represented as having a controversy against sinners (Job ix. 3; Jer. xxxv. 31; Mic. vi. 3); but since He is also their Judge (v. 20), we may fairly translate the words as above, "some under God's judgment."

20. Therefore] Because (ὅτι): this word introduces the reason why every mouth shall be stopped and all brought under judgment. The sense of the whole passage (9-20) is perverted by the erroneous rendering "therefore," which the A.V. first brought into the English Bible. The failure of the Jew to justify himself before God is here traced to a cause which is common to all, namely, the weakness of sinful man indicated in the term "flesh." This term (nārā sāpīq) St. Paul substitutes for nār (qāw, "every man living," by which the LXX more exactly renders the Hebrew: "all flesh" conveys the idea of universal frailty and sinfulness; see Gen. vi. 12). The same passage (Ps. cxliii. 2) is quoted in the same form in Gal. ii. 16. In both instances St. Paul prefixes the quotation by the words ἵτις ἐφεύρετο ἐπιστρεφόμενω, by works of law, a definition of the Psalmist's meaning both correct in itself and necessary in the application to the Apostle's argument. Observe, however, that the statement being universal and not limited to the Jews, the Apostle does not write the works of the law, but works of law, because he is stating a general truth which results from the nature of law, as being a thing which cannot give life and righteousness (Gal. iii. 21). See Introduction § 9. His meaning is, that no man shall obtain justification from the source whence the Jew seeks it, namely, from the merit of works done in obedience to a law.

Thus, when the Jew is put to silence, every mouth is stopped: none can say after his condemnation, that they could attain to righteousness by their own obedience, if only they had a law to teach them what God requires. There is no contradiction between the statement in ii. 13, "the doers of law shall be justified," and this passage, "by works of law shall not flesh be justified:" the former states the abstract principle or condition of legal justification: the latter declares that no man can fulfill that condition.

for by the law is the knowledge of sin.] For through law oometh knowledge of sin. A reason why none can be justified through law: for law has the very opposite effect; through it first comes a clear knowledge (ἐπιγνώσεως, as in i. 28) of sin. This weighty thought is taken up again and developed in vii. 7 ff. We are there taught how the commandment draws out the sinful lust which it condemns, but cannot subdue; and how the law has done all that it can do, when the sinner is forced to exclaim, "O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from the body of this death?"

21-26. THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF GOD REVEALED.

"The opening of a brighter scene." (Bengel.) St. Paul has shown the universal need of righteousness (i. 18—iii. 20), and now turns from the negative to the positive side of the theme proposed in i. 17.

21. But now] marks the contrast between the times of the old and new dispensations, as in v. 26, and xvi. 26.

"Magnus ab integro secolorum nascitur ordo," the righteousness of God without the law is manifested.] Apart from law a righteousness of God has been manifested.

The words "apart from law," put in close and emphatic contrast to "through law" (v. 20), shew that the actual manifestation of God's righteousness has been quite independent of law, i.e. not only the law of Moses, but the whole principle of law and legal obedience.

"a righteousness of God." See note on i. 17. A more complete definition of this righteousness follows in vv. 22-26.

has been manifested." Having pre-
which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;
24 Being justified freely by his

v. 23—24.

ROMANS. III.

viously been hidden in God's counsels it has now been made manifest in historical reality in the person of Jesus Christ (1 Cor. i. 30), "Who was manifested in flesh, justified in Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the people, believed on in the world, received up into glory" (1 Tim. iii. 16). The manifestation in fact is complete (προέβλεψις); the revelation in the Gospel still goes on (ἐποίησεν τὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ, i. 17).

being witnessed by the law and the prophets.] It was necessary that the manifestation of the righteousness of God should be absolutely independent of law; that the true mode of obtaining it, viz. by faith in Jesus Christ, might be set beyond reach of doubt. Nevertheless, "the law" of Moses has not been without its use negatively, in producing a knowledge of sin (v. 20), and positively, in bearing witness in common with the Prophets to the coming dispensation of righteousness. This testimony of Scripture includes all types, promises, and prophecies of Christ: for "to him bear all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins" (Acts x. 43; xx. 32). We have an example of the way in which St. Paul uses this testimony in c. iv.

22. Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ. Read, "Even a righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ." The subject of v. 21 is repeated with a more precise definition distinct from (84) though not opposed to the preceding. Compare ix. 30; Phil. ii. 8; 1 Cor. ii. 6. The points more precisely defined are the means by which righteousness is attained, and its destined extent.

"through faith in Jesus Christ." Justifying faith is here presented, not as a faith in God of which Christ is the author (Van Hengel, &c.), but as a faith in Christ Himself: compare Mark xi. 24; Gal. ii. 16, 20; iii. 22; Eph. iii. 12; iv. 13; Phil. iii. 9. "The Person of Christ in its unity and totality (Jesus Christ) is the proper redemptive object of faith" (Dorner, 'Person of Christ,' P. 11 ii. P. 113).

unto all and upon all them that believe.] Tischendorf and most modern editors read with the more ancient MSS. "unto all them that believe," the variation does not materially affect the sense, but the emphatic repetition of "all" with different prepositions, is very characteristic of St. Paul (xi. 36; Gal. i. 1; Eph. iv. 6 (Col. i. 16). If both are retained, "unto all" marks the destination and "upon all," or "over all," the extension which the "righteousness of God" is to have, both being limited to "them that believe." Faith in Christ thus presented as the sole condition of righteousness is not regarded by St. Paul as a restriction of God's grace, but as the means of participation by which alone it can be thrown open to all mankind. Faith has itself a universal fitness for man: it grows out of his original relation to God, and is, under all circumstances, the rightful disposition of the creature towards his Creator. In man unfallen it was the trustful loving sense of dependence upon God's goodness: in fallen man it unites the deep feeling of unworthiness with the conviction that mercy rejoices against judgment; and thus in both states God gives the glory.

Faith therefore is not an arbitrary condition imposed upon us from without, but a law of our true nature: it exalts man to his rightful dignity by allowing the free consent of his will, and the active exercise of his faculties, and yet humbles him before God in acknowledgment of mercy undeserved. Thus faith is at once the soul's highest exercise of freedom, its lowest "confession of sin," and the only homage it can render to God.

for there is no difference.] The righteousness of God by faith is for all, "for there is no distinction" made therein, but Gentile and Jew are all included in the same method of salvation: and the reason why no distinction is made is that there is no difference in their need (v. 23).

23. For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.) The older English versions mark more correctly the difference of the tenses, and the meaning of ὑστεροπηθοῦσα: "For all have sinned, and are destitute of the glory of God" (Cranmer, Geneva): "For all men sinned, and have need of the glory of God" (Wycoff). The subjective force of the Middle Voice ("to feel want") will be clearly perceived by contrasting the self-complacent question of the rich young Ruler, "What lack I yet?" (Matt. xix. 20, ὑστεροῦσα) with the description of the Prodigal, when "be began to be in want" and to feel it (Luke xv. 14, ὑστεροπηθοῦσα). The sinning is represented by the aorist as an historic fact, already proved: its present and continued effect is that men not only come short of (ὑστεροῦσα) but suffer want (ὑστεροπηθοῦσα) and feel themselves destitute of "the glory of God."

The meaning of this last expression is much disputed, but instead of discussing the various
grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

25 Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his

meanings which have been invented for it, we shall better enter into St. Paul's conception of "the glory of God," by combining the chief aspects in which he regards it.

In i. 23 "the glory of the incorruptible God" is (in the words of Hooker, "E. P." ii. 2, § 1) "the admirable excellence of that virtuous Divine, which being made manifest causeth men and angels to extol his greatness." This "glory of God" not only manifests, but communicates itself, being reflected in such of His creatures as are capable of knowing and loving and growing like Him. St. Paul therefore, in 1 Cor. xi. 7, calls the man "the image and glory of God," because he is capable of receiving and reflecting God's glory. Compare Ireneaus iii. 20, § 2: "The glory of man is God, and of the operation of God, and of all His wisdom and power, man is the receptacle." and iv. 16, § 4: "man was in want of the glory of God." See also Hooker "E. P." i. xi. § 2, "then are we happy, therefore, when fully we enjoy God as an object wherein the powers of our soul are satisfied even with everlasting delight: so that although we be men, yet being unto God united, we live as it were, the life of God." The complete manifestation of Divine perfection is "the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ," or in other words, "the glory of Christ, who is the image of God" (2 Cor. iv. 4, 6).

This glory of God in Christ shining forth in the Gospel upon the believer's heart transforms him into "light in the Lord" (Eph. v. 8): and so "we all with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory" (2 Cor. iii. 18).

The transformation begins here, but man's full participation in "the glory of God" is the hope of our high calling reserved for us in heaven (c. v. 2; 1 Thess. ii. 12; 2 Thess. ii. 14).

24. Being justified freely by his grace.] The Present Participle "being justified" is closely connected with the preceding clause, as its necessary accomplishment (ὀστρεπτομένοι — διακαύομενοι): they who through sin suffer loss of the glory of God can receive justification only as a free gift by his grace.

"The glory of God" thus restored in Man as His image, is rightly called "the perfection of his grace." Severianus, Gram. Cat. in loc.; ιστρεψαι αὐτοῖς ἡ τῆς χάριτος τελειώσεως. Thus instead of making v. 23 a formal parenthesis, and then resuming his subject in a new sentence, St. Paul, as his manner is (see on v. 26), glides back without any formal break into the main course of his argument. For the meaning of "justified," see note on ii. 13: it is there used of one supposed to be actually "just" before being declared so by God, here of those who before were sinners, but now are both declared and made righteous. See note on ch. v. 19, and the passage quoted from Bp. Bull, "Examen Censuræ," § 17, in our Introduction § 6.

We learn from this verse that the justification of the believer takes place — (1) as a free gift, not as a reward or acknowledgment of a righteousness already existing in him; (2) "by his grace" there being a slight emphasis on the Pronoun, which contrasts God's grace, i.e. free unought love, with man's merits or works (Eph. ii. 8); (3) "through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus," this being the instrument or means on God's part, as "faith in Jesus Christ," v. 22, is on man's part.

the redemption that is in Christ Jesus.

"Redemption" is here explained by Origen as a "ransom" paid in Christ's blood to Satan for the release of his captives. This notion, so common until the time of Anselm, is derived from the Greek and Latin words (ἀπολύσις, redemption), not from the Hebrew. In the O. T. the great typical act, which fixes the idea of redemption, is the deliverance from Egypt. Jehovah is the Redeemer or Deliverer (ἀπολύω), who demands the release of His people: "Israel is my son, even my first-born: and I say unto thee, Let my son go, that he may serve me: and if thou refuse to let him go, behold, I will slay thy son, even thy first-born" (Ex. iv. 22, 23): "I will redeem you ( hsvθx) with a stretched out arm, and with great judgments" (Ex. vi. 6; xv. 13).

The purpose of the redemption is the consecration of Israel to God's service: "I will take you to me for a people, and I will be to you a God" (Ex. vi. 7). Jehovah pays no ransom to the oppressor, but from His people He requires an act of faith, in the sacrifice of the Passover, and an act of holy obedience in the consecration of the first-born (Ex. xiii. 1; xix. 4-6). These types are united and fulfilled in "Christ our Passover." He is both "the Lamb that was slain" (Rev. v. 12; John i. 29; 1 Cor. v. 7), and "the first-born from the dead" (Cor. i. 18). Thus "The redemption" is "in Christ Jesus," not in any act or work, the effect of which might be separated from the agent, but in Himself (Eph. i. 7; Col. i. 14), "in His person with which His work forms a living unity" (Oehlerhausen, Eph. i. 7): Having lived and died and lived again for us, He is "of God made unto us
... redemption" (1 Cor. i. 19), being in Himself the redeemer (Tit. ii. 14), the ransom (1 Tim. ii. 6), and the redeemed as "the first-born among many brethren" (viii. 29; 1 Cor. xv. 23; Rev. i. 5).

The ransom is more closely defined as "his life" or "his soul" (Matt. xx. 28; Mark x. 45), and "his blood" (1 Pet. i. 19).

As to the extent of the redemption, it is for Israel (Luke i. 68; ii. 32; xxiv. 21), for "many" (Matt. xx. 28; Mark x. 45), for all" (1 Tim. ii. 6), for "the purchased possession" (Eph. i. 14).

It redeems from sin and its penalties (Tit. ii. 14; Heb. ix. 15; 1 Pet. i. 18; Eph. i. 7; Col. i. 14), particularly from death (Rom. viii. 35; compare Heb. xi. 35), and generally from the present evil state into a state of glory and blessing (Luke xxi. 28; Eph. iv. 30).

25, 26. A further explanation of God's method of justification "through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus."

Who God hath set forth. Two interpretations of the verb are admissible. (1) "Who God set before His own mind," proposed to himself, and so "designed," "proposed," "ordained" (Wiclif). The Margin "fore-ordained" is less correct, precedence in time not being expressed by the ποιεῖν, but only implied in the idea of design or purpose; "quod nondum est, proponitur" (Origen).

This is the more ancient interpretation, being found in the Syriac ("prædestinavit," Schaaf), Origen, Chrysostom, Gennadius in Cœcumenius, and others.

It also agrees with the meaning of the Verb in the N. T. (Rom. i. 13; Eph. i. 9), though not with its construction, as an Infinitive usually follows.

(2) "Who God set forth," i.e. "publicly before the eyes of all, that he who will be redeemed may draw nigh" (Pelagius).

This sense is supported by classical usage (Herod. iii. 148; Eurip. 'Phem.' 1350, Hcr. 6113), by the Vulgate, Cranmer, Geneva, A.V., and the majority of modern interpreters.

In the LXX the Verb occurs thrice in the Middle Voice, but in a sense slightly differing from either of the above: Ps. liv. 3; ("they have not set God before them,") Pss. lxxixvi. 14, and cl. 3.

The meaning "Who God set forth" is best suited to the idea, made so prominent in this passage, of a public exhibition: and the Middle Voice indicates that God himself was interested in thus setting forth His own Son as a propitiation to show forth His righteousness. With either meaning, the Father is the author of our redemption.

past, through the forbearance of God;

to be a propitiation."

as a Propitiatory, i.e. a mercy seat. For a full discussion of the Greek word λαοτῆρον, see Note at end of chapter.

Amid all the variety of rendering the essential meaning of the word remains sure; it represents Christ as making propitiation for sinners, and so obtaining mercy and forgiveness for them.

Moreover, the all-important truth that the efficacy of Christ's propitiation lies "in his blood," i.e. in His dying as a sacrifice for sin, shines out too clear in the context to be obscured by any possible rendering of the word λαοτῆρον.

through faith in his blood.) The clause "through faith," omitted in A, and not interpreted by Chrysostom, is authenticated by the consent of all other MSS., Fathers, and Versions, and confirmed by the recurrence of εἰς πίστιν at the close of v. 26. The absence of the Greek Article does not affect the English translation, nor the connexion of the clause with the context.

The following considerations might be thought to favour the connexion given in the A.V.

(a) That the construction "faith in His blood" is grammatically correct, is clear from Eph. i. 15, τὴν καθ' ὑμᾶς πίστιν ἐν τῷ Κυρίῳ Ἰησοῦ: where the absence of a second article after πίστιν shows that it is structurally connected and fused into one idea with ἐν τῷ Κ. 'I, the substantive πίστις taking the same construction as the Verb, πιστεύω (Meyer, Fritzsche). Compare LXX Ps. lxxxvii. 22, οὐκ ἐπιστεύω ἐν τῷ Θεῷ; Jer. xii. 6, μὴ πιστεύσης ἐν αὐτῷ: Mark i. 15.

(b) The objection that no other example is found in Scripture of such an expression as "belief in the blood of Christ," is set aside by the equally unexamined expressions "justified in his blood" (v. 5), and "made nigh in the blood of Christ" (Eph. ii. 13).

(c) That the expression is not inappropriate is thus proved by Bp. O'Brien, 'Nature of Faith,' Note P. p. 383.

"If we are told that the Blood of Christ was shed for the remission of our sins (Mark xiv. 24); that we are justified by (in) His Blood (Rom. v. 9); that we have redemption through His Blood (Eph. i. 7); that He made peace through the Blood of His Cross (Col. i. 20); that those who were afar off were made nigh by (in) His Blood" (Eph. ii. 13); that He purchased the Church of God with His own Blood (Acts xx. 28); that He has washed us from our sins in His own Blood (Rev. i. 5), that through His Blood we have
26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

baldness to enter into the Holiest (Heb. x. 19); if all this . . . is declared concerning the efficacy of His Blood, it can hardly be thought strange that it should be anywhere stated that His Blood is the object of the faith of His people."

But still, though the expression "faith in his blood" (Post-Communion Prayer) is in itself unobjectionable, the context of the present passage requires that the element in which lies the inherent power of Christ's Atonement, viz., His blood, should not be introduced as a subordinate point, merely to define more closely the subjective condition, man's faith, but should hold a more prominent and independent position in the sentence (Meyer, Philippi, &c.).

This argument is much strengthened by the emphatic position of ἀνενήσθη, rightly explained by the Greek Fathers. "The Propitiatory of old was itself bloodless, since it was also without life, but it received the sprinkling of the blood of the sacrificers: but the Lord Christ and God is at once Propitiatory, High Priest, and Lamb, and in His own blood (οἰκείῳ ἀιωνίῳ) negotiated our salvation, requiring only faith from us" (Theodoret). The two clauses "through faith," and "in His own blood," are therefore parallel, and both depend on ἀνενήσθη: render, therefore, "Whom God set forth as a Propitiatory through faith in His own blood." Compare Heb. ix. 12, 25.

for the remission of sins that are past."

"because of the passing over of the sins that had gone before." See Deitzsch, Heb. ix. 15.

In thus distinguishing, with the Margin, between παρεξήγερσις "preremission," "passing by," and ἀφορμή "remission," i.e., full release and dismissal of sins, we are treading on the edges of a fierce but. extinct controversy concerning the remission of sins under the Mosaic dispensation, of which a brief notice may be found in Trench, 'Synonyms of N. T.,' 1st series, p. 133.

We must also observe that the word here used for sins, ἄμωμισμα, is comparatively rare (Mark iii. 28; iv. 12; 1 Cor. vi. 18) and denotes the sinful deeds done, not the essential sin ἁμαρτία of which they are the outcomes. It is joined with παρεξήγερσις in Josephus, 'Ant.' xvi. 3, 3, and in Xenophon, 'Hipparch.' vii. 10, "It is not right to let offenses pass by unpunished."

"When the son of Sirach (Ecclus. xxiii. 1) prays to God that He would not pass by his sins,—he assuredly does not use οὐ μὴ παρήγγελῃ = οὐ μὴ ἄφη, but only asks that he may not be left without a wholesome chastisement following close on his transgressions."

(Trench, l.c.)

The contrast between "this present time" and the "sins that had gone before" shows that the foregone sins of which St. Paul here speaks are not those of individuals before conversion, but "the sins of the world before Christ" (Meyer), including "the transgressions that were under the first testament," i.e. the sins of the Jews (Heb. ix. 15).

Those foregone sins God had let pass for the time without adequate expiation or punishment. His wrath which had been revealed from heaven against all ungodliness (i. 18) was not a complete vindication of His holiness, for though the sins against which it was denounced were increased and aggravated (i. 24-32), yet He did not suffer His whole displeasure to arise, but, with rare exceptions, His justice seemed to slumber.

through the forbearance in the forbearance. This overlooking of sins has its cause "is the forbearance of God," an expression which clearly distinguishes it from the remission of sins, which is the effect of His grace and favour.

"Forbearance" (ii. 4) is a temporary suspension of anger, "a truce with the sinner, which by no means implies that the wrath will not be executed at the last; nor, involves that it certainly will, unless he b
found under new conditions” (Trench, and Series, p. 15).

One effect of God’s forbearance is to obscure for the time His righteousness: “These things hast thou done, and I kept silence; thou thoughtest that I was altogether such an one as thyself” (Ps. l. 21; compare Eccl. viii. 11-13). Thus in the impunity of sin during the times of ignorance that God winked at (Acts xvii. 30), there arose a secondary cause, for an exhibition of His righteousness, (διὰ τὴν πάρεςιν, κ.τ.λ.) a cause having reference only to His mode of dealing with the sins of the generations which lived before Christ. But the primary cause of that exhibition of His righteousness was not the need of a “Divine Théodicee of the past history of mankind” (Tholuck), but the forgiveness of the sins of all ages, even unto the end of the world.

26. To declare, I say, his righteousness.] “in view of the exhibition of his righteousness.” The A. V. treats this as a mere resumption of the θέωκεν κ. τ. λ. in v. 15, in which case the change of expression (πρὸς τὴν ἔδειξιν) becomes, as Meyer confesses, unmeaning.

But connect the clause with that which immediately precedes, and all is clear: God set forth Christ for an exhibition of His righteousness—because He had let the sins of former generations pass for the time unpunished in view of the exhibition of his righteousness at this present time—that he might be just, &c. The passage thus construed, is a striking example of a well-known peculiarity in St. Paul’s style, of which an exactly parallel case is found in Eph. iii. 3, 4, 5: he “goes off at a word” (μυαλόριον), in order to connect with it some accessory thought, which he follows out until it brings him back to the same word again (ἐν τῷ μυαλόριῳ τοῦ χριστοῦ), and then glides back into the main line of the sentence without any parenthesis or other formal interruption of the grammatical construction (See above on v. 24.)

Here he goes off at the word ἔδειξιν in order to bring in a subordinate reason for such an “exhibition” which might otherwise have been overlooked (διὰ τὴν πάρεμος κ. τ. λ.), and with this thought, and by means of it, works round to the same word again (πρὸς τὴν ἔδειξιν). The Article is required by the renewed mention of ἔδειξις, which is the same exhibition as before, but in accordance with the mention of the sins of former times is now more nearly defined as “the exhibition in this present time,” even this addition of ἔν τῷ νῦν καύρῃ being an exact parallel to the addition τοῦ Χριστοῦ in Eph. iii. 4.

“The time of Christ is a time of critical decision, when the πάρεμος is at an end, and man must either accept the full remission (ἀφεσις) of sin, or expose himself to the judgment of a righteous God” (Schaff).

The clause “in this present time” points to the contrast of former ages. “The righteousness of God” then partially obscured, has been clearly manifested and exhibited “in this present time,” i.e. the time subsequent to Christ’s death.

that he might be just, and the justifier of him that believeth in Jesus.] That he might himself be just, &c. There are some remarkable illustrations of this antithetical expression in some of the Rabbinical comments on Isa. lii. 11:

“His (Messiah’s) true perfection will consist, first of all, in his perfecting himself as far as possible in the service, the fear, and the love of God, and afterwards in conferring the same perfection upon others, as is done by the Almighty himself.”

“Moses, more than any one else, helped to make others perfect, according to the saying, Moses was just and justified many.”

“Moses was worthy himself, and made many others worthy as well.” (Neubauer, ‘The Jewish Interpreters of Isaiah.” lii. pp. 325, 339, 297). The exhibition of the righteousness of God had a double purpose: Christ was therein set forth (α) as “propitiatory in his blood” to show that God is Himself “just,” i.e., to vindicate His righteousness against the seeming impunity of sins in former ages, and (β) as “propitiatory through faith,” to show that God is the author of righteousness to them that believe. “The righteousness of God is shown especially in this, that He so utterly hates sin, that in order to destroy it, and make man righteous, He sent His own Son into the world, and gave Him up to death” (Estius).

Calvin’s interpretation, though not strictly derived from the context, like that which has been given above, is not inconsistent with it, and is worth quoting briefly: “This is a definition of that righteousness which was exhibited in the gift of Christ, and revealed in the Gospel (i. 17). It consists of two parts: (1) God is righteous, not as one among many, but as containing in Himself alone all fulness of righteousness: God alone is righteous, and all mankind unrighteous. But (2) God’s righteousness is communicative: He pours it forth on man. In us,
Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law. 

the spirit of the law is the law of faith." This refined distinction between the form and spirit of the law of Moses is out of place. The article before ἐργασία shows that the clause must be completed thus—καὶ τοῦ νόμου τῶν ἐργασιῶν; Instead of presupposing that there is no such law of works, the question in fact presupposes that "the (definite) law of works" is well-known. Accordingly "a law of faith" does not mean the law of Moses recognised in its spirit as being a law of faith (Lange): but the Gospel is called "a law of faith," because, like the Mosaic law, it declares the will of God, only what it demands is faith, for "this is the work of God, that ye believe on Him whom you must believe sent" (Joh. vi. 29; compare 1 Joh. iii. 23).

Therefore we conclude. For we deem (Wiclif). The reading yap, now confirmed by the Sinaitic Codex, is necessary to the sense. What the context requires is a confirmation of the statement in v. 27, that boasting is excluded by a law of faith. That confirmation St. Paul brings from the general principle already established by the whole previous discussion that "man is justified by faith apart from works of law." compare the words "apart from law," in v. 21. That "man is justified by faith," proves that faith is necessary to the Jew: that man is justified without or apart from "works of law," proves that "the works of the law" are not required of the Gentile. Thus the boasting of the Jew is wholly excluded: for not only is the law (in which he had made his boast) insufficient without faith, but faith is sufficient without the law: compare note on v. 29, and Gal. ii. 14-16.

On the word "man," Chrysostom's comment is excellent. "He says not 'Jew,' nor 'he that is under the law,' but having enlarged the area of his argument, and opened the doors of salvation to the world, he says 'man,' using the name common to the nature."
30. Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.

31. Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

Christ was sufficient to justify him without circumcision and the law. The two opposite views of this question might be thus expressed:

1. ἐκ πίστεως διὰ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ περιτομῆς.

2. ἐκ πίστεως καὶ διὰ τῆς πίστεως γερές νομοῦ.

The second view, which is St. Paul's, means that in the justification of the Gentile, the faith which he already has, supplies the place of all subsidiary means, such as circumcision and the law. Compare note on v. 28.

31. Do we then make void the law through faith? "Law" (without the article), means neither the O. T. Scriptures (see on v. 19), which St. Paul does not assume to establish by his doctrine, but conversely, his doctrine by the Scriptures; nor "the law of Moses," as the basis of the Jewish Dispensation, nor any particular law, but that which is common to all law, its essential character and principle. Compare Delitzsch on Hebr. viii. 6 and note N.

In this sense St. Paul has said that "the righteousness of God has been manifested apart from law" (v. 21), that "man is justified by faith apart from works of law" (v. 28). To the Jew who knew no "law" but "the law" of Moses, and valued that as the method of attaining to righteousness, such statements must seem to abolish the whole principle of law, and make it void.

St. Paul in his usual manner anticipates the objection, by putting to himself the question which might be urged against him: "Do we then make law of none effect through faith?" i.e. through "the faith" which we have mentioned above as the sole condition of justification.

For the sense of καταργοῦσε, see iii. 3; iv. 14. St. Paul did undoubtedly make of none effect the Jewish idea of "the law," as the means of attaining to righteousness, and as necessary for the Gentile (compare Gal. ii. 16-19); but he shrinks from the thought (μὴ γεννάω, see iii. 4, 6) of making "law" in its true character of none effect.

Yea, we establish the law! "Nay, we establish law," we set it up, and make it stand firm by putting it upon its proper base. Viewed as a revelation of the eternal principles of morality, or in other words, of the holy will of God, "law," so far from being made void, is for the first time fully vindicated, and established by the Gospel of "righteousness by faith."
The two sides, negative and positive, of the Apostle's answer are developed in his subsequent argument. As to the former, he proceeds at once to show in c. iv, that law is not made void by its exclusion from justification, for this had always been so; it had no place in Abraham's justification by faith. The positive side, the establishment and vindication of law in its true character, is discussed at large in c. vii.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 9, 25.

9. I. Τι οὖν; προέχωμεν; οὐ πάντως; προέχωσάμεθα γάρ. This is the received text, supported by a great preponderance of the best authorities, and accepted by all modern critics. Its interpretation depends upon the meaning of προέχωμεν.

(a) προέχωμεν, Passive.

This explanation is given by a Scholiast (possibly Photius) in Ὑεκεμενίας. The assertion of the great advantage of the Jew leads the Gentile to exclaim, "What then? Are we forestalled, and surpassed? ἢμεῖς προεθερῆθημεν, προέχωμεν; To which St. Paul replies, "No, in no wise. If they have not done right, they are responsible just as you are, if you have not done right. But if both do right, the salvation is equal, so that you are not surpassed (προέκειται)."

This sense of προέχωμεν is found in Plutarch. But the decisive objection to this, and all other explanations which ascribe the question to a Gentile, is that there is nothing in the context to justify the transition to a Gentile speaker. (Fritzschke, Meyer.)

(b) προέχωμεν, Middle.

(i) "Do we (I, Paul, and other Jews) put forward anything as a defence or excuse?"

There is force in Philippi's objection that the Verb in this sense must have its object expressed—προέχωμεν γάρ τι; Herodot. II. 43, προέχεσθαι τε τῆς κεφαλής ἀποστάσεως τοῦ κρατοῦ, is no exception: but Meyer disre¬gards this objection, and with Fritzschke, Ewald, Th. Schott, Morison, adopts the explanation, which agrees well with the context, and preserves the usual meaning of προέχωσάμεθα.

(ii) "Do we put ourselves forward?" i.e., as better than those over whom God's judgment impends (Hofmann), or, as better than the Gentiles.

Objection. No example has been found of προέχωσάμεθα in this sense.

(ii) "Are we better than they?"

This is the interpretation adopted in the English Versions from Wiclif to A. V., and is the simplest and best. It is supported by the Vulgate: "Quid ergo? Præceellimus eos! and by Euthymius (about A.D. 1100), quoted by Reiche in his 'Critical Comment. ':—'Arsi προσελίθητε εἰρμεν παρά τούτον Ἑλληνας;"

In this case the Middle Voice has its subjective force: "Are we in our own opinion better? Do we think ourselves better?"

II. Τι οὖν προσεδιομένη; οὐ πάντως.

The received text, with this punctuation throwing the two questions into one, is thus explained in Ὑεκεμενίας: "What advantage, then, have we (Jews), and what did we gain by being preferred before the uncircumcised?"

But in this case the answer must have been in a different form, answering to τι; e.g. οὐκ οὖν οὐ πάντως.

III. Τι οὖν προεκατεχομένη περισσότερον; προεχωσάμεθα, κ.λ.μ.

This reading, in which οὐ πάντως is wholly omitted, is capable of two interpretations:

(i) "What advantage, then, do we (Jews) retain?"

So the Syriac (Schaaf), "Quid ergo obtinemus excellentem?" evidently referring to u. 1: "What advantage, then, hath the Jew?" and agreeing in the general sense with l. b. 3.

(ii) "What advantage do we (Christians) hold?"

This explanation is adopted apparently by Origen, Chrysostom, and Theodoret: by Theodorus in Cramer's Catena ("After the reproof of our kinsmen, i.e. the Jews, we will speak of the greatness of our advantages," and still more explicitly by Severnianus [or Severus of Antioch (Reiche)], in Ὑεκεμενίας and in Cramer's Cat. τί ἐχομεν ἡμεῖς εἰς τὴν χάριν πνευματός καὶ ἐκαθημένης τὴν πάσιν τὴν διὰ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ διακοσμήσας ὅπων ἄργωτος ἀρχιμανδρία;"

But the reading, though found in D G can only be regarded as an ancient gloss, adopted into the text on account of the ambiguity and difficulty of the received reading.

25. "A propitiatory:" not the Abstract Noun ἀσάμε (1 John ii. 2; iv. 10), but λαστῆρον, "propitiatory," originally a neuter adjective, but constantly used in Biblical Greek as a substantive in the definite concrete sense "place or instrument of propitiation;" compare ἀκροαστήριον, διακαστήριον, δυσαστήριον, δυσαστήριον. Once in N. T. (Heb. ix. 5), and about twenty-five times in LXX, it means the lid of gold above the Ark, called μετόχεια "mercy-seat," or "propitiatory." It first occurs in Ex. xxv. 17, and paióvdu λαστηρον ἐπίθε κυρίων καθαριον, "and thou shalt make a propitiatory, a lid of pure gold," the
construction being the same as in Ex. xxvi. 1, 7. This apposition of διάστημα and ἑπείθημα is the more natural, because on this first occurrence of ἑπείθημα the translators might wish to show that they had both meanings under their consideration.

In Ezek. xlix. 14, 17, 20, τὸ διάστημα is used by the LXX for the ledge or raised base of the altar, "the settle" (A. V.), which like the capporeth was to be sprinkled with the blood; and in Amos ix. 1, for νῆμα, "the lintel," mistaken apparently for ἱστός. Philo (Vita Mos., Lib. III. c. viii, ἑπείθημα τὸ προσαγωγοφεύμενον διάστημα) recognizes διάστημα as the technical and constant name of the lid of the Ark.

Upon this Biblical usage is founded the ancient interpretation.

Origen says that the Apostle here "refers the propitiatory described in Exodus to none but the Lord our Saviour." So on the Gospel of St. John, tom. i. c. 38, he says that "the golden propitiatory resting on the two Cherubim in the Holy of Holies was a sort of shadow of this propitiatory." He also quotes Lev. iv. 16, καὶ τοίον ὁ λατρεύς ὁ Χριστός ἀπὸ τοῦ άιματος τοῦ μόσχου κ.τ.λ.

Chrysostom (who is misunderstood by Meyer) gives the same interpretation. After showing that "his own blood" stands in contrast to the legal sacrifices, he explains ἁμαρτήματε, and then goes on: "And for this very reason he calls Him λαστηρίου, showing that if the type had so much power, much more will the reality exhibit the same."

Theodoret. See the striking passage quoted in the footnote on the words "through faith in his blood."

Cyril, in Cramer's Catena: "For He has been set as a propitiatory through faith in His blood; for since He has made His own blood an exchange for the life of all, He has saved the world, and made the God and Father in heaven propitious and favourable to us."

Theophylact, and Gennadius in Ecumenius, give the same interpretation.

The Syriac has the same word here, and in Ex. xxv. 17, a word, however, which it uses also in the sense of "atonement."

The Latin varies between "propitiatorium," "propitiatorem," and "propitiationem."

Luther gives "Gnaden-Stuhl," and Tyndale, "a seat of mercy."

This interpretation has been supported with abundant learning, by a host of commentators.

The following objections are urged against it by Meyer and others.

New Test. — Vol. III.

(i) The Article would be required.

This is a mistake, τὸ λαστηρίου would designate (as in Heb. ix. 5) the well-known propitiatory itself, rather than an antitype or realized idea of it, now mentioned for the first time.

(2) This name in its application to Christ would come in here quite abruptly, without anything in the context to prepare for it.

If this objection were valid against the most familiar sense of διάστημα, it would apply with still greater force to all the other less usual meanings which have been ascribed to the word.

But in fact the mention of "redemption," in v. 24, has introduced the general idea of atonement, and the reference in v. 21 to the testimony of the law, prepares the way for an allusion to its typical atonements, of which the very centre and core was "the mercy seat"; by it the law gave its most solemn and significant testimony to that righteousness of God which was not yet made manifest. See Hebr. ix. 1-10.

(3) The objection that προάθετον, "set forth," would be inappropriate because the Ark of the Covenant, in the Holy of Holies, was hidden from the people, is not merely refuted by Heb. ix. 8-16, but the public setting forth of the Antitype becomes, in the light of that passage, an argument in favour of an allusion to the hidden Type.

(4) "If Christ were really thought of as Capporeth, the following εἰς ἱδαίμεν τῆς δικαιοσύνης αἰτίου would be inappropriate, since the capporeth must have appeared rather as the ἱδαίμεν of the Divine grace. Compare Heb. iv. 16."

This objection has no other foundation than the narrow and erroneous interpretation of "the righteousness of God," as if it were limited in this passage to "the judicial, more precisely the punitive justice, which must find its holy satisfaction, and received that satisfaction in the propitiatory offering of Christ." (Meyer.) But "the righteousness of God," rightly understood, is in fact one with His mercy.

(5) The conception of Christ as the antitype of the mercy seat, is found nowhere else in the whole N. T.

This is true; but it does not therefore follow that this conception is foreign to the Apostle's mode of viewing the atoning work of Christ. There are other examples of O. T. ideas and figures. Applied once and once only to Christ, as "the Rock" (1 Cor. x. 4), "the Serpent" (John iii. 14); and conversely we find a N. T. idea applied once only to O. T. history in 1 Cor. x. 2, "baptized unto Moses." (Compare the Additional Note on ix. 5, Obj. 1.)

II. There is no proof that the word was
ever used by any writer as a Substantive, for "a propitiatory offering," or "a propitiation," or in any other than the well-established Biblical sense. The passages alleged in favour of "a propitiatory sacrifice," prove only that the Adjective was joined with such Substantives as τὸν χαιρόν, μὴ ὑπέρ τοῦ κατακτητοῦ; see τις Μακκ. xvii. 22; Joseph. Antiq. xvi. c. 7; Dio Chrys. Orat. xii. 1.

The analogy of τὸ σώσιμον (more frequently, ἣς διδότω τῷ σωσίμων), "the peace-offering," is in favour of the sense supported by Biblical usage, not of that for which no usage can be found.

Moreover, if ἱλαστήριον meant a sacrifice, the emphatic αὐτόν ("in his own blood") would be unmeaning; it is needless to say that a sacrifice is propitiatory in its own blood. See footnote on the words "through faith in his blood."

III. The abstract idea of "propitiation" is inappropriate after προέδρον, which points to a definite public appearance. (Meyer.)

IV. "Propitiator," found in some Latin Codd. (Origen), is adopted by Aquinas, Melanchthon, Estius, Van Hengel, and rendered by Wicliff "forgiver," by Cranmer, "obtainer of mercy."

V. Morison takes the word as simply an Adjective, "propitiatory," in which case also it must be masculine.

This view, therefore, as well as IV., is open to Meyer's objection, that there is no example of ἱλαστήριον used with reference to persons.

If it be urged that the simple adjective is the more comprehensive rendering, embracing all that is essential in the rest, and designating Christ as the antitype of all symbols of propitiation (Schaaf on Morison), we must still maintain that there is a special and predominant allusion to the mercy seat, not to the sacrifice.

On the whole we conclude that the rendering "a propitiatory," meaning "a mercy seat," is required by the following considerations: (1) the absence of any other adequate explanation of the emphatic position of αὐτοῦ in τῷ αὐτοῦ αἵματι: see note on those words; (2) the well-known Biblical sense of ἱλαστήριον; (3) the consent of the Greek Fathers, including Chrysostom; (4) the propriety of the idea "in accordance with which Christ the bearer of the Divine glory and grace, sprinkled with His own sacrificial blood, would be regarded as the antitype of the Kapporeth." (Meyer.)

The force of this last argument is much enhanced when we remember the twofold significance of "the propitiatory."

(1) It was the central point of the Divine Presence and Manifestation, the place of meeting and communion, between God and the representative of His people; Ex. xxv. 22; Lev. xvi. 5. So in Christ the full manifestation of God to man is made, and on Him rests "the glory of the Lord," the true Shekinah, now revealed by the rending of the vail.

(2) Among all instruments and symbols of atonement, this alone was called "the propitiatory" as being the most eminent. As on it was made a general atonement for the children of Israel for all their sins once a year (Lev. xvi. 11-14, 15, 30); so in Christ Jehovah expiates and takes away the sins of the world, thereby declaring Himself the Holy One, who will have His people also to be holy (compare Bähr, 'Symbolik des Mos. Cultus,' I. 387 ff. and Kurtz, 'Sacrificial Worship of the O. T.' p. 43).

CHAPTER IV.

1 Abraham's faith was imputed to him for righteousness, 10 before he was circumcised.
13 By faith only he and his seed received the promise. 16 Abraham is the father of all that believe. 24 Our faith also shall be imputed to us for righteousness.

WHAT shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

JUSTIFICATION BY FAITH INDEPENDENT OF WORKS, OF CIRCUMCISION, AND OF THE LAW.

In iii. 27-31, St. Paul has rapidly strung together some of the consequences that follow from the great doctrine set forth in vii. 21-26, especially those consequences which directly affect the position of Jew and Gentile under the new law of faith. These summary statements of the closing verses of c. iii., are taken up again and fully discussed in subsequent parts of the Epistle.

The first point is the exclusion of the glorying of the Jew (iii. 27, 28), and the second, closely connected with it, is the equality in God's sight of Jew and Gentile, circumcision and uncircumcision (vii. 29, 30). These two points in like order and connexion form the subject of c. iv.
1. Justification by Faith without Works foreshown in the Example of Abraham, and in the Words of David.

1. What shall we say that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

The phrase "What then shall we say," so introduces an inference from the preceding passage (iii. 27-31), not from its last words especially: compare vi. 1; vii. 7; viii. 31; ix. 14, 30 (Van Hengel). If glorying is excluded, and there is no distinction between Jew and Gentile, what then shall we say of the case of Abraham?

The record of Abraham's faith in Gen. xv. 6, supplies an instance of righteousness "apart from law" and yet "sanctioned by the Law" (iii. 21). In reasoning with Jews concerning the "righteousness of faith," St. Paul could not possibly pass over the example of Abraham's justification (Gen. xv. 6), which was a standard theme of discussion in the Jewish schools. Bp. Lightfoot (Galatians, p. 154), in an interesting Essay on "The faith of Abraham," quotes, among other striking passages collected by Gréorner, one from the Mechilta on Ex. xiv. 12:—"Abraham our father inherited this world and the world to come solely by the merit of faith, whereby he believed in the Lord; for it is said, And be believed in the Lord, and be counted it to him for righteousness."

On the opinion that St. James (ii. 14-26), refers to St. Paul's doctrine, or to some prevalent perversion of it, see the Introduction to St. James in this Commentary, and Theile, Comment. in Ep. Jacobi, pp. 145-166.

as pertaining to the flesh.] According to the flesh. St. Paul puts the question as proceeding from a Jew, and Abraham is therefore called "our father," or, as in many authorities, "our forefather." "He calls him a father according to the flesh, ejecting them (the Jews) from true kinship with him, and preparing the way for the kinship of the Gentiles" (Chrysostom): "For by faith and by promise we that believe are Abraham's children" (Photius).

Theodoret adopts the other reading—"What shall we say that Abraham our father hath found according to the flesh" and thus interprets it: "What righteousness of Abraham's, wrought by works before he believed God, did we ever hear of?" For the righteousness that is in works, he calls "according to the flesh."

Bp. Bull, adopting this connexion, explains καρά σάρκα as meaning "by his natural powers without the grace of God": so Grotius and Hammond. Pelagius, Estius, and others have referred it to circumcision, as received by Abraham first: but circumcision is not treated of until v. 9.

The preponderance of authority is in favour of that order of the Greek words which compels us to adopt the connexion: "What then shall we say that Abraham our forefather according to the flesh hath found?"

The general question "What then is the advantage of the Jew?" (iii. 1) is thus made to depend for decision on the case of the great Patriarch, from whom all blessing and privilege was derived: "What advantage has he gained for himself and for us his descendants?" On the reading see note at end of chapter.

2. This argument (as well as the question in v. 1, which it is meant to support,) is put from the Jewish point of view, as an objection to the statements in iii. 27-30, which seem to deny all advantage to the Jew, and to be inconsistent with the received tenet that Abraham was justified by works (1 Mac. ii. 51, 52; Sirach xiv. 20; Ja. ii. 20).

"Glorying, you say, is excluded. What then shall we say of Abraham? For if, as we Jews hold, Abraham was justified by works, he hath whereof to glory."

In the latter part of the verse—κΑΛΩΣ ὁ ἐν προστὶ τῶν θεοῦ—St. Paul from his own point of view more clearly defines the ambiguous term "glorying," and at the same time directly denies the conclusion: "But Abraham has not whereof to glory before God."

This denial of the conclusion, being proved from Scripture, in v. v. 3-5, shows that the antecedent supposition also is false, and that Abraham was not justified before God by works: a result which is further confirmed in v. 6-8, by its accordance with the testimony of David.

The question of v. 1, "What then shall we say that Abraham our forefather according to the flesh hath found?" is thus in part answered: he has found, not any cause of glorying in his own merits, but "the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works."

The question, what has Abraham found, receives a further answer in the discussion concerning circumcision, which follows in vv. 9-12.
4 Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Even as David also describeth

Among the advantages of this interpretation, are the following:

(i) It makes the Apostle’s argument perfectly clear and simple.

(ii) It does not depend on the particular sense assigned to κατὰ σάρκα, a phrase on which other interpretations put a strained dogmatic import, which finds no support in the context.

(iii) It avoids the great faults of the Patristic interpretation, which assigns to “justified” and “glorying” meanings quite inconsistent with St. Paul’s usage; see Bp. Bull, in Note at end of chapter.

3. Proof from Scripture that Abraham has not anything whereof to boast before God. The emphasis of the quotation lies on the word “believed,” which is brought into the first place in the sentence, and “rendered almost antithetical by a tripping change of δὲ for κατὰ” (Winers): faith, not works, was counted unto Abraham for righteousness, because when old and childless he believed God’s promise that his seed should be as the stars in multitude: see note on Gen. xv. 6. The import of the promise, and the nature of Abraham’s faith are explained by St. Paul, in ννν. 17-22.

it was counted unto him.] In ννν. 3-11, the A.V. employs three different words “count,” “reckon,” “impute,” to render the same Greek word λόγος, and thus obscures the clearness and force of the argument.

“Impute” agrees closely with the Hebrew נבה, which in Kal means not “to number,” but “to think, regard, or consider.” Compare Gen. xxxviii. 15; i Sam. i. 13 (“and Eli took her for a drunken woman”); 2 Sam. xix. 19; Ps. xxxvi. 2. But as “impute” has become a technical term in Theology, associated with a particular theory of Justification, it is better to use the word “count” throughout the passage.

for righteousness.] Abraham’s faith was counted to him as righteousness, not merely as leading to righteousness; he was both regarded and treated as being righteous, and that because faith in God is in reality man’s only true righteousness. See note on iii. 22.

4, 5. Explanation of the language used concerning Abraham in Gen. xv. 6, showing that it involves the principle of justification by faith without works.

Now to him that worketh.] In this illustration, taken from common life, the words have their ordinary meaning. Such interpretations as, “worketh righteousness” (Theodore) “worketh that which is good” (Fritzsche), are out of place; and even Luther’s “dealeth in works,” belongs to the application rather than to the illustration itself. There is nothing to be supplied, but the Verb ἐργαζόμενος is used absolutely of “working for hire,” as in Acts xviii. 3; 1 Cor. ix. 6; 2 Thess. iii. 13. This meaning, adopted by Origen, is put beyond doubt by the following words, “bis reward” (δὲ μωσῆς), i.e. “the hire” corresponding to his work.

is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.] St. Paul assumes that the language of Gen. xv. 6 implies a gratuitous imputation, and on that assumption argues that Abraham’s justification was not like the case of one who works for his reward, and has it counted to him as strictly due.

But where is this idea of gratuitous imputation to be found (1) in the word λογίσθη itself; (2) in the Tr. δικαιοωμαι; (3) of εἰς εἰσίν εἰς εἰσίν; it is εἰς εἰσίν εἰς εἰσίν; Against (1) it is enough to observe that λογίσθη is used indifferently of “setting to a man’s account” what is or is not his due; e.g. the imputation of sin (v. 8) as well as of righteousness.

The true explanation lies in (2) and (3) combined, i.e. in the fact that faith, which was counted for righteousness, involves in its very essence the renunciation of all merit. It could therefore be counted for righteousness only by an act of God’s free grace.

5. But to him that worketh not.] St. Paul here begins as if he meant to give an illustration parallel and opposite to that contained in ννν. 4: “to him that worketh not whatever is reckoned, must be reckoned not of debt but of grace.” But in the clause “but believeth,” &c., the general principle runs into the application, and is expressed in terms appropriate to the case of justification.

5, 6. But to him that worketh not. But believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly. The strong term τῶν ἀσκησίμων “the ungodly man,” has been thought to refer to Abraham as having been formerly an idolater. (Doddinger, ‘First Age of The Church,’ i. 273., note.)

But the singular, τῶν ἀσκησίων, has the ordinary generic sense, describing not the individual Abraham, but the class to which Abraham and all who are justified by faith belong.
the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works,
7 Saying, Blessed are they whose

iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.
8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

describeth the blessed.] "tolleth the blessing." The ἀμαρτίασθαι (v. 9 and Gal. iv. 15) means not "blessed," but "a declaring blessed," "a felicitation;" it is the proper word to apply to God, and to the most God-like among men, and to all that is highest, happiest, and best (see Aristotle, "Nic Eth., I., xii. 4; 'Rhet.' I., ix. 34).

imputed righteousness.] When God counts a man's faith to him for righteousness, this is more briefly expressed by saying that God counts righteousness to him, that He counts him righteous, or, in one word, justifies him. The doctrine of "imputed righteousness" founded partly upon this passage, assumes sometimes such strange forms that it will be useful to quote here the words of one of its most learned and moderate advocates. "Finding it distinctly stated not only that sinners are justified by faith, but that righteousness without works is imputed to them, their faith being counted for righteousness, I have not hesitated to state that believers are justified by imputed, not by inherent, righteousness. That this is Christ's righteousness in the sense that it is the fruit and purchase of His work in the flesh, cannot be doubted; but that it is His in the more strict and exact sense, in which, as the Archbishop (Tillotson) truly says, it appears in the statements of some supporters of the doctrine, I have nowhere asserted, but have been and am still content with the sober statement of Hooker, ('Discourse of Justification,' § 6.) "Christ hath merited righteousness for as many as are found in Him" (Bp. O'Byen, 'Nature of Faith,' p. 352, note N).

sis faith is counted for righteousness.] We see here the nature of the faith that is counted for righteousness; it is the faith of one who regards himself as "ungodly," and unable to justify himself by his own works, but on the other hand has full trust in God's mercy to justify him, unworthy as he is.

This is the quality of true faith on its human or subjective side. "The believer has nothing more to expect than what God bestows on the ungodly whom He justifies; and nothing more to offer to God than what the ungodly who longs to be justified has to bring with him, namely, faith." (Hofmann.)

6-8. The language of Scripture concerning Abraham's justification as above interpreted (vv. 3-5), corresponds with that of the 32nd Psalm, in which David also pronounces the blessing of the man to whom God imputeth righteousness without works. This then is not a second example from the O. T. of God's method of justification, but a statement confirming the Apostle's interpretation of the case of Abraham, which he resumes in v. 9.

7, 8. Saying, Blessed are they.] The Greek, as well as the Hebrew, may be better rendered here, and in v. 8, as an exclamation: "Happy they," &c., "Happy the man," &c. For the general meaning of these verses, see notes on Ps. xxxii. 1, 2.
9 Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? For we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

11 And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe,
though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:

5. Abraham's faith in the promise was seen in his conduct on each occasion, and on the last it was expressly recorded and "counted to him for righteousness." He was thus accepted as righteous through faith, not only for himself, but as the father of the promised seed, that they also might be justified through faith: and so far as his fatherhood conveys the Divine blessing, it is a fatherhood according to promise, and according to faith, not according to the flesh: compare Gal. iii. 7.

This is made yet clearer by what follows in Gen. xvi.: Abraham, already pronounced righteous, and selected to be the father of the promised seed, seeks to obtain it "according to the flesh;" but Ishmael, so begotten, is not the heir of the blessing, not being the child of faith, nor of promise.

Then in Gen. xvii., thirteen years afterwards comes the solemn renewal of the covenant, prefaced by the condition "Walk before me, and be thou perfect," inaugurated by the new names El-shaddai, Abraham, Sarah (see notes on Gen. xvii.), and finally sealed by the sign of circumcision.

In the renewed promises the universality of the blessing, and its religious or spiritual character are strongly marked: v. 4, 5, "thou shalt be a father of many nations; lit. "of a multitude of Goyim;" v. 6, "I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee;" v. 7, "I will establish my covenant... for an everlasting covenant to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee."

In striking contrast to this universal participation in the blessing is the limitation of the ordinance of circumcision, which is not extended beyond the family of Abraham (see Michaelis in note on Gen. xvii. 13). It thus marked and sealed the human source of the promised blessing, namely Abraham's "body now dead," and the human channel, namely Abraham's bodily descendants.

The Jews overlooked the all-important distinction between the universal inheritance of the blessing, and the particular instrument chosen for its actual realisation: they did not understand that it was to be realised through them but for all,—through one channel chosen, set apart, and sealed by circumcision, but for all who should be fitted in the same way as Abraham was to receive the blessing, i.e., for all who like him should believe God's promise of salvation, and walk before Him in uprightness.

Thus by circumcision Abraham was marked out as the divinely appointed father of the promised seed in every sense; (1) of the seed in whom all nations should be blessed, i.e. Christ: (2) of the seed that should be the human channel of the blessing, i.e., the Jews, and; (3) of the seed that should be as the stars of heaven, the multitude of nations that should be counted as Abraham's children, being heirs of the same blessing, through the like faith, i.e. "of all them that believe."

St. Paul here treats of the fatherhood of Abraham in the two latter senses, i.e., in reference to Gentiles and Jews. Circumcision, as a seal of the righteousness of faith in the uncircumcised, was not given for his sake alone, but that by transmitting the assurance of the like blessing to others "he might be father of all them that believe, while in uncircumcision, in order that righteousness may be imputed to them."

With this connexion the parallel clauses, "father of all them that believe," and "father of circumcision," have their due prominence, which is rather obscured, if the clause "in order that righteousness," &c., is made parallel instead of subordinate to "that he might be father," &c.

12. And the father of circumcision.] The second purpose for which Abraham had received the sign of circumcision" was, that he might transmit it, with its assurance of blessing, to his seed after him; in other words, "that he might be father of circumcision." But to whom? To those who received it as he received it, namely, "as a seal of the righteousness of faith;" to those, therefore, who have not only the outward sign in the flesh, but also the inward quality of which it is the seal, i.e. in St. Paul's own words, "to them who are not of circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham which be good, while in uncircumcision." This verse evidently refers to Jews only, but St. Paul, or rather his amanuensis Tertius, who wrote this epistle, or one of its earliest transcribers, has inserted a superfluous Article —ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῖς στοιχείοις, the effect of which would be to extend to all that walk in the steps of Abraham's faith, a statement which applies only to those who inherit from him the rite of circumcision. There is no trace of a various reading, and no ingenuity can explain the Article, without introducing a confusion of thought wholly foreign to St. Paul. It is in fact a strong testimony to the usual precision of his reasoning and language, that so many elaborate discussions have been raised over a mere slip of the pen, or clerical error.
steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

13 For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect:

13-17. The Promise independent of Law.

13. It has been shewn that Abraham’s justification, and that of his children, with the blessings resulting from it, were dependent, not on circumcision, but only on faith (vv. 11, 12). This is now confirmed, and extended by shewing that the promise was equally independent of the law.

13. For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law.] For not through law is the promise to Abraham or to his seed. The argument closely resembles, but is not identical with, that in Gal. iii. 18. There “law” (without the Article) is represented as a principle directly opposed to “promise,” so that “the inheritance” cannot be dependent on law, because God has granted it to Abraham by promise. Here “law” and “righteousness of faith” (both without the Article) are the principles opposed to and excluding each other; and what St. Paul asserts in v. 13, and proves in the following verses, is that “the promise” of the inheritance was to be realised and appropriated “not through law (14, 15) but through righteousness of faith” (16, 17).

that he should be the heir of the world] What is “the promise” meant? For there is none in Genesis expressed in these words. Many commentators, with Meyer, refer it to the promise of the land of Canaan, interpreted as a type of the universal dominion of the Messianic theocracy, invested by the Prophets with a halo of glory, adopted in allegoric form by Christ Himself (Matt. v, 5; xix. 28), and shared by St. Paul (viii. 17; 1 Cor. vi. 2). The context forbids this interpretation, having no reference to the promise of the land of Canaan, but to “the seed” in whom all nations of the earth were to be blessed. The subject of the whole chapter is Abraham’s justification by faith in the promise (Gen. xv. 6): “so shall thy seed be.” To that passage St. Paul recurs, again and again (see vv. 3-5, 9-12, 13, 14, 16, 18, 20-22). It is inconceivable that in this v. 13, “the promise . . . through the righteousness of faith,” should mean not the promise which Abraham believed, and for believing was accounted righteous, but another subordinate promise, to which the context makes no allusion. St. Paul does allude several times in this chapter (vv. 17, 18) to another passage of Genesis (xvii. 5), in order to show the relation of faith to circumcision; and he regards that passage, not as containing a different promise, but as ratifying and defining the same promise of the seed (see especially v. 18). That one promise, rightly understood, included all the rest; for, “in the seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed;” this was “the blessing of Abraham” (Gal. iii. 14), which was to come upon the Gentiles in Christ Jesus, and this, because it included all other blessings, was the inheritance of the world, the same inheritance of which St. Paul has spoken in Gal. iii. 18, 29; compare 1 Cor. iii. 22, 23; Heb. i. 2. “The promise will be literally fulfilled when the kingdoms of the world are given to the people of the Most High, and Christ will rule with His saints for ever and ever (Dan. vii. 27, &c.).” (Schaff.)

but through the righteousness of faith.] The righteousness of faith is not the procuring cause which moved God to grant the promise (as Meyer strangely asserts), but the conditional cause by which the promise was to be appropriated, and its fulfilment secured. “Faith” had been called forth from the first announcement of the promise (Gen. xii. 1-3), but the expression “righteousness of faith,” points to the renewal of the promise in Gen. xv. 5, 6.

14, 15. Proof that the promise is not to be realised through law.

14. For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void.] For the phrase
v. 15—16.]

ROMANS. IV.

15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,
17 (As it is written, "I have made thee a father of many nations," before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were.

18) Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, "So shall thy seed be.

19) And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sarah's womb:

again we may say: The Jew must enter by the same gate as the Gentile. See note on last clause of v. 12. The same condition, then, which alone makes the promise sure even to those children of Abraham who are of the law, namely the condition of faith, makes it "sure to all the seed, not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham."

It is self-evident that in this connexion "all the seed" means "all the believing seed." and "that which is of the law" means only the believing Jews: compare v. 12, and Gal. iii. 7-9.

"who is the father of us all." The spiritual fatherhood of Abraham already asserted in vvv. 11, 12 is now proved by the solemn sanction of a Divine utterance: "for a father of many nations have I made thee" (Gen. xvii. 5, taken exactly from the LXX). The parenthesis only repeats the previous statement in the words of Scripture, and so does not obscure the connexion: "Who is the father of us all . . . before him whom he believed, even God."

The Present Tense carries us back to the scene of Gen. xv. where Abraham, standing before God (κολλωσις, compare Ex. xxxii. 11) whose promise he has believed, is already in His sight the father of a seed countless as the stars; for God's purpose knows no hindrance; though Abraham is as one dead in regard to the natural power of begetting children, God is he "that giveth life to the dead" (compare Deut. xxxii. 39; 1 Sam. ii. 6); and though Abraham has as yet no seed, God is he that "calleth the things that be not as things that be." This phrase does not exactly mean "calls into being," nor "names as being," but "calls to, summons, commands the things that be not as being," i.e., as if they were as much present and obedient to His word as things that be: a conception of almighty power more sublime, if possible, than the creative fiat, "Let there be light," or the Psalmist's thought "He calleth the number of the stars: he calleth them all by their names."

The glorious attributes thus implied in God's promise, were realised in Abraham's faith, and formed its strong foundation.


18. Who against hope believed in hope.] "Who against hope in hope believed." This striking oxymoron, or combination of opposite qualities, is well explained by the older commentators: "past hope of man, in hope of God" (Chrysostom): "past hope according to nature, but in hope of the promise of God" (I. Theodoret): "past hope of his own nature, in hope of the power of Him that promised" (Jeremias). Meyer's analysis of Abraham's faith as "opposed to hope in its objective reference, and yet based on hope in its subjective reference," shuts out the actual objective reference to God's power.

that he might become the father of many nations.] "To the end that," &c., as in v. 16. This was not only the divinely appointed end of Abraham's faith, but also what Abraham himself looked to as the end of his faith. He believed with the full intention of becoming, what God promised, "the father of many nations."

19-21. And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead.] This passage, according to the Received Text, refers to the narrative in Gen. xv. 1-6. On that occasion Abram took no heed at all to the difficulties attending the promise: he did not fix his mind upon the fact that his own body was already deadened, he being about a hundred years old, and upon the deadness of Sarah's womb: but at once, as the immediate sequence in the narrative implies, he embraced and believed the promise. This view of the passage as referring to Gen. xv. 1-6 seems at first sight to be confirmed by v. 22: but see note there.

Modern critics, supported by strong evidence of MSS, Versions, and Fathers, omit the negative in "οὐ κατωτάτων," and refer the passage to Gen. xvii. 17 ff., from which some of its language is plainly borrowed. With this reading v. 19 must be closely connected with v. 10, the sense being that Abraham did notice the difficulties, but yet doubted not God's promise, i.e., the new promise concerning Sarah in Gen. xvii. 16, 21. Translate:
20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;
21 And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.
22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him;
24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead;
25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

"And without growing weak in faith, he observed his own body deadened, being about a hundred years old, and the deadness of Sarah's womb; but at the promise of God he staggered not through unbelief, but waxed strong in faith, giving glory to God, and being fully persuaded that what he hath promised, he is (A.V. will) able also to perform."

"Staggered," a strong and picturesque word substituted by Tyndale for Wicliff's more exact and simple "doubted" (xix. 23; Matt. xxi. 21, &c.). The Geneva Version reads "disputed," an admissible sense (Acts xi. 2; Jude 9), but less suitable.

20. giving glory to God.] I.e., by acknowledging His almighty power; this meaning is made clear by the explanation added in the following clause, "and being fully persuaded," &c. These two participial clauses describe the mental effects which attended the strengthening of Abraham's faith. But we may add that Abraham gave glory to God in act as well as in thought, by his prompt obedience (Gen. xvii. 22, 23).

22. And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.] "Wherefore also it was imputed," &c. "Wherefore" refers to the preceding context, vv. 18-21, and means "because he thus held fast his faith and gave glory to God." St. Paul extends the declaration of Gen. xvi. 6 to the later occasion (Gen. xvii.), when the triumph of Abraham's faith was even more conspicuous. In like manner the same passage is applied in 1 Macc. ii. 52 to the offering of Isaac: "Was not Abraham found faithful in temptation, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness?" Compare Ja. ii. 23.

23-25. ABRAHAM OUR PATTERN.

The leading example of justification by faith having been fully discussed in regard to Abraham himself (vv. 3-22), St. Paul proceeds to apply its teaching to his readers.

23. Now it was not written for his sake alone.] Compare Philo 'On Abraham,' c. i. : "Men whose virtues are recorded, as on pillars, in the sacred scriptures, not only to the praise of the men themselves, but also for the sake of encouraging those who read their history and leading them on to emulate their conduct."

24. But for us also.] "But for our sake also," i.e., not only for our instruction and exhortation (xv. 4 and 1 Cor. ix. 10, but to assure us that righteousness shall be imputed to us in like manner: for "What is written of Abraham is written of his children": Beresch. R. (Tholuck).

"to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe"
Read "to whom it shall be imputed, namely to us who believe." The last words define the class to which we must belong, if that which is recorded of Abraham is to be fulfilled also in us. The word μετάκειμ is not a mere equivalent for the future "it will be imputed," but (as in viii. 13) implies the certainty of a Divine appointment, "it is to be imputed," and that not in the future judgment, but as soon as we believe.

25. The reason why faith in Him who raised up Jesus from the dead, is to be imputed to us for righteousness is thus defined by the specific character of God, in whom we trust as Abraham believed a Divine promise, which only the life-giving and creative power of God could perform (v. 17), so Christians trust for redemption and justification to Him who has already raised Jesus from the dead for this very purpose.
The Passive Verbs indicate that Christ was given up to death, and raised again by the Father: compare viii. 32.

"For our offences," i.e., to atone for them: "for our justification," to accomplish it, i.e. in order that we, like Abraham, might be justified through faith in God that quickeneth the dead; compare v. 17 with v. 24. The former clause, if it stood alone, might fairly be interpreted, "because of the offences which we have committed." But the more comprehensive sense, including the fact of offences committed, is that given by Theodoret: "On account of our offences He endured the Passion, in order that He might pay our debt." This also agrees better with the parallel clause, "rose again for our justification," in which the same Preposition (dia) is used.

Though the Atonement for sins was made by Christ's death, it was proved and manifested by His resurrection, and so presented as an object of faith. The resurrection, therefore, serves this purpose, that we may thereby be led to believe that Christ died for our sins, and by so believing may realise and appropriate the benefits of His death; in other words, that we may be justified.

More than this, the Resurrection is itself the source of justification and life (v. 18; vi. 5, 6; Eph. ii. 5; Col. ii. 13). "On the Cross, our Lord gave Himself for us; through the Resurrection, He giveth Himself to us. On the Cross, He was the Lamb which was slain for the sins of the world; in the Resurrection, that Body which was slain became Life-giving." (Pusey, "Christ Risen our Justification," a noble Sermon on this text.)

---

ADDITIONAL NOTES on Chap. IV, vv. 1, 2, 25.

1. (1) Modern Editors read with a great preponderance and variety of authority, ἐφηκέναι Αμ. τῶν προσώπων ἡμῶν κατὰ σάρκα. Omit εφηκέναι B, 47*: Chrysostom does not comment on it.

(2) Place εφηκέναι immediately before κατὰ σάρκα: K L P, 47 mg. Syr. many Fathers.

(3) For the unusual word προσώποι many MSS and Fathers read πατέρα.

Dr. Westcott (Dict. of Bible, ii. p. 530) regards εφηκέναι as possibly an interpolation: but it is supported by overwhelming authority, and the sense is so clear without it, that a copist would be more likely to omit than to insert it. The wish to secure its connexion with κατὰ σάρκα accounts for the change of place.

2. The argument of this passage is fully discussed by Bishop Bull, 'Harmonia Apostolica, Dissertatio Posterior,' c. xii. 14-27, whose criticism may be abridged as follows.

A. Interpretation of the Greek Fathers—

Major: If Abraham was justified by works, he had not anything to glory of before God (since this sort of external righteousness, however glorious in the eyes of men, is of no value in the sight of God).

Minor: But Abraham bad whereof to glory before God (i.e. he was approved by God Himself).

Conclusion: Therefore Abraham was not justified by works.

The conclusion is in accordance with St. Paul's meaning, but the premises do not agree with the text.

(a) If any one should say that v. 2 belongs wholly to the major premise (i.e., as the Greek Fathers above), he would verily make the Apostle's argument marvellously elliptical, as consisting of one proposition only, without either minor premisis or conclusion expressed.

(b) Moreover, St. Paul manifestly speaks of the same glorying which in iii. 27, he had declared to be excluded by the law of faith; and which, therefore, he could not attribute to Abraham, whom he everywhere maintains to be justified by that law of faith.

It is true that there is, as Grotius says, a just and proper sort of glorying, even before God (v. 2, 3, 11; 1 Cor. i. 31; 2 Cor. x. 17), but it is equally certain that in treating, as here, of the matter of justification, it is the Apostle's habit to exclude all glorying entirely.

(c) Further, according to this interpretation, the Apostle would contradict himself in terms: for he would be supposed to argue thus:

If Abraham was justified by works before God, then he deserved praise only of men, and received no praise nor reward from God. Is not this the same as if the Apostle had said, if Abraham was justified by works, he was not justified?

(d) If it be said, that "justified" here means "considered as righteous by men," this is opposed to the whole context, in which it is too clear to need proof that the question discussed is concerning man's justification in the sight of God Himself.

Moreover in this way also, there will be a senseless tautology in the Apostle's words. If by works Abraham was justified before men, then he was justified before men, not before God.
ROMANS. V.

What can be more absurd than such reasoning?"

B. The interpretation of Bishop Bull himself, Fritzsché, and others is as follows: What then shall we say that our forefather Abraham has gained according to the flesh, i.e., by his own natural powers without the grace of God?

He has gained nothing in this way. For let us suppose the contrary, that he obtained justification according to the flesh, that is, by works done in his own strength.

If Abraham was justified by works, he has something to boast of before God, namely the works by which he was justified. But the consequence is proved false by Holy Scripture (v. 3-5), and he has not anything to boast of before God.

Therefore the antecedent must be false, and Abraham was not justified by works, and has gained nothing according to the flesh.

25. Dean Alford here attributes to St. Paul an "alliterative use of the same Preposition, where the meanings are clearly different," and remarks on v. 24, "Observe that διὰ in the two clauses has not exactly the same sense,—on his account 'being=(1) to celebrate his faith;' and (2) on our account =for our profit: see on v. 23."

Godet also insists that διὰ has its only proper and natural sense in the first clause, "because of the offences which we have committed," and that the second clause must therefore be rendered, "because of our justification which was accomplished by his death." The same view of the passage was taken by Grotius, Bp. Horsley, and Dr. Burton in his note on Bp. Bull, 'Harmonia Apost., p. 12.

CHAPTER V.

1 Being justified by faith, we have peace with God, and joy in our hope, that sich we were reconciled to his blood, when we were enemies, 10 we shall much more be saved being reconciled. 12 As sin and death came

The whole difficulty arises from attributing different senses to διὰ. This radical error is carried to an extreme by Cornelius a Lapide, who gives no less than five senses to the Preposition in the last clause, saying that it signifies the material cause, the exemplary, the efficient, the meritorious, and the final cause.

The fact is, that διὰ with the Accusative ("through to") simply traces an effect to a cause, it marks the existence of a causal relation between them, without defining its particular character. Thus, in the common phrase διὰ τοῦτο, "for this cause," it is impossible, without referring to the context, to say whether the cause is antecedent (as in i. 26, v. 12, xiii. 6), or final (as in Phil. 15, τάχα γὰρ διὰ τοῦτο ἐξακολουθήσας ἥδε δώσῃ ἡμῖν ἀλώνια ἀνόν μήκος. Compare 1 Tim. i. 13). If in the former case we choose to render διὰ τοῦτο "because of this," and in the latter case "for this purpose," we must not imagine that διὰ itself has these different meanings: we are simply transferring to the Preposition a distinction which belongs to the context. Thus, in v. 25, the use of διὰ in both clauses does not determine whether the causal relation is or is not of the same kind in both cases—"Christ died for our offences" may mean either "because we had offended," or "to atone for our offences." "Christ was raised for our justification," might mean, so far as Grammar is concerned, "because our justification was already accomplished," but in accordance with the immediate context (v. 24), and with the usual dogmatic representation, it much more probably, we may almost say certainly, means that He was raised in order that we might be justified.

by Adam, 17 so much more righteousness and life by Jesus Christ. 20 Where sin abounded, grace did superabound.

THEREFORE being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

CHAP. V.—1-11. BLESSEDNESS OF THE JUSTIFIED.

St. Paul has shown that neither Gentile nor Jew had attained to righteousness by works (i. 18-iii. 20); he has described "the righteousness of God," which is exhibited in Christ's atoning death, and bestowed by God's grace as a free gift without works, and therefore without distinction of persons, upon all who by faith accept it (iii. 21-30); and he has proved by the example of Abraham, and the testimony of David, that his doctrine of "righteousness by faith without works" is in harmony with Scripture (iii. 31-iv. 25). He now sets forth the blessedness of the justified, as consisting in present "peace with God," and joyful "hope of the glory of God," both resting on the death and life of Him, "by whom we have now received the atonement" (v. 1-11).

1. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God.] St. Paul speaks as one of
2 By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

those "who believe on Him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead" (iv. 24): thus there is a sound of confidence and triumph in his words, "justified therefore by faith we have peace with God." He speaks of justification as a thing already received; for he has respect only or chiefly to that act of grace, whereby God at first absolves the believer from all guilt, and receives him into a state of favour. That state of favour is here called "peace with God." On the distinction between present and final justification see Waterland, 'On the Eucharist,' ix. 2, and Barrow, vol. ii., Sermon v., p. 64.

On the marginal rendering, "let us have peace with God," see Note at end of chapter. "Peace with God" (ἐπίθετο τοῦ Θεοῦ) is not quite identical with "the peace of God." The former is the peace that puts an end to war and enmity, the new relation with God, into which the justified believer is admitted: he is no longer an enemy lying under wrath, but a son reconciled, restored and beloved. Upon this new relation between God and man is founded the work of the Holy Spirit in man, which results finally in the perfect harmony of the inner life, the deep tranquillity of a soul that has found its true happiness and rest, in a word, "the peace of God."

2. By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand. Through whom also we have had our introduction by faith into this grace wherein we stand.

Though St. Paul has just before spoken of "Jesus our Lord, who was delivered for our offences, and raised again for our justification," he cannot describe the happy state into which we are thus brought, without again reminding us to whom our thanksgiving is due: "we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ." The difference of tense in the two verses, unnoticed in the Authorised Version, is important: it shows that "the introduction into this grace" is prior to "peace with God," that it is not a second and further effect of justification, but justification itself. Thus the word "also" points to the identity of the giver: He through whom we have peace, is the same through whom we have had the introduction into this grace; "who brought us near when we were far off" (Chrysostom). The reference of all to Christ is further seen in the word inadequately rendered "access:" it describes not our act, but Christ's, not our coming, but His bringing us. The distinction is observed by Chrysostom in the parallel passage, Ephe-
3 And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience;

4 And patience, experience; and experience, hope:

5 And hope maketh not ashamed;

pass away with the affliction that calls it into exercise, but remains as an effect wrought upon the soul; an effect productive in its turn of a new fruit—"experience."

3. And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also.] No sooner has the Apostle pointed to "the glory of God," as a light shining afar to cheer the believer on his course, than he thinks of the contrast between that bright distance and the darkness that lies around him here.

To weaker faith earthly sorrows might seem to dim the heavenly light: but to him hope shines out brighter through the gloom. The sudden transition from "glory" to "tribulations," brings out the fulness of the believer's triumph. St. Paul can promise no exemption from sorrow, for he knows "that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God" (Acts xiv. 22). Therefore he speaks here of "the tribulations," or "our tribulations," as the appointed portion of the faithful, just as our Lord told His disciples, "in the world ye shall have tribulations."

But the Apostle knew the sweet uses of adversity: he knew that "Christ nourisheth His Church by sufferings" (Jer. Taylor, "Faith and Patience of the Saints," part ii. 18), and that "the chastening of the Lord" is a discipline by which His children are prepared for glory. Therefore, looking through the clouds to the brightness beyond, he says, "We rejoice also in our tribulations."

At once he justifies this boast by an appeal to the certain knowledge of Christian experience; "knowing (as we do) that tribulation worketh patience." He thus comforts the weak-hearted, by showing how tribulation works its own cure; for its first fruit is "patience." Our own word "patience" expresses little more than passive resistance to evil, the calm endurance of a soul that resigns itself to suffering. In this sense Julian used the Greek word in his scornful answer to the Christians who came before him to complain of persecution: "It is your part, when evil entreated, to be patient: for this is the commandment of your God."

But besides this passive element, the original word implies an active perseverance, a brave persistence in good works, that will not be shaken by fear of evil, and an abiding hope of final victory which no present dangers may disturb.

The word "worketh" (εργάζεται), describes, not a transient operation, but a complete and permanent result; patience does not

4. And patience, experience.] And patience approval. "Experience" does not exactly represent the Greek word δοκιμασία. Metal that is purified in fire gains thereby an approved character; the fire in which man is purified is "affliction," the right endurance of which is "patience," and its result a certain quality or character marking the man of "proof." δοκιμασία sometimes means the process of this moral "assaying" (2 Cor. viii. 2, Wiclif), or "pro\boration; but here, as an effect wrought by "patience," it must rather be the result of the process "proof," or "approval." (Five Clergymen.)

and experience, hope.] "Approval" in its turn worketh hope, being in its very nature a pledge of perseverance unto the end.

Thus through a series of virtues each in its turn effect and cause, tribulation is "the nurse of our hope in the world to come." (Cyril Alex.)

5. And hope maketh not ashamed.] The hope fostered by this stern nurture is, as before, "the hope of the glory of God." The distinction so finely drawn out by Dr. Chalmers ("Lectures on Romans," I. p. 284) between "the hope of faith" (v. 2) and "the hope of experience" (v. 4) must not be pressed too far. The same hope, which springs at first simply from faith in God, is strengthened by the victorious issue of the trials to which it is subjected through tribulation.

This hope, unlike that which rests on man, can never by its failure put us to shame, because it is founded upon God's unchanging love.

because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts.] Read, because God's love has been poured out in our hearts. Augustine understands by "the love of God," not that wherever He loves us, but that wherewith He makes us to love Him. (De Spir. et Lit. c. 32.)

This interpretation had been previously rejected by Origen as unsuited to the connexion of thought. The whole context shows that the Apostle means God's love towards us; the believer's hope rests not on anything in himself—not even on the happy consciousness of loving God—but on God's love to him in Christ, that love which is set forth in the following verses.

It is no valid objection to say that only the
because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

6 For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

(korâ kaqouâ) has been variously explained as (1) a time appointed by the Father, or (2) foretold by the prophets, or (3) opportunity for St. Paul and his first readers; as if, in order to bring home more directly to that generation the sense of God's love, the Apostle had said, "Christ died opportune for us: had He come later, we should have passed away unredeemed." Such a thought is far too narrow and too selfish for St. Paul.

(4) The general state of the world was opportune for God's purpose.

By the contact of the Jews with the empire of Rome and the literature of Greece, the one true God must now become known to all, and therefore the partial and temporary dispensation must give place to the universal and final. "We believe that the wide empire of Rome was prepared by God's providence, in order that the nations which were to be called into the one body of Christ might be previously associated under the law of one empire." (De Vocatione Gentium, i. 16.)

Man, the heir of the promise, was no longer a child to be kept under tutors and governors (Gal. iv. 2): with the growth of moral consciousness sin had reached its full development as positive transgression, and so the time for working a radical cure had arrived. The common fault of such explanations is that they are arbitrary and have no support in the context: the one point there presented is that the time was opportune for showing the greatness of God's love. Whatever preparation the world had undergone, it was still lying visibly in ungodliness; and whatever other effects had been wrought by previous dispensations, they had helped to make man's weakness and unworthiness more manifest. Redemption effected under such conditions was seen to be the gift of God's free grace, not purchased or prepared by any partial improvement on man's part. Thus in accordance with the purpose of Him who justifieth the ungodly, Christ "died in due time for the ungodly": not for "the ungodly" as a class distinct from the godly, but for all as being ungodly. This is shown by the absence of the article in the Greek, as in the passage, "I came not to call (the) righteous." God's love is magnified by the strong description of our unworthiness, as in iv. 5, where see Note on ãíwvís.

7, 8. Christ's dying for the ungodly is now shown to be a thing altogether surpassing all experience of human love: for among men

68-9. That the hope founded on God's love cannot fail, is further proved in vv. 6-8, by a description of the surpassing greatness of that love, as shown in the fact that Christ died for us while we were still in our helpless and ungodly state.

6. For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.] Rather, Christ died in due time for the ungodly.

On the various readings see Note at the end of the chapter.

The words, "when we were yet without strength," do not present man's helplessness as a motive of God's love (Meyer): the suggestion of a motive would only weaken the thought of the passage, that God's love was shown when there was nothing in man to invite, but everything to repel it. The clause forms part of the contrast between the believer's present state, strong in hope, in patience, in experience, and in the assurance of God's love, and the former state in which men weakened by sin and not yet having the gift of the Holy Ghost had neither the will nor the power to please God.

The phrase, "in due time" or "in season"
7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.

8 But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 Much more then, being now scarcely can any be found who will die for a righteous man, much less, as Christ did, for sinners and ungodly.

7. For scarcely for a righteous man will one die.] There is a distinction between the "righteous" or "just" man, who does simply what duty requires of him, and the "good man," whose benevolence, not being limited to the requirements of strict duty, may call forth such gratitude and love, that for him "peradventure some one even has the heart to die."

Thus, while the possibility implied in the former clause is more distinctly conceded, it is at the same time limited to rare examples of love inspired by the most attractive form of virtue. The more exalted the virtue which alone calls forth such love, the stronger is the contrast to the ungodliness and enmity of those for whom Christ died; and it is precisely this contrast which sets God's love above all human love. See note at end.

8. But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.] "Commendeth," an excellent rendering, fully justified by St. Paul's usage (2 Cor. iii. 1; iv. 2; v. 13, &c.), and by the context. Christ's death for sinners not merely proves God's love to be a fact, but sets it before us in all its greatness and excellence, and so "commendeth" it to us.

The use of the present tense, and the frequent repetition in this verse of the first person, show how vividly St. Paul realised and appropriated the proof of God's love. Christ died once for all, yet in the enduring benefits of His death we have an ever-present proof of the Divine love to each of us.

The expression "yet sinners" conveys the idea that there was nothing in man to deserve God's love: compare v. 6.

Observe also, it is "his own love towards us" that God thus commends; "his own" (rhe tov) in its origin, springing from the depths of the Divine nature; not called into existence by any goodness in its object (as in the supposed case of v. 7), for "we were yet sinners;" not a response to any love of ours, for we were His enemies. "Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins." (1 Joh. iv. 10.)

Thus the chief thought of our passage is seen to be the contrast between God's love and man's love, not the distinction between the Father's love and Christ's love. Nevertheless, it is the Father's love that thus surpasses all human love, and is proved by His giving His Son to die for His enemies. Two thoughts are thus suggested:

First, God's wrath against sin, is not inconsistent with the tenderest love towards sinners.

Secondly, the proof of God's love towards us, drawn from Christ's death, is strong in proportion to the closeness of the union between God and Christ.

Where would be the greatness of God's love, or how could it be compared to an act of self-sacrifice, if He, whom God gave to be a sacrifice for us, were not His own Son—His only begotten, His beloved?

Christ died for us.] Not "in our stead" (airei), but "in our behalf" (imaios). See Note at end of chapter.

The ideas which airei expresses, and imaios does not, are precisely those which make the death of Christ most precious. It would be enough to say that Christ died "in our stead" (airei), if His death had been unconscious, unwilling, or accidental. But if as our champion, friend, and brother, He laid down His own life willingly for our sake, and if He was approved by God as our representative, so that when "one died for all, then all died," in and with Him (2 Cor. v. 15), then these thoughts must be expressed by saying, as St. Paul does, that He died imaios imaios, in our behalf, and for our sake.

9. St. Paul has been showing that the hope of glory cannot fail, because it is founded on God's love, as manifested in the death of Christ (vv. 5—8). He now draws out more fully the force of this argument, by contrasting past circumstances with present.

Then we were sinners, now we have been justified by Christ's blood; if He died for sinners, much more certain is it that He will save the justified.

The expression, "justified by his blood," is worthy of note.

(1) Why is no mention made of faith?

Because St. Paul is here viewing justification simply as a proof of God's love; and faith adds nothing to the gift of God, but only accepts it.

(2) It might be inferred from iv. 25 that our justification is less closely connected with our Lord's death than with His resurrection; that such an inference would be erroneous, as is at once shown by the words, "justified by his blood."
justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

In fact, in one of its aspects, "justification of sinners comes to the same with remission" of sins. (Waterland, 'Euch.' c. ix.; Bull, 'Harm. Apost.' c. i. § 4.)

"The wrath" from which we shall be saved, cannot but be "the wrath to come" (ii. 5, 8; iii. 5; 1 Thess. i. 10). The believer hopes for greater things than merely to be saved from the wrath of God. But the apostle, by presenting salvation under this limited aspect, strengthens his argument for its certainty. If we have already received from God so great favour as to be reconciled and justified, much more shall we be saved from his wrath.

10. For if, when we were enemies, &c.

For if, being enemies, we were reconciled to God through the death of his son, much more having been reconciled, we shall be saved in his life. The preceding argument is both repeated in a more precise statement, and strengthened by another element of contrast between the past and the present; (1) if, being enemies, we were reconciled, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be saved; (2) if we were reconciled by the death of His Son, much more shall we be saved by His life.

(1) In what sense it is here said that we were "enemies" to God, and were "reconciled" to Him, cannot be decided by the mere words, for these are used to express relations existing on either side, or on both. We must look to the context, and to the scope of the argument. "Reconciled," in v. 10, corresponds to "justified," in v. 9; and again, in v. 11, it is said, "we have received the reconciliation." It is thus clear that "reconciliation" is a boon which God bestows; we are reconciled to Him, when we are restored to His favour: "God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them." (2 Cor. v. 19.)

From this meaning of "reconciliation," that of "enemies" is at once deduced. By God's enemies are here meant those who lie under His wrath, and they are reconciled to Him, when that wrath is removed in the remission of sins.

The same conclusion follows from the general scope of the argument. Throughout the passage (vv. 1-11) our hope is shown to rest, not on anything in man, but solely on God's love. How is it consistent with this, to ground the greater certainty of salvation upon any change in our feeling towards God?

(1) The first change wrought through Christ's death, is not in man's feeling, but in his state, and consequently in his relation to an unchanging God.

This interpretation of the passage may be confirmed by considering some of the difficulties which have been felt concerning it.

If God loved us when we were yet sinners (v. 8), how could we be at the same time regarded by Him as enemies?

Does St. Paul speak only in a figure of God being angry? Or, is God's anger nothing else than the misery which, by His appointment, waits on sin?

We must remember that to describe God's moral attributes, man has no other words than those which are borrowed from his own nature.

It may not be possible to divest such words as "anger," "hatred," and "love," of some associations which, being merely human, are inappropriate to God.

But man's moral nature (we speak not now of its corruption, but of its essence) is the image of God. And when we say that God loves righteousness and hateth iniquity, we mean a love and a hate which are real, personal, and conscious. Compare Hooker, 'E. P.,' Bk. V., Appendix i. vol. ii. p. 570 (Keble's edition).

Thus it is no figure, but a deep and essential truth, that God hates sin; and since sin is necessarily personal, the sinner as such, i.e. "so far as he willfully identifies himself with his sin" (Godet), is hated of God, His enemy (c. xi. 28).

But God loves everything that He has made. He cannot love man as a sinner, but He loves him as man, even when he is a sinner. In like manner the Jews are described as being at the same time enemies in one relation and beloved in another (xi. 28).

Human love here offers a true analogy: the more a father loves his son, the more he hates in him the drunkard, the liar, or the traitor.

Thus God, loving as His creatures those whom He hates as self-made sinners, devises means whereby they may be brought back unto Him.

By the death of His Son, sins are put away; man, being represented by Christ, is no longer a sinner in God's sight, but righteous, and as such reconciled or restored to His favour.

Hence the force of the Apostle's argument: if God's love reconciled us when we were His enemies, much more will it save us, after we have been reconciled.

(2) The verse contains a second contrast between the means of our reconciliation, and
death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

11 And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man

of our continued salvation; if reconciled through the death of His Son, much more shall we be saved in His life, not merely "by" but "in bis life," as partakers thereof. (Compare John v. 26; xiv. 19.)

Some have thought that the point of comparison here is power.

Christ in His death sank in humiliation and weakness under the wrath of God. Christ now liveth as our eternal Mediator, Intercessor, and King, unto whom all power is given in heaven and in earth. If His death had power to restore us to God's favour, how much more shall His life have power to save us from wrath?

But throughout the passage from v. 5, St. Paul speaks, not of God's power, but of His love, as the foundation of our hope. It was a greater trial of love to reconcile us by Christ's death, than to save us in His life; it cost more to redeem us at first, than it will now cost to save us unto the end. The argument is a fortiori, from the greater to the less.

11. And not only so, but we also joy in God.] On the reading and construction, see the note at the end of the chapter.

From the fact of our having been reconciled to God (v. 10), two results follow; not only a future salvation, but also a present rejoicing in God.

The train of thought, and the word rendered "joy", or "rejoice", are the same as in xxv. 1, 2; and here, at there, St. Paul reminds us that our glorying in God is maintained through the same Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we, who were formerly enemies, have now been reconciled to God.

the atonement.] Read, the reconciliation, as in xi. 15, and 2 Cor. v. 18, 19. The word "atonement," which in the O. T. constantly means "expiation," occurs in the N. T. only here, being substituted for the proper word "reconciliation."

12-21. As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

So far, St. Paul has shown that sin is in fact universal in mankind, and that through Christ alone God has provided for all righteousness and life. He now deepens and strengthens his argument by showing that the cause of this universality of sin, and of its consequence, death, is the unity of mankind in Adam; and that, corresponding to this, there is a higher unity in Christ, who thus, as the true head and representative of the human race, becomes by His obedience unto death, a source of life and righteousness for all.

It is thus evident that the comparison between Adam and Christ is no rhetorical illustration, but an earnest, argumentative statement of two great truths in their essential connexion, universal sinfulness and universal redemption.

The comparison is based upon the derivation of sin and death from Adam, which is thus treated as a known and admitted fact. St. Paul's representation of it is wholly derived from the original narrative in Genesis; he introduces no new feature, and it is therefore gratuitous to assume that he drew from any other source. Traces of the same doctrine in the Apocalypse (Wisdom, ii. 24; Ecclesiasticus xxv. 24), and in Rabbinical writings, so far as they show the opinion prevalent among the Jews, may tend more or less to confirm, but cannot possibly weaken, the Apostle's testimony to the historical truth of the Fall, as the source of sin and death. (John viii. 44.)

The master-thought of the whole passage is that unity of the many in the one, which forms the point of comparison between Adam and Christ.

"Throughout he clings to "the one," and continually brings this forward, saying, "As by one man sin entered into the world," and "in the trespass of the one the many died," and "Not as through one having sinned is the gift," and "The judgment was from one unto condemnation," and again, "For if by the trespass of the one death reigned through the one," and "Therefore as through one trespass," and again, "As through the disobedience of the one man the many were made sinners," and he constantly repeats "the one," in order that when the Jew says to you, "How by the well-doing of one, Christ, was the world saved?" you may be able to say to him, "How by the disobedience of one, Adam, was the world condemned?" (Chrysostom.)

The same recapitulation of the human race in Adam and in Christ is taught in 1 Cor. xv. 22. "For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive."

12. Wherefore.] "For this cause,"—namely, that Christ died and rose again for
sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed
upon all men, for that all have sinned:

us, that we might be justified and saved through Him (8-11).

as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin.) As through one man sin entered into the world, and through sin death. The comparison here begun would be formally completed thus: "so by one man righteousness entered into the world, and life through righteousness." But after the digression in xvi. 13, 14, St. Paul, instead of resuming his unfinished sentence, glides back, as his manner is (c. iii. 25, 26; Eph. iii. 3, 4), into his former course of thought in the words, "Adam, who is a figure of him that is to come." So the theses as assumed in the Authorised Version is thus seem to be inadmissible. The words, "through one man," are placed first for the sake of emphasis, because they contain the point of comparison, and so affect the whole verse.

"Sin" is here viewed as a whole, and St. Paul points to the source from which all human sin has flowed; any distinction therefore between the propensity, the act, or the habit, would here be out of place.

"The world," into which "sin entered through one man," is the human race (c. iii. 19; xi. 15). The previous existence of sin and death outside the world of man, is a matter untouched by the Apostle's statement.

Why is not Eve mentioned, who sinned before Adam (2 Cor. xi. 3; 1 Tim. ii. 14; Sirach xxv. 24)?

Because the exact point touched by St. Paul is not who first sinned, nor how sin arose in Adam, but how it became universal in mankind.

"Adam was first formed, then Eve" (1 Tim. ii. 13). "The man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man" (1 Cor. xi. 8). Thus does St. Paul define the position of Adam as the founder and representative of the race, through whom life was transmitted to all, and with life also sin and death (Gen. v. 3).

punishment of sin, it may be none the less its natural consequence. When the immortality, which would have been the reward of Adam's obedience, was forfeited by his sin, the earthly frame would naturally return to its dust. Here, however, the great truth asserted by St. Paul is, that bodily death is in man the result of sin; a view familiar to us as Christians, but not to the heathen, who regarded death, "not as a punishment, but as either a necessity of nature, or a rest from toils and troubles" (Cic. in Cat. iv. 7).

If we try to grasp more than is contained in the passage, by introducing the ideas of "moral death," and "the second death," we relax our hold on the fundamental truth that bodily death is the penalty of Adam's sin.

Nor is this an imaginary danger, for some have been led on so far as to deny that the death of the body was at all included in the death threatened to Adam as the penalty of his sin (August. Serm. ccxcix. 10, 11—against the Pelagians).

"Moral" or "spiritual death" is a figurative expression for sin itself, and therefore cannot be included in death, when death is distinguished—as here—from sin.

"The second death," as is shown by the very phrase, and by the context in which it occurs (Rev. xx. 13, 14; xxi. 8), does not begin till after the general resurrection and the final judgment. To introduce such an idea into the present passage is to confound the last judgment, of which it is said, "they were judged every man according to their works," with the judgment pronounced upon Adam in Gen. iii. 19, which extended in its effects equally to all his descendants, prior to any consideration of each man's works, and without any distinction between the evil and the good.

Erroneous views of the passage have arisen from overlooking several important considerations.

1. St. Paul brings into the comparison only those effects of Adam's transgression which are transmitted to all his posterity, namely, the inheritance of death and of a sinful nature; while God's final judgment is based solely on personal and individual responsibility.

2. The death of Christ does not precisely reverse the effects of Adam's sin, it overpowers them by greater gifts.

3. The death of the body as denounced upon Adam could not be regarded as a merely temporary separation of body and soul, but only as the beginning of a permanent state. Hence the gloomy view of death which
13 (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the

pervades the Old Testament, except in a few remarkable prophecies. It was only when Christ "brought life and immortality to light" by His own resurrection, that the Christian view of death as a temporary separation of body and soul, a transition to a higher life, could be realised. 

and so] i.e. through sin which had itself come in through one man.

dead passed upon all men.] "Passed through unto all men."

for that all have sinned.] Read "for that all sinned."

On iv. see Note at end.

That dependence of the death of all upon the sin of one, which is already implied in the word "in," is more fully and precisely stated in the clause, "for that all sinned." We have already remarked that the words "through one man" affect the whole verse: their influence on this last clause is most important, determining its meaning to be "for that all sinned through one man." Compare 2 Cor. v. 14: "If one died for all, then they all died," i.e. in the one. In both passages the Authorised Version ("have sinned"! were all dead") is inaccurate.

Sin and death not only "entered into" the human race, but also "passed through" to every member of it "through one man."

That death extended to all is a patent fact: and since death entered "through sin" and "so" passed on, it is presupposed that "all sinned." Only thus is the cause "sin" co-extensive with the effect "death": at the same time, since "all sinned" through one, it is equally true that "by the offence of the one the many died" (v. 15).

The Apostle's whole reasoning rests on these two principles: (1) Sin is the cause of death; (2) By virtue of the unity of mankind sin and death are both transmitted from one to all. Thus the sin of the many and the death of the many are included in the sin of the one and the death of the one, and there at their common source the connexion between sin and death is fixed once for all.

"The covenant of life, entered into with Adam in his state of innocence, was by his sin made void, not only for himself, but also for his posterity; so that now all sons of Adam, as such (i.e. apart from Christ), "are quite shut out from any promise of immortality, and subjected to a necessity of dying, without hope of resurrection. No proposition in all theology is more certain than this: for it is everywhere stated most

plainly and expressly in the N.T. scriptures, especially in the Epistle to the Romans throughout almost the whole 5th chapter." (Bp. Bull. 'Examen Censurem, Anim.' xvi. p. 208). Theodoret's comment, "For not on account of his forefather's sin, but on account of his own, each man receives the doom of death," is as directly opposed to St. Paul's argument as it is to experience and theology: the error arises from confounding the sentence of bodily death, which through one man's sin extended to all, with the sinner's final doom.

13, 14. St. Paul pursues the thought that "all sinned through one," and that on this account death passed upon all. His proof is drawn from the case of those who died before a law was given, and rests on the principle already stated in iv. 15, that "where no law is, there is no transgression."

First he states as a known fact that during the period from Adam to Moses, that is, "until the law, there was sin in the world."

But as "sin is not imputed," not brought into account against the sinner (see Philmon v. 18). "When there is no law, men could not then bring upon themselves the penalty of death, as Adam did, because they could not sin, as Adam, against a known law. There was sin, but not in the form of transgression, and therefore not taken into account.

Their own sin then was not the cause that men died. But they did die: "death reigned from Adam to Moses even over those who sinned not after the similitude of the transgression of Adam."

And as sin is the cause of death (v. 13), and Adam's sin alone could be taken into account, they died through Adam's sin. This is substantially Chrysostom's interpretation.

The unavoidable inference that through one man's sin all died is only for a moment deferred; in vs. 15, 17, and 19 it is affirmed in express terms.

Meanwhile through the introduction of Adam's name the Apostle is able to return to the comparison begun in v. 12. Thus the relative clause "who is the figure of him that was to come" serves a double purpose: it implies indirectly the conclusion to be drawn from vs. 13, 14, that all sinned and died in Adam, who is thus a "figure" or a "type" of Him in whom all are justified and made alive; and it enables St. Paul to resume and complete his unfinished comparison.
similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.

This comparison is here confined to the effects in man of Adam's sin and of Christ's obedience: it does not embrace (as in 1 Cor. xv. 24-28) man's lordship over the creatures as typical of Christ's universal dominion in the "times of the restitution of all things." Our Authorised Version therefore rightly renders, "him which was to come," not "which is to come."

15. But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. The comparison between Adam and Christ is at the same time a contrast: they are alike in that they both stand at the head of the human race, and so extend the influence of their acts to all; unlike in the nature of those acts, and the consequences that flow from them. "Rabbi Yosi, the Galilcean said, 'Come forth and learn the righteousness of the King Messiah, and the reward of the just from the first man, who received but one commandment, a prohibition, and transgressed it: consider how many deaths were inflicted upon himself, upon his own generations, and upon those that followed them, till the end of all generations. Which attribute is the greater, the attribute of goodness, or the attribute of vengeance?" He answered, 'The attribute of goodness is the greater; and the attribute of vengeance is the less; how much more, then, will the King Messiah, who endures affliction and pains for the transgressors (as it is written, 'He was wounded,' etc.), justify all generations! and this is what is meant, when it is said, 'And the Lord made the iniquity of us all meet upon him.'" (Neubauer, 'Jewish Interpreters of Isai,' liii. p. 11.)

The word rendered "the offence" is the same which is applied to Adam's sin in Wisdom x. 1, and there rendered "his fall": in the Gospels it is translated "trespass" (Mat. vi. 14; Mar. xi. 25). The strict contrast to Adam's trespass is Christ's obedience, but St. Paul, regarding them both chiefly in their influence on mankind, passes on at once to the effect of that obedience. namely the act of grace by which the effect of the trespass is annulled. On the various applications of οὐκ ἔχει, see note on i. 11: here it indicates the act of God's free grace in pardoning and justifying.

For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many." Read: "For if by the trespass of one the many died, much more did the grace of God and his gift abound unto the many in the grace of the one man Jesus Christ." "If" does not here imply uncertainty, but lays a basis for argument: that "by the trespass of the one the many died," has been already proved: much more certain is it that the grace abounded unto the many, for God's grace flows more freely than His wrath. The word rendered "gift" (δώρον) is used in the New Testament only of God's greatest and best gifts, as Christ himself, the Holy Ghost, and his gifts (John iv. 10; Acts ii. 38; viii. 20; x. 45; 2 Cor. ix. 15; Eph. ii. 8; iv. 7): here it means "the gift of righteousness" (v. 17). "The grace of God" and "his gift" differ only as cause and effect; their essential unity is perhaps indicated in the Greek by the singular number of the verb which follows. "The grace of God" abounded "in the grace of the one man Christ Jesus," even as the water of the fountain abounds in the river.

"The grace abounded" in the sense that it was not limited to a reversal of the effects of Adam's sin: it did not restore in the same form that which had been lost in Adam, but bestowed far more in new and better gifts. The penalty of death is not abolished: but a new life is imparted, in which death itself is to be swallowed up at the resurrection: man is not put back into that unstable innocence from which Adam fell, but his sins are forgiven: the corruption of nature, which we inherit prior to any exercise of our own will, is compensated by those secret influences of the Spirit wherein He strives with us even against our will. And to those who will accept the grace, it brings both greater abundance of grace here, and the sure hope of glory hereafter.

"The many" unto whom the gift abounded "by the grace of the one man Christ Jesus" must include "the many" who died "by the trespass of the one." The gift "abounded unto the many," inasmuch as Christ's redeeming work has won grace for all men: there is no limit in the gift itself, but only in man's willingness to accept it. The Authorised Version loses the full meaning of the expression "the one man," that is the head and representative of mankind, "the last Adam," the beginning of the new creation, "the firstborn among many brethren" (Rom. viii. 29).
more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.

16 And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.

17 For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.

18 Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men.

The conclusion of v. 15, that "the grace of God and his gift abounded unto the many," is here assumed in the words "they which receive the abundance of the grace and of the gift of righteousness."

The conclusion of v. 16 is also assumed in the same clause; for as "the free gift is unto justification," it is now more closely defined as "the gift of righteousness" and as received now.

They then who receive this gift of righteousness now will surely receive also the gift of life hereafter.

This assurance is not made to depend solely on the intrinsic connection between righteousness and life: it is made doubly sure by the contrast with the gloomy reign of sin and death.

For if by one man's offence.] The reading represented in the margin ("by one offence") has been adopted by some critics; but it has less authority, and does not agree so well with the corresponding clause at the end of the verse. Translate: "For if by the trespass of the one death reigned through the one, much more they which receive the abundance of the grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life through the one, Jesus Christ."

We may notice a difference of expression in the two clauses. "Death reigned;" under his tyranny man's free agency is destroyed: the justified shall themselves "reign in life;" for life eternal is the element in which man's personal and conscious activity shall find its glorious development. The blessing here promised is far more than the restoration of what was lost through Adam: it is promised therefore not to all unconditionally, but to those who accept that gift of righteousness which is offered to all.

19. Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.]

This verse gathers up the various contrasts of the whole passage (vv. 12–17) in a summary conclusion.

That the marginal renderings are the more correct, will be seen by comparing in the Greek v. 18 with v. 19. The Authorised
to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.

Version supplies in the first clause "judgment came," and in the second "the free gift came": on grammatical and rhetorical grounds it is inconceivable that two subjects standing in contrast could both be thus omitted.

There is no complete proposition, but a kind of exclamation, which is perfectly intelligible without any addition.

"So then as through one trespass, unto all men, to condemnation; so also through one justifying sentence, unto all men, to justification of life."

St. Paul does not repeat the strictly logical contrast of v. 16, between "trespass" and "gift of grace," "condemnation" and "justifying sentence," but advancing upon that conclusion, he now sets against the "one trespass" the "one justifying sentence," and against the "condemnation," as reaching to all, the justifying process, or "justification of life" unto all.

The words "all men" must have the same extent in both clauses; and as the condemnation passed upon "all men" in the proper sense of the word "all," so the "one justifying sentence" leads in God’s purpose unto justification of life for all. The realisation of this purpose in individual men depends upon their accepting by faith the justification designed for them. But it is not St. Paul’s purpose to bring out here, mere fully than he has already done in v. 17, this subjective condition of justification; he is speaking of the one justification through Christ as equally comprehensible with the one condemnation through Adam.

"A justification by which we are recalled from the death of sin unto the life of grace and glory" (Corn. a Lapide). This interpretation is confirmed by v. 21, "that grace might reign through righteousness unto eternal life." Compare Bull., Exam. Censurae, Anim. iii.

"The genitive expresses the effect or purpose: "justification" is unto, or in order to, "life" (Winer, § 30; Green, § 270).

19. One point in the comparison is still incomplete. Adam’s "trespass" has been contrasted, not as we might have expected, with Christ’s obedience, but with the moving cause of that obedience, His grace (v. 13), and with the result purchased by His obedience, "the gift of righteousness" (v. 17), and the "justifying sentence" (v. 18).

It remains to show the means by which Christ’s grace wrought these effects, viz., His obedience itself, and so to present the exact contrast to that one transgression, by which all were made sinners. This is now done, and the summary given in v. 18 is thereby explained and confirmed.

"For as by the disobedience of the one man the many were made sinners, so also by the obedience of the one shall the many be made righteous."

The words "were made sinners" have been very variously interpreted: "became sinners, "—"were proved to be,"—"were regarded and treated as being sinners,"—these all miss the exact force of the word (sunderbarath), which points to the formal essence, to that which constitutes men sinners. St. Paul has shown in v. 13 that sin may exist without being taken into account, i.e., without formally constituting the man a sinner. But Adam’s disobedience, being a formal transgression, caused an essential and formal change in his moral state: he and all his descendants were at once formally constituted sinners ("peccatores constituti sunt," Vulgate), and as such were subjected to death. The clause states explicitly, what is already contained in v. 12, that "through one man . . . all sinned."

As Adam’s disobedience consisted in one single act, so by the obedience contrasted with it, we must understand the one crowning act of Christ’s obedience (Phil. ii. 8), His submission to death. Yet this death in its atoning power presupposes a sinless life: one act cannot be a disobedience, but a perfect life is needful to a complete obedience.

The effect of Christ’s obedience, like that of Adam’s disobedience, is in its objective aspect universal and immediate. If we look only to Christ’s work, and God’s gift, all is at once completed. As in Adam the many were made sinners prior to any consideration of their own sins; so in Christ, solely on account of the merits of His obedience, apart from, and prior to any righteous deeds or dispositions of their own, the many shall "be made righteous " (кατωτατησιωσις) i.e. not merely declared righteous, or put into the position of righteous men, and treated as such, but constituted righteous.

For as our union with Adam made us all participators in the effects of his transgression, and thereby constituted us sinners; so union with Christ, who is our righteousness, is that which constitutes us essentially and formally righteous.
ROMANS. V.

20 Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:

21 That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

The ideas of inherent sin and inherent righteousness belong to the following chapters: to introduce them by anticipation here is to confuse the Apostle's argument, which here regards justification in its objective aspect, as wrought by God through Christ.

The future "shall be made righteous," does not refer to the future judgment, for it is not St. Paul's habit to view justification as something future, but as present, and already attained. It is because justification, though perfected on Christ's part in one act, extends onwards in its effect to generations yet unborn, that it is described as future.

20. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound.) "But law came in beside, that the trespass might be multiplied."

As the sin of Adam and the grace of Christ have been presented as the main elements and moving powers in man's history, the question naturally occurs—what was the purpose of the law? What was its relation to sin and to righteousness?

Besides this general association with the preceding passage, the law has been expressly mentioned in it: "Until the law sin was in the world; but sin is not imputed unless there is no law," v. 13. Why then, it may be asked, was the law given? What purpose did it serve?

Again, in v. 16, the one offence of Adam is contrasted with "many trespasses." Whence came these many trespasses? That question is now answered.

Sin had come into the world before (v. 15), and remained in the world (v. 13); but sin without law is not taken into account (v. 13), and does not constitute trespass or transgression (iv. 15): therefore law came in beside (sin), in order that the trespass might be multiplied. Compare Gal. iii. 19, "The law was added because of (for the sake of) transgressions."

Do these words attribute to God, as the author of the law, the purpose of increasing sin?

To answer this question fully here, would be to anticipate the course of St. Paul's own argument; for in c. vii. he enters into a full discussion of the nature and effect of the law. At present we must notice only such points as arise directly out of this passage.

1. According to Chrysostom and other Greek commentators, it is only an effect of the law, not a purpose, that is stated. But this interpretation weakens the natural force of the Apostle's words, and only partially solves the difficulty: for an effect of the law must have been foreseen, and therefore in some sense included in its purpose.

2. The words mean, not "that the trespass might increase," merely in man's consciousness and knowledge of it, but "might be multiplied actually": this sense is also required by the connexion with the "many offences" in v. 16, which cannot but be actual.

But on the other hand we must observe that—

3. The purpose stated is not that sin, but that "the trespass" might increase; that sin which already existed, however dormant or unrecognised (vii. 7, 8, 13), might take the definite form of active "trespass," or transgression of a known law. That sin itself increased is stated in the next clause, not as a purpose, but as an effect, and that an effect overruled for good by the superabundance of grace.

4. The increase of the trespass is not the primary purpose of the law, corresponding to God's principal or signified will, which is that men should observe the law to do it. Compare Hooker, 'Eccl. Pol.' B. v. Appendix 1., p. 573, in Keble's edition.

5. It is not the ultimate purpose of the law, but only an intermediate purpose, a mean to an end: the ultimate purpose is "that grace might reign through righteousness." (v. 21.)

But unless sin abounded, grace did much more abound.) The Authorised Version uses the same word "abound" for two different Greek words: render, "but unless sin multiplied, grace superabounded," so as to surpass the increase of sin.

21. "In this, God acted, not with cruelty but for the purpose of healing. For sometimes a man thinks himself whole, and is sick; and inasmuch as he is sick, and perceives it not, he seeks not a physician: the disease is increased, the inconvenience grows, the physician is sought, and all is healed" (Augustine, Ps. cii. 15).

Here St. Paul speaks more strongly of the increased power of sin, when the remedy appears, and God's full purpose is declared. Yet he does not say, as in the Authorised Version, "Sin hath reigned unto death," but "in death," as a province which it had won, and wherein it exercised its dominion. Death therefore must be understood in the same sense, as in v. 13, 14.
But the reign of sin and death has been
overpowered by the superabundance of grace,
"that grace might reign unto eternal life."
Grace is conquering, and has yet to conquer,
the kingdom of sin and death, before it can
enter into the full possession of its own king-
dom. This conquest it carries on through
its own royal gift of "righteousness"; the
boundless realm unto which it shall attain, but
which will still stretch out for ever and ever
before it, is "eternal life."
Once again in sight of that kingdom our
thoughts are turned to the King Himself.
"Of Adam we hear no more: Christ alone is
remembered" (Bengel). Grace shall "reign
through righteousness unto eternal life through
Jesus Christ our Lord."

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 1, 6, 7, 8, 11, 12.

The Margin, "let us have peace with God," represents
a reading ἡμεῖςEEK in a great majority of uncial MSS., Versions, and
Fathers, and adopted by Tischendorf (8),
Tregelles, Westcott, Fritzsche, Hofmann,
&c. On the other hand, ἡμεῖς is found in
B N F G (not in f g) P, most cursive, the
later Syriac, and a few Fathers, including
probably Tertullian, who seems to be wrongly
claimed for the other reading: ἡμεῖς is pre-
ferred on internal grounds by Meyer, De
Wette, Lange, Philippi, Reiche, Cremer,
Scrivener, McClellan, Alford, Wordsworth.
There is a similar variation between ἡμεῖς and ἡμεῖς in Hebrews xii. 28. Here the
reading ἡμεῖς, having so great a preponder-
ance of external testimony, the first duty of
candid criticism is to consider whether it
offers any meaning in harmony with the
context.
1. Fritzsche, who prefers ἡμεῖς, writes thus:
"It is evident that, if you replace
ἡμεῖς in v. 1, κακῶμεθα in v. 2, 3 is Conjunc-
tive, not Indicative." But Fritzsche has
overlooked the fact that the Conjunctive
Mood is absolutely excluded by the catego-
rical negative (οὐ) which follows: the
force of this argument is not affected by the
various reading κακωκείμεθα, v. 3.
2. Hofmann, avoiding Fritzsche's error,
throws the emphasis on the words "through
Jesus Christ," and makes the two clauses
καὶ κακῶμεθα parallel to each other.
"Because it is Jesus Christ
through whom we not only have had our
access to this grace wherein we stand, but
also rejoice in hope of the glory of God;
therefore we may be exhor 
through
Him we should let our relation to God be a
relation of peace."
To this interpretation, which is substan-
tially that of Origen and Chrysostom, several
objections are made.
(1) "The emphasis, which obviously rests
in the first instance on δικαίωσθεντες and then
on εἰσῆρθης, is taken to lie on δια τοῦ Κυρίου ήμ. 1. X." (Meyer).
We may answer that these important
words are naturally brought as close as pos-
sible to the relative clause dependent on
them, and at the same time receive the em-
phasis which belongs to the close of the
sentence.
(2) The exhortation, "let us have peace
with God, and not become His enemies
again through fresh sins," is said to be out of
place in this 5th chapter, throughout which
St. Paul is stating the actual effects of justi-
fication, "we have peace with God," and "we
rejoice in hope of the glory of God."
To this we may reply, that the Apostle,
beginning his exhortation in v. 1, and
grounding it upon the benefits already re-
ceived through Christ, is led on into a fuller
statement of the nature, cause, and extent of
those benefits (vv. 3-21), and only resumes
his practical exhortation in vi. 1.
(3) Mr. Scrivener concludes, "that the
itacism ω for ο, so familiar to all collators of
Greek manuscripts, crept into some very
early copy, from which it was propagated
amongst our most venerable codices, even
those from which the earliest versions were
made:—that this is one out of a small
number of well-ascertained cases in which
the united testimonies of the best authorities
conspire in giving a worse reading than that
preserved by later and (for the most part)
quite inferior copies."
Against this we may fairly set the opposite
conclusion of Tischendorf that the testi-
mony for ἡμεῖς is obviously overpowered
by that in favour of ἡμεῖς, and therefore
"ἡμεῖς cannot be rejected unless it be alto-
gether inappropriate, and inappropriate it
seemingly is not."
Without presuming to decide between
such accomplished critics, we are bound to
express our own opinion that the internal
grounds of objection to ἡμεῖς are not suffi-
cient to outweigh the great preponderance
of external testimony in its favour: but in a
case where scholars of the greatest authority
differ so widely, we think it better to retain
in our footnotes and revised Version the
reading of the received Text.

6. 1. "Εἰς γὰρ Χριστός διὰ τῶν Ἰησοῦν ἀδελφῶν
ROMANS. V.

kata karōν ὑπὲρ αἵσθενων αἰτήθατε. This is the reading of the Textus Receptus, and is found in D K F 17 37 47 Arm.

II. The same reading with the addition of a second τῖς after αἰτήθατε is found in Ν A C D* 31 (istud omnium corruptionum receptaculum, Reiche) 137 Syr.

III. Instead of τῆς γὰρ the following variations are found:

(1) τι γε B fuld. Aeth.
(2) τῆς γάρ Cop. Isid. Pelus. August. ("ut enim," Epist. 149, De Pecc. Merit. i. 43)
(3) τῆς dē Syr. (Schaaf)
(4) της dē L
(5) τῆς τι γάρ D* Φ G ut quid enim d e f g Vulg. Iren. Faustin.

Of these authorities B D* F G August. add the second τῖς after αἰτήθατε.

On this evidence we have to make the following remarks.

(a) The position of the first τῖς, separated by Χριστός from the words to which it belongs (διόν ʰμῶν αἰτήθατε) is very unusual. Reiche in his Critical Commentary excuses it on the ground that St Paul wished to give emphasis to both thoughts, (1) that it was Christ the Son of God who died; (2) that He died while we were yet sinners. But this explanation is far from satisfactory.

(b) The double τῖς has never been satisfactorily explained, and the connexion which Tischendorf indicates by his punctuation, διόν ʰμῶν αἰτήθατε τῖς, is opposed to the rule, universally observed in the N. T., that τῖς in a Participial clause precedes the Participle.

On the other hand, the repetition of τῖς is very easily explained by the confusion of the various readings.

(c) Of the variations for τῆς γὰρ the most noticeable is III. (5) τίς τι γάρ. It is thought by Reiche to have been formed from the Latin "ut quid enim," and "ut quid" is used in the Vulgate for τίς τι, e.g. Matt. xxvi. 8, Mar. xiv. 4, as well as for ὅν τι, Matt. ix. 4, xxvii. 46, Lu. xiii. 7, Acts vii. 26, 1 Cor. x. 39.

Stieren (Irenæus, I. III. c. xvi. § 9) acutely remarks that Irenæus seems to have read ὅν τι γάρ. Which may add to the preceding ὅμων, ὅν τι would easily lose its first syllable, and the remaining letters αρ would be changed into τῖς. ὅν τι γάρ, or τίς τι γάρ, with the same general sense as the received reading, would give a livelier turn to the expression: "For to what purpose (if our hope is after all to disappoint us) did Christ die, &c."

Dr. Westcott (Dict. Bib. ii. 530a) suggests that there is a corruption earlier than any remaining document. We believe that the original reading is represented in the Latin "ut quid enim Christus, quum adhuc infirmi essemos, secundum tempus pro impius mortuis est?" (Vulg. Iren. &c.), and that it ran thus: ὅν τι γάρ Χριστός τίς αἰτήθατε ὅμων ὅν τις κατὰ καρὸν ὑπὲρ ἀἵσθενων αἰτήθατε; The position of τίς indicated by the Latin is confirmed by Epiphanius (Marcion, 369), who quotes the words τίς ὅντων ὅμων αἰτήθατε, in this order.

7. Is there any distinction between ὑπὲρ δικαιος and ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἄγαθον?

(i) The whole context, before and after, has reference to dying for men; and the antithesis both to ἀἵσθενον (v. 6) and ἄμαρτολον (v. 8), demands the masculine sense here in both adjectives.

(ii) The first sentence is virtually negative (μοικί), and δικαιος therefore indefinite, and without the article; the affirmative sentence assumes a definite instance marked by the article (τοῦ ἄγαθον).

(iii) Is there any distinction or gradation of sense between δικαιος and ἄγαθον?

Iren. I. xxvii. 1. τῶν μὲν δικαιῶν, τῶν δὲ ἄγαθων ὑπήρχειν.

Clement. 'Homer.' iv. c. 13. ἄγαθον μὲν ὡς μεταμελομένοις χαριζόμενον τὰ διαμετράτα, δικαιον δὲ ὡς δεικνύον μετὰ τῆς μετάμορφως κατ' αἷμα τῶν τεπεραγμένων ἐπετάξου.

Ammonius, καλὸς πανηγὺς διαφέρει οὐκέτι ὁ δικαιος τοῦ ἄγαθον.

Phavorinus, ὥς ἄγαθον τὸ καλὸν χαρισμένον ἀδικόν.

Xenoph. 'Agesil.' xi. § 8, χρύσαιοι γε μὴν οὐ μόνον δικαιοὶ αὐτὰ καὶ ἐλευθεροὶ ἐχρυσοὶ, τῷ μὲν δικαίωρ ἀρχεῖν ἧγομενος εἰνα τὰ ἄλλαρα, τῷ δὲ ἐλευθεροὶ καὶ τῶν ἑαυτοῦ προσφελεῖναι εἰνα.

From these and other passages, adduced by various Commentators, the distinction is clear.

That it is retained in the N. T. see Matt. xx. 15; Lu. xxiii. 50; Rom. vii. 12; Trench, 'N. T. Synonymes,' 2d Series, ἀγαθωσία; Cremer's 'Lexicon' (ἄγαθος) and Grimm, 'Clavis N. T. Philol.'

If, as many think, there is no difference or gradation between δικαιος and ἄγαθον in the present passage, its meaning is: "For scarcely for a righteous man will any die: scarcely I say, for perhaps for such a man one may even dare to die."

(a) The second sentence is in this case certainly superfluous; for in μοικί "scarcely" with the improbability, the possibility also is implied.

The needless modification only weakens the previous statement; and Jerome's admission "pendulo gradu sententiam temperat."
describes a mode of reasoning very unlike St. Paul’s. But if ἀγάθος describes a more generous and attractive quality than δίκαιος, then there is reason for noticing the possible exception: what will barely be done for the man who is merely just, may perhaps be done for the good and generous man.

(b) Meyer argues that the Apostle’s object is “to make the character of the man for whom some one might perhaps make this self-sacrifice, more distinctly felt, for the sake of the contrast:” an argument which tends to prove, not that ὑπερ is a simple equivalent to δίκαιος, but that it is more forcible and emphatic. Its prominent position at the beginning of the sentence points the same way.

(c) Again, it is urged that δίκαιος cannot mean simply a just, honest, upright man, but must have the wider sense “righteous,” i.e. righteous before God, as well as before man, because of the contrast with ἡμαρτολός, v. 8.

Meyer here falls into confusion, from not observing that in the actual case of Christ’s dying for man, ἡμαρτολός, ἠθικός, and ἀθικός describe man’s character “coram Deo:” while in the illustration, where man dies for his fellow man, δίκαιος and ἀγάθος are both limited to human relations, and have their distinct and proper meaning.

8. died for.] I. e. “in behalf of” ὑπερ; not “instead of” ἀντί. When David cries, "Would God I had died for thee, O Ab-salom my son, my son!" (2 Sam. xviii. 33), we find in the LXX ἀντί σου. But in fact ἀντί is never used of Christ’s dying for us, and “in doctrinal passages relating to Christ’s death (Gal. iii. 13; Rom. v. 6, 8; xiv. 15; 1 Pet. iii. 18, &c.), it is not justifiable to render ὑπερ ἡμᾶς, and the like, rigorously by ‘instead of’ merely on account of such parallel passages as Matt. xx. 28, λόγον ἀντί παλλάσσω.” (Winer, ‘Gr. N. T.’, part iii., sect. 47, E. T.)

When Pylades would die for Orestes, or Alcestis for her husband, various prepositions may be used, ἀντί, ὑπερ, περί, πρὸ: but each has its own proper meaning. For ἐνέχειν with ὑπερ, see Eur. ‘Alcestis,’ 155, 284, 683, 690, 701; with ἀντί, 434, 524, 716. That ὑπερ expresses the bare external substitution of one for another, is evident from such passages as the following:—

ἐγὼ σε πρεσβέειονα κατεί τῇ ἐρήμῳ

ψυχῆς καταστίφεσα φῶς τοῦ ἀετοῦ.

(‘Alc.’ 283.)

οὐ νῦν γεγονὸν τοῦτο ἀντὶ ἠμοῦ μὴν τέκνος.

( ib. 377.)

οὐ τὸν αὐτὸν θηλαζέ πώς ἄντι σῶς

ομίλησα ψυχῆς ἐκ ‘Ἀδα.’

( ib. 461.)

This proper sense of ἀντί could not possibly be expressed by ὑπερ; nor can ἀντί express the sense of ὑπερ, “on behalf of,” “for the good of,” derived from its use in the local sense of bending “over” one to protect and defend him. Compare 2 Macc. vii. 11, ἐτόλου ὑπερ τῶν ἥματων καὶ τῆς παρθένου ἀμπυρίωσε, also vi. 28; vii. 9; and Ignat. ad Rom. 4, ὑπερ θεοῦ ἀμπυρίωσε.

In the passages cited by Raphel on Rom. v. 8, and accepted by Magee as “indispensible” (‘Atonement,’ i. 245), the idea of substitution is not conveyed by ὑπερ, but by the context. See especially Xen. ‘Anab.’ VII. iv. 9.

11. οὐ μόνον δὲ, διὰ λα ὧ και ἀντικείμενα. All modern Editors read και ἀντικείμενα with N B C D, &c. The reading και ἀντικείμενα may be due to v. 3, and to the difficulty of finding any regular construction for the Participle, which is still variously explained.

(i) “And not only [as reconciled], but also as those who rejoice in God” (Meyer).

For this view it may be said that the greater the present blessing, the more certain is the future salvation. Now the reconciliation mentioned in verse 10, does not fully express the blessing upon which the believer has already entered, for this includes also a joyful confidence in God.

It is, however, much more simple to refer οὐ μόνον δὲ to the principal thought σωσθήσεθαι.

(2) “And not only [shall be saved], but also saved in such a manner that we shall rejoice in our salvation” (Fritzsche, Godet, Winer, § 45).

In this, as in the former explanation, the sense appears to be sacrificed to the grammar, for it is more natural that και και ἀντικείμενα, like και ἀντικείμενα in v. 2, 3, should refer to a present rejoicing.

(3) And not only [shall be saved], but we also ἡνωθιοσ in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received the reconciliation.”

This is the interpretation of Origin, in Cramer’s ‘Catena,’ and of Theoret: it admits a slight irregularity of construction, but tains the natural meaning of the passage.

12. For the use of ἐφ’ ἐσ’ in classical authors, see Thuc. i. 111, Polyb. ‘Hist.’ i. 59, where the future indicative follows; and Xenoph. ‘Agesilus’ iv. 1, ‘Hellen.’ ii. c. 2, § 20, where the infinitive follows.

The present or past indicative seems to be rare; but an example is given by Phavorinus: ὑπ’ ἐσ’ τοῦ διδωτ. λιγοῦσα Ἀρτικοῦ μετὰ πνευμάτων διαστολῆς ὀνόμ., ἐφ’ ἐσ’ τὴν εἰρήνην ἑργάζομαι.

In 2 Cor. v. 4, and in Rom. v. 12, it is well rendered in the Authorised Version “for that.”
These two passages are discussed by Pho-
tius, Epist. 14 (ed. J. N. Baletta, 1864) τούτων δὲ τὴν διάκονια αἱ μὲν "ἐφ' ὁμ. ἦσαν Ἰακώβ," οἱ δὲ "ἐφ' ὁμ. ἦσαν Ἰακώβ." συναπασχούντες ἀποδοθήκην. ἦσαν δὲ ὁδότητι δοκεῖ: ὁδότη γὰρ τι συναπασχοῦντες δει, αὐτὸν ἐξηγοῖ τοῦ ἱστοῦ τὴν ἐκτέλεσα τὸ γὰρ "ἐφ' ὁμ. πάντες ἥμαρτον" νῦν οὖν προσώπον τινός, οὐδ' οἶνον προσώπων διεκεῖσθαι ὅτι, ἀλλ' αἰνίος μαλακτικὸν παραστα-
tικόν οὖν, "ἐφ' ὁμ. πάντες ἥμαρτον = διείστι πάντες ἥμαρτον." κ.κ.λ.

In Phil. iii. 13, the only other passage of the
New Testament in which ἐφ' ὁμ. is used, the
same sense is very similar. Eccum ὑπὸ τοῦ
"ἐφ' ὁμ. ἦσαν Ἰακώβ," όντως ὡς οὕτως ἦσαν Ἰα-
cάκωβ, ἤτιον ἔστω ἤ ἠπάθεια ἧτο παθήσθαι ἡμᾶς.

In all three passages ἐφ' ὁμ. seems to be the
same sense is very similar. Eccum ὑπὸ τοῦ τοῦ ἔκτο
τοῦ λόγου οἶνον, ἢ ἦσαν Ἰακώβ, ἢ ἦσαν Ἰακώβ, ἢ ἦσαν Ἰα-
cάκωβ, ἤτιον ἔστω ἤ ἠπάθεια ἢ ἑπάθεια ἡμᾶς.

That Origien so understood the passage
seems probable from his paraphrase of it,
'Comm. in Evang. Joh.' tom. xx. § 33: διείστι
τοῦ εἰς πάντας ἀνθρώπους διείστι τοὺς τοὺς
πάντας ἡμᾶρτεῖν.

WHAT shall we say then?
Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?

2 God forbid. How shall we,
that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any
longer therein?] Read, "We that died to
sin, how shall we live any longer therein?"
The relative clause, placed first for the sake
of emphasis, gives a characteristic defini-
tion of believers, which shows the absurdity
of supposing that they are to "continue in
sin."
The sorist, too, must be properly rendered:
"we that died to sin," not "we that are
dead;" for it is a mere truism to say that to
live in sin is inconsistent with a continued
and present deadness to its influence, and what
the Apostle means is that to live in sin is in-
consistent with having once died to it. To have
shared Christ's death, in the moral sense, is
the sure prelude to sharing His new life.
The question "How?" implies here not a
physical impossibility, but a moral contradic-
tion.

To live in sin means more than to "continue in
sin": it is to have sin for the element in
which we live, the moral atmosphere which
our souls breathe.

The expression "dying unto sin" is first
found in this passage, though St. Paul in an
earlier epistle speaks of "dying to the law"
(Gal. ii. 19; vii. 14; Rom. vii. 4; 1 Pet. ii.
24.) It means to be released from all power
and influence of sin, as a slave is by death
released from the power of his master: see
note on v. 7.

Lest the phrase "died to sin" should
seem strange and unintelligible, the Apostle
checks himself and explains it; yet even in
his mode of doing this he implies that his
readers ought not to need an explana-
tion.
3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? 4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

3. Know ye not? "Or know ye not." The word "or" points to the only alternative: if they do not understand what it is to "have died to sin," they must be ignorant of the meaning and effect of their baptism; and the very thought of such ignorance gives a tone of reproof to the question.

Here (as in v. 11), instead of "Jesus Christ," the right order is "Christ Jesus;" the Mediatorial name holds the emphatic position here, and is used alone in the following context (vv. 4, 8, 9), because He into whom we are baptized is the head, with whom all the members are united in one body.

To be "baptized into Christ" is to be brought by baptism into union with Him: but the original word represents this union in a vivid picture, which we can only reproduce by using some less familiar word,—"immerged into Christ," "immersed into His death." So the Israelites are said figuratively to have been "all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea" (1 Cor. x. 2), because the result of their passing under the cloud and through the waters was that "they believed the Lord and his servant Moses" (Ex. xiv. 31), and were thus united with Moses as their deliverer whom they trusted, their leader whom they followed, and their mediator in whose covenant they shared. Compare also 1 Cor. xii. 13, and Gal. iii. 27, in which passages, as here, the union with Christ in baptism is expressly ascribed to all who are baptized, because it is a gift of God bestowed freely on all, though from its very nature dependent on a right use for its continued efficacy.

Christ's death, burial, and resurrection being necessary steps in the process by which He unites us to Himself in a new life, to be "baptized into Christ" is to be brought into union with His death (v. 3), His burial (v. 4), His resurrection (v. 5).

baptized into his death. The union with Christ into which we enter by baptism is thus more closely defined first as union with His death; but the death of Christ has various aspects, and the context must determine in which of these it is presented. This is clearly stated in v. 10: "in that be died, be died unto sin once." His death is here viewed as the final and complete deliverance from a life in which for our sakes He had been subject to conditions imposed by our sins; and this sense exactly corresponds with the thought which led to the mention of Christ's death, "How shall we that died to sin, live any longer therein?"

Thus the moral character of the whole life of faith is determined in the very act by which man enters into that life.

4. Therefore we are buried with Him by baptism into death. "We were buried therefore with him by our baptism into his death." Assuming his readers' assent to the fact that "we were baptized into Christ's death," St. Paul proceeds to state (1) its immediate consequence, we were buried with Him, and (2) its final purpose, that we might be, like Him, raised up to a new life.

The expression, "we were buried," may have been suggested by the momentary burial beneath the baptismal water (see Bingham, 'Antiq.' XI. xi. § 4): it declares in the strongest manner our union with Christ in death, and our entire separation from the former life in which sin reigned. But burial, being a sign and seal which attests the reality of death, serves also to attest the reality of the resurrection: hence the significance which St. Paul attaches to Christ's burial, and to our baptismal burial with Him; compare Col. ii. 12: "buried with Him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with Him, through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised Him from the dead."

Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father. Glory is the manifestation of excellence, and "the glory of the Father" includes all the excellence of Deity that can be manifested: it is a more comprehensive attribute than "power," which is the kind of excellence especially manifested in the resurrection (ch. i. 4; 1 Cor. vi. 14; 2 Cor. xiii. 4; Eph. i. 19).

Compare our Lord's words concerning the resurrection of Lazarus: "Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?" (John xi. 40).

"Christ was raised by the glory of the Father, not as lacking strength Himself, for He is the Lord of all powers, but because both Christ and His Apostles ascribe what is above man's nature to the glory of the supreme nature" (Cyril in Cramer's 'Catena'). So Pearson shows with admirable force that "the raising of Christ is attributed to God the Father, but is not attributed to the Father alone." See 'Exposition of the Creed,' i. 301-304, and note on viii. 11.

By "newness of life" is meant "newness" of
For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death,

we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

the element of life, of the living animating principle, not the life that is lived day by day (Bios), but the life which liveth in us (ζωή). On this most important distinction, see Trench, "N. T. Syn.", and series, and the comment of Theodorus in Cramer's 'Catena' on this passage, that "we ought to exhibit the conduct proper to that life (εὐδεικνυόμενα τὸν μισθὸν τῆς ζωῆς εἰκόνος) into which we believe that we have been born through our baptism." The conduct of life (Bios) is here expressed by the figure of "walking," as in the similar passage Gal. v. 25. Compare also Eph. v. 2, "walk in love," and Col. iv. 5, "walk in wisdom." The life in Christ is a new life, and this quality is made prominent by the substantive form, "newness of life": compare ch. vii. 6; and 1 Tim. vi. 17: Winer, 'Gr.', § xxxiv. 2.

The "life" imparted, as is shown in v. 5, is that of the risen Christ in His glorified humanity, of which the Apostle writes to the Colossians (ch. iii. 3, 4), "Ye are dead (καὶ διαίομαι), and your life is (καὶ ἔχετε) hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory."

For an admirable comment on the doctrine of the passage, see Hooker, 'E. P.' B.'V. ch. livi. § 6. "The sons of God have God's own natural Son as a second Adam from heaven, whose race and progeny they are by spiritual and heavenly birth." § 7. "God made Ereb of the rib of Adam. And his Church be flemeth out of the very flesh, the very wounded and bleeding side of the Son of Man. His body crucified and His blood shed for the life of the world, are the true elements of that heavenly being which maketh us such as Himself is of whom we come."—ib. "Adam is in us as an original cause of our nature, and of that corruption of nature which causes death; Christ as the cause original of restoration to life. . . .

Christ having Adam's nature, as we have, but incorrupt, deriveth not nature but incorruption, and that immediately from His own person unto all that belong unto Him."

It will be seen in c. viii. 2, 9-11, that this new vital element is "the Spirit of life." In this world the "life" itself is hidden, but its effects are to be seen in our "walking after the Spirit" (viii. 4).

For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death."

The death and resurrection of Christ's natural body have their corresponding effects in His mystical body "the blessed company of all faithful people." The likeness of his death is their "death unto sin," and the likeness of his resurrection is their "new birth unto righteousness." These are both included in Baptism, by which the believer has been brought into living union with Christ's mystical body, has become one by birth and growth (σύμφορος) with it and with its essential properties, the likeness of his death and the likeness of his resurrection.

Some interpreters give a different turn to the passages "if we have been united with him by the likeness of his death." But this construction requires an arbitrary sense of St. Paul's words, which do not express, though they of course imply, a direct union of the believer with Christ Himself.

we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection.]

The A. V. gives the sense correctly, and it is hardly possible to express in English the lively turn of the Greek (ἀλλὰ καί): "Why then also of his resurrection we shall be." The likeness of his resurrection is the newness of life imparted to us, as the gift of God, wrought by the same divine power which raised Christ from the dead. "Because the work of his Spirit to those effects" (sanctification and life) "is in us prevented by sin and death possessing us before, it is of necessity that as well our present sanctification unto newness of life, as the future restoration of our bodies should presuppose a participation of the grace, efficacy, merit, or virtue of his body and blood" (Hooker, 'E. P.' lib. v. c. livi. § 10. "It is not required that we should die the death of the body as Christ did, but to die as Isaac did in the similitude and figure of his death; that is, we should die to sin. . . . And as it is not required that we should die the death of the body in Baptism; so it is not to be expected that we should be forthwith raised unto that glory, whereunto He rose, but to (sic) be raised unto a similitude or likeness of it, that is, unto newness of life, which is the first resurrection. And of this resurrection we shall not fail to be actual partakers by Baptism, if we be rightly implanted into the similitude of His death; for so the Apostle's words are " (Jackson, 'Creed,' xi. 17).

Thus the future ("we shall be") as in v. 2, is not to be understood of the future resurrection, but expresses that which is morally certain to take place as a consequence of having been united to Christ in his death (see also Alford's).
6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

This is the body of the old man that was crucified, that is to say, it is the natural body in its old condition, as the servant of sin.

This relation of servitude is distinctly expressed in the following words, "that we should no longer serve sin," and is fully developed in vv. 12-14, where nothing else than the natural body, and its members can possibly be meant. That which in Col. ii. 11 is called "the body of the flesh," because of the allusion to circumcision, is here called "the body of sin," because of the reference in this context to sin as a power reigning in the body (v. 21; vi. 1, 2, 13 ff.).

might be destroyed.] The body is to be destroyed, not in its material substance, but in its relation to sin: it is to be rendered as thoroughly inert, motionless, and dead, in relation to sin, as it is, by actual crucifixion, in relation to an earthly master. According to our Saviour's emphatic language, the right eye is to be plucked out, and the hand cut off from the service of sin.

7. For he that is dead is freed from sin.] In ver. 6, as in John viii. 34, the sinner is regarded as a servant or slave, who is crucified and dies with Christ, in order that he may no longer be enslaved to sin. This view of the believer's relation to sin is now confirmed by the general maxim that death puts an end to all bondage, and slaves

"once ferried o'er the wave

That parts us, are emancipate and loose'd."

(Cowper, 'The Task'.)

The only difficulty of the verse is due to the brevity with which St. Paul compresses into one sentence the illustration taken from common life, and its application to our spiritual state. "As the slave when dead is set free from his master, so he that has died with Christ is freed from sin."

The word δεινωμοσθείμα does not here mean "justified" in the dogmatic sense, but (as in Sirac. xxvi. 29: ὥς δικασθέσθημι κατήθεν τὸν ἀνθρώπον), "released and emancipated from sin" (Cyril in Cæcumenius); in Latin, "vindicatus in libertatem."

The context is full of this idea of emancipation from the slavery of sin (vv. 14, 17, 18, 22), and from the power of law (vii. 1-6): and both these ideas are found in like sequence in 1 Cor. vii. 21 and 29.

8-14. The Apostle now turns to a new
9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but

and peculiar feature of the case: the death, which delivers from the bondage of sin, is followed by a new life of liberty (ver. 8-11), which is not under sin's dominion, but is to be devoted to the service of a new master (ver. 12-14).

8. Now if we be dead with Christ, &c.

Read, "But if we died with Christ," &c. Since Christ's death has been to Him the prelude to a new life, we who have shared His death believe rightly that we are to share His life also.

That the life here spoken of is a gift bestowed by Christ's grace, is well shown by Calvin on ver. to. "If he were only reminding us of a duty, his mode of speaking would have been this: 'Since we have died with Christ, we ought in like manner to live with Him.' But the word 'believe' shows that he is discussing a doctrine of faith, founded upon promises, as if he had said, "Believers ought to hold it certain that by Christ's gift of grace (beneficio), they have so died according to the flesh, that the same Christ maintains the 'newness of life' even unto the end."

The future, "we shall live," is not to be limited to the final resurrection, but shows what will necessarily follow, after our participation in Christ's death.

9. Knowing, &c.

Our belief that we shall live with Christ rests on our knowledge of the fact (eidois), that He is alive for evermore: we could have no assurance that we shall live with Him, unless we knew that He can never cease to live. Therefore St. Paul repeats the same important truth still more emphatically: "death hath no more dominion" (literally, "is no longer master") over him. Others who had been raised from the dead returned to that common life of men, in which death still had dominion over them; but with Christ it was not so; "Do not think, because He died once, that He is mortal; for this very reason He abideth immortal. For His death has become the death of Death: and because He died, therefore He dieth no more; for even that death He died unto sin." (Chrysost.)

10. be died unto sin once] Christ was subjected for our sake to the power of sin, in so far that He endured all the evils that sin could inflict on one "who did no sin." This tyranny of sin (not His own, but ours) was permitted, through the counsel of God and Christ's willing obedience, to compass His death: "He humbled himself and became obedient unto death" (Phil. ii. 8).

But there sin's power over Him ceased, because the purpose, for which it was permitted, was accomplished. The sin of man, now that it has cost Him His life, can have no more power over Him: He died once for all "unto sin." i.e. His previous relation to sin came utterly to an end, He was withdrawn for ever from the power of sin, and therefore from the power of death. There are thus three points to be observed in Christ's relation to sin:

(1) His life, as a conflict with, and a triumph over, sin, making Him as man personally exempt from death.

(2) His voluntary surrender, for the sins of the world, of a life not forfeited by sin of His own.

(3) The effect of this voluntary submission to the chastisement of our sins, viz. His final separation from sin and death. Compare Hebrews vii. 27; ix. 25-28.

but in that he liveth, be liveth unto God.] Christ's earthly life was not exclusively a life unto God, but had also a certain relation of subjection to sin; but now the heavenly life "be liveth unto God," wholly and exclusively. In Him the manhood taken into God, and perfected by sufferings, lives only for its true end, "the glory of God." It can, therefore, be no more subject to the usurped tyranny of sin and death: He "dieth no more" (ver. 9).

We should remember that in the words, "be liveth," we have the testimony of one who had seen the Lord. In the light that shone round Him by Damascus, he had recognised first a Divine presence, "Who art thou, Lord?" and then came the astounding discovery that this living Lord was the persecuted Jesus, which liveth, and was dead, and is alive for evermore.

11. dead indeed unto sin.] The word "dead" (νεκρός) here describes a continued state of death: as Christ died once for all unto sin, so the believer, once united to Christ, must regard himself as dead to the dominion of sin for ever.

but alive unto God.] The believer's new life belongs wholly to God, and must be devoted entirely to His service: like Christ, whose life he shares, "be liveth unto God" (ver. 10), a life, which beginning on earth in holiness, shall continue in heaven in glory and honour and immortality.
alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

through Jesus Christ our Lord.] Read, “in Christ Jesus.” Conformity to the likeness both of Christ’s death unto sin, and of His life unto God, is to be attained not merely “through,” but “in,” Christ Jesus. It is the proper effect of “baptism into his death” (v. 4), but an effect which can only be accomplished in those who realise and appropriate the grace bestowed on them; i.e. who believe and account themselves to be dead unto sin, and alive unto God in Christ Jesus.

12, 13. The exhortation now advances from faith to practice: let your conduct prove that you really are such as you reckon yourselves to be, and that both negatively and positively.

Let not sin therefore reign.] Let it no more have dominion; for we died with Christ that we should no longer be sin’s slaves. “Being called to reign with Christ, it is absurd to choose to become the captives of sin; as if one should cast off the crown from his head, and wish to be a slave to some demonic beggar-woman clothed in rags.” (Chrysostom.)

in your mortal body.] The Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead, shall hereafter quicken also your mortal body; but as yet there is in its mortality a remnant or token of past bondage, and you are waiting for its redemption. Compare vii. 11, 23.

mortal body.] The only death from which Christ has not redeemed us, is the death—for a time—of the body; and the fact that the death of the body is still endured by man himself, gives more certainty and prominence to the truth that the death which we have already died in Christ is a death to the power of sin—a moral and sacramental death, which enfranchises our whole nature, body and soul, from sin’s dominion. For though death still reigns over the mortal body, the sting of death—which is sin—has ceased to reign, except through our own fault.

that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.] Read, with the oldest MSS., “that ye should obey the lusts thereof,” i.e. of the body. Lusts of the body there will be: for though the higher part of man—his spirit—is in Christ’s members already alive unto God (viii. 10), the body is still subject to death, and still exposed to the attacks of sin. See then that sin reign not in this mortal part, lest it should extend its usurpation thence to the immortal.

13. Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin.] Sin fights for the mastery; it calls out an army of the lusts of the body, and seeks to use the members, hand, eye, or tongue, as weapons wherewith the lusts may re-establish the rule of unrighteousness. “Instruments” (οἰκονύμα) mean weapons of war (John xviii. 3), i.e. as men raised to new life in Christ. See Note at end.

and your members, &c.] As in the prohibition, so here again in the positive exhortation, the more general thought is followed by the more special: yield yourselves to God, and yield your members as weapons of righteousness unto God.

14. For sin shall not have dominion over you.] The exhortation is confirmed by a promise: “Be not discouraged by your own weakness from giving yourselves up to God’s service: your effort shall not fail, ‘for sin shall not be master over you.’ Sin will tempt and harass and ensnare, it will still be a powerful, dangerous, and too often victorious, enemy: but it shall have no authority over you; it shall not be your lord and master, disposing of you at will, and, as it were, of right.” (vi. 9; vii. 1; xiv. 9; 2 Cor. i. 24; 1 Tim. vi. 15.)

for ye are not under the law.] “under law.” As the principle of a covenant of works, law is the strength of sin (1 Cor. xv. 56), and the occasion of its getting the mastery. But you have another Master, who rules not by law, but by grace. Christ Himself was “made under law,” in order that by His perfect obedience and atoning death, “be
15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered unto you.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

might redeem them that were under law, that we might receive the adoption of sons" (Gal. iv. 5). In other words, "that we might be brought under grace," and so being freely pardoned, justified, quickened in Christ, and made one with Him, might be no longer servants of sin, but sons of God.

15. What then? Are we to turn the grace of our God into lasciviousness (Jude 4)? Are we to sin in hope of impunity, "because we are not under law, but under grace"? "God forbid."

16. The suggestion indignantly rejected in v. 15, is now refuted by an appeal to truths which cannot be unknown to the reader; first, that he who habitually yields himself up to a slavish obedience, is in fact the slave of him whom he obeys (John viii. 34); and, further, that "no man can serve two masters," but must be the servant "either of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness."

Observe that St. Paul puts the only two alternatives into the sharpest opposition by the aid of particles (ἐither, ὥστε), which are found nowhere else in the New Testament (see Donaldson’s, Gr. Gr. § 552).

The end, unto which the servant of sin is brought, is "death:" not here bodily death, for that is a result of Adam’s sin, from which not even the servants of God are exempt, nor merely moral death, which is sin itself, but eternal death. Compare vv. 21–23.

"Obedience" is used first in a general sense, but is limited the second time to the special sense of "obedience to God," and the end of such obedience is that "righteousness," which is equivalent to life eternal (i. 17) and so stands opposed to "death."

17. The general truth stated in v. 16, is now applied to the Christians at Rome in their past and present state, the happy contrast being vividly expressed in a burst of thanksgiving to God: "ardor pectoris apostolice" (Bengel).

Both the thought and form of expression are similar to Luke xv. 23, "let us eat and be merry, for this my son was dead, and is alive again." Compare Matt. xi. 25, and see Note at end of chapter.

but ye have obeyed," "but obeyed." This simpler and more exact rendering brings the latter clause into closer connexion with the former, to which it allows its due emphasis. "Thanks be to God for your happy change of service: ye were servants of sin, but became obedient to the Gospel."

St. Paul's thankfulness that they became God's servants, is heightened by the remembrance that they were servants of sin.

from the heart." "For ye were not compelled nor forced, but willingly, and with eagerness turned away from sin." This serves at once for praise and for reproof; for, after coming of your own accord, without any compulsion, what forgiveness, what excuse, could you yet, for returning to your former state?" (Chrysostom.)

that form of doctrine which was delivered unto you.] "that form of doctrine unto which ye were delivered," i.e. by God.

The word ἔκακος is not uncommonly used of giving a child over to instruction. (Herodot. i. 73; Plat. 'Legg.' 811 E.)

"the form of doctrine" means, in general, the teaching to which the Romans had been given over by Divine Providence on becoming Christians. But the word "form" (vìdos) has been variously interpreted:

(1) Christian teaching as "a mould into which we are put to be fashioned to its shape." (Besa.)

(2) The Pauline "type of doctrine" (ii. 16; xvi. 25; Gal. ii. 2), which had been prevalent from the first at Rome. (Meyer.)

(3) The Gospel as a definite form of teaching distinct from others, Jewish, heathen, &c.

(4) "The form of sound words" (2 Tim. i. 13), or fixed and formal summary of Christian truth in which converts were instructed.

(5) Christian teaching as a rule or pattern of holy living. (Chrysostom, Gennadius, Ecumenius.)

The last sense is the simplest, and agrees best with St. Paul's use of ὑνοσ (1 Thess. i. 7; 2 Thess. iii. 9; Phil. iii. 17; 1 Tim. iv. 12; Tit. ii. 7), and with the context, which indicates obedience to moral and practical rules.

18. Being then made free from sin.] "And
I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

[1 Gr. to righteousness.]

The practical reason of my speaking about servitude is this, to exhort you to devote yourselves as fully to the life of righteousness as you did to the life of sin.

Comp. v. 13. Sin is here presented under a double aspect, as "uncleanness" defining the man, and "iniquity" (transgression) violating God's law: the subjection of the members to these ruling forces leads "unto iniquity" as the practical result.

Unto holiness.] unto sanctification. Holiness is the moral quality to be acquired: but "sanctification" (hagiasmos) includes the sanctifying act or process, as well as its result; see v. 22; 1 Cor. i. 31; 1 Thess. iv. 3, 4, 7; 2 Thess. ii. 13; 1 Tim. ii. 15; Heb. xii. 14; 1 Pet. i. 2.

Reason (γιορτή) for the exhortation of v. 19, drawn from the results of either service.

For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness. I say what is moderate and within the power of men in general (ἀπάντησις, 1 Cor. x. 13): for I only bid you render such an obedience to righteousness as you formerly gave to sin.

(2) Photius, who is followed by most modern commentators, connects the clause with v. 18, as explaining the strong expression, "ye were made slaves" (ἐδοχώθητε): "this is plain language taken from the common life of men, and not altogether an adequate description of your allegiance to Him "Whose service is perfect freedom": but I use it "because of the infirmity of your flesh" (a), which makes the life of righteousness seem to you at first painful and irksome, as a kind of bondage (Photius), or (b), which is a hindrance to your spiritual discernment. I therefore speak of "servitude" (σεβομένης), a thing belonging to the common life of men, to help you to understand that you are bound to devote yourselves entirely to God's service.

In this last interpretation, (which is rightly adopted by Bengel, Meyer, &c.) "the flesh," i.e. the condition of the natural man (1 Cor. ii. 14; iii. 1) is the source of a weakness of understanding in things spiritual.

On "the flesh," see note on vii. 5.

As ye have yielded (γεγένατε) your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity
v. 22—23.]

ROMANS. VI.

22. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

them is death." Your only fruit consisted in the sinful gains or pleasures, of which you are now ashamed, because you have become aware of their real nature, that they lead to that death which is the opposite of "everlasting life" (v. 22).

Either interpretation yields a good sense, but the former construction is the more natural and simple.

22. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God.] A double contrast to their former state described in v. 20: emancipated from sin's service, they have been made servants to God. The same strong word as in v. 18 (δουλεύω) is used again; but instead of servants "to righteousness," he now says "servants to God," thinking already of Him as the Giver of everlasting life.

ye have your fruit unto holiness.] "Unto sanctification" see note on ἁγιάζω, v. 19.

The first fruit of dedication to God's service is not here described as "sanctification," but as something that tends unto sanctification." This is either the baptismal grace of "newness of life" (v. 4), or its product, that practice of good works which promotes and establishes "sanctification." Compare "the fruit of the Spirit," Gal. v. 22.

and the end everlasting life.] You have your present fruit unto sanctification, and you have also as the end of your service "everlasting life." see on ii. 7, v. 21. It is clear that "everlasting life" being here called "the end" is regarded in its future aspect: and yet St. Paul says, "ye have it" now, i.e. ye have it as a future, but assured result, the consummation of your present life in Christ.

23. For the wages of sin is death.] "Wages" (διώκω) properly, as in Luke iii. 14; 1 Cor. ix. 7; 2 Cor. xi. 8, a soldier's rations or pay. Having spoken in vv. 12, 13, of sin reigning, and of weapons, he continues the figure of military service. But διώκω means simply "a gift of grace," not a military donative (Tert. "De Resurrectione Carnis," 47; Chrys.)

but the gift of God.] Sin only pays hard wages, but God gives of His free grace what no service could earn.

eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

God's gift of eternal life is not only bestowed through Christ, but is in Christ as its abiding source, and can only be enjoyed in union with Him (see 2 Tim. i. 1, 9, and Note on viii. 1).

The doctrine of sanctification in this chapter, and that of justification in ch. v., both end in the same triumphal conclusion.

ADDITIONAL NOTES


6. the body of sin.] The interpretations are manifold.

1. "The whole mass of sin." But σῶμα in the sense of "mass" is applied only to material things, as water or metal (Aristot. Probl. xxiii. 7, § 1, xxiv. 9, § 3), not to things immaterial, as virtue or vice.

2. "The essence, or substance, of sin" (Baur), as Aristotel calls the Entelehyne the σῶμα, or substance of rhetorical proof ('Rhet.' i. 1. § 3).

3. A mere periphrasis for "sin" (Photius, Schöttgen, &c.). But in this usage σῶμα is applied only to persons and only in poetry. None of these three senses suit the context or St. Paul's usage.

4. "Sin represented as having a body," in order to carry out the metaphor of the crucifixion of the old man (Olshausen).

5. "Sin represented as a body made up of many members," in accordance with the figurative interpretation of "the old man" (v. 6), and with Col. iii. 5 (but see note there). In this interpretation, "the body of sin" is only another name for "the old man," or rather for its concrete form (Hodge: so Chrysostom, Philippi, &c.).

6. In opposition to all these figurative interpretations we take "the body of sin" to mean the natural body so far as it is the servant of sin (Meyer, De Wette, Alford).

Objection (a): The body as the seat of sin cannot be meant, because this can only be annihilated (κατάργησθαι) by natural death.

Answer (1). This objection does not apply to "the body as servant of sin," which is here St. Paul's view as shown by μετὰ δολίνων.

Answer (2). The sense assigned to -
CHAPTER VII.

1 No law hath power over a man longer than he liveth. 4 But we are dead to the law.

2 Ye is not the law sin, 12 but holy, just, good, 16 as I acknowledge, who am grieved because I cannot keep it.

KNOW ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.

CHAP. VII.—DELIVERANCE FROM THE BONDAGE OF LAW AND OF SIN.

1-6. The union of the believer with Christ is compared to a second marriage. This general idea naturally divides itself into three parts: (1) the dissolution of the former marriage; (2) the new marriage; (3) its fruits.

The believer, released from the law by dying in fellowship with the death of Christ, is free to enter into a new union with the risen Christ, in order to bring forth the fruits of holiness to God's honour.

1. Know ye not.] Rather, Or are ye ignorant, brethren, for I am speaking to men that know law. On the meaning of "know," i. e. understand (γνωσθαι), see note on vi. 6. "Or," omitted in A. V. here, as in vi. 3, introduces a necessary alternative: either you admit the truth of my assertion, that you are no longer under the law (vi. 14 ff.), but have been set free from sin and become servants to God having your fruit unto holiness (vi. 22), or else you must be ignorant of what I suppose you to know, the nature of law, namely, that the law has power over the person subject to it for his lifetime, and no longer. This principle is not confined to the Mosaic law, either in fact or by the terms here used; yet it is clear, from the whole tenor of the argument, that St. Paul is thinking of the Mosaic law, and assumes that it is known to his readers. Compare Gal. iv. 21.

2. The law of marriage affords the most complete and striking illustration of the general principle that the power of law lasts as long as life lasts, and no longer; it
3 So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she also serves to introduce the comparison, in v. 4, of the union between Christ and the believer to a new marriage.

is bound by the law to her husband so long as she liveth.] Rather, Is bound to the living husband by law (see 1 Cor. vii. 39).

loosed.] "Discharged:" it is most important to mark the identity of the word (eardiphi) here rendered "loosed" and in v. 6 "delivered:" it is found also in Gal. v. 4, where it is vigorously rendered by Wyclif: "ye are voided away from Christ." On the death of her husband the wife ceases to be a wife; her status as such is abolished and annulled, in the eye of the law; she dies to the law, and is thus discharged from its prohibition of another marriage.

"The law of the husband" means the law concerning the husband. Particular laws are constantly thus defined by the genitive of the person or thing to which they refer, as "the law of the leper" (Lev. xiv. 3), "the law of the Nazarite" (Num. vi. 13). See also Num. v. 29, where the LXX have the same Greek words which St. Paul uses here to describe the wife (龚αρατος γυνη).

Thus "the law of the husband," includes all that the law of God, as revealed in the O. T., sanctions or forbids concerning marriage; its natural basis is the original Divine institution (Gen. i. 27; ii. 21-24); its formal enactment is the Seventh Commandment; its interpretation the written, or unwritten, regulations concerning adultery (Lev. x. 10); divorce (Deut. xxiv. 1; Matt. v. 27-32; xix. 3-9), and remarriage (Deut. xxiv. 4; Gen. xxv. 1; Ruth i. 9).

3. So then if, [&c.] Rather, So then while her husband liveth she shall be called an adulteress if she be married to another man: but if her husband die, she is free from the law, that she be no adulteress, though she be married to another man. In this order, the parallelism of the original is clearly seen, and each clause has its due emphasis. The words "that she be no adulteress" express not merely the result, but the purpose, of the freedom consequent upon the husband's death; and this purpose is the most essential and significant part of the analogy, as we see in the application (v. 4), "that ye should be married to another."

4. Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead.] Rather, So that, my brethren, ye also were put to death to the law through the body of Christ, in order that ye might be married to another.

"So that" (ὅτε) introduces a consequence of that general principle of law, which has just been exemplified in vv. 1-3. The address "my brethren," repeated so soon after v. 1, is suited to an argument which primarily concerns the Jewish Christians, St. Paul's brethren according to the flesh.

"Ye also" means "ye as well as the wife in the illustration."

The phrase "were put to death" (ἐπανατάφη) indicates a violent death, namely the crucifixion of the old man with Christ (vi. 6) for thereby the believer himself died to the law, by which he was previously bound. Compare Gal. ii. 19, "I through law died to law, that I might live unto God. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me."

St. Paul's application of the figure is quite clear, if we follow his own guidance.

The wife represents that inmost self, or personality, which survives all changes, moral or physical, and retains its identity under all conditions of existence.

The first husband is "our old man" (vi. 6), and as long as "the old man" was alive, we were under the law. The death of the first husband is the crucifixion of "our old man" with Christ. The wife set free by her husband's death, and herself made dead to the law of the husband (καταρρηκται ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου τοῦ ἱδρυμ, v. 2), answers to the soul set free by the crucifixion of "the old man," and itself thereby made dead to the law (ἐπανατάφη τῷ νόμῳ, v. 4; καταρρηκτήμεν ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου, v. 6).

The purpose of the freedom thus acquired is the same in your case, as in hers, "that ye might be married to another, to him who was raised from the dead."

The interpretation of the passage thus turns upon the recognition of the fact, that St. Paul here already introduces a distinction (which we shall find running through the whole chapter), between the παλαιὸς ἰδρυς, and its successive moral states,
married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death.

6 But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve that which is the passions of sins i.e. the passive impressions or affections (Gal.v.24), which are naturally excited by their proper objects, and if unrestrained move us to sinful actions: see Butler's Analysis, P. i. c. 5, p. 122.

which were by the law.] So long as “we were in the flesh,” united to “our old man,” the law had dominion over us (v. 1). How the sinful passions are occasioned by the law, St. Paul explains in v. 7, 8. ..did work in our members.] The passive affections of the soul become in their turn motives working on the will, and through it in the members (eye, hand, tongue, &c.), “to bring forth fruit unto death,” i.e. to cause us so to act as to subject ourselves to the power of death, death being understood as in v. 21. Others compare Jas. i. 15, and make the sinful affections themselves bear fruit. See the Additional Note on the word ἐνεπιτρέποντο at the end of the chapter.

5. But now we are delivered from the law.] Rather: But now we have been discharged from the law: the Greek word being the same as in v. 2, “She is loosed (discharged) from the law of her husband.”

that being dead, wherein we were held.] Rather: by dying to that wherein we were held: see note at the end.

When “our old man was crucified with Christ,” we ourselves, like the wife in the figure, died to the law (v. 4), which had hitherto had dominion over us by virtue of the unhappy union between ourselves and our old sinful nature.

As the Apostle, in girding himself up to the great argument which is to follow (v. 7-25), has shown in a remarkable allegory by what right and in what manner we are delivered from the dominion of the law, it was natural for him, when indicating here in v. 6 the exact thesis of this most important discussion, to declare, in language derived from the preceding allegory, not only the fact of our liberation from the bondage of the law, but also by what right and reason we are liberated, namely, “by having died to the law in which we were held” (Reiche, ‘Comm. Crit.’)
in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known desire, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

8 But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all

rather, Nay, I knew not, save through law: for of lust also I had no knowledge, if the law had not said, Thou shalt not lust.

To the false notion just rejected, St. Paul now opposes his own experience of the real effect of the law, which is to expose sin in its true nature. The direct opposition is well expressed in A. V. by the emphatic "Nay." Compare iii. 31, vii. 13, xi. 11, in all which passages, as here, αἰδηθ introduces the contrary notion to that which is rejected in μή γενέσθαι.

"through law." Throughout this passage St. Paul's purpose is to vindicate the Law of Moses (αὐτὸν νόμον): yet when he is stating a principle common to law as law, he omits the article, as in this clause; compare ψυχ. 8, 9, and iii. 20.

The conditional rendering, "I had not known," is unnecessary: St. Paul states the fact that he came to know sin as sin, only through the law.

This he confirms (γινώσκει) by further (τοῦτο) explaining that he had no practical knowledge of lust until the law forbade it, but sin took occasion thereby, and brought about lust. "Even without the law there is desire in man, but not yet in the ethical definite character of desire after the forbidden" (Meyer).

The commandment selected is not merely a sample of the rest, but contains a principle that underlies and embraces them all, a principle which, by forbidding the indulgence of desire, provokes a sinful opposition of the will.

Two kinds of knowledge are here expressed by two different Greek Verbs: the former (γινώσκει) is applied to, the abstract metaphysical notion of sin, the latter (δίδομι) to the sensible experience of strong and perverse desire as a fact first brought under observation, when the dormant propensity was roused by the prohibition of the law. The latter verb is often best rendered by "wist," as in Luke ii. 49; Joh. v. 13.

8. The mysterious perversity of man's will ("Neminem in vetustum semper, cupimusque negata," is provoked to opposition by the commandment: an occasion, or rather a start, and impulse (αὐτόν γενέσθαι) is thus given, of which sin, the power lurking unknown in the heart, takes advantage, and works through the commandment to produce every lust which that forbids. See Prov. ix. 17, and note.
manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead.
9 For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.
10 And the commandment, which

concupiscence.] Rather "lust" as in v. 7.
The introduction in A. V. of different words "lust," "covet," "concupiscence," obscures the clear sense of the original. By "lust" (ἐρωτικός) is meant, not the natural desire in itself, but the perversity of this desire into a conscious opposition to a righteous law.

For without the law sin was dead.] Rather, "For without the law sin is dead." The statement is expressed in the most general terms as an universal truth, though St. Paul has in view no other application of it, except to the law of Moses. Compare iii. 20, iv. 15, v. 13.

Sin is called "dead," not as being simply unknown (Aug.), but because, though born with us, it is seemingly still-born, till roused and stimulated into activity. So in Jas. ii. 26, "faith without works is dead also."

9. For I was alive without the law once.] Rather, "But I was alive without law once." The emphatic "But" stands out already in contrast to the "sin that dwelleth in me," v. 20. I was alive, St. Paul means, not only in the full enjoyment of natural life, but in all the freedom of an untroubled conscience.

But, when? Not in paradise (Theodore), nor in the time before Moses (Chrysostom), for St. Paul is not speaking of the human race personified, and therefore not of Adam or the Patriarchs, but of his own experience: nor yet in a pre-existent state (Celsus and Hilgenfeld), of which the Scripture knows nothing. If any definite time is indicated, the Apostle's thoughts seem to turn back to his early years, with their short dream of "Delight and liberty, the simple creed Of childhood." (Wordsworth.)

This moral unconsciousness is not limited to childhood: it may pass undisturbed into the form of legal righteousness, as in the rich young ruler, who, when brought face to face with the Commandments, could say, "All these have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?" This seems to have been for a time the case with St. Paul, who tells us that he was "as touching the righteousness that is in the law blameless" (Phil. iii. 6).

but when the commandment came.] In this state "without law," the specific commandment already mentioned in v. 7, "Thou shalt not lust," had not yet presented itself to the individual conscience as a restriction of natural propensity: but when it came as the word of God quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, suddenly all was changed.
was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

11 For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

13 Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which

of God's holy will, forbidding all impure and unholy lusts. It is "just," or righteous, as demanding only an obedience which, if perfectly rendered, would constitute man's righteousness. It is "good" in its aim, as tending to man's temporal and eternal good, being ordained "unto life" for them that obey it. This interpretation of "good," is made certain by the way in which St. Paul explains and vindicates, in v. 13, his assertion that the commandment is "good."

13. The Apostle has given, in v. 13, the first side (μέτρον) of an intended contrast between the law and sin; but, instead of completing the antithesis at once ("but sin . . ."), he "goes off" at the word "good," to meet an objection which might be urged against the goodness of the commandment, as an inference from his statement in v. 10, "the commandment which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death."

Was then that whibich is good made death unto me? The answer to this question supplies what was at first intended to form the second part of the contrast between the law (v. 13) and sin: God forbid! But sin (became death unto me) in order that it might be shown to be sin (cf. v. 7), by working death to me through that which is good.

The Divine purpose in allowing sin to work death through the law is, that sin may exhibit itself in all its hatefulness, in perverting what is good to evil. This purpose is repeated with great force in a parallel clause, which forms an emphatic and solemn close: "that sin might become exceeding sinful through the commandment."

"Become" is stronger than "appear," in working death sin becomes in act, and in objective reality, what it has always been according to its nature (see ii. 4, and Meyer thereon).

"Observe the bitter, climactic, sharply and vividly compressed delineation of the gloomy picture" (Meyer). But observe also that God's law is vindicated, and the guilt of man's death rightly fixed on sin; this is the only ray that as yet shines through the darkness. But the light grows stronger in the distinction between "my true self," and the "sin that dwelleth in me," which forms the subject of the next paragraph.
is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful.

14. For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

15. For that which I do I allow.  

14–25. St. Paul now confirms (γὰρ) his vindication of the law and exposure of sin by a profound analysis of the operation of sin in man; as his argument in v.7–13 was based on the distinction, "not the commandment, but sin taking occasion by the commandment," so here it is based on the deeper distinction, "Not I, but sin that dwelleth in me."

"Hitherto he had contrasted himself, in respect of his whole being, with the divine law; now, however, he begins to describe a discord which exists within himself" (Tholuck).

The true self vindicates the law, even while indwelling sin resists it.

14. For we know that the law is spiritual.] See Additional Note on ἀδικία, Introduction, § 9.

According to the reading now generally accepted, the word here rendered "carnal" (σαρκικός) does not mean "fleshy" in tendency, but "made of flesh." The "flesh," i.e. the unspiritual portion of man, has become so predominant over the rest, that it virtually forms the substance of his whole nature, moral as well as physical: "I am of flesh."

This is the Pauline mode of expressing, That which is born of the flesh, is flesh (John iii. 6). The Pauline expression of "That which is born of the Spirit is spirit," follows in c. viii. (Meyer).

sold under sin.] Compare 1 Kings xxi. 25. "Abab, which did sell himself (LXX was sold) to work wickedness;" and Isaiah i. 1, "Behold for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves (LXX to your iniquities were ye sold)."

The man is thus described as having been brought under the dominion of sin as completely as a slave under the power of the master to whom he has been sold.

A slave that has been sold is more wretched than a home-born slave; and man is said to have been sold, because he had not been a slave from the beginning (Bengel). Slavery to sin is not the rightful condition of our nature. The reason for using the passive form rather than the active "I have sold myself," is seen in v. 23.

15–17. The statement, "I am sold under sin," is now confirmed (γὰρ) by an explanation of the nature and cause of this moral bondage. The consequent relation of the true self (ἡσυχία) to the law is seen in v. 16, and its relation to sin in v. 17.

15. For that which I do I allow not.] Rather, For that which I perform, I know not. The slave obeys his master without heeding the result of the act which he performs; so "I," says the Apostle, do not discern the true nature and moral bearing of that which I perform at sin's bidding. The moral sense is not wholly lost or inactive, but it is confused and overpowered, and so rendered ineffective. "I am in darkness, I am dragged along, I am abused, I am tripped up, I know not how." (Chrysostom.)

Calvin rightly prefers the meaning, "I know, I understand, I recognise," to that which is expressed in A. V., "I allow." The margin has "I know." Approval may accompany recognition, but it is never directly expressed by the word here used.
not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.
16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.

17 Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.
18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with

"For he that is mastered by pleasure, or intoxicated with the passion of anger, has not a clear discernment of the sin. But, after the subsidence of the passion, he receives the perception (αἰσθησία) of the evil." (Theodoret.)

The total suppression of a slave's conscience is well illustrated by such passages as Plautus, 'Capt.' II. i. 6, "Indigna digna habenda sunt, herus quæ facit;" Petronius, 'Satyr.' 75, "Non turpe, quod dominus jubet;" Seneca, 'Contr.' iv., "Impudicitas in ingenuo crimine est, in servo necessitas, in liberto officium;" and Pindar, 'FFragm.' 87, ήνη δ' ἀνάγκη πάν καλόν, his excuse for the female slaves dedicated to the service of Venus Urania at Corinth. See Boësier, 'La Religion romaine,' II. 146, and Allard, 'Les Esclaves chrétiens,' p. 156.

"For what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that I do." The A. V. obscures the meaning in two ways:

1. By throwing the negative of the former sentence from the first place to the last, and thereby excluding the relative clause from its influence. Vv. 15-17 describe the course of evil action to which the will does not consent; in ver. 18 we come to the will to do good which cannot fulfil itself in act.

2. By using the same word "do" to translate two different Greek verbs, of which the former (ποιεῖν, "ago," Vulg.) implies a conscious pursuit and aim in the person acting, while the latter (μακεν, "facio," Vulg.) describes merely the outward or objective act, which may be mechanical and unconscious: see i. 32.

Both these verbs refer to the action in its process, while that which is used in the first clause of the verse (καταγγέλω, "operor," "perticio" v. 18, Vulg.) refers to the completion or result.

A paraphrase may now help to make the Apostle's meaning clearer to the English reader. "I am in bondage under sin: for like a slave I perform what sin enforces, without recognising the true nature of the act: for I follow not in practice any good impulse of my will, but in a blind unreasoning way I do that which in my conscience I hate." The natural conscience even in heathens uttered similar declarations:

καὶ κατὰνα ἰννοὶ οἱ βραχοὶ κατὰνα ὠτὸς τὰς κρής τῶν ἑκάτων ἐκτὸς, (Euripides, 'Medea,' 1074.)

and—
"Video meliora proboque, Deteriora sequor."—Ov. 'Met.' vii. (Wordsworth.)

16. If then I do.] Rather, "But if I do:" a further step in the argument. The emphasis is on "I would not," which expresses a positive unwillingness or dislike, corresponding to "I hate" in v. 15. But why does St. Paul not retain the same phrase, "I hate"? Because the strong utterance of his own vivid experience might not be fully appropriated by all; and the more measured phrase thus forms a surer, and yet sufficient basis for his inference: if I do evil unwillingly and with dislike, I in my moral will or conscience consent to the law that forbids the evil, and affirm "that it is good." The word rendered "good" (καλόν) is not the same as in v. 12: here it is not the beneficent aim of the law which was ordained unto life, but its moral beauty and excellence that is asserted. Compare note on 1 Pet. ii. 12.

17. Now then it is no more I that do it.] "But now it is no more I that perform it." As v. 16 determines the relation in which I as a whole stand to the law, so this verse concludes that the real agent in bringing the evil to completion is not the true "I" (τῷ ἐμῷ expressed) "but the sin that dwelleth in me." Thus the emphatic "I," the true self, the innermost conscience, is distinguished from another "me" in which sin dwells, and which is more closely defined in the next verse as "my flesh."

Augustine's words in reference to the struggle between flesh and spirit in the process of his conversion are equally applicable here: "I was myself in both; but more myself in what I approved, than in what I disagreed," Confess. viii. 5 (Tholuck).

It is now almost universally admitted that the expressions "now," and "no more," are not temporal, distinguishing the speaker's present condition from his former state before grace, but logical: "this being the case ("now"), there is no room left to say it is I." Compare 1 Cor. xiv. 6; xv. 20; and Rom. vii. 20; xi. 6; Gal. iii. 18 (Lightfoot).

18-20. The power of sin has been shown in vv. 15-17 from the inability of the true self to hinder what it disapproves; the same is shown now from the inability of the true self to carry out into action what it desires.
me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.

19 For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not,

it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:

The parallelism of the two arguments is marked by the repetition of the same conclusion in the same words in v. 17 and v. 20.

18. For I know that in me, (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: For I know that there dwelleth not in me, that is in my flesh, any good. A proof of the reality of indwelling sin (v. 17) is furnished by experience of the absence of good in a moral being, if good dwells not, sin must dwell (Lange).

for to will is present with me.] It is essential to a just interpretation of the passage that the Apostle's language concerning the will towards good should be weighed with moderation and candour. He does not use a word expressing the deliberate and final choice which is immediately followed by action (προοφισθα, 2 Cor. ix. 7); nor a word expressing a conscious preference and purpose (ζητομαυ): but ὥθω, which simply means "I am willing."

The connection, however (especially such a word as ὑπομαυ), implies something more than a cold assent of the understanding. The sense of moral discord has been roused: the inward anguish, so vividly painted in v. 24, could not arise without some emotion of the will, some kind of feeble longing and wishing for good, which yet is very different from the earnest decisive willingness which passes at once into action.

is present with me.] Lit. "Lies before me," ready at hand. St. Paul takes a survey, as it were, of his equipment for the moral warfare: the will (such as already described) is there present and ready, but the performance not.

but how to perform that which is good I find not.] If we omit "I find" (ἵππισκα) with modern critics, we must render thus: but not to perform that which is good.

19. Proof that the will is not accompanied by the power of performance (τῷ δὲ κατηγόρῳ τῷ καλῷ ὡς, ὦ, v. 18). This verse, however, is not a mere repetition of v. 15, as the description of the inefficiency of the will is here intensified by a distinct consciousness of the moral nature of the objects presented to it, both of the good that is left undone and of the evil that is done.

20. See notes on v. 17. If the emphatic ἐγὼ in the first clause is retained, with Tischendorf but not Tregelles, it must be taken with ὥθω. Now if I do that which "I would not," it is no more "I" that perform it.

21–23. The results of vss. 14–20 are now summed up.

21. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.] Rather: "I find therefore this law for me who wish to do the good, that to me the evil lies close at hand." 'This law,' literally 'the law,' i.e. the constant rule of experience, that the evil is at hand.

"This experience is very significantly called a "law," because it expresses not an accidental and transient phenomenon, but a necessary and constant one." (Philippi.)

"The law" here meant is substantially the "law in the members" (v. 23), being defined as "the law—that to me the evil lies close at hand." This definition accounts for the use of the Article, and the rule that ὤνομος means the Mosaic Law, except where its meaning is otherwise defined by accompanying words, is fully satisfied.

This interpretation is strongly confirmed by v. 22, where "the law," in the usual sense, is called "the law of God," to distinguish it from this other law in man. The repetition of the emphatic Pronoun, and its unusual position in the first clause (τῷ ὥθῳ ἔμω), give great prominence to the thought that the self-same "I" is the subject of these opposite experiences, the wish to do good and the intrusion of evil.

Augustine's words in reference to the struggle between flesh and spirit in the process of his conversion are equally applicable here: "I was myself in both; but more myself in what I approved, than in what I disapproved." (Confessions, viii. 5 (Tholuck).

The A. V. expresses the same general sense, but without due regard to the exact order and construction of the original. See other interpretations of this obscure and much disputed passage in the note at end of chapter.

22. 23. The moral discord just described is now more fully illustrated by a vivid picture of both its opposite elements.

22. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man.] The rendering needs no improvement: attempts have been made to
23. But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

24. O wretched man that I am!

express the meaning of the compound verb more closely: "I rejoice with the law of God" (Meyer); "I rejoice with others in the law" (Van Hengel); "I rejoice with myself in the law" (Philippi). But these are doubtful and unnecessary refinements, not demanded by the usage of the word: see Eurip. 'Rhesus,' 938, 'Hippolytus,' 1286.

This "delight in the law" differs from "consent," v. 16, as belonging to the sphere of feeling rather than of intellect: it thus expresses a stronger moral sympathy with what is good.

the inward man.] It is now admitted by all candid and competent interpreters that this expression is not in itself equivalent to "the new man" (Eph. iv. 24, Col. iii. 10), or "new creature" (2 Cor. v. 17, Gal. vi. 15): it indicates the "mind" (vōis, v. 23 and v. 25), "the spirit of man" (1 Cor. ii. 11) as contrasted with "the outward man," the body or flesh (4 Cor. iv. 16). This "hidden man of the heart" (1 Pet. iii. 4), without which man would not be man, is the spiritual, willing, reasoning being, in which the regenerating power of the Holy Ghost begins to form "the new man," Eph. iii. 16. The context only can decide whether "the inward man" is regarded in his natural or in his regenerate state.

23. another law.] Rather, "a different law:" the word (τρεπος) not only distinguishes but often contrasts, as in Gal. i. 6. This other law stands opposed to "the law of God," and "the members" in which it has its seat to "the inward man.

the law of my mind.] What he had before called the will to do good, he has here named "the law of the mind:" which law of the mind in its own proper action agrees with and consents unto the "law of God." On the other hand, the impulses (appetites) of the body and the desires of the flesh he calls the "law in the members" (Origen).

The "mind" (vōis) is here as usually in the N. T. the moral reason, the faculty by which good and evil are discerned, the willing as well as the thinking faculty: "when by the divine law man has attained to a consciousness of good and evil, there arises in him a conscious will for the good: ... the subject of this will is his vōis." (Delitzsch, "Biblical Psychology," p. 212.)

The vōis is properly an organ of the ἀνατρίχει, a part of man's spiritual nature; but in that warfare of which the Apostle speaks it is conquered and taken captive to "the law of sin that is in the members," and so is termed "the mind of the flesh" (Col. ii. 18).


"See," says Photius, in 'Eccumenius, "how we are set round with laws diametrically opposite. For the first pair flow in upon us from without, the one inviting to do good, i.e., the evangelical law (the law of God), the other calling us aside to evil, that is the conflicting law of the wicked one. But the other pair are within and occupy (ἐνώπιον) the soul; one the law of the mind implanted in us by the Creator and leading towards the better course, but the fourth, which is also 'the law of sin,' is hardened in us because of the habituation to sin."

This interpretation, and the more recent modifications of it, are inconsistent with St. Paul's expression "the law of sin which is in my members," the last words of which show beyond all question that "the law of sin" is no other than "the law in the members" above mentioned.

It was necessary to characterise this law according to its true nature, and therefore instead of "bringing me into captivity to itself," he has written "to the law of sin which is in my members." (August. de Nupt. i. 30: 50 Meyer, Philippi, Tholuck, Photius).

The objection of Van Hengel, that the law which leads man captive cannot be the same to which he is made captive, is answered by the very figure employed, a warrior making his enemy a captive to himself.

The variation ἐν τῷ νόμῳ τῆς ἁμαρίας, accepted by Tischendorf and Tregelles on indecisive testimony, makes no greater difference in the sense than "captivity in the law" instead of "captive to the law."

24. The misery caused by this inward conflict and captivity wrings from the heart a wail of anguish and a cry for help. The question, "Who shall deliver me," expresses not only eager longing, but also an almost hopeless feeling of the difficulty of finding a deliverer.

the body of this death.] The other rendering, "this body of death," destroys the emphasis laid upon the nature of "this death," i.e., of the death which I feel within me, and which I have just described: the desire is not to be released from the body simply as being mortal, but from the body as the seat of this shameful and miserable death of sin (vv. 9-11, 13, 23). See note at end.
who shall deliver me from the body of this death?

25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

The parts of this verse answer closely to the preceding:

"I am a captive. Who shall rescue me?"
"Captive to the law of sin in my members. Who shall deliver me from the body by which I am enslaved to this deadly power of sin?"

25. I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. This is to be preferred as both the shortest reading (χάρις instead of εὐχαριστεῖν, or ἡ χάρις τοῦ Θεοῦ), and the one which best explains the origin of the others: see note at end.

The language is abrupt, and the sense incompletely expressed, no direct answer being given to the question, "Who shall deliver me?" This abruptness is, however, in itself a proof of genuineness, answering as it does most naturally to the outburst of anguish in v. 24, and to the sudden revulsion of feeling with which the Apostle turns to view his actual present state in contrast to his former misery.

The cause of thankfulness is not expressed, which is "quite after the manner of lively emotion" (Meyer); but a thanksgiving offered to God "through Jesus Christ" implies that He is the author of the redemption so vehemently desired.

So then with the mind I myself, &c. It is better to keep the order of the original, which puts an emphasis on αὐτός ἐγώ, "So then I myself with the mind," &c. If Christ is my deliverer, it is implied that "I myself" without Christ cannot get beyond Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

the state of distraction and self-contradiction already described in vv. 14–23. This inference from the immediate context (ἦν ὁ δὲ) is thus at the same time a summary recapitulation of the whole passage. "The law of God" and "the law of sin" have both been mentioned above in vv. 22, 23, each with its article: here the articles are omitted in order to bring out more clearly what each law is in its nature and quality, the one "a law of God," the other "a law of sin."

The proposal of Lachmann, Van Hengel, and others to transfer this latter part of v. 25, and put it immediately after v. 23 is against all authority, and would destroy the proper sense of αὐτός ἐγώ, which is only brought out by contrast with διὰ ἰδίου Χριστοῦ.

With the proposed transfer, the process of the Apostle's thoughts would be strictly correct and logical, but how tame in comparison with the sudden outburst of emotion expressed in the actual text! At the crisis reached in v. 23 there is first an irrepressible burst of anguish, and then a sudden revulsion of thanksgiving as the Apostle for a moment breaks away from the miserable past to the happy present, and then in the close of the verse returns more calmly to the general conclusion of his long description.

It is a much disputed question whether St. Paul in this chapter describes the conflicts of an unregenerate or of a regenerate man. The true answer is given by Dean Jackson (ix. 52) in two words, "inter regenerandum," "in the process of regeneration."

———

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 1, 5, 6, 21, 25.

1. ἐφ' ἐκείνῳ χάριν τοῦ Θεοῦ. Hofmann is right in maintaining against Meyer that the emphasis of thought (as of position) is on Θεοῦ, and appealing in proof to v. 2, τῷ θεῷ ἁλοῦ. See also v. 3, κατὰ τὸν θεὸν.

Meyer tries to defend his view by urging that "the very expression ἐκείνῳ shows that the emphasis is on ἐπὶ ἐκείνῳ χάριν, meaning 'all the time that,'" but this is hypercritical and erroneous.

The fuller thought, "as long as he liveth and no longer," far from being utterly irrelevant, is absolutely required. St. Paul's contention is not merely that the Jew, as much, was bound by the law all his life, but more particularly that by death he was set free from it.

This is clear also from vi. 7, "For he that is dead is freed from sin."

5. Παθήματα in this ethical sense occurs in the N. T. only here and in Gal. v. 24.

It is used by Plato (e.g. 'Phaedo'), 79 B: καὶ τοῦτο τὸ πάθημα φύσις καλεῖται) and Aristotle ('Eth. Eudem.') II. ii. 3, 3: κατὰ τὰ παθήματα παθημάτων καθ' ὑπὸ παθημάτων λέγονται, καὶ κατὰ τὰ παθήματα παθημάτων λέγονται τῷ [πάθῳ] πάθει (πρὸς ἰδίᾳ καθ' ἰδίᾳ ἀνάπαθες εἰναι), indifferently of all emotions, and as equivalent to πάθος, though this latter word is more commonly applied to evil affections: compare Rom. i. 26; Col. iii. 5; 1 Thess. iv. 5; ἐπαγγεῖλον. See Aristot. 'Eth. Eud.' II. ii. 1.
where he shows that ἰδος, which grows out of ἰδος, is acquired by being often moved in a certain way, and so at length the energy or active ἰδος, τὸ ἐνεργεῖται, is formed.

Chrysostom takes ἐνεργεῖται in a Passive sense, "were wrought in our members," as showing that "the evil is derived from another source, from the thoughts that work, not from the members that are wrought upon."

The Passive occurs in Polybius, l. xiii. 5; IX. xii. 7, 8; Jos. Ant. Jud. lib. XV. c. v. § 3, l. 40; Dindorf: in all which passages it is used of the operations carried on in war.

A careful consideration of all the examples in the N. T. (1 Thess. ii. 13; 2 Thess. ii. 7; 2 Cor. i. 6; iv. 13; Gal. v. 6; Eph. iii. 10; Col. i. 29; Jas. v. 16) seems to show that the Middle sense is everywhere preferable to the Passive.

The Active voice is used of an external or independent agent; the Middle, of a power already belonging to the Subject in whom it works.

6. The A. V. is formed on the reading ἵσσων·πλέσσεται, which has no MS. authority, but was introduced into the printed text by Beza, who erroneously inferred from the comment of Chrysostom that he had that reading before him.

τῶν διψῶν is the reading found in the Greek-Latin uncials D E F G, in the Latin Versions It. and Vulg. (exc. Codex Amiatinus “morientes”), in the Latin Fathers, and in copies mentioned by Origen (or Rufinus), who, however preferred ἵσσων·πλέσσεται, “sed hoc, id est, mortui est verius et rectius.” Meyer rightly regards it as “a gloss, having a practical bearing on τῶν διψῶν, which has dispensed the participle regarded as disturbing the construction.” Reiche thinks τῶν διψῶν was substituted for ἵσσων·πλέσσεται, as supplying an easy reference for ἵσσων·πλέσσεται has a superabundant weight of authority (Reiche), and is confirmed by the peculiarity of the construction, ἵσσων·πλέσσεται ἐν ὑπερβολῇ, which is difficult, but by no means to be rejected as either contrary to Greek usage or void of a suitable sense. It has been variously rendered.

(a) We have been discharged by death from the law wherein we were held: Rückert, De Wette, &c. This rendering gives excellent sense, but is forbidden by the position of ἵσσων·πλέσσεται.

(b) We have been discharged from the law by dying in that wherein we were held, i.e. in our old man (Forbes). This, too, gives a good sense, but there is nothing in the immediate context to suggest that the antecedent to be supplied is “our old man.”

(c) We have been discharged from the law by dying in him wherein we were held, i.e. in Christ.

This construction has no support in the immediate context, and the meaning attributed to κατειχόμεθα is unusual and inadmissible.

(d) We have been discharged from the law by dying unto that wherein we were held, i.e. to the law, in whose grasp we were.

This last construction, which gives the same sense as (a), is adopted by Meyer, Reiche, &c., and is much to be preferred. It states in accordance with the preceding allegory the mode in which we were released from the law, namely by dying to it.

21. This passage is regarded by Chrysostom and other Greek Fathers as “a dark saying,” and is given up by some modern commentators as hopelessly unintelligible. These interpreters, both ancient and modern, have in fact made for themselves an insuperable stumbling-block, by insisting that τῶν διψῶν must mean the Mosaic Law. It will be sufficient to give a few specimens of the explanations thus attempted, which for the most part refute themselves.

(a) Chrysostom and the Greek commentators generally, instead of interpreting the passage, almost rewrite it with unwarrantable additions: “I find the law helping and encouraging me, who wish to do good, but am in want of help, because evil is present with me.”

(b) Fritzsch and others govern τῶν διψῶν, not by εἰπίσκοποι but by οὐκείστι, and make “the law” identical with “the good”: “I find that to me subo wish to do the law, that is the good; evil is present.”

(c) Ewald, on the contrary, identifies “the law” with “the evil”: “I find therefore that the law, when I desire to do the good, lies at band to me as the evil.”

(d) New complications are introduced by Meyer:

“Τῶν διψῶν is to be understood of the Mosaic Law, and joined with τῶν διπλωσάν, οὐκείστι is to be taken as Ininitive of the purpose (Buttmann, neut. Gr., p. 224), and ἔρχεται κ. τ. λ. as object of εἰπίσκοποι (comp. Esr. ii. 16): it results to me, therefore, that, while my will is directed to the law, in order to do the good, the evil lies before me.”

While Meyer justly terms other views, which he rejects, “forced expedients,” and “tortuous explanations,” he is surprised that his own interpretation should be regarded as “barb” (Delitzsch), “forced” (Philippi), “strange and meaningless” (Hofmann).

25. The variation in the readings is in structural:

(1) χάριν τῷ θεῷ B Thebaic.
(2) ξ. δι’ τῷ θεῷ N C, some cursives, Memphitic.
(3) ἡ χάρις τοῦ θεοῦ D E, d e, v g.

New Test.—Vol. III.
CHAPTER VIII.

1 They that are in Christ, and live according to the Spirit, are free from condemnation.
5. 13 What harm cometh of the flesh, 6. 14 and what god of the Spirit: 17 and what of being God's child, 19 whose glorious deliverance all things long for, 20 was beforehand derived from God. 38 What can sever us from his love?

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.


1-11. Condemnation under "the law of sin and death" is abolished by "the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus."

1. Therefore] An inference from the thanksgiving in vii. 25, as is shown by the word "now," meaning "now that a deliverer has been found in Christ Jesus, like the "now" in vii. 6.

This connection is made certain by v. 2, which expressly asserts the deliverance as the cause why "there is now no condemnation."

to them which are in Christ Jesus.] "To be in Christ" does not mean in St. Paul's writings "to be dependent on Christ" (a common classical usage), nor merely (as Fritzsche tries to prove) to be His follower or disciple, as Pythagoreans or Platonists were followers of their several masters. It implies that living union which Christ Himself first made known: "Because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in Me, and I in you" (John xiv. 19, 20: compare John xv. 4-7).

This union with Christ is frequently described by St. John as "being in Him": 1 John ii. 3, 6, 24, 28; iii. 24, v. 20.

The same expression is found in 1 Pet. iii. 16; v. 10, 14; but is especially characteristic of St. Paul's writings, being applied by him both to churches (Gal. i. 22; 1 Thess. i. 1; ii. 14; iv. 16; 2 Thess. i. 1) and to individuals (1 Cor. i. 30; 2 Cor. v. 17; Eph. i. 11; ii. 10, &c.). What St. Paul affirmed at Athens of all mankind in their natural relation to God, that "in Him we live and move and have our being" (Acts xvii. 28), he applies in a higher sense to the spiritual union of believers with Christ. In Gal. iii. 26-28, we see both the inward and outward means of this union, namely, faith and baptism.

In speaking of this union, St. Paul never uses the name "Jesus" alone nor first, but gives prominence to the Divine dignity and saving power of "Christ" (Van Hengel). "It is a point not of opinion, but of belief, that the Son of God did take our nature upon Him, not only to the end that He might lay it down for our ransom, or suffer for us in the flesh, but to the end withal that, having suffered for us according to His humanity, He might by it unite us unto Himself as He is God in a more peculiar manner than our human nature without such union to His human nature was capable of" (Jackson, 'On the Creed, b. xii.).

This union is represented under various figures as that of the vine and its branches, the foundation and the building, the head and the members: in this passage the context (v. 2 compared with vii. 4, 6, 25) suggests "the spiritual marriage and unity betwixt Christ and His Church."

The words, "whoso walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit," are rejected by all critics as a gloss brought from v. 4. The interpolation is of very early date.

2. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and (of) death.] "The law of sin and of death" from which man is set free must clearly be that to which he has been previously in captivity, namely, "the law of sin in the members" (vii. 23), which is also a law of death, as already implied in vii. 11.

This being a power within the man, the law which is opposed to it, and overpowers it, must also be an inward power. Thus "the law of the Spirit of life" is not the Gospel, nor its plan of salvation, neither is it "the
v. 3]  

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:

law of the mind" (vii. 23), which has been already proved powerless against the flesh; but it is the life-giving power of the Holy Ghost, ruling as a law in the heart.

"The Spirit of life" is so called, because He is the Author and Giver of life: compare v. 11; John vi. 63; 1 Cor. xv. 45; 2 Cor. iii. 6.

The generic expresses the effect wrought, as in John vi. 35, "the bread of life," and Rom. v. 18, "justification of life."

From "the Spirit of life" dwelling in the inner man goes forth a power which not only commands as a law, but also quickens and inspires obedience as a living and life-giving law, and thus sets the man free from the contrary "law of sin and of death."

This deliverance was first effected in the Person of Christ, as is shown in v. 3, and can be continued only "in Christ Jesus," i.e. "in a fellowship of life with Him, in being and living in Him, v. 1" (Meyer).

The verb stands between two prepositional clauses, both dependent on it: "in Christ Jesus made me free from the law of sin and of death." The same arrangement is found also in i. 17, iii. 7, v. 17, the clause with tv being placed, as here, before the verb: an emphasis is thus thrown on the words "in Christ Jesus," as in 1 Cor. iv. 15; Gal. v. 6.

3. To confirm the truth stated in v. 3, St. Paul now declares the actual method by which the liberation from the law of sin and of death is effected; and first he enhances the greatness of the task, as being that which the law of Moses had not power to accomplish.

For what the law could not do. On the construction, see Note at end: the sense is clearly given in the A. V.: "what the law could not do," is what God did by other means, i.e. "condemned sin in the flesh."

The law could not do this; "in that it was weak through the flesh"—a cause of failure already explained in vii. 14-25.

God sending his own Son. After showing exactly wherein the difficulty lay which the law had not power to overcome, the Apostle proceeds to declare how God overcame it.

The language is remarkable: the emphatic words, "His own Son," implying the fulness of Divine power in the Son of God, stand in striking contrast between the impotence of the Law and the weakness of Christ's human nature.

in the likeness of sinful flesh. In likeness of the flesh of sin.

The flesh of sin describes man's animal nature as having become the seat of indwelling sin. But of that nature itself sin is no part nor property, only its fault and corruption. Hence Christ could take true human flesh, "of the substance of the Virgin Mary His Mother," without that quality of sinfulness which it has acquired in us, who are "naturally engendered of the offspring of Adam." "In putting on our flesh He made it His own: in making it His own, He made it sinless" (Tertullian, "De Carne Christi," c. 16). Christ thus was sent "in likeness of sinful flesh," not as if He had taken on Him the "likeness of flesh" in the sense of a semblance of body instead of its reality: but St. Paul means us to understand likeness to the flesh which sinned, because the flesh of Christ, which committed no sin itself, was like that which had sinned,—like it in its nature, but not in the corruption it received from Adam: whence we also affirm that there was in Christ the same flesh as that whose nature in man is sinful (Tertullian, ib.). (See Additional Note.)

and for sin. The words might also be rendered: "and as a sin-offering," being so used in the Septuagint, Lev. iv. 33; v. 6, 7, 8, 9; vii. 17; and Ps. xl. 6, and in Heb. x. 6, 8. Here, however, an exclusive reference to sacrifice is not permitted by the context, which refers, not only to the expiation, but also to the practical condemnation and destruction of sin (v. 4). The more comprehensive meaning "for sin" (i.e. "on account of sin" or "in coming sin") is therefore to be preferred here, and is found in A. V. even in Heb. xiii. 11, where the context expressly limits the meaning to "sacrifice for sin."

condemned sin in the flesh. The rendering "in his flesh," i.e. Christ's, is not admissible; for the flesh has already been twice identified in this verse with the "flesh of sin," i.e. the flesh in which sin exercises its usurped dominion. How then did God condemn sin in the flesh, i.e., in human nature generally? (1) By exhibiting in the person of His Incarnate Son the same flesh in substance but free from sin, He proved that sin was in the flesh only as an unnatural and usurping tyrant. Thus the manifestation of Christ in sinless humanity at once condemned sin in principle. For this sense of karaskira, to condemn by contrast, see Matt. xii. 41, 42, and Heb. xi. 7.

But (2) God condemned sin practically and effectually by destroying its power and casting it out: and this is the sense especially required by the context. The law could condemn sin only in word, and could not make its condemnation effectual. Christ coming "for sin" not only made atonement for sin.  

K. 2
4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

for it by His Death, but uniting man to Himself "in newness of life" (vi. 4), gave actual effect to the condemnation of sin by destroying its dominion "in the flesh" through the life-giving sanctifying power of His Spirit.

4. The purpose for which God condemned sin in the flesh.

That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us; "That the righteous demand of the law," &c.

The one righteous demand of the law which includes all its other demands (τα δικαιωματα του νόμου, i. 26; Luke i. 6; Numbers xxxi. 21), is holy obedience inspired by the love of God (Luke x. 27). That this "righteous demand of the law might be fulfilled in us," was the great final cause of God's sending His Son into the world.

Other interpretations of the passage may be classified according to the meanings assigned to δικαιωμα.

(1) "The righteous sentence of the law" in condemnation of sin (i. 39).

This is contrary to the tenor of the passage, and to the plain meaning of the words "fulfilled in us": as to the condemnatory sentence of the law, God's purpose in sending His Son was that it might not be fulfilled in us.

(2) The justification, or justifying sentence of the law (v. 16). Fritzsche refers this to the promise (Lev. xviii. 5, Deut. v. 33) that the man who keeps the commandments of God shall find life therein.

But "justification" is not and cannot be ascribed to the law (iii. 20; Gal. iii. 21, 21; Acts xiii. 39); "it is God that justifieth." Accordingly δικαιωμα in this sense is not found with νομος.

(3) The righteousness or right conduct corresponding to the law's demand (v. 18; Apost. xix. 8).

In this sense also δικαιωμα is not found in combination with νομος: and if such usage were established, the general meaning of the passage would be the same as that which we have given above; for the righteousness which satisfies the law is the counterpart of the law's righteous demand.

It may be well to gather up the fragments of truth which underlie these various interpretations.

Christ came indeed that the law's "righteous sentence" of condemnation against sin might be fulfilled, not in us, but in His atoning death. He came, that "the justifying sentence," not of the law, but of God.

5 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.

might be ratified and accomplished upon all who believe in Him. He came also "to fulfill all righteousness" in His own Person: not only to give us an example of perfect obedience to the law, but also to redeem us from the curse of the law, and further to "condemn sin in the flesh" by showing that it has not a rightful but only an usurped dominion there, and so to deliver our whole nature, body, soul, and spirit from sin's bondage, and then lastly so to make us one with Himself in this renewed nature, that through the quickening and sanctifying power of His Spirit we also may "walk in newness of life" (vi. 4), in other words "that the righteousness of the law (its demand of holiness) may be fulfilled in us."

There is no force in Calvin's objection, that believers renewed by the Spirit do not in fact attain in this life to such proficiency in holiness, that the righteousness of the Law is fulfilled in them: for God's purpose, of which St. Paul is here speaking, is clearly affirmed in such passages as Eph. ii. 10; Col. ii. 10. Compare xiii. 8; Gal. v. 14.

This interpretation is placed beyond doubt by the additional clause which defines the character of those in whom the righteous requirement of the law is to be fulfilled; namely such as "walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit;" this character is determined by the ruling principle according to which their actual life is regulated. They "walk not after the flesh," for the flesh with its affections and lusts rebels against the law, "but after the Spirit." "The Spirit," being here regarded as the regulating principle (xvi.), cannot be man's own spirit however renewed and sanctified, but the Divine power itself which renews and sanctifies, i.e. the indwelling Spirit of God, as in v. 9.

E. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh. To be after the flesh is to have the flesh for the ruling principle of our being: "to walk after the flesh" (v. 4) is to follow this principle in the actual life. The distinction is not meant to be made prominent; but it is necessary to go back from the outward symptom to the cause, in order to derive from that the intermediate process: "they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh," and so "walk after the flesh."

"The things of the flesh" are opposed to "the things of the Spirit."—

(1) as human to divine,—"Then savour not (literally mind not) the things that be of
6 For 'to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.'

7 Because 'the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.'

8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

God, but those that be of men" (Matt. xvi. 23); (2) as earthly things to heavenly (Phil. iii. 19, Col. iii. 2), and (3) in utter moral contradiction, as sin to holiness (Gal. v. 19-21; 22, 23).

6. The definition of those in whom the righteousness of the law is to be fulfilled (v. 4) is justified and confirmed both on its negative and positive sides by the reason stated in v. 3, which reason is itself confirmed by a further development in v. 6, and that again is explained on the negative side in v. 7.

7. 'To be carnally minded.' The lust of the flesh, called in the Greek φρονήσας σαρκός, which some do expound the wisdom, some sensuality, some the affection, some the desire, of the flesh, is not subject to the law of God' (Art. ix.). The A. V. is a fair paraphrase of the literal meaning "mind of the flesh," in which "mind" (or "minding"") means "thought," "purpose," "sentiment," or "study," as in vii. 37, "God knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit."

6. "The flesh" is not the mere material of the body, but "the infection of nature" (Art. ix.). Compare Delitzsch, "Biblical Psychology," pp. 439, 442, and Additional Note on ἁμαρτία, Introduction, § 9. The statement that "the mind of the flesh is death" is explained by St. Paul himself in v. 7: for "enmity against God," separating man from the only source of life, not only leads to death, but is itself the very essence of death, so that the sinner is dead while he liveth (1 Tim. v. 6).

"but to be spiritually minded is life and peace." Meyer's explanation that "the striving of the Holy Spirit tends to lead man to eternal life and blessedness" is inadequate. "The mind of the Spirit," the whole state of thought and feeling which proceeds from the Spirit, dwelling in man's heart (v. 9), "is life," the true life of the soul, the first-fruit of that gift of God which is eternal life (vi. 23).

"Peace" is not here the act of reconciliation wrought by Christ's death (v. 1), but the conscious enjoyment of that reconciliation, the holy calm breathed over the soul by the Holy Ghost pouring forth God's love upon the heart. See note on v. 5.

7, 8. St. Paul now follows out separately the proof of the former part of v. 6, "the mind of the flesh is death:" his argument is explained in the note on that clause. By adding the word "peace" to "life" in v. 6, he has already prepared the way for passing over to the mention of that "enmity" which is "death" (Bengel). The proof that "the mind of the flesh is enmity against God" is seen in the fact that "it is not subject to the law of God:" and this fact of experience, (fully established in c. vii.) is further traced to its inmost cause in the depraved tendency of "the mind of the flesh," "for it doth not submit itself to the law of God, for indeed it cannot." He does not say that it is impossible for the wicked man to become good, but that it is impossible for him remaining wicked to submit to God: by conversion, however, it is easy to become good and submit." (Chrysostom.)

8. So then. And (ἐνδιάκειται): the particle marks "the continuation under a slightly changed form" (Bp. Ellicot) of the opening statement of v. 7: "Because the mind of the flesh is enmity against God . . . and they that are in the flesh cannot please God." From the abstract principle he passes to its practical result.

9. But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit.] Personal application to the readers of the general statements of vvs. 5-8. "Ye" is emphatic. "The flesh" and "the Spirit," represented in v. 5 as ruling principles, according to which men's moral life is regulated, here appear as opposite elements, in one or other of which that life subsists.

If so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you.] It is characteristic of St. Paul that he first expresses his strong and loving confidence in his readers in the absolute assertion, "Ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit:" and then, remembering that so unqualified a statement could not safely be applied to all, he adds, by way of caution, and stimulus to self-examination, the condition upon which his statement concerning them necessarily depends, a "condition sine qua non."
10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.

"For the Spirit of God must dwell in the man in order that He may be the determining element in which the man lives:" compare St. John's expression "Ye in me, and I in you" (Meyer). For the conditional "dwell" read "dwelleth;" see note at end.

Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, But if any man hath not, &c. The favourable supposition, "if the Spirit of Christ dwell in you," was made to the readers generally: but on the unfavourable side St. Paul puts only the supposition that this or that man among them "hath not the Spirit of Christ." It is clear from the connection that "the Spirit of Christ" is the same as "the Spirit of God," i.e., the Holy Ghost, who is not only sent by Christ, but is so essentially one with Christ, that His indwelling is in the next clause described as "Christ in you:" see Gal. iv. 6; Phil. i. 19. The theological import of the passage is well explained by Philippi, who shows that, when compared with Gal. iv. 6, it is a clear proof of the procession of the Holy Ghost "from the Father and the Son," as well as "an illustrious testimony concerning the Holy Trinity" (Bengel).

be is none of his.] The reason for changing the title "Spirit of God" into "Spirit of Christ" was to bring out clearly and emphatically the truth that that which he did not Christ's Spirit, is not Christ's: because Christ gives His Spirit to all that are His" (1 John iv. 13). "To be Christ's" is the same as "to be in Christ" (Gal. iii. 28, 29).

10. And if Christ be in you.] But if Christ is in you: this is a direct contrast to the latter part of v. 9, and a renewal of the favourable supposition in the former part, "if the Spirit of God dwelleth in you." It now further appears that "to have the Spirit of Christ" (v. 9) is to have Christ Himself dwelling within the heart: compare Eph. iii. 16, 17: "to be strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man, that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith."

the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life.] Rather, "though the body is dead because of sin, yet the Spirit is life."

"If Christ is in you," it follows that "the Spirit is life," yet in contrast to that effect it is admitted (υς) that for the present "the body is dead;" but even this contrast and limitation to the Spirit's operation shall be done away hereafter (v. 11).

The reference in v. 11 to the resurrection of the mortal body makes it certain that in saying "the body is dead" St. Paul is think-

ing of physical death on account of sin: compare v. 12.

"Methinks" (says Augustine, who dwells much upon this passage), "that thought so clear and plain needs not to be expounded, but only to be read." ('De Peccatorum Meritis,' i. 9).

"The Apostle does not say, "The body is mortal because of sin," but "the body is dead because of sin." For prior to Adam's sin it might be called both mortal for one reason and immortal for another reason: that is, mortal, because it was capable of dying: immortal, because it was capable of not dying... And so that animal and therefore mortal body, which on account of righteousness should have become spiritual and therefore altogether immortal, was made on account of sin not "mortal," which it was before, but "dead," which it might never have become if man had not sinned."

"How therefore does the Apostle, when speaking about persons still living, call our body 'dead,' except because the necessity of dying clung to the children from the sin of their parents?" ('De Genesi ad litteram,' vi. 16).

The body thus doomed to certain death, and bearing in itself the germs of corruption, is in St. Paul's vivid conception already "dead," "a living corpse" (Soph. 'Antigone,' 1167).

but the Spirit is life.] "the spirit," i.e. the human spirit; it is implied not in the word itself, but in the condition "if Christ is in you," that the human spirit is quickened by the indwelling Spirit of God. This reference to the human spirit is proved by the direct contrast of "the body" and "the spirit" (1 Cor. vii. 34; 2 Cor. vii. 1: Ja. ii. 26), and by the careful distinction of the Divine Spirit in v. 11, as "the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead."

The spirit of man, when renewed and pervaded by the Spirit of Christ, not only lives, but is all "life," essentially and eternally. The inferior reading ('ζωή, 'liveth") falls far short of St. Paul's thought: "the Divine life becomes through the Holy Spirit not only a quality of the human spirit, it becomes its nature, in such wise, that it can diffuse itself through the whole person from the spirit to the soul and body" (Godet).

because of righteousness.] Since cause goes before effect, the righteousness which is the conditional cause of life in the believer (as sin is the cause of death), is that "righteousness of God" which is freely given for Christ's
11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

sake, which is accompanied by the gift of eternal life (v. 17, 18, 31), and which brings forth as its fruit the works of righteousness.

The same conclusion follows from the antithesis of the two clauses: "the body is dead because of (Adam's) sin, but the spirit is life because of (Christ's) righteousness:" compare, ch. v. 12, 15, 17.

"Propter justicationem" (Vulg.) is therefore right as a paraphrase, though not as a translation of δια δικαιοσύνης. On the other hand, "quickening" is wholly inadmissible: "Being quickened by the grace of the Holy Spirit and rich in righteousness through communion with Him: for thus are we partakers of the divine nature."

11. The present possession of the Spirit of God is an assurance that even in the body life shall at last triumph over death. The condition, "if Christ is in you," is now repeated in substance, but changed in form to suit the new statement concerning God's raising up Jesus from the dead.

But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you.] Rather "dwelleth in you:" see on v. 9.

"The Spirit of God," called also "the Spirit of Christ" in v. 9, is now introduced under a new title, which in fact forms part of the argument; because it is assumed that He who raised Jesus from the dead can also raise us. Though the Son as God had power to lay down His life and to take it again (John ii. 19, x. 18), yet Jesus as Man is raised by the power of God the Father (Acts ii. 32; Gal. i. 1; Eph. i. 20; compare Pearson, 'Creed,' Art. v. p. 301).

be that raised up Christ from the dead.] The mediatorial title "Christ" ("Christ Jesus," Tisch. 8) corresponds to the assumed connection between His resurrection and ours. Compare 1 Cor. vi. 14; 2 Cor. iv. 14.

shall also quicken your mortal bodies.] Instead of "raise," St. Paul now says "quicken," or "make alive" (κοινωνεῖται), in correspondence with v. 10: "the spirit is life" already, the body also shall be made alive hereafter. In v. 10 the body is called "dead," a hyperbolic expression, which would be weakened by repeating the same word in the same

12. Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

13. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.] See note at end of chapter.

The marginal reading "because of his Spirit that dwelleth in you" is most in accordance with the language of the N. T., which nowhere represents the Holy Ghost as the special agent or instrument by whom the dead are raised. "The bodies of the saints are the members of Christ, and no members of His shall remain in death: they are the temples of the Holy Ghost, and therefore if they be destroyed, they shall be raised again." For "if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in us," as He doth, and by so dwelling maketh our bodies temples, "be which raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken our mortal bodies by (because of) His Spirit that dwelleth in us" (Pearson, 'Creed,' Art. v.). Compare 2 Cor. v. 5, where St. Paul speaks of the gift of the Spirit as an earnest of the resurrection.

12, 13. Practical exhortation founded upon the consequences which have been shown (vv. 1-11) to follow from living after the flesh or after the Spirit.

Therefore."

So then: as in vii. 3. You have seen (vv. 6-8) that if "flesh" be the ruling principle of your life "ye must die" (Tyndale: μικρὰς ἀποθεσίνες), and this sure and known result is not such as to lay you under any obligation to the flesh: you owe it nothing by anticipation, that you should live according to its rule.

but if ye through the Spirit do mortify.] "but if by the Spirit ye mortify." In v. 13 the order of the words "we are
14. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

debtors—not to the flesh,” leads our thoughts on at once to the well-known and necessary alternative (v. 4), “but to the Spirit that we should live after the Spirit;” the reason therefore of that suppressed alternative is now added.

“The deeds of the body” are not bodily acts as such, but its actions or practices (ποιήμα) considered in their moral tendency, which in this case is towards evil: compare Col. iii. 9.

For “the body” is here regarded as “the body of sin” (vi. 6), i.e. as ruled by sin dwelling in its flesh. The various reading “the flesh” is of less authority.

The way to “mortify,” or “put to death” (καταρρίσσεται) these “deeds of the body,” is to subdue by help of God’s Spirit the sinful desires which are their motive power. In the clauses “ye shall die,” “ye shall live,” the death and life are both eternal.

14-17. Proof of the promise “ye shall live,” from the nature of the indwelling Spirit as a Spirit of adoption.

15. All who are moved and guided by the Spirit and follow His guidance, these, especially (οὐχόν, v. 10; Gal. iii. 7) and none but these, are the sons of God, and as sons derive life from the Father, Who is the fount of life. On the difference between receiving the Spirit and being “led by the Spirit,” Chrysostom remarks: “Lost in reliance upon the baptismal gift they should be careless of their after life, he says that even if you receive Baptism but intend not to be led by the Spirit afterwards, you have lost the dignity conferred and the pre-eminence of sonship.”

15. In proof of the assertion that “they who are led by the Spirit of God, are the sons of God,” St. Paul appeals to his readers’ experience of the character and effect of the Spirit which they had received.

For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear.] “For ye received not a spirit of bondage again unto fear.”

The aorist points to the time when believing and being baptized they received the Holy Ghost: that what they then received was “the Spirit of God,” by Whom they are still led (v. 14), is clearly stated in Gal. iv. 5, 6, and is here assumed in the appeal to their experience. The question to be decided by that experience is, What kind of spirit that was; and the answer is twofold, the verb being emphatically repeated, “Ye received not a spirit of bondage, but ye received a spirit of adoption.” The word “spirit” is in both clauses a Common Noun, not a Proper Name, and therefore should not be written with a capital letter. Compare 2 Tim. i. 7.

The “bondage,” or “slavery,” which throughout this Epistle is contrasted with the liberty of the sons of God, is the bondage of sin (vi. 16, 17, 20; vii. 25), and of corruption or death as the consequence of sin (v. 21). The Apostle’s readers, both Jews and Gentiles, had all been once under this bondage (vi. 17) which tends “unto fear,” even the fear of death (Heb. ii. 14, 15). But the Spirit which they received on becoming Christians was not found to be “a spirit of bondage tending again unto fear,” but “a spirit of adoption” or “affiliation”—a spirit which properly belongs to and is characteristic of adopted children.

Adoption was a process unknown to the Jewish law, and the word υιοθεσία, first found in Gal. iv. 5, was probably formed by St. Paul himself. From this circumstance and from the fact that St. Paul, a Roman citizen, is here writing to Romans, it is almost certain that the allusion is to the Roman law. St. Paul’s word was in later times applied to Baptism (Suicer): he applies it himself to God’s typical adoption of the Jewish nation (ix. 4), to the actual adoption of believers both Jews and Gentiles to be the children of God (Gal. iv. 5; Eph. i. 5), and to their perfected adoption in the future state of glory (viii. 23), Comp. Neander, “Planting of Christianity,” i. 477, and Ellicott, “Gal. iv. 5.

In the phrase “spirit of adoption” the genitive does not mean that adoption is the effect of having received the Spirit (Athanasius ad Serap. Ep. i. c. 19 κατασκευην τον πνεύματος): for in the parallel passage Gal. iv. 6, we see that the adoption goes before the testimony of the Spirit, “having taken place through faith and justification” (Meyer). Yet this Pauline doctrine is perfectly consistent with the Spirit’s previous work of regeneration (John iii. 5), for “Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God” (1 John v. 1). St. Paul, in fact, is here speaking not of the first secret work of the Spirit in regenerating the soul by faith, but of the subsequent testimony of the Spirit, which, whether accompanied or not by outward signs, bore witness in the hearts of believers that they had become sons of God.

A “spirit of adoption” is thus a spirit belonging to adoption as its proper character,
adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.
16 The Spirit itself beareth wit-ness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:
17 And if children, then heirs; and "a spirit of bondage" would in like manner be "a spirit characteristic of bondage" and so tending "unto fear."

Commentators ancient and modern have here run wild in their attempts to give a positive and personal existence to that of which St. Paul speaks only negatively. "Some say it is the spirit of the Evil One, but it is not so; for it is the Law that he here calls a spirit of bondage" (Severianus in Cramer: so Diodorus, Theodorus). "The law as given by the Holy Spirit" (Theodoret). "The Scriptures, as being spiritual and supernatural, but establishing a dispensation in which punishments and rewards were meted out like the daily portion of a slave" (Chrysostom; Theophyl. Ecumen.). Augustine applies it to the Holy Ghost, "because the same Spirit of God, that is, finger of God, whereby the Law was written on tables of stone, struck terror into those who knew not yet God's grace, that by the Law they might be convinced of their infirmity and sin" ('Quest. in Exod.' 1v.; comp. Serm. 156). But in another passage ('Propositiones ex Ep. ad Rom. expos.') he explains it as "the spirit of him to whom sinners are in bondage; so that, as the Holy Spirit delivers from the fear of death, the spirit of bondage who hath the power of death holds the guilty in fear of that same death; in order that each may turn to the Deliverer's help, even in spite of the Devil, who desires to have him in his power always."

Philippi and others understand the expressions subjectively of the servile and filial spirit or disposition engendered by the Law and the Gospel respectively; but this is opposed to the meaning of σωμα required by the context in vv. 14, 16. These difficulties all arise from neglecting the order of the words: St. Paul did not write "Ye have not received again a spirit of bondage," but "a spirit of bondage bringing you again into a state of fear." Compare 2 Tim. i. 7.

whereby we cry.] Literally "in which (spirit) we cry": compare 1 Cor. xii. 3. In the sudden change from the 2nd to the 1st person we see St. Paul himself in the same filial spirit joining in his brethren's cry.

Abba, Father.] See note on Mark xiv. 36.

16. Analysis of what takes place when we in the Spirit cry "Abba, Father": there is then a twofold but united testimony, we cry and the Spirit cries in us (Gal. iv. 6). "The Spirit itself," i.e. the Spirit of God, which has just been described as a spirit of adoption, "beareth

witness with our spirit." This rendering is more correct than that of the Vulgate "to our spirit": it implies that our spirit also bears witness to us, an idea to which Lange strangely objects, forgetting that it is what occurs in every act of consciousness.

St. Paul is conscious that the impulse to cry "Abba, Father" proceeds from his own spirit acting under the influence of the Holy Spirit and in concert with Him: compare ii. 15, and ix. 1: "my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost." "This witness of the Spirit is not to be placed merely in the feeling (1 John iii. 19), but His whole inward and outward efficacy must be taken together; for instance, His comfort, His incitement to prayer, His censure of sin, His impulse to works of love, to witness before the world, and so forth. Upon the foundation of this immediate testimony of the Holy Spirit, all the regenerate man's conviction of Christ and His work finally rests. For faith in the Scripture itself has its basis upon this experience of the divinity of the principle which it promises, and which flows into the believer while he is occupied with it." (Olshausen.)

The passage testifies strongly against the Pantheistic confusion of the human spirit and the Divine.

"The witness of the Spirit is a consciousness of our having received in and by the Spirit of adoption the temper mentioned in the word of God as belonging to his adopted children,—a loving heart towards God and toward all mankind; hanging with childlike confidence on God our Father; desiring nothing but Him, casting all our care on Him...

It is a consciousness that we are inwardly conformed by the Spirit of God to the image of His Son, and that we walk before Him in justice, mercy, and truth, doing the things which are pleasing in His sight." (Wesley, in Lange's 'Commentary.')

17. And if children, then heirs.] The Apostle follows out his proof of the promise in v. 13: "ye shall live," for ye are God's children (vv. 14-16), and therefore heirs of His inheritance, "the glory which shall be revealed in us" (v. 18), which is, in other words, eternal life: compare ii. 7.

For "sons." St. Paul now says "children," which is both more tender (Meyer), and more comprehensive. (Gal. iii. 26-28.)

Heirs of God.] Two thoughts enhance the greatness of the inheritance. that it comes from God, and is shared with Christ. The
heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

19 For the earnest expectation of Divine inheritance, unlike the human, is bestowed by the living Father upon His children.

(Luke xv. 12.)

and joint-heirs with Christ.] By Jewish law the eldest son had the largest share, and daughters were excluded, unless there were no sons. ('Dict. of the Bible,' p. 779, b, 'Heir.') By the Roman law sons and daughters shared equally in the inheritance, and adopted children were treated like others. (Smith's 'Dict. of Gk. and Rom. NT.' p. 600, a.)

Christ admits all His brethren to share alike in that inheritance which He has won, not for Himself but for them.

if so be that we suffer with him.] It was part of the Divine order of salvation "that Christ must suffer," and through suffering pass to glory (Luke xxiv. 26, 46; Acts xvii. 3; xxvi. 23; Hebrews ii. 9, 10, and also that His followers must suffer with Him, in order to be glorified together. (Matt. x. 38; xvi. 24; xx. 20; I Thess. iii. 3; 2 Cor. i. 5; Col. i. 24; 2 Tim. ii. 12; &c.). To "suffer with him" is to suffer "for His sake, and the Gospel's" (Mark viii. 35): compare 1 Peter iv. 12.

Rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that when His glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

On εἰρήν see note on v. 9: it represents "the fellowship of His sufferings" (Phil. iii. 10) as an indispensable condition of sharing His glory, a necessary discipline to fit us for that blissful reward which is purchased for us by the sole merit of our Saviour's own sufferings. "In all nations, indeed, and at all times, the way in which men have met death, and women have met suffering, has been a testimony to the conviction that pain, when endured for a moral purpose, may be transformed from a curse into a blessing, and may elevate the nature on which it seems to inflict a wound. But this conviction has been established as one of the supreme laws of human nature by the cross of Christ" (Wace, 'Christianity and Morality,' p. 316).

18–30. The Sources of Comfort Under the Necessity of Suffering.

These are threefold:

1. The hope of glory to which all creation looks forward (13–15);

2. The present help of the Spirit (26, 27);

3. The all-embracing purpose of God's sure love (28–30).

18. For I reckon.] A reason for suffering with Christ in order to be glorified with Him. The connexion with the last words of v. 17 is direct and obvious. The same word (κοινωνία) is rendered in A. V., "think" (ii. 3), "conclude" (iii. 28), "suppose" (2 Cor. xi. 5), "count" (Phil. iii. 13). It does not imply mere supposition or opinion, but the judgment or inference which the Apostle draws from comparing things present and things to come, that the former are of no weight or worth in the comparison. "This present time" (αἰών) indicates the critical and final season of the dispensation of "this world" (αἰών), a season of distress which is to end at Christ's coming: compare iii. 26 and xi. 5 with xiii. 11 and 1 Cor. vii. 29.

shall be revealed.] The glory already exists in Christ, it only remains to be revealed in us. St. Paul does not use the simple Future Tense, but (as in v. 13 and iv. 24) an expression (μικρολουσία) which represents the future revelation of glory as something that is destined to be and will be. Compare Gal. iii. 23, where the same words are used in the same emphatic order. See also Col. iii. 4; Tit. ii. 13; 1 Pet. i. 4.

in us.] The Greek preposition (εἰς) expresses the thought that the revelation of glory will reach to and take place in us.

19. The certainty of the future revelation of glory in us is confirmed by the sympathetic longings of all around us. Keble, in the 'Christian Year' (4th S. after Trin.), has found a theme for one of his finest poems in these 'Groans of Nature,'

"Strong yearnings for a blest new birth,
With sinless glories crown'd."

the earnest expectation (compare Phil. i. 20) is described by expressive compounds, such as St. Paul loves, in which hope is depicted both in its eagerness "with head uplifted," (ἀνθρακωθήσωσα) and in its perseverance waiting out the end (ἀνθρακωθήσαν: compare r Pet. iii. 20).

the creature.] Rather "the creation," i.e. the things created (Vulg. 'creatura'). The word itself is of unlimited application (Mark xiii. 19), and the context only can determine the extent of its meaning.

Of things created, to begin with the highest, good Angels are excluded, for they were not "made subject to vanity" (v. 20); and evil
the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope,

in all such passages, whether historical, poetical, or prophetic, the same truth, or at all events the same doctrine, is expressed which St. Paul states in v. 20, that "the creation was subjected to vanity.

When once this is admitted, there is no room left for the argument that Man must be included by St. Paul in "the creation" as "that which gives propriety, consistency, and beauty to the whole representation."

(Forbes.)

If "in speaking of that glorious restitution of all things, which has been the theme of all the Prophets, and the great hope of the Church since the world began, St. Paul mentions on the one hand the little flock that had then received the first-fruits of the Spirit, and on the other hand, the material and irrational creation," it does not follow that "the innumerable multitudes of 'all the families of the earth,' not yet converted to Christ, are by him who was specially called to be the Apostle of the Gentiles passed by, without a thought on their condition or destiny!"

The truth is that like Isaiah (xxv. 17), like St. Peter (2nd Ep. iii. 15), and like St. John (Rev. xxi. 1), St. Paul looked for "a new heaven and a new earth:" but before that "restitution of all things," he expected that "the fulness of the Gentiles" should come in, and "all Israel be saved." Mankind therefore, so far as they fulfil their proper destiny, in accordance with the great promise, "in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed," are all included among "the sons of God," while "the sublœ creation" includes all the irrational creatures, animate or inanimate, as in Wisdom xvi. 24; xix. 6.

the manifestation of the sons of God. That is "the revelation of the sons of God" themselves, not merely of their glory: they will become known as "the sons of God" through the glory which shall then be imparted to them. At present, though known of God and knowing Him as their Father (v. 14-17), "the world knoweth them not, because it knew him not." (1 John iii. 1.)


The creature was made subject to vanity. The emphasis is on the "vanity," that well-known vanity of things created (τη ματαιότητα). "Though all things were made very good, yet when the first man sinned they were corrupted, and shall return no more to their
21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travailleth in pain together until now.

23 And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan properly, until Pherez, i.e. Messiah, shall come.” (Beresch. Rabb. f. 3. 3. Reiche.)

The Greek word rendered “vanity” is from a root which means to seek without finding, and so implies frustration: but this etymological sense must not be pressed, it is the word commonly used in the Septuagint, e.g. in Ecclesiastes i. 2, ii. 1, for the Hebrew בַּעַשׂ (Hebel, Abel), “breath,” “vapour,” applied to all that is frail and fleeting. Compare note on i. 21.

not willingly. Subjection to vanity is contrary to that tendency of nature, which leads each creature to seek its own preservation and perfection. This tendency is compared to the human Will, because creation is personified.

but by reason of him who subjected the same. Rather, “but on account of him who subjected it.” (See note on John vi. 57.) The Apostle mentions no other cause of the subjectation of the creation to vanity than the agency and will of him who subjected it. This, in accordance with the history, can be no other than God. He who first placed the creature under man’s dominion also subjected it to the effects of man’s sin (Gen. iii. 17, v. 29), and will make it partaker of the blessing of his restoration. Compare Isa. lxv. 17 ff.; lxvi. 22; Ps. cii. 26, 27; 2 Pet. iii. 13; Rev. xxii. 1; and see note on Isa. xi. 6 as to the reasonableness of this Scriptural doctrine of the new creation.

in hope, because the creature itself also. Rather, “in hope that the creation itself also.” These words are best connected with the former part of v. 20: the subjectation was not absolute and unconditional, but the condition upon which “the creation was subjected to vanity” was a hope granted to it, that it also shall share in man’s deliverance. This purport of the hope must be expressly stated, in order to show the ground of the expectation in v. 19, as directed precisely to the manifestation of the sons of God. An undefined hope might supply a motive for expectation of deliverance in general, but not for expectation of sharing in the glory of the children of God. (Meyer.)

the bondage of corruption. “Corruption” includes the daily perishing as well as the final dissolution of things created. This subjection to decay and death is what St. Paul calls “the bondage of corruption.” Compare Heb. ii. 15; 2 Cor. iv. 16.

the glorious liberty, &c. Rather, “the liberty of the glory of the children of God.” This glory, being a full and perfect development of all the faculties and powers of our nature, is rightly called “liberty” in opposition to “the bondage of corruption.” The whole creation is to undergo a corresponding change, and become the fit scene of the glory of God’s children. “In those days shall the whole creation be changed for the better, and return to its pristine perfection and purity, such as it was in the time of the first man before his sin.” (R. Bechay Schulcan Orba, f. 9, col. 4, quoted by Reiche.)

23. Proof of the reality of this hope of deliverance (v. 21), from the present signs of pain and travail.

For we know.] St. Paul applies to his own and his readers’ knowledge of a condition of all nature, analogous to that of a woman in travail. The knowledge of the fact, which alone is meant here, is derived from observation and experience: the knowledge of its dependence on man’s Fall (v. 20) is derived from revelation. This groaning of creation is universal, consistent (συγχωρος, Theophyl.), and unceasing. The whole creation groaneth together from the day of its subjectation until now. These pangs of a world in travail cannot be unmeaning: they point to a coming time of delivery, when “there shall be new heavens and a new earth wherein dwelleth righteousness.”

23. Beyond this fact of common experience lies another, peculiar to the Christian consciousness, and of yet deeper significance for the reality of the hope of deliverance described in v. 21.

And not only they. Rather, And not only the creation. The word to be supplied, for there is none in the Greek, is clearly indicated by the antithesis which follows—“but we ourselves also.”

wherefore have the firstfruits of the Spirit.] Rather, “though we have,” &c. This clause completes the climax of proof by the thought that even Christians, though so highly favoured as recipients of the first outpouring of the Spirit, were not exempt from an eager and painful longing for the full liberty and glory which were yet to be bestowed on them. Not only the Apostles on the day of
within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the "redemption of our body.

24. For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

26. Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh.

Pentecost, but all who in that first age had been added to the Church through their teaching, are regarded by St. Paul as sharing in the first gift of that Spirit, which is in due time to be poured out on all flesh: they have the first-fruits which are to be followed by the great harvest. That harvest must be fully gathered, before the final revelation of glory can take place, or the longing and sighing cease.

Even we ourselves also: this rendering preserves the emphatic repetition of the original, according to the reading preferred by recent critics. The various readings do not materially affect the general sense.

Groan within ourselves: the longing of creation is expressed in outward signs and in a sort of universal sympathy: the longing of the believer is inward, known only to his own heart.

Waiting for the adoption: Believers have already received adoption in part, namely in God's purpose and in the gift of a Spirit which belongs only to God's children, but are still waiting for that final, complete, and public adoption which will take place in "the revelation of the sons of God" (v. 19).

to wit, the redemption of our body: By this apposition the Apostle explains how those who are already the sons of God can still be waiting for adoption. The adoption, "viewed specifically as complete" (Lange), is identified with that part which completes it, namely "the redemption of our body" from its present condition of weakness, sinfulness, decay, and death: "For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed with our house which is from heaven" (2 Cor. v. 2).

For we are saved by hope: St. Paul says sometimes "ye" (or we) were saved (Rom. viii. 24), or "Ye have been saved" (Ephes. ii. 5, 8), sometimes "Ye are being saved" (1 Cor. xv. 2), and sometimes "Ye shall be saved" (Rom. x. 9, 13). It is important to observe this, because we are thus taught that "salvation involves a moral condition which must have begun already, though it will receive its final accomplishment hereafter" (Sp. Lightfoot, 'Revision', p. 94). The reason why we are still waiting for the redemption of our body is that the salvation of which we were made partakers (by faith not "by hope") is still an object of hope, not of complete realisation and present possession. The A. V. "by hope" disregards St. Paul's distinction between faith and hope: "faith accepts the present remission of sins; hope is the expectation of future deliverance" (Melanchthon). On the "modal" dative see Winer, § xxxi. 7, d.

But hope that is seen: "A hope" means in this clause a thing hoped for (Col. i. 5; 1 Tim. i. 1; Acts xxviii. 20). When already present before the eyes it ceases to be an object of hope: for it is of the essence of hope that it looks not at the things that are seen, but at the things that are not seen (Heb. xi. 1).

For what a man seeth, why doth be also hope for? The actual sight and possession of the object leaves no room for hope properly so called. But if the object of our hope is unseen, then we naturally fall into the improper attitude of hope, and wait "in patience.

On this sense of δια with the genitive, see notes on ii. 27, iv. 11, xiv. 20, and Winer, p. iii. § 47.

26, 27. THE PRESENT HELP OF THE SPIRIT.

This is the second ground of encouragement to wait patiently amid present suffering for the glory which shall be revealed: see on v. 18.

26. Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: And in like manner the Spirit also helpeth our infirmity. The passage refers not to "infirmities" in general, but particularly to "infirmity" under present suffering and waiting: this connexion with the preceding context is clearly shown by the word "likewise (συνάρνησις)." As we on our part wait in patience, so on God's part there is the Holy Spirit joining His help with our weakness. The patient expectation, which follows from the nature of hope, would fail through our infirmity, if the latter were not sustained by the help of God's Spirit.

Van Hengel's interpretation of "the Spirit" as meaning the spirit of God's children, the trust and confidence with which the Holy Spirit inspires them, is excluded by such ex-
intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.

28 And we know that all

tensions as "the mind of the Spirit," "the Spirit maketh intercession for us," which imply a person, and a person distinct from the believer himself.

Before proceeding to describe how the Spirit helpeth our infirmity the Apostle shows more fully the nature of that infirmity in reference to prayer. We know not what our prayer should be, for two reasons, because the future is still hidden, and even in the present life we know not what is best for us (Augustine).

"for we know not what we should pray for as we ought." "for what to pray according to our need, we know not." The use of the Greek Article is noticeable: it turns the question "What should we pray for?" into an Objective Sentence dependent on over. We know not the—what to pray, &c. The construction is characteristic of St. Paul and St. Luke: see Luke i. 62; ix. 46; xix. 48; xxii. 5, 24, 25, 37; Acts iv. 24; xxil. 30; Rom. xiii. 9; Gal. v. 14; Eph. iv. 9; 1 Thess. iv. 1. "What we should pray for" is less correct than "What we should pray," i.e. what our prayer should be: compare Luke xviii. 11; Phil. i. 9; 1 Kings viii. 30, 48; 2 Kings xix. 20. "According to our need": the Greek adverb does not refer to the manner of praying, but to the correspondence between the prayer and that which is really needed.

Pythagoras forbade his disciples to pray for themselves, because they knew not what was expedient. Socrates more wisely taught his disciples to pray simply for good things, the Gods knowing best what sort of things are good (Xen. 'Mem. Socratis,' i. ii. 20). But better illustrations of St. Paul's meaning are found in his own experience, recorded in Phillip. i. 22, 23. "What I shall choose I must not. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ," and in the experience of Our Lord Himself. "Now is my soul troubled: and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name" (John xii. 27, 48).

but the Spirit itself.] Observe the climax: the whole creation groans together: we ourselves, though we have the first-fruits of the Spirit, groan within ourselves: nay more, the Holy Spirit Himself intercedes for us with groanings.

Thus the ascending order of thought, the emphatic form "the Spirit himself," and the phrase "maketh intercession for us," show that neither the sanctified human spirit, nor any spiritual gift, such as the gift of prayer and intercession, can satisfy the Apostle's meaning. It is the Holy Ghost himself that intercedes, and that with groanings which are His, inasmuch as they are prompted by Him and express "the mind of the Spirit." Yet St. Paul does not represent the Holy Spirit, as Jesus is represented by St. John, "groaning within himself." "It is not in Himself, not in the substance of the Eternal and Blessed Trinity, but it is in us that He groans, because He makes us groan" (August. Tract. in Joh. vi. 2).

"with groanings which cannot be uttered." Or—"with speechless groanings." "Not in words but in groans doth the Spirit make intercession for the Saints, and in such groans as cannot be uttered in words. For how can language express what God's Spirit speaks to God, when sometimes even our own spirit cannot explain in words what it feels and thinks?" (Origen).

St. Paul means certainly more than any merely human emotion, however deep and holy; the groanings of the Holy Spirit cannot be uttered in the language of earth, nor His meaning fully known to man. The believer himself is conscious that he cannot express in words the infinite hopes and longings that he feels. But God is "He that searcheth the hearts" of men and knows all that is done there: and the heart, regarded as the seat of spiritual as well as natural life is the sphere of the Spirit's working: there He intercedes for us, using the heart as the instrument of His appeal to God; and so God "knoweth what is the mind (or "meaning, φωνή) of the Spirit": compare vi. 6.

27. because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God. ] "because according to God's will will he make intercession for saints." Literally, "according to God," as in 2 Cor. viii. 9, 10, "sorrow according to God." These words (εἰρωνείας Θεοῦ) are placed first because they are emphatic.

"for saints:" the absence of the Article brings out the essential quality.

Thus the clause combines two reasons in one, why God must know what the meaning of the Spirit is: for (1) His intercession is in accordance with God's own will and purpose, for the Spirit searcheth all things, yes, even the deep things of God" (1 Cor. ii. 10),
things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

and (2) His intercession is "for saints" and saints, as such, are the special objects of the Divine purpose, in accordance with which the Spirit intercedes. The two thoughts thus combined, God's purpose on behalf of saints, form the theme of the next paragraph.

28-30. THE ALL-EMBRACING PURPOSE OF GOD'S LOVE.

To the inward comfort which the Holy Spirit imparts to God's children, St. Paul now adds a third and last ground of encouragement, our knowledge that in the Divine government of the world all things contribute to the welfare of those who love God, even the troubles therefore of this life, so far from hindering our salvation, help it forward.

28. all things.] I.e. all, whether prosperous or adverse, all including "the sufferings of this present time." The context requires this especial reference to sufferings.

The reading "God worketh all things" has less authority, and is not so well suited to the context.

work together.] Not merely does the joint and combined working of the whole result in a preponderance of good, but adverse circumstances as well as prosperous, each and all, conduct to good. See the Additional Note.

When he says 'all things,' he means even things that seem to be painful. For even if affliction, poverty, imprisonment, hunger, death, or any other thing should combine these, God is able to turn all these the contrary way. Since this also is part of His ineffable power, to make what things seem troublesome light to us, and turn them to our help" (Chrysostom).

for good.] Not only their future and eternal happiness, but all that now supports and helps them on the way to attain it is included in the term "good."

to them that love God.] The importance of this condition is marked in the Greek by its emphatic position at the beginning of the clause. "Love causes believers to take all things that God sends them favourably and in good part" (Bengel). See Ecclesiasticus xxxix. 27, "All these things are for good to the godly; so to the sinners they are turned into evil." God Himself is man's chief good, and the love of God is thus a necessary condition for the full enjoyment of His gifts, whether temporal or eternal; in other words, they are prepared for those who love Him (see 1 Cor. ii. 9; Eph. vi. 24; 2 Tim. iv. 8; Jas. i. 12, ii. 5; and Hooker, 'E. P.' I. xi. 2), to them who are the called according to his purpose." This second description of the same class of persons is not a correction or limitation of the previous definition "them that love God," but a statement of the cause why all things work together for their good, namely, that they "who love God" are the very class of persons who are "called according to his purpose." Their love of God is a necessary condition, but God's own purpose, working efficaciously in and for those who are called in accordance with it, is the cause that makes all things work together for their good. The purpose being that of Him "who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will" (Eph. i. 11), it follows that all must work for good to them who are called according to that purpose. It is strange that so enlightened an interpreter as Chrysostom should understand by "purpose" nothing more than the will or purpose of man assenting to the outward call. For the true meaning compare ix. 11; Eph. i. 11, iii. 11; 2 Tim. i. 9.

The contrast between the "many called" and "few chosen" (Matt. xx. 16; xxii. 14), is found only in our Lord's own teaching. The word "called" (ἐκάλεσαν) is applied by St. Paul only to those who have, as far as man can judge, obeyed the call: its use thus corresponds to that of "elect," "saints," with which it is sometimes combined. See i. 6, 7; 1 Cor. i. 2, 34; Jude i.; Apoc. xvii. 14. Moreover, those "who love God" have in themselves the witness that they are "called according to His purpose," the call has produced its right effect, and the moral condition for further progress is satisfied. The Apostle thus begins with what is known and practical, and his subsequent statements in xv. 29, 30, are distinctly limited to those individuals in whom these practical results are found. These positive results already realised he traces back to their eternal cause, in order to show that the steps still to be accomplished (glorification, &c.) are guaranteed by those already made, all being links in the sure chain of an unfailling and eternal purpose. That purpose, as traced out in the following verses, has its eternal foundation in foreknowledge and predestination, its temporal realisation in the Divine acts of calling and justifying, and its eternal fulfilment in glory. Compare Leighton on 1 Pet. i. 2: "The connexion of these we are now for our profit to take notice of: that effectual calling is inseparably tied to this eternal foreknowledge or election on
29. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

foreknowledge may be classed somewhat as follows:

(1) “Foreknew”—simply as persons to come into existence hereafter.

This is too general and vague, because all are thus foreknown, while the foreknowledge here meant is limited to the particular persons who become predestinated, called, &c.

(2) “Foreknew”—as good and worthy to be known, i.e., approved: so Origen.

Or, “foreknew” as those who would believe and obey the call (Augustine’s earlier view: “Propos. ex Ep. ad. Rom. lv.”; “nee praedestinavit aliquem nisi quem praeviscit crediturum et secuturum vocationem suam, quos et electos dicit”).

These and other like interpretations, which make faith, obedience, or moral worth the object of the Divine foreknowledge here meant, are rightly rejected as adding an idea which is contained neither in the word προφητεύω nor in the context.

Meyer’s interpretation—“foreknew as those who should one day become conformed to the image of his Son”—is in like manner to be rejected as adding an idea which has not yet been presented in the preceding context, and which cannot be ascribed to προφητεύω without destroying the distinction between it and προφητεύω.

(3) “Foreknew” is taken as equivalent to “fore-ordained,” knew and adopted them as His own, of His own free love and absolute decree (Calvin, Leighton, Haldane).

The objections to this third interpretation are:

(a) That it is not supported by the usage of the word.

(b) That it identifies and confounds two ideas which Scripture keeps distinct, foreknowledge and election, e.g. 1 Pet. 1:2, “elect according to the foreknowledge of God.”

(4) “Foreknew” as the individual objects of His purpose (προθεσις), and therefore foreknew as “them that love God”: see notes on v. 28.

This interpretation introduces nothing that is not already found in the preceding context, and retains the simple and proper meaning of προφητεύω. Nor is it open to any charge of making human merit the ground of God’s election; for the love which He foreknew is but the answer to His love poured out in the heart by His Spirit (v. 5).

“Foreknowledge” is the act of conscious perception, without which there can be no volition. Augustine makes a clear distinction: “there can be no predestination without foreknowledge, but there may be fore-
Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?

He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

knowledge without predestination: God may foreknow also things which He does not Himself do (De Prædest. Sanctorum, x.)

God's eternal purpose embraces all stages in salvation from first to last. His foreknowledge defines persons as the objects of that purpose not arbitrarily, but as included in the class of "them that love God"; His election, actuated by love, chooses those persons [not even included in this passage]; His predestination determines what He will do for them.

be also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son. The Divine predestination is in the New Test. always qualified, as here, by a statement of its end and aim: compare Acts iv. 28; 1 Cor. ii. 7; Eph. i. 5, 11. See the Additional Note.

By "the image of his Son" is not meant the example or pattern of Christ's sufferings (Calvin), or of His holy obedience, but the embodiment of the Divine and human natures in the Incarnate Word. Compare 1 Cor. xv. 49; 2 Cor. iii. 18; Col. i. 15, iii. 10.

Of that Divine Image each glorified saint will be a particular form: and conformity to that Image in body, soul, and spirit is "the glory which shall be revealed in us" (v. 18), as the result of God's predestination.

But the full and final aim of that predestination, reaching beyond us to Christ, is "that He might be the firstborn among many brethren," not standing in His "sole glory" as the only begotten Son of God, but making us His brethren by a new creation, and so bringing many sons unto glory. (Compare Col. i. 15, 18; Heb. i. 6, ii. 10, 11.)

30. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called.] We here pass from the eternal counsel in its ideal process to its realisation in time. Here also three Divine acts are specified,—he called, "justified," "glorified."

"Called," i.e. by the preaching of the Gospel, as in a Thess. ii. 14. "Whereunto be called you by our gospel." But the usage of the verb in this sense, like that of ἔλεγον, seems to be limited by the context to the cases of effectual calling: here certainly it is so. Compare Reuss, 'Théologie chrétienne,' ii. 120.

Such a calling is of necessity followed by justification, even as justification by glorification. Otherwise God's foreknowledge and predestination would be falsified. The Aorist "represents the future glorification as so necessary and certain that it appears as if already given and completed with the ἡδαιμονία." (Meyer, who refers to Hebr. Vig. p. 747.) Rather, the Aorist has the same sense in all the clauses: it represents each act as complete (and therefore certain) without determining (ἀποκριθείς) its relative time whether Past, Present, or Future. This admirably serves "the triumphant flow of the great chain of thought, and the thoroughly Pauline boldness of expression." (Meyer.)

31. What shall we then say to these things? Rather, as in vi. 1, vii. 1. "What shall we say then." &c. Looking at these things, the revealed purpose of God and all the sure steps of its fulfilment, what inference shall we draw?

"If God be (rather, 'is') for us," (as these things plainly show) "who can be against us?" This is the first of a stream of rapid and exciting questions in which the Apostle cannot wait for any formal answer.

32. He that spared not his own Son.] This climax of God's mercies (Theodoret), the strongest of all proofs that "God is for us," is brought forward with an emphasis (οὗτοι) that we cannot imitate, as the sure ground of the question that follows. The allusion to Gen. xxii. 12, 16, is too close to be accidental: St. Paul uses the very word (ἵππειρον, "spared") which the LXX. use concerning Abraham. This expression proves incidentally, but most clearly, that St. Paul regarded the Son of God as being of one nature with the Father: otherwise where would be the force of the comparison with the human father who withheld not his only son.

"Thus has God Himself fulfilled that which in Abraham's symbolic offering He acknowledged as the highest possible proof of love." (Philippi.)

L
33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?

36 As it is written, "For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.

37 Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.

*delivered him up. I.e. to death: see iv. 25. how shall be not with him also freely give us all things?* The greatest and most costly gift ensures all the rest that depend on it, all the things (τά μάρτυρα) that God has promised to us in Christ. To give freely (εὐαγγελίζω) is agreeable to God's nature: to deliver up his Son to death, and not to spare Him, was the greatest sacrifice God could make for man. Thus the argument is like that in ch. v. 9, 10, where see notes.

33-35. The punctuation and division of verses in the A.V. must be slightly corrected, to bring out the rhythmic flow of thought and language in this noble passage. Still full of the thought of God's sure love, the Apostle asks triumphantly, "Who shall lay any charge against God's elect?" He makes answer to himself in another question: "It is God that justifieth: Who is he that condemneth?" And then, as if bounding on from one rock to another, he passes from the Father's love to that of the Son:

"It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen, who is also at the right hand of God, Who also maketh intercession for us: Who shall separate us from the love of Christ?"

This order is adopted by the early Greek commentators: and is confirmed by reference to the source of the Apostle's thoughts in Isaiah l. 8, 9, where we have the same parallelism: "He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me?" . . . "Behold, the Lord God will help me; who is he that shall condemn me?" It is the only order that fully preserves the simplicity, freedom, and vigour of this loftiest flight of Christian eloquence.

"God's elect," as such (observe the absence of the article), need fear no accuser: it is God Himself, the Judge of all, that justifies them (οὐ υἱὸς τῆς εἰρήνης); who then is there to condemn them?

In Isaiah it is Messiah Himself that thus speaks; a fact which makes St. Paul's rapid transition to the mention of Christ's love more easy and natural.

*It is Christ that died.* St. Paul accumulates the proofs of love and power: of love, for "it is Christ that died" for our sins; of power, for He not only died, but also is risen for our justification; of power again, for it is the same Christ "who is also at the right hand of God," and then, finally, of love still abiding, for it is He "who also maketh intercession for us."

35. The sure inference from such proofs of both the will and power to save, is expressed in the triumphant question: "Who shall separate us from the love of Christ?"

By "the love of Christ" is meant, not our love to Him, but His love to us, of which the proofs have been given in v. 34. This sense is confirmed by v. 37, "through him that loved us."

*shall tribulation, or distress.* See on ii. 9. These things might cut off man's love from us, but cannot hinder Christ's love from reaching and saving us.

On the various reading see Additional Note.

36. as it is written. Closely connected with the last word "sword."

In the midst of his enumeration of sufferings and perils, suggested, doubtless by his own experience (2 Cor. vi. 4), St. Paul is reminded by the word "sword," of a passage in Ps. xlv. 22, which describes the like sufferings of God's faithful people in an earlier age, and which the Apostle regards as typical of the persecutions to which the faithful are exposed in his own age. "But there is this remarkable difference between the tone of the Psalmist and the tone of the Apostle. The former cannot understand the chastening, and complains that God's heavy hand has been laid without cause upon His people; the latter can rejoice, in persecution also, and exclaim, 'Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors.'" (Perowne). See notes on the 44th Psalm.

37. Nay.] Literally, "But." The negative answer is omitted as self-evident, and the question met at once by a directly contrary affirmation.

*we are more than conquerors.* An excellent rendering, first introduced in the Geneva Bible, 1557. Compare 2 Cor. iv. 8-11, 17.
38 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers,
nor things present, nor things to come,
39 Nor height, nor depth, nor

"A holy arrogance of victory, not selfish, but in the consciousness of the might of Christ" (Meyer). "More than conquerors? What is that? Why they (i.e. the adversaries are not only overcome and disarmed, but they are brought over to our faction; they war on our side." (Chillingworth, Serm. V. § 61.) "This is a new order of victory, to conquer by means of our adversaries" (Chrysostom).

through him that loved us.] This must refer to Christ, through whose inseparable love (v. 35) we are made conquerors.

The aorist points to His one greatest act of love, already mentioned in v. 34. Compare v. 6.

38. The answer given in v. 17 is now confirmed by a declaration of the Apostle's own personal conviction, that no power in heaven or earth, in time or in eternity, can separate us from the Divine love.

What St. Paul thus expresses is a moral conviction rather than a logical certainty. It may be asked, Cannot the believer fall away? Is not this implied in such cases as that of Demas, 2 Tim. iv. 10, and in St. Paul's own words, "If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and not moved away from the hope of the Gospel, which ye have heard" (Col. i. 23)? The answer is well given by Godet: "In the moral life freedom has always its part, as it had from the first moment of believing. What St. Paul means is that nothing shall pluck us out of Christ's arms against our will, and as long as we refuse not ourselves to abide there: compare Joh. x. 28-30." neither death, nor life.] The last point mentioned in the question (v. 35, 36) is taken up first, "death," with its opposite, "life," compare xiv. 8. The argument requires that the words should have their widest sense, as general states in one or other of which we must be found. Explanations such as "the fear of death, the love of life" (Grotius), or "death with its agonies, life with its distractions and temptations" (Godet), only limit the flight of the Apostle's thoughts just when they would soar above all limitations.

nor angels, nor principalities.] The angels mentioned in the N.T. are much more frequently the good than the evil; but the word itself never indicates the specific quality, either good or evil, this being either expressed, or at least implied, in the context. Meyer's assertion that "angels" used absolutely signifies nothing else than simply good angels, is arbitrary in such passages as Acts xxiii. 8, 1 Cor. iv. 9, and quite inadmissible in 1 Cor. vi. 13; Heb. ii. 16.

In our present passage "angels" and "principalities" must both have the widest possible application: the point in question is not the moral disposition, whether good or evil, but the power of the angelic order of created things.

"Principalities" are angels of greater power and might (Eph. vi. 12; 2 Pet. ii. 12).

nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers.] This seems the more natural order, "powers" being akin to "principalities" (1 Cor. xv. 24; Eph. i. 21): but the weight of ancient authority is in favour of a different arrangement:

1 Neither death, nor life,
2 Nor angels, nor principalities,
3 Nor things present, nor things to come,
4 Nor powers,
5 Nor height, nor depth,
6 Nor any other creature.

"The principle of arrangement would seem to be, to place alternately inanimate and animate objects, reserving 'creature,' which sums up the whole to the last line, in order to denote that 'the dominion over all the works of God's hands,' originally designed for man (Gen. i. 26; Ps. viii. 6), which he had lost by having bowed down to and 'served the creature' (Rom. i. 25), should now, through his union with Christ Jesus, be restored to him, 'all things being put in subjection under his feet,' Heb. ii. 8" (Forbes). If the order has this significance, it may be attributed to St. Paul's familiarity with Hebrew poetry, in which the most perfect parallelism is often found in passages of the most servile eloquence.

Meyer arranges the ten in two pairs, followed by two threes.

nor things present, nor things to come.] No dimensions of time: "nor height, nor depth;" no dimensions of space.

These abstractions bring out the idea of universality more emphatically, and suit the rhetorical character of the passage better than any more limited expressions, such as "heaven or earth," "heaven or hell," by which some would interpret them.
any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

The love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. These last words teach us that “Christ’s love” (v. 35) is no other than “God’s love” manifested to us, and operating on our behalf in the Person of Christ: see Note on v. 8.

This noble hymn of victory (vv. 31–39), while growing naturally out of its immediate context (vv. 28–30), and having a primary reference to the sure triumph of them that love God, forms at the same time a grand conclusion to the whole doctrinal portion of the Epistle. “It is the crown of that edifice of salvation in Christ, of which St. Paul had laid the foundation in his demonstration of the righteousness of faith (i.–v.) and raised the superstructure in his exposition of sanctification (vi.–viii.). After this it will only remain for us to see the salvation, thus studied in its essence, unfold itself upon the stage of history” (Godet).

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 2, 3, 9, 11, 28, 29, 35.

2. For ἁλευθέρως με Tischendorf (8) reads ἁλευθέρως αὐτί, with B & F G. Tertullian’s reading varies: he has “te” in ‘De Pudicitia,’ c. 17, but “me” in ‘De Resurrectione Carnis,’ c. 46. The First Person is sometimes more natural in the connexion with c. VII., and αὐτί may have come from the last syllable of ἁλευθέρως.

Here, then, as below in v. 35, it must be admitted that the Vatican and Sinaitic MSS., notwithstanding their general excellence, give an inferior reading.

3. a. It is generally agreed that τὸ ἄδικον τοῦ νόμου is a nominative absolute (cf. Eur. ‘Troad.’ 489) in apposition to the sentence, ὁ θεὸς κατείκισεν, κ.τ.λ.

But ἄδικον is sometimes active, “unable” (Acts xiv. 8; Rom. xv. 1), and sometimes passive, “impossible” (Matt. xix. 26; Heb. vi. 4, 18; x. 4).

The passive sense, “that which was impossible to the law,” is well paraphrased in the A. V., “that which the law could not do,” and is preferred by Meyer and Alford.

The objection to it is that St. Paul would have written τὸ ἄδικον τοῦ νόμου, instead of τὸ ἄδικον τοῦ νόμου. Of this latter combination, the passive ἄδικον and the genitive, no examples have been brought forward; for in all the passages quoted by Meyer in support of the passive sense, the active is evidently required.

Plato, ‘Hipp. Maj.’ p. 295, E.: οὐκέτι τὸ δυνατόν (“that which is able”) ἔκατον ἀπεργαζόμενο, εἰς ὅπερ δυνατόν, εἰς τὸν και ἀρχαγμόν, τὸ δὲ ἄδικον (“but that which is unable”) ἄργητον.

Xen. ‘Hell.’ I. iv. 13: ἀπὸ τῶν αὐτῶν καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς πόλεως δυνατοῦ (“from his own resources and from the ability of the city”): see Breitenbach’s note.

Epistle to Diognetus, c. ix. C.’Ἐιλείγας... τὸ ἄδικον τῆς ἡμέρας φύσεως εἰς τὸ γενέων ζωῆς. The active sense is strongly confirmed by the similar phrase τὸ δυνατόν αὐτῶν in ix. 22.

With the active sense the construction may be thus explained: “For the impotence of the law being this, that it could not condemn sin in the flesh, God did condemn sin in the flesh,” &c.

b. ἐν ὅ, “in that.” A. V. a much better rendering than “because” (Alford). It points to that in which the inability of the law consists, namely in its being overpowered by the opposition of “the flesh” (vii. 14–18).


c. ἐν ὁμοίωσιν σαρκὸς ἀμαρτίας. The consistency of this expression with the reality and the sinlessness of Christ’s Flesh is ably defended by Tertullian (‘Contra Marcionem.’ V. 14; ‘De Carne Christi,’ xvi., xviii.), and
by Augustine, who shews how Christ's flesh was s'less on either hypothesis of Traducianism or Creatianism (Epist. 164).

This ancient interpretation, accepted even by Baur ('Paulus,' I. I. e. viii.), has been elaborately attacked by Pfeiderer as involving "two errors: a mistranslation of the word ἐμοίωμα, and an inadmissible separation of the two ideas σάρξ and ἀμαρτίας. As regards the first, it is beyond question, that if the words had merely been ἐν ἐμοίωμασ σαρκος, no one would have hesitated to translate them simply 'in fleshly shape,' that is to say, in a shape or form of appearance which was the same as that of all human flesh, and in fact consisted of flesh" ('Paulinism,' I. p. 53).

In this bold assertion grammar and sense are alike put to confusion. The Objective Genitive is turned into a Genitive of the Material: σάρκος ἀμαρτίας "denotes" (we are told) "the material of which the human form of Christ, like that of other men, consists" (ib.).

If we apply this method to Deut. iv. 18, ἐμοίωμα παρὰ ἑαυτοῦ, it will turn "the given image" itself into "a creeping likeness," and in Ps. cvi. 10 ἐν ἐμοίωματι μὴν ἔσθωνος χίρων, the cleft that Aaron made of gold becomes an actual living "calf that eateth hay."

We prefer the opinion of "most of the commentators, who explain the decisive passage in Rom. vii. 3 as if it meant that Christ appeared only in a 'likeness of sinful flesh,' that is to say, in a body which resembled indeed the body of other men so far as it consisted of flesh, but was unlike them in this respect that His flesh was not like that of all others, 'sinful flesh'" (ib.).

Other objections are urged both by Pfeiderer and Holsten:

(1.) The sinlessness of Christ's flesh directly contradicts this passage: for how could God have condemned "sin in the flesh" on the Cross of Christ, if Christ's flesh was not "flesh of sin."

This objection rests wholly on the erroneous connexion of ἐν τῇ σαρκί noticed below in note e.

(2.) It is opposed to the whole development of thought from vi. 1 to viii. 3, which labours to prove that because man is in bondage to sin only through his flesh, he is delivered by the Cross of Christ just because it is the death of this very flesh of sin.

It is enough to answer that St. Paul nowhere attempts to prove that man is in bondage to sin only through his flesh.

(3.) St. Paul's whole anthropology recognises no flesh that is not flesh of sin.

This objection rests on the same groundless assumption as the preceding (2): see note on σάρξ, Introduction, § 9.

For a full discussion of Holsten's objections and of the whole subject, see Wendt, 'Fleisch und Geist.'

d. καὶ περὶ ἀμαρτίας. Chrysostom and others, disregarding καὶ, connect these words with κατέκριμοι, in the sense "condemned sin for sin," i. e. as being exceeding sinful.

All the English Versions in Bagster's Hexapla (except General) give the same connexion, the A. V. 1611 being punctuated (as it is in a chained copy at Walgrave) thus: "and for sinne condemned sin in the flesh," with the marginal rendering, "and by a sacrifice for sin," which corresponds with Origen's interpretation.

The proper connexion with πίστις is given by Theophylact, Genadius, Photius, and others in Cramer's 'Catena,' with the interpretations "because of sin's mastery over mankind," or "in order to conquer sin."

The more comprehensive rendering "on account of sin" (proper peccatum) is preferable.

e. The words τῆς ἀμαρτίας ἐν τῇ σαρκί might possibly be taken as forming one idea, "the sin that was in the flesh," as τοῦ βαπτίσματος τοῦ χιλιονοῦ (vi. 4): see Winer, p. 169.

But the words ἐν τῇ σαρκί in this construction only give a definition of sin which is not needed in this context after σαρκεῖ ἀμαρτίας, whereas if joined with κατέκριμοι they are full of significance.

It remains to be determined in what flesh sin was condemned, and bow? The answers are various.

(i. Origen. In Christ's flesh, considered as a sin-offering which put away sin (Heb. ix. 26).

(ii. Genadius, in Cramer's 'Catena,' p. 123.

(a) In Christ's flesh, as having been kept free from sin, and unconquered by it.

(b) In Christ's flesh God condemned sin of sin (περὶ ἀμαρτίας, de peccato), because it unjustly involved Christ's sinless flesh in death.

All these interpretations would require ἐν τῇ σαρκί ἀπώτα τοῦ to distinguish Christ's flesh from that which has been twice before mentioned, διὰ τῆς σαρκός, and σαρκός ἀμαρτίας. They err, however, only in substituting the more limited sense "his flesh" for the more general "the flesh." Christ's holy life "condemned sin" as unworthy to exist "in the flesh" which He and all men had in common: compare Irenæus, III. xx. 2.

9. Though εἰς ἐκκείμενος implies a more confident assumption than εἰς, it cannot possibly mean "since" (εἰς εκκείμενος, Chrysostom), for that would exclude the opposite supposition which is expressly brought forward in the following clause, εἰ δέ τις πνεῦμα ἐκ τούτου ὁλοκληρωμένων. The assumption made in either case...
may or may not correspond to the existing fact, not because the fact is itself contingent, but because it is unknown to the speaker.

This uncertainty of the assumption is fully expressed in “if so be,” and the Subjunctive ought not to be repeated in the Verb “dwell,” for in the original the Indicative Present (οἰκείος, οῖκος ἔχει) represents not an uncertain contingency, but that which, according to the assumption, is already an existing fact. Wiclif’s rendering “dwelleth,” “hath,” is therefore more correct than the A. V. “dwell,” “have,” derived from Tyndale. In defending the Subjunctive, Bp. Ellicott (‘On the Revision,’ p. 175) fails to distinguish between uncertainty in the assumption, and contingency in the fact assumed: the case is contemplated, according to the hypothesis, as actually in existence.

11. In the Dialogues on the Holy Trinity, ascribed to Maximus, the Greek monk and confessor (A. D. 560–663), Orthodoxus, being challenged to prove that as the Father raises the dead and quickens them (αἰωνιόντος, so also do the Son and Holy Ghost, quotes this passage with the reading διὰ τοῦ ἐνεκούντος αὐτοῦ πνεύματος. Macedonius replies that the reading is διὰ τοῦ ἐνεκούντος, except perhaps in one or two falsified copies. Orthodoxus asserts that the genitive is found in all the ancient copies, but, as this is considered by Macedonius to be a disputed point, passes on to a different argument.

This imaginary conversation only proves that in the 7th century the reading of the passage had long been in dispute, a fact of which we have abundant evidence of much earlier date. The genitive is found in K A C, in many cursives, and some early versions, and Fathers. But this testimony is outweighed by that of other uncials and cursives, of the Italic and Syriac versions, and of the earlier Fathers, Irenaeus, Tertullian, Origen, Methodius.

This preponderance of external testimony is supported by the internal evidence:

(1) The argument of the passage, as stated by Bp. Pearson himself (see foot-note), is inconclusive, unless we substitute the reading “because of his Spirit that dwelleth in you”: for it is nowhere implied in the premises that Christ was raised up “by the Spirit.”

(4) The resurrection is ascribed in the N. T. to God in general, or to the Father, or to the Son (John v. 21; vii. 39; xi. 25), but not to the Holy Ghost in particular.

(5) The genitive is more likely than the accusative to have been introduced for its dogmatic import, as proving the personality of the Holy Ghost.

It should, however, be observed that the accusative represents the indwelling Spirit not only as the condition, but as the cause of true vitality.

28. πάντα συνεργεῖ εἰς ἄγαθον [ὁ Θεός]. Though supported by good authority (A. B. Ethiopic) ὁ Θεός is probably a gloss: both the form of the sentence and the sense are better without it.

The meaning of συνεργεῖ, “work together, one with another,” preferred by Estius, Bengel, Reiche, and Alford, seems to have been rejected by other interpreters without sufficient reason. The Verb has this sense not only in the phrases συνεργεῖν ἀλλήλους (Xenoph. Memor. Socr. II. iii. 88) συνεργεῖν ιατροῖς (ib. III. v. 16), but also when there is no Dativ expressed as in the passage of Diogenes Laertius (vii. 104) quoted by Fritzsch, δικαίως λέγεισθαι τά ἀδικία σαπεῖ γινέσθαι πρὸς κακοδαμίας συνεργείτα. Compare Polybius, XI. ix. 1, where συνεργεῖν is quite synonymous with συμβαλλέσθαι.

29. The word προορίζω, not found in classical writers nor in the LXX, is always in the N. T. accompanied by words which indicate the end and aim of the predestination.

This aim is here expressed in the adjective συμμάρφων, a secondary predicate used proleptically as in Phil. iii. 21, where the words εἰς τὸ γενέσθαι αὐτῶ are a gloss added to explain the construction. For the use of συμμάρφων with the genitive, see Bernhard, ‘Syntax,’ p. 163; Matt. ‘G. Gr.’ § 379, obs. 2.

38. For τοῦ Χριστοῦ B M and some cursives read τοῦ Θεοῦ τῆς ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ, a manifest interpolation from v. 39, and an undeniable instance in which the Vatican and Sinaitic MSS. combine in giving a wrong reading. Compare Additional Note on v. 2.
CHAPTER IX.

1. Paul is sorry for the Jews. 2. All the seed of Abraham were not the children of the promise. 18. God hath mercy upon whom he will. 21. The potter may do with his clay what he list. 25. The calling of the Gentiles and rejection of the Jews were foretold. 32. The cause why so few Jews embraced the righteousness of faith.

I SAY the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost,

2. That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.

3. For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh:

4. Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises;

CHAPTERS IX.—XI. ISRAEL’S UNBELIEF, REJECTION, AND FUTURE RESTORATION.

The argument that the Gospel "is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth" (i. 16—viii. 39) closes in a strain of triumphant thanksgiving.

But with all the Apostle’s joy in Christ’s salvation there is mingled a great and unceasing sorrow. For in stating the theme of his great argument (i. 16) St. Paul had spoken of a "salvation to every one that believeth, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek." Why then have his brethren and kinsmen according to the flesh so little share in this salvation? Where is the promise that was made to the Jew first? In treating this subject St. Paul, after a fervent protestation of love and sorrow for his own people, (ix. 1—5) declares that the cause of their rejection is not a failure of God’s promise to the chosen people Israel (6—13), nor any injustice in God (14—29), but their own rejection of "the righteousness of God by faith" (ix. 30—x. 21). Consolation is found in the salvation of a "remnant according to election of grace" (xi. 1—10), in the present acceptance of the Gentiles (vii—x), and the future restoration of Israel (23—25), all which are proofs of the wisdom and glory of God (33—36).

CHAP. IX. 1—5. MOURNING OVER ISRAEL.

The sudden transition from triumphant joy to the keenest sorrow is made more striking by the absence of any connecting particle. But the direct connexion of thought with vii. 28—32 is evident. If the Gospel brings sure salvation to God’s elect, why is His chosen people Israel not found among the heirs of this salvation?

1. I say the truth in Christ, I lie not.] I speak truth. Show. Compare 1 Tim. ii. 7. St. Paul’s conflicts with Jews and Judaisers might cast doubt upon his love to his own nation. Hence he affirms the sincerity of his sorrow for them with the assurance that he speaks with all the truthfulness of one who feels that he is living and acting "in Christ" (Eph. iv. 17; 1 Thess. iv. 1), and for whom it is therefore impossible to lie (Col. iii. 9; Eph. iv. 15).

my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost.] Rather, my conscience bearing witness with me. The Holy Ghost is "the Spirit of truth," and the witness of a conscience enlightened by Him and acting under His influence must be true. St. Paul’s conscience bears witness with him, i.e. in accordance with his words, "in the Holy Ghost," and therefore in all the clearness of divine truth. See note on ἐγνώρισάμενος, ii. 15; viii. 16.

2. The truth so solemnly attested in v. 1 is now expressed twice, and with growing intensity,—"great grief to me," "unceasing sorrow to my heart."

3. For I could wish.] The form of expression (ἐγνώρισάμαι, literally "I was wishing" or "praying") implies a real but passing wish, not calmly weighed and deliberately retained, but already resigned as impracticable (Acts xxv. 22; Gal. iv. 20; see Winer, III. § xii. 2).

that myself were accursed from Christ.] When the Apostle brings himself to utter the cause of his grief, his intense love and sorrow for Israel burst forth in words which might well seem incredible. His solemn protestation (v. 1) was not unnecessary, even if his affection for his countrymen had never been doubted.

accursed.] The meaning of the word "anathema" (1 Cor. xii. 3, xvi. 22; Gal. i. 8, 9) is to be derived from its use by the LXX in Lev. xxvii. 29, 30: "Every devoted thing (ἀναθήμα) is most holy unto the Lord. None devoted (ἀναθηματι), which shall be devoted of men, shall be redeemed; but shallsurely be put to death."

The doom of the devoted one, instead of the death of the body, is separation from Christ and from the salvation that is in Him. Like Moses St. Paul, if it depended only on his love, would have given his own soul for his brethren’s sake, "if so he might bring.
5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.

camé, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.

them to true righteousness and eternal life." (Grotius).
But is not such a wish unreasonable and even irreverent? It must seem so to those whose hearts beat with no stronger pulse than that of a prudent self-interest. It is a fervent outburst of unselsh love, that may not be coldly criticised and weighed and measured: it is close akin to the spirit of Christ's self-sacrifice, and to that "foolishness of God" which "is wisest than men."

"O mighty love, O unsurpassable perfection, the servant speaks boldly to his Lord, and begs remission for the people, or claims to be himself also blotted out with them." (Clemens Rom. I. 53).

4. Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption.] St. Paul's sorrow, springing from natural affection for his kinsmen according to the flesh, is deepened by another feeling, "as much as they (οἱ ἱερεῖς) are Israelites; to whom belong all the privileges of the ancient covenant, which are now perfected "in the fulness of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ." How mournful then to see the heirs of the promise shut out from their inheritance!

First in the emphatic enumeration of the privileges of Israel is "the adoption," which was first announced in Egypt:—Israel is my son, even my firstborn" (Ex. iv. 22; Jer. xxxi. 9). To Israel only had God thus revealed Himself as a Father, until "the adoption" was perfected in Christ (viii. 14-17).

the glory. ] "The glory of the Lord," which was seen on Sinai (Ex. xxiv. 16, 17), and filled the tabernacle in the form of light or fire, covered at times by a cloud: see note on Ex. xl. 34. Israel alone had such a visible token of God's presence.

Such interpretations as "the national glory of Israel" (Fitzschel), or "the glory that will be theirs in the end of the world" (Reuss), are too vague to have place in an enumeration of the several distinguishing privileges of the Jews.

and the giving of the law.] In Gal iv. 24 St. Paul speaks of "two covenants, one from Mount Sinai:" but here the giving of the law, the one grand revelation of the will of Jehovah for the regulation of the national and personal life of His people, is distinguished from "the covenants" made at several times with the fathers from Abraham downwards. (2 Macc. viii. 15; Sap. xviii. 22; Sirach xlv. 11; Heb. xi. 13.) So St. Paul speaks in Eph. ii. 12 of "the commonwealth of Israel," a result of the giving of the law, and "the covenants of the promise," as distinct pri-

vileges of Israel from which other nations had been excluded. The singular, found in many MSS., may have arisen from a wish to obviate the mistake of referring the plural to the old and new covenants mentioned in Gal. iv. 24.

"the service of God." "The service" of the Tabernacle (compare Heb. ix. 1) was the only worship which God had appointed.

"the promises." These, as distinguished from "the covenants" upon which they are grounded, include the whole body of prophecies concerning Christ and His kingdom.

5. the fathers.] Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob (Acts iii. 13, vii. 32): to have sprung from such fathers, was one of the most cherished privileges of Israel (2 Cor. xi. 21), and of whom, as concerning the flesh, Christ came.] The last and greatest privilege of the Israelites is that the Messiah, so far as His human nature is concerned, springs from their race. We must notice here the important distinctions so carefully expressed by St. Paul's words and even by their exact order: "and from whom came the Christ as concerning the flesh." Christ is not in the same sense as the Patriarchs the peculiar property of the Israelites, "whose (οὐ) are the fathers." He springs indeed from their race (ἵη οὖν μέλη τῆς οἰκογενείας), but He "is over all," and not only is His Jewish origin thus contrasted with His universal supremacy, but it is also expressly limited to His human nature. The closing emphasis of the clause falls upon the words "as concerning the flesh," which point onward to their natural contrast in the other aspect of His Person, Who is "God blessed for ever.

who is over all, God blessed for ever." There is happily no variation in the MSS. to cast any doubt upon the wording of this great passage. But the MSS. have no marks of punctuation, and some modern critics adopt a different connexion. They assume that the words "God over all" are to be combined in this order as a title equivalent to "most High God," and asserting that St. Paul could not have applied this title to Christ, they deny that the clause refers to Him, and render it as a doxology: "May the God who is over all be blessed for ever." To this interpretation there are strong objections on grounds which are stated in the note at the end of the chapter. Here it may be enough to say that it gives a most inappropriate sense. St. Paul is expressing the anguish of his heart at the fall of his brethren: that anguish is deepened by the memory of their privileges, most of all by
6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, 'In Isaac shall thy seed be called.'

8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

9 For this is the word of promise, 'At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son.'

the thought that their race gave birth to the Divine Saviour, whom they have rejected. In this, the usual interpretation, all is most natural: the last and greatest cause of sorrow is the climax of glory from which the chosen race has fallen.

But how could such a lamentation close in a doxology? How could the Apostle bless God that Christ was born a Jew, in his anguish that the Jews had rejected Him?

On the other hand the declaration that Christ "is over all, God blessed for ever," is an opportune and noble protest against the indignity cast upon Him by the unbeliever of the Jews. "For what, saith he, if others blaspheme? Yet we who know His unspeakable mysteries, and His inefable wisdom, and His great providence, know that He is worthy not to be blasphemed but to be glorified" (Chrysostom).

6–13. NO FAILURE OF GOD'S PROMISE.

St. Paul's lamentation over his brethren and kinsmen according to the flesh has no such meaning as that God's promise has failed, for that belonged not to all natural descendants of Abraham, but only to the chosen seed, the true Israel.

6. Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel. "But not as though the word of God hath fallen to the ground: for not all they which are of Israel are Israel." "The word of God" is the promise given to Abraham and to his seed. This has not failed, for its principle from the first was not mere natural succession, but Divine election: not all who were sprung from the chosen people were therefore themselves the chosen people, true Israelites, heirs of the promise.

On this use of αὐτῶν see the note at the end.

7. Neither because they are the seed of Abraham. "Nor because they are Abraham's seed are they all children." I.e. children of Abraham in the fullest sense, as in viii. 17, "if children, then heirs." St. Paul goes back to Abraham in order to discuss the case of his two sons, and to show that in the very first generation, the title of natural descent was limited and restricted by Divine election. In ratifying Sarah's claim that the

son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with her son, God says to Abraham (Gen. xxii. 12), "In Isaac shall thy seed be called," i.e. the promised seed (Gen. xiii. 15, xv. 5, xvii. 7, 19); and then adds, "and also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed." Thus in using the term "seed of Abraham" in a twofold sense, here and in other passages, St. Paul only adopts a distinction which belonged to the promise from the first.

8. That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God. "That is, not the children of the flesh are thereby children of God." St. Paul interprets the text just quoted, by drawing out the general principle involved in the particular case of Ishmael the child of the flesh, and Isaac the child of promise. According to the A. V. none of "the children of the flesh" are "children of God:" in other words "the children of the flesh" do not include all the descendants of Abraham, but only those who are "children of the flesh" and nothing more. But the Greek idiom absolutely requires a different meaning, which we have tried to express above. The true "children" of Abraham are "children of God" by virtue of the adoption, v. 4. But who are these? Not "the children of the flesh" as such. See Note at end.

8 but the children of the promise.] This does not mean simply the promised children, but as Chrysostom says of Isaac, "It was not the power of the flesh, but the strength of the promise that gave birth to the child." It would be equally true to say that the child was begotten in the strength of faith, but the argument requires the Divine, not the human, side to be made prominent. It is not Abraham's fatherhood but determines the true seed, but that promise which was the expression of God's free election grace. It is clear from Gal. iv. 28 that "the children of the promise" correspond, in the Apostle's mind, to believers, whether Jew or Gentile, and "the children of the flesh" to the unbelieving Jews. And therefore really are what they are by God accounted: compare iv. 5, and note there.

10 And not only this; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac;
11 (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;
12 It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger.
13 As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.
14 What shall we say then? Is the组图 crash to natural text

1. I say, "of the promise," "for this word is (a word of) promise."

2. At this time."

3. According to this season;" see note on Gen. xviii. 10.

4. And not only this. Translate: "And not only she, but Rebecca also, when she had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac." The construction is incomplete, but the sense is clear. Not only Sarah received a promise from God, which limited the true seed of Abraham to her son: but in the next generation Rebecca also received a promise, in which the same principle of Divine election is still more strikingly proved.

5. Isaac, it might be said, was the only child of Abraham by his wife, "the free woman" (Gal. iv. 22), and so the only proper heir: but Esau and Jacob were twin children of one father, which is expressly mentioned in order to exclude all possibility of difference in parentage. Abraham's sons had only one common parent, Rebecca's have both.

6. even by our father Isaac.] The twins had for their common father the patriarch of the chosen race; and yet even in this case one of them, and he the first-born, was excluded. This case comes home more fully to the Jews than the rejection of the slave-born Ishmael.

7. (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;) The parenthesis is not only useless, but destroys the connection with the following verse. The conditional negatives (μηδήν, μήδεν) represent the circumstances not as mere facts of history, but as conditions entering into God's counsel and plan.

8. The time of the prediction was thus chosen, in order to make it clear that He who calls men to be heirs of His salvation makes free choice of whom He will, unfettered by any claims of birth or merit. Such absolute freedom is the rightful prerogative of Him, who is alone All-wise and All-good. The order of the clauses is very significant: the time chosen for the prediction to Rebecca is mentioned first—"while the children were not yet born, nor had done ought good or evil;" then the Divine counsel in choosing this time, "that the purpose of God according to election might stand not dependent on works but on him that calleth;" and last the principal sentence, "it was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger."

9. might stand] Literally, "might remain." The Present Tense extends this continuance even to the Apostle's own generation, in which the principle was again so signally and so sadly exemplified.

10. The elder shall serve the younger.] The whole passage in Gen. xxv. 23 is as follows: "Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels: and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger."

11. This prediction, St. Paul says, agrees with what is written in Malachi i. 2: "I have loved you, saith the Lord. Yet ye say, Wherein hast thou loved us? Was not Esau Jacob's brother? saith the Lord: yet I loved Jacob, and I hated Esau, and laid his mountains and his heritage waste." (v. 1. From the context of both passages it is clear that Esau and Jacob are regarded as two nations, and it is an arbitrary assumption to say that Malachi intends not the two nations, Edom and Israel, but the persons of the two brothers.

12. But it is also clear from the words "while they were not yet born," v. 11, that St. Paul regards them as individual persons.

13. The explanation, which combines both views, is that the choice of the nation is included in the choice of its founder, and the original passages refer to God's election of Jacob and his descendants to be the depositaries of His truth and the channels of His grace. What St. Paul shows is, that the election to these privileges was not dependent on any personal merit of the founder.

14. Esau have I hated. See the notes on Malachi i. 3. The love and the hate, as contemplated by St. Paul, are shown in God's choosing the younger to inherit the Messianic promise, and excluding the elder.

15. The exaggerated sense of "positive hate" which Meyer assigns to ἡμισταθείσα is quite forbidden by the record of the ample blessing bestowed on Esau.

16. 18. No INJUSTICE IN GOD.

Having shown from the history of the
there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.

15 For he saith to Moses, 'I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

Patriarchs that the present exclusion of the Jews from Christ's kingdom does not imply a failure of God's promise, St. Paul now proceeds to prove that it cannot be ascribed to injustice in God. The rejection of Ishmael and Esau with their descendants, and the choice of Israel to inherit the promised blessing, were examples of God's electing grace, which a Jew would heartily approve. But what if these examples involved a principle that would justify the exclusion of the unbelieving Jew himself? To such a conclusion, clearly implied in v. 11, objection would at once be made.

14. What shall we say then? From the account given in vv. 11-13 of the choice of Jacob and rejection of Esau before they had done either good or evil, the question naturally arises "Is there injustice in God," that He thus chooses one and rejects another without regard to their works? "The Jewish conscience, developed under the Law, was accustomed to consider the conduct of God towards man as depending entirely on the merit or demerit of his works" (Godet). The ground on which St. Paul rejects the thought of injustice is remarkable. His answer is simply an appeal to the testimony of Holy Scripture that God does exercise His mercy with absolute freedom of choice: the force therefore of his argument rests wholly on the very principle presupposed in the objection, "God cannot be unjust." Neither the truth of this axiom nor the authority of Scripture could be questioned by a Jew. For a similar argument, and for the form of the question, in which the negative answer is already implied, see iii. 5 and note.

15. For he saith to Moses. "For to Moses he saith." The order of the words is emphatic. "It was necessary to mention Moses, in order to show the certainty of the statement by the persons both of Him who spake and of him who heard" (Theodoret). But more than this is implied: if to Moses God's favour was absolutely free and unmerited, how much more to others!

I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy. Ex. xxxiii. 19: where "these words, though only connected with the previous clause by the copulative Vau, are to be understood in a causal sense as expressing the reason why Moses' request was granted, namely, that it was an act of unconditional grace and compassion on the part of God, to which no man, not even Moses, could lay any just claim" (Keil and Delitzsch). See the note at the end of the chapter on other interpretations.

16. So then it is not of him that willeth, but of him that runneth, that I 16

St. Paul appeals again to Scripture to prove as a fact that God does reject, as well as choose, whomsoever He will. It is still presupposed, as in v. 14, that "God cannot be unjust:" if Holy Scripture testifies that "be batb mercy on sbwmb be will have mercy, and sbwmb be will be bardeneth," then this must be true, and it must also be consistent with God's justice. The fact is first shown from Scripture (vv. 17-18), and then its justice is discussed (vv. 19-24).

Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up. Rather "for this very purpose," &c. The sense of the passage as understood by the LXX is as follows: "For this purpose I have upheld thee, and preserved thy life, that I might show my power in thee by a long series of warnings and chastisements, followed by a final great overthrow, more strikingly than it could have been shown by the immediate destruction." This interpretation represents fairly, though not precisely, the general meaning of the Hebrew, and being not unsuited to the present stage of St. Paul's argument, is adopted by him, with the following slight but very important variation.

For sbwmb, which expresses the direct and primary purpose, "in order that," St. Paul substitutes sbwmb denoting the more remote and secondary purpose, "that so." Thus the exhibition of God's power upon Pharaoh appears only as the secondary purpose, consequent on his refusal to yield to God's direct will, "Let my people go."

The more exact meaning of the passage
might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?

20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

21 Hath not the potter power over the clay, to make of one lump some honourable vessels, and of one lump some dishonourable?

(Ex. ix. 16) is recognised by St. Paul at a later stage of his argument (v. 22).


Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy. "So then on whom he will hath he mercy." The freedom of the Divine choice is strongly marked by the emphatic position of the relative clause: compare v. 15. and whom he will be will be hardenedeth.

In Exodus the hardening is ascribed to God in the prediction, iv. 21 and vii. 3: in the first seven plagues it is regarded as Pharaoh's own doing, and in the last three, as God's judicial hardening: see Dean Jackson, ix. 394, 399, 400, 407, 408, 458. St. Paul here has to do with the event only, and not with the process, as his purpose is to bring forward other events, parallel to the rejection of the Jews. On the hardening of Pharaoh's heart, see Origen, 'De Principiis,' III. i. 10, where he shows that by one and the same operation God has mercy upon one man, and hardens another, because the heart of those who treat his kindness and forbearance with contempt is hardened by the delay of their punishment, while those who make his goodness and patience an occasion of repentance, find mercy.

The argument of the whole passage (14-18) may be summed up briefly thus: The case of Esau and Jacob shows that man can discern no reason why God chooses one and rejects another. But it does not follow that God is unjust. Hear what He said to Moses: "I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy." Is it unjust that mercy should do good where it will? Look at Pharaoh: if we could see no reason why God hardened his heart, and made him a tragic example of His severity, should we call that severity unjust? God forbid.

10. Thou wilt say then unto me, "Thou wilt say to me then." Against the statement, "whom he will be will be hardenedeth," this objection may be raised: "If God Himself hardens the heart, why does He yet find fault with man? What justice is there in continuing to lay the blame on a creature who goes on sinning because God so wills and he cannot resist?" The objection, though expressed in general terms, has its historical ground in the reproaches and expostulations which God continues to address to Pharaoh in Ex. ix. 17, "As yet exaltest thou thyself against my people, that thou wilt not let them go?" and in x. 3, 4, "How long wilt thou refuse to humble thyself before Me?" (Jackson, 'On the Creed,' ix. 458.)

St. Paul assumes that the same objection will be made as an excuse for the unbelief of Israel. If God has chosen to harden their hearts, how can He justly lay the blame on them?

For whom he hath resisted his will. The question expresses in a livelier form, the general truth that God's will is irresistible. It is important to notice the word here used for "wilt" (tòoHka): but this and other cautions needed in interpreting the clause are thrown into the note at the end of the chapter, in order to leave the Apostle's argument free from interruption.

The brief and peremptory questions have a tone of disincontent and presumption, which is met in v. 20 by a stern rebuke: explanation follows later in v. 22.

20. Nay but, O man, whom art thou...? St. Paul repels the objection, "Why doth he yet find fault?" by rebuking the presumption of feeble man in thus "replying against God." The marginal renderings, "answerest again," or "disputest with God" are not so good as the A. V. "replieth (or makes answer) against God:" compare Job xxxii. 13; Luke xiv. 6; and for the like disparaging question, see xiv. 4, and Plato, 'Gorgias,' p. 452, b. "Magnifici doctoris severitate detreret, cum dicit, O homo, tu quis es?" Origen, 'In Exodum Hom.' iv. 2.

Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?" This figure of the potter and his vessel is derived originally from the account of the creation of man.
over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath 1 fitted to destruction:

in Gen. ii. 7, whence were derived the term "protoplast" applied to Adam by the LXX Wisdom vii. 1), and "plasma" as a description of man: compare Ps. ciii. 14, and 1 Tim. ii. 13.

Here St. Paul, quoting from Isaiah and Jeremiah, justifies God's rejection of the Jews in the very words of the Prophets who predicted it. See Is. xxix. 16, which is rendered by the LXX thus: "Shall ye not be counted as the potter's clay? Shall the thing formed (το παύλεγμα) say to him that formed it, Thou formedst me not? Or the thing made to him that made it, Thou madest me not wisely?" Compare Is. xlv. 9: "Shall the clay say to him that fashioned it, What maketh thou?" See also Is. lviii. 8.

What makes the Prophet's language so exactly appropriate to the Apostle's argument is, that they are both dealing with the same subject, namely, God's formation of Israel as a nation, and His consequent unquestionable right to deal with it as seems good to Him.

21. Hath not the potter power over the clay, &c.? "Or hath not," &c. This is the alternative to the argument of v. 20: either you must admit that Israel is incompetent to question God's dealings, or you must say that the potter hath not power over the clay. St. Paul refers to Jer. xviii. 4-6, where see notes, and observe the heading of the chapter: "Under the type of a potter is showed God's absolute power in disposing of nations." In v. 6 we read: "O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? saith the Lord. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in mine hand, O house of Israel." The passage is the more remarkable because the declaration that God is as free to do what He will with Israel as the potter with the clay, is followed immediately (vv. 7-10) by the promise that the exercise of this absolute power shall be allowed to depend on the penitence or impenitence of the nation. St. Paul, in v. 23, 24, shows how this promise had been fulfilled in God's long-suffering towards Israel.

of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour and another unto dishonour? Here we have a distinct allusion to the language of Wisdom xv. 7, 8, but the application is totally different. The subject there is the folly of idol worship, as shown by the power of the potter to make a vain god out of the same clay, of which "be made both the vessels that serve for clean uses, and likewise also such as serve to the contrary."

By St. Paul this distinction between "one vessel unto honour and another unto dishonour" is applied, like the rest of the figure of which it forms part, to God's absolute freedom in dealing with one nation and another. "The same lump of clay" represents mankind as a whole. Shall Israel say to his Maker, Thou hast no right to make of me anything else than a vessel unto honour, and Thou hast no right to make of the Gentiles anything but a vessel unto dishonour? (Godet). This reference of the passage to national, not individual, election is required by the whole purpose of St. Paul's argument, and placed beyond doubt by v. 24-26. Compare Eclesiasticus xxxii. 10-12: "All men are from the ground, and Adam was created of earth. In much knowledge the Lord hath divided them, and made their ways diverse. Some of them hath he blessed and exalted, and some of them hath he sanctified and set near himself: but some of them hath he cursed and brought low, and turned out of their places. As the clay is in the potter's hand, to fashion it at his pleasure: so man is in the hand of him that made him, to render to them as likeb him best."


22. After having asserted God's unquestionable right to do with His creatures whatever seems best to His Godly wisdom, St. Paul now passes on to justify the actual course of His dealing. This justification consists in the fact of God's long-suffering, with its twofold motive of judgment and mercy.

What if God?] Literally, "But if God." The sentence is unfinished, but its meaning is easily completed: "But if God in fact showed much long-suffering, what further objection can you make against His justice?" We may express it more briefly, thus: "But what if God," &c.

For similar examples of sentences beginning with ei 6t, and left incomplete, see Acts xxiii. 9, and Winer, 'Grammar,' § 64. But (85) marks the contrast between God's absolute right and His actual long-suffering; see note on ii. 17-24.

The whole argument is very like that of Wisdom xi, xii.: see especially xii. 2. "Therefore chastenest thou them by little and little that offend, and warnest them by putting them in remembrance wherein they have offended,
23 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the
vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory,
as fitly serve God's purpose of showing His wrath and His mercy. Compare Jer. l. 25; Ps. ii. 9.

"fitted for destruction," i. e. fully prepared and worthy: compare Wisdom xii. 20, ὀφειλομένου δοκίμων, "condemned to death." The Passive Participle does not define how, or by whom, the vessels of wrath have been thus prepared. "Pharaoh was fitted by himself and his own doing" (Chrysostom): "fitted by the potter" (Van Hengel): "He who has fitted them for destruction is God" (Meyer): all these views are too narrow and exclusive. We have passed from the view of God's absolute power (19-21) to that of His actual dealing with His creatures, and God does not in fact fit man, nor the potter his vessel, for destruction. Both factors, God's probationary judgments, and man's perverse will, will, conduct to the result, and it is the result only that is here expressed by the Participle.

The description "vessels of wrath fitted for destruction" was eminently applicable to the mass of the Jewish nation in St. Paul's day: "they please not God, and are contrary to all men; forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins always; for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost" (1 Thess. ii. 15, 16).

23. And that he might make known the riches of his glory]. This is a direct and primary purpose (inw) of God's long-suffering towards "vessels of wrath.

"The glory" of God is, in general, the manifestation of the Divine perfections (see on v. 2), and, in this context, more especially the manifestation of His goodness and mercy (Ex. xxxiii. 18, 19): and "the riches of his glory" (Eph. i. 18; iii. 16; Col. i. 27) is that inexhaustible wealth of goodness which embraces all "vessels of mercy" in the fulness of blessing.

"Salvation is of the Jews" (John iv. 22), and therefore the chosen race, notwithstanding all its transgressions, is preserved, in order that the promised salvation may embrace in its accomplishment both the remnant of Israel and the fulness of the Gentiles.

Compare Wisdom xii. 19-22: "Thou mayest use power when thou wilt. But by such works hast thou taught thy people that the just man should be merciful, and hast made thy children to be of a good hope that thou givest repentance for sins. For if thou didst punish the enemies of thy children, and the condemned to death, with such deliberation, giving them time and place, whereby they might be delivered from their malice; with how great circumspection didst thou judge

See the note at the end of the chapter on
v. 17.

his power.] τὸ δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ, corresponding to "my power" (τὴν δυναμένα μου) v. 17: compare note on viii. 3, "What the law could not do.

the vessels of wrath,] "vessels of wrath," without the Definite Article. Though his language is still full of allusions to the previous passage (vv. 17-21), St. Paul has now passed from the particular example of the hardening of Pharaoh to the general principle which connects it with his immediate subject, the rejection of Israel.

The word "vessel," taken from the figure of the potter (v. 21), implies some kind of use which the vessel is to serve: thus "vessels of wrath," and "vessels of mercy" are such
24. Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?

25. As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved,

26. And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people;

thine own sons, unto whose fathers thou hast sworn and made covenants of good promises.

which be had afore prepared unto glory.

Comparing this with the parallel clause, we see—

(1.) That St. Paul is here speaking not of election or predestination, but of an actual preparation and purgation undergone by vessels of mercy to fit them for glory, before God "makes known the riches of his glory upon them." Compare 2 Tim. ii. 20, 21, a passage which evidently looks back on this.

(2.) We observe that this preparation, unlike that by which "vessels of wrath" are "fitted for destruction," is ascribed directly and exclusively to God as its author, being wholly brought about by His Providence and preventive grace. The idea of fitness, akin to that of desert, is ascribed only to the vessels of wrath: see note on v. 22.

The vessels of mercy God has made ready for glory, but there is no idea of merit involved.

24. Even us, whom he did call, [Graec.] Read whom he did also call in us, not only fromamong Jews, but also from among Gentiles. For the apposition oius-ious compare Eur. Iph. Taur. 63; Bernhardt, Synt. p. 302.

We here see that the preparation mentioned in v. 23 preceded the actual call.

It is thus identified with the whole course of discipline and grace by which God prepared among both Jews and Gentiles a people to be called into His kingdom. Compare Luke i. 17; and Rom. ii. 14, 15.

Thus in the actual call God began to fulfill His purpose of "making known the riches of his glory on vessels of mercy" and this He did the more conspicuously by calling Heathen as well as Jews.


25. I will call them my people, which were not my people, and her beloved which was not beloved. ["I will call that my people which was not not my people," &c. Hos. ii. 3, quoted freely from the LXX, the order of the two sentences being inverted.

The inference which St. Paul means to draw from the quotation is variously understood.

(1.) The promised restoration of apostate Israel may be regarded as a proof that the calling both of Jews and Gentiles (v. 24) is a free gift of God's grace to those who had no title to it in their previous condition (Hofmann: see note on Hos. i. 10).

(2) Chrysostom constructs an argument a fortiori. If Israel, after all its ingratitude, abuse of privileges, and apostasy, was yet to be restored, much more the Heathen, who never had such privileges to abuse.

But (3) the Hebrew means literally: "I will have mercy on Lo-ruhamah, and to Lo-ammi I will say, Ammi art thou."

Now these names both designate the Ten Tribes only, exclusive of Judah (Hos. i. 7), and mean that Israel has become like the Heathen, who are not God's people.

The promise of Israel's restoration therefore includes, either by parity of reason or as a typical prophecy, the calling of the Gentiles, to which St. Paul here applies it. See the treatise among Leo's works, "On the calling of all nations," Lib. ii. c. xviii.

This interpretation is confirmed by the inversion of the two parallel clauses, by which St. Paul brings "Lo-ammi" into immediate connection with "the Gentiles." "So God's mercies again overflow His threatenings... In reversing His sentence [on Israel] He embraces in the arms of His mercy all who were not His people" (Pusey on Hos. ii. 23).

26. The whole verse is quoted exactly from the LXX of Hos. i. 10 and is joined by St. Paul to the former passage "as forming one connected declaration" (Meyer).

"The place whereabouts it was said to them, Ye are not my people," is not Palestine, where the prediction was first uttered, but "the land of exile, where the name became an actual truth" (Keil and Hengstenberg).

"The place of their rejection, the Dispersion, was to be the place of their restoration" (Pusey).

This is certain from Hos. i. 11, where the restoration to God's favour precedes the return from the land of exile. St. Paul, therefore, is in full agreement with the Prophet as to the place intended. It is true for the Dispersion of Israel (Pet. i. 1, ii. 10), the typical Lo-ammi, and for all who in times past were not the people of God, that wherever they are brought to faith in Christ, "there shall they be called sons of the living God." See on Hos. i. 10.
there shall they be called the children of the living God.

27. Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, 'Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved:

28 For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

29 And as Esaias said before, 'Exe. 4 Is. 1. 9' except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorra.

27. St. Paul now passes over (86) from prophecies applicable to the calling of the Gentiles to others concerning the exclusion of all but a remnant of the Jews: the context of Hos. i. 10 naturally suggesting the repetition of the same prediction by Isaiah.

Esaias also crieth concerning Israel.] "But Esaias orieith for Israel" (Wiclif). The prophet's cry is addressed to God (Is. x. 22) as an earnest pleading of His promise: it is therefore a cry of intercession, "as if it were the Spirit of adoption 'crying out' in him." (vii. 15: see Note on Is. x. 22). Godet's idea, that Isaiah's cry (σπαίγεται) is the menacing tone of the herald proclaiming God's judgment upon Israel, is entirely opposed to the meaning of the words and to the tenor of the context.

Though the number of the children of Israel, &c.] St. Paul here varies from the LXX of Is. x. 22, and goes back to the words of Hosea i. 10. The prophecy is of course founded on the Promise in Gen. xxii. 17, which it defines more closely.

A remnant shall be saved.] Read, 'The remnant,' &c. This is the point of Isaiah's prophecy, 'Shear-jashub,' and is emphatically repeated in vv. 21, 22. It means that 'the remnant' shall return not merely from the Captivity, but 'unto the mighty God,' i.e. Messiah: compare Is. ix. 6 and x. 21, and notes there. It is therefore a distinct prediction that 'the remnant shall be saved' in Christ.

28. For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness.] 'For a word he finisheth, and cutteth short in righteousness.' On the exact meaning of the Hebrew, see Notes on Isaiah.

St. Paul retains the words of the LXX, which give a meaning far from exact, yet not opposed to the original, and in itself true and sufficient for the present purpose.

It is a general characteristic of God, that any work of His he accomplishes and cuts short with summary justice. (Compare Isa. xxviii. 22, and the LXX there.)

because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.] 'For a short-out word will,' &c.

St. Paul still follows the LXX, but omits the less important details: this part of the quotation refers to God's summary sentence upon Israel, in which the mass is rejected and only the remnant saved.

The abbreviated reading of the earliest MSS., adopted by Tischendorf (8) and Treghelles, may be thus rendered: "For finishing and cutting short word will the Lord perform it upon earth."

29. And as Esaias said before, Except, &c.] Read, And, as Esaias hath said before, &c. The Perfect denotes, as usual, what stands written in Scripture.

The Greek word (προφετήσας) may mean either 'hath foretold' (compare Acts i. 14, 1 Thess. iii. 6), or simply 'hath said before' (1 Thess. ii. 6; 2 Cor. vii. 3, xiii. 2; Gal. i. 9).

In favour of the latter meaning it is argued that Isaiah's words (i. 9) refer to the state of the people in his own time, and there is nothing in the context to indicate even a secondary prophetic sense.

We must suppose therefore, according to this view, that St. Paul simply makes Isaiah's words his own, using them, not as a prediction fulfilled, but as a description applicable to the state of Israel in his own day: "And, as Isaiah hath said before, so say I again in his words, except the Lord of Sabaoth bad left us a seed, &c. The word 'before' is also taken to mean 'in an earlier passage.' (Alford).

The other meaning 'hath foretold' is preferred by most commentators on Romans, the passage of Isaiah (i. 7-9) being regarded as a preface in which "the Prophet with a few ground strokes gathers up the whole future of the people of Israel" (Drechsler).

A decision, which must depend on the exact meaning of the original passage, belongs to a commentary on Isaiah, or a treatise on the nature of Prophecy, rather than to this note. The quotation is well suited to St. Paul's argument, whether he uses it as a prophecy fulfilled, or merely as a description applicable to his own time.

A seed.] The Hebrew word rendered in Is. i. 9 'remnant' is ֶכֶזֶז as in the prophecy of 'Shear-jashub,' but ֶכֶזֶז as in Num. xxi. 35, xxiv. 19, Job xx. 21, &c., which notes the few who escape and survive. This remnant the LXX regard as
30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith.

31 But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.

32 Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

33 As it is written, [Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and a rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. [Or, corn-founded.

31. But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.] "But Israel, following after a law of righteousness, did not attain unto a law [of righteousness]."

What the Gentiles seek not, yet attain, is "righteousness," but what Israel seeks and yet fails to attain is not simply "righteousness," but "a law of righteousness," i.e., a law producing righteousness, such a rule of moral and religious life as could make them righteous before God. Such "a law of righteousness" they strove to find, and some did find, in God's law revealed by Moses (Luke i. 6): but the mass of the people "did not attain unto a law [of righteousness]." On the reading see the Additional Note.

32. Wherefore?] The question refers only to the case of Israel (v. 31): why did they not attain to a law of righteousness? With the received Text a Finite Verb (ἐξαίτοσα) must be supplied in the answer: "Because they sought it not from faith, but as from works of law. For they stumbled," &c. The fact that they stumbled is thus regarded as a proof (from effect to cause) that they did not start from faith in God, but from a reliance on the merit of their own works. Had they started from faith, they would have found a law of righteousness, as the Apostle shows in the next chapter (x. 3-11).

But omitting γὰρ (with modern editors and Tisch. 8), we must supply a Participle έξαίτοσας, and render thus: "Because seeking it not from faith, but as from works, they stumbled," &c. The argument is thus direct and simple.

In "as of works," "as" indicates the idea which characterised their pursuit of a law of righteousness: they thought to attain to it from works. On this use of ἀς see Winer, III. § lxv. 9, and compare a Cor. ii. 27.

they stumbled at that stumblingstone. "They stumbled against the stone of stumbling." The Articles indicate the well-known "stone of stumbling" of Isaiah viii. 14, where see notes.

33. As it is written.] Is. xxviii. 16. This is a remarkable example of the freedom with which St. Paul quotes the language of the O.T.
Both passages as well as Ps. cxviii., were referred by the Jews to Messiah: see reff. in Rosenmuller on Is. viii. 14, and Schöttgen, "Hosea HEB." and compare Matt. xxi. 42, Luke ii. 14, 1 Pet. ii. 6-8. St. Paul by taking the words "stone of stumbling and rock of offence" (Is. viii. 14), and substituting them in Is. xxviii. 16, instead of "for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner-stone, a sure foundation," has combined both the threat and the promise in one quotation.

The best comment is 1 Pet. ii. 6-8, where the different passages are all quoted separately; see the notes there.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 5, 6, 8, 15, 17, 19, 31.

5. A. The reference of the words ὀ ὄ σι τον κ ὅ ρ σ ι δ κατὰ σάλκα to Christ is supported by the following considerations:—

(a) It is the natural and simple construction, which every Greek scholar would adopt without hesitation, if no question of doctrine were involved. This cannot be said for any other construction.

(b) It is suggested by the immediate context: thus Meyer, who rejects "the ancient ecclesiastical exposition," candidly confesses that "the contrast obviously implied in το κατὰ σάλκα would permit us mentally to supply a το κατὰ πνευμα as suggesting itself after ὀ σιν. That self-evident negative antithesis—not as concerning the Spirit—would thus have in ὀ σιν ἐν πνευμα Θεος k. R. its positive elucidation. Compare i. 3, and the note there on κατὰ σάλκα, κατὰ πνευμα δογματιζόμενος."

The true inference from the context is well expressed by Theodoret in Cramer’s Catena: "And then he puts the greatest of their blessings—"and of whom is Christ as concerning the flesh." And though the addition, "as concerning the flesh," was sufficient to imply (σαρκικῶς) the deity of Christ, yet he adds, "αὐτὸς ἐστὶν ὅσιον, God blessed for ever. Amen," both showing the difference of the natures, and explaining the reasonableness of his lamentation, that though He who is God over all was of them according to the flesh, yet they fell away from this kinship."

The assertion of Christ’s Divine Majesty is thus admirably suited to the purpose of the passage, which is to extol the greatness of the privileges bestowed upon Israel, and so unhappily forfeited.


Against this remarkable consent of Christian antiquity there is nothing to be set of any weight. Cyril puts into the mouth of the Emperor Julian a denial of the reference to Christ, only in order to affirm the true interpretation. Tischendorf brings forward two passages of Eusebius of Caesarea, and two of the Pseudo-Ignatius; but they do not refer to this passage, nor deny that Christ is “God over all” (ἐν πνευμα Θεος), but are directed against the Sabellian heresy which made Him identical with the Father, “the God over all” (ὁ πνευμα Θεος).

Even Socinus admits that the words are applied to Christ.

The chief objections urged against the ancient interpretation by modern theologians (Fritzsche, Baur, Ewald, Meyer, &c.) are as follows:

(1) That St. Paul never applies Θεος as a predicate to Christ.

(2) That to call Christ not simply Θεος, but, as here, ἐν πνευμα Θεος, is absolutely incompatible with the entire view of the N. T. as to the dependence of the Son on the Father.

(3) That in the genuine Apostolical writings we never meet with a doxology to Christ in the form which is usual with doxologies to God.

As to (1) see Notes on Tit. ii. 13; 2 Thess. i. 12; cf. 2 Pet. i. 1, iii. 18; Usteri, ‘Paulin. Lehrbegriff.’ p. 309, and Cremer, Lex. Θεος. Even if the fact were as asserted, it would not be conclusive against the application of Θεος to Christ in this passage. For what would be thought of an assertion that St. John could not have applied Θεος to Christ in Joh. i. 1, because (as Is alleged by Meyer and others) he does not elsewhere so apply it? Compare the Additional Note on iii. 25, Obj. (5), for other examples of usages occurring once only in N. T.

(2) Bp. Lightfoot, in his profound discussion of the Christology of St. Paul (‘Ep. to the Colossians,’ p. 190), has shown that though St. Paul does not use the term Θεος, his doctrine of the Person of Christ is in substance identical with that of St. John and the Epistle to the Hebrews, and is not adequately represented by ‘any conception short
of the perfect deity and perfect humanity of Christ."

We may add that "the dependence of the Son on the Father," as expressed in the N.T. (1 Cor. viii. 6; xxv. 28) might be perfectly reconciled with the statement that He is "God over all," though not with the Sabellian view that He is "the God over all," i.e. the same Person as the Father.

But in fact the title "God over all" (earlier English versions) does not occur in this passage, nor apparently anywhere in the LXX or N.T. It is rightly corrected in the A.V. "Who is over all, God blessed for ever." This follows the exact order of the Greek, agrees with St. Paul's usage in Eph. iv. 6, and is the only construction which preserves the twofold antithesis between Christ's Jewish origin and universal supremacy, and between His Human and Divine natures.

(3) In urging this third objection, Meyer does not deny that the doxologies in 2 Pet. iii. 18, Heb. xiii. 21, 2 Tim. iv. 18, refer to Christ, but regards this reference as "just one of the traces of post-apostolic composition." Nevertheless his objection is wide of the mark, for οὐδὲ ἐπὶ πάντων Θεὸς εὐλογηθὼς ἐκ τ. λ. as applied to Christ is not a doxology at all: but a solemn declaration of Deity, exactly similar in form to 2 Cor. xi. 31; compare Rom. i. 25: it is remarkable that these two are the only passages, besides the present, in which the combination εὐλογηθὼς ἐκ τῶν πάνω is used by St. Paul, and in neither is it a doxology, but an assertion respecting the subject of the sentence. (Alford.) The further objection, that εὐλογηθὼς is never elsewhere applied to Christ, but only εὐλογημένος (Mat. xxii. 9; xxiii. 39, &c.), and that εὐλογημένος is only applied to God, and εὐλογημένος to man, is wholly fallacious. The LXX apply εὐλογημένος to man in Deut. vii. 14; Ruth ii. 20; 1 Sam. xvi. 13, and εὐλογημένος to God in 1 Chr. xvi. 36; 2 Chr. ix. 8; Ps. lxxxi. 20; Ez. iii. 13, and in all these passages the Hebrew word is precisely the same.

B.

Most of those who reject the ancient interpretation put a full-stop after σάμα (with two or three inferior MSS), and take the whole clause as a doxology to the Father: "The God who is over all be blessed for ever."

(1) To this construction it is a fatal objection, that both in the LXX and in N. T., whatever εὐλογηθὼς occurs in a doxology, it stands first, and that necessarily, on account of the emphasis: Ps. lxviii. 19, is no exception, nor are the other passages quoted by Fritzsche, 1 Kings x. 9; 2 Chr. ix. 8; Job i. 21; Ps. cxiii. 2, in all of which the Verb εὐλογεῖ, εὐλογείται, εὐλογοῦσθαι stands first in the sentence, and εὐλογημένος, is used, not εὐλογηθὼς.

(2) The participle εὐλόγητα is in this construction superfluous and awkward. Moreover δὲ οὖν must naturally be taken as an apposition to the preceding subject (δὲ ἑκκλησίας), there being nothing to indicate a departure from this most usual construction, of which see examples in 2 Cor. xi. 31; Joh. i. 18, and xii. 17.

(3) The enumeration of Israel's privileges, instead of rising to a climax, would come down at the close into a mere limitation and restriction—as concerning the flesh.

(4) It has been shown in the foot-note that a doxology to the Father is not in harmony with the context.

In fact, the clause, taken as a doxology, is both in form and sense so tasteless and inappropriate, that we may confidently say, it was not so meant by St. Paul.

C.

Erasmus, who is followed by Reuss, proposed to place the stop (as in Cod. 71) after πάνω, so that the preceding words refer to Christ, and then the doxology to God follows. But how intolerably abrupt is this! (Meyer.)

D.

The conjectural transposition of οὖν δὲ for δὲ οὖν is perfectly arbitrary, and has nothing to recommend it. "Was St. Paul likely to affirm that the Jews had an exclusive interest in the One True God, when he had already in this very Epistle (iii. 29) asserted the contrary? (Middleton.)"

When we review the history of the interpretation, it cannot but be regarded as a remarkable fact that every objection urged against the ancient interpretation rests ultimately on dogmatic presuppositions, and that every alternative that has been proposed is more or less objectionable both in the form of expression and in the connection of thought.

We fully accept Dean Alford's conclusion, if only we may apply it to the A. V. instead of his rendering "God over all:" "The rendering given above is then not only that most agreeable to the usage of the Apostle, but the only one admissible by the rules of grammar and arrangement. It also admirably suits the context: for having enumerated the historic advantages of the Jewish people, he concludes by stating one which ranks far higher than all—that from them sprung, according to the flesh, He who is over all, God blessed for ever."

6. In this passage (οὖν γὰρ πάνως εἰς Ιουδαίους, ἀπὸ τῶν Ιουδαίων) the sense is too clear to be mistaken even in the A. V. ("For they are not all Israel, of which are Israel"), but is much better expressed by the "Five Clergymen," "For not all they which are of Israel, are Israel." Here the emphasis
supplies in a measure the force of ὧν, which means "these as such" (v. i. hujus termini): it might be rendered here "are therefore Israel." (Pelle.)

The demonstrative pronoun thus emphatically added repeats and enforces the preceding Subject, limits it emphatically to its previous definition, and makes it stand out in this limitation distinct and separate from all other notions. Compare Gal. iii. 7, ὥστε οἴκος ζητεῖ ζητεῖ τοίς Ἰσραήλ. The effect is to affirm or deny the identity of the subject as thus defined with the predicate: see Bernardy, 'Oik. Syntax,' 283; Winer, Part III. § 23, 24; Plato, 'Charmides,' p. 163, C.

8. In οὐ τὰ τέκνα τῆς σαρκός, τοῖς τέκνα Θεοῦ, etc., this force of the pronoun has not been rightly expressed in the A. V.: "They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God." According to this rendering all the children of the flesh seem to be excluded, and the passage has in fact been frequently thus misunderstood; e. g. "As Ishmael, who was born after the flesh (Gal. iv. 23), i.e. according to the course of nature, was rejected, so also are the children of the flesh." (Hodge.) To justify this interpretation, τὰ τέκνα τῆς σαρκός must be taken in a pregnant sense, "the children of the flesh who are nothing more than children of the flesh." In Gal. iv. 25, 25, 29, this sense is made clear by the distinction made from the first between the one son "born after the flesh" and the other "by promise." Here the Apostle expresses the same truth in a different way, by drawing a distinction between "all that are of Israel," and "Israel" in the true sense of the name,—between the seed of Abraham as a whole, and the promised seed. This form of expression is best suited to the Apostle's purpose of showing how God maintained the principle of election in every stage of the patriarchal and national history.

The right explanation is given by the Greek Fathers generally, and is well expressed by Ecumenius: οὐ γὰρ ἐπείδη τινὲς τέκνα σαρκικὰ τοῦ Ἰσραήλ, ἢδη καὶ τέκνα εἰσι καὶ παγ-γελιῶν.

15. The A. V. by repeating the same tense, "I will have mercy," represents correctly the sense both of the Hebrew and of the Greek, in which the tenses, though differing in form, are strictly co-ordinate in sense. Meyer's remark that the Future denotes the actual compassion fulfilling itself in point of fact, which God promises to show to the persons concerned, towards whom He stands in the mental relation (ἀλήθ., Present of pity), is grammatically incorrect (Donaldson, 'Greek Gr.' §§ 505, 514; Madvig, §§ 121, 125; Winer, part iii. sect. xli. p. 306, &c. &c.). Some think that the emphasis lies on the repeated verb: "My mercy shall be (pure) mercy" (Alford), or, "My mercy shall be sure and great." (Dean Jackson, i. 440).

But the real emphasis is on the Relative ("whomsoever"), as is apparent in the Greek, where the force of ὧν is thrown on it (Jelf, 'Gr. Gr.' § 428; Madvig, § 126). Thus the sense is, "the objects of God's mercy are chosen by that mercy itself, and not by anything external to it." This sense is explained in v. 16, and expressly asserted in v. 18, "Therefore hath  he mercy on whom he will." (Hodge.)

17. It is important to compare the versions of the passage quoted, Ex. i. 16, with the original.

Heb. (literally rendered). "But indeed because of this I made thee stand, because of making thee see my power, and to the intent that my name may be declared in all the earth." (a.) The A. V. Ex. i. 16, "And in very deed for this cause," and St. Paul's εἰς αὐτὸ τὸ τοῖχον έξέφυγον σφ, ὅπως ἐξέφυγον ἐν σοὶ τὴν δύναμιν μου, κ.ά.

A. V. (Rom. ix. 17) "Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might show my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth." (b.) The margin, "I have made thee stand," correctly represents μένην γεγένησα, Hiphil of μείζω, which Fürst renders, "statuere, stabi-lire; praeficiere, constituere; conservare, conser-ffirmare.

Gesenius wrongly ascribes to it the meaning "rouse, stir up," in Neh. vii. 7 (A. V. "appoint"), and in Dan. xi. 11, 13, where it means "set in array," "constituere aciem." The meaning "establish, uphold, preserve" is found in 1 K. xv. 4, 2 Chr. ix. 8, Prov. xxix. 4, 9, and Dan. xi. 14.

It thus appears that διετήρησα "thou wast preserved" (LXX) is right in sense, but wrong in substituting the Passive for the Active Voice: as the Active expresses God's agency more directly and emphatically, and so is better suited to St. Paul's purpose of declaring His absolute power, he restores it in ἐξέφυγον σφ, "I have raised thee up," as from danger or death. The Compound Verb in the only passage where it is found in the N. T., 1 Cor. vi. 14, and in Job v. 11, ἀποκολόθηκεν ἐξέφυγον εἰς σωτηρίας has this signification.

This sense, "I have raised up," or "preserved thee," is supported by the LXX διετήρησα, by a various reading in the Hexa-
pli διετήρησα σφ, by Orig. Philocalia c. xxiii. διετήρησα Φαϊμω ὑπὲρ ἐνδείξεως δυνάμεως Θεοῦ
ROMANS. IX.

by Chrys. in l. εἰς αὐτῷ τὸ πῦρ ἔφεστο, by Onkelos, and the Arabic in Walton's Polyglott (see below), and is admitted by Meyer to be the correct historical interpretation of Ex. ix. 16. Many other meanings have been inferred:

1. I have brought thee into existence (Beza).
2. I have brought thee forward and laid this part upon thee (Calvin).
3. I have raised thee to the throne (Glockler).
4. I have stirred thee up to resistance (Augustine).

"But" (to use Meyer's words) "these special definitions of the sense make the Apostle say something so entirely different, both from the original and from the LXX, that they ought to be necessitated by the context; but this is not the case."

The same criticism condemns Meyer's own artificial interpretation that Paul expands the special sense of the Hebrew word (i.e., "preserved"), to denote the whole appearance of Pharaoh: "I have caused thee to emerge," thy whole historical appearance has been brought about by me, in order that, &c.

(c.) Instead of "show my power in thee," the Hebrew means "show to thee," lit. "make thee to see my power." The A. V. recognises this true rendering in Ex. ix. 16, by printing "in" in Italics: so all the ancient versions, as represented in Walton's Polyglott;

Onkelos: "Suzinai te, ut ostenderem tibi," &c.

Samar: "Subsistere te feci, ut ostenderem tibi."

Arab. "Te reservavi, ut ostenderem tibi."

Syri. "Ob id te constitui, ut ostenderem tibi." From these remarks, and the notes in this commentary on Ex. ix. 15 and 16, it will be seen that the sense of the whole passage is as follows: "I will spare thee no longer, but smite thee to the heart with all my plagues, that thou mayest know that there is no power like mine (v. 14): for if I had not withheld my hand, but had stretched it out to smite thee and thy people with the pestilence, thou wouldst have been cut off from the earth at once. But indeed I spared and upheld thee, for this very purpose (already declared in v. 14) to show thee my power."

As Pharaoh is solemnly warned in v. 14 that he will be smitten to the heart, in being taught that there is none like God, it is clear that the words "show thee my power" in v. 16, also include the contingency of Pharaoh's continued resistance and destruction, and are used in the same rhetorical sense as we find in Ex. xiv. 4, 18. "And the Egyptians shall know that I am the Lord." Compare Judges vii. 16. 1 Sam. xiv. 12: "we will show you a thing," "we will make you to know." A still more striking example of this mode of expression is found in Ps. lix. 13: "Consume them in wrath, consume them, that they may not be; and let them know that God ruleth unto the ends of the earth." The persons indicated are the same throughout, and the Psalmist's meaning is, Let them perish, and in perishing learn God's power. See Delitzsch on the Psalm.

We thus see that the rendering of the LXX, though grammatically wrong, is not bad in sense: for as Pharaoh did in fact perish in being taught the greatness of God's power, it seemed to the LXX more natural to regard the lesson as taught to others in his person: and this interpretation being equally suitable to St. Paul's argument, is adopted by him, but not without a very significant change.

(d.) For ίνα εἰδοξιμαί εἰς σοὶ (LXX) St. Paul writes ὅπως εἰδοξιμαί εἰς σοὶ . . . καὶ ὅπως διαγγέλῃ τὸ δόμα μου, κ. τ. λ. The reason is evident. According to the Hebrew God's first and direct purpose in upholding Pharaoh was "to show him His power," the secondary purpose, contingent on the fulfillment of the former, was "that God's name might be declared in all the earth." The LXX version, "show in thee my power," reduces the primary purpose to a mere equivalent of the secondary, and therefore St. Paul rejects ἵνα and uses ὅπως in both clauses: "for this very purpose I upheld thee, that so," &c. This repetition of ὅπως is found nowhere else in N. T.

Hofm. "St. Paul renders ἔναζκε as well as ἔνεξε by ὅπως, to express what God wished in this way to attain." Van Hengel, admitting fully that ὅπως and ἵνα are often used indifferently, in other writers as well as in the LXX and N. T., yet maintains (and proves) that in many passages both of the Classical and biblical writers there is an unquestionable distinction. Besides Plat. Rep. viii. 566 E, 567 A, and Xen. Mem. IV. iv. 16, cited by Van H., see also Mem. II. i. 19, Arab. II. vi. 21, and Kühner's note.

In St. Paul's epistles we may notice 1 Cor. i. 27, where the design embraces two actions one immediate (ὡς τὰ δόμα καταρρήσῃ), the other contingent on it (ὅπως μὴ κακοφηγησον πάσα σε δυν, "that so no flesh," &c.).

2 Cor. viii. 13, 14: ἵνα τῷ νῦν καρπὸν τῷ ὑμῶν περιποιημένοι τῷ ἐκκλήσια ποιήσαι τῷ ἐκκλήσια περιποιημένῳ τῷ ὑμῶν ποιήσαι, ὅπως γίνεται ἵναι. 3 Thess. i. 12 (similar).

10. St. Paul seems to have in mind such passages as Wisdom xii. 12: τίς γὰρ εἰπεῖ, τι ἐποίησεν; ἢ τί ἀνατίθηται τῷ κριματι σου; Job ix. 19: τίς δόθη κριματι αὐτῶν ἀνατίθηται; Two cautionary prophecies.

1. St. Paul speaks here, not of the primary and spontaneous will of God, not of that
which God, of Himself alone, desires (θέλημα); but of the counsel or decree which He so forms as to include and overrule the free action of man (δύναμις). See Eph. i. 5, 11; Donaldson’s ‘New Cratylus,’ § 463; Plato, ‘Leges’ vi. 769 D, vii. 802, c.

When θέλω and δύναμις are distinguished, the former means the simple spontaneous will, the latter the conscious and deliberate purpose. See Ammonius, ed. Valckcn. pp. 31, 70, whose remark has been too hastily rejected.

It is again the event, and not the intermediate process, that is in question. Man does resist the will of God (δύναμις), that primary will, which leads him to repentance, but the event always corresponds with the Divine purpose (δύναμις).

CHAPTER X.

5. The scripture sheweth the difference between the righteousness of the law, and this of faith, 11 and that all, both Jew and Gentile, that believe, shall not be confounded, 18 and that the Gentiles shall receive the word and believe. 19 Israel was not ignorant of these things.

BRETHREN, my heart’s desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2. For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3. For they being ignorant of...
God’s righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

was without the guidance of this true knowledge, is shown in the next verse.

3. For they being ignorant of God’s righteousness, "for being ignorant," &c.: “they,” being wholly without emphasis, should have a less prominent place in the sentence. They were ignorant that the only source of righteousness is God, “who justifieth the ungodly” (iii. 21-26; iv. 5); and thus “seal for God” only made them seek to set up and “establish” (iii. 31) their own righteousness, i.e., the righteousness which they thought they could make valid before God by strict observance of His law (Phil. iii. 9).

have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.” “The righteousness of God” is here presented as His divine ordinance for man’s salvation, and in its very essence, as God’s righteousness, it involves man’s self-renunciation and submission.

For the Middle sense of ἐνεργείαν compare viii. 7, xiii. 1; Heb. xii. 9; James iv. 7; 1 Pet. ii. 13. Read “For being ignorant of God’s righteousness, and seeking to establish their own righteousness, they submitted not unto the righteousness of God.”

4. For Christ is the end of the law] Confirmation of v. 3. The Jews sought to establish their own righteousness by the Law; but this was a fatal error, causing them to reject the righteousness of God: for the Law, regarded as a way of attaining to righteousness before God, is at an end in Christ, and gives place to the righteousness of faith. Christ is the end of the Law, as “death is the end of life” (kolos tou biou theōs: Demosth. 1306, 25).

This most common and simple meaning of τὸ ἀριθμόν is required by the emphatic contrast between law and faith in the beginning and end of the sentence, and also by the whole context, which describes the righteousness of faith as opposed to the righteousness that is of the law, not as the completion, nor as the aim of the law.

In this passage it is not grammatically wrong to render γινώσκειν, without the article, “the Law;” see Introduction, § 9. But it is better to interpret it as “law” in general, the principle which says “This do, and thou shalt live.” In this sense, “law” is abolished in Christ, and the purpose of its abolition is expressed in the words “for righteousness to every one that believeth.”

For other interpretations, see Note at the end of the Chapter.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

5 For Moses describeth the right-

for righteousness to every one that believeth.] This is the purpose of the abolition of “law” in Christ. If “law” remained in force as the condition of righteousness, then righteousness could not be extended “to every one that believeth,” but only to those who were under law and only if they were “doers of law” (ii. 13).

5-10. Moses bears witness to the righteousness of faith.

5. the righteousness which is of the law,] reads, the righteousness which is of law, and for the various readings of v. 5 see the note at the end of the chapter.

the man which doeth those things] “The man which doeth them.”

In Lev. xviii. 5 God says, “Ye shall therefore keep all my statutes and all my judgments.” Thus in the keeping of all “statutes” and “judgments” the Apostle sees a description of “the righteousness which is of law,” and in the clause “which if a man do” he finds a condition which cannot be perfectly fulfilled by fallen man, and which therefore condemns one who depends on his own fulfilment of the law for justification before God.

That this is St. Paul’s meaning is clear from the context in vov. 3, 4, and from the whole tenor of this Epistle (ii. 13, iii. 20, &c.), as well as from the earlier quotation of the same passage in Gal. iii. 12, where the meaning is put beyond doubt by another quotation, “Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things that are written in the book of the law to do them” (Deut. xxvii. 26).

But in assuming that the condition, “if a man do them,” is impracticable, St. Paul seems exactly to reverse the natural meaning of the words of Moses. Either those words really mean that God’s law given to Israel consisted of statutes and judgments which might be kept and by keeping which they should enter into life: or else they are nothing better than an ironical promise based upon an impossible condition. The latter thought cannot be for a moment entertained: for it is God Himself who speaks through Moses, repeating the commandment and the promise twice, and confirming them by the most solemn formula of Divine attestation, “I am
6 But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, "Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above.)"

7 Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.)

8 But what saith it? "The word of the LORD." The references to the passage by Ezekiel (xx. 11, 13, 21) and Nehemiah (ix. 13, 19) clearly show that in their view the condition was not impracticable nor the promise unattainable.

Did then St. Paul misrepresent or misunderstand the passage? Not St. Paul himself, but those unbelieving Jews, whose error he was exposing.

To one who sincerely desired "to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with his God" (Mic. vi. 8), "the law," taken in its fulness and in its spirit, was undoubtedly a path of righteousness and life. It was a revelation of God Himself and of His holy will, accompanied by a dispensation full of the means of grace, of pardon, and reconciliation for every humble and contrite soul, full also of types and promises leading on to Christ.

But the Pharisees, and under their guidance the mass of the people, did not thus regard "the Law," to them it was "law" and nothing more, a covenant of works as opposed to a covenant of grace, its promise of life depending on the merit of strict and scrupulous obedience. Such a view has only to be pushed to its legitimate conclusion in order to confute itself: and this is what St. Paul does: "If you would attain to righteousness by 'the law' merely as 'law,' then it must be fulfilled to the very letter. Keep all the statutes, and all the judgments fully and perfectly, and then you shall find life in them."

St. Paul's method is in fact the same as our Lord's: his answer to those who are seeking 'the righteousness which is of law' is "This do, and thou shalt live" (Luke x. 28). He reminds them, as it were, that "whosoever shall keep the whole law and yet offend in one point, is guilty of all" (Ja. ii. 10); he uses the words of the law as they were used by those who rejected "the righteousness which is of faith:" he means, as in Gal. iii. 21, that there is no law which simply as law can give life, and therefore no such thing as a "righteousness which is of law."

6. But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise.] For a similar personification and self-description of Wisdom, see Prov. i. 20, and Heb. xii. 5. Apart from the figure, the meaning is that Moses thus speaks concerning "the righteousness which is of faith." Thus both parts of v. 4 are proved by the testimony of Moses—the impossibility of being justified by law in v. 5, and the reality and nearness of the righteousness of faith in vv. 6-8.

But where does St. Paul find "the righteousness of faith" in the words of Moses? In Deuteronomy, "the book of Moses, which has been regarded almost as an evangelization of the law" (Jowett). Observe also that in Deut. xxx. 11-14, Moses speaks to those to whom he has previously said in v. 6, "God will circumcise thine heart,"...to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live." that is to say, Moses is speaking to the truly penitent and faithful Israelites. And as St. Paul found "the righteousness of faith" in Abraham, who believed God, so here he finds its very essence in one who loves God, and turns to Him with all his heart and soul (Deut. xxx. 6-10).

Say not in thine heart: This is found in Deut. viii. 17, and ix. 4, and is substituted by St. Paul for the one word, "to say," in Deut. xxx. 12: "It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say [lit. 'to say]; Whoso shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may bear it, and do it?"

"To say in the heart" is a Hebrew idiom meaning "to think," especially to think perverse unholy thoughts, which one is ashamed to speak out (Philippi); compare Deut. xv. 9, xviii. 21; Ps. xiv. 1; Matt. xxiv. 48; Rev. xix. 7.

Moses thus vindicates God's commandment as not being beyond man's reach, but already brought near and made plain to him: in Baruch iii. 29, similar language is applied to wisdom.

that is, to bring Christ down.] As Moses forbids the Israelite to say, We want some one to bring God's word down nearer to us, so "the righteousness of faith" says to us, "Doubt not that Christ has already come down."

The words, "from above," are a needless addition in the A. V.: the parenthesis, too, is unnecessary, the citations and comments being clearly distinguished without it.

7. Or, Who shall descend into the deep?] Deut. xxx. 13: "Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Whoso shall go over the sea for us," &c. This is a second figure by
is nigh thee; even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach;

9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

which Moses declares that God's commandment is not inaccessible: but St. Paul, in applying the passage to Christ, brought still nearer to us by the resurrection, changes the idea of crossing the sea into that of going down into "the abyss;" and by "the abyss" he means not the deep of the sea, but the abode of the dead, "the depth of the earth," Ps. lxxi. 10: ἐκ τῶν ἁδών ἐξῆλθεν ὁ γιός πάλιν ἁγίασε με, a passage which seems to have been in St. Paul's mind, and to have suggested the words ἁγιάσασον and πάλιν ἁγιασθήσεται.

8. But what saith it? As if the negative in v. 6 had been joined with λέγει: "the righteousness which is of faith saith not, Who shall ascend, &c.? But what saith it?"

The word is nigh thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart. "And yet what need is there either of long journeys over the land, or of long voyages, for the sake of investigating and seeking out virtue, the roots of which the Creator has laid not at any great distance, but so near, as the wise Lawgiver of the Jews says, 'They are in thy mouth, and in thy heart, and in thy hands,' intimating by these figurative expressions the words, and actions, and designs of men" (Philos. "Hec Virtutis est Free, c. x.").

St. Paul omits the words "and in thy hands" added to the original by the LXX, and the concluding words of Deut. xxx. 14, "that thou mayest do it," which are less suited to his argument. "The Apostle quotes without regard to verbal exactness, apparently because he is dwelling rather on the truth that he is expounding, than on the words in which it is conveyed, not verifying references by a book, but speaking from the fulness of the heart" (Jowett).

That is, the word of faith, which we preach. The word that is very nigh, in the mouth and in the heart, is essentially the same as "the word which speaks of faith," i.e. the gospel which announces "faith" as the principle of righteousness.

"Faith" is not here used in its objective sense (τῆς πίστεως) (Gal. i. 23), "the faith," i.e. the Christian faith; but the article is required by the mention of "faith" in the context, and cannot be translated.

9. That if thou shalt confess. The contents of "the word of faith which we preach" are here shown to correspond with the teaching of Deuteronomy. The rendering, "for if thou shalt believe," makes this proof of correspondence more formal, but is not necessary.

The correspondence itself lies in the consent of heart and mouth required both by Moses and by the preachers of "the word of faith" in the Lord Jesus. "That Jesus is Lord." The reference to v. 6, "Who shall ascend into heaven? that is, to bring Christ down," shows that Jesus is here called Lord, not simply as the exalted Head of the Church (compare Eph. iv. 9-11), but as the only-begotten Son of God, "the Lord from heaven." (1 Cor. xv. 47.)

that God hath raised him from the dead. This answers to v. 7. The Deity of Christ, and His resurrection, are the chief objects of justifying faith (i. 4; iv. 25; 1 Cor. xv. 17, &c.).

10. The mention in Deut. of "mouth" and "heart" having been interpreted by St. Paul of confession and faith, he now shows that this interpretation is in accordance with the general principles of the Christian dispensation, in which belief of the heart and confession by the mouth are both required. "Heart" and "mouth," the emphatic words in each sentence, are now placed in their natural order.

Justification and salvation are here distinguished as in v. 9, where see note. Salvation presupposes a continuance of the faith which justifies, and a consequent realisation of the effects of faith, of which confession is one: see Barrow on the Creed, Sermon V. towards the end.

Looking back upon the whole passage (v. 5-10) we may ask, Does St. Paul regard the words of Moses as a prediction of the nature of the righteousness of faith to be subsequently revealed? (Fritzsche, p. 389.) Or does he mean that besides the plain grammatical and historical sense of the words of Moses, there is also an indirect allegorical and typical sense which foreshadows the subsequent revelation of the righteousness of faith? (Meyer.) Or does the Apostle merely make a free use of the words of Moses to clothe his own thoughts? Is there
11 For the scripture saith, *Whoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.*

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for

nothing more than a graceful allusion (Bengel), "a holy and beautiful play of God's Spirit upon the word of the Lord?" (Philippi, Van Hengel.)

Better than any of these explanations is the view held by Augustine that the words of Moses, understood in their true spiritual sense, describe a righteousness which is essentially the righteousness of faith ('de Nat. et Gratit.' § 8).

Moses is in fact describing a religion of the heart: "The Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live" (v. 6). To one who thus turns with heart and soul to the Lord obedience is easy; "the word is very nigh thee, in thy mouth and in thy heart." This, says St. Paul, is in substance "the word of faith, which we preach."

St. Paul’s explanation is not allegorical but spiritual: "it penetrates through the letter of the O. T. to its spirit" (Olshausen), and that is the spirit of the Gospel.

11-13. THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF FAITH IS FOR ALL.

11. On the quotation from Isaiah xxviii. 16, see above ix. 33: by repeating it here St. Paul both confirms the preceding description of "the righteousness which is of faith," and passes on to the further thought that this righteousness is free for all. The statement in Isaiah is unlimited, "be that believeth"; and St. Paul by the addition of one word (αὐτοί) makes it expressly universal, "every one that believeth," and also definite "believeth on him," i.e. on Christ.

12. The universality thus emphatically given to the statement of Isaiah is now justified on the ground that the condition, "be that believeth," makes no distinction between Jew and Greek (compare iii. 22); and the cause of this unlimited bestowal of blessing is traced to the bounty of its Divine Author. The promise in Isaiah of the "precious corner stone" is Messianic, and therefore really universal, God’s mercy in Christ embracing all the nations of the earth.

For the same Lord over all is rich, &c. Rather, For the same is Lord of all, being rich unto all that call upon him." That Christ, not God the Father, is here called "Lord of all," is clear from v. 9, as well as from such passages as ch. xiv. 9, Phil. ii. 11, Acts x. 36.

The universality of justification by faith, which is proved in ch. iii. 30, from the truth that "it is one God," the God both of Jews and Gentiles, who shall justify both, is here in like manner shown from the fact that there is one and the same "Lord of all," who is rich unto all "in grace and salvation which no multitude can exhaust" (Bengel): compare 1 Tim. ii. 5.

all that call upon him. In like manner St. Paul designates Christians in 1 Cor. i. 2 as "all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours": compare 2 Tim. ii. 22.

That calling on God, whereon salvation depends, is not in words only, but in heart and deed. For what the heart believeth, the mouth confesseth, the hand in deed fulfilleth" (Hugo de S. Vict. quoted by Pusey on Joel, ii. 33).

13. To "call upon the Lord" means to worship Him, and therefore, among other things included in true worship, to confess Him with the mouth, as in v. 9, 10, and the expression thus prepares the way for the Scriptural proof of the statement that "with the mouth confession is made unto salvation." This proof is quoted exactly in the words of the LXX from the great prophecy of the outpouring of the Holy Spirit in Joel ii. 32, "Whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be delivered (saven)." The words "all flesh" (Joel ii. 32) show that Gentiles are included in the prophecy. See note on the passage.

This is one of the strongest passages in favour of addressing prayer to Christ. It is admitted that to "call upon the name of the Lord" means in the original passage to pray to Jehovah as God.

It is also admitted that the "Lord of all" in v. 12 is in Christ; and that St. Paul refers the word "Lord," which in the original points to God, justly to Christ, whose name is now the very specific object of the Christian calling on the Lord.

With these admissions there is little real significance left in Meyer's fine-drawn distinction between "worshipping absolutely, as it takes place only in respect of the Father as the One absolute God," and "worship according to that relativity in the consciousness of the worshipper, which is conditioned by the
14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, "How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!"

16 But they have not all obeyed

relation of Christ to the Father, whose Son of like nature, whose image, partner of the Throne, Mediator and Advocate on the part of men, He is."

14—21. THE GOSPEL PREACHED TO ALL REJECTED BY ISRAEL.

This passage brings another proof that the fault of Israel's exclusion lies in themselves. From the nature of the salvation just described, it follows that the Gospel must be preached to all without distinction. But this very freedom of the offer of salvation to every believer, was a stumbling-block to the unbelieving Jews, as the Apostle's experience had often proved (Acts xiii. 44-47, xviii. 5, xxviii. 28). St. Paul, as usual, closely connects this new topic with the preceding context: commenting, as it were, upon the words of Joel, "Every one whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord," he argues first that "the name of the Lord" to be invoked must be believed, and thereto must be heard, and thereto proclaimed, and thereto preachers must be sent, according to Isaiah lii. 7 (vv. 14, 15).

The Gospel being thus preached, if "not all," to wit, not Israel, have obeyed it (v. 16), they have neither the excuse of not having heard (v. 18), nor of not having known that the invitation was to be preached to all nations, but the fault lies in their own perversity (vv. 19-21).

14. How then] Each question in the chain is an argument, the conclusion of which is tacitly assumed, and forms the ground of the next question, e.g. "How can they call upon the Lord unless they believe on Him? They cannot: therefore they must first believe. How can they believe, if they have not heard? they cannot: and so on.

of whom they have not beard.] Rather, "Whom they have not heard?" in Ephes. iv. 21, on the contrary, we ought to read, "If ye have beard of Him." Here, as in Eph. ii. 17, the Lord is heard speaking through His messengers, as is shown in the next question.

15. except they be sent?] By whom? By the same Lord (v. 13) whose name they proclaim.

In N. T. the Father "send" the Son, and the Son "send" His Apostles: their mission includes all ministry derived from them. Compare Luke ix. 2, x. 3, 9; John iv. 38, xvii. 18; Acts xxvi. 17; 1 Cor. i. 17.

St. Paul argues back from effect to cause, through the series of Prayer, Faith, Hearing, Preaching, Sending: thus the last link in his argument must be the first in the realisation, from which the rest follow: this one, therefore, he confirms by the prophetic announcement in Isa. lli. 7, of the going forth of the Gospel messengers: "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation." The prophecy rings with a joy like that which the Apostle himself felt in contemplating the spread of the Gospel throughout the world.

St. Paul quotes the passage freely and briefly, omitting what belongs simply to the poetic colouring — "upon the mountains," turns the collective singular, "him that bringeth good tidings," into the plural, and omits the words "that publisheth salvation." that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good!" Rather, That bring glad tidings of peace, that bring glad tidings of good. The repetition of the same word in the Hebrew, and in the Greek, ought to be preserved in the English translation. See the note at the end of the chapter, and the notes on Isaiah, and compare Nahum i. 15.

In the foreshortened perspective of prophecy the return from the captivity in Babylon, to which the passage of Isaiah primarily refers, seems to be coincident with the coming of Messiah, which it symbolises and prepares. The progress of time had shown St. Paul the distinction between the partial or typical and the complete fulfilment which he here rightly affirms.

"How beautiful are the feet" means simply, "how welcome is the coming."

16. But they have not all obeyed the Gospel.] Rather, "But they did not all obey the glad tidings."

The messengers were sent, "Isaiah in spirit saw their glad steps" (Bengel); God's part was done: But, notwithstanding this, they did not all hearken to and obey (2 Thess. i. 8) the Gospel message.

The message was addressed to all, but the Jews as a nation (for St. Paul is here speaking of them nationally, not individually) did not
submit to the requirement of faith and calling upon the Lord. Some commentators suppose the statement “they did not all obey” to refer to the Gentiles, but this is contrary to the tenor of the whole context: St. Paul is dealing in this chapter with the unbelief of the Jews, not of the Gentiles, and the words which he cites from Isaiah, refer in their primary sense to Israel, as distinguished from Gentiles, and are expressly applied to the Jews by St. John, xii. 38: see the notes on Isa. liii. 4.

17 So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. For Esaias saith, “Lord, who hath believed our report? So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.”

18 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, “their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.”

The sending of the preachers by God is derived from the quotation not as an inference “from the mere address ‘Lord,’ which is only added by LXX, but rather from the whole attitude of the Prophet as the servant and ambassador of God, speaking by His word or command (Meyer). On the various reading “word of Christ” see note at end.

18. But I say.] After showing generally what was necessary in order that man might believe, the Apostle now inquires into the possible excuses that might be made for the unbelief of the Jews, and refutes them from their own scriptures.

Have they not heard?] Better, “Is it that they did not hear!” The form of the question in Greek shows at once that the excuse cannot be admitted: “Surely the message did not remain unheard by them?” (Meyer).

6. But I say.] Rather, “Hear ye.” See ix. 10. The answer corrects the suggestion “that they did not hear,” by asserting that the Gospel has been preached in all the world. This assertion the Apostle clothes in the words of Ps. xix. 4. In the Psalm “their sound” is the voice of nature, the silent witness with which “the heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament sheweth his handiwork.” The Psalmist compares this universal revelation of
19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, "I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, "I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

21 But to Israel he saith, "All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gain-saying people."

God in His works (vv. 1-6) with His special revelation of Himself in His word (vv. 7-11); and the Apostle catches the very spirit of the Psalmist when he uses his words to describe how "the sound" of the preachers of the Gospel "is gone out into all the earth, and their words into the ends of the world." The poetical language thus borrowed from the Psalm must not, of course, be pressed with literal exactness; its use was justified by the great extent to which the Gospel had already been diffused throughout the world, and everywhere addressed to the Jews first. At the date of this Epistle, the Gospel had been preached almost in every place where a settled body of Jews were living, so that even those of the Dispersion had not the excuse of not having heard it.

19-21. Another possible excuse suggested, and refuted by Scripture.

19. But I say,] Observe the "emphatic conformity" (Meyer) gained by repeating the words, "But I say," from v. 18.

20. But Esaias is very bold.] Rather, "But Esaias breaks out boldly." The quotation is from Isaiah lxv. 1: "I am sought of them that asked not for me: I am found of them that sought me not." St. Paul retains the words of the LXX, but inverts the order of the parallel clauses, thereby bringing into greater prominence that one which more clearly expresses the reception of the Gentiles, "I was found of them that sought me not." That the original passage in its primary sense refers to the Heathen, and not (as Meyer and others assert) to the Jews, seems clear from comparing the words, "a nation that was not called by my name" (lxv. 1) with lxiii. 19, "We are thine: thou never bearest rule over them: they were not called by thy name." [See this Commentary on the passage.] The tenses cannot in Isaiah refer to events already past, as no Heathen nation had then been brought in: they are the usual tenses of prophecy, anticipating its fulfilment, which in St. Paul's day was already accomplished fact.

21. But to Israel.] "But in reference to
Israel," or more briefly, "But of Israel." On this use of ἀνάμεσα see Luke xx. 19; "against," rather "concerning," and Heb. i. 8; "unto the Son," rather, "of the Son.

The direct address to Israel does not begin till Isa. lxv. 7.

"be saith," namely, Isaiah speaking in God’s name.

"All day long I have stretched forth my hands." "All the day long I have spread out my hands." It is a picture of "the everlasting arms" spread open in unwearied love.

St. Paul again changes the order, giving more emphasis to the words "all the day long," which express God’s patience and long-suffering towards His own people (אאאאא), though they persist in disobeying and refusing His invitations.

The idea of the whole chapter is briefly summed up in these last words.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 4, 15, 17.

4. Besides the meaning of ἔνθασις given in the foot-note, two other senses have been ascribed to it; (1) completion, (2) aim.

(1) "Christ is the completion (perfectio) of the law, and Christ is righteousness—and he who receives not Christ, cannot complete even that righteousness which is of the law." (Orig.: Cyril, πλήρωμα; Erasmus, "perfectio;" Calvin, "complementum;" Calovius, "Christ’s fulfillment and satisfaction of the law by His active and passive obedience.

But this sense of completion is wrongly ascribed to ἐνθασις even in 1 Tim. i. 5, and Jas. v. 11: as to Luke xxii. 37, compare Mark iii. 26.

(2) "This then was the end of the law, and to this all looked, the feasts, and the ordinances, and the sacrifices, that man might be justified. "But this end Christ accomplished in a greater way through faith . . . so that if you believe Him, you have also fulfilled the law even much more fully than it commanded, for you have received a much greater righteousness." (Chrysostom, Gennadius).

This sense of ἔνθασις is found in 1 Pet. i. 9, and 1 Tim. i. 5; it has also been explained in another way, as follows:

CHAPTER XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were Elect, though the rest were hardened. 16 There is hope of their conversion. 18 The Gentiles may not insist upon them: 26 for there is a promise of their salvation. 33 God’s judgments are unsearchable.

CHAP. XI.—The Restoration.

1 I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye

... God has not cast off His people?" Can it be that the reception of the Gentiles means that Israel is cast off and excluded from the promised salvation? Can God have dealt thus with His own people? That very title anticipated the answer, "for the Lord will not fail his people, neither will he forsake his inheritance" (Ps. xciv. 14): compare i Sam. xiii. 22.

On the expression, "God forbid," see iii. 4.
not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 "Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? "I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

It is not a denial followed by its proof, but an earnest depreciation explained by its motive: "For I also am an Israelite." No true Israelite could bear the thought that God had cast away His people: and St. Paul, in feeling as in blood, was a very Hebrew of the Hebrews, "of the seed of Abraham," and not a mere proselyte,—"of the tribe of Benjamin," which alone with Judah formed the core of the Theocracy at the division of the kingdom and after the captivity: compare Phil. iii. 5.

2. The direct denial here follows, and is strengthened by the further description of Israel as God's "people which be foreknown." The subject of the whole chapter from v. 1 is the national destiny of the Jews. This fact limited God's "people whom He foreknew" to a spiritual Israel, foreknown and predestined to be saved through their reception of the Gospel.

The true meaning is that Israel the nation — "all Israel" (v. 26) — is God's "people which be foreknown" as His people: His people, therefore, Israel still is, and must be for ever; it cannot have been cast away, "for the gifts and calling of God are without repentance" (v. 29).

Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? Rather, "Or know ye not what the scripture saith in [the history of] Elias?"

On the introductory phrase, "Or know ye not," see vi. 16: it means here, You must admit that "God has cast away His people," or else you must be strangely ignorant of what the Scripture says in proof of this in another similar case.

"In Elias." Elias is here the name of the Parashah, or section of the Hebrew Scripture, not the Elias. These sections were originally denoted not by numbers, but by a brief description of the contents: thus Philo Jud. de Agricultura Noachi xxiv., "in the curses" (Gen. iii. 15); Raschi on Ps. ii., "as is said in Abner" (2 Sam. ii. 8 ff.); and on Hos. ix. 9, "in the concubine" (Jud. xix.); Berachoth f. 2, c. 1, "in Michael" (Is. vi. 6) f. 4, c. 3, "in Gabriel" (Dan. ix. 21).

maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying, Lord, &c." Rather, pleads with God against Israel: Lord, &c. "Intercession" is never against, but always on behalf of some one.

3. The passage is quoted freely from 1 Ki. xix. 10 and 14: for the particulars see the Notes there given in this Commentary.

The assumption that Elijah means, "I am left alone of the prophets," is inconsistent with the context, which certainly does not speak of seven thousand prophets, but of seven thousand faithful worshippers of Jehovah: so Theodoret. There is thus no diversity between Elijah's meaning and St. Paul's application of his words.

4. the answer of God. The Greek word (χωναταιος) thus rightly rendered means a "communication," either from man (2 Macc. xi. 17), or from God (2 Macc. ii. 4). Here it is the answer made by the "still small voice."

I have reserved to myself. Rather, "I have left for myself." I have caused a remnant (v. 5) to remain.

The passage in its original context (1 Kings xix. 18) stands in connexion with the future chastisements which Israel was to suffer by the agency of Hazael, Jehu, and Elisha: but amid this destruction of the disobedient, "I have left." God says, or rather, as in the margin, "I will leave," "seven thousand," i.e. I have in my purpose already determined not to destroy them with the disobedient. St. Paul brings the passage into immediate connexion with the Prophet's lament that he is left alone: there were, unknown to him, many true worshippers of Jehovah, whom God would leave as a remnant, when the wicked should perish.

"seven thousand" is to be regarded as a round number. There is nothing in the Hebrew corresponding to the words "for myself" (ἐγώσα), which St. Paul adds to bring out more emphatically the thought that the remnant is preserved by God Himself for His own gracious purpose. The way is thus prepared for the mention of an "election of grace" in v. 5.

who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal. Rather, which have not bowed knee to Baal. The Apostle gives here a free paraphrase, and brings into prominence the characteristic of the remnant preserved: they are men that (οἵτινες) never bowed knee to Baal.

On the feminine γυνὴ Baal, see notes on Jud. ii. 13, x. 6; 1 Sam. vii. 4; Hos. ii. 8, 10, 15, and Jeremiah, passim.
And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded.

8 (According as it is written, "God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;") unto this day.

5. Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. The Greek word (καπιτός) denotes the character of a time, and St. Paul likens his own time to Elijah’s, because each was a season of general but not universal apostasy and unbelief in Israel. The resemblance of the times shows that God is dealing with Israel upon the same principles; and so from the Divine answer to Elijah the Apostle draws the inference (οὐ) that in his time also God has left a remnant for himself; in other words, "there has come to be (γεγονεί) a remnant according to an election" not of merit, but of "grace."

The existence of this "remnant" of believing Jews is the proof that God has not rejected His people as a people (v. 2).

6. And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. Rather, "And if by grace, it is no more of works: since otherwise the grace becomes no longer grace." The negative as well as the positive side of the election of grace is essential to the inference which St. Paul draws in the next verse: for Israel seeks to obtain "of works"—that which is not of works: compare ix. 32. "The grace" presupposed in the election of the remnant excludes all dependence upon works, for otherwise it ceases to be "grace" at all, losing its proper character as the opposite of merit.

The latter part of the verse, "But if it be of works," &c., is rightly omitted in most critical texts.

7. What then? What conclusion as to the present state of Israel must be drawn from the truths just stated?

Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for. Rather, "What Israel is seeking after, that obtained he not." Israel, the mass of the people, has been and still is seeking after righteousness, the very thing that he has failed to obtain. St. Paul does not stay to define the object which Israel seeks, nor to state that he sought it not aright, because this has been done before in ix. 32 and x. 3, and the principles asserted in those passages have just been most emphatically repeated in v. 6.

It is thus made clear that the believing Jews are saved, like the Gentiles, "by grace through faith." (Epp. ii. 8), and that "the rest were blinded," not because God had "rejected his people," but because they sought to establish their own righteousness by works, and "submitted not unto the righteousness of God" (x. 3).

The election. The Abstract Noun gives precision of thought, as well as vivacity and force of expression: "the elect as elect" (Bengel).

were blinded.] Rather, "were hardened." Compare 2 Cor. iii. 14, and see note on Mark iii. 5, and at the end of this chapter. That God is here regarded as the author of the hardening, is clear from the Scripture proof that follows.

8. St. Paul now shows that the hardening of Israel against the Gospel is in accordance with the testimony of Moses concerning their hardening in his day, and with Isaiah’s prophecy of the continuance of this hardening. Compare Isaiah vi. 9, 10.

Two passages are in the Apostle’s mind: Isaiah xxix. 9, 10: "They are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink. For the Lord hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes": and Deut. xxix. 4: "Yet the Lord hath not given you an heart to perceive, and eyes to see, and ears to hear, unto this day."

The quotation is evidently taken from the latter passage, with the expression "the spirit of slumber," adopted from Isaiah, and a corresponding change in the position of the negative, on which see below.

The words "unto this day" are part of the quotation from Deuteronomy, and are not to be directly connected with v. 7: the brackets of A. V. must therefore be omitted.

the spirit of slumber.] Meyers understands by this "a spirit which causes superstition, which is obviously a demoniacal spirit.” But such expressions as "the spirit of heaviness" (Is. lix. 3), "a spirit of meekness" (1 Cor. iv. 21), "the spirit of bondage" (c. viii. 15) show that "spirit" is used for the pervading tendency and tone of mind, the special character of which is denoted by the Genitive which follows.

Though it is true that this "spirit of slumber" is the result of a "reciprocal process between man’s unbelief and God’s judgments" (Lange), yet in this passage St. Paul
9 And David saith, “Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recompence unto them:

10 Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway.

11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall speaks only of the judicial hardening, and ascribes this even more expressly than do the original passages to God’s will and purpose, by turning the words “the Lord hath not given you... eyes to see” into the stronger statement, “God hath given them... eyes that they should not see.” Observe also that the Apostle already had this stronger form of expression before his mind in the quotation which follows from Ps. lix. 23, 24.

slumber.] The Hebrew word in Isa. xxix. 10, means a “deep sleep,” such as fell on Adam, Gen. ii. 21, on Abraham, Gen. xv. 12, on Saul’s attendants, 1 Sam. xxvi. 12: compare Job iv. 13, xxxiii. 15, Prov. xix. 15.

The Greek word (καρακίζως) might have been applied, like the verb from which it is derived, to any piercing and overpowering stroke, as of remorse (Acts ii. 37), grief, pain, or fear; but it is in fact used only to denote stupefaction, in this passage of Isaiah and in Ps. ix. 3 “the wine of astonishment.”

9. 10. And David saith.] On the authorship of Ps. lix. see note in this commentary. We may add that besides this Psalm (cited here and in Acts i. 20), only the ii., xvi., xxxii., and cx. are expressly ascribed to David in N. T., and the authorship of these is hardly to be questioned. Ps. cv., quoted in Heb. iv. 7, is less certain, and the form of citation “saying in David,” does not necessarily mean more than “saying in the Book of Psalms”: see introductory note on Ps. cv.

Let their table be made a snare.] For the full interpretation of the passage, see notes on the Psalm, and at the end of this chapter. The Psalmist, in the bitterness of a soul wrought almost to madness by the cruelty of his enemies, calls for just vengeance upon them: let their prosperity and false peace be a snare and a trap, to keep them in blindness and in bondage for ever. St. Paul uses the passage, not merely as an illustration, but as a typical Prophecy of the retribution which had fallen upon the Jews for their cruel rejection of the Messiah.

The “table” spread for a feast is a natural emblem of the prosperity and careless ease by which the heart is ensnared “as a wild beast grasps at food, and falls into a trap.”

10. On the “darkening of the eyes” as a figure of the spiritual blindness denounced upon Israel, see Isaiah vi. 9, 10, and the notes there. Frötscher’s view, followed by

New Test.—Vol. III.

Godet, that this judicial blindness was the cause, not the consequence, of the rejection of Christ, is inconsistent with the position of the passage in the Psalm, and the order of ideas there, and especially with the word “recompense” or “retribution” (v. 9), which St. Paul adopts from the LXX, giving it at the same time a more emphatic place at the end of the sentence.

And bow down their back alway.] St. Paul throughout this verse follows the LXX exactly: the Hebrew is rendered literally in the A. V., “make their loins continually to shake.” The shaking of the loins is a symptom of weakness and terror (Nahum ii. 10; Dan. v. 6), for which the LXX substitute the corresponding symptom, the bowing down or bending together of the back.

These figurative expressions, when applied to the Jews, denote spiritual blindness and hopeless dejection.

11-15. After alleging the fulfilment of prophecy in the hardening of the Jews, St. Paul now shows that the purpose of this Divine retribution is not the final rejection of Israel, but the reconciliation of the world. Their rejection has been shown to be partial: it will also be temporary.

11. Have they stumbled that they should fall?] Better, “Did they stumble in order that they might fall.”

The two ideas “to stumble” and “to fall” form a natural climax in which the emphasis rests on the latter.

Both words are used figuratively; the former of a moral offence or stumbling, as in James ii. 10, iii. 2, the particular offence here meant being disbelief of Christ, for “they stumbled at that stumbling stone,” ix. 32: whilst the latter word expresses the consequent fall from God’s favour into a state of condemnation and ruin: compare Heb. iv. 11 and James v. 12. The meaning then of the verse is briefly this: “The Jews stumbled at Christ: is that stumbling destined in the Divine purpose to end in their fall?”

The form of the question in the Greek (μή) implies the negative answer which follows, “Far be it,” or “God forbid,” but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles.] Better,—“But by their offence the salvation is come to the Gentiles.” The stumbling of the Jews
salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness?

is here called "their offences," the word being the same that is used so often in ch. v. 15 ff. The rejection by the Jews of the salvation offered to them in Christ, and the increasing violence of their opposition, had in fact greatly promoted the preaching of the Gospel among the Gentiles (Acts viii. 4. xi. 19) and its consequent acceptance by them. In St. Paul's own experience this had been the case at Antioch in Pisidia (Acts xiii. 45-48), it was to be so again at Rome itself (Acts xxviii. 28). In this fact he recognises the fulfilment of the Divine purpose foretold in the passage of Deuteronomy already called to mind in x. 19. The transfer of God's favour to the Gentiles, thus caused by the perversity of the Jews, was destined, in His gracious purpose, to provoke the jealousy and so to rekindle the love of His ancient people; their recovery and not their fall was His aim.

But what a prospect is thus opened!

12. Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world.] Rather, "But if their offences be the riches of the world." If even the transgression of the chosen people has brought salvation to the Gentiles, and if their loss or diminution has thus been "the riches of the world," how much more shall the promise of blessing to all nations be fulfilled in their restoration and fulness when "all Israel shall be saved," v. 26.

This hope, that the final restoration of Israel shall be a source of great joy and blessing to the world, is here inferred from the nature of the case, that the better cause must be followed by the happier effect: but it is already contained in that prophetic song of Moses, which St. Paul has quoted in x. 19, and which he quotes again in xv. 10 "Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people."

the diminishing of them.] The contrast throughout is not between the elect remnant and the rest who were hardened, but between Israel as a nation and the rest of the world. Viewed thus, as a whole, Israel has stumbled but not fallen, has been hardened but in part, has suffered loss and diminution by the unbelief of some, but shall be restored to its full complement, when "the Deliverer shall come out of Zion, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob." v. 26.

their fulness?] i.e. their full complement, as a nation no longer diminished by the loss of a large portion, but forming again one entire people. See note at the end on the meaning of the Greek words ἡγήσατος and ἀληθῶς.

13. St. Paul now turns to his readers, addressing them collectively as Gentiles, and tries to impart to them some of his own warm interest in the welfare of the Jews.

From this point to the end of v. 32 the Apostle combines the hope of the restoration of the Jews with warnings to the Gentiles against presuming on their present advantages.

For I speak to you Gentiles.] But to you Gentiles I am speaking. This clause should be separated from the following by a colon: St. Paul first draws the attention of his readers to the fact that he is speaking to them, as being Gentiles, of that which closely concerns their welfare, namely, the future restoration of Israel.

It is rightly inferred from this passage that the Roman Christians were for the most part Gentiles: see Introduction, § 7.

inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office.] Rather, "In so far, therefore, as I am an Apostle of the Gentiles, I glorify my ministry."

On the various readings see note at the end. In the words "In so far as I am an Apostle of the Gentiles," St. Paul with his usual delicate courtesy and perfect mastery of Greek, implies that this is but one part (μία) of his ministry, chosen as he was to bear Christ's name "before Gentiles and kings and the children of Israel." But since the Gentile world is so deeply interested in the restoration of Israel, it follows (therefore) that even in his special relation to the Gentiles, when labouring most zealously for them and claiming full liberty and authority for himself as their Apostle, he still has in view the salvation of Israel as inseparably connected with the blessing of all the nations of the world.

14. If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh.] Rather, "If by any means I may provoke to jealousy mine own flesh and may save some of them." The word "jealousy" should be adopted as in v. 11 and x. 19; St. Paul retains the same word (παραφλάσσει) throughout.
For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?

It may be admitted that the introduction of a different English word, "emulation," brings out another shade of meaning, included in the Greek, and quite appropriate here; but this advantage is very small in comparison with the disadvantage of obscuring the connexion with v. 11 and with the original prophecy in Deut. xxxii. 16, 21. With the expression of warm affection "mine own flesh," compare ix. 3, where the Singular Pronoun "mine," not "our," implies what is here expressly stated, that the reader is Georilas.

St. Paul's sense of the difficulty of persuading his fellow-countrymen is apparent in the modest phrase "some of them;" compare 1 Cor. ix. 22. (Meyer.)

The reason of the Apostle's hope that he "may save some" is given in an argument à fortiori (compare v. 12) based upon the contrast between the rejection of Israel and their future readmission to God's favour. If in casting off the greater portion of His ancient people because of their unbelief God found an occasion of reconciling the world unto Himself, how much greater blessing may be looked for when He shall receive them again as His own! What will that reception be but "life from the dead?"

This expression is not to be understood of a moral or spiritual resurrection, for that is already included as a necessary consequence in the reconciliation of the world and the restoration of Israel. Nor is it to be limited, as by Theodoret and other Greek Fathers, to the resurrection of the body. It is a figurative expression which may denote either (1) an increase of spiritual fervour and blessing in the whole Church of Christ on earth, so great and wonderful as to be comparable to a resurrection from the dead; or (2) the new life of the world to come, the final development and glorious consummation of the kingdom of Christ. That blessed state, not only in its first stage,—the resurrection of the body,—but in its whole character, as compared with the world that now is, will be a "life from the dead." The "new heavens and the new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness," will spring as it were from the ashes of a dead world into everlasting life.

The former view is the simpler and the more probable, because it does not pass beyond the bounds of the present context.

"After the Apostle has disclosed his prospect of the glorious results of Israel's conversion, he returns to the grounds for the hope of this conversion itself" (Lange). Rather, St. Paul passes on (ὅτε) to a further argument for the restoration of the Jews, namely, that it is in accordance with the original consecration of the race.

For if the first-fruit be holy, the lump is also holy; and if the root be holy, so are the branches.

Rather, "If, too, the first-fruit be holy, so also is the lump: and if the root be holy, so also are the branches."

The first figure is taken from Num. xv. 19-21, where "the first of the dough" is "the first-fruit of the lump" (αἵρεσις φωλιώματος), a portion set aside from the kneading to make a cake for a heave-offering (Neh. x. 37). The first-fruit thus offered to the Lord imparted its consecration to the whole mass which it was taken to represent. In the second figure, instead of a legal ordinance we have a natural process, the branch deriving its properties from the root.

In the interpretation of both figures the fundamental thought is certainly the same, that all Israel has been consecrated to God by the consecration of its "first-fruit" and its "root." But what are these?

(1) Both figures represent the Patriarchs, especially Abraham. (Chrysostom, and the majority of ancient and modern interpreters.)

(2) "I know no other root that is holy, no holy first-fruit, but our Lord Jesus Christ." (Origen.)

(3) "He calls the Lord Christ according to His human nature the first-fruit," and the patriarch Abraham the root." (Theodoret and others.)

(4) The Jews who formed the Mother Church are "the first-fruit," and "the root" also, as some think.

It is clear that neither Christ nor the Christian Church can be "the root" from which the "natural branches" were broken off: for these branches, the Jews who rejected Christ, never belonged to such a root. The branches being the Jews, the root can only be Abraham and the Patriarchs: compare v. 12, and ix. 5.

This interpretation is further confirmed by the fact that St. Paul's figure of the olive tree, with its root and branches, is derived from the Old Testament, where it is applied to the Theocracy or Jewish Church. Of this Jeremiah writes, xi. 16: "The Lord called thy name, A green olive tree, fair, and of goodly fruit; with the noise of a great tumult (i.e. a

N 2
be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree; 18 But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

thunderstorm) be bath kindled fire upon it, and the branches of it are broken." Of this also Hosea says (xiv. 6): "His branches shall spread, and his beauty shall be as the olive tree."

The holiness derived from "the Fathers" to their children was not inward moral holiness, but consecration to God by virtue of His choice of Abraham and his seed, declared by the word of promise and confirmed by the covenant of circumcision: compare 1 Cor. vii. 14.

In the first figure of the dough made holy by the offering of its first-fruit, no other kind of holiness can possibly be thought of but this legal and relative holiness of what has been consecrated to God. With so much identity of thought, combined with the parallelism of form, it is impossible to give totally different applications to the two figures, as is done by making the first-fruit Christ or the Christian Church, and Abraham the root. The usual interpretation (1) is alone admissible.

17-24. St. Paul carries on the second figure of the root and the branches, because it admits of a distinction between one branch and another, and so can be applied, collectivly or individually, to believers and unbelievers, Jews and Gentiles. In his application of the figure to the present position both of Jews and Gentiles, the Apostle finds a warning to the latter against boasting and unbelief (17-22), and a fresh argument for the restoration of the Jews (23, 24).

17. And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wast grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree. Rather, "if some of the branches were broken off, and thou, being a wild olive, wast grafted in among them, and wast made partaker of the root and fatness of the olive tree." The Church of God being regarded as one and the same in all ages, having Abraham for its root and his children for its "natural branches," it follows that "some of the branches were broken off" when the unbelieving Jews by rejecting Christ ceased to belong to the true people of God. Extending his analogy to the Gentile world, St. Paul compares it to "a wild olive tree" unfruitful in itself, but suppying grafts to be inserted into the good olive tree and enriched by its fatness: such a graft of wild olive is the individual reader.

Grafting of the wild shoot on the fruitful stock is the reverse of the common method; and although sometimes practised, it was not intended to fertilise the wild olive, but to give fresh vigour to the fruitful stock, as is clear from Palladius:

"Forcumdat sterilis pingues oleaster olivas, Et que non novit munera ferre, docet." The grafting of the good olive upon the wild is mentioned by Aristotle, "de Plantis," I. vi. 4, "εστι δε και ἄλος εμφανίσας ἐν ἄλοις διαφόροις γίνεσιν, ὡς καλλιεργατὸς εἰς ἄργαλαν καὶ δεινὸν αὐτόν." St. Paul's words do not correspond exactly to either practice: he seems rather to have shaped his allegory to correspond to the facts which he wished to represent, viz., that the Gentiles had been enriched by admission to the privileges which some of God's ancient people had forfeited through unbelief, v. 18. These facts forbid boasting, and rather supply a warning to the Gentiles: and by singing out, as it were, one of his readers and addressing him personally, the Apostle both makes the warning more emphatic, and excludes all boasting against the Jews by reminding the Gentiles that they are not the original Church of Christ, but members adopted into it one by one: "But if thou dost boast, it is not thou that bearest the root, but the root thee."

This passage shows that St. Paul recognised as fully as any of the original Apostles the dependence of all Gentile churches upon the one Church of Christ which had grown out of the root of Israel.

19. One ground of boasting having been excluded in v. 18, another may be sought: "Thou wilt say then, Branches were broken off, in order that I might be grafted in." St. Paul has just said that the rejection of the Jews was, in fact, the enriching of the Gentiles: but it would be arrogant and selfish to assume, as in this supposed reply, that the advantage of the Gentiles was the direct and sole cause of God's casting away any of His people. The selfishness is indicated in the emphatic "I." The absence of the article before "branches" brings out the point, that they who were broken off to make room were original "branches;" their essential character thus indicated makes the fact that they were broken off more remarkable.
20 Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear:
21 For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.
22 Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.
23 And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in; for God is able to graft them in again.
24 For if thou wert cut out of the

unbelief, &c.] Rather, “And they moreover if they continue not in their unbelief,” &c. A new thought is here brought in to check any false presumption based upon the rejection of the Jews. That rejection is not absolute and final: if their unbelief cease, as it may cease, they shall be restored to their former position. Unlikely as such a conversion may seem, it is not impossible: “for God is able to graft them in again.” Why does St. Paul thus appeal to the power of God? Various answers are given. 
(a) To show that the only hindrance is Israel’s unbelief, there being no lack of power on God’s side. (Grotius.)
(b) To meet the difficulty suggested by the figure: “When branches are broken from a tree, they wither and cannot be replaced. Paul therefore here refers to the power of God. What is not done in nature, and cannot be effected by the power of man, will be done by God, with whom all things are possible.” (Haldane.)

The former answer is inadequate: St. Paul’s custom is to appeal to the power of God only for that which lies beyond the usual course of His providence. See iv. 21, ix. 22, xiv. 4, &c.

The latter answer errs by pressing the figure too far, and so bringing in a thought inconsistent with the context; for in the next verse St. Paul argues that the branches which have been broken off are more likely to be restored than the strange shoot to be grafted in.

Quite apart from the figure of the olive tree and its branches, the difficulty of Israel’s restoration is the thought that burdens the Apostle’s mind throughout this portion of the Epistle; so that, after affirming the possibility of that restoration, it is most natural for him to point to the ground of that possibility in the almighty power which is able not merely to restore Israel, if the hindrance of their unbelief is removed, but able also to remove that unbelief itself. The interpretation of the passage does not call for any metaphysical discussion of the relation of God’s power to man’s free will: for St. Paul passes at once to a simply practical illustration of the Divine power in the conversion of the Gentiles.

24. For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted
olive tree which is wild by nature, and were grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?

contrary to nature into a good olive tree:] Rather, "For if thou wost out off thy native wild olive tree, and grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree."

The simple meaning of this verse is that the future restoration of the Jews is in itself a more probable event than had been the introduction of the Gentiles into the Church of God. This of course supposes that God regarded the Jews, on account of their relation to Him, with peculiar favour, and that there is still something in their relation to the ancient servants of God and His covenant with them, which causes them to be regarded with special interest." (Hodge.)

25-27. The future conversion of Israel having been proved to be both possible and probable, is now shown to be the subject of direct revelation. What follows is thus a confirmation of the hope expressed in v. 24: —"they shall be grafted in,"—for I have something more to make known to you on this subject. The phrase, "I would not that ye should be ignorant," addressed, as it always is, by St. Paul to his "brethren," indicates (as in 1. 13; 1 Cor. x. 1, xii. 1; 2 Cor. i. 8; 1 Thess. iv. 13) the Apostle's anxiety to draw special attention to some important truth.

The word "mysteries" denotes in classical Greek certain secret religious ceremonies to which only the initiated were admitted. From the ancient traditions and interpretations connected with these ceremonies, and invested with the same secrecy, the word "mystery" easily acquired the sense, which it bears in the Septuagint, "a secret." Thus in Dan. ii. 18, 19, &c., it is the "secret" of the king's dream, which none can make known but God, ὁ ἀποκαλύφτων μυστηρία. Compare Job xi. 6; Wisdom ii. 23, "As for the mysteries of God, they knew them not: neither hoped they for the wages of righteousness, nor discerned a reward for blameless souls." In Ecclesiasticus xxii. 22, xxvii. 16, &c., ἀποκαλύφτων μυστηρία is "to disclose secrets." R. Lightfoot (on Col. i. 27) says that "the idea of secrecy or reserve disappears when μυστηρίαν is adopted into the Christian vocabulary by St. Paul, and the word signifies simply a truth which was once hidden but now is revealed." But in the Gospels the idea of secrecy or reserve is evidently retained (Matt. xiii. 11; Mark iv. 11; Luke viii. 10), and the word is applied only to the things of the kingdom of heaven which under the veil of parables were made known to those who were ready to believe, but remained still hidden from the unenlightened.

In a similar sense St. Paul applies the word to "divine secrets," truths unknown till God reveals them (1 Cor. iv. 1; xiii. 2; xiv. 2; xv. 51).

Thus the divine purpose of salvation preached to the Gentile Church at Corinth is called the "wisdom of God in a mystery," i.e. a divine secret, a truth which none could know till God revealed it (1 Cor. ii. 7, 10). The meaning of the word in the passage before us is best illustrated by its use in Eph. i. 9, iii. 4, where God's purpose to redeem all nations, and gather together in one all things in Christ, is called "the mystery of His will," and "the mystery of Christ," because in other ages it was not made known as it was revealed to the Apostles.

The same purpose of redemption here viewed in its social relation to Israel—i.e. God's plan of making the obduracy of Israel subservient to the salvation of the Gentiles—is "this mystery" revealed to St. Paul, and by him made known to his readers, lest they should attribute it to their own superior wisdom that they had accepted what Israel had refused, and so "be wise in their own conceits." This shows that the "brethren" addressed are Gentiles.

that blindness in part is happened to Israel,] Rather, That hardening has come in part upon Israel. Compare above v. 7 and Mark iii. 5; Eph. iv. 18. St. Paul joins ἄνω μετοχος usually with a verb (2 Cor. i. 14, ii. 5; Rom. xv. 15, 24).

The hardening is not universal, but only "in part," because the "remnant according to the election of grace" is not affected by it (v. 7): "some of the branches" only have been broken off (v. 7). Nor is the hardening final: it is to continue "until the fulness of the Gentiles;" (i.e. their full number or complement, as of the Jews in v. 12) "shall have some in," into that community of the people of God, signified by the good olive tree, into which some of them have been already engraven. On "fulness" (μνήμων), see Note on v. 12 at the end of the chapter.

The time thus indicated by St. Paul seems to be the same to which our Lord's words point: Jerusalem shall be trodden down of
26 And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, 6 There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled (Luke xxi. 24).

26. And so all Israel shall be saved: The A.V. rightly makes this the beginning of a new sentence, thereby giving greater prominence to a distinct and important prophecy. "And so" refers to the preceding sentence marking the coming in of the Gentiles as the condition upon which will follow the salvation of Israel.

As the antithesis of "the Gentiles" and "Israel" forbids us to interpret the latter of a spiritual Israel ("the Israel of God," Gal. vii.) including "the whole people of God" (Calvin), so the expression "all Israel" being quite unlimited must neither be narrowed down to "the remnant according to election of grace" (v. 7), by which the Apostle means the believing Jews of his own day, nor to "the many thousands of Jews which believe" mentioned in Acts xxi. 20, nor to the whole number of those who shall individually from time to time, even unto the end of the world, be turned to the Lord (Melanchthon). Neither on the other hand must the universality of the expression be exaggerated so as to mean the whole nation without any individual exception. The words must be taken in their natural unexaggerated sense as in 1 Kings xii. 1, 2 Chr. xii. 1; Dan. ix. 11; thus foretelling a future conversion of the Jews, so universal that the separation into an "elect remnant" and "the rest who were hardened" shall disappear, and the whole nation shall be saved, i.e. be made partakers through faith in Jesus Christ of the long-promised salvation.

The passage in its natural interpretation has no reference to the conclusions which some have sought to draw from it (1), that all men shall at last be saved eternally, and (2) that the Jewish Theocracy with its Temple, Priesthood, and earthly kingdom shall be re-established in Jerusalem. "Israel does not take in the Church, but the Church takes in Israel" (Meyer).

as it is written, It is very probable that study of ancient prophecies may have been one mode in which St. Paul, like Daniel (ix. 2, 21, 22), was prepared to receive a revelation of the future destiny of Israel. We must not, however, suppose that he here quotes Is. lx. 20, 21, as the source of his own prediction, but only as a confirmation of the latter part of it, "all Israel shall be saved." The mystery which had been revealed to him by the Spirit (1 Cor. ii. 10) he perceives to have been indicated long before in the words of Isaiah, "There shall come a Redeemer (Goel) for Zion, and for them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the Lord" (Hebrew literally rendered): LXX, "There shall come for Zion a Redeemer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob." St. Paul, quoting the LXX from memory, substitutesthe undesigned variation, "from Zion," serves to show that the Apostle is thinking not of the Second Advent which must follow the Conversion of Israel, but of that first Advent in which Christ as revealed in the Gospel is still going forth from Jerusalem, and shall yet go forth in special power to redeem His people Israel. That full restoration of Israel will be for the whole world the beginning of a "life from the dead" (v. 15).

and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.] St. Paul follows the LXX, who give the general sense with sufficient correctness for his purpose; the more literal rendering (see note on Is. 59, 25) "and for them that turn from transgression in Jacob," points at least as clearly to that unbelieving portion of the nation whose conversion will fulfill the prophecy that "all Israel shall be saved." As this portion of the quotation describes the redeeming and converting work of Christ, so v. 27 shows God's forgiveness as the ground of the New Covenant.

27. For this is my covenant unto them, A renewal of God's word to Abraham (Gen. xvii. 4) applied by Isaiah (lix. 21) to the new covenant, which he proceeds to describe: "My spirit that is upon thee, and my words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seed's seed, saith the Lord, from henceforth and for ever." The expression "thy seed's seed" seems to show that the promise is addressed to Israel, which having been hitherto partly faithful and partly unfaithful, has now returned to its fidelity.

For this description of the covenant St. Paul substitutes another taken from Is. xxvii. 9 (Septuag.) και των ἡ εἰκονεις αὐτού, ὅπως ἀφελάμας τὴν ἀμαρτίαν αὐτού, "And this is his blessing, when I shall have taken away his sin," which is more appropriate to his
are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:

31 Even so have these also now not repented of" (Plato, Legg. ix. 866, E.) or, "that cannot be repented of" (Polyb. xxiv. 12, 11): compare 2 Cor. vii. 10.

Godet interprets "the gifts of God" of the moral and intellectual qualities with which Israel was specially endowed for its peculiar mission to the world: but his argument that the word (χάρισμα) "usually has this sense in St. Paul's Epistles" is not well founded, and his interpretation itself is fanciful: see note on χάρισμα, i. 10.

30-32. The general truth alleged in v. 29 is corroborated by an explanation of the manner in which it will be realised in this particular instance.

The course of God's Providence towards Gentiles and Jews is summed up in a series of comparisons and contrasts, which are made more striking by close and continued parallelisms, the antithesis "disobedience—mercy" being thrice repeated in the three verses 30-31 (Forbes).

30. For as ye in times past have not believed God, &c. Rather, "For as ye in times past obeyed not God, yet have now obtained mercy by their disobedience, even so have these also now been disobedient, that by the mercy bestowed on you they may also themselves obtain mercy."

The former disobedience of the Gentiles (i. 18 ff.) ought to repress all uncharitable feelings in regard to the present disobedience of the Jews, more especially as their disobedience has been made the occasion of God's mercy to the Gentiles.

The Apostle describes in v. 30 the past and present relations of Gentile and Jew, and compares them in v. 31 with their present and future relations.

The comparison involves also a difference, for while in each case "disobedience" is overcome by "mercy" there is a direct contrast in the means employed: "mercy" to the Gentiles results from "disobedience" in the Jews, "mercy" to the Jews is to be the result of "mercy" already bestowed upon the Gentiles: compare xv. 9. The order of the words in the Greek (for which compare 2 Cor. xi. 7) admits, but does not require, a different construction of v. 31: "Even so have these also now been disobedient, because of the mercy bestowed on you." But the parallel clauses are in this way less perfectly balanced than in the order of A.V. retained above.
not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.

32 For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!

34 For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been his counsellor?
35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

"ways," which thus pass man’s understanding, the Apostle is forced to exclaim, "O the depth of... the wisdom and knowledge of God!"

St. Augustine often uses this passage as if it were equivalent to ix. 20, "Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God?" He thus silences all objection to his own predestinarian doctrines, such as that of the damnation of infants dying unbaptized: Sermon 294, § 7: compare Serm. 13, § 5, and 27, § 7. But this passage is not a denunciation of presumptuous objections against the wisdom and goodness of God’s hidden ways: it is an outburst of wonder and delight in contemplating a glorious revelation of wisdom and goodness surpassing all that the heart of man could have conceived.

34, 35. St. Paul now justifies the wondering exclamations of v. 33 by passages of the Old Testament which illustrate the knowledge and wisdom and riches of God, the order of the three ideas in v. 33 being here inverted, as is very usual, so as to bring the last thought into immediate connexion with its own illustration.

34. *Who hath known the mind of the Lord?* The A.V.—"Who hath directed the Spirit of the Lord"—is closer to the Hebrew. See note on Is. xi. 13. But the Septuagint, which St. Paul follows, sufficiently preserves the general thought that the Divine intelligence is incomprehensible and immeasurable to man. See 1 Cor. ii. 16, and compare Judith viii. 13, 14; Wisdom, ix. 17.

"O the depth of the knowledge of God!" For who can measure the mind (μυθῶν) which is the organ of that knowledge (γνώσεως). or *Who hath been his counsellor?* Is not His wisdom all His own, admitting no aid nor counsel from beings of inferior faculties?

35. *Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?* See note on Job xlii. 11. The Septuagint is here quite erroneous, and St. Paul setting it aside gives the sense of the Hebrew correctly but freely: "Or who hath first given to him, and shall be repaid again!" Herein is shown "the depth of the riches of God," that no gift of His is a requital of benefits first conferred on Him, but all are of His own free grace and overflowing bounty. The Apostle here once more touches the root of Jewish error, the self-righteous notion of earning God’s favour by previous merit.

36. The reason why none can make God his debtor is that all things are "from
bim” as their first cause (1 Cor. viii. 6) and “through bim” as the evil present agent who still “worketh all in all” (1 Cor. xii. 6; Heb. ii. 10), and “unto bim,” as their final cause in whom all reach the end and perfection of their being.

Of these three clauses the first and second might be referred to the Father and the Son respectively, but the third “unto bim” cannot possibly refer to the Spirit as a distinct Person. We must understand all three of God the Father, or rather of the whole Godhead, as in v. 33.

The Doxology then follows as a noble conclusion to St. Paul’s great argument; it stands in simple grandeur, like one of the Patriarch’s pillars (Gen. xxviii. 18; xxxv. 11) set up in remembrance of some special revelation of the goodness and majesty of God.

“For ever. Amen.” “As the rivers return again to the place whence they came, they all come from the sea, and they all run into the sea again: so all our store as it issued at first from the foun ain of His grace, so should it fall at last into the ocean of His glory” (Bp. Sanderson, Serm. on Rom. xv. 6).

ADDITIONAL NOTES

7. ἐπαράδεισαν. The Verb is used only once in the LXX, Job xvii. 7, πεποίησαν οἱ δεδεμονες μου, where the Hebrew is יִבָּחָנ “to be feeble” or “dim,” as a lamp.

The real root πωρός was the name of a stone used for statuary (Ammonius, Valckn. Animad. p. 169). It was also applied to “callus”: Aristot. Hist. Anim. III. xix. 9, ἰδεῖμεν δὲ γίνεται τὸ αἷμα ἐν τῷ σάματι πορός, ἐκ τοῦ τοῦ πορὸς πάμφος. Hence πωρῶν and πωρωθείσαι were used by medical writers, e.g. Dioscorides, to describe the formation of callus in the re-union of broken bones; see Liddell and Scott. The Adjective πωρός appears to be an invention of the grammarians (Fritzsche).

9. The Hebrew means literally: “Be their table before them for a snare, and to them at ease for a trap.”

The LXX render Γενθησεως ἡ τραπεζα αὐτων ἐνωσις αὐτῶν εἰς παγία καὶ εἰς οὐσιον καὶ εἰς σκάθαλον. St. Paul, quoting freely from memory, for τραπεζα αὐτῶν puts αὐτίκα at the end, inserts καὶ εἰς οὐσίαν, and changes the order of the two last clauses, reading καὶ εἰς σκάθαλον αὐτῶν τοῦ πάμφος.

12. ηττημα. The word is found once in the LXX, Is. xxxii. 8, οἱ δὲ παρακαλεως εὐνουχ ηττημα, and in 1 Cor. vi. 7, εἷς ηττημα. In Isaiah the Heb. דֶּד is rendered by Furst, Ewald, Delitzsch, Gesenius, &c., “for tribute,” which is its usual meaning: the LXX (followed by A. V. disconfident), render it in this one passage as if it were derived from דֶּד “to melt away,” though this interpretation may be incorrect, the sense in which they used δεδομα is obviously that of the loss and diminution which an army sustains by defeat. That St. Paul here uses the word (δεδομα) as meaning “diminution,” is clear from the antithesis to πωρωθείσαι, which means the “complement,” or full number. See Bp. Lightfoot.

Colossians, p. 323, who shows that in this passage πληρωμα has its usual meaning "the full number," "the whole body" (whether the whole absolutely, or the whole relatively to God's purpose), of whom only a part had been hitherto gathered into the Church.


19. At A B P 47, Cop., Syr. utr., Memph., Arm., Theodoret (some MSS), Damasc., Lachm., Treg., Tisch. 8, Meyer, who remarks, "With such divided testimony, δὲ is the best supported, and to be preferred; it came to be glossed by more definite particles."

1b. μὲν οὖν Lachm., Tisch. and (doubtfully) Tregelles, with preponderance of external authority.

32. τοὺς πάροικος. This expression has, of course, the same meaning and extent in both clauses. Meyer supposes it to denote all Jews and Gentiles not only “in the gross” but “jointly and severally,” so as to include "each single member of the collective whole." This however is precisely what would have been expressed by πάροικοι, without the Article: whereas τοὺς πάροικας is used "with pointed reference to the whole viewed in the mass" (Rev. T. S. Green, 'Grammar of New Testament Dialect,' iv. § 4).

Some interpret the passage of the final salvation of all men: but in accordance with the meaning of “mercy” in ver. 30, 31, to “have mercy upon them all” can only mean to bring them all, Jews as well as Gentiles, into the Church of Christ on earth: “One thing only St. Paul here teaches: it is that at the close of the history of mankind upon this earth there will be an economy of grace in which salvation shall be extended to all the nations living here below, and that this magnificent result will be the effect of the humbling dispensations through which the two portions of humanity, Jews and Gentiles, shall successively have passed” (Godet).
CHAPTER XII.

1 God's mercies must move us to please God. 3 No man must think too well of himself, 6 but attend every one on that calling wherein he is placed. 9 Love, and many other duties, are required of us. 19 Revenge is specially forbidden.

I BESEECH you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living

declaration of God's all-embracing mercy in xi. 32.

by the mercies of God.] The mercy (Diexei$) so often spoken of in ch. xi., as embracing both Jew and Gentile in a common salvation, is here described by a stronger word in the plural number, expressing the tenderest compassion as shown in manifold forms (οἰκονομίας, a word very frequent in the LXX (2 Sam. xxiv. 11; Ps. li. 1; Neh. ix. 19, 27, 28, 31).

present] παραστήσασθαι, a proper term for bringing an offering to the Lord (Lev. xvi. 7; Luke ii. 22; Col. i. 22, 28).

your bodies] The body is claimed first for God's service, because there was great need to warn new converts from heathenism against sins of the flesh: compare 1 Thess. iv. 3. That the Roman Christians had need of such exhortation, is clear from vi. 12, 13, 19.

a living sacrifice.] The sanctification of the outward part of man, which is a true sacrifice, is beautifully represented under the symbols of sacrificial worship. The language is most appropriate; for the sincere worshipper, whether Gentile or Jew, saw in the sacrifice which he presented on the altar a symbol of his own self-devotion. This symbolic purpose determined the choice of the proper material for an altar-sacrifice: it must represent the offerer's life.

For this reason, in all the chief sacrifices it must be itself a living creature: and in every case, without exception, it must be the offerer's own lawful property, the fruit of his life work, and also fit, as food, for the support of his life. In presenting such a sacrifice the worshipper was presenting a portion of his own life as a symbol of the whole. Compare Kurtz, 'Sacrificial Worship of the Old Testament,' p. 60, &c.

This idea of the devotion of the offerer's life was most strikingly embodied in the continual Burnt-offering (Ex. xxii. 38-42; Num. xxvii. 3), the flesh of which was all given over to the sacred fire of the altar, and thence ascended in its purified essence as a sweet-smelling savour to Jehovah: so must the Christian offer his body to the inward refining fire of the Holy Ghost, that it may be made a sacrifice acceptable to God (Kurtz, p. 164).

But how a living sacrifice? The sanctified body might be called a living sacrifice,
sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

because its natural life is not consumed in the offering like that of an ordinary sacrifice. But that St. Paul has a deeper meaning is proved by the parallel passage, vi. 13, "present (παραθηκας, A.V. 'yield') yourselves unto God as alive from the dead." There is in every sacrifice a death, and in this sacrifice a death unto sin, out of which there arises a new life of righteousness unto God. Thus the "living sacrifice" is that in which, though the natural life is not lost, a new life of holiness is gained: compare vi. 13.

The fire of this offering, as Chrysostom says, "needs no wood or fuel laid beneath, but lives of itself, and does not burn up the sacrifice, but rather gives it life."

This consecration of the body is preparatory to its final redemption.

acceptable unto God.] Literally, "well pleasing to God": compare Wisdom iv. 10; Phil. iv. 18; Col. iii. 20.

which is your reasonable service.] An opposition to the sentence "present your bodies a living sacrifice."

The sanctification of the body, though in the truest sense a sacrifice, is not, like the symbolical sacrifice, an outward act of religious worship (αὐτεῖα): the self-dedication is an act of the mind or reason (λογικός), and in this sense "a reasonable service."

St. Paul thus teaches his readers, who might miss the external pomp of Pagan or Jewish sacrificial worship, that they had gained something far better by becoming Christians. "Your worship," he means, "is of a higher order, the worship of your reason: each of you for himself can now present a sacrifice in the highest sense 'holy, acceptable to God'; each can be himself a priest serving God with a spiritual worship."

In 'The Testament of the Twelve Patriarchs,' p. 547, the angels are said to offer "an unbloody and reasonable (λογικός) offering."

2. Sanctification must extend to man's whole nature, and include both separation from all that is unholy, and an inward change in the man himself.

be not conformed to this world.] Or, 'fashion not yourselves like unto this world' (Tyndale).

The Jews distinguished the times before and after the expected coming of their Messiah as 'this world (aion, age),' and 'the world to come.'

Our Lord Himself and His disciples applied the same names to the times before and after His Second Advent, including the persons and the general state of things proper to "this world" and "the world to come." "The prince of this world is Satan, and 'the children of this world' are the wicked: 'to deliver us from this present wicked world' (Gal. i. 4) was the purpose of Christ's Death. The Christian therefore must not in his daily life (mark the Present Tenses) be of the same fashion παράχρημα (ζωή) with "this world," as he was formerly when living "after the flesh" (viii. 13); but on the contrary he must be undergoing a thorough transformation (μεταμορφώθηκε) by the renewing of his mind, which ceases to be "the mind of the flesh" (Col. ii. 18), and under the influence of the Holy Ghost (Tit. iii. 5) is renewed day by day (2 Cor. iv. 16) "unto knowledge" (Col. iii. 10).

This work of God's Spirit does not exclude the co-operation of man's will, which is presupposed in the exhortation "be ye transformed." On the difference between σάρξ, the fleeting figure or fashion, and πνεῦμα, the essential organic form, see notes on ii. 20, 1 Pet. i. 14, and 1 Cor. vii. 31 ("the fashion of this world passeth away"), and Bp. Lightfoot's Dissertation on Phil. ii. 6, 7.

that ye may prove.] The unregenerated mind cannot "prove what is the will of God," i.e. assay (βούλευτα) or discern by practical experience what God wills (Eph. v. 10): to do this is the end for which St. Paul would have his readers transformed by the renewal of the mind.

that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.] Read, the good, &c. It has been proposed to render the passage as follows: "the will of God, namely that which is good, and well pleasing, and perfect." But this construction is, at least, uncommon in the N. T.

The objections urged against the A. V. are

(1) That the expression "acceptable will of God" is unintelligible, (2) that it is mere tautology.

(1) What, it is asked, is the meaning of "acceptable" as applied to "the will"? 'To whom is the will acceptable?"

The answer is that "the will" (διὰ θηλητοῦ) means not the faculty, as the objection implies, but its object, what God wills: and this object is "acceptable" or well-pleasing (εὐδαιμονία) to God who wills it. There is
3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

5 So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one member of another.

6 Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us pro-


The general idea of consecration to God's service is now carried out into particular duties, beginning with the right exercise of special gifts in the Church (vss. 3-8): the first place is here given to humility or sober-mindedness as essential to Christian unity.

3. For I say, through the grace given unto me.] The close connexion with vss. 1, 2, indicated in the word "for," lies in the thought that humility is the immediate effect of self-surrender to God.

St. Paul speaks with authority through the grace given unto him, to make him the Apostle of the Gentiles (i. 5).

3. to every man that is among you.] The sense of these emphatic words must be sought in the context, which shows that the Apostle's precept is expressly meant to include, in its universality, those whose special spiritual gifts had gained for them influence or office in the Church at Rome (compare v. 6). St. Paul, it seems, either knew that there had been, or feared that there might be the same spiritual presumption at Rome as at Corinth, whence he was writing.

not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think;] The play on words in the Greek has a force which can hardly be imitated: "not to be high minded above a right mind, but to be of a mind to be sober minded, according as God hath dealt to each a measure of faith."

The last clause fixes the standard by which a man who has "a mind to be sober minded" must judge of himself. We learn from it that faith is a gift of God, given in different measures, according to the capacity of each man's nature and the work to which God calls him, and that, as the receptive faculty, faith regulates and measures all the powers of the spiritual man. "In proportion as the faith of individuals is more or less living, practical, active, operative in this or that direction, contemplative or entering into outward life in oratory, action, and so forth, they have to measure accordingly the position and task that befit them in the Church." (Meyer). The emphatic position of εἰκότης, gives prominence to the idea of diversity between one man and another: 1 Cor. iii. 5; vii. 17.

4, 5. For as we have many members in one body, [etc.] Translate: "For just as in one body we have many members, and the members have not all the same office: so are we the many one body in Christ, and severally members one of another."

The reason why each must judge of himself according to the measure of faith dealt to him by God, is that the Church, like our own body, consists of many members having different functions to perform.

As the many members are one body in the man, so the multitude of believers "are one body in Christ." Thus Christ is here presented not as the head to which the other members are subject (as in Eph. i. 22; iv. 15, &c.), but as the living Person uniting and animating the whole body: compare 1 Cor. xii. 12.

From this unity of the whole follows the mutual dependence of the parts: belonging all to one body, they severally belong one to another. This thought, not expressed in v. 4, is added in the application of the figure, to enforce the duty of believers to work together, each in his proper sphere, for the common welfare of the Church. Compare Eph. iv. 25.

6-8. The thought that "the members have not all the same office" is now applied in detail to the Church.

The construction of the sentence is a little obscured by extreme brevity, but the meaning is rightly brought out in the A. V.
phesy according to the proportion of faith;

Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching;

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it 10ex, with simplicity; he that ruleth, 116, 12,
with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

The "gifts" (cf. v. 15) vary as the grace of God, of which they are effects, is manifold (1 Pet. iv. 10). They are special qualities and powers imparted by the One Spirit, who also directs the diversity of their operations to one end. "Most frequently it is a natural talent that the Spirit of God appropriates, increasing its power and sanctifying its use" (Godet).

The first four gifts here named are connected with special offices.

Prophecy in the Christian Church was a gift whereby the mind, enlightened and exalted by the Spirit of revelation, was able to declare the purposes of God, and to foretell future events (Acts xi. 28; xx. 23; xxi. 4, 11), as well as to unfold the deep mysteries of the Christian faith, and clothe its moral precepts in words of wisdom and power not of man's teaching. The prophets were esteemed next in dignity to the Apostles. (1 Cor. xii. 28; Eph. iii. 5; iv. 11.)

St. Paul prescribes that the prophets should exercise their gift "according to the proportion of their faith:" these words evidently refer to v. 3, and mean that the prophets should utter neither more nor less than the revelation received by their measure of faith, without exaggeration, display, or self-seeking.

"The rule of faith," the general analogy of revealed truth, and all similar renderings which make "faith" mean that which is to be believed, are unsuited to the context and otherwise untenable.

7. ministry. The word diakonia, meaning "active service," has wide and varied applications. It often includes all ministration or office in the Christian Church (Acts i. 17, 25; x. 24; xxi. 19; Rom. xi. 13; 2 Cor. iii. 8, 9; iv. 1; v. 18; vi. 3; xi. 8; Eph. iv. 12; 1 Tim. i. 1; 2 Tim. iv. 3, 11). But as "there are differences of administrations" (1 Cor. xii. 5) the word is also applied in more limited senses, as, for example, to "the ministration of the word" (Acts iv. 32), and very frequently to the ministration of alms (Acts vi. 1; xi. 29; xii. 25; Rom. xv. 31; 1 Cor. xvi. 15; 2 Cor. vii. 4; ix. 1, 12, 13).

Since in this passage St. Paul is speaking of various special gifts, and distinguishes "ministry" from prophecy, teaching, and exhortation, the word must be taken in a limited sense, as service in things temporal and external, such as the wants of the poor, the sick, and the stranger.

As in Acts vi. men "full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom" are to be set over "the daily ministration" of alms, so here "ministry" or "diaconate" is a "gift."

Compare 1 Tim. iii. 8, 12, and 1 Pet. iv. 11, which latter passage is very like this in sense and construction.

"let us wait on our ministering:" This is a fair paraphrase and completion of the sense; the words in the Greek are simply "in the ministry," meaning "Let us keep within our proper ministry, and be wholly occupied therein." Comp. 1 Tim. iv. 15, "give thyself wholly to them" (ἐν τούτοις τεσσάροις).

or be that teacheth.] The teacher's gift lies in an enlightened understanding and a faculty of clear exposition: he uses "the word of wisdom" or "the word of knowledge" to arrange, develop, and enforce truths previously revealed. In 1 Cor. xii. 28, he is ranked next after apostles and prophets.

8. or that exhorteth.] "Teaching addresses itself to the understanding, exhortation to the heart and will" (Philippi). "Exhortation" was especially used in the early Church as in the Synagogue (Luke iv. 20; Acts xiii. 15; Justin Martyr, Apol. i. c. 87) to impress the lessons of Scripture upon the conscience, will, and affections.

The possessor of this, or either of the preceding gifts, is bidden to occupy himself in the province thus marked out for him, and be content therewith.

be that giveth, let him do it with simplicity;] From gifts that qualify for special offices in the Church St. Paul passes to others of a more general nature.

The first, almsgiving (Eph. iv. 28; 1 Tim. vi. 18), is to be practised "in simplicity" or singleness of heart, without ostentation or any selfish aim (Eph. v. 5; Col. iii. 23).

"Liberality," though not expressed in the word (αλλογεία), is essentially connected with this single-mindedness. It need not seem strange that a gift of the Spirit is required for the right use of riches, if we remember our Lord's teaching (Matt. vi. 3; xix. 21).

be that ruleth.] Literally, "he that presideth" (ὁ προϊστάμενος). A similar title (ὁ προϊστάων) is used by Justin Martyr, ' Apologia' i. 65, 67, to denote the minister who presided at the celebration of the Eucharist. In the N. T. this special use does not occur, but the word denotes those who
9 Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.
10 Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another; Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord;

12 Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; 13 Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality. 14 Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not. 15 Rejoice with them that do re-

were set in authority over a Church (1 Thess. v. 12), the presbyters (1 Tim. v. 17.) Their special qualification was probably the gift of government (ἐποιεῖται, 1 Cor. xii. 28), their duties being such as the restraint of disorder, correction of abuses, and enforcement of discipline. In a still more general sense the word is applied to ruling one's own house and children (1 Tim. iii. 4, 5, 12), and to directing the practice of good works (Tit. iii. 8, 14). This last meaning seems best suited to the present context, in which the work described as 'ruling' stands between almsgiving and showing mercy. "Diligence," or earnestness in business (σπουδῇ), would be a quality especially needed in the superintendence of works of benevolence.

be that sheareth mercy, with cheerfulness.] Whether he is consoling the mourner, or relieving the sufferer, let him feel and shew that the service is willingly and gladly rendered.

9–21. From the right use of special gifts, St. Paul passes on to enjoin principles and habits which are required in all members of Christ's body.

"Love" comes first, both as forming a natural transition from the thoughts in v. 8, and as the common element of the virtues which follow.

9. Let love be without dissimulation. Render, Let love be unsen. Compare 2 Cor. vi. 6; 1 Pet. i. 22. "Dissimulation," introduced by Tyndale, is a much less happy rendering than either "reigning" (Wiclif), or "simulation" (Rheims).

In grammatical construction this and the following clauses to v. 13 are elliptical and unconnected; but their hortatory sense is evident, and in some cases their order suggests a connexion of thought, which is correctly marked by the division of verses.

Thus "love" can be genuine only in those who "abhor that which is evil," and "cleave to that which is good."

10. Again, between members of the one family in Christ love takes a special form, and should be marked by a tender affection like that of near relatives (φαντασμός): "In brotherly love be affectionate one to another." The emphatic order of the Greek is lost in the A.V. "preferring one another." As brethren be more forward to pay respect than to receive it, "in honour preferring one another" (Douay Version), or "leading the way one for another, not in claiming but in showing respect."

11. Not slothful in business.] The whole passage refers to Christian duties as such, and would be better rendered, "in zeal not flagging, in spirit fervent" (Acts xviii. 25), serving the Lord.

There is a close connexion of thought in the three clauses: active zeal must be sustained by fervour of spirit, and both devoted to the service of Christ; compare Col. iii. 24. The other reading, "serving the time," has very little support from the MSS, and gives a less suitable sense, whether taken as equivalent to "redeeming the time" (Eph. v. 16), or as a caution that zeal and fervour must be moderated by opportunity. (Ambrosiaster.)

12. In this verse also the three clauses are connected in thought: joy and patience both grow out of perseverance in prayer.

The "hope" which St. Paul sets against tribulation here, as in v. 3, 3, is the definite Christian hope, "the hope of the glory of God."

13. Distributing.] Communicating (Douay). The Greek word means, "to be, or act as, a partner," either by partaking (xy. 27; 1 Pet. iv. 13; 1 Tim. v. 22), or by communicating, as here and in Gal. vi. 6.

The variation (μάκρος), "partaking in the commemoration of the saints," is an acknowledged corruption, derived from a custom unknown to the Apostolic age.

"The saints" are simply Christians as such (ch. i. 7): if in want, let them be relieved by their brethren; if on a journey, let them be received with hospitality. The two duties here and elsewhere enjoined by St. Paul were of special importance in the circumstances of the early churches (1 Tim. v. 10; Tit. i. 8).

given to hospitality.] Literally, pursuing hospitality, i.e. not waiting for the claim to be made, but eagerly seeking opportunities (compare ix. 30, 31; xiv. 19).
joice, and weep with them that weep. 16 Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. 17 Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. 18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men. 19 Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, "Vengeance is mine; I will报纣 wrath." Deut. 32.

14. The expression, "pursuing hospitality," v. 13, suggests the other sense of the same word, "persevere." The Apostle is thus led to anticipate the thought which he develops fully in vv. 17-21, that it is a Christian's duty to love his enemies, and overcome evil with good. This precept is certainly derived from the Sermon on the Mount (Matt. v. 44; Luke vi. 28), and proves that St. Paul, though he had not seen our present written Gospels, must have known the substance of Our Lord's teaching.

15. The same sentiment is expressed in the Talmud: "Let not any rejoice among them that weep, nor weep among them that rejoice." Compare Ecclesiasticus vii. 34.

Chrysostom finely observes that it is natural to sympathise with sorrow, but that it requires a noble soul to rejoice in others' joy.

16. The two precepts of v. 15 are combined in the wider principle, "Be of the same mind one toward another:" i.e. let each so enter into the feelings and desires of the other as to be of one mind with him.

This loving concord cannot exist, where the mind is set on "high things," such as rank, wealth, honour. (Compare Phil. iii. 19; 1 Tim. vi. 17.)

"condescend to men of low estate." Literally, "Let yourselves be drawn along with, i.e. yield yourselves up to, the lowly." Compare Gal. ii. 13; 2 Pet. iii. 17, where the unfavourable sense belongs not to the expression "drawn away with," but to the context.

The adjective 

rareti is used in the N.T. frequently of persons, never of things. It is better therefore to follow the same usage here, and understand it of lowly persons as in A.V.

A want of sympathy with the "lowly" bars man from man and class from class, so that they cannot "be of the same mind one toward another."

Another chief hindrance to concord is marked in the warning, "Be not wise in your own conceits" (Prov. iii. 7, and c. xi. 25).

17-21. From the mutual duties of brethren in Christ, St. Paul passes to the wider relations of the Christian towards all men, and especially towards his enemies.

End.
is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.

20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

The reference of the Article to "God's wrath" is made certain by the quotation which follows: compare v. 9, 1 Thess. ii. 16; and Ecclesiasticus xix. 17, xxxvii. 12; Prov. xx. 22, xxiv. 29. Both the language and the thought are illustrated by Eph. iv. 27, which shows that by avenging ourselves we give place to the devil.

Vengeance is mine] "To Me belongeth vengeance," Deut. xxxii. 35. The exact order and literal meaning of the Hebrew are preserved in the Greek here and in Heb. x. 30, though both were lost in the Septuagint Version, ἐν ἡμών ἐπιστάσεως ἐξέπεσεν. It is further remarkable that in the latter part of the quotation St. Paul himself does not adhere literally to the Heb., "and recompence" (A. V. Deut.), but follows partly the LXX and partly the paraphrase adopted in the so-called Targum of Onkelos, "I will repay," and himself adds the words, "saith the Lord." (Fritzache.)

It is thus evident that the Apostle's purpose throughout the verse is to put in the strongest light of emphasis and contrast ("not yourselves"—"I") the truth that vengeance is not for us but for God. This meaning is quite lost, when the words "give place to wrath" are made equivalent to "resist not the wrath of your adversary," or "give your own wrath time to abate."

20. Therefore] The whole verse, except the connecting Particle, is taken exactly from the LXX, Prov. xxv. 21, 22. The Particle αὐτοῦ introduces the precept as an inference from the truth that vengeance belongeth only unto the Lord. A various reading (ἀλλὰ) of at least equal authority (Tisch. 8) gives a slightly different connexion: "avenge not yourselves, . . . but show kindness to your enemy."

coals of fire] A full discussion of the phrase "bow shall heap coals of fire on his bead," belongs to Prov. xxv. 21; but we must briefly consider it in connexion with the present context. According to Chrysostom, and other Greek Fathers, the "coals of fire" are God's "sore judgments, which will be heaped upon the sinner who hardens himself against deeds of love.

(1) In favour of this interpretation are the apparent sense of the phrase in 2 Esdras xvi. 53, "Let not the sinner say that he hath not sinned: for God shall burn coals of fire upon his bead, which saith before the Lord God and his glory, I have not sinned."

(2) The reference to divine judgments in the present context, "vengeance is Mine, I will repay."

The chief objection is that urged by Augustine: "How is it consistent with love, to give food and drink to an enemy in order to heap coals of fire upon his head, if coals of fire here signify some heavy punishment?"

The objection is commonly met by a reference to such passages as Ps. xxxvii. 34, Iviii. 10; Prov. xxix. 16; Luke xviii. 7; 2 Tim. iv. 14; and by the explanation that the "coals of fire" will be heaped only upon the impenitent, while deeds of love are meant to lead to repentance.

(6) Augustine and other Latin Fathers understand "coals of fire heaped on the head" as an oriental figure of the burning pains of shame and remorse: and in support of this view we must observe that a very similar mode of expression is found in Proverbs close to the verses which St. Paul has quoted: "a soft tongue breaketh the bone" (Prov. xxv. 15).

The passage thus means, show to thine enemy such kindliness as shall make him ashamed of his hatred; so wilt thou inflict the sharpest and the most salutary pain. The figure is probably that of the melting-pots. As the object of heaping coals of fire on a vessel is to melt down its contents, so here the object is to melt a stubborn heart, a process not least painful when effected by undeserved kindliness. This interpretation is confirmed by the closing sentence of Prov. xxv. 22 (not quoted by St. Paul), "and the Lord shall reward thee," namely, for the good deeds done to thine enemy.

The sense thus confirmed by the context of the original passage is required also by the present context, the general thought of which is summed up in the next verse, "Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good."

The phrase "bow shall heap coals of fire on his bead," would be in the first sense (a) an incongruous appendix to the quotation, but in the latter sense (b) it helps powerfully to enforce the duty of loving our enemies, which is the main subject of the passage.
CHAPTER XIII.

1 Subjection, and many other duties, we owe to the magistrates. 8 Love is the fulfilling of the law. 11 Gluttony and drunkenness, and the works of darkness, are out of season in the time of the gospel.

LET every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt
thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same:

4. For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

5. Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6. For for this cause pay ye tribute also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

7. Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.

applies to all forms of government, and to Heathen as well as Christian rulers: it has "a general validity based on the divinely ordained position of the magistracy, and not annulled by their injustice in practice" (Meyer). There is as little reason for Renan's sarcastic exclamation that "Nero was proclaimed by St. Paul a minister, an officer of God, a representative of Divine authority!"—as for Volkmann's wild conjecture that the second beast in the Apocalypse (xiii. 13), who caused "the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast," represented St. Paul here recommending obedience to civil government.

doeth evil.]

4. For be is the minister of God to thee for good.] Confirmation of the last clause of v. 3, with which it should have been joined. The civil power (ἐξουσία, v. 3) is God's minister, and as such exists only for good to him that doeth good: 1 Tim. ii. 2.

be beareth not the sword in vain:] The sword as the emblem of the power of life and death was borne habitually (φόρειτο) by, or before, the higher magistrates, and that "not in vain" but with a serious purpose, for use against evil-doers. "Qui universas provincias regunt, jus gladii habent" (Ulpian, 'Dig.' I. 18, 6, § 8, quoted by Tholuck).

The Apostle in this passage expressly vindicates the right of capital punishment as divinely entrusted to the magistrate, "for be is God's minister," appointed to execute His righteous vengeance.

a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.] Read, "an avenger for wrath unto him that doeth evil." The words "for wrath" (omitted in a few MSS) answer to the preceding words "for good," and their genuineness is confirmed by the renewed mention of "the wrath" (τοῦ τιναὶ) in the next verse.

5. Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath but also for conscience sake.] Read, "Wherefore ye must needs submit, not only for the wrath," &c. The necessity is twofold, external on account of "the wrath" which the magistrate executes, and internal on account of conscience towards God. We thus see that "therefore" refers to the whole passage (vss. 1-4) as setting forth the grounds of obedience.

6. For for this cause pay ye tribute also.] To avoid ambiguity, read, "ye pay tribute also," Confirmation of v. 5. In the fact of paying tribute you acknowledge that character of the civil power which entitles it to obedience, namely that it is an ordinance of God "for the punishment of evil-doers, and for the praise of them that do well" (1 Pet. ii. 14).

for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.] Read, "for they are ministers of God, labouring constantly unto this very end." "The A.V. has here 'God's ministers,' and in v. 4 'the ministers of God.' The expressions are altered in both verses in the version of "Five Clergymen," which I have followed for this reason, that in v. 4 the idea of serving on behalf of God is implied in νομος; whilst here that of serving or ministering to God on behalf of the people seems to be included also in λειτουργοι θεον." (Riddle in Lange.)

A ministerial, not necessarily priestly, character is thus ascribed to rulers (see note on xv. 16): they labour "unto this very end," i.e. unto that service of God which is described in vss. 3, 4, and referred to in the words "for this cause."

7. Render therefore to all their dues:] Omit "therefore." The verse is a summary exhortation, based on the nature of civil government as stated in vss. 5, 6, and appended without any conjunction, as in xii. 21. "Render to all who are in authority whatever they are entitled to claim."

tribute to whom tribute is due.] This is an excellent rendering of St. Paul's brief and
8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

9. On the order of the commandments of the 2nd Table, see note on Ex. xx.

Thou shalt not bear false witness.] The addition of this clause to the original text, in order to supply a supposed omission, is proved to be needless by what follows, "and if there be any other commandment."

It is briefly comprehended.] Or, "it is summed up." In Lev. xix. 18, sundry laws forbidding injury to one's neighbour are summed up in a saying which contains them all in principle, as it also contains all the commandments of the Decalogue, to which St. Paul here applies it. The several laws which flow from love are thus gathered up again in love, their fountain head.

10. Love worketh no ill.] This emphatic rendering of the words ἀγάπη ἐργάζεται κατά τό άσημον is justified by their position. "Love" (personified as in 1 Cor. xii.) "worketh no ill to his neighbour," neither the ills forbidden in the several commandments, nor any other.

Therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.] "Love therefore is the fulfilling of the law." Compare v. 8. The argument of this passage is satisfied, if it be limited to the law of Moses, and its special prohibitions: but it is probable that St. Paul, by using υἱὸς without the article, pointed to a larger sense in which love is the fulfillment of law. For viewed in its idea and essence as a revelation of God's will, "law" requires for its fulfillment that we should not only cease to do evil, but learn to do well.

11. And that, knowing the time.] "And that, because ye know the season." On καὶ γνώσατε compare 1 Cor. vi. 6, 8; Eph. ii. 8. It recalls what St. Paul emphasizes the preceding thought "Owe nothing but love," which is itself the comprehensive summary of all the
12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

13 Let us walk decently, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfiel the lusts thereof.
Christ in the ethical sense, i.e. to clothe the soul in the moral disposition and habits of Christ. The essential element of this union is the Spirit of Christ, and the Spirit's power is needed continually to maintain and develop the life once bestowed. Each new step in the development of this life may be regarded as a new putting on of Christ, and so may be the subject, as here, of special exhortation. Compare Gal. iv. 19, "little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you."

and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfi[the lusts thereof.] Literally, unto lusts. If ἀνακάθενται has here a purely physiological sense (Philippi) as denoting the material of the body, the prohibition is not absolute but limited by the words ἀνακάθενται (ἐπὶ ἐνθρόνοις): take not care of the body to such an extent as to excite lusts (Meyer), or rather "in order to gratify lusts."

But the opposition between "putting on the Lord Jesus Christ" and "taking fore-thought for the flesh" makes it more probable that ὁθεοῦ here, as in cc. vii. and viii., denotes the flesh in its sensuality and sinfulness: and so the Apostle forbids altogether any fore-thought for its indulgence as necessarily aiming at, or at least tending to, the excitation and gratification of sinful lusts. The words ἀνακάθενται thus strengthen instead of limiting the prohibition.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on v. 1.

The received Text (ἦν ὁ θεὸς) certainly seems to give a better and more pointed sense, by distinguishing the Divine origin of civil government in general from the actual establishment by God's Providence of existing governments.

CHAPTER XIV.

3. Men may not condemn nor condemn one the other for things indifferent: 13 but take heed that they give no offence in them: 15 for that the apostle proveth unlawful by many reasons.

HIM that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubt-ful disputations.

2. For one believeth that he may eat all things: another, who is weak, eateth herbs.

CHAP. XIV.—EXHORTATION TO MUTUAL FORBEARANCE AMONG CHRISTIANS.

The great principle of Christian love commended in the preceding chapter is here applied to enforce the special duty of mutual forbearance in things indifferent. This general connexion of thought between the two chapters is clear and unquestionable: the more immediate and formal connexion being less obvious has been much disputed.

(1.) The expectation of the Second Advent, introduced as a motive to mutual love (xiii. 11), is naturally accompanied by an exhortation to watchfulness and purity (xiii. 12-14); and from this incidental admonition St. Paul now returns to his main thought (Fritzsche).

(2.) The warning against excessive indulgence of the flesh leads by a natural transition and contrast to the case of those who from weakness of faith observe an over-scrupulous asceticism (Meyer).

These views are both partially true, and both incomplete.

The expectation of Christ's second coming to judge the world runs through the whole passage (xiii. 11, xiv. 4, 10-12), as the constraining motive to mutual charity and forbearance.

Before applying this motive in c. xiv., to appease dissensions which were occasioned chiefly by a superstitious observance of things morally indifferent, the Apostle, with admirable wisdom, draws first from the thought of coming judgment a note of warning, not unneeded, especially among his Gentile readers, against a licentious abuse of Christian liberty; and so passes over (δε, xiv. 1) to the opposite and less dangerous error or infirmity, for which he claims a charitable forbearance from those whose consciences were more robust.

1. Him that is weak in the faith.] "But him that is weak in faith." 'If πιστεύει does not here mean "the faith," i.e. the doctrine believed, but the man's own Christian faith in its moral and practical bearing, as a conviction of right and wrong: compare ἡ εἰρήνη, 22, 23. The weakness is described by a
3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

4 Who art thou that judgest another's servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day

Participle, not by an Adjective, and thus (as Godet rightly observes) is not treated as an inherent and permanent defect of character.

receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations.] receive ye, not unto discussion of doubts.

Admit the weak brother to Christian fellowship, take him to yourselves, but not to discuss and pass judgments upon any doubts that he entertains. This plea for a kindly reception of the weak brethren implies that they, i.e. the Jewish Christians, were not the predominant part of the Christian community at Rome. For διακρίσεις see 1 Cor. xii. 10; Heb. v. 14; and for διαλογισμούς see note on i. 21. The meaning "doubts" is clear in Phil. ii. 14.

2. For one believeth that he may eat all things:] "One man hath faith to eat all things." For this meaning of πιστεύω compare Demosthenes, 'Against Onetor;' p. 866 (προσθύμω δι’ την προσφοράν ous εἰποτευκον), "he had not confidence, i.e. was too cautious, to give up the dowry."

another, who is weak, eateth herbs.] "But he that is weak," &c. The scripture here described refers to eating flesh at all, not only flesh of unclean animals or of idol-sacrifices. The weak Christian lived on vegetables.

In regard to the motive of this scrupulous abstinence, see Introduction, § 7.

St. Paul, regarding the matter itself as indifferent, expresses no disapproval of either practice, but only of the uncharitable feelings with which it may be associated. The strong must not despise the weak as narrow-minded and superstitious, nor the weak judge and condemn the strong as unscrupulous and irreverent. Similar cautions are much needed in discussions of the present day concerning "temperance."

3. for God hath received him.] Compare Ps. xxvii. 10; Lv. iv. 28; lxxiii. 24, where the LXX use the same Greek word, also John xiv. 3; Rom. xv. 7; and Clemens Rom., 1 Cor. 49: εν αγαπι προσαληστον ημιο δοσισθε. St. Paul's meaning is, "Condemn not for his freedom the man whom God has taken to Himself and received into His Church in this freedom." 1 Cor. x. 29; Gal. v. 13.

4. Who art thou that judgest another's servant? Read, "another's servant," i.e. God's, or Christ's, according as θεος or Κυριος is adopted in the close of the verse. The question, "Who art thou?" addressed to "the weak" in faith, rebukes his presumption in condemning the freedom which God has not condemned. Compare ix. 20.

The word διερχομαι, rare in N.T., denotes a household servant, distinguished from ordinary slaves (Plat. Legg. vii., p. 763 A) as being more closely connected with the family. (Meyer.)

The figurative expression "standeth or falleth" is variously understood:

(i.) He is acquitted or condemned, not by your judgment, but by that of God (Ps. i. 5; Lu. xxi. 36; 1 Cor. iv. 4).

(ii.) Whether in the use of his liberty he does well or ill, stands upright or falls into sin, is a matter that concerns his own Master, not thee (1 Cor. x. 12, xvi. 13; 1 Thess. iii. 8, &c.; c. xi. 22). This latter interpretation is confirmed by what follows. What St. Paul thus forbids is not a kindly concern for a fellow-servant's safety, but a censorious interference with his freedom. For the Dative see Winer, pp. 263, 265, and below, vv. 6, 7, 8.

Yea, he shall be holden up.] Read, "But he shall stand." Matt. xii. 26; Lu. xi. 18; 2 Cor. xiii. 1.

for God is able to make him stand.] Read, "for the Lord is mighty," &c. Wiclif's vigorous rendering, based on the reading of nearly all the best MSS and oldest versions (ωσπερ εγνα ου κυριος). St. Paul's confident assurance that the man, who in the strength of faith asserts his freedom in things indifferent, will be kept in his uprightness, rests on the might of Christ "the Lord."

5. One man esteemeth one day above another.] If "for" (γιατί) be restored (Tisch. 8), it must be regarded either as a repetition, or better as a confirmation, of the γιατί in v. 2, i.e. it strengthens the argument for the precept of v. 1, by a second example of difference between the weak and the strong in faith: "one man chooseth day before day: another chooseth every day." For the meaning of καιμια see Plato, 'Republic,' iii. 399, F, and Φρασκ'ολως, 'Agamemnon,' 477; and for the subject matter compare Col. ii. 16, "Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day (feast), or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days." From that passage and from Gal. iv. 10, we see that Jewish Christians who were weak
above another: another esteemeth
every day alike. Let every man be
fully persuaded in his own mind.

6 He that regardeth the day, re-
gardeth it unto the Lord; and he
that regardeth not the day, to the
Lord he doth not regard it. He
that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for
he giveth God thanks; and he that
eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not,
and giveth God thanks.

In faith were still influenced by a superstition
reverence for days and seasons which
had been held sacred among the Jews. A
rigid observance of the Sabbath was espe-
cially characteristic of the Essenites. Com-
pare Ecclesiasticus xxxiii. 7-9; and on the
Judaizing element in the Roman Church, see
Introduction, § 7. There is not the slightest
reason to suppose, with Ewald, that St. Paul
is referring to the observance of the Lord’s
day.

Let every man be fully persuaded in his own
mind.] The observance of this or that day
being in itself a thing indifferent, it is enough
that he who observes it and he who does not
should “each be fully assured in his own
mind” that he is doing right. The “mind”
(\textit{ ρο\!σις}) is the seat of moral consciousness, and
therefore of the “full assurance of faith:” cf.
vi. 23, and iv. 21 (\textit{ πληρώματι φαθινής}).

6. He that regardeth the day, regardeth it
unto the Lord.] “He that mindeth the
day, to the Lord he mindeth it.” It being
presupposed that each is fully assured in
his own mind that he is doing right, then he that
sets his mind upon the day in question (\textit{ρυίσσειν})
mind is zealous for its observance
(\textit{ ϕο\!σσω}, Matt. xvi. 23; Phil. iii. 19; Col.
iii. 2), does so for the Lord’s sake, considering
that “this day is holy to the Lord” (1 Esdras
ix. 52).

The clause, “and be that regardeth not the
day, to the Lord be not doth not regard it,” must be
omitted on overwhelming evidence: it seems
to have been added for the sake of comple-
teness, being implied in the Apostle’s
argument.

The setting apart of special days for the
service of God is a confession of our imper-
fect state, an avowal that we cannot or do
not devote our whole time to Him. Sab-
baths will then ultimately be superseded,
when our life becomes one eternal Sabbath.”
(Bp. Lightfoot on Coloss. ii. 18).

He that eateth, etc.] The man who eats
flesh, eats it unto the Lord, because he deems
it right to use what God has given him for
use; and he shows that he is fully assured of
this, “for he giveth God thanks.”

In like manner “be that eateth not flesh
“eats not” for the Lord’s sake, and accord-
ingly “gives thanks to God” for the simpler
meal that he allows himself.

This passage proves the universal custom
of thanksgiving before a meal (Matt. xv. 36;
Acts xxvii. 35; 1 Cor. x. 30, xi. 24; 1 Tim.
iv. 4, 5).

For the Datives see note on v. 4.

7, 8. Confirmation of the particular state-
ments in v. 6 by the universal principle on
which they rest.

In observing or not observing special days,
and in eating or not eating flesh, a Christian
(who is fully assured) does all “unto the
Lord,” for this is the conscious aim of his
existence, to live “not unto himself,” not for
his own will and pleasure, but “unto the
Lord,” for His glory, and according to His
will.

Moreover he that thus lives unto the Lord,
also dies unto the Lord: the ruling principle
of the life is strong in death. “It is a great
art to die well, and to be learnt by men in
health.” (Jeremy Taylor, ‘Holy Dying.’)

“We are the Lord’s,” not our own, but His
property, devoting ourselves to His service and
assured of His protection. The Apostle in
wv. 7, 8 is speaking of believers only.

9. For to this end Christ both died, and
died, and became alive.” The shorter
reading is best attested, and explains the
variations: it also corresponds best with the
following clause, “that he might be Lord both
of dead and living.”

The Christian’s relation to his Lord, both
in life and in death, is founded on the facts of
Christ’s personal history. For the life which
the Christian lives “unto the Lord” is also a
new life (vi. 4) derived from the new life of
Christ, which made Him Lord of dead and
living: compare viii. 38; Phil. i. 20. The
new life on which Christ entered after His
resurrection is described not by \textit{ ζωὴν}, but

For none of us liveth to himself, and
and no man dieth to himself.

For whether we live, we live
unto the Lord; and whether we die,
we die unto the Lord: whether we
live therefore, or die, we are the
Lord’s.

9 For to this end Christ both
died, and rose, and revived, that he
might be Lord both of the dead and
living.
10. But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at naught thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

11. For it is written, 

"As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God."

by the simple verb ἐκφέρω (as in Apoc. i. 18, ii. 8; Rom. v. 10; 2 Cor. iv. 10, 11), to correspond more closely with ἐκφέρω.

The emphasis is of course on the words "both dead and living," as is shown by the καὶ—καὶ, and required by the connexion with ver. 7, 8.

Observe in ἐκφέρω the implicative force of the Aorist, "became alive," for which compare the Additional Note on i. 13, and Bernhardy, 'Syntax,' p. 382.

10. But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at naught thy brother? Read, "But thou, why judgest thou thy brother? or thou too, why dost thou set at naught thy brother?"

If Christ is the Lord of all, what right has the weak to judge, or the strong to despise his brother? For, instead of judging each other, all are to be judged by the Lord. "All" is placed emphatically first, as the force of the argument rests on the universality of the judgment: compare ii. 6, 16, iii. 6, &c.

the judgment seat of Christ.] Read, "the judgment seat of God," and compare 2 Cor. v. 10, which was probably the source of the reading "Christ."

11. The certainty of the universal judgment is attested by the solemn declaration of Isaiah xlv. 21, where for the Hebrew phrase, "By myself have I sworn," (Gen. xxiii. 16), which is literally rendered in LXX, St. Paul, quoting from memory, substitutes the more frequent form, "I live," equivalent to "By my own life I swear," compare Num. xiv. 21, 32, 28; Deut. xxxii. 40, where the LXX have ζωὴν καὶ ἐξωτερικά.

saith the Lord.] Added to Isaiah's words by St. Paul, to show that it is God who speaks.

The words which follow in Isaiah, "the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return," being only a further asseration, are omitted by St. Paul.

every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God.] Isa. xlv. 23. The Hebrew is correctly rendered in the A. V., "Unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear."

Compare Jer. xlv. 26, where for "sworn" there is, as here, a various reading in LXX, "confessed."

In Isaiah the oath of homage (Isai. xix. 18; Jos. xxiii. 7; 2 Chr. xv. 14), as well as the bended knee, marks the adorning submission of the whole world to Jehovah, and the solemn confession of His sovereignty.

The notion of "confessing sins to the Judge" (Ecumenius) is out of place in this verse, though it follows in the next.

12. So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God."

"So then each one of us for himself shall give account to God." On God's supremacy rests His exclusive right of judgment: so when the former is confessed by "every tongue," it follows that each will answer for himself to his rightful Judge. By bringing together the emphatic words, "each one of us for himself," we give prominence to the exact point, on which the application in the next verse is based.

13. Let us not therefore judge one another any more:"

"No longer therefore let us judge one another." The warning against judging is now addressed to both parties, and so St. Paul passes over to the admonition addressed to the strong in faith.

but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling-block or an occasion to fall in his brother's way.] 

"But judge ye this rather, not to put an offence before your brother, or a stumbling-block."

The two words προσκυνήματα and σκάνδαλον differ in their proper material sense as a "block" against which the foot strikes, and a "trap" in which it is caught; but in the figurative and moral sense they are used indifferently, and rendered in the A. V. either "offence," or "stumbling-block." See notes on ix. 33, Matt. xvi. 23. Here it is better to render προσκυνήματα by the same word "offence" as in v. 20.

judge this.] "judge ye this." The Pronoun must be expressed in English to show the change of Person: let this be your judgment and your determination. For this sense of κρίνω see 1 Cor. ii. 2; 2 Cor. ii. 1; Tit. iii. 12.

14. by the Lord Jesus.] Read "in the Lord.
15 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not charitably. *Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died.*

16 Let not then your good be evil spoken of:

17 For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.
serveth Christ is acceptable to God, and approved of men.
10 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another.

20 For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

21 It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumblieth, or is offended, or is made weak.

22 Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he

“Righteousness” is therefore presented not in its judicial aspect as the relation established by God’s justifying sentence, but in its moral aspect as a grace to be exercised and developed, as in fact “the germ, of which holiness is the unfolded and perfected plant” (Forbes): compare vi. 19, Eph. iv. 24, and note on i. 17.

“Peace” in like manner is not simply the state of reconciliation to God (v. 1), but the resulting disposition, the spirit of peace abiding in the heart and shedding a holy calm over the life.

“Joy in the Holy Ghost” is the holy gladness which the Spirit of God breathes around those who “live in the Spirit”: Gal. v. 22, 25; Rom. xv. 13; 1 Thess. i. 6.

The strongest in faith best know that “the kingdom of God” consists in these spiritual graces, not in anything external as eating or drinking; they therefore ought to be most ready to use their liberty in such matters wisely and charitably. Thus with admirable skill and force of argument, the Apostle appeals to faith itself against any misuse of the liberty which faith bestows.

18. For be that in these things serveth Christ. The variation “be that here be serveth Christ (in τῶν θρησκῶν),” is most strongly attested; it extends the thought from the three graces just mentioned to the whole sphere in which they are combined. He “herein serveth Christ,” who for the love of Christ serves his brethren in the exercise of such graces as righteousness, peace, and joy; and so doing he is both “well pleasing to God,” who judges the heart, and “approved by men,” who see his good deeds. Thus he wins the goodwill of his brother, instead of putting a stumbling-block in his way.

19. the things which make for peace. More simply “the things of peace.” The exhortation, “let us follow,” founded on vv. 17, 18, gives a much better sense than either a question, “Do we then follow?” or an assertion of the Apostle’s own practice, “We therefore follow.”

and things wherewith one may edify another. Compare 1 Thess. v. 11.

20. For meat, destroy not. Read destroy thou not: the Singular marks the return to the special case; see note on v. 16.

“The work of God” must be understood in accordance with the exhortation in v. 19 to “edify” or build up each other. Thy brother, as a Christian, is “God’s building” (1 Cor. iii. 9). Do not for the sake of mere food fight against God by pulling down and destroying what He has built up. “Destroy” is here used in its proper etymological sense (καταδίκα, “to destroy”) not, as in v. 15, in the sense of eternal perdition (καταδίκην).

All things indeed are pure. I.e. all kinds of food are morally clean (v. 14).

but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence. The sense is well expressed by Tyndale’s paraphrase “who eateth with hurt of his conscience.” If thou cause thy brother to eat against his conscience, it is a sin to him, and so thou art destroying God’s work in him for the sake of food. On ἀπὸ προσκύνησεως, “with offence as an attendant circumstance,” see note on ii. 27.

21. It is good neither to eat flesh. Not to eat flesh, that is to eat no flesh of any kind, and to drink no wine “is good” (εὐδόκειν), is worthy and noble conduct in one who denies himself rather than offend a brother (1 Cor. viii. 13).

nor anything whereby thy brother stumbleth. Read “nor to do any thing however it is.” The interpretation answering to the A.V., “nor to eat or drink anything whereby ye,” is too limited. St. Paul extends the maxim to all actions which are in themselves morally indifferent.

or is offended, or is made weak. If these two clauses are retained, we must render the last—or is weak: it extends the maxim beyond matters in which a brother is actually led into sin to those in which his conscience is weak, and may easily be grieved. But the genuineness of the clauses is doubtful (they are omitted in Tisch. 8), and to the evidence against them must now be added (r) Freisinger’s Itala Fragmenta.

22. Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Thou hast faith. (Wiclif, Geneva). “The faith which thou hast, have it,” &c. (Tisch. 8, with N A B C: add r.)
that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

23 And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

The sense is not materially altered by such variations, the same supposition being expressed in different forms. The question is the most lively and natural: compare xiii. 3. St. Paul hears, as it were, how the strong in faith opposes him saying "I have faith, and am convinced that it is allowable for a Christian to eat flesh and drink wine," and replies "thou hast faith? Have it to thyself before God," so that God is the witness of thy faith, and parade it not before men to the offence of the weak" (Meyer, after Chrysostom.)

_Happy is be that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth._] Read, "judgest not himself in that which he alloweth." The happiness meant is not the future "Messianic blessedness" (Meyer), but the present blessedness of a clear and undoubting conscience. It is a motive to charitable self-restraint addressed to the strong in faith: he who "judges not himself," who is so fully convinced, that he entertains no question or doubt about the rectitude of his conduct "in that which he allows" or approves in his own practice, should be content with this great happiness, and thankfully consent to restrain his freedom for his brother's sake.

23. And be that doubteth is damned if he eat._] "But be that doubteth is condemned if be eat." The danger of the weak brother is now brought into striking contrast with the happy condition of him who is strong in faith, and so supplies a further motive to the charitable restraint of freedom.

The use of these kindred words (ἐρείσων, διακρίνων, κοινωνεῖν) gives to St. Paul's language a pointed force which cannot be preserved in English. For the meaning of διακρίνων compare iv. 20; Matt. xxi. 21; Mark xi. 23; James i. 6. He that thus doubts, wavers, and debates with himself whether it is or is not lawful to eat, is ipso facto and at once "condemned if be eat," because he eateth not of faith: compare John iii. 18, "be that believeth not is condemned already, because he believeth not, etc." St. Paul does not say he is condemned by his own conscience, or he is condemned by God, but "the very act of eating condemns him, of course according to Divine ordering, so that the justice of this sentence is established not only before God, but also before men, and before himself" (Philippi).

_for whatsoever is not of faith is sin._] _And whatsoever._ &c. St. Paul here adds the major premise of his argument. "Everything that is not of faith is sin." : "This eating is not of faith:" : "Therefore it is sin, and he is condemned already.

The important axiom, _"Whatsoever is not of faith is sin,"_ has been very commonly misunderstood, and misapplied in controversial theology, through disregard of its grammar and context.

(1) St. Paul does not say _πῶς ὁ μὴ ἐκ πιστῶν_ "everything except that which positively is of faith;" but _πῶς ὁ ὁκ ἐκ πιστῶν_ "everything which positively is not of faith." In other words the Antecedent to _ὁ_ is definite, not indefinite, and the proposition is limited to actions in which there is not a mere absence, but an actual defect of faith.

(2) This grammatical result agrees with the context, which shows that St. Paul is speaking only of actions done by a Christian who does not believe them to be right, but is at least doubtful of their propriety. Chrysostom's comment is admirable: "But all this is spoken by Paul concerning the case that lies before him, not concerning all cases."

On the position of the Doxology, which in a few MSS is placed at the end of this chapter, and on the relation of chapters xv. xvi. to the other portion of the Epistle, see Introduction, § 8.

---

**ADDITIONAL NOTE on v. ii.**

In Isaiah xiv. 23, the Vatican MS of the LXX has καὶ ὁμιλήσει πᾶσα γλῶσσα τῶν Θεῶν (Sinait. τῶν Κύριων). But the Alexandrine Codex reads ἐφορμολογησείς τῷ Θεῷ. The variation may possibly have been first made by St. Paul in quoting the passage freely here and in Phil. ii. 11, and afterwards carried back into the text of the LXX, as in the cases mentioned in the note on iii. 12. But the similar variation, ἀγιότητα for ἰμοσα, in Jer. xiv. 26, throws some doubt upon the conjecture that the various readings of the LXX in Isai. xiv. 23, have been caused by the reflex action of quotation.
CHAPTER XV.

1. The strong must bear with the weak. 2. We may not please ourselves, for Christ did not so, but receive one the other, as Christ did us all, 8 both Jews 9 and Gentiles. 15 Paul excused his writing, 28 and promised to see them, 30 and requested their prayers.

We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves.

2. Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.

3. For even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, ‘The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me.’

4. For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

5. ‘Now the God of patience and of hope.’

CHAP. XV.—1-13. CONCLUSION OF THE Exhortation to Mutual Love and Forbearance

1. We then that are strong] Read, ‘But we,’ &c. There is the closest connection between this and the last verse of c. xiv. from the danger of the weak St. Paul naturally passes over (8b) to the duty of the strong towards them. It is thoroughly characteristic of St. Paul to associate himself with those on whom he is enforcing a duty, and also to acknowledge fully the advantage of that freedom and strength of faith which he is urging them to exercise with a loving forbearance.

‘The infirmities’ (λατρευτωρία) of the weak are the acts in which their weakness of faith is shown, such as needless scruples or erroneous judgments: these the strong are well able, as they are in duty bound, to bear with loving patience (Gal. vi. 2; Apoc. ii. 2, 3).

2. Let every one of us please his neighbour] The duty of bearing the infirmities of the weak requires that we should not do the very opposite, ‘please ourselves,’ i.e. indulge our own will and pleasure, in displaying our superior intelligence and freedom, but rather ‘let each of us please his neighbour,’ conciliate him by forbearance and loving sympathy (1 Cor. x. 33; Phil. ii. 4).

‘For his good to edification.’] ‘With a view to what is good for edification.’ The effort to please must be directed to that which is good for our neighbour, in relation to building him up in faith.

3. For even Christ pleased not himself] ‘For Christ also,’ &c. The duty of sacrificing our own pleasure for the good of our brethren is enforced by the one great pattern of self-sacrificing love (2 Cor. viii. 9; Phil. ii. 6).

‘But, as it is written, &c.’] Instead of completing his sentence in the narrative style, St. Paul cites the exact words of Scripture, making Christ Himself the speaker. For a similar mode of quotation, see 1 Cor. i. 31.

The sufferer in the Psalm (lix. 9) addresses God: ‘the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me;’ it is for God’s sake and to please Him that he suffers.

So in the Messianic interpretation (which St. Paul assumes to be known to his readers) the words are addressed to the Father by Christ, and prove that He pleased not Himself, but endured reproach for the Father’s sake and to do His will.

The passage thus strictly interpreted satisfies the purpose for which St. Paul quotes it, even without bringing in the further consideration that all Christ’s sufferings were endured for the good of His brethren.

4. The reason for bringing forward Christ’s example in the words of the Psalmist is that all scriptures of the Old Testament (not its predictions only) were intended to be thus used ‘for our learning.’ ‘Learning’ is here used in a rare and antiquated sense for ‘teaching’ (Wiclif), or ‘instruction’ (A. V. 2 Tim. iii. 16).

‘That we through patience and comfort of the scriptures, &c.’] Read, ‘that through the patience and through the comfort of the scriptures we know . . .’ &c. ‘The patience,’ as well as ‘the comfort,’ is that which the Scriptures give: for the Apostle is here stating the purpose for which ‘the God of patience and comfort’ (v. 5) caused the Scriptures to be written.

‘Might have hope.’] I.e. ‘our hope’ (from the Greek), the Christian’s hope of the glory of God (v. 2). The purpose of the Scriptures is to promote the present possession of this blessed hope through the patience and consolation which they impart to those who endure suffering for God’s sake.

Compare v. 4 for the connection between ‘patience’ and ‘hope.’

5. ‘Now the God of patience and consolation’

‘And may the God of patience and comfort’
consolation grant you to be like-minded one toward another according to Christ Jesus:

6 That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us to the glory of God.

8 Now I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might have peace with God through Jesus Christ, through whom we have access by faith into this grace in which so many have shared.

Compare 2 Cor. i. 7, "Of all comfort." The Greek word (σπάραξος) is the same as in v. 4.

"to be likeminded one toward another." "To be of the same mind one with another." (νόμισμα, not ἐν ἀλληλος, as in xii. 16.

What the Apostle prays for is not identity of opinion, but harmony of feeling: "idem sentire, idem velle."

according to Christ Jesus." Compare Phil. ii. 2, in connexion with the following verses, especially v. 5, "Let the same mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus." Let each be so conformed to Christ, that all may be of one mind among yourselves: "ut unus quasi animus fiat ex pluribus." (Cic. de Amic. c. 25.)

6. That ye may with one mind and one mouth. "That of one mind and one mouth ye may," i.e. that being of one accord (συμβούλων) you may unite in one utterance of praise.

God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. There is no theological objection to the proposed rendering, "The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ," which is fully justified by Eph. i. 17, "The God of our Lord Jesus Christ," and by John xxi. 17. "He is His God, because of Him He was begotten God." (Hil. de Trin. iv. 15, p. 96, Ellicott.) Grammatical considerations are equally indecisive; but there is much weight in Bishop Ellicott's remark on Gal. i. 4: "As the term θεός conveys necessarily a relative idea, which in theological language admits of various applications (see Suicer, 'Thes.' s. v θεός), while Θεός conveys only an absolute idea, it would not seem improbable that the connexion of thought in the mind of the inspired writer might lead him in some passages to add a defining genitive to θεός, which he did not intend necessarily to be referred to Θεός."

For this reason, and because Eph. i. 17 is the only passage in which St. Paul directly and unquestionably calls God "the God of our Lord Jesus Christ," it is better to retain the rendering of the Authorised Version, with the omission of "even."

7. Wherefore receive ye one another. This exhortation is an immediate inference from the preceding prayer for concord, and also a general conclusion of the whole argument beginning with xiv. 1. The appeal there made to one party, "Him that is weak in faith receive ye," is here extended to both, "receive ye one another," in accordance with the arguments addressed to both parties in xiv. 3-13.

as Christ also received us. For "us" read "you," which agrees better with what goes before in vv. 5-7.

to the glory of God." Not, "receive ye one another . . . to the glory of God" (Chrysost. &c.): but, "as Christ received you to the glory of God," i.e. received you both Jews and Gentiles into His Church that God might be thereby glorified. Compare Eph. i. 12-14; Phil. ii. 11.

The interpretation proposed by Grotius —"received you into the glory of God," i.e., into the inheritance of the future glory of the children of God—is not admissible; it would have required the Article to be expressed (εἰς τὸν δόκαι τ. θ.), and it does not agree with the explanation, which St. Paul himself adds in vv. 8, 9, of what he meant by the words "Christ received you to the glory of God."

B. Now I say. "For I say."

The reading followed in A. V. (λέγω δὲ) would have its usual sense, "But what I mean is this" (Gal. iv. 1; 1 Cor. i. 12). But λέγω γὰρ is better attested and introduces more fittingly the explanatory proof of the statement "Christ also received you to the glory of God."

That this statement, and the proof of it, are addressed more especially, though not exclusively, to the strong in faith, is evident both from the repetition of the phrase used in xiv. 1 (προςλαμβάνωσθε), and also from the great prominence given in the following context to the reception of the Gentiles, to whom "the strong" for the most part belonged.

that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision. "The whole passage should be thus rendered: "For I say, that Christ hath been a minister of circumcision for God's truth, in order that he might confirm the promises made unto the fathers, and that the Gentiles might glorify God for mercy."

"For I say, that Christ hath been a minister of circumcision for God's truth, in order that he might confirm the promises made unto the fathers, and that the Gentiles might glorify God for mercy."
glory God for his mercy; as it is written, "For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name."

10 And again he saith, "Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people." 11 And again, "Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles; and laud him, all ye people.

12 And again, Esaias saith, "There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you passage lies on the latter half of the antithesis. St. Paul is appealing more especially to "the strong," i.e. to the Gentiles, and in order to move them to greater forbearance and goodwill toward their weaker Jewish brethren, he shows that Christ Himself became in all things a Jew to fulfill God's promises to the Jews, and thereby to extend His mercy to the Gentiles. Even for Gentiles salvation is of the Jews, not secured by covenant, but granted of free mercy.

For this cause I will confess to thee among the Gentiles.] See note on Ps. xviii. 49. David having been delivered from all his enemies, and raised to dominion over the neighbouring nations gives "the first utterance of a hope, which in later times became clear and distinct, that the heathen should learn to fear and worship Jehovah" (Perrowne). In St. Paul's Messianic interpretation, Christ the antitype of David, foretelling the conquests of His kingdom, declares that in the midst of the Gentiles He will give thanks to God for their conversion.

'Εξωκοσμεοισθα, has here its usual sense in the LXX, of giving thanks or praise.

10. Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people.] Deut. xxxii. 43, where see note.
St. Paul follows the LXX. Either of the alternative renderings would be equally suitable to his purpose; "Praise his people, ye nations," or, "Rejoice, ye Gentiles, ye who are His people."

11. Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles; and laud him, all ye people.] Ps. cxvii. 1. Both clauses are addressed to Gentile nations: in the latter there is a various reading, "let all the nations praise him" (Tisch.) From the other verse of the same short Psalm St. Paul may have drawn his antithesis of "mercy" and "truth" in vv. 8, 9.

12. There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles trust.] Read, "There shall be the root of Jesse, and be that anoint to rule over Gentiles; on him shall Gentiles hope." See notes on Isa. xi. 10. St. Paul follows the LXX, as his argument requires nothing more than the general sense that the Messiah of the Jews should be the desire and hope of the Gentiles.

13. Now the God of hope fill you] "And
with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

14 And I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye are also full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the
offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ 

honouring me as caring for you. And how can it be made acceptable? "In the Holy Ghost:" for not faith only is needed, but also a spiritual mode of life, that we may hold fast the Spirit that was once given. For not wood and fire, nor altar and knife, but the Spirit is everything with us" (Chrysostom).

17. I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ. "I have my glorying therefore in Christ Jesus:" it follows from the nature of my ministry (ver. 16) that I have a right to glory; but my glorying is not in myself, but "in Christ Jesus," because as His minister I do all things in and through Him (1 Cor. xv. 31).

in those things which pertain to God." "in things pertaining to God:" see Heb. ii. 17; v. 1, where the context refers to the duties of the Priest's office before God. St. Paul thus limits his glorying to the ministrations of the Gospel regarded as an offering made before the Lord.

18. For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me.] This is Tyndale's version and very accurate, but the meaning may be made clearer by a paraphrase: "For I will not dare to speak of anything except what has been wrought by Christ through me." The Apostle thus explains and confirms the limit assigned to his glorying in v. 17 as a "glorying in Christ Jesus." "I will glory," he means, only of what has been accomplished not by me but by Christ through me. According to M. Godet, "the only possible sense of the words I will not dare to speak, is this: It would be a rashness on my part to name a single sign of Apostleship by which God has not deigned to ratify my ministry among the Gentiles." That is to say, every possible sign of Apostolic power has been granted to my ministry. But surely the words "I will not dare to speak" are very ill-fitted to express what M. Godet calls "the paroxysm of that glorying of which he spake in v. 17.

to make the Gentiles obedient.] Compare i. 5. The "obedience of Gentiles" to faith in Christ is what has been described above in figurative language as "the offering of the Gentiles." The Apostle thus explains the second limitation of his glorying to "things pertaining to God" (v. 17), i.e. to his priestlike ministration of the Gospel.

by word and deed.] The means by which
hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed.

19. Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20. Yea, so have I striven to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another man's foundation:

Christ wrought through His minister are here briefly stated under the very usual antithesis of "word and deed."

By "word" St. Paul means the Gospel which he preached, by "deed" or "work" (έργα) all that he had been enabled to do and to suffer in his ministry.

19. Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; I read, "In power of signs and wonders, in power of the Spirit of God."

"Signs and wonders" were not all that Christ wrought by "deed" through St. Paul, and the "power of the Spirit of God" was exerted through him not only "by word," but in many other ways. Thus the purpose of the two parallel clauses is not so much to explain more fully what is meant by "word and deed," as to glorify the Divine power with which Christ wrought through the ministry of His Apostle.

The "power of signs and wonders" is not the "power of working miracles," but the power which miracles have as "signs" to convince, and as "wonders" to overawe, by the proof of a superhuman agency. St. Paul appeals to his miracles as "signs of an Apostle" in 2 Cor. xii. 12: compare Acts xiv. 3, xvi. 12, and xix. 11.

By the "power of the Spirit of God" is meant "that extraordinary influence of the Spirit, which in a moment turned men from darkness to light." (Jowett.)

10. so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum;} Tyndale's translation is more correct, so that from Jerusalem and the coasts round about unto Illyricum. The result of Christ's working through His Apostle is here stated as if the preceding sentence had been affirmative in form, as well as in sense.

How does this statement, that Jerusalem was the starting-point of St. Paul's ministry, agree with his own representation in Gal.i. 17? (Lucht, ‘On the last two chapters of Romans.’) St. Paul is here describing not the duration but the local extension of his ministry: it reached, he says, "from Jerusalem" as far as "unto Illyricum."

Damascus, the scene of his earliest preaching (Acts ix. 20), lies between these extreme limits, and so near to Jerusalem as to be fairly included in the parts "round about" it.

The more distant Arabia was not the scene of the Apostle's ministry, but only of his retirement (Gal. i. 17: see Lightfoot).

It was natural, we may add, for St. Paul to fix the starting-point of his ministry at the Holy City, from which the Gospel first went forth into the world, and where he had himself first joined the fellowship of the Apostles, and in friendly intercourse with Peter and James and Barnabas "spake boldly in the name of the Lord" (Acts xi. 18: see also Light. Gal. p. 88).

Chrysostom's interpretation, that St. Paul had travelled from Jerusalem in a circle round to Illyricum, including Persia, Armenia, &c., has no support in this passage or elsewhere.

The great road from the East to Rome, passing through Macedonia into Illyricum, reached the Adriatic coast at Durazzo. This Southern or Greek Illyricum was incorporated by the Romans with Macedonia, and therefore may well have been visited by St. Paul during the journey mentioned in Acts xx. 1, 2. In Illyricum, whatever extent we here assign to the region so named, St. Paul reached the Western limit of his missionary journeys, and was comparatively near to Rome. (See Conyb. and Howson, ii. 126.)

I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.] Compare Col. i. 25. The expression must be understood, as we see from the next verse, with reference to the special office of the Apostle to the Gentiles and his usual practice, namely, to preach the Gospel in the chief cities of each country that he visited, and to lay foundation stones which others might build (1 Cor. iii. 10). This St. Paul could truly say that he had done from Jerusalem unto Illyricum.

20. Yea, so have I striven to preach the gospel.] "Making it however my ambition to preach the Gospel on this wise."

The better reading makes this a participial clause, dependent on the preceding sentence, and containing an important limitation of its meaning.

For the meaning of φιλοτιμοῦται see 1 Cor. v. 9, and 1 Thess. iv. 11.

The mode of preaching (οὕτως εἰσῆγεται) is explained negatively in this verse, and positively in the next.

not where Christ was named.] I.e. not where men had already been taught to believe...
21 But as it is written, 'To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard shall understand.

22 For which cause also I have been much hindered from coming to you.

23 But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many years to come unto you;

24 Whencesoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with your company.

25 But now I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of

in Christ, and call upon His name in public confession and adoration: compare Eph. i. 21, 2 Tim. ii. 19, Isa. xxxvi. 13, Amos vi. 10.

lest I should build, &c.] In 2 Cor. x. 12-16 the same principle is asserted with the strong emotion roused by the ungenerous conduct of his adversaries.

Baur's objection to the genuineness of this passage ('Paulus,' i. p. 357) is based on a misrepresentation of its meaning. For it is evident that St. Paul refers to the oral preaching of the Gospel, as requiring his personal presence hitherto in the East. His letters to the Colossians and Laodiceans (Col. iv. 16), are sufficient proof that in writing to the Church at Rome, he was not transgressing his rule to avoid building on another man's foundation.

21. But as it is written,] Isaiah lii. 15, quoted exactly from the LXX. According to the Hebrew, nations and kings shall be astonished at the exaltation of the suffering Servant of God, as a thing unheard and unknown. In the LXX the change in the form of the sentence does not materially affect the sense in which St. Paul uses the passage, namely to show that his practice of preaching where Christ's name was unknown was in agreement with the general character of the Gospel message as foretold by Isaiah. According to Fritzschke, St. Paul believed that Isaiah pointed especially to him and his ministry, predicting that Paul the Apostle of the Gentiles should carry the announcement of the Messiah to those Gentiles who had not yet heard of Him from other Apostles. But this is a mere travesty of St. Paul's meaning, invented by one who himself rejects the Messianic interpretation of Isaiah lii., liii., altogether. See notes on Isaiah.

22. I have been much hindered] "I was the most times hindered." There were other hindrances, but the most frequent arose from the duty of preaching the Gospel in places where Christ's name was not known.

23. But now having no more place in these parts.] "But now no longer having place" i.e. since no longer (epist.) I have room. In these regions from Jerusalem to Illyricum, the Gospel message has been fully preached (v. 19), and Churches have been founded, so that there is no longer room for doing that which is the peculiar work of an Apostle, especially of the one "Apostle of the Gentiles."

a great desire] "a longing" (ἐντολή): compare i. 11; 1 Thess. iii. 6; a Cor. vii. 7, 11; Philipp. i. 8; with Bp. Lightfoot's note.

24. Whencesoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey. Read, "Whencesoever I take my journey into Spain:—for I hope to see you as I pass through." The words "I will come to you" were added to complete the broken sentence, the conclusion of which is found only in an altered form in v. 18.

Meyer omits ὑμῖν also: "Whencesoever I take my journey into Spain, I hope to see you as I pass through." This makes all smooth and regular, but is against the evidence, and the broken sentence is quite in St. Paul's style.

On the intended journey to Spain see Introduction, § 6.

The visit to Rome was intended to be only in passing through, because the Christian Faith was already established there (Bengel).

and to be brought on my way thitherward] "and to be sent forward thither." St. Paul hoped to receive from Rome the same kindness and respect as from other Churches, which sent companions to escort him on his further journeys: Acts xv. 3; 1 Cor. xvi. 6; 2 Cor. i. 16.

if first I be somewhat filled with your company.] "If I may first be in part satisfied with your company," or "after that I have somewhat enjoyed you" (Tyndale), "enjoyed your acquaintance" (Crane). Compare i. 12 for an explanation of the nature of the satisfaction which St. Paul hoped for.

St. Paul says courteously "in part satisfied," meaning "not as much as I might wish, but as much as circumstances shall permit" (Grotius).

25. But now I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the saints.] "But now I am setting
ROMANS. XV. 229

Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things.

out unto Jerusalem, ministering to the saints.” In contrast to the hope of a future visit to Rome the Apostle’s present and immediate duty is taking him away in the opposite direction. See Acts xx. 3, and note on i. 9.

“ministering.” The Present Participle implies that the journey in charge of the collected alms of the Churches was itself a part of the ministration to the poor saints at Jerusalem: see 1 Cor. xvi. 4, 15; 2 Cor. ix. 1; and Introduction, § 2.

26. For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia.] “For Macedonia and Achaia have been pleased.” Cp. Luke xii. 32; 1 Thess. ii. 8. The word (γινακαίρως) expresses the benevolent pleasure of a cheerful giver.

to make a certain contribution for the poor saints.] Read, “to make some contribution for the poor among the saints.” See note on xii. 13. “The contributor enters into fellowship with the person aided, inasmuch as he ‘shares his necessities’; kosmoria is hence the characteristic expression for almsgiving, without however having changed its proper sense communion into the active one of communication” (Meyer).

The indefinite word some corresponds to the fact that the contribution might be more or less according to the ability and good will of the givers (1 Cor. xvi. 2; 2 Cor. ix. 7).

27. It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are.] “They have been pleased, I say, and are their debtors!” The yap not only reserves the previous statement, but confirms it by a further explanation.

For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things.] “For if the Gentiles shared in their spiritual things.” The G-spel, with all its spiritual blessings, which are the gifts of the Holy Ghost, was at first the possession of the Mother Church in Jerusalem, and from thence was communicated to the Gentiles. In return for these greater gifts the Gentiles owe a debt (ὀφειλον) to the saints at Jerusalem “to minister unto them in carnal things,” i.e. in things which belong to man’s bodily life, such as food and raiment. For this sense of “carnal” things as contrasted with spiritual, see 1 Cor. ix. 11. Observe that St. Paul applies to this “ministry of the body” the same honourable title λειτουργία which he has used above of preaching the Gospel (v. 16).

Observe also in proof of the Pauline authorship of this chapter (most unreasonably questioned by Baur) the delicate and unobtrusive coincidence with Gal. ii. 10.

28. and have sealed to them this fruit.] Compare Phil. iv. 17; the contribution (κοσμωσια, v. 26) is as fruit brought forth by the Gentile Churches. By going himself with those who conveyed it, St. Paul would assure and certify to the saints at Jerusalem the faithful delivery of the gift by the seal, as it were, of Apostolic authority, more especially because the pillars of the Church at Jerusalem had expressly laid on him the duty of remembering the poor (Gal. ii. 10).

I will come by you into Spain.] Read, “I will come back,” &c. Symp. 193, c.

29. And I am sure that, when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing, &c.] “And I know that in coming to you, I shall come,” &c. There is an emphasis on the pronoun. Thus the repetition of the word come is no empty tautology: the reason of the Apostles’ confidence lies in the character of those to whom he is coming: he knows that in them there will be nothing to diminish the fulness of the blessing which he brings. Compare i. 8, 12. So in 1 Cor. ii. 1, “And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom,” the reason of the simplicity of the Apostle’s preaching lay in the self-sufficiency of those to whom he came, and in their conceit of superior wisdom.

the blessing of the gospel of Christ.] Read, “the blessing of Christ.”

Goder rightly asks, “Would a forger writing under the name of the Apostle in the 2nd century, have drawn a picture of the future so opposite to the way in which things really came to pass?”

30. Now I beseech you, brethren, for the
or the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me;

31 That I may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judea;
and that my service which I have for Jerusalem may be accepted of the saints;

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.
CHAPTER XVI.

3 Paul wisheth the brethren to greet many, 17 and adviseth them to take heed of those which cause dissension and offences, 21 and after sundry salutations endeth with praise and thanks to God.

I COMMEND unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of myself also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:

4 Who have for my life laid down that Phebe was going to Rome on legal "business." On the conjecture that Phebe's destination was Ephesus, not Rome, see Introduction, § 8.

for she hath been a succourer of many.] for she herself also." The legal representative of a foreigner or provincial was called in Latin "patronus," in Greek ἀρχιτάτηρ. In allusion to the latter name and to the word ἀρχιτατήτηρ, St. Paul calls Phebe a ἀρχιτάτητη, i.e. a "protectoress" or "helper" of many and of himself among them. Wicilf preserves the play on words, "and that ye help her in whatever cause she shall need of you, for she helped many.

and of myself also] It is not improbable that Phebe may have rendered service to St. Paul at Cenchrea on the occasion mentioned in Acts xviii. 18. His vow seems to point to a deliverance from danger or sickness.

3–16. APOSTOLIC GREETINGS.

On this whole section in its relation to the rest of the Epistle, see Introduction, § 8.

3. Greet Priscilla.] "Priest." See note on Acts xviii. 2. On the objection that Aquila and Priscilla were not likely to have been at Rome at the time when St. Paul wrote to that Church, see Introduction, § 8.

my helpers in Christ Jesus.] "My fellow-workers," &c. "Labour for the Gospel lives and moves in Christ as its very element" (Meyer). For the fact see Acts xvii. 26; 1 Cor. xvi. 19. They were also fellow-workers in the trade of tent-making (Acts xviii. 3).

4. Who have for my life laid down their own necks.] Omit "have." The fact thus stated as a special reason for greeting them (οἰκεῖοι, "quippe qui") is otherwise unknown, and the exact meaning of the statement is therefore somewhat obscure to us, though it must have been clear to the readers.

In the assault of the Jews at Corinth (Acts xviii. 6–18), and again in the tumult at Ephesus (Acts xix.), Aquila and Priscilla were with St. Paul, but are not specially mentioned as incurring any danger for his
their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.

5 Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my well-beloved Epenetus, who is the first-fruits of Achaia unto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

sake. Such occasions were frequent in the adventurous life of the Apostle. 

{laid down their own necks.] Read, "neck." The Singular implies that the expression is figurative, as does the converse use of the Plural μυρίσας in Mark x. 30, if the reading be retained. The most likely meaning therefore is that Aquila and Priscilla risked their lives, not that they literally put down their necks under the executioner's sword, nor that they pledged (ινθεάον) their lives to the magistrate for the safe custody of Paul.

unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.] St. Paul speaks with emotion as of an event comparatively recent: yet sufficient time had elapsed for the matter to have become generally known among the Gentiles. That these two circumstances correspond well with the supposition that the event occurred at Ephesus in the tumult, and that St. Paul had recently heard of the arrival of his friends at Rome. It would be natural that he should thus commend them to his readers on the first opportunity, and should mention the thanks-giving of the Gentile Churches, which he had since been visiting.

5. Likewise greet the church that is in their house.] See Acts xili. 12; 1 Cor. xvi. 19; Col. iv. 15; Philem. 2. "The Church in the house" was not merely the Christian household itself, but a body of believers meeting for worship in the house of some leading member of the community.

It appears from the " Martyrdom of Justin," § 3, that as late as at least as the middle of the 2nd century there was no fixed place of general assembly for the whole Church at Rome, but several small assemblies like this Church in the house of Aquila and Priscilla. See Lightfoot, Col. iv. 15; and Bingham, 'Antiquities,' VIII.i.13.

Salute my well-beloved Epenetus.] The word rendered "salute" or "greet" is the same throughout the chapter. Of "Epenetus my well-beloved," nothing is known except from this passage.

who is the first-fruits of Achaia.] For "Achaia," introduced from 1 Cor. xvi. 15.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellowprisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane, our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in

read "Asia," and for its geographical meaning see note on Acts ii. 9. Epenetus, St. Paul means, was one of the first converts in Asia, "the first-fruits" of the "offering of the Gentiles" xv. 16.

In the spurious list of "the Seventy Apostles" ascribed to Hippolytus, Epenetus figures as Bishop of Carthage.

6. Mary.] Variations of the text make it uncertain whether Mariam or Maria was of Jewish or Roman origin, and whether the labours which gained her a special greeting were spent on the Apostle (γιὰσ) or on his readers (γιὰσ).

T. my kinsmen.] Since other Jews are mentioned in the context, e.g. Aquila and Priscilla (v. 1), it is thought that the persons distinguished by St. Paul as his "kinsmen" here, and in 2 Cor. i. 15, 21, were members of his family, not merely fellow-countrymen (as in ix. 3). On the other hand it may be said that in writing to a Gentile Church the Apostle might naturally speak of Jewish Christians as his fellow-countrymen or "kinsmen according to the flesh" (ix. 3), and the great number of persons to whom the term (οὐγαίνοι) is applied in this chapter makes it improbable that they were all of the Apostle's family.

fellow-prisoners.] "fellow-captives." Andronicus and Junia (or Junias, if the name be a man's) are mentioned with especial honour; as soldiers of Christ they had shared at some time in St. Paul's captivity (see 2 Cor. vi. 5; xi. 23; and Col. iv. 10); though not themselves here styled "Apostles," as Chrysostom and others have thought (see note at end) they were well known to the Apostles, and had been among the earliest disciples (cf. Acts xxi. 16), having become Christians before St. Paul himself.

8, 9. Amplias.] A contraction of Ampliatus, which fuller form is common in the sepulchral inscriptions of persons connected with Cæsar's household (see Intro., § 8).

The name's "Urbanus," (or "Urban," not "Urbane") is found, as here, in juxtaposition with Ampliatus in a list of imperial freedmen, on an inscription A.D. 115.
Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus’ household.
11 Salute Herodion my kinsman.
Greet them that be of the household of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.
12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord.

Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.
13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.
14 Salute Asycritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobos, Hermas, and the brethren which are with them.

our helper in Christ.] Rather, “Our fellow-labourer in Christ;” not a personal companion of St. Paul, like those whom he calls “my fellow-labourers” (vv. 3, 21), but one active in the same cause of Christ, with St. Paul and his readers.

“Stachys” has no distinction but that of being, like Amphius, dear to the Apostle in Christian love.
The names Stachys, Apelles, Aristobulus, Narcissus, Tryphena, and Tryphosa, Rufus, Hermes, Hermas, Patrobos, Philologus, Julia, and Nereus occur more or less frequently in inscriptions of Caesar’s household. (See Introd. § 8, and Bp. Lightfoot’s ‘Philippians,’ p. 172.)

10. Apelles approved in Christ.] i.e. the tried Christian: as Origen suggests, Apelles had probably endured much tribulation, and so had been tried and approved: cf. v. 3, 4. The name occurs as that of a Jew in Horace, 1 Sat. v. 100.

Aristobulus’ household.] Literally, “those of Aristobulus,” more probably his servants than kinsmen (1 Cor. i. 11). As only certain of them (τοὺς ἐκ τῶν Ἀ.) are saluted, namely, as in v. 11, those who were “in the Lord;” it is likely that Aristobulus himself was not a Christian.

It is not improbable that this Aristobulus was “Aristobulus the younger” (Joseph. ‘Antiq.’ xx. i. 2), the grandson of Herod the Great, and brother of Agrippa and Herod, kings of Judea and Chaldea, who lived in Rome in a private station (Bell. Jud. ii. xi. 6), and died there not before A.D. 45.

Being very friendly to the Emperor Claudius (Jos. ‘Antiq.’ l. c.) he may have bequeathed his slaves to him, and they thus became part of Caesar’s household, though still distinguished by the name of their late master: as servants of Aristobulus many of them would naturally be Jews, and so likely to become hearers of the Gospel. See Lightfoot on Philippians, p. 172, and Dictionary of Greek and Roman Biography, “Aristobulus,” 5.

11. Herodion my kinsman.] See on v. 7. Being St. Paul’s kinsman Herodion was a Jew, and very probably (as we may conjecture from his name and the immediate juxta-

position) one “of the household of Aristobulus.” (Lightfoot.)

Greet them that be of the household of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.] This was probably the wealthy and powerful freedman of Claudius, whose death in prison in the year A.D. 55 is described byTacitus, Ann. xii. i. In this case there is no real anarchism, as Lucht thinks, p. 147. For either by confiscation, which Lucht supposes, or by the law of succession, the household of the freedman of Claudius would pass into the possession of Nero, retaining the name of their deceased owner under the form Narcissiani, οἱ Ναρκίσσεως. See ‘Dictionary of Greek and Roman Antiquities,’ “Libertus,” and Lightfoot, ‘Philippians,’ p. 173.

12. Tryphena is made a prominent character in the Apocryphal Acts of Paul and Thecla.

Tryphena and Tryphosa were probably sisters. Their names both meaning “dainty” or “luxurious” are contrasted with their “toiling” in the Lord. Both names are found in connexion with the imperial household about this date.

Observe how St. Paul distinguishes “Persis” as “the beloved,” not “my beloved,” as in v. 8. Her many labours in the Lord were performed on some definite occasion now past: Tryphena and Tryphosa were labouring still.

13. Rufus, though his name is common, is supposed to be son of Simon of Cyrene (Mark xv. 21), for St. Mark, who probably wrote at Rome, assumes that Alexander and Rufus are well known.

chosen in the Lord.] Rather, the chosen. The title seems to be added as expressing some special excellence, and not simply that Divine election which is common to all Christians. Compare 1 Pet. ii. 4, Sap. Salom. iii. 14, τὴν πιστεύουσαν χάριν ἐκλεκτήν, and Baruch iii. 50, Ἴχθους ἐκλεκτοῦ. His mother and mine.] A graceful acknowledgment of maternal love and care bestowed, we know not when, on the Apostle. The father and brother seem to be dead, if this be the Rufus of St. Mark.

14. Asymmetus, Phlegon, and Hermes, are wholly unknown, though catalogued by the
15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

18 For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their

Pseudo-Hippolytus as Bishops of Hyrcania, Marathon, and Dalmatia.

In the same list "Patrobas" (or Patrobius) appears as Patrobus, Bishop of Puteoli: he may have been a dependant of Patrobius, the powerful freedman of Nero, whose death is recorded by Tacitus, Hist. i. 49, ii. 95. (Lightfoot, 'Philippians,' p. 174.)

Hermas.] Origen’s conjecture on this passage that this Hermas was the author of "The Shepherd" is of no weight against the contemporary evidence of the Muratorian Canon. A.D. 170. circ. "Hermas composed "The Shepherd" very lately in our time" in the city of Rome, while the Bishop Pius his brother sat in the chair of the Roman Church." Compare Westcott on the Canon, pp. 217-220, and Lightfoot, 'Philipp.' p. 167.

"the brethren which are with them." Origen suggests on v. 15 that these were the household servants of the persons above named. Others, with greater probability, have imagined them to be members of a separate Christian congregation at Rome, similar to those mentioned in v. 5 and v. 15.

16. Philologus and Julia were probably man and wife, or possibly brother and sister: a Caius Julius Philologus is mentioned in an inscription (Murat. p. 1386, 1) as freedman of Caius. Thus both names point to a connection with "the household of Cæsar." On "Nereus" and his legendary history see "Dictionary of Bible," and J. T. Taylor, "Marriage Ring," Part 1. p. 209.

His sister was probably called Nereis, and a Claudia Nereis is mentioned as a freedwoman of Augustus (Lightfoot).

"Olympas" is mentioned in the list of the Pseudo-Hippolytus. See note on v. 5.

Salute one another with an holy kiss.] The ancient custom of the East, particularly among the Jews, of uniting a greeting with a kiss, became among Christians a holy symbol of loving fellowship in the Lord. (Compare i. 7, note on χαίρετος.)

In 1 Thess. v. 26, St. Paul requests the leaders of the Church to "salute all the brethren with a holy kiss," seemingly in his name and as a token of his love.

Here and in 1 Cor. xvi. 20; 2 Cor. xiii. 12 "a kiss of charity" (1 Pet. v. 14) is to be given and received by each member of the Church in token of their love to one another.

This "mystic" (Clem. Al.) or symbolic "kiss of peace" (Tert.), "the Lord’s kiss" (Ap. Const. ii. 57) was embodied in the Eucharistic office as early as the time of Justin Martyr (Apol. i. 65 A.D.): it occurred immediately before the oblation of the gifts, and its use is thus defined in the so-called "Apostolic Constitutions": "Let the Bishop salute the Church and say, ‘The peace of God be with you all. And let the people answer, And with thy spirit; and let the deacon say to all, Salute ye one another with the holy kiss. And let the clergy salute the Bishop, the men of the laity salute the men, the women the women.” viii. 11.

The custom is retained in the Greek Church.

The churches.] "All the churches." Compare v. 19, and i. 8. The expression need not be limited to the churches visited by St. Paul: he knew the good will of all towards the Romans, and so speaks for all.

17-20. A WARNING AGAINST FALSE TEACHERS.

17. divisions and offences.] The articles in the Greek imply that "the divisions and the offences," which had been caused in other Churches by false teachers, were known to the readers, not necessarily that the same evils were already prevalent among themselves.

The contrary is rather implied by the absence of any such expression as "among you," and by the emphasis on the pronoun in the clause "contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned."

The Apostle fears lest false teachers, such as those who had caused so much trouble elsewhere, might appear at Rome, and so exhorts his readers "to mark them," i.e. to watch them carefully and keep out of their way.

Bp. Lightfoot, 'Philippians,' iii. 18, thinks that the warning is directed against persons belonging to the same party to which the passages vi. 1-23; xiv. 1—xv. 6, are chiefly addressed. See Introduction, § 8.

18. our Lord Jesus Christ.] "Our Lord Christ." In "serve not," the negative has
own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly, 

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

21 Timotheus my workfellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lord.

from its position an emphatic force equivalent to "refuse to serve." The further description of men who serve "their own belly," i.e. who give themselves up to sensual indulgence, indicates a class of false teachers like the adversaries of the Apostle at Philippi, "whoso God is their belly." (Phil. iii. 19).

by good words and fair speeches.] Read, "by their kind and flattering speech," or, "by their kind speech and praise." The meaning of χρηστολογία is not disputed: Fritzsche, followed by Meyer, takes ελογία in the sense of "eloquence" or "fine expression," as in Plato (Rep., iii. 400 D), and Lucian (Alexiphanes i. near the beginning). Fritzsche thinks that St. Paul has used ελογία in this unusual sense for the sake of the pointed alliteration and antithesis between χρηστολογία referring to the contents, and ελογία to the form of the discourse.

But two words combined under one Article ought to express cognate ideas, rather than two ideas so distinct as those of "kindness" and "eloquence" (Philippi).

The meaning "praise" (Plato, "Aristocles, 363 A) is much nearer to the usual Scriptural sense, "blessing;" compare Rev. v. 12. That the "praise" here meant is false and "flattering" is implied not in the word, but in the context.

decieve the hearts of the simple.] Rather, "of the innocent." (All the English versions except Geneva and A.V.). See Prov. xiv. 15. The same word (ἀκανθός) is applied in Heb. vii. 26 to Christ, in whom "innocence" is combined with the fulness of wisdom and knowledge; but in others it is often akin to a simplicity which is easily deceived. See Trench, "N. T. Synonymics," 2nd Series; and Ruhnken, "Ad Tim." p. 18.

10. The connexion and arguments are made quite clear by the emphatic position of ἐρριπθόν. "The innocent they deceive, but they ought not to deceive you, who are not mere innocents, for your obedience is come abroad unto all men." Compare i. 8.

I am glad therefore on your behalf.] Rather, "Over you therefore I rejoice." In the right reading, εὖ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν χαῖρω (Tisch. 8), the position of the pronoun is again emphatic: there is a delicate combination of warning with the expression of firm confidence (Meyer). Only, the confidence is expressed first: this is characteristic of St. Paul, but yet I would have you wise unto that whish is good, and simple concerning evil.

On the word δειμωσα, "pur," unmixed, unalloyed with evil, see Trench and Ruhnken, as above on v. 18; and compare Matt. x. 16; Phil. ii. 15. By the general expression "wise unto that which is good" St. Paul means, especially wise in discerning and adhering to the truth which they had learned.

20. Warning is followed by encouragement. They who cause dissension (v. 17) are instruments of Satan: "but the God (who is the author) of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly.

There is an evident allusion to the promise in Gen. iii. 15.

He says not 'shall subdue,' but 'shall bruise,' and not them only but their leader 'Satan': and not simply 'shall bruise,' but 'under your feet,' so that they gain the victory themselves, and are made illustrious by the trophy. From the time also there is comfort again, for he adds 'shortly.'" (Chrysost.)

The passage is very similar to the warning in 2 Cor. xi. 12-15 against the Judaizing adversaries, who are described as ministers of Satan.

The grace.] The Apostle's concluding benediction is here given in its original form: compare 1 Thess. v. 28, 2 Thess. iii. 18. On the meaning of "the grace," see i. 7.

"Amen" is not found in the best MSS. On the repetition of the benediction, see Introduction, § 8.

And thus he brings his discourse becomingly to an end in prayer: "The grace of our Lord." For this he loves ever to make a foundation, this a conclusion." (Chrysost.)

21-23. SALUTATIONS FROM ST. PAUL'S COMPANION.

21. Timothy had been with St. Paul in Macedonia in the latter part of A.D. 57 (2 Cor.
23 Gaius, mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to establish you according to my

of whom (a) is the one here mentioned: according to a tradition mentioned by Origen, in his note on this passage, he was Bishop of Thessalonica.

mine host, and of the whole church.] St. Paul lodged at this time with Gaius, as on his first visit to Corinth with Aquila, and afterwards with Justus (Acts xviii. 1–7). Gaius seems either to have lent his house for the meetings of the Church, or more probably to have shown a ready hospitality to all who came to visit the Apostle. St. Paul gratefully recognises this in addressing him "my host and" (in a more general sense) the host "of the whole church": compare v. 13: "his mother, and mine."

Erastus the chamberlain of the city.] Rather, "the steward," or "the treasurer of the city." It is hardly probable that the holder of such an office is the same Erastus whom St. Paul sent forward with Timothy into Macedonia before he himself left Ephesus (Acts xix. 21), and the same who is said (2 Tim. iv. 20) to have remained at Corinth. Quartus a brother.] "Our brother" (ο ἀδελφός), i.e. Quartus who is a brother in the Lord: not the brother of Erastus, or Tertius, as some have conjectured.

24. On the repetition of the benediction, see Introduction, § 8.

25–27. The DOXOLOGY "rich in contents, and deep in feeling" (Meyer) forms a noble conclusion to this great Epistle. Comparing it with the introduction in i. i. we find in both the same fundamental thoughts of the Epistle: "the power of God unto salvation" (i. 16), the gospel entrusted to St. Paul for the Gentiles (i. 5), the testimony of the Prophets (i. 2), the "obedience to the faith" (i. 5), the acceptance of all nations (i. 5, 14–16), all these thoughts are here gathered up into one harmonious burst of "wonder, love, and praise."

25. Now to him that is of power to establish you.] "Now unto him that is able," &c. see Eph. iii. 20, Jude 24.

In i. 11 St. Paul has expressed his great desire to visit them in order that they "may be established." The same feeling which is there implied in the use of the Passive Voice (see note on i. 12) is here distinctly expressed: God alone "is able to establish you."

according to my gospel.] Compare ii. 16,
ROMANS. XVI:

and notes there; 1 Tim. i. 11; 2 Tim. ii. 8. The usage of this characteristic phrase, as well as that of the verb *reveal* (for which see the note at the end of the chapter), shows that the sense is not "to cause you to remain steadfastly faithful to my gospel" (Meyer), but, "to establish you, in accordance with my Gospel," i.e. according to the good tidings which I, the Apostle of the Gentiles, announce to you (i. 11, 13).

By this expression he wishes to indicate the type of Christian teaching which had been revealed to himself personally (Gal. i. 11-16), and of which the two characteristic features were the perfectly gratuitous, and the absolutely universal character of its salvation (Godet).

and the preaching of Jesus Christ.] Either, "what is preached concerning Jesus Christ," or, "what Jesus Christ preached," i.e. through me His Apostle. The latter is favoured by the passages in which θητησα is followed by a Genitive (Matt. xii. 41; Luke xi. 32; 1 Cor. ii. 7; 14), and is the usage of Meyer as "a more precise definition proceeding from the humble piety of the Apostle. As he wrote or uttered the words "my gospel," he at once vividly felt that his gospel was nothing else than the preaching {*seliec* Christ Himself caused to go forth (through him as His organ)} ch. xv. 18; 2 Tim. iv. 17. But the other meaning, "what is preached concerning Jesus Christ," is simpler and better suited to the context, which requires that the Gospel should be characterised according to its great subject Jesus Christ (i. 3, ii. 16, x. 8-12; Gal. i. 6-8), and gives no special occasion for such an expression of St. Paul's personal humility as Meyer imagines.

according to the revelation of the mystery.] In form and construction this clause exactly corresponds to the preceding, and καθάρις has the same sense in both: the truth that God "is able to establish you" is in accordance with "my gospel and the preaching of Jesus Christ" in accordance with "a revelation of a mystery." For a similar construction of καθαρίς, repeated in co-ordinate clauses, see Col. ii. 8. The two clauses are also most closely connected in sense, as if St. Paul had said, "my gospel, the gospel which I preach concerning Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, is a revelation of a mystery that has been long hidden."

Elsewhere St. Paul tells us how he had received his own knowledge of Christ, namely,
to all nations for the obedience of faith:

27 To God only wise, be glory

through Jesus Christ for ever.
Amen.

knowledge of the mystery is extended unto (εἰς) all the Gentile nations, because they are all included in the blessing of Abraham.

27. To God only wise, be (the) glory through Jesus Christ.] On the difficult question of the right reading, construction, and interpretation of the verse, see Introduction, § 8.

The passage as rendered in A.V. presents no difficulty, and the thought that God alone is wise (whatever be its origin in 1 Tim. i. 17; Jude 25) is here naturally suggested by the context, and by the whole argument of the Epistle, in which the Apostle has been already forced to exclaim in adoring wonder, "O the depth of the riches and wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments and his ways past finding out!"

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 7, 25.

7. Chrysostom holding θεωρίαν to be a woman's name, nevertheless thinks that she with Andronicus is here described as an Apostle. Origen says it is possibly meant that they were of the seventy.

Dr. Lightfoot (Galatians, p. 93 note) adopts this view as favouring his theory of the extensive meaning of the term "Apostle."

But usage seems to be opposed to it. Thus in Eurip. 'Hippol.' 103, it is said of Aphrodite, σεισμή  γε μέντοι κάπισθαι εν βυροίς. Compare Hes. 379, ἐσόθων γενόσθαι δυνώς χαρακτῆρα κάπισθαι εν βυροίς. Psalt. Sal. ii. 6 (ap. Hilgenfeld. 'Messias Judæorum') εν ἐπίστας εν τοῖς ἔθνεσιν.

In reference to the first passage quoted from Euripides, Godet asks—"But why not translate quite simply, 'illustrious among mortals'? And in the same way, and with still stronger reason, here, 'illustrious among those many evangelists, who by their missionary labours in the countries of the East, have merited the name of Apostles.'"

M. Godet has missed the point of the quotation: Aphrodite, "illustrious among mortals," was not a mortal herself. In the same way, Andronicus and Junias, "of note among the Apostles," were not Apostles themselves.

25. ἀποστόλου. Of the five other passages in which the word occurs, only two (2 Thess. ii. 17; 2 Peter i. 12) are cited by Meyer in favour of his interpretation, "Cause you to remain steadfastly faithful to my Gospel," and in both these the Preposition connecting ἀποστόλου with the following words is εν, not κατά. The only remaining examples (Luke ix. 51; xvi. 26; 1 Thess. iii. 13) add nothing to the argument for the closer connection.

The Verb usually stands by itself in the sense of "confirm" or "establish": see i. 11; 1 Thess. iii. 2; 2 Thess. iii. 5; also Luke xxii. 35; James v. 8; 1 Peter v. 10; Apoc. iii. 8.
CORINTHIANS.

INTRODUCTION.

CORINTH, the "Star of Hellas" and the capital of Achaia, was in 57 A.D. a renowned centre of traffic between Europe and Asia. It was called the "Bridge of the Sea" that united the Morea with the Mainland; it was known as the "Gates of the Peloponnese" that commanded ingress and egress from north and south, imports and exports from east and west. Commercial, and the seat of the Roman proconsulate and of the famous Isthmian games, it was also literary and the resort of sophists. It was likewise luxurious and licentious: Aphrodite had a renowned temple here, to which were attached a thousand priestesses, consecrated courtesans. In fact, the costly voluptuousness of Corinth passed into a proverb, and Menander's line translated by Horace, Non cuiris homini contingit adire Corinthum, is well known. As to its history previous to 57 A.D. it will suffice to notice here that after the battle of Chaeronea 338 B.C. Corinth fell into the hands of Philip. In 243 B.C. the town was freed from its Macedonian garrison by Aratus, who placed it among the cities of the Achaean League. This League ventured into foolhardy conflict with Rome. Mummius defeated the combined forces of Achaia, and Corinth, as mistress of the League, was levelled with the ground 146 B.C. For a century the city lay in ruins, and then she rose again to be "the Star of Hellas:" for in 46 B.C. reconstituted as the Colonia Julia Corinthia by Julius Caesar, she resumed her pristine splendour, and was in St. Paul's time the residence of Gallio the Roman proconsul of Achaia. Achaia was the southern division of the Roman province of Greece, Macedonia being the northern. St. Paul does not seem to include the whole of Hellas under the name Achaia.

State of Corinth at this time, 57 A.D. The population probably about 400,000. Society of high culture, but in morals lax, even gross. Four classes of inhabitants: (1) Jews, (2) Italian freedmen, (3) Greeks, (4) a motley population from the cities of the Levant.

(1) Here, as in other centres of commerce, there was the usual substratum of Jews. Throughout the Roman province of Achaia "communities of scattered Israelites" had settled: these were mercantile guilds or firms. How did the Corinthian Jew receive the glad tidings of the Messiah from the lips of St. Paul? His heart hardened against the miracles of our Lord, he was still less impressed by the Apostolic miracles: these carried no conviction to him whatsoever: he demanded signs from heaven (1 Cor. i. 22); he reiterated with a new application the Jewish cry of scorn at the foot of the Cross, "If he be the (ascended) Christ, let him now come down!" "He, the crucified malefactor, a Messiah meet for our Theocracy!" At such Hebrew sceptics the Apostle in Corinth was compelled (Acts xviii. 6) to "shake out the folds of his cloak." Converts among the Jews were few. Thus the first Epistle speaks to a church in which the Gentile element is much greater than the Jewish; not so other Pauline Epistles.
INTRODUCTION.

(2) "Επονομάζοντας or settlers of the Julian colony were Italian descendants of the first founders from Caesar's army, and had been now established in Corinth 103 years (B.C. 46 + 57 A.D. = 103). They were termed Corinthienses, being settlers in Corinth. So Hispinienses, Sicilienenses were settlers in Spain or in Sicily: Hispani and Siculi being natives. Most of the original settlers were freedmen (1 Cor. vii. 22).

(3) The Greek inhabitants of Achaia were marked by intellectual restlessness and a feverish hankering after novelties. To this was added a ruinous egoism, which three centuries before had prevented Aratus from confederating disintegrated Hellas. Their egoism was as fuel ready laid for the torch of sectarianism. The more cultured of them also had a strong bent for subtle dialectic, which hindered them from seeing "the forest for the trees." A nicely adjusted scheme of philosophy charmed and dazzled: they had no eyes for aught beyond this. How then did the Hellenic student of Aristotle or of Philo receive the preaching of St. Paul? His gaze fixed upon a fleeting wisdom that had no bearing upon man's eternal welfare, he could not see the true wisdom for the false. When the moral logic of the Cross (ὁ λόγος ὁ τοῦ σταυροῦ) was set before him, Where is the scheme, he loftily asked, in which this theory of the Cross can be inserted, as a part in the whole? It stands alone, a sun without a system, a thread without its woof: it is foolishness (μπορία).

(4) The mixed population of Corinth. These were merchants and sailors from Rome, from Macedonia, from Asia Minor, from Syria and Egypt, traders from the towns of Achaia, with the usual admixture of handicraftsmen and slaves always found in such a society; to such the simplicity of the Apostle's teaching would be welcome.

The founding of the mother Church in Corinth and the four parties in it. The Apostle wrought eighteen months there. As to particulars, how St. Paul in 54 A.D. passed from Athens to Corinth and took up his abode there with Aquila the Jew and wrought with him in the same trade of tentmaking, himself "disputing in the synagogue every Sabbath," and how he afterwards dwelt in the house of Justus a proselyte and converted to the faith Crispus the president of the synagogue and many of the Corinthians besides, and how he was encouraged in his work by the Lord speaking to him in a vision by night, and how he was brought by the malicious Jews before the tribunal of Gallio the mild pro-consul of Achaia, who dismissed the charge,—is all chronicled in the Acts of the Apostles xviii. 1–17.

In his preaching at Corinth St. Paul wielded at first what he calls "the argument of the cross." This argument, his eloquent successor in preaching, Apollos of Alexandria, also employed, but possibly embellished it with Philonian speculations; yet it is probable that the difference between him and St. Paul was only one of outward form and of delivery. Paul planted, Apollos watered: as the first planting, so the after watering, whatever was the diversity between the two teachings, whether in substance of discourse or in manner of treatment. This diversity anyhow led to comparisons and discussions. Discussion bred disension, disension partisanship and that vehement, one man crying "I am Pauline;" another, "I belong to Apollos" (1 Cor. i. 12). These were rather cries of individuals than watchwords of hostile parties: they betokened a divided allegiance in some, not an open rent in the Church. The partisans had not become schismatics. This duality of opinion was deepened, after Apollos' departure to Ephesus, by the arrival at Corinth of Judaizing Christians who adopted as a party title the name of Cephas. These men were teachers;
and their chief aim being to exalt Peter at the expense of Paul, they were also founders of a third party. They insisted, it appears, not so much on the rite of circumcision, as on legal distinction of meats and the like. They intruded into St. Paul's field of labour, whether opposing his doctrines is not known, but certainly disparaging and invalidating his Apostolic authority, and asserting in its stead the higher claims of St. Peter. They came furnished, it seems, with letters of recommendation from other churches or from individuals.

(2 Cor. iii. 1.)

There is reason to think that the Pauline and Apollosite schools differed less from each other than that which called itself by the name of Cephas did from both. About the fourth party much has been written, little is known. Historical materials are lacking. Were they ultra-Petrine followers of Christ in His earthly life, in His fulfilment of Jewish ordinances and of the Mosaic law? The Christ of St. Paul they would probably regard as a transcendental Christ of St. Paul's own imagination. Had they Socinian tendencies? Were they among those who denied the resurrection? Others think that these Christines were quite the reverse of this, ultra-Pauline even, men who refused to "call any one father upon earth," who bowed to the one Headship of Christ in heaven, who repudiated therefore all Apostolic authority. It appears, however, that they appropriated Christ to their own section, excluding the other three from participation in Him. And this from what seems to be the right view of ch. i. 13, "Is Christ divided?" namely, "has the Christ been reduced from a circle to a quadrat?" Is He eclipsed in three, shining in one? Is He the Christ of the Christines and not of the Paulines nor of the Petrines? Then Peter must be the Christ of the Petrines and Paul of the Paulines! Was Paul crucified for you? Into

\textit{New Test.—Vol. III.}

Paul's name were ye baptized? Absurd."

A few words upon the style and tone and contents. In ch. i. a quiet and dignified assertion of his own Apostolic authority, which had been called in question by the Hebraizing party, followed by a courteous salutation, leads to a brief exordium, which is kindly in tone, and winning even. Then the sore subject of partisanship is introduced easily and without obtrusiveness: "I am assured by Chloe's friends that there are contentions among you." After this the style and tone kindle into a fiery vehemence: What? has the Christ been made a share? The Christ reduced from a whole to a part? Was then Paul crucified for you? was Apollos? was Cephas? Say not that (μη 1 Cor. i. 13). This fiery vehemence rolls on through the first chapter in an emphatic terseness that brings out to the reader's view bright elevations only, leaving dark the connecting depressions. One aim of a commentary is to throw some light, if possible, on the sunken depressions. Again, when he comes to deal with human philosophy. St. Paul speaks out boldly, even contemptuously and in scathing antithesis more than once: "the world's wise are God's fools, and the world's fools are God's wise." Nor can we wonder at this, for it is from the serene summits of his own "superabundant revelations" in the philosophy of Christianity (for he insists that the cross of Christ is the nucleus and centre of a profound philosophy of Redemption planned in heaven prior to Creation itself), it is from this lofty level of a transcendental knowledge that the Apostle looks down with pity and with a holy scorn upon men's intellectual methods and scientific labours to solve life's riddle. Hence with pious contempt he thunders down upon the sophist and the Rabbi, upon the sapient Greek and the stolid Jew, "Where is wiseman? where is scribe? Has not
INTRODUCTION.

God proved the world’s wisdom futile? silly? reduced to an absurdity all its irrelevant philosophies?” No compromise here. Or what can be more incisive than the sharp contrasts blended with a polished irony in 1 Cor. i. 27, 28?

“A foolish thing of God is wiser than all mankind! A weak thing of God is stronger than all mankind.” Or again,

“The world’s simpletons, the world’s no-entities, the world’s weaklings and baselings (i.e. elements deemed such by the world) are the chosen things, the very elements of God’s selection for the kingdom, while the scientists and the potentates and the entities (as St. Paul calls the somebodies) are often, not always, just what God’s selective wisdom in its march through the world looks at and passes by and leaves behind. These cosmic eminences are generally among the rejectance.” The above may serve as an imperfect sample of the style and tone; but on this head it may be further observed that a conspicuous feature in some chapters of this Epistle is the Pauline irony. Certain passages ring with indignant sarcasm; attention will be drawn to this in the commentary.

The contents of the Epistle may be briefly combined with the occasion of writing it. Three trustworthy members of the Corinthian Church came to Ephesus bearing a letter from the Pauline and largest party, begging a solution of divers questions on marriage, on the veiling of women in assemblies, on sacrificial feasts, on spiritual gifts. The Apostle, who had been informed of the disorders and divisions in the mother church, replies to these questions seriatim. He also rebukes their contentious spirit, their acquiescence in a gross case of immorality unpunished, their appealing to heathen tribunals, their irregularities in the manner of celebrating the Eucharist and the Love-feasts, the denial by some of the resurrection itself.

As the structure of the Epistle is very simple, being based chiefly upon the order in which these several topics are discussed by the Apostle, which order was probably identical with that of the letter of inquiry, there is no need to take a critical survey of the composition as a whole or to subject it to a previous analysis in an Introduction. On this ground, instead of adopting the usual method of setting in the front of the Epistle an elaborate summary of the multifarious contents, it has been thought better to prefix headings to the more important chapters, and to insert here and there brief dissertations on the more difficult questions, as they severally arise, in the commentary itself.

Neither is it at all necessary to repeat the well known arguments by which the authenticity and genuineness of the Epistle have been established and are now universally recognised by competent judges.

Place of writing, Ephesus, ch. xvi. 8. Time, a little before Pentecost 57 A.D.
THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE

CORINTHIANS.

CHAPTER I.

After his salutation and thanksgiving, to be exhorteth them to unity, and 12 reprovet the
dissensions. 18 God destroyeth the wisdom
of the wise, 21 by the foolishness of preaching,
and 26 calleth not the wise, mighty, and
wise, but 27, 28 the foolish, weak, and men
of no account.

PAUL, called to be an apostle of
Jesus Christ through the will
of God, and Sosthenes our brother,

2 Unto the church of God which
is at Corinth, to them that are
sanctified in Christ Jesus, called
Rom. 1. to be saints, with all that in every
place call upon the name of Jesus
Christ our Lord, both their's and
our's:

3 Grace be unto you, and peace,
from God our Father, and from the
Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God always on your

2. the Church of God.] Genitive of
ownership. This is a theocratic designation;
it denotes a Christian community called out
of heathen nations to be the complement and
expansion of the Hebrew theocracy.

to men sanctified.] The change from
singular to plural brings to view Corinthian
Christians as members of the Church Catholic,
their number being restricted and their locality
defined immediately by what follows,
"that which is in Corinth." In brief, "to
the Church of God, and more particularly to
the Corinthian branch of it."

sanctified in Christ Jesus.] Perfect tense;
consecrated to God, and continuing in that
consecration.

"In Christ Jesus," expanded, means "Con-
verts by baptism brought out of the sphere
of the evil world, in which Satan domi-
nates, into the sphere of Christ Jesus and of
all the benefits of His Passion, and abiding in
that hallowed circle."

called to be Saints.] Their call or invitation
to the Messianic kingdom, like St. Paul's to
the Apostolate, came to them from God in
Christ Jesus and through the preachers of
the Gospel.

with all that call upon . . .] Of this contro-
verted passage the following interpretation is
suggested. "To the Church of God, that
which is in Corinth, together with all who
invoke the name of our Lord in every place
(in Achaea besides Corinth) their Lord as

Q 2
I. CORINTHIANS. I.

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge;
6 Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you:
7 So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ:
8 Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 "That you, namely, were in every way enriched in Him, in all skill of discourse or argument, and in all kind of intelligence," the inward endowment of Christian intelligence finding expression in readiness of logical utterance.

6 "According as," just in the degree in which the testimony of Christ, i.e. the Gospel preached, was established firm and sure in you, in your hearts by faith.

7 "Casting you not to feel behind-hand not to be conscious of any backwardness (lagging behind other churches) in any gift of grace bestowed." Surely the usual rendering, "so that ye fall behind in no gift" would require very different Greek. Even Meyer falls into the common error. The middle voice here denotes subjectivity, and implies a consciousness of lagging behind.

"Gift of grace" here means all spiritual blessings, not to the exclusion of the extraordinary gifts, that of tongues, for instance; though perhaps the idea of ethical endowments predominates, because of the definitive participial clause that follows, denoting an attitude of earnest expectation, an attitude resulting from a high moral tone. Sense of this definitive clause is, "waiting, as you are," i.e. in full, "looking away from all else and looking out for the revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ;" name and titles at full length, as in ver. 2, denoting the majesty of the unveiled Presence. Comp. for thought Phil. iii. 20, "Out of which heaven we do look for the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall transfigure the body of our humiliation unto conformity with the body of His glory."

8. Who also] i.e. on His part, in a manner corresponding to your expectation, "will keep you stedfast unto the end," the end, i.e. not of life, but of this Aeon or Dispensation. How the mind of St. Paul seems to us of the present day to glance across the wide gulf of centuries, which we now know was destined to intervene between the deaths of men and the Advent of their Lord! Clearly among the Apostle's superabundant revelations the day of the Advent was not one. He himself in 2 Cor. v. seems rather to expect that he shall not put off his mortal body, but put on ever it the new body spiritual, and that he shall be found "not naked" at the Parousia.

"Shall keep you stedfast unto the end" of this Aeon "so as to be unimpeached in the day of our Lord," for when the saints stand before the tribunal of Christ, they will not indeed be found to have been free from sin in their earthly life, but having persevered in the faith and in good works will find themselves under the wing and shelter of God's righteousness, safe from all impeachment. For "blameless," A.V. which does not truly represent the Greek read "unimpeached of." Unimpeached of whom? Probably of the "accuser of the brethren," the adversary Satan. But being found holy in Christ and blameless to God, "who shall then lay an impeachment against God's elect? It is God that justifieth." For this view of unimpeachability conditioned by continuance in the faith, see Col. i. 28: "To present you holy and without blemish (sacrificial term) and unimpeached before him, of course if (ἐκ γε) ye persevere in the faith."

9. Ground stated of this hope of their establishment in the faith. "Were the establishing on the part of Christ not to take place, God's call unto fellowship with His Son would remain without effect, which would not be compatible with the faithfulness of Him from whom the call comes and who by His calling gives pledge to us of eternal salvation" (Rom. viii. 30).—Meyer.

As the calling of God is a calling to the Messianic Kingdom, "fellowship with His Son" must here denote association with him in the glory; for set in that glory the children of God (Rom. viii. 21) are also to be partakers with Him, the Head, in the inheritance and in the
I. CORINTHIANS I.

Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.

For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.

kingship and in the priesthood, and likewise assessors to Him in the judgment of the cosmos, as appears from the right view of (Matt. xxv.) "inasmuch as ye did it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye did it unto me;" where these seems to indicate membership in the same brotherhood to which the assessors belong; but what does the word least denote? Probably the lowest order or rank in the moral scale.

The word "brethren" is a form of address at once affectionate and earnest, drawing special attention to the purport of the exhortation: see x. 1; xiv. 20. The exhortation itself is ushered in through the great Name, here expressed in full, not merely to make the appeal more solemn, but because the very mention of that Name in the outset closely bears upon the argument in ver. 13, by which the Apostle seeks to dissuade from party-spirit. For the invocation of it would serve to remind the Corinthians—(1) that into the name of Jesus Christ and into none other, whether of Paul or of Apollos or of Cephas, they had been baptized; and (2) that the same Jesus Christ here designated "our Lord" was their Lord and the "Lord of all" without an equal and without a rival, whether it be Paul or Apollos or Cephas. Comp. 2 Cor. iv. 5. "For we (Apostles) preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus as Lord." But for the special bearing of the designation "our Lord" upon what follows, see the explanation below of the text, "Is Christ divided?"

that ye ... ] The conjunction that here denotes purport (not design mingled with purport, as some think), because it ushers in the sentence which contains the purport or substance of the exhortation. One instance of this definitive use of that will suffice, "Command that these stones become loaves." Here the conjunction simply defines the substance of the command, viz. the conversion of the stones into loaves.

that ye speak the same thing ... ] i.e. that ye make the same profession all of you (a prospective glance at the distinctive party declarations, "I am of Paul, I am of Apollos") and that there be no divisions among you, but rather ye be nicely adjusted or readjusted (2 Cor. xii. 17) in the same mind and in the same view. Oneness of view and of purpose, leading to oneness of declaration is the deeper element in which the readjustment and reunion of parties is to take place. See 2 Cor. xiii. 11.

It is clear from this passage, viewed in the light of ver. 12, "Every one of you saith, I am of Paul," &c., that the term "divisions" signifies not schisms, as in the marginal rendering, but dissensions, not separations from the Church, but dissensions within the Church. This appears (1) from the phrase "among you," i.e. within the circle of your community twice occurring (vers. 10, 11); and (2) from the light thrown upon the meaning of the term translated "divisions" or "schisms," by ver. 12.

"Every one of you (as the representative of a party) saith ... " From the two considerations stated above it seems certain that the "divisions," so far from having proceeded to the length of separation from the Church, had not as yet become organized schools or sects within its pale. They had not yet passed the limits of party opinions expressed by individuals in speech. Precisely the same sense attaches to the word in John vii. 43; ix. 16; x. 19. In the last cited verse we read, "There was a division again among the Jews, and many of them said ... others said," i.e. a dissension or difference of opinion expressed in words.

Sets forth the ground of the previous exhortation. What people of Chloe are meant (sons? brothers? household people?) was as well known to the readers, as it is unknown to us. Chloe is usually considered a Corinthian Christian, whose people had come to Ephesus; but it is more in harmony with St. Paul's discretion to suppose that she was an Ephesian known to the Corinthians, whose people had been in Corinth and returned to Ephesus.

The word "contentions" supports the modified sense already assigned to the term "divisions." If it should be objected that the Apostle may have employed a stronger phrase in his exhortation than in the statement of his motive to that exhortation, it may be answered (1) that it is not consistent with St. Paul's "charity which hopeth all things" to represent what is bad as likely to become worse: and (2) that in ver. 10 the sense of the Greek is not "I exhort that there arise no divisions or schisms" (which
I. CORINTHIANS. I.

12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollo; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ.

would have been the correct form of expression, had "divisions" denoted a greater evil than "contentions"), but, 'I exhort that divisions among you cease to exist.'

12. A specification of the previous general statement, also grounded on the declaration of the people of Chloe.

"What I mean is this: that each one of you (in his own party) saith, I am," &c. Here we have four apparently co-ordinate parties, not yet developed into four organized sectarian systems; not as four insulated mountains standing asunder, but as one mountain with four summits parted from each other by shallow depressions. These shallow valleys may, by a convulsion, be torn into deep gorges reaching even to the base, or they may be exalted to a level with the summits, and so an even oneness be achieved.

It is probable that all the four parties (their respective Heads, of course, not included) fall alike under the Apostle's censure: even the last-mentioned one, not because it appropriated Christ as its Leader, but because it did so to the exclusion of the other three from participation in him. (See 2 Cor. x. 7.)

13. The acknowledged difficulty of this text lies not merely in the translation of the verb here rendered "is divided," but still more in the connexion of the clause with the clauses immediately preceding and following. One thing seems certain, that the name of Christ is here applied to Him as to a Person, and is not used in the mystical sense. For the name of Christ in the preceding sentence is plainly used of the Person, as are those of Paul and Apollos and Cephas. And so the mystical meaning of the same name in the very next sentence would obviously import a new and totally foreign element of thought. Besides, in this whole section of the 1st chapter, what mention, what stray intimation, of this idea occurs? None whatsoever. If, therefore, the Person of Christ is here introduced, the question is, how are we to explain the verb "is divided?" The personal distribution of the Saviour through the four sects is inexplicable, as the last-named of the four professes to belong to Christ himself in His integral oneness. It is also incompatible with the strict logical connexion which must exist between the first question and the second and third questions of ver. 13. For the second and third are evidently deductions from the first.

13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

14 I thank God that I baptized

I propose to translate, "Is the Christ made a share?" By the word share is meant not simply a part, but a part of a whole viewed in relation to the other complementary part or parts. For instance, "Abraham shared a tenth — i.e. made a tenth part of all the spoils as a share to Melchisedec" (Hebr. vii. 2). Here the share of a tenth implies a relation to the whole and to the other not co-equal but co-ordinate share of nine-tenths reserved to Abraham.

Assuming this to be the right translation, the logical connexion will be this:—

"Is the Christ made a share?" Is He not a whole, but a part or share co-ordinate with three others? Is He no longer the complete Circle, around which is assembled in its oneness the Corinthian Church, regarding Him from all sides as the One Saviour? but is He reduced to a single quadrant of that circle, the other three quadrants being Paul and Apollos and Cephas? If this be true, the startling inference is that Christ being a Saviour to His own, the other three leaders are co-ordinate savours, each to his own adherents; and so I ask you, while I shrink from the thought (such is the force of the Greek), Was Paul [to take as an instance the first-named of the three heads] crucified for you? Or were ye baptized into the name of Paul? And yet this is the conclusion, absurd as it is monstrous, nay, blasphemous, to which you are drifting on the waves of party opinions and party professions. Wherefore, I beseech you, brethren, by that Name, which is above every name, the name of Him who is our Lord, who is the Christ, the One Saviour to all, that divisions die among you and that union and harmony revive in the pure atmosphere of sameness of view and of purpose, leading to sameness of confession.

The term "is divided" admits also of another translation, slightly diverging from the one given above, but finally converging with it into the same logical connexion. It is this: 'Apportioned is Christ?' Assigned as a portion is He? The word portion here denotes relation rather to its own claimant or appropriator than to other co-ordinate parts. The claimant of Christ as its own portion exclusively is in this instance, of course, the last-named party of Christ. If this be the more correct rendering, an under-link of connexion between 'Apportioned is Christ?' and 'Was Paul crucified for you?' must be mentally supplied; an intermediate
I. CORINTHIANS. I.

16 And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to

flash of thought so obvious that time would have been wasted in wording it. This silent link is expressed by the clause in italics: If the Christ, the One Saviour, has become the heritage of one party, what is to become of the salvation of the other three? Was Paul crucified for you? Or . . . .

14, 15. Many explain these verses thus, or nearly thus: the Apostle does not say, I rejoice that I baptized few of you, and so no one can say that in my own name I baptized. He looks above and beyond the nearest causes of events, and says, I am thankful to God who, in order to prevent any one from asserting that I had baptized in my own name, designedly brought about the fact of my having baptized very few in Corinth.

The above explanation seems to be open to one grave objection. For it does not appear that the idea of “having been baptized in the name of Paul” had ever occurred, or was likely to occur, to any of St. Paul’s adherents. It is not, like the statements, “I am of Paul,” &c., cited as a party declaration that had reached the Apostle’s ears through the people of Chloe. The notion is now broached for the first time. It has its origin in the Apostle’s mind, and is simply a logical weapon employed by him to convince the Corinthians of the extreme perils of sectarianism. It is in a serious reductio ad absurdum argument intended to refute an inference drawn from an inference. Thus: “Is the Christ become a co-ordinate share or an exclusive portion?” If you admit this fearful deduction which follows from your party professions, you must also admit another monstrous deduction, that you were baptized in the name of a crucified Paul. But I thank God that I can refute this last conclusion by the fact evolved in His Providence of my having baptized very few.

If this explanation be right, is it likely that the Apostle should not merely ascribe to God’s Providence the fact of few baptisms, but should also assign as the Divine motive of that fact the prevention of an opinion which probably would never find utterance?

Therefore render thus: I am thankful to God for the fact that no one did I baptize save Crispus and Gaius (a fact requiring) that no one should say, &c. The conjunction that will thus denote, not purpose or design on the part of God, but a result viewed as possible by St. Paul—not an actual result, an idea which does not lie in the original.

Out of many passages substantiating this use of that may be cited—(1) John ix. 1. “Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he should be born blind?”

This surely is the right rendering of the last clause, and the full expansion of the whole is, “Did this man or his parents commit sin” (a condition requiring some form of punishment and in this instance), “that he should be born blind?” (2) Rom. xi. 11. “Did they stumble, that they should fall?” i.e. Did they so far stumble that their final fall is a probable or possible result?

If the ellipse in this explanation of the use of that be objected to, the answer is: (1) The nature of language, especially in conversation and in epistles, is highly elliptical, and the reasons are obvious. (2) The same objection lies against the first interpretation, because in that an ellipse must be supplied, “Who (God) has brought this to pass with the intent that none may say.”

18. How the precise mention of these three names brings out the conscientiousness of St. Paul!

17. No depreciation here of Baptism. The Apostle has already (ver. 13) made honourable mention of this sacrament by connecting it with the Crucifixion itself, clearly as the means and seal of admission to all the benefits of Christ’s Passion. That St. Paul had an Apostle’s authority to baptize, and that he made a discretionary use of it, is plain from his own statement that he did baptize Crispus and Gaius and Stephanas. But his meaning in this verse is, that to preach the Gospel was his special mission from Christ, a mission not excluding him from baptizing in his own person whenever he thought fit. The original brings out this idea more clearly, “For Christ did not send me to baptize, but (sent me) to preach.”

Not m’ ”wisdom of speech.” Speech here, as generally explained, means mode or style of preaching. The Cross of Christ was not to be presented in a philosophic dress, such as was pleasing to Hellenic taste, lest the pure substance should be missed in the attractiveness of the form. The doctrine of Christ crucified was the pure substance of Apostolic preaching, and so proclaimed simply, without the alloy of human wisdom, had the peculiar force of reducing to nothing, in the eyes of believers, all human wisdom. Hence

18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.

19 For it is written, 'I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.

20 Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?

if to believers the Cross had been preached in philosophic guise, it would have lost its power, as seeming to make common cause with human wisdom, either by descending to its level or by exalting instead of depressing it.

But the above explanation, though good in itself, does not quite satisfy the original, in which the terms "speech" ver. 17 and "word" ver. 18 are translated from the same Greek term, and the Apostle seems in v. 18 to repeat this term with emphasis, using it in the same sense, but with a special determination. The nearest word in English which meets the sense in both passages is, perhaps, argument. And this meaning, while it adds keenness and point to ver. 18, also brings out in stronger relief the moral antagonism between human philosophy and the cross of Christ. This word argument also suits exactly the original in c. ii. 13. The sense of the verse, then, will be 'Not with philosophy of argument, that the cross of Christ may not thereby be drained of its power, be rendered barren (to believers). For— to prove that such a failure must result from such a method of preaching —the argument of the Cross (this by itself without any philosophy of argument, which would only mar it), while it is to the perishing foolishness, is to the being saved (the medium or organ of) God's power.' Further expansion of the above. The form of the phrase in the Greek is twofold, not simple, thus: 'the argument which consists of the Cross.' The fact of the Cross is itself the grand argument, which the Apostles were to wield. Compare 'We preach Christ crucified,' which means not 'we preach about the crucified One' as the centre of a system, but 'we simply proclaim Christ, and Him too—under what aspect? As seated in glory? Nay, but as hanging on the Cross—this is the fact, and the fact is the logic.'

This plain argument, standing alone and unconnected, is that through which God's power operates unto salvation to all believers. It is a moral argument, appealing to faith, which is itself a moral act and habit; and therefore cannot, as a link in a chain, as a sun in a system, be logically inserted in a speculative scheme of reasoning, which appeals to the pure intellect. Represented thus, as a constituent thread in a well-woven web of philosophy, it would be out of place; it would appear to the perishing as folly set in wisdom and to the believing as wisdom set in folly.

18. Latter part. To those who were perishing, the Cross of Christ, proclaimed as a fact, was no more than a fact. To such as were (for) being saved, it was a fact with an application, and that application was wrought by the power of God. St. Paul here describes two sections of mankind. 'The same naked Cross is presented to all; but while it is a pillar of cloud to some, to others it is a pillar of light. The difference lies in the moral receptivity. 'To those to whom (not from whom) the Gospel is hid' (2 Cor. iv. 3) the veil lies not upon the Gospel, but upon their hearts. The Light to them is darkness, because of their own blindness. So in the natural world, the same heat scorches this plant and cherishes that: it is the same sun at which the owl blinks and the eagle gazes. According to this view, the state here described as leading to perdition will be the cause of the rejection of the Cross, while perdition itself will be the effect. "If my Gospel is hid," is the mournful conclusion of St. Paul (2 Cor. iv. 3), "it is hid to those who are being lost" (who are on the highway to ruin).

19. Scriptural ground for the statements of vers. 17, 18. It was prophesied that all human philosophy of argument, which has been declared to be detrimental to the simple argument of the Cross, should be brought to nought. The passage (Isaiah xxix. 14, given nearly according to LXX) St. Paul regards according to the typical purport, which accompanies the historical sense, as a prophecy referring to the powerful working of the doctrine of the Cross, that doctrine by which God will drain all human wisdom of its validity. The justification of this way of regarding such passages lay in the Messianic character of O. T. prophecy in general, according to which the historic sense of the utterances does not exclude the purpose of prophecy; but leaves typical references open, which declare themselves historically by some corresponding
Messianic fact, and hence are recognised afterwards from the point of view of historic fulfillment.—Meyer.

20. We now see this prophecy fulfilled; for "where is wise man?" The absence of the article points to the utter sweeping away of the wise man as such from the circle of God's wisdom of the Cross. He has no place within that circle. So in Pilate's question, "What is truth?" the same absence of the article expresses a scoff, 'There is no such thing as truth.'

The ground is cut away from all wise men, from all Jewish scribes and Gentile disputers of this world. It is plain that the term "wise man" comprehends the two classes of scribes versed in Rabbinical lore, and of Greek sophists absorbed in speculative discussions. The phrase "of this world," belongs to all three terms, "wise man," "scribe," "disputer," and denotes that age or zeon with its pervading tone and spirit which preceded Christianity, in contrast with the world which was to come or the kingdom of the Messiah. To this latter world the wise man, as such, did not belong.

20. Latter clause. "Did not God prove foolish the wisdom of this world?" How and when and why He proved it foolish, is declared in ver. 22; the subem and the subj are expressed in the first clause, the bow in the second, viz. by His deciding to employ, as the means of salvation, the opposite of the world's wisdom, i.e. the folly, in the world's view, of the Gospel.

21. "For since in the wisdom of God the world did not get to know God through its wisdom (of Jewish and Gentile schools of speculation), God thought it good by the so-called folly of the preachment (of the Cross simply proclaimed as a fact, not nicely adjusted in a Rabbinical or philosophic system) to save them that believe." "By the folly of the preachment" may also be rendered "by the preachment of the folly." The Greek is flexible to either. The sense remains much the same. Both "the folly" and "the preachment" are emphatic, but "the folly" more so: "by the folly's preachment." This latter rendering may perhaps harmonize better with "we preach" in ver. 22, which verse contains the proof of God's decision in ver. 21.

In this verse, the world includes or denotes both the wise men, whether Jewish Rabbis or Greek sophists, and their followers, whether Jew or Greek. It stands in precise contrast to them that believe; and this new class consisting of believers, taken out of the world of Jews and Greeks, comprises likewise both the preachers of the Gospel and their disciples, the Apostles and their converts. Hence it follows that the phrase by its wisdom, meaning "by the speculations of its wise men, as by them elaborately propounded to their hearers, Jews or Greeks," stands in precise contrast to the more expanded phrase by the folly of the preachment, i.e. "by the world's folly of the Cross plainly proclaimed by the Apostles to such as receive it ibis proclaimed."

Of this difficult verse, the most difficult clause is "in the wisdom of God." It apparently means "as a part of the wise arrangement of God."

It is part of God's wise providence that He will not be apprehended by intellectual speculation, by "dry light." The world tried to know Him in this way: it took a method which the All-wise God repudiated, and so came to the inevitable result—failure. When (and because) the world came to this helpless issue by intellectual systems, God thought good to exhibit the futility of such wisdom, in offering salvation by a new system, of which the substance was what the world could not but consider folly, as compared with the substance of its own philosophy; and of which the form was mere preachment, proclamation, assertion of facts, as opposed to subtle argumentation, and of which the causa apprehendens was not pure intellect, but faith, which is an act or habit of head and heart combined, and more of heart than of head.

God in His wisdom and mercy allowed intellectual speculation to prove by experience its own barrenness, and so to serve as a kind of schoolmaster to bring the world to Christ. As a matter of fact, there was in the bosom of Greek and Roman philosophy a consciousness of its own impotence, a sense that it had achieved no theological truth, theoretical or practical. It was confessed at Athens on altars "to the unknown God," and in Pilate's desponding and contemptuous question "What is truth?" God designed that this conclusion should be wrought out, and when it had been so, He then exhibited the folly of the method pursued, by offering salvation in the scheme of the Cross. The moment of a man's humiliating conviction that he has failed to attain a great object by a mistaken line of action, is precisely that in which he is most likely to adopt a new method, if proposed to him. "Man's extremity is God's opportunity." Hence the fitness of the season at which St. Paul said to
I. CORINTHIANS. I.

22 For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom:
23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling-block, and unto the Greeks foolishness;
24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the

the Athenians. "Whom, not knowing, ye worship, him I declare unto you." So here, "Whom by your wisdom ye have not come to know, him we preach unto you." At a similar moment our Lord mentioned truth to Pilate.

Chrysostom and others of the older commentators interpret thus: "For since the world through the medium of its wisdom, came not to know God in His (manifested) wisdom:" i.e. failed to read aright and apprehend Him in the twofold page of His wisdom, which lay open before the world, legible to the Heathen in the book of creation and to the Jews in the writings of the O. T. In this, His manifested wisdom, they might and should have got to know God; but they failed to achieve that end by means of their wisdom; therefore, God thought it good to save believers by the opposite of the world's wisdom, viz., by the (reputed) folly of the Gospel. For the construction "failed to know God in His manifested wisdom," compare Luke xxiv. 35: "How He became known to them in the breaking of the bread." And for the phrase "wisdom" so used, as here, compare the "Wisdom of Solomon," i.e. the Book in which his wisdom is set forth.

22, 23 contain a twofold proof of the twofold statement of ver. 21. The first member of this sentence substantiates the proposition of the first member of the preceding sentence, and the second that of the second. Protasis confirms protasis, and apodosis apodosis. Thus: Is it true that the world did not ultimately come to know God by its wisdom? Yes, for behold the present state of the world: the Jews ask for an accrediting sign from heaven, and the Greeks look for a well-argued system of philosophy. Is it also true that God therefore determined by the folly of the Cross, simply proclaimed, to save them that believe? Yes, for although the Jews and the Greeks alike so little know God as to ask for a sign and to look for wisdom, yet we Apostles, God's ambassadors (2 Cor. v. 20), merely proclaim Christ—under what aspect?—as nailed to that Cross.

The word σημεῖον (which is the better reading) clearly excludes the miracles of the Apostles: for the Apostles did work miracles (Rom. xv. 18: 2 Cor. xii. 12), and therefore the Jews could not ask for such signs. It also as clearly excludes the miracles of our Lord's life, for the fact of the crucifixion had drained them of all their power of proof to the Jews: "Others he saved; himself he cannot save" (Matt. xxvii. 42). The word must therefore denote some extraordinary sign or signs from heaven, at once attesting and accrediting the Messiaship of Jesus. (See Matt. xii. 38; xxvii. 42.) As the Pharisees demanded from Christ, when He had intimated to them that His miracles were wrought by the Holy Ghost, some transcendent proof of this by a sign, not from Himself, but from Heaven, and as the chief priests standing before the Cross asked Him who was fastened up to it to come down from that Cross, that they might believe in Him, so afterwards they demanded from the Apostles some such sign, whether a voice from heaven confirming or the risen Christ himself appearing. They said, Let Him now come down from heaven, if he be the risen Christ.

23. The terms "stumbling-block" and "folly" specify the general term "the folly of the preaching" in ver. 21.

To the Jews, whom the glosses of their Rabbis on Scripture had led to expect a Messiah seated in power, a Messiah hanging helpless on the cross of shame and the tree of the curse was an utter offence and aversion, while to the Greeks, who thought that a man's moral and intellectual needs could be satisfied only by a system of philosophy, it was an absurdity to announce a person, and that person as one who had been condemned to die the most ignominious of deaths.

24. But to the called themselves.] i.e. to the inner circle of such as obey the call (such is the import of the Greek word) in opposition to the outer world-circle of unbelievers, who also are called but being prepossessed with the "love of darkness" will not hear the divine voice—we preach "Christ as God's power and God's wisdom"—the power of God to the feeble, the wisdom of God to the ignorant.

Two great evils consequent upon the fall are weakness and ignorance. Nothing is more worthy therefore of divine benevolence and wisdom than to allow that one race (the Jews) should discover the helplessness of man, and another (the Greeks) his ignorance. The Jew went upon the first of these searches. He asked for a manifestation of power. He had no conception of philosophy, of principles, of general laws. He looked for the finger, the hand, the arm of the Almighty. The Greek went upon the second search.
power of God, and the wisdom of
God.
25 Because the foolishness of God
is wiser than men; and the weak-
ness of God is stronger than men.
26 For ye see your calling, brethren,
how that not many wise men after
the flesh, not many mighty, not many
noble, are called:
27 But God hath chosen the foolish
things of the world to confound
the wise; and God hath chosen the
weak things of the world to confound
the things which are mighty;

He endeavoured to explain phenomena by
philosophic theory. The intended result
of the Mosaic Law was—'the things which I
would do, I cannot do.' The result of
Greek philosophy was—'the things which I
would know, I cannot discover.' Christ satis-
fied both these wants, thus experimentally
realised; and though the ignominy of the
crucifixion made Him to the unbelieving
Jew a stumbling-block and to the unbelieving
Greek an absurdity, yet He was to the
believing Jew God's power and to the believing
Greek God's wisdom. And more than this,
He was both to both: for by sending His
Son into the world God purposed to furnish
the believing Jew, not only with the strength
which he craved, but with wisdom also, and
the believing Greek, not only with wisdom
which he craved, but with strength also, to
satisfy in each case, not merely a want felt,
but also a want equally real, although unfelt.
Thus God, while He allowed men to discover
only half their misery, enabled them in His
bounty to realise their whole happiness.

25. Connexion with the foregoing. We pro-
claim Christ to be God's wisdom, seeing that
'a foolish thing' that comes from God is
wiser than men, and we preach Christ as God's
power, seeing that a weak thing from God is
stronger than man. Here 'a foolish thing'
and 'a weak thing' are general terms com-
promising the special 'death of Christ on the
cross,' which is the foolish thing to the Greek
and the weak thing to the Jew.

26. Connexion: for, if it were not true
that this foolish thing of God is wiser than
men, God would never have chosen out of the
world the world's fools to shame the world's
wisemen; rather He would have selected the
wisemen to receive His divine philosophy, if
their human philosophies had been at all
in keeping with it. But He did nothing of
the kind: He selected, as more likely to ac-
cept His wisdom, the reputed fools: 'for

consider, brethren, as to your calling
(to the kingdom) that not many (among you
called) are wise according to the flesh,'
i.e. wise as viewed within the carnal horizon,
or judged by the standard of the Old Man,
wise in human philosophy. It is simpler, as
in the above explanation, to take τα κληρον
as an accusative of respect or reference and
the δε clause as the nearer object of βλέπετε.

27. 'Not so, but the fools, the simple-
tons of the world did God choose;
(τα μωλα, neuter plural with a light accent
of contempt). Perhaps "simpletons" may
give the true idea, just as τα μη δεν.
"things that are not," may be rendered
nomenstis rather than nobodies, which would
require τα μηδεν δεν. Of course "simple-
tons of the world" means persons that are
such in the world's estimation, being-un-
philosophical. In many instances God's wise
ones are the world's fools, and the world's
wisemen are God's fools. So of nomenstis.
So likewise "the base things" A.V. in the
Greek means "things of no birth," as we
say, i.e. of no birth subjectively, for all
men are born objectively. Compare "nullis
majoribus ortus." Observe that the word
calling' here has nothing whatever to do with
a man's vocation or status in life: it means
purely the call or invitation to the Messiah's
Kingdom.

The word 'that' in vers. 27 and 28, does
not denote design on God's part in putting to
shame the wisemen and in bringing to nought
the mighty, but a contemplated necessary
and negative result of the design itself, which
design was the selection of the fittest for the
kingdom and the fittest would be mostly found
among the unpreoccupied by the world's
wisdom. The A.V. rendering, that he might
confound the wise, is much too strong: the
sense is 'to put to shame the wise men,' masc.,
in polite contrast to simpletons, neut. The
abashment of the philosophers is the dark side,
inscrutable from the bright side of the divine
selection. In vers. 27 and 28 the sorist 'chose
out of mankind,' thrice repeated with an
emphasis of triumph, points to the remote time
of God's election in heaven long before His
abstract scheme of wisdom took concrete form
in the Incarnate Son. Or it may refer to the
time of St. Paul's planting the church, as each
convert obeyed the call of election. One of
28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us.

these two, not both. In favour of the latter is the fact that the Apostle in these verses appeals to their inner consciousness, "consider as to your calling that . . ."

29. Immediate aim of the divine selection: "that no flesh at all may . . ." The drift is: 'God out of the world chose the (so-called) simplices so as to bring to shame the (so-called) wisemen; chose the weaklings so as to bring to shame the mightinesses; chose the base-born and the outcasts of society, the nonentities, so as to reduce to nought the entities: wherefore? In order that no flesh at all may boast itself in the presence of God." "Flesh" indicates the human element as opposed to the divine principle.

The argument then is, that divine selection of grace and human glorying in self exclude each other. Clearly "in order that" merely designates the immediate aim of the divine selection, not the ultimate end of the divine counsel, which is the redemption and glorification of man. Yet there is such a thing as proper boasting: for although the immediate aim of the divine selection is to shut out from all flesh all boasting in the presence of God, nevertheless, "let him who glorieth glory in the Lord," i.e. God from whom came the true Wisdom Jesus Christ; let no one parade his own fleshly wisdom before God, who is the sole author of the true Wisdom from heaven.

30. The precise logical connexion of this verse with the preceding ones is not obvious: the but (μετ' αυτων) presents a difficulty. The connexion of the 'whole seems to be, 'God chose out of your community the (reputed) simplices, so as to bring to shame the wisemen; He chose the weaklings, so as to bring to shame the mighty ones; He chose the base-born and the outcasts of society, the nonentities, so as to reduce to nought the entities, in order that no flesh at all may make a boast (of its wisdom, &c.) before God; but rather it is of Him that you are in Christ Jesus, who became wisdom to you from God, in order that whose among you is for glorying, may ever glory in the Lord.' Literally, the last clause means, "that, as it is written, Let him who . . ."

Supply γινεται after iva.

The fuller sense of the above interpretation will be: All worldly elements of wisdom and of power are simply slighted by God in His application of His own wisdom to man and of His own power. In the march through the world of His selective wisdom, human philosophies are treated as irrelevant absurdities; like dust in a highway under chariot-wheels, they are just passed through and brushed aside and left behind, raising a cloud that soon subsides. This negative contempt and silent "shame" is put upon these worldly elements, in order that no flesh (the human element alien to the divine principle) may make boast of its futile wisdom before Him who is the sole Source and Author of the true wisdom as embodied in Jesus Christ; but rather that all believers, if they must glory, may ever glory in the Lord and in His wisdom. Clearly, in ver. 31, in contrast to the unregenerate flesh of ver. 29, the homo redeemed comes to view, and that too glorying in his Redeemer.

Ver. 30, viewed apart from its connexion, is a great text, and great in the greatness of the mystery. "Who became wisdom to us (αρφασαν αυτων, not αρφασαν αυτων) from God." Became, not was made. This verb denotes a transition from one state or mode of subsistence to another: e.g. "the Word became flesh," i.e. being God, the Word passed into a mode of subsistence in which He was man as well as God. Similarly we are said (2 Cor.) to "become the righteousness of God in Christ," i.e. to pass from our low estate of sinful humiliation to the high level of God's perfect righteousness. Thus, according to ver. 30, the Son of God, when He entered into human nature, entered also into the Divine scheme of wisdom, and translated it into life. For unquestionably the substance of that scheme of wisdom was the union of the two natures in the Person of God's Son, together with the manifold benefits flowing from that union. Of this hidden counsel of redemption, which was willed and planned before Creation itself, Jesus Christ was in His Person the embodiment, and in all that He wrought and suffered, the historical manifestation and pleroma. Thus He became wisdom from God; not "became from God:" the order of the Greek words is against that view. Again, as the Father in heaven was the first cause or fountain of this wisdom (ἐξ αιτων δε, ver. 30), so Christ on earth may be regarded in His work as a cistern gradually filling with this wisdom, and after His ascension overfilling with it from heaven into the larger cistern of His Church below. This overflow commenced on the Day of Pentecost. Thus He became wisdom to us from God, i.e.
I. CORINTHIANS. I.

wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That, according as it is written,

"He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord." (Jer. 9:23)

wisdom from God for us to receive. But this abstract counsel or wisdom of the Father, which was planned by Him before the ages were made, and which in the sphere of time became concrete in the Incarnate Son, what was it? What it more precisely was, both in its embodiment in Christ and in its relation to man, is clearer defined at three heads. The eternal purpose is drawn out of its secret depths (so to speak), like a telescope of three lenses, in three evolutions, each in its own place: (1) Righteousness (2) Sanctification (3) Redemption. (1) Righteousness of God the Father imputed; not the righteousness of Christ, for that is nowhere in N. T. said to be imputed. It is the proper fruit of Christ's obedience unto death, and the imputation of it to believers on earth approaches by degrees to assimilation precisely as progress is made in the inner life of sanctification. Indeed, the 'both and' (τε καί) indicates this mutual correlation. Of this absolute Righteousness God is the giver because of Christ's meritorious Passion, and in it the saints, after the Resurrection, are set indestructible. The last link in this threefold chain of wisdom is redemption, i. e. of the body together with the soul and spirit in the resurrection of the saints at the Parousia.

In brief, the whole means this: God—He alone is the first and efficient cause of your union and fellowship with Him who became flesh and translated into life and made actual in time the ideal plan of eternity, mediating for us the threefold benefit of that Divine counsel, righteousness imputed, holiness imparted, redemption consummated.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on verse 2.

2. with all who invoke ... Does this perplexing clause (a) go with what precedes and signify "called to saints'hip in company with all who invoke ..." that the readers might understand that, great and wide was the circle of saints in which they stood? So Grotius and Bengel. Or (b) does all, pointing to persons saluted, mark the Epistle as a Catholic one? So Theodoret, Estius, and others. Or (c) does St. Paul, while he greets the Corinthians by name, also greet in spirit the Universal Church? So other commentators. Or (d) does the clause denote the separatists in contrast to the adherents of the Church in Corinth? So Vitringa and Michaels. This view very unlikely. Or (e) is the meaning "all (generally) who invoke the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place (generally) their own (Lord) and ours" i.e. their own Lord as much as ours. So Chrysostom, Theodoret, and many others, and our A.V.; and this seems the best view of all the above. The phrase "their own and ours" will then be an afterthought corrective and expansive of "our Lord" occurring just before. But what of the Latin Vulgate, "In omni loco ipsorum et nostri" i.e. with all who invoke the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place belonging to themselves and to us? i.e. belonging to them as a Christian society, dwelling where they dwell, and to us as Apostles wielding spiritual authority there.

If this be what St. Paul meant, then the clause "with all who invoke" will denote the Achaean Churches lying outside of Corinth and yet associated to the mother church in Corinth. Also the words "in every place" will not be used in a world-wide sense, as in (e), but in a sense of topographical restriction to the province of Achaia. There was, it seems, a branch church at Cenchrea, a harbour of Corinth. This last view is in harmony with 2 Cor. i. 1, "The Church of God which is in Corinth, with all the saints who are in the whole of Achaia." This is in great measure Meyer's view also, who, however, refers the word theirs chiefly to the Corinthian church members, yet so as to include the Provincial or Achaean. See his ingenious note. It is the variety of ways in which words may be connected with each other that constitutes the difficulty of this passage, and this variety has been made possible by the growing omission of the article in Hellenistic Greek.
CHAPTER II.

He declareth that his preaching, though it bring not excellency of speech, or of 4 human wisdom: yet consisteth in the 4, 5 power of God: and so far excelleth 6 the wisdom of this world, and 9 human sense, as that 14 the natural man cannot understand it.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

2 For I determined not to know anything among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

Come from Athens, where he had partly failed, to make at Corinth a fresh attempt to confront the grandeur of Greek philosophy with the simplicity of the Gospel, was enough to make St. Paul timid. Of this contrast the Apostle was deeply conscious, and the weakness here described was ethical, not physical. He was naturally anxious, lest in poising the plain argument of the cross against the colossal fabric of a seated philosophy, he might fail: was a David armed with such a pebble to prevail against a Goliath in such a panoply? But in his “fear and trembling” the Apostle was encouraged by the Lord in a vision by night, saying, “Be not afraid, but speak, for I am with thee” (Acts xviii. 9).

4. My speech. i.e. my mode of argument, or perhaps simply “my argument,” i.e. the fact of the cross. “My preaching” means substance of discourse. The sense is, My argument and my preaching was not (better than were not) dressed in winsome arguments of man’s wisdom, but moved in the demonstration of Spirit and of Power: i.e. in conviction of the truth, wrought through my plain preaching of the cross in the hearts of my hearers, whose spirit was touched by the Holy Spirit. “Of the Spirit,” A. V. not quite correct: omit the.

5. Your faith should not stand. Probably states aim of divine purpose: that your faith in Christ might be based, not on man’s wisdom, but on God’s power, which power alone brought conviction through the medium of my discourse.

6. The Gospel, however, which abjures human wisdom, has a wisdom of its own: a philosophy is to be found in Christianity also. The sense is: “A wisdom however there is, and this wisdom we Apostles do utter before full-grown and matured Christians, and only before such.” Here the particle ἐκ is corrective: “Yet a wisdom there is . . . This wisdom in ch. i. 18 has been described to be as much greater than all human philosophies put
among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that came to nought:

7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory:

1. CORINTHIANS. II. 255
together, as God is greater than man. Now come to view two classes of doctrine, the higher and the lower: two classes of believers also, the adults in Christ and the babes in Christ; two modes of communication, private instruction and public preaching. No contrast here at all between Reason and Revelation, as some think, but strictly between two philosophies, the philosophy of God and the philosophy of the world. It is not true that Christianity, in setting forth the bare argument of the Cross unto the salvation of believers, has no interior philosophy of its own for the few receptive of it. But observe that not only a contrast between these two philosophies is here indicated, but another between the deeper truths, or higher wisdom of Christianity, and the rudimentary lessons thereof. This second contrast between two classes of doctrine, the higher and the lower, brings to view two corresponding classes of believers, the full-grown and the infants; and in addition to this, two corresponding modes of instruction. In fact, the Apostle had hitherto preached to his hearers at Corinth such broad facts of the scheme of Redemption as were level to their low apprehension: he had not dared to spread before them the treasures of the higher “wisdom” meet only for the “perfect”; to such pearls they in their crude state would have been swine.

6. The princes of this world. i.e. the leading men of the Jews and of the Greeks, the Gentile potentates including Hellenic philosophers and Hebrew doctors. Such “come to nought”: these luminaries, with their vain lamps, pale and go out before the day-star of Truth when it dawns from on high. “Princes of this world” can hardly denote “the demons of the air” (Ephes. v. 12) as some. In ver. 6 εν cannot mean “in the judgment of:” must mean “in the presence or circle of.”

7. The particles (δι and δι and ἀλλά) in vers. 6, 7, are to be rendered thus: Yet a philosophy there is that we utter before spiritual adults; a philosophy however not of this world, but we utter God’s philosophy couched in a mystery. You must not suppose, O Corinthians, because human systems of wisdom are sheer absurdities to God, that God’s wisdom has no system of its own; that the Cross of Christ is a mere insulated fact, a warp without a woof or a single thread without either. No, there is a vast scheme of wisdom in the hidden counsel of Redemption, which we Apostles step by step unfold to the spiritually intelligent. “Couched in a mystery:” no objection to this rendering in the Greek. The image of the great Eleusinian mysteries probably suggested this word mystery to St. Paul at Corinth. It appears that this manifold design of God’s wisdom was unfolded to the Apostles, in as far as it was unfolded to them, by a graduated revelation. From their inspired lips men received the heavenly doctrines by a process of initiation also graduated to their several scales of capacity. In this process disciples were the instructed, Apostles were the hierophants or communicative channels, the Holy Spirit the illuminative agent. Perhaps the rendering “we utter God’s wisdom in the form of a mystery” may be preferred by some scholars. This rendering will not disturb the above explanation, but will rather serve to bring out the true idea of the passage, namely, that this wise scheme of God being in substance a mystery, must likewise in the form of a mystery be communicated to men, little by little. The curtain must be lifted with a caution, measured by the spiritual intelligence of the spectators εἰσορασίας. Not unlike the Greek phrase, “we utter in a mystery,” is our English, “we speak in a whisper.” It should be constantly borne in mind that in these chapters “the wisdom of God” being in substance a “great mystery” (1 Tim. iv. 1) denotes not merely the broad facts of Redemption that are received by faith, but the philosophy that envelops those facts, the heights and the depths that overhang and underlie the central doctrines brought to view. It should also not be forgotten that this “wisdom” is in its substance immensely superhuman, and yet intended for human apprehension; it therefore demands both a human organ and a divine agent for its communication from God to man. There is also required in him, who communicates it, discrimination of character and “discernment of spirits,” so as to administer it by wise instalments.

The long hidden away (ἀπαραδόθης) wisdom. Perfect tense denotes a state of concealment consequent upon some act of concealment which once took place in heaven.

ordained before the world unto our glory.] This clause contains much in little. This manifold wisdom in all its reaches of height and depth and length and breadth “the only wise
8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9 But as it is written, "Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

10 But God hath revealed them.
unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

13 Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy

of their hearts are enlightened" and their spiritual insight enlarged to discern those divine depths.

11. This diagnostic office of the Holy Spirit, who is the heart-discerner of all men (Acts i. 24), is further illustrated by an analogue from man's nature. For among men (emphatic): a man's thoughts are known only to the man's spirit that is in him; they are not known outside to the spirit of another man, unless he himself choose to make them known by oral communication. Even so the secret counsels or thoughts of God are known to the Spirit of God, and to none else. They may be the same Spirit, who alone knows them, be made known to others by revelation.

In ver. 11 the phrases "Spirit of God" and "spirit of man" brought together in this illustration indicate that the human spirit is something akin in essence to the divine. We read "God is Spirit," as it should be translated, and "God breathed into Adam's nostrils the breath of life, i.e. spirit." In truth the spirit of man is a ray of God's essence; it is the "candle of the Lord searching all the inward parts" (Prov. xx. 27): it is that whereby he is conscious of himself and cognisant of his own individuality; it is an afflatus, whether given by an act of creation at birth or by tradition from Adam; it is the divine image. This analogue, however, should not be pressed too far. The point of it is simply this: none but the Spirit knows what thoughts are in God, just as in each of us none but his own spirit knows what thoughts are in himself.

12. Connection is, Now we (emphatic) received what we did receive (at the time of conversion and afterwards) by revelation from that Spirit, who alone knowing can alone make known the deep thoughts of God in the philosophy of redemption. Not the spirit of the world did we Apostles receive, but the Spirit that comes out from God. As in ver. 11 there was a comparison between the divine Spirit and the human, we here we have a contrast between the world's spirit and the spirit which issues from God. The comparison implied an essential affinity between two things, the contrast denotes a moral or ethical antagonism. The

New Test.—Vol. III.
I. CORINTHIANS. II.

258

Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.
14. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God:

for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

15 / But he that is spiritual / Prov. 28. 5.

The body corresponds to the navel, the spirit to the chancel, the soul, which divides and unites the body and the spirit, to the transept, which divides and unites the nave and the chancel. The cathedral is one consecrated building with three main compartments, and man is one person in three natures, all consecrated in Baptism to the Triune God. Furthermore, the human spirit is the highest and the noblest of the three natures and akin to the divine, and therefore that which is immediately moved by the Holy Spirit, who through it acts also upon the soul, and through the soul upon the body. In like manner the chancel is the highest and holiest compartment of the cathedral, in which also is the altar or table of the divine Presence. The above is merely an illustration, and, as such, should not be pressed. It may serve, however, to smooth the way for some apprehension of the difficult question of man's trichotomy. A *psychical* man, the mere soul-man—animalis (Vulgate) from anima, not animus—full of spirit from animus—is one in whom *psyche* or lower principle of life dominates. He moves not in the sphere of divine light and truth, but in the world of sense. If he is intellectual, he delights in a mental activity purely human and exerted on objects merely mundane, and is attracted by worldly philosophies that fail utterly to lead the mind up to the high truth of God. The mental side of the psychical man comes to view in this text; the intellectual rather than the ethical, not to the exclusion however of the latter, for between the moral and the mental there is a mutual relation and interaction. In this *bomo* animalis the higher principle of life, the human spirit illumined and quickened intellectually and morally, does not dominate, has no activity, is dormant. He is one πνευμα μυτικον (James) i.e. "not having (in his own consciousness) spirit." Such a one does not receive, indeed cannot admit into—that which he has not—a prepared spirit any thing that is of the Spirit of God. He is psychic, not pneumatic: how can he entertain truths that are purely pneumatic? They are an absurdity to him. His habits of mind, modes and centres of thought, aims in life, lust of fame, pride of intellect, are all soul-like and sensuous, all of the cosmos and to the cosmos. Thus he is simply incompetent to apprehend what is extramundane and super-natural; indeed he is not in a position to do so, for there must always be a correlation and mutual congruity between that which per-

13. "Which things (knowing them true) we also utter." Utter them how? Not in the rhetoric of human wisdom, not in arguments copied from a formulated philosophy (that would be like putting new wine into old bottles, or dressing a man in a panther's hide) but in arguments taught of Spirit, with spiritual phrase matching spiritual truths.

N.B. For this sense of the very συγκρίνω, see 2 Cor. x. 12. "We dare not class or match ourselves with some..." where as συγκρίνω means "I judge or deem A (to be) in such a circle, I class among," so συγκρίνω means "I judge or pronounce A (level) with B, I match or pair A with B." Another sense may be assigned to this much controverted clause, "To spiritual (minds) suitting spiritual (truths)." The same exegesis will apply here also, viz. "making spiritual truths to match with spiritual minds," so that the minds apprehending and the truths apprehended are to each correspondent and co-ordinate. To either of these interpretations the Greek seems equally flexible: the (1) is more in keeping with the immediately preceding context; the (2) with ver. 6 of this chapter and with ver. 14. Chrysostom's view "explaining the Scriptures of the Old Testament by those of the New" surely is grammatically and logically quite untenable. A third way of expounding this clause suggests itself. "For spiritual minds matching spiritual things with each other;" for spiritual co-ordinating spirituals: i.e. for spiritual receptives putting together or compounding spiritual truths and spiritual phrase. To all these three interpretations the Greek is flexible alike, only in (3) the force of αὐτῶν is exerted not on the dative case. In all the three πνευματικοι is neuter. With the last explanation ver. 14 seems to run in harmony thus: "For spirituals pairing with each other or sorting together spirituals, but a psychic man does not receive what is pneumatic or spiritual."
I. CORINTHIANS. II.

mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

beow the mind of the Lord." The argument, put syllogistically, would run thus: No one can learn what is the mind of Christ so as to instruct Him; but we, the spiritual, are they who possess the mind of Christ; therefore we are they also whom none can so know as to instruct. We pneumatics are beyond the pale of critical inquisition or instruction from any psychical or natural man. "We have the mind of the Lord," does not mean, as some, "we have the mind or purpose of Christ as expressed in the counsel of redemption," but this, and something much more: the spiritual possess by means of membership with Him a mental faculty not different in kind from the mind of the Lord, for it is true that Christ Himself lives in them (Gal. ii. 20), and the heart of Christ beats in them (Phil. i. 8), and He speaks in them (2 Cor. xiii. 9). They also have the Spirit of Christ as well as the Mind. The last verse of this chapter has a pointed significance, "if," as Neander observes, "undoubtedly Paul said this with special allusion to such in the Corinthian Church as took the liberty of criticising him."

Two observations may be drawn from this chapter:—(1) When St. Paul pours contempt on all human systems of wisdom as compared with God’s wisdom in the counsel of redemption, nothing is further from his thoughts than the depreciation of reason or of sound learning in the religious doctrines. There is in Christianity a divine philosophy that invites all reverential study. See this point discussed in Hooker (Il. viii. 4–11).

(2) A glance into the mysteries of "God’s wisdom," which to the cosmos is an absurdity and to the homo naturalis a perplexity, serves not to elate, but to humble (ver. 10). As we are obliged to learn men through men, so can we learn God only through God, or through His Spirit given to us in the ministrations of the Church. The spirit of the world is at bottom that evil spirit Satan, the prince of darkness, who has his seat in the hearts of the sons of disobedience and rules the world from thence.

15. "Whereas (S) he who is spiritual examines and estimates in all its parts whatever is presented to his scrutiny." "All things" here, as often, in a restrictive sense, "all things of the Spirit that come within the scope of his judgment." Meyer extends the phrase "all things" beyond "the things of the Spirit" to the prudential affairs of daily life, demanding tact and discreetness, and cites St. Paul as an eminent example of practical wisdom. It seems likely, however, that no more is meant than that he in whom the highest principle of life, the human spirit instinct with the divine, is dominant, ruling both the soul and the flesh, is one who by means of a critical faculty, enlightened and quickened from above, is capacitated to form a correct estimate of the communicated mysteries of redemption. These mysteries are that revealed wisdom of God which transcends the apprehension of the natural man. Cf. 1 John iv. 1, "Try, test the spirits whether they are of God."

"While he himself is judged of by none;" while he for his part is criticised by none, i.e. by none who is not spiritual also. The spirit-led man from a high level looks down upon him who is ruled by the soul, and is a riddle to him. The psychical man, whose spiritual eye and ear are stopped, can no more form an estimate of the pneumatical man, than the blind can of a painter or the deaf of a singer. So Chrysostom and Theophylact.

16. Proof that the spiritual man is not subject to any critical examination from any man who is not himself spiritual. "For who (among the spiritual) ever came to know the mind of the Lord, so as to instruct Him? Such a one, if he could be found, would be meet to instruct us, for see (the spiritual)
CHAPTER III.

2 Milk is fit for children. 3 Strife and division, arguments of a fleshly mind. 7 He that planteth, and he that watereth, is nothing. 9 The ministers are God’s fellow-workers. 11 Christ the only foundation. 16 Men the temples of God, which 17 must be kept holy. 19 The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God.

AND I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk 1 as men?

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal?

5 Who then is Paul, and who is now say fleshly, but fleshly. Here comes the term of rebuke. The truth is, their period of minority in the faith had lasted too long, and the necessary stage of moral fleshliness and crudeness had passed into the perilous condition of moral fleshiness. They ought to have grown in grace, they ought to have risen to the loftier level, in which the spirit filled with Spirit (pneuμα, anarthrous) guides the soul and rules the flesh. But in them the soul, the connecting link of the two other natures, the probable seat of the ego, had not striven upwards to the heaven-born sphere of the spirit, but had been allowed to sink down into the worldly domain of the flesh. A proof of this, soon to be cited, was their contentiousness and sectarian arrogance. The principle of life, which breathes love and peace, still remained in them a germ unevolved and dormant. They had become carnal-minded. Ample evidence of this was to be found in their rivalries and divisions, themselves “works of the flesh” (Gal. i. 20).

3. For whereas (ethical ground of the statement) there is jealousy and strife of words and splits into parties among you, are ye not carnal, walking as men, walking not in the Spirit, but in the weakness of unaided humanity? What precise shade of meaning, bright or dull, attaches to the word men here, is (as in so many other words, e.g. δαιμόνιον simply determined by the society of words surrounding it. It does not lie in the term itself. A glowworm shines in the night, is dark in the day, but the same glowworm still.

5. What then? The connection is, Your carnal-mindedness has evinced itself in contentiousness and party divisions. One calls himself a Pauline, another an Apolitoine. I ask therefore, What is Paul? What is Apollos? What are they, in the nature of their office, that you should make them leaders of parties or rival heads of theological schools? What are they? Nought but ministers; ladders by which wisdom is
Any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase.

8 Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.

8. Transition to the recompense of teachers hereafter, according to the quality of their work here.

Now the planter and the waterer are one thing.] Viewed in the light of subordination to the High God, they are just one element. Like one bough of two branches or one fork of two prongs, Paul and Apollos are both together in the hand of the Almighty one ministerial implement, dispatching into two distinct lines of office, that of planting or founding a church and that of nurturing and edifying the same. In relation to Him, who from heaven employs them here on earth, the two persons are but as one thing; even as from the summits of a stately cathedral two neighbouring houses far below seem dwarfed and blended into an indistinguishable one; but when you descend, they are found on nearer inspection to be two several habitations. And this relative oneness of element is true of all who are officially engaged in God's service, however manifold their several employments.

The word "one" here has no allusion whatever, as some think, to the unity of the Corinthian Church disturbed by disensions. That idea quite breaks the harmony. It is true that in St. Paul's Epistle the very important word one often signifies not "one and no more than one," but "one and no less than one." This view of its meaning will be found a key to unlock some hard texts, e.g. "God is one who will justify the circumcision by faith and the uncircumcision by the (same) faith," where God is described as no less than one to Jew and Gentile in justifying both by the same method of faith; "faith" being therefore twice repeated. And so Gal. iii. 21, "God is one," clearly means that he is alien to all internal division or duality necessitating a mediator.

The sense of this verse is, Though the labourers in the vineyard are one as a group of labourers under God their employer, yet, their lines of labour being distinct, each shall receive enough in language. Cf. 1 Tim. iv. "For bidding to marry, bidding to abstain from meats;" and Hor. Sat., "Qui fit Mæcenas ut nemo . . . contentus viva, laudet diversa sequentis," where from nemo is to be supplied quique before laudet.
For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.

According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

For other foundation can no

from God a specific recompense, measured by the quality of his specific work. See our Lord's parable of the talents, from which we learn that in the future Aeon one faithful servant will be set over five communities or polities to govern them, another over ten, each in exact proportion to his own employment of the talents entrusted to him in this Aeon. The reward is of free grace unquestionably, and of free grace because of the one great work that was once wrought by the one Redeemer for all mankind; but nevertheless it will be apportioned to every faithful servant precisely according to his own labour in the Master's vineyard. There are degrees of service here and there are degrees of glory hereafter.

Reasons for the preceding statement that Apostles, and Teachers after them, are all in relation to God. One thing of employment here are they all alike, yet each of them to be severally recompensed hereafter, and recompensed in the righteousness of Omniscience.

For God's fellow-workers are we. The image now expands; it grows into a picture—a busy scene, in which the workmen and the field cultivated come to view; after this, the mode of cultivation itself is discussed. The "we" and the "ye" here are emphatic; they have no stress. "For God's fellow-workers are we; God's field, God's building are ye." Here the term God is all emphatic in all its places. It is God whose joint labourers we are; it is God whose field in tillage and house in building ye are. How can one party among you say, I belong to Paul, another, I belong to Apollos, when both Paul and Apollos are but one thing of joint labour under God, to whom they belong? One in one twofold employment, yet being in two distinct lines of employment, to be rewarded distinctively and that in the perfect righteousness of Omniscience, after a scrutiny that appertains to God only, for God's fellow-workers are we. Surely the commonly adopted view, "We are fellow-workers with God" is utterly out of place here. It is a thought quite alien, breaking the logical continuity. How this view has come to be so current, it is not easy to see. Meyer says it is a linguistic necessity. This statement may be controverted. For if the Greek phrase in part may be rendered, as it unquestionably may, "we are workers together, i.e. with one another, why may it not in whole be rendered, "We are God's workers together, i.e. with one another"? Surely the συν or συλίπ, is linguistically flexible to either, while the logic of the sentence loudly demands the latter interpretation. The thrice repeated genitive also demands this. Moreover it is clear that the συλίπ looks back upon the τοί; i.e. the idea of fellowship in the work reproduces and strengthens the idea of the oneness of service.

In expansion of the foregoing. According to the grace of God that was given to me. Given when? At his conversion when he was called to be an Apostle rather than afterwards when he was called to found the church at Corinth. The clause evinces in the Apostle true humility and a sense of dependence on God quite in keeping with what precedes and with what follows. "As a wise masterbuilder I laid foundation: not a doubtful, but simply "laid foundation." See ver. 16, "temple of God."

Wise in the wisdom of God and in proportion to what was bestowed of that wisdom. No approach to boasting here. The Apostle does not call himself a skilful masterbuilder, but likens himself to one. "I laid foundation and another buildeth thereupon," i.e. Apollos and other successors of the founder. "But let every successor look well how he builds thereupon: for as other foundation none can by any possibility lay besides the one already laid, which is Jesus Christ, so if any one builds upon the foundation, which I laid, what is good and solid or what is poor and brittle, his work shall be made manifest accordingly."

Such seems to be the logical connexion. The ground for the caution, "But let every man look well," is contained in the latter clauses.

N.B. As to the grammatical construction, the clause, Other foundation can: is clearly a quasi-protatic clause; a construction common in Greek.

The above explanation expanded is, Let every after-build see that his part of the superstructure correspond to the foundation. Let him therefore take heed with what material he builds upon the foundation that I laid, for other foundation can none lay than that which is already laid; and so if any man build upon this foundation, he is accountable for the correspondency of his contribution.

Other than," or "besides," i.e. alongside of it, as a rival, and so not only other but also different. The participle does not
man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.
12 Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;
13 Every man's work shall be

"building" of ver. 9 suggests the idea of "temple" in ver. 16. It is rather the image of a house in building, of a doctrinal edifice, for the building materials are doctrines, yet doctrines bearing on persons, and the foundation, which St. Paul himself laid, is (1) the cardinal dogma of Christ nailed to the cross for the sin of the world, (2) that of Christ risen from the dead for the life of all believers. Upon these fundamental dogmas other cognitive teachings, such as a dying to sin and a living unto righteousness, were to be afterwards superadded, layer upon layer, storey upon storey, wisdom upon wisdom. Great care was to be taken what sort of doctrinal material was reared upon the Pauline foundation of Christ crucified. If the superstructure corresponded to the substratum, the house-in-building (oikodomei) would become a palace, otherwise a cottage. If noble and durable material were mixed with worthless and perishable, the house would become here and there palace, here and there cottage, a strange mosaic and unevenly patchwork of interwoven incongruities, grand and mean, strong and weak, splendid and sordid. Only what was beautiful and solid and in harmony with the foundation would be able to abide the testing fire of the Parousia; all that was rubbish would perish.

It is also possible that the materials of this edifice may denote not only abstract doctrines but also doctrines moulding persons, and, if the idea be pushed, even persons moulded by doctrines. How easy the transition to and fro! Hence the teachers were to be very selective in what they laid on the fabric, because as the teachers, so the teaching, and as the teaching, so the taught. In that case the doctrinal house will, after the manner of a dissolving view, slowly melt away and then reappear as a spiritual church, or the process of transition may be precisely reversed, namely, from persons to doctrines, from a church to a house. Certainly the phrase "God's building" has a concrete look about it; and it is not improbable that just here there was present to the writer's mind the image of a spiritual edifice of members taught, which later on transfigured itself into a theological edifice of doctrines taught. The new materials built into the fabric clearly denote Christian doctrines received and assimilated by the hearers. Meyer says truly, "The various specimens of building material, set side by side in vivid asyndeton," i.e., a series of six substantives without any connecting and, "denote the various matters of doctrine.
made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.

14 If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

propounded by the teachers." He might have added "and assimilated by the taught."

"The stones of value" seem to mean here, not what we call precious stones, but marble or granite, contrasted with combustible timber and stubble. In sum, in this rising edifice of Christian doctrines received into the constitution and fabric, all that is according to the Truth abides; all that is not so, comes to nought. We must not, however, suppose that the wood and hay represent downright false or antichristian dogmas: rather they symbolise spurious, vapid, unprofitable discourses, for even expounders of this inferior class are described as losing their reward as teachers, but saving their souls as believers. It is probable that the "wood, hay, stubble," also indicate the theosophic teaching and cumbersom traditions which afterwards, as we now know, and as St. Paul probably foresaw (see 1 Tim. iv. 1 . . .), crept largely into the Catholic Church.

13. "Every man's work in the masonry of teaching shall come to light, for the day shall make it clear." The word δοκεῖ denotes what the spiritual mason has wrought into the fabric. "The day" is the day of the Parousia or Personal Advent. "Shall make the work clear because it is revealed in fire." What is revealed? The day itself? Bengel says, "the Lord himself," for when the Parousia draws nigh, He will come in fire of flame (2 Thess. i. 8). The sense remains undisturbed. The fire is not, as Chrysostom explains, the fire of Gehenna, for Christ will be manifested in it, environed by it. It is rather a fire of probation, an immaterial touchstone of celestial fire, testing and testing the quality of every teacher's work, leaving alone what is sound and solid, but dissolving and consuming all that is rotten. The Roman Catholic views of purgatory receive no countenance from this text, for the fire in this instance is not a "refiner's fire" of purification, but simply a sifting and distinguishing fire of separation. The same divine law, that guides the selective wisdom in its march through mankind to choose the fittest vessels, is to guide the discriminative fire in the day of judicial sitting. Literally, "the character of every teacher's work the fire itself shall assay." Metaphor from assay ing metals. "Itself" here means "by its own intrinsic virtue" that of assaying.

15 If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

16 'Know ye not that ye are the "temples of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?"

"This text," says Bengel, "so far from fan ning the flames of purgatory, acts as an extinguisher to them." It may be remarked here that manifestations of God to man have been made with the accompaniment of fire. At the delivery of the Law on Sinai there was heard "the voice of the living God speaking out of the midst of the fire." (Heb. xii. 29). On the day of Pentecost were seen "tongues as of fire dispersing" selectively from a continuity of flame, and "settling down." And a similar divine fire will envelop the Parousia, both testifying and consuming; but whether penal or cathartic also—quality future sit ille divinus ignis—aπό δυναμών. In a 2 Thess. i. 8, it is a fire of retribution, seizing upon two classes of offenders.

15. shall be burned.] Render "shall be burnt up," which is better than burnt down; this latter word is more suited to a house, the former to work. "Shall suffer loss," A. V. not right; the voice is passive, not middle. Render "shall be mulcted;" i.e. by some one. By whom? By the judge. This mulct or fine is clearly negative, not positive: the worthless teacher shall not be fined in aught that he has, but shall fail to win what is in store for every sound teacher. Genuine, not spurious, material laid on the spiritual fabric shall be recompensed.

"Yet himself shall be saved, yet so saved as through fire." The δι twice corrective. What is the image here? That of an inhabitant of the house escaping through the flames, as some? Not so: that idea is a disturbing and confusing element. Or is it the figure of a builder still busy in the work of building, when he is seized by the fire which seizes the house? His labour persists, his recompense is unawarded, yet he is saved himself, saved with the Messianic salvation or "gift of grace" bestowed upon ordinary believers. The reward itself seems to be some special position in the "Kingdom of the heavens" (Matt.). Failing this reward, he may sink into the class of "the last" (Matt. xix. 28; xx. 16. Comp. Daniel xii. 3). So Meyer. Bengel's illustration of this "salvation through fire" is thrice happy, "as a shipwrecked merchant with loss of cargo and of profit is through the breakers brought safe to land."

16. In order to connect this with the pre-
I. CORINTHIANS. III.

17 If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

18 Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.
For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, ¹ He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

And again, ¹ The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

Therefore let no man glory in men. For all things are your's; whether Paul, or Apollos, or...
Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are your's;

is "all things belong to you, whether Paul or Apollos or Cephas or world or life or death... all belongs to you, while you in turn, to whom all things belong to Christ, while Christ again, to whom you and all yours belong, belongs to God." Drawn out, the sense seems, Why glory in human authorities? Why demean yourselves? why lessen your high position by sectarian divisions? Partnership has no place in the Christian system, where absolutely all collectively belongs to you, not merely a share to these and a share to those: the full circle is yours, not a Pauline quadrant to Paulines or an Apollosite to Apollosites. If A boasts of Paul, B of Apollos, C of Cephas, I tell you that Paul and Apollos and Cephas all belong to A and B and C together. Where is party spirit? Paul belongs not to a party nor Apollos or Cephas to a party, but all three belong to all the church. When one of you says "Paul is my man," another "Apollos is mine," a third "Cephas for me." I reply that none of you has any man of us, but all of you have us all. Consider; is not the Father the first Lumen illuminiatus? Is not the Christ, who is Light of Light, the first Lumen illuminatum and the second Lumen illuminatus? He is the Light to all outside of God, of all creaturely intelligences, of angels and of men. What are we but lights of the Light of Light, and that for the Church. The pure white light which descends from Christ upon us proceeds from us to the Church; but in what state? Through the weakness of human nature it comes in broken colours and requires to be recombined in the Church ere it can become pure white light again. From Christ then three divergent rays come single upon us three: from us these same rays converge upon the Church; there they meet, blending and interweaving their irradiation. You, the Corinthian community, should be the focus of this concentrated light; but, instead of gathering together in one sphere the various apostolic illuminations, you make sections and follow single lights, each exclusive of the rest. The cry "Paul is mine," is a divisive cry, that tends to make Paul not a means but an end; whereas we apostles are but instruments under God co-operative for your good. You, instead of using us as such, for as such we belong to you, schismatically and to your own debasement, misapplying us by making us ends and not means. How can you, who possess all of us, so misunderstand your own high position as to confine yourselves to a part when you can claim the whole? It is beneath your dignity to glory in this or that human authority, when these human authorities all belong to you in their collective labour, for they are under God fellow-workers in one service for you all, their several activities being one combined activity converging upon the whole church for the common spiritual well.

"Or world, or life, or death." "What a saltus, what a sudden bound (writes Bengel) from Cephas to the whole world!" It is indeed a sudden and triumphant expansion. Cosmos here denotes the scene of man's earthly existence. The fact of the terms "life" "death" being preceded by cosmos is a reason for thinking that they are used in a physical sense: they should not be enlarged beyond this idea. These specific ideas "world, life, death," are immediately generalized and indefinitely expanded into "things present." "Things future" are not indeed specified in their contents, but seem clearly to denote what takes place in the state between death and the consummation of God's manifold scheme. In the long and chequered career of every saint, birth into the world, a living in it and a dying in it, then the state after death, the resurrection of the just, the triumph of the Church, are here regarded as so many intermediate stages all conducting, reach after reach, to that supreme felicity of the final glory, which is the aim and end of God's wonderful wisdom both in the scheme of creation and in the counsel of redemption. See Ch. ii. 7, unto the glory of us. In sum; world, life, death (things present), Hades, resurrection, judgment (things future), are by S. Paul here described as things all belonging to the Church with a view to its final wellbeing, because they are, in their sequence of order, the preliminary conditions and instruments necessary to the final participation of the saints in the divine glory. 'All these, as well as Paul, Apollos, Cephas, are yours, O Corinthians, as many means to one end, even your own eternal welfare.'

Others explain this, 'the world is yours, because the saints will inherit the world, and even judge it.' This deeper view is true enough in its doctrine, but does not seem to agree so well with the context, through which runs the idea of a manifold instrumentality subordinated to one great end and converging thereunto

23. And ye are Christ's... ] 'All these, as ministerial means, are yours, while
you in turn are Christ's, and Christ again is God's. The double particle (84) here, as so often elsewhere, serves to turn the coin round and from the obverse to present the reverse. Its force is never conjunctive, often corrective, here alternativus: for it brings to view a different side of the same thing. Here, so to speak, we have a figure of three sides, or rather an ascending scale of three degrees. On the first we see all things subservient to the elect, on the second the elect belonging to Christ, on the third Christ Himself to God. The first side brings to view the active proprietorship of Christians, who possess all things as co-operative to their eternal welfare, a position which must exclude all boasting in human authorities, because Paul and Apollos and Cephas are but ministerial instruments for the good of the Church. The second presents the passive appropriation of believers, for they, the owners of all things, are themselves owned by Christ and are His peculiar possession. The universality of the Church's absolute dependence on Christ must silence the party cry of the Christines who claim the Messiah as their own portion to the exclusion of the rest, whereas Christ does not belong to them at all: on the contrary, they belong to Christ, and not only they but Paulines and Apolliotes and Petraines, for they all are Christ's, while Christ again is God's. This last clause makes this certainty doubly certain, verifying, as it does, how totally all partisans misconceive the dignity of their true position: for this universality of the appertainment of the Church to the one Christ (an idea utterly exclusive of all sectarianism) has for its highest correlative the Unity of God. All things of the Church converge upwards to that apex of unity. Confessedly God is one and alien to divisions. If to belong to Christ as separate factions is an idea conceivable, yet thus to belong to Christ who belongs to the one God—that is absolutely inconceivable.

"Christ is God's," theologically gives no countenance whatsoever to Arianism: the equality in essence of Christ with God remains simply untouched. For, as Theodoret remarks, Christ is God's, not as God's creature, but as Son of God. Calvin, Esaius, and others miss the mark when they apply to this clause the confession "Inferior to the Father as touching His Manhood;" for clearly the suología Christ is here meant who being Light of Light possesses indeed the same divine substance with the Father, but at the same time that substance eternally derived. The Paternal relation is prior in order to the Filial. The genitive God's is merely the genitive of relation.

CHAPTER IV

In what account the ministers ought to be had. We have nothing which we have not received. The apostles' spectacles to the world, angels, and men. The fifth and offscouring of the world: 15 yet our fathers in Christ, 16 whom we ought to follow.

LET a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

CHAP. IV. 1-5. From his own lofty level the Apostle regards the divided estimates of human teachers. He attaches no value to men's opinions of himself, nay, none to his own: Christ alone can judge aright. The Corinthians must wait till the Parousia, if they wish to form an accurate estimate of their teachers, an estimate to be based on Christ's verdict.

1. Is "so" prospective or retrospective? If the latter, the sense is; Under this assurance that all are yours, as you are Christ's, as Christ again is God's, let a man take count of us, as of men who are servants of Christ, not leaders of factions and minions of parties, who cry 'Paul is my man' or 'Apollos for me.'

Us rather emphatic denotes Apostles and apostolic teachers. Servants here means "underrowers" (to give the full image), as pulling together in one galley where Christ sits at the helm, the vessel being the Church, and the passengers the members of the Church. Not only is disunion in the crew fatal to progress and a thing tending to shipwreck, but the fact of Christ's presidency and magisterium should exalt high above petty partisanship, especially when the supreme owner and proprietor of the sacred galley is God. In this verse the house-stewards of God and dispensers of His mysteries are said to be strictly such, as being servants or underlings of Christ: for between the Father of the Household or Church and the distributors of the spiritual goods stands the Son. In fact the image is again an ascending scale or stair of three steps. The Father delivers the divine decrees or eternal ideas, elsewhere called in Holy Writ the long-hidden wisdom of God, to the Incarnate Son; He in turn communicates them to His own Apostles, selected by Himself to dispense and apportion with wise judgment these secret counsels or mysteries of God to the members of the house-
Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: yea, I judge not mine own self.

4 For I know nothing by myself; yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:

I. CORINTHIANS. IV.

hold. The House of God, an idea latent in the word house-stewards, denotes the Christian Theocracy (1 Tim. iii. 16), of which Christ is the nearer Head, God (the Head of Christ) the more remote. It appears certain from some of the deeper texts of Scripture that all that has taken place in the world through all the ages is but the historical evolution in time of the manifold and marvellous counsel of Triune Deity, willed in a remote eternity, long prior to creation. These archetypal ideas both of creation and of redemption were in part only and by degrees revealed to S. Paul, and of that part he himself has communicated to the Church a part only: for that he knew more than he wrote is clear enough from his occasional ejaculations of wonder, followed by no elucidations: to such an inspired mind, teeming with superhuman mysteries, no marvel that all human science pales and waxes dim before a single ray of the divine wisdom!

2. After the office comes the mode of discharging it. Two readings here—(1) "This being true, it only remains to say," (2) "But what remains to be said is, it is required in stewards that one be found faithful."

3, 4. Sense is, 'In this requirement however, to me it is a thing of the least importance that by you I be brought to trial (or passed under review) or indeed by any human day (of judicial scrutiny). I do not care the least about any critical opinion of yours upon my official work: nay, I do not value my own: even my own self I do not pass under review: for it is true that I am not conscious to myself of any Apostolic delinquency; nevertheless not on that account am I justified; i.e. declared righteous and pronounced a just steward; to do that belongs to another: who he now passes me under review with an eye to that final decision, is the Lord.' "Day" denotes day of scrutiny or preliminary investigation.

Here the first αὐθαναίτης = nay, the second = still or nevertheless. "For I know nothing" is a concessive clause meaning "For although I am not conscious . . . nevertheless it is not therein . . ." "Not therein . . ." means in full, "It is not in the court of an unaccusing conscience that I am declared righteous, but in the wider sphere of Christ's ananeris or preliminary scrutiny, for He now takes note of my work, that He may judge a righteous judgment in the great Day."

The phrase "I know nothing by myself" means in old English "I am not conscious of any (evil)," exactly as in Horace Nil consciere sitis. The reason of this elliptical mode of speech is purely ethical: the conscience of mankind often accuses than excuses or approves; hence καύσων with αὐθαναίτης is not needed. It is not necessary to say no evil, but it is enough to say nothing.

5. Therefore judge . . . "do not pass a judgment (not 'judge nothing': it is τι, not μήδ' αὐθαναίτης) before the right time." What is the right time, is immediately specified as the Advent of the Lord. S. Paul here uses προήκοιτο "to pass judgment," the sequel of ἀναθέτειν "to criticise" or "pass under review" antecedently to an ulterior judgment. The argument of the whole is, The searching eye of the Lord is upon my official work in order that at the right time He may pass a right judgment. You on the contrary first review me critically and then pass judgment upon me before the right time. You ought to do neither the one nor the other until the Parousia, when you will have sound material for making a true ananeris, or rather a true crisis: for then the Lord will not only pronounce judgment but also another of the several processes of that Day) will bring to light the secrets of the darkness (that enwraps and penetrates this cosmos) and will lay bare to view the counsels of the heart, those hidden springs of action that now elude human ken. "And then (but not till then) shall the praise, that is his due, come to each one from God!" (solemn emphasis on the word God). No mention of censure here; for the worthless teacher is to be negatively mulcted, see iii. 15. The inference to be drawn is: the meet measure of commendation, which shall be righteously awarded to every sound teacher, is an idea that simply excludes from the present time all unseemly and undignified exaltation, whether of Paul over Apollos or of Apollos over Paul. These are but ministers for the weal of the Church, and ministers whose spiritual labour is to be estimated only by the divine Judge.

N.B. As to the phrase εἰς ἐνδοθος the presence of ἐν clearly shews that to the Apostle's
and then shall every man have praise of God.

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

7 For who that maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

mind the time of the Advent is a thing quite uncertain and problematical; "until the Lord come, when that shall be." The absence of ὃς would denote some definite conception of the time itself.

6. Object—to wean the Corinthians from sectarian pride. Rebuke thereof. Sense is: "These remarks (from iii. 5 onwards), applicable to others also, I have transferred in outline unto myself and Apollos," making of us two a sketch or representative figure of the true relations that should subsist in the Church between Apostles or Apostolic teachers and the other members of the Community. This pattern or sketch (ἀρχή) of these mutual relations, which stand in modesty and true humility, I have draughted from the others on to myself and Apollos for your sakes, in order that you may in our instance take a lesson and by a corresponding behaviour on your part fill up the outline.

Further explained in what follows—"For your sakes, that you may learn the (lesson), Not above what is written." The words "to be wise" are spurious. Ne ultra quod scriptum est. This expression refers apparently to the moral tenor of the books of the Old Testament. No allusion to a special text. It seems to denote a sort of ethical canon of the Scriptures, and the Corinthian brethren are here exhorted not to transgress this canon, but to keep within its limits by following the specific pattern of modesty and humility adumbrated to them by Paul and Apollos. This view is strengthened by the moral drift of the citations already made from O.T. in this epistle, ch. i. 19, 31, iii. 19.

"In order that (the final end of the first end, which was to take a lesson in humility) ye may not be puffed up one in favour of the one against the other." Alford after Meyer explains this, "that ye may not on behalf of another be puffed up against a third," i.e. that ye may not adhere together in parties to the disparagement of a neighbour who is attached to a different party. Surely this cannot be right: rather the meaning is, "that ye may not be puffed up one of you in favour of the one (Paul or Apollos) against the other (Apollos or Paul)." This is simple and more in accord with the preceding context, when Paul and Apollos are specified by name and again brought to view in the after phrase, "learn in us."

N.B. No objection to this interpretation in the Greek. Here ἐστι, like εἰκαστέος i. 12, points to some partisan or other: one man for the one (Paul) against the other (Apollos), or one for the one (Apollos) against the other (Paul). These alternatives of partisans fully account for the plural verb: this as against Meyer's linguistic objections. For ἐστι see 1 Thess. v. 11, "edify one his one." The indicative after ἐστι (comp. ὅσιος εἰσίν = "in order that I might now have," never "in which case") seems to mean "that ye may not continue to be inflated, as ye now are, with pride of party."

7. For who maketh thee to differ from another? Render "For which of us is it that distinguisheth thee," O partisan of Paul or of Apollos, that thou, swayed by our example, shouldst make a distinction between us teachers? Which of us marks thee singular? Is it Paul or is it Apollos who bids thee stand out from the rest, as without our aid knowing what thou knowest and having what thou hast? Nay, what hast thou that thou didst not receive? Thy partisanship had no warrant from any discriminative preference on our part. It is without excuse.

N.B. The ἐστι here is immediately suggested by υἱὸς ἐνος and υἱὸς ἐνοῦ of ver. 6, and is equivalent to πιστος; a use common enough: see this ch. v. 21. Matt. ix. 5. Luke v. 23. The above view is better than the ordinary one, "who maketh thee to differ from another; for if "who" is referred to God, which is the general explanation, we look to the context in vain for a starting point of this idea.

After this the Apostle now breaks out into fiery vehemence: he thunders in sarcasms, hurling flash after flash in sharp peals of wholesome invective. The aim and end of this moral thunder is to clear the ethical atmosphere from sectarian pride. "But if thou didst receive, as thou didst, why boastest thou as though thou didst not receive?" Receive i.e. the gift of salvation and spiritual gifts by means of our ministrations: in the foreground stand the Apostles, in the high background Christ, beyond and above Him God.
8. Again the Apostle fulminates in irony: peal upon peal of catarttic sarcasm. The allusions in this verse are solely to the final blessings of the Messianic kingdom. “Already noted are ye! Already grown rich! Apart from us ye attained to kingship!” We Apostles did think that the Messianic fulness of joy and endowment of the inheritance and enthronement of the saints, all belonged to another Εόν: but your timid assertions transcend our sober instructions! “And I would, of course, ye had attained to kingship, that we also with you might attain to kingship!”

N.B. Βασιλείωσα in all three places means not to reign, but to become kings. The particle (ya), which only intensifies the word preceding it when that word is intensifiable, here throws a strong light upon the whole contents of the wish expressed. “It may possibly mean ‘ay, and I would that.”

Apart from us Paul and Apollos: a glance of rebuke at the Petrine and Christine parties. This lofty climax of refined irony, with its “of course,” is calculated to put to shame the egotism of cliques. The underlying thought is: “As apart from us you Corinthians would never have been brought within possible reach of the Messianic royalty, so if you ever come to sit on thrones in the future kingdom, neither will that high privilege be accorded to you apart from us.” Possibly a passing wish for the advent of that blessed enthronement is here denoted: at any rate, a latent rebuke is implied to the following effect: “In so bearing the cross as to be fit to wear the crown, we and you, O Corinthians, are on an equality, on the same low level of humble endurance! but in eagerness to wear the crown without bearing the cross, you are far ahead of us: We are nowhere in the race! your sectarian egotism seizes beforehand what should come alike to us and to you when it is due. If we and you hope in the Church triumphant to be united in saintly royalty, we must in the Church militant be united in saintly humility.”

9. Connection is: ‘I would ye had got to be kings, of course, that we too with you might come to be kings, for our Apostolic position in this state of humiliation is far from enviable.’ Of the passionately uttered wish of ver. 8 the serious irony passes into a mournful gravity, and its reverse side presents a startling picture, evidently drawn from the writer’s own bitter experience, of the cruel hardships and inhuman insults to which the Apostles, as expounders of a new religion, were subjected. “For methinks God exhibited us Apostles (the genus) in the light of last and least (anarthrous predicate), i.e. to be the very hem of human society, as men to outward view stamped with the signature of death, seeing that we became in the course of our ministerial labours a spectacle to the whole world, both to angels and to men.”

As appointed to death: Tertullian explains veluti bestiarios, “as criminals doomed to fight with wild beasts” in the amphitheatre. This view is thought by some too contracted: it is vivid however, and may be the correct one, as it seems to suggest the word “spectacle” in the next verse. Ore—demonstrative use, not causal: Cf. Luke vii. 47. It serves to substantiate the foregoing statement.

There is nothing figurative in this last clause, as Baur maintains. St. Paul is quite serious in affirming that the Apostles are actors on the world’s stage, while in the drama of their fortunes men and angels are the spectators. The inhabitants of heaven and of earth do gaze upon the tragedy of Christian sufferings. “Of men,” says Theodoret, “some scoff and exult, others pity, but are unable to succour.” “Both angels and men” is the right rendering, because of the article before κοιμησας.

10. How different are the estimates formed of us and of you! “We—fools” (in the eyes of the world), “you—wise” (in the opinion of yourselves and others): we—fools because of Christ, for we hold forth the deified argument of the cross: you—sagacious in Christ: how enlightened are you in the circle of Christian knowledge! you even anedate the Parousia, assert the kingship, claim the inheritance! We—weak: (see ii. 5) “In weakness and in trembling I appeared before you” from Athens, is an instance of this. Mistrusting human agency the apostles look upward to the power of God for enforcing and bringing home their own simple argument of the cross, at least in the founding of a church. “You in high repute, we without honour!”
11 Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling-place;

12 And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it:

13 Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the offscouring of all things unto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you.

15 For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause have I sent as a reprimand putting to shame, but as a remonstrance from your spiritual father, whom ye ought to copy, and for this end I have sent Timothy to you, v. 17. But—this by way of warning to such as are inflamed with party conceit—I hope soon to come in person: must I come chastising or consoling? That rests with you. "Not by way of shaming you do I write thus." "I admonish:" the kindly tone of this admonition lies not in the verb itself, but in the surroundings.

18. For though ye have... Render and explain: "For (justifying the phrase 'children beloved') if you should have ten thousand tutors in Christ, still not many fathers" will ye have. Not "if ye have" in the present, but "should ye have" in the future: this form of the protasis makes it best to supply a future (ἐπιστρέφει) in the apodosis. The word pedagogues (who, in most cases slaves, were charged with constant attendance on boys till these came of age) here denotes in a figure the later workers in the church of Corinth. Of this church St. Paul has been termed the founder, his successors the after-builders, he the planter, they the waterers or gardeners: now he is the father, they the tutors. The Apostle here merely wishes to remind his readers of his own paternal rights, which can never be invalidated by subsequent labourers in the same field. We may observe "tutors in Christ," but "father in Christ Jesus: i.e. a host of tutors ye may have in the sphere of knowing about Christ, but into the life of knowing Christ as Saviour, none but I begot you by my preaching of the Gospel. "I" here emphatic: mine was a moral begetting unto salvation; this took place once for all; teachers after me are not spiritual fathers but tutors or educators in the faith which I sowed.

19. Wherefore I beseech you.] Render "I appeal to you therefore." Seeing I am father in the faith to you, I appeal to your feelings. The original word sometimes means "I call to my side" with a view to exhort or encourage, sometimes "I call or speak
unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ, as I teach everywhere in every church. 18 Now some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you. 19 "But I will come to you to the heart of another," "I appeal to his higher self.

Be ye followers of me.] Rather "Show yourselves," or "prove ye imitators of me," "me" unemphatic, not 'of me' but 'of me.' Full sense is: Translate into your own lives what you have heard from me or seen of me. Engraft into your hearts and ways—assimilate my teachings and my practice with the docility of simple-minded children, discarding all self-assertiveness which inflates into sectarianism. Imitators: "Teachers turn out their pupils copies and reproductions of themselves." Xen. Mem. 1. 6. 3.

17. For this cause.] With this end in view, that you may be induced to make me your model in humility, I sent unto you Timotheus. He had already set out, but was not to reach Corinth till after the arrival of this Epistle (1 Cor. xvi. 10). It seems that this letter was sent by ship across the Aegan, while Timothy went round by land to Corinth. Paul sending Timothy to the Corinthians is a father sending to his children one who is their brother, being his own son in the faith, specially dear and faithful. It seems almost certain, from a comparison of v. 14—17, that Timothy was a convert made by S. Paul.

in the Lord] merely shows that the paternal and filial correlation is spiritual, not natural. "Shall remind you" (gentle word of rebuke) of my ways of life—those that are in the service of Christ: i.e. shall represent to you my official conduct as it is seen in my invariable method of teaching, which everywhere bears the same stamp.

18, 19, 20. Now some are puffed as though I would not come to you . . .] Render:—"As if, however, I were not coming to see you, some got puffed up" on this assumption: "some however I shall quickly to see you, if the Lord will, and shall take knowledge (by spiritual discernment) not of the argument of them which are puffed up, but of the power." "Are puffed up." Not as A. V. "are puffed up," but "became inflated." The Aorist indicates, not the existing state of self-inflation, but its rise and origin: the assumption that the Apostle was not coming to face them again is clearly described here as the exciting cause of their self-inflation. St. Paul's words expanded will then mean, The assumption that I was not coming to visit you (παρασκευαζόμενος to face you) proved to you an occasion for swelling into sectarian exclusiveness, and for mortifying invidious comparisons between Pauline and Apolitoile methods, till you began to weave a web of philosophy into the warp of Christianity and to interlace the two wisdoms, which are to each other intellectually irrelevant, the one soaring, the other creeping, and morally antagonistic, the one leading to humility, the other to pride. By this contentious spirit and dialectic conceit you allowed yourselves to get puffed up, because you thought that I, who first came before you in much fear and trembling, had not courage to return to Corinth and confront you, and that therefore you were masters of the situation and might please yourselves. But you were mistaken, "for come I will, and that soon, to confront you; and then I shall take knowledge (spiritual cognisance), not of the logic of such as are swollen with intellectual arrogance, that indeed shall pass unnoticed, but of their power, even of that moral power of working for God and for the advancement of His Kingdom, which well forth from the human spirit, as it is vivified by the divine, and is therefore a human power divine. For the Kingdom of God standeth not in dry dialectic or barren argument (λογιστικόν), but in living power. The Kingdom of God hardly in ethical sense here = the Christian Community in progress, but rather the Messianic Kingdom (see above v. 8), as it shall be revealed in its establishment of glory after the Parousia and the resurrection of the saints. Members of this future kingdom-in-possess are the "few chosen" out of the "many called," even such as "believe unto righteousness," the honest of heart and steadfast in faith and holy in life.

21. What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod or in love?] Render "Which do ye choose, with a rod that I come or in love?" Not as in A. V. "what will ye?" For clearly the sense is: (ἡ αὐτή ἡ λογική) "which alternative do ye prefer?" S. Paul fears the first and wishes the second. The
structure of this sentence ought to banish the so-called deliberative use of the subjunctive mood. For that I have omitted compare Macbeth. "Go bid thy mistress, when my drink is ready, she strike upon the bell." Literally "in a rod." No Hebraism; common Greek idiom. The right sense is "come with a rod about me;" possibly, "come in the circle and flourish of a rod wielded." The is denotes distinguishing accompaniment or circumstance: Vergil "horridus in jaculis." For this elliptical use of the preposition see Heb. v. 7, οὐκ ἐστὶν ἐν θανάτῳ, where some have erred, rendering "to bring safe out of death," whereas the true idea is, "to keep safe out of (the reach of) death."

Spirits of meekness not equivalent to "gentle spirit:" the term spirit should not be taken in the vague sense of mood or moral tone: it seems in N.T. to denote the outcome in men either of the good Spirit of God or of the bad spirit of Satan: e.g., "spirit of delusion." Here "spirit of gentleness" is a living effect called by the name of its living first cause, the Holy Spirit. It is in fact one of many divine outflows, that fills with light and power a corresponding nature or faculty in the human spirit. Meyer has a good comment on this text, too long to quote here: he thus concludes his note. "Observe that the Apostolic rod of discipline too is wielded in the power of the Holy Spirit, so that the selfsame Spirit works as a spirit of gentleness and of corrective severity (Chrysostom)." The legitimate inference is: all that is truly good in men has its ultimate spring in God; all that is evil comes originally from the devil.

**CHAPTER V.**

1. The incestuous person is to be expelled. 2. The old leaven is to be purged out. 10. Heinous offenders are to be shunned and avoided.

I T is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.

2. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you.

---

chap. V. The chastisement of sectarian arrogance with spiritual ambition is concluded. The notorious offender in the church now comes to view: St. Paul reproves the scandal, and gives apostolic judgment.

1. It is reported commonly.] Render:—Absolutely there is reported (to be) among you fornication, and such fornication as (is) not even among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.

N.B. Here the word ὁλοκαταβαίνω does not mean "altogether," as some, nor "in general," as others, but for it does not in any way qualify what follows, "there is reported;" rather it has to do with the mind of the speaker, and is elliptical, meaning in full, "On all grounds I am assured that," i. e., "absolutely," see vi. 7, ὁλοκαταβαίνω, "absolutely a defeat."

The ὁλοκαταβαίνω with the infinitive gives a general definition of the such, i. e., "of so gross a kind as for one to have," or with A. V., "that one should have." Some quite erroneously "that one bat;". This general definition is in perfect keeping with the apostle's wonted delicacy: the specific allusion to the unchaste person comes out in the known circumstances of the case. Perhaps more in accordance with the order of the words and with the absence of the article before "wife" would be the rendering, "That for wife, any-
dead (ος ἁρπαγμὸς πνευμάτων) those who have been overcome by licentiousness or any other flagrant lust; and after a while, when these have given proof of reform, they restore them to the standing of catechumens, receiving them once more even as risen from the dead." The conspicuous lack of the like discipline in our own Church of the present day is a thing to be lamented: see Communion Service.

N.B. The conjunction that (ἐναντίον) here does not signify "in order that he might be removed," for it does not imply aim or design on the part of the mourners, but a probable effect of the manifested grief, a result contemplated by the Apostle as likely to ensue from the exhibition of heartfelt sorrow. This use of ἐναντίον differs from the final or telic and from the definitio use: it may be termed the subjectively ebatic, or that of contemplated effect. Many instances of this in N.T.; one in Rom. xi. 11, "Did they stumble that they should fall?"

The sense of the whole verse is, "When you heard of the scandal, instead of continuing to be inflated with your spiritual arrogance or intellectual exclusiveness, you should have humbled yourselves by mourning for the grievous damage and defeat sustained by the Church: this was your duty, and it was likewise a measure that was calculated to bring about the removal of the scandal by the public exclusion of the criminal."

For verily... This verse justifies the demonstration of general grief with its contemplated effect of expelling the moral plague. Render and explain: This ye should have done, "for I (ἐναντίον) while you were blinded by conceit to a true sense of your position) being absent in the body yet present in the spirit, have already decided, as being present, concerning him who has thus perpetrated the deed, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ (you being assembled and my spirit with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ) to deliver such a one."—My before 'spirit' is emphatic.

In the above rendering the words I have decided as being present to deliver shew that this extradition of the sinner to Satan was an act of the assembly without the Apostle, but of the Apostle with the assembly, and of him present in his spirit. "As if I were present in the body," is the common explanation, but it fails to meet the dictum. It appears from this and from other texts that St. Paul's own spirit. Illumined, as it unquestionably was, and vivified by the divine, must have been endowed on certain occasions with a more than ordinary insight into the state of a Church at a distance. How otherwise is Col. ii. 5 to be explained, "In the spirit I am with you, rejoicing and contemplating (or looking at) your order." He writes as if he then discerned their rank and file. This spiritual intuitiveness and affinity and power of presence would be intensified in assemblies of the Church met together in His name, who has guaranteed His own Presence in assemblies thus sanctified. We may infer then that St. Paul could on occasions exercise this spiritual gift of supernatural immediate intuition, even as our Lord on earth in His own greater measure did, when He saw Nathaniel afar off under the fig-tree, and read his character, John i. 51. The prophets also of the Old Testament had this gift, e.g. Elisha said to Gehazi, "Went not my spirit with thee?" Why not St. Paul.

In the structure of these verses, 4 and 5, the apostolic sentence of the awful extradiation as if unwilling to fall, trembles in suspense and not till after several lingering clauses does it descend, and then with solemn emphasis (see Bengel). 'He exact connection of these clauses is not easy to see: of the four ways, probably the last to take "in the name of our Lord" with "to deliver," and then to annex the words "with the power of our Lord" to the words "gathered together... my spirit."' "With the power" does not denote the spirit of the Apostle clothed with the authority of Christ, as some: that would require ἐν rather than σὺν: while ἐν δυνάμει is a common phrase in N.T. this is the only place in which σὺν ἐν δυνάμει occurs: and this σὺν prefixed to the articulated δυνάμει makes it probable that the word power (not = authority, nor = potestas, but potestia) is here a third element in the assembly superadded to the you and my spirit: so that the precise meaning will be, "there having been gathered together you and my spirit with the (associated) power of our Lord Jesus"; associated, that is, to give effect to the sentence executed in the unseen world and to restrict the hand of Satan to bodily punishment. It should be observed that this is a decision, as appears on the very face of its wording, not levelled straight at the offender himself, but one suspended in terrorem over all offenders of his class. This is all but certain from the form (1) "I have decided" (a) "to deliver (not this man but) such an one," i.e. any offender of this stamp.
Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

Your glorying is not good.

Nor are the preceding words "him who has perpetrated this deed" adverse to this view, inasmuch as no doubt in the march of the several clauses, which hold in suspense the judicial sentence, the Apostle's mind relented from him into such an one, and what began with the special ended with the general. What St. Paul for the present desires is the simple excommunication of the notorious offender: this, we know, was actually performed by a majority of the Church assembled (2 Cor. ii. 6), and that with happy results; for the man repented and was reinstated.

The simple excommunication of ver. 2 could be performed by the assembled Church, and its members are exhorted in ver. 13 to exercise this right. It seems to have been an exclusion "not from the mystical Church, nor from the visible, but only from fellowship in the visible in holy duties." Hooker, B. iii. ch. i. 13. The extradition to Satan, which accompanied the graver and compound excommunication, was an act reserved for the plenary authority of an apostle, as appears from this text and from 1 Tim. ii. 20. Waterland (on Fundamentals, c. iv. vol. iii. p. 460) defines this more extreme penalty as a reduction of the sinner "to the state of a heathen, accompanied with the authoritative infliction of illness, disease and death." And death, no doubt, was inflicted in the case of Ananias and Sapphira, whereas disease only was intended in this instance of the unchaste culprit. This is clear from the right view of this verse 5: but it is equally clear that the Corinthian criminal would by the act of extradition have been reduced, not merely to the state of a heathen, as Waterland says, but to a state (for the time being) worse than that. For his lot would have been not only exclusion from the hallowed circle of the ecclesia into the outer cosmos or permitted domain of the devil, but such exclusion accompanied with a special extradition from the government of the Church into the sphere of Satan's power and malice, for destruction of the sinful carnal nature by means of grievous bodily affliction. This is what Augustine calls the "severe mercy of divine discipline."

We should bear in mind that in this greater excommunication of a willful sinner, Satan, the ruler indeed of this cosmos, yet now after the resurrection a ruler subordinated to the control of the ascended Son of man, was employed as a scourge of God under the authority of Christ: whose great Name is therefore invoked by His Apostle in the full presence of the Church assembled, and His new "power in heaven and in earth" is associated to the assembly and to the Apostle's spirit which is there present; associated thereunto in order to keep Satan's mainspring hand within due limits, lest from the body it should be put forth upon the spirit also. Under these restrictions the enemy of mankind was simply used (1) as a willing tool or instrument in smiting the body of the offender, (2) as an unwilling agent in helping to slay through the sorely smitten body the revived sinful lusts of the old Adam.

5. for the destruction of the flesh] i.e. for bringing about the mortification of the carnal affections and lusts. Flesh is a word often used to denote that principle of sin in human nature which ever strives against the fulfillment of the divine law. In this instance of the Corinthian culprit the lawless tendency runs out on the lines of licentiousness. This licentiousness finds expression and takes effect in the material flesh, and so the ethical is designated by the physical; the unseen motions of sin are called by the name of that which is the visible vehicle of their manifestations. Similarly, but with a far different application of the term, in the famous text "The Word became flesh," the unseen human soul and spirit are truly in the background of the (sinless) flesh of the Incarnate Son. The preposition for (ei) here rather points to contemplated result, not to the exclusion of design, if peradventure the man's carnal nature may be drained of its energy of sinful life by the pains of the bodily distemper, thereby making true repentance possible for the sufferer, and possible precisely in the degree in which the old man dies in him.

that the spirit may be saved.] The soul of the offender is not specified here, because, being the seat of the will, it is designed in God's corrective mercy (by means of repentance made feasible through physical affliction) to receive a new determination of its will towards the spiritual nature. The man's spirit Satan is therefore not permitted to touch, because, being akin to the divine essence ("that which is born of the Spirit is spirit") it is the receptacle and shrine of the principle of faith, and is that nature which is immediately actuated by the Holy Ghost. Of course, the salvation of the spirit here specified involves that of the soul and body too (this the Corinthian hearers of the 15th
chapter would readily understand), insasmuch as the self-determination of the soul from the flesh unto the spirit draws along with the soul the body also, and thus the body, in itself adiaphoron or indifferent, becomes salvable because it has ceased to be a σῶμα τῆς σωφροσύνης or body controlled by the principle of sin. In sum, it appears that Satan’s permitted affliction of the physical body is designed to effect the destruction of the ethical flesh, and this result is designed again to make feasible true repentance, in order that the whole man in his triple nature may in the end escape “the everlasting destruction” and be finally saved with the Messianic salvation. The Messianic salvation denotes that complete salvation which is to be accorded to the ecclesia, redeemed out of the cosmos, at the Parousia and resurrection of the just.

6. your glorifying is not good.] Καίγησαι. Surely not materies glorianti, as Meyer (who quotes Rom. iv. 2, where the word may mean “ground of boasting,” but the idea of ground lies solely in the context: there it is the circumstantial combined with the essential sense of the word), but rather glorianti, as Bengel, who however might have added facta. Here καίγησαι is something more concrete than καίγουσαι: for what θέλεις (Hebr. ii. 4) “willing in process” is to θέλημα “determine or declared will,” what κρατεῖ “preaching in process” is to κράτος “preachment” (never in propriety “the thing preached,” even διὰ τῆς μορφῆς τοῦ κράτους may signify “by the preachment of the world’s folly”), what κρίτις “judicial process” is to κρίμα “judicial sentence pronounced,” what δικαίωμα “the rite in process” is to δίκαιομα “the rite completed,” not “that which is baptized”—that is καίγεσαι to καίγησαι: this last word means “boasting uttered,” here it signifies “overt boast,” “palpable glorifying.” This true idea of the word is just what is here required by the antecedent context.

Explanation in full: “Not comely,” “not seemly”—no lites, as some—“not well-timed is your attitude of boasting!” Is ipsis a time to parade your lofty privileges of saintly kingship or to flaunt and flourish your Christian wisdom embroidered with worldly philosophy, when this scandal of the church stares you in the face? Theological pomp exhibited in the midst of a moral plague begun? Mourning, not boasting, should have been your attitude; deep con-
8 Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I wrote unto you in an epistle not to company with fornicators:

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man, that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a raider, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat.

the law was slain? Impossible! Immorality in the Church of Christ now, that the Lamb of God has been sacrificed? Impossible! That this Lamb of God was slain, when He was slain, is an actual fact (散文; unless it signify here "also" = "besides" or "moreover"); therefore in the wake of this great fact let us keep festival accordingly: if the divine antitype of the legal lamb has been slain, let not the moral antitype of the legal leaven be readmitted into the House of God; but rather let us keep the feast, not indeed that material feast of seven days on cakes unleavened, but the spiritual feast perpetual of a good conscience unsullied of any vice and ever cheered by a lively hope of the coming Messianic joys that are "unseen, unheard, unimagined" (ch. ii. 9).

Not with old leaven,] "Judaism et Ethnicismi," Bengel. Rather Ethnicismi alone. Μηδεν, not μηδε, serves to turn round the coin of two sides, and after the obverse of "old leaven" or heathen vice in general, to present to view on the reverse the special vices of malice and of wickedness. These are genitives of apposition or identity, that specific moral leaven which is "malice" and that which is "wickedness." Malice = evil disposition or bad nature: wickedness = the same translated into life, "active wickedness." This idea of industry in villany lies in the etymology ἐρωμός, one who is full of trouble to others.

"But with the unleaven or leavenless elements of unsullied moral purity and of truth." On οἰκονομία see Plato Phileb. p. 53 a.; where the whitest of whites is defined to be that which is most pure from admixture and most unsullied.

This allegory of the leaven occurring so soon after the Apostolic menace of the greater excommunication may have been suggested to S. Paul from Exod. xii. 19, "Whosoever eateth that which is leavened, that soul shall be cut off from the congregation of Israel." If this be true, it cannot be said that the insertion of this allegory in itself makes it probable that St. Paul wrote this letter just before the Jewish Passover.

9. Citation and elucidation of a passage in some earlier letter, which St. Paul's enemies in Corinith had misinterpreted. "I wrote in the Epistle"; clearly an allusion to some former letter. "I did write (ἔγραψα);" epistolary aorist out of place here.

10. Yet not altogether.] Render, "Not absolutely with the fornicators of this world;" "I do not mean absolutely with:" compare elliptical use of ὄλαθα in verse 1. Sense is, I wrote to you in the letter not to company with fornicators in general, not (I mean) unexceptionally, so as to include in the prohibition the fornicators of this world, or the covetous and extortioners of this world, or the idolaters of this world, since ye must needs in that case go out of the world. In the thrice-uttered phrase "of this world" world is issued in ethical sense and denotes the outside heathen; in the phrase "out of the world" world is used in the physical sense: migrate to another planet.

for then must ye needs.] Read δοκιμάστε and render "Since ye had need in that case:" ye had need = "ye would now have need:" compare ἐχθρίη, "it was right.

Covetous.] Πλεωσίησθαι, one who is eager to have more than his fair share or more than by right belongs to him: a greedy grabber; covetous is a good word for it, if by covetousness is understood a selfish hangkering after gain of any kind. For this greedy lust of lawless having runs out on more lines than one: it is a moral monster of several tentacles: like the cuttle-fish, it puts forth many feelers armed with suckers. Avarice is a branch only of the root covetousness. Sometimes this pleonarcy, or "amor scleratus babendi," is associated with adultery: but in that case it less denotes the lust of impurity than connotes a lawless desire to overreach one's neighbour; for the adulterer defrauds the husband in seizing what is the husband's property. In short, love of pleasure and love of money and love of power are but so many forms of this unbridled and unshallowed possessiveness.

11. But now I have written to you.] Now not temporal, but in logical and subjective sense. Render: — "But now you see I wrote to
12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within?

13 But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.

You not to company with any brother so named who may be a fornicator; &c.: i.e. not to consort with any one bearing the name of Christian who may be given to such vices. I wrote to you—clearly, in my former epistle which you misunderstood.

The term idolater as applied to a "brother" must here denote one who partook of sacrifices offered to idols, not one who offered sacrifice. "No, not to eat with," i.e. to sit at the same table. No allusion to agape, or to the Lord's Supper. The prohibition is from all social intercourse with brethren who practise heathen vices, inasmuch as convivial fellowship with such men fosters evil communications, and "evil communications corrupt good manners."

12. For what have I to do.] Render:—"For what does it concern me ("me" enclitic, not emphatic) to judge them also who are outside the pale?" "The outside"—a designation applied by the Jews to the heathen, by Christians to unbelievers. "To judge," i.e. negatively, by exclusion from social intercourse.

"Is it not those who are within the pale, not outside, that you judge?" Why should you have thought that it concerns me to judge by exclusion those prodigalites who are not Christians, when you judge in like manner only those who are professing Christians?

Argument of the whole is, I wrote to you in my former letter not to associate with immoral persons, of course I meant with immoral members of the Church: this natural limitation you should have perceived, because you yourselves apply the same principle of exclusive judgment or discretionary discipline, not to the outside heathen, but to those only who are within the pale. Both you and I thus judge men of the ecclesia: men of the cosmos are left by both of us alike to God's judgment; all who are beyond the hallowed circle He and He alone judgeth. (ἐπίστευν or ἐπιστεύει; sense not altered).

13. Summary order for the excommunication, not the extradition, of the immoral man. "Remove at once (aor. imper.) the evildoer out of your midst," in which you have too long tolerated and harboured him. Τὸν παρακολούθον, strong word, often applied to Satan himself, e.g. in the Lord's Prayer, where the context "lead us not into the (sphere of) temptation" (let alone other internal reasons) seems to necessitate the rendering "the evil one."

CHAPTER VI.

The Corinthians must not vex their brethren, in going to law with them: & especially under profanation. 9 The unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God. 15 Our bodies are the members of Christ, 19 and temples of the Holy Ghost. 16, 17 They must not therefore be defiled.

DARE any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

DARE any.] Fulminat Paulus: flash after flash of sarcastic fire and interrogative satire. "Dognath one of you, having a matter among the other party, seek for judgment before the unjust!" How truly preposterous! What a contradiction: to go to law before the lawless! to sue for right dealing before wrong-doers! What? Deigns any Christian litigant to make an appeal by legal process to a heathen tribunal? Does he not rather seek for judgment by arbitration before Christian umpires, and get a dispute of rival claims between saints adjusted by such as are saints,—men hallowed in the hallowed circle of God's kingdom and righteousness? Rank treason this to the grandeur of their future status in that kingdom! Or (the only alternative and
2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

excuse of such derogatory conduct) do ye not know (does not your vaunted wisdom inform you, or have ye not comprehended from the teaching of Paul or of Apollo the fact of the future) that the saints shall judge the world? If so, how can the saints ask the world to pass judgment upon them, when they shall pass judgment upon the world? The saints belong not to the cosmos, but, the very reverse, the cosmos belongs to them: see iii. 22. It is absurd in itself, and it is quite alien to the divine idea and counsel, that any of you should now appear at their bar, who shall some day appear at yours.

This prohibition of appeal to heathen tribunals, as Theodoret remarks, is not at variance with Rom. xiii. 1 . . . for no resistance to the "powers that be" is here counselled, only an abstention from seeking legal redress in Pagan law courts.

2. "And if in your presence the world is to be judged (present tense of destiny), unmeet are ye for judgment-seats of the meanest sort!" Are ye not good enough to sit as judges in civil causes, which by comparison are simply trivial.

A smart shock of irony runs through this argument a majori ad minus. Lofty irony too, bended with righteous indignation, is in most of what follows. "Do ye not know"—with serious banter and reiterated surprise at such ignorance behind so much profession—are ye not acquainted with another fact of the future, "that angels we shall judge?" Not only the world of men, but a higher class of created beings—angels!

N.B. ἄγγελοι is unarticled because the qualitative idea of the term is made conspicuous. This view postulated by the context, is better than to say with Bp. Wordsworth and Winer that the absence of the article indicates "some angels of the whole number." This idea, however true in itself it may be, is not in the text, nor may it be thus inferred: compare Hebr. ii. 16, where the anarthrous term "angel" is contrasted with the anarthrous term "seed of Abram." Compare also τοὺς σωφοὺς; where is wiseman?—the whole genus.

3. So far in this interesting passage all has been smooth sailing. Rocks and breakers now appear: difficult navigation, and much difference of opinion. The only safe plan is first to analyse the cardinal terms and the particles too, which are numerous and significant: and it is curious to see how the eye-words of one sentence, rightly understood, serve to illustrate the eye-words of another, and that reciprocally. This is important for the doctrine. The grammatical analysis of this intricate passage will be found in an Additional Note at the end of the chapter.

As the Authorised Version is somewhat loose in rendering these verses, which (it should be noted) ring with satire, the following retranslation, with inserted explanations, is suggested. Render and explain from ver. 1 to ver. 12:—"Beatiath any one of you (you emphatic), having a matter among the other (party), to seek for judgment before the wrong-doers and not before the saints! (Are ye so besotted) or do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world! And if in your presence the world is to be judged, unmeet are ye to hold judge-courts of the lowest sort! Do ye not know that angels we shall judge, angels? Speak not of secular things! Nay rather (that I may unmask your folly by a redactio ad absurdum) if secular judge-courts ye should perchance hold (a measure how unworthy of your kingly calling and of your future judicial status!), take men of utterly no account in the church and set them on the bench! (Tbern, I say, for such nonentities are equal to the settlement of such trivialities.) To put you to shame I speak it (this last sentence serious, not satirical). So! Is there not among you (wisemen as you flaunt yourselves) not even one wiseman who shall be competent to arbitrate (give his decision) on the part of his brother! But brother with brother goes to law (which is a breach of charity) and sues for judgment at the bar of unbelievers (which is preposterous)? Nay, verily (let alone the absurd length of appealing to heathen men) it is so far quite a defeat to you that you have cause for legal judgments between yourselves. (The κρίματα to be taken with μονή ἐνσώματ, see verse 6.) Why do ye not rather take wrong (than allow or give cause for this ratio ultima of legal judgment)? Why not submit to being defrauded? Nay but (the very reverse, so far from taking wrong dealt) you deal wrong yourselves, and (what makes it
5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you? no, not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded?

8 Nay, ye do wrong, and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind,

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, but as touching fornication let not even your members of the body commit sin.

worse) deal wrong to brethren! Is this possible! or do ye, with all your boasted knowledge, not know that wrong-doers (of any sort) shall not inherit God's kingdom?"

In verse 3, "angels we shall judge." Whether these are good or bad angels, or both, commentators differ. Meyer and Alford say that this noun, without a defining epithet, always denotes good angels. This statement cannot be correct, as in this verse St. Paul, on purpose, leaves angels without article and without epithet, in order to make conspicuous, not their character, good or bad, but their exalted, noble nature. His argument is clearly ascensive from the world of human creatures to the order of angelic beings: "ye shall hold assizes upon the heathen world hereafter; are ye unfit now for the most paltry sessions? Nay, much higher: not only men, but angels shall come under your jurisdiction." The Apostle might indeed have written the "wicked world" and "evil angels;" but such epithets would have invalidated his argument. Nay more, from the fact that the world, which is to be judged in the full presence of the risen saints, will consist mainly of unbelievers and apostates, who shall have missed the Messianic salvation of the Parousia - men, that is, not redeemed from the fall — it may be fairly reasoned that St. Paul, when he speaks of angels being judged, has in his mind chiefly, if not entirely, fallen angels, although he does not so designate them, because such an epithet would be irrelevant and detrimental to his argument. In fact, most commentators, from Chrysostom down to Bengel, seem to think that fallen angels or demons are meant here. The correctness of this view will be strengthened when we reflect that Satan is designated both "ruler of the demons" (Matt. ix. 34, xii. 24) and "ruler of this world" (John xii. 31, xiv. 30), and moreover that the demon-powers are called (Eph. vi. 12) "the world-rulers of this darkness," doomed themselves to be deposed and with the wicked world to be judged in the great day by the enthroned Son of Man and His seated saints. It appears indeed from holy writ, that of these once angelic hierarchies different sets at different times fell from their principatia, some before man's creation, others after; to this latter fall most probably belong "the sons of God," or angels of Gen. vi. 2 — (consider the τοιούτους and τρίποτα of Jude 7, and see S. T. Maitland's able essay Eruvin, pp. 135-155); who are now "in bonds of darkness, and in the Abyss kept for the assise (σπίτια) of the great day" (2 Pet. ii. 4).

Of a different class to these fallen angels is the "Satan-ruled empire of the air," a power that now worketh in the children of disobedience, Ephes. ii. 2, and "the spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places." Ephes. vi. 12. These demons of different dates and manifold ranks, some in the heavens, some in the atmosphere, some in the Abyss (called bright and depth, Rom. vii. 39), are termed "angels of the devil" (Matt. xxv. 41), and it is probable that Satan himself was once an archangel. See Jude 9.

7. "a fault."] ὑπηρέτησα may here mean a moral defeat sustained by the Christian soldier in his campaign and spiritual march for the heavenly prize of the kingly crown and judicial throne. Others make it denote loss or damage to the church, more litigant than militant, in the eyes of observant heathendom.

9. "Be not deceived:" solemn caution: be not misled or caught by Satan's infatuation and world-netting ἡλώσῃ.

10. Apoc. xii. 9; xx. 8. Inherit the kingdom of God.] The archetypal kingdom of God "prepared from the foundation of the world," of which the Jewish theocracy enlarged into the Gentile ecclesia is but preparatory, was announced on the change of name from Abram "high father" to Abraham "the father of a multitude or ancestor of kings and of nations;" see Keil On Pentateuch, vol. 1 Gen. xvii. The mystical Canaan, which was
tioners, shall inherit the kingdom of
God.
11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sancti-
fied, but ye are justified in the name of
the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit
of our God.
12 All things are lawful unto me,

It has a negative and a positive meaning: it
denotes the appropriation of persons and of
things, in their measures, to divine uses. This
implies alienation from the world and from
sin. Thus Matt. xxiii. 17, "the shrine hallo
ers the gold," i.e. severs it from profane uses and
consecrates it to God's service. So of persons: in
John x. 36, the Son, before He was sent into
the world, was by His Father balled as the
organ and minister of the divine counsel of
redemption to mankind: hence also his title
"the Holy One of God," Mark i. 4. In this
verse the full sense is "ye were detached from
the world and dedicated to God, the Holy
Spirit also implanting in you a moral deter-
mation of will towards communion with
God's holiness." As the acts of sanctification
(in its germ here, not in its growth) and of
justification are both on God's part simul-
taneous with the rite of baptism on man's, it
matters little in what order the two are men-
tioned. "But ye were justified." Meyer,
"ye were made righteous." But how can
δικαιοῦν possibly signify "to make righteous!"
Verbs indeed of this ending from adjectives
of physical meaning may have this use, e.g.
τυφλόν "to make blind." But when such
verbs are derived from adjectives of moral
meaning, as αἰθοῦν, ὁσιόν, δικαιοῦν, they do
by usage and must from the nature of things
signify to deem, to account, to prove or to
treat as worthy, holy, righteous. Compare
LXX, Book of Wisdom vi. 11: "they who
have kept holy the holy statues shall be
regarded holy." It is after the Parousia that
we shall be in St. Paul's phrase established
righteous, Rom. v. 19: when far beyond a
mere imitative obedience to God's moral law,
we shall be gifted with a natural power of
living His righteousness and of expressing it
spontaneously through our threefold humanity
in every thought, in every look, in every word,
in every act. Meanwhile the righteousness
of God, in which we shall then be set inde-
fectible, is by grace imputed to us miserable
sinners, as we by faith strive to "walk blame-
less before Him." In this life we are not
made righteous.

"In the name—and in the Spirit." These
two in-clauses embrace the three
preceding predicates of baptismal ablation,
of consecration to God, of justification. The
word name here, as so often in Scripture,
denotes not so much who as what the owner
is: It expresses the nature and the relation
to the baptized of their proper Lord and
but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up by his own power.

15 Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh.

17 But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication. Every sin

God-saviour, who delivers the people of His earning from their enemies and from their sins. The sense is, ye were baptized, ye were consecrated, ye were justified all in the hallowed circle of His redemptive Name (whose “name was named before the sun was made,” Book of Enoch) and in the pure and light-shedding sphere of the Spirit of God.

12. “You must not abuse the doctrine of Christian allowance, O Corinthians, and suppose with Hellenic philosophy that “man is the measure of all things” and that all the creatures are his for use. It is not true, if eating and drinking, natural appetites, are things indifferent, that sensual appetites also are of the same category. As to myself, if I may speak representatively, all indifferent things are to me allowable, but not all are advantageous for others: for, what may not be wrong in itself, is not always profitable or conducive to the common weal: my actions shall not be my masters. There is a play of words in the second clause, “I am master of all things, it is true, but not I will be mastered by any,” lest the service which is “perfect freedom” become bondage and my Christian liberty moral slavery.

13. Moreover, O Corinthians, you cannot argue from the natural to the sensual, that as the belly is for meats so the body is for fornication; both esculents and their assimilating continentare things indifferent, being perishable and not reaching into eternity, and their mutual adaptation shall in time cease: but the body is not for fornication, as the belly for meats, but for the Lord, and the Lord is for the body; and this mutual adaptation shall not cease for ever, for God will raise us from the dead, as He raised the Lord, and so the body surviving the Parousia shall be transfigured into a holy instrument for the work of the Lord in the kingdom of God.

16-17. “Your bodies are members of Christ—he that is joined to the Lord is one spirit.” Profound and cogent dissuasive from the deadly sin of fornication.

Our physical bodies are members mystical of Christ’s Body mystical: these many members are not vivified by so many individual spirits, but all by one spirit breathed from the one Head through the one Body of many members. So that in a mystical manner we are organically set in Him, and He spiritually breathes in us: and, to borrow His own metaphor, we are in Christ, as the branches are in the vine; and Christ is in us, as the sap of the vine is in the branches. One and the same sap from the root permeates and vivifies the stem and the boughs. In like manner one and the same Spirit from the Head circulates in continuity through all the many myriads of living members. Hence, as the humanity of Christ expands and embodies fresh saints, these spiritually live not so many individual and mutually independent lives, but one communicated life, which moreover not so much they live, as Christ lives it in them, who Himself is therefore called “our life;” even as the nervous energy from the brain penetrates every limb and joint of our frame. A finger cut off from the hand, or a hand from the arm, or an arm from the body, dies, having no life in itself. Thus “he who is joined to the Lord” is, in his own measure of capacity, one Spirit with Him, just as the animal life of the finger is one with the owner’s. But he who commits fornication kills in himself the spiritual life of Christ; and, except he repent, is lopped off like a rottten branch from the vine. It may be added that the one Spirit of the one Body is called sometimes the “Spirit of God,” sometimes the “Spirit of Christ,” because it is within the Humanity of the Son of Man that the Holy Spirit operates.

If ἀπας = tolleni. “Should I take away?” then the sense is, What you think your own, is another’s by right of creation and by right of redemption. If you take away from Him what is His, you rob Him; and if you apply to a purpose of your own which is not yours, you are guilty of malappropriation.

18. Flee fornication.] “Resist the devil,
I. CORINTHIANS. VI.

that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.

19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

and he will flee from you," but fornication flee and flee (imperf. imperat.); in this instance you conquer by running away. Of the next sentence the ordinary interpretation is unsatisfactory: "other sins are committed externally," Jerome; "every other sin works upon the body from without," Meyer; and so nearly all, referring the "every other sin" to gluttony or drunkenness. But where in the Greek text is the word corresponding to other? Nowhere: nor can the missing link fairly be supplied from a context that follows. The true contrast seems to be, not between gluttony or drunkenness, as shafts of sin missing the body, and harlotry, as an arrow hitting the body, but rather between incidental or exceptional sins in general and the habit of fornication in special. This view is probable, not only from the absence of the άλλο, but for other linguistic reasons, not to mention that on ethical grounds drunkenness and gluttony are vices that do hit the body.

N.B. In the first and subordinate clause πονηρα is the advers, while in the principal clause πονηραι is in the imperfect or tense of habit: and as πονηρος του δαμασκηνου = "to put forth in practice the principle of sin," or to sin habitually, so άγατος πονηρα = "to do a sinful act." The δαμασκηνος, as some, σωθιστων (need of ονειρον for that), but "that perchance." Comp. Acts. ii. 21: μετα δε ειναι "any one who may call upon..." Ανθρωπος, instead of ος, seems to import a faint hue of human infirmity.

The sense then is, Flee and flee the vice of fornication: any act of sin in general that (trial) man may commit, outside the body falls, and fails to hit it: but the fornicator does against his own body sin. A contrast here between ἐναι and εις. If this view be right, no pollution here of single sins must be thought of. Compare 1 John ii. 1: ειαω τεις δαμασκηνος, "if any one commit a sin, we have an Advocate." How perilous single sins are, link after link nimbly weaving a silent chain that steals around and coils fast the captive of Satan, see Jeremy Taylor, vol. ii. p. 481. Such a chain would simply serve to keep open the door of repentance to such neophytes as had fallen unawares into carnal sin in voluptuous Corinth, where the lenient view, bred in the heathen bond, of the coarser vices lingered long.

The fornicator, I say, hits his own body in the vice of harlotry. Are you still so heathen in the grain as to deem the body an ἀγανομη σαβισμος? Is it possible? "Or do ye not know that the body of you (as saints) is the shrine of the Holy Spirit that is in you (as saints)?" Fornication is a desecration, for it defiles that which is hallowed: it is rebellion also, and that against God: for you with your bodies are His property, His peculum: ye are not your own. For ye were bought...

20. Idea twofold: these words should be read, not in continuity, but with a break: "ye were purchased—with a price." No epithet to price: it requires none: it is the blood of Christ. This price was paid, not as some early Fathers say, to Satan, but to God, and to Him in order to meet exactly the demands of His righteousness, i.e. harmony of action with His own absolute law: "for without bloodshedding, no remission." It is the "precious blood" of our Litany, inasmuch as the human blood of the Eternal God was the ransom paid to God for our eternal redemption from the curse of the Law and from the wrath of God and from the claims of Satan and from the power of Sin. "Do just glorify God." The δια cannot mean therefore: it is a subjective particle = just or now. By one effort (Aor. imperative) "do just glorify God in the shrine of the body," for it is a very sanctuary of the Holy Ghost.

ADDITIONAL NOTE

The word κρίνων means neither "judgment" nor "trial," but in propriety a "judge's seat" or "judge's court" or "place of session." And this proper meaning just suits these texts, in which a contrast is intended between the tribunal or ηγεμον of the heathen magistrates, constituted by Roman authority, and the possible but not yet established bench of a Christian arbitrator, who may amicably settle private lawsuits between Christians. This, as contrasted with the Roman ηγεμον or raised platform with its proconsular sella, is here termed κρίνων, a word which means not precisely judgment-seat, for the idea of a
I. CORINTHIANS. VI.

perience or persons judging lurks in the etymology κρίνει: in like manner ἐκπρατήριον means not a "sleeping place" so much as a "sleeping chamber," and θυσιαστήριον means the "altar of a sacrificing priest." This is true of very many such words, even in Aeschylus, Choephoroe 5 and 6. In the word παλατίερ lurks the harper and in the Psalter the Psalmist. When the term in question is used in a figurative sense, even then the image of παλάτια seated as κρίνει seems to come to view: Plato Theaet. 178, B. This idea of a personal judge lurking in the word is doctrinally important, because when St. Paul wrote κρινούμενοι, an image of the Apostles and saints seated on thrones reigning and judging with Christ (see Matt. xix. 28, Dan. vii., Rev. xx. 4) may have filtered through his mind and suggested the coming term κριτηρίων. If so, the noun substantive throws back light upon the verb, and assimilates it to the proper sense of judging. This more accurate view disperses the notion of condemnation, negative, comparative, moral, which some eminent scholars attach to the word, e.g. Bp. Wordsworth in loco, who however appositely cites Barrow, Sermon 33, "The Saints being first approved shall become assessors," i.e. according to the Pauline teaching, first approved before the bema or tribunal of Christ (2 Cor. v. 10) they shall afterwards, with Son of man enthroned supreme, reign upon the earth and judge the nations. For this word κρίνει in its etymological denotation, juridical, judicial, and administrative government of polities allotted to the saints in the Messianic Kingdom. See Parable of the Talents and the Book of Judges passion; Book of Wisdom iii. 8, 9; Apocal. ii. 26. This noun κριτηρίων occurs once again in the New Testament, James ii. 6, where it is translated "judgment-seat," and it occurs some six times in the Septuagint in the same or like sense; in Dan. vii. 10. "The judgment was set;" where it seems to denote the collective bench of judges: cp. verse 9, "the thrones were set." So πειρατήριον in Plutarch means (1) a resort or nest (2) a gang of pirates.

The next word is κρίνοςβαίαν, and it means "to seek for judgment" or " sue for a judicial decision;" some render it "to go to law." Quite different from κρίνοςβαία is κριμάτα ἐξειλο of verse 7. Cremer renders it "to have lawsuits" or "legal proceedings," cautiously making this a fourth meaning of the phrase in order to oblige this particular passage. Alford, "to have matters of dispute;" rather παιροῦμα to express that thought. Meyer, "to have legal judgments already obtained," which cannot be right, inasmuch as it breaks the logical connection: κριμάτα must mean "judgments" or "judicial decisions;" and if we translate ἐξειλο "to have grounds for" (compare Rom. iv. 2) or even, the idea of the verb passin; from the subject to the object, as it so often does, "to furnish occasions for" (see Thucyd. ii. 42), we shall obtain a sense precisely in logical keeping with what follows. Perhaps "to have cases for legal judgment" may hit the mark: (or possibly "to admit of, allow judgments at law." Comp. Latin, Res controversiam habet).

As to the particles, which have much weight in determining the logical sequence, three of them must be briefly discussed. μὴγερει, μὲν ὁδῷ, ἵκτος. Μὴγερει equals nēdam, and means "much more" or "much less," according to the context. But neither "much more" nor "much less" is the essential sense of the phrase. The intrinsic meaning is "let me not speak of," or rather " don't mention;" "utter not in the same breath what is out of the question." Perhaps these "let alone secular matters" is not a word about seculars. And the Apostle probably intended this essential sense to stand out in the foreground, not so as to exclude altogether the circumstantial also, but to throw it comparatively into the shade. If this be true, the mark of interrogation should be put after κρινούμεν and a colon or full stop after βιωτία, and the full sense will be:—"Let alone seculars, of course: there is no question but that secular causes come easily within the scope of your judicial decisions, but, as such, they are to be far below what is our dignity. What? stoop to such base benches of judgment when angels shall appear on their trial before you, seated on your thrones!"

As regards μὲν ὁδῷ, so variously rendered here, it often signifies "nay verily, nay more, nay rather," or "yes rather," according as it is corrective and substitutive of a new thought (as Soph. Ajax, 1363) or confirmative of what has been stated and additions (as Plato, Phdr. 250, A.). The ὁδῷ may signify "then" or "therefore"—as indeed several take it here—only when the μὲν falls back upon the preceding word, because it is expectant of a coming ἢ or ἄνωθεν (as Eur. Hipp. 1249); but that is precisely not the case here in instance, for βιωτία looks forward to no correlative antithesis and ἵκτος again for the same reason is not a word with which μὲν (with an ὁδῷ in front of it) can well associate: the μὲν, therefore, must coalesce with the ὁδῷ in both instances.

But the most difficult particle is the ὁδῷ: commentators seem to make it mean already, or simply overlook it. The word happens to be a key-word: clearly it has a logical sense here, not temporal, and means so far or up to this point: Thucyd. κατ. ἔχθος ἵκτος "with a feeling akin or amounting to hate;" and Demostenes, De Corona, ἵκτο πιντος. In fact


CHAPTER VII

2 He treateth of marriage, 4 shewing it to be a remedy against fornication: 10 and that the bond thereof ought not lightly to be dissolved. 18, 20 Every man must be content with his vocation. 25 Virginity wherefore to be embraced. 35 And for what respects we may either marry, or abstain from marrying.

NOW concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

CHAP. VII. Could we see the letter of questions sent to St. Paul by the Corinthians, a new light would be shed upon his replies in this chapter, to us somewhat obscure. The letter is lost, but some of the questions, we may infer from the answers, were (1) Is marriage, where there is no engagement, a thing to be desired or to be avoided, under the pressure of such times, the shadow of the looming Parousia? (2) Where a man and a woman are married or engaged, is the bond to be dissolved, if one of the two be an unbeliever? (3) What about the question of celibacy and virginity? Is a widow also at liberty to marry again? This is a chapter of casuistry or questions upon special cases submitted to the Apostle’s judgment. St. Paul writes his answers as if he thought that all relations of life were just now of a very precarious tenure, for the times were straitening, persecutions were threatening, the earthly theo-
2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own
wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise
also the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and
likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time,
that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again,
that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

6 But I speak this by permission, and not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I myself. But every man
hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if
they abide even as I.

Craniry was swiftly tending to dissolution and
to a heavenly supersession. The Apostle's advice contains rather precepts for the time
than counsels for the centuries: and their
adaptation admits of elasticity. It may be
added that in this chapter the Greek text has
been tampered with; ascetic tendencies have
led to arbitrary corrections.

1. It is good for a man.] The much
discussed word for 'good' (καλόν) here ap-
pears to mean, not exactly morally good as
set against a contrary that is morally evil, but
rather something which affords a position for
attaining to a higher religious level and to
more singleness of heart in serving the Lord.
It points to condition or circumstance, yet to
such happy circumstance as leads to moral
and spiritual improvement. It seems to be
used here, and in verses 8 and 26, in much
the same sense as in the texts, "It is good for
us to be here," and "It were good for that
man he had never been born;" as we say,
"a capital thing," "a fine thing," "an excellent
thing." Indeed Jerome here does render it
"excellent." This view of the word is rather
countenanced by the phrases, "This I say
for your own interest" in verse 15, and "hap-
pier is she if she so abide" in verse 40. Render
here, "It is an excellent thing for man in
general" not ἀξίον.

2. Yet on account of the fornications (that are too rife in Corinth).

N.B. Αὐτά "to avoid." A. V. Most
important it is to mark well this term yet elastic
use of prepositions. Comp. xv. 29 "baptized
for the dead," and a mistranslated text in
Coloss. ii. 23, ὄφει ἑν τιμή των πρῶτον σκοπόν
where it has long seemed to me that a
more accurate and sensible rendering would be
"not of any value to check" the gratification of
the flesh; "for here πρῶτον = "to meet," whether
with a view of checking or of aiding, the context determines. Cf. LXX, Ps. lxviii.
22. "They gave me vinegar for drink (with
an eye) unto my thirst," i.e. to slake it.

Sometimes πρῶτος = "to meet," with a sense of
furthering, as in this chap. ver. 15 and Heb.
ix. 13; so that the same preposition with
different surroundings may have precisely
opposite meanings; the essential sense, how-
ever, is always an invariable quantity.

3. "Due benevolence," A. V. Rather
debitum tori. The correct reading is τῶ
οἰκεῖον.

4. "Hath not power over her own body." This
Bengel calls a charming paradox. A
very similar one see in Aristoph. Plutus,
verses 4, 5.

5. Render:—"unless ye should per-
chance appoint a mutual abstention by
agreement for a season, that you may
get a leisure time (aorist) for prayer," i.e.
for the special devotion you may con-
template (fasting and should be expunged
from the text) "and that when the special
season has elapsed) you may be together
again, as usual, and no longer keep asunder,
lest Satan should proceed to tempt you be-
cause of your lack of self-control:" an
infirmity of the blood, on which the tempter
would keep his eye and try to inflame it
into a breach of the marriage vow.

6, 7. This (contents of verse 5) I say by
way of allowance to you, not by way of
injunction; you must use your own dis-
cretion, whether you keep apart by mutual
consent at all or, if so, how long. This
depends in a measure on idiosyncrasies;
all men are not, as I am myself, gifted with
continence. I do wish they were.

8. "If they also abide, as I," (i.e. to the
end of life, Aorist). Not "even as I," A.
V. Our idiom requires that the abo be trans-
ferred from the protatic into the principal
clause: cf. Oedip. Col. ὅπερ με κάνειν γράφει,
ὅσα σώσαι. This is frequent.
9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

10 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife by the husband. And if the unbelieving party depart, let her remain. But if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband. And the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife by the husband. If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

14. Ground of the foregoing precept: "The husband that is an unbeliever is sanctified by union with the wife;" i.e. he is externally sanctified. His status is a hallowed status (see note on vi. 11). For he dwells no longer in the profane and godless world, but stands upon the sacred threshold of the Church. Both he and his wife are in God's commonwealth: she incorporated, he merely attached: her's is a dedication of self, his a consecration of position: his surroundings only are hallowed: brought out of the darkness is he in the light, but the light is not in him. United to a saintly consort he is in daily contact with saintly conduct: holy association may become holy assimilation, and the sanctity which ever environs may at last penetrate; for it is drop upon drop that hollows the rock and makes it a cisterna: the circumstances are such that the man's will may be reached by God's grace which by a divine law moves in the sphere of theocronic consecration. But the man's conversion is not a condition necessary to the sanctity of the subsisting conjugal union; and Bengel seems, as usual, to hit the mark when he writes, "Sancificatus est, ut par fidelis (uxor) sancte ui posit seque vivellere debeat:" cf. 1 Tim. iv. 5. This being true, the children of a Christian wife and a non-Christian husband, being the children of a hallowed union, are themselves hallowed, i.e. in a position meet for dedication to God's service in holy baptism. All this however holds good of such marriages as were contracted before the conversion of one of the two consorts. Chrysostom well remarks on the second instance of this verse, that a man may put away his wife neither for unbelief nor for idolatry, but for fornication, because she has become a harlot, and he that is one body with a harlot is polluted. "Else were:" are more correct: "since (otherwise) of course, or "else of course, the children of you (who belong to this class of unequal pairs) are uncleaned, i.e. to God from the delibe-
believing wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us together to peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk. And so ordain I in all churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised. Is any called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the moments of the world, but now you see (it being a fact, made known to me, that one unbelieving consort is hallowed by contact with the other who has been converted) the children are holy;’ i.e. hallowed in their outward estate, just as the unbelieving parent is, and open to the inner consecration of the Holy Spirit. It is not easy to sound the deeper sense of this. We may imagine three concentric circles; the innermost circle of spiritual light, environed by a margin of theocratic twilight, the suburbs of the city of God: embracing this twofold sphere is the immense margin of outer cosmic darkness. Better the twilight than the outer darkness, for it is a state of hope and transition from the bad to the good, and one that furnishes opportunities of grace, and makes salvation accessible. The deeper causes of these boundary lines lie in the secret laws of the divine government of the universe and in the unknown partition of mundane realms among angels and spirits, good and evil: the consecration of places, of churches, of graveyards, has a deep significance.

15. But if the unbelieving depart.] ‘But if the unbeliever is for parting, let him part:’ the Apostle grants separation in such a case. Sense is: if the unbeliever be intolerant of the new religion in his converted wife, let him proceed to separate: the Christian partner need not be troubled thereat: not enslaved, not in a state of matrimonial servitude is a brother or sister in cases like this: true: yet (corrective be) to be in a state of peace God has called us: ‘tis to live in the moral element of peace that God has called us to His Kingdom of peace, and conjugal amity, if it accord with Christian liberty, is more in keeping with our holy calling; for what dost thou know about it, wife, whether thou shalt convert and save thy husband? an event quite possible if he abide with thee: the chances are even: his conversion just lies within the circumstances.

N.B. This ancient view seems better than the more modern one of Lyra, which breaks the rule that the causal particle yap properly points to the nearest preceding sentence, unless there be some obvious reason for its overlap backward to the penultimate: here such obvious reason does not exist. Moreover Lyra’s view maintained by Meyer and Alford and others, hardly stands the test, when it postulates εἰ μὴ for εἰ as necessary to establish a probability of conversion, ‘How knowest thou whether thou shalt not save:’ for the idea of probability is not demanded by the argument here: that of possibility is quite enough, for it just suits the logic, which only asks that the two scales of conversion and of non-conversion be in equipoise, and this notion lies in the Greek εἰ δέ εἰ σώορει. Compare Eur. ὅσα οὖν ἂν εἰ πιθανόν, πιθανόν ἐσθι ἀρχαία, ‘I know not whether I can persuade, yet try I must.’

17. Much controverted is the connection of the elliptical εἰ μὴ. Perhaps the best ellipse is, ‘If the unbeliever wishes to part from the Christian consort on the ground of religious differences and there is no prospect of peace and unity, in such cases I grant permission; I give no injunction, unless it be in the general rule, Let every one walk in the lot of life which God has apportioned to him, let every one abide in that station within which the Lord has called him to the kingdom. Here I ordain, and to the churches all I ordain this.’ The last word is a word of Apostolic authority. More literally, ‘Only let every one, as God assigned to him (some time before his conversion) his portion in this life, so walk.’ ἀποτίθησα means not ‘distributed’ but ‘apportioned.’ See Chap. i. 13. In verses 15–24 this general principle is inculcated: Let all existing relations of life, domestic social religious, be respected, when they can be respected without loss of Christian liberty and without breach of the divine laws.

18. Religious status at the time of the divine call to be retained. ‘In circumcision was any one called?’ Circumcised was a man at the time of his call?

19. ‘Keeping of the commandments of T
keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ's servant.

23 Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

God" is everything: "everything" to be supplied from the contextual "nothing:" see iii. 7. Compare for parallels in doctrine Gal. v. 6, vi. 15, from all which put together it appears that the counsel of redemption willed from eternity by the Triune Deity, in its historical evolution in time and in its actual application to men, is threefold (1) the new creation by the Holy Spirit founded in baptism, (2) faith in Jesus Christ working by love, (3) the aim and goal of the whole manifold wisdom—the keeping of the commandments of God the Father.

20. Not in the essence, but in the circumstance of the divine calling. Atmospheric use of the preposition: comp. Hebr. v. σωτήρ ἐκ θανάτου = "to keep safe out of the reach of death." Full sense is, 'In the secular surroundings of the divine calling in which (surroundings) he was called, in these let him abide.' Before ἕν and compare Thucyd. i. 1 ad fin. with Shilleto's note.

21. Render:—"In slavery what thou calledst never mind; but still if thou cannot also become free, rather make use of it (than not)." Avail thyself of the power or opportunity of becoming free. For the defence of this rendering see Additional Note at end of chapter.

22. "For he who being a slave was called to be in the Lord, is a freedman of the Lord," and consequently, if such a one is a freedman in divine relations, how much more may he become one in human relations, if but the lawful door of manumission be opened to him! Certainly let him avail himself of such an opportunity, should it occur; if, however, it should not occur, let him abide in his lot, happy in the assurance that man's servant for a time he is Christ's freedman for ever. "In like manner," as the secular slave is a spiritual freedman, so the secular freedman (not freedman) who was called to the kingdom in union with Christ, is a spiritual slave. Such a one is not his own master (bad for him if he were): he is a moral bondsman belonging to Him "whose service is perfect freedom." This is true of you all: for all of you, whether social slaves or social freedmen, are the pur-

chased possession of one divine Master: "with a price were ye bought to be His slaves: become not the slaves of men." Rather obscure is this last clause: some see in the word men a reference to Apollos and Cephas: alii alia. The sense of this verse more fully is: The converted slave, if he fail of civil enfranchisement, should console his bondage with the thought that he has received a far nobler emancipation in the divine manumission from the hard taskmastership of Satan and of sin: and the converted freedman should bear in mind that he is the personal property and future peculium of Him who paid the price in the blood of the cross.

24 "In what state of life he was called to be a brother, in that let everyone abide on the side of God" who called him. If he changes the outward lot of the inward call he breaks the general rule and order of the divine government, and so far is not on the side of God, but rather deserts to the side of the world.

A brief summary of the principles laid down from vers. 15-24. "Let everyone abide in the domestic and social and religious status in which the divine call found him." To this general principle two limitations or corrective are applied (1) in verse 15 in matrimonial cases of separation, if necessary, "yet rather to be in peace and amity hath God called us." (2) in verse 21, in social cases of servitude, which is a state of life to be cheerfully tolerated and not to be minded forsooth, "still if one is able to become free, rather let him make his escape from slavery by such a door." Again this thin veil of wholesome exception comes to view a third time in the words "become not slaves of men": whatever that may mean: possibly it may merely adumbrate the truly Pauline idea that personal liberty, if the law of the land permit, should go hand in hand with moral freedom: since Christianity redeems the homo integer, body as well as soul and spirit. In the Roman Empire A.D. 57 a large portion of mankind was in a state of hopeless slavery, embroiled under despotic rule: so Schaff, 'History of Christian Church,' vol. i. p. 316, who quotes Gibbon, estimating the number of slaves at full one half of the 120 millions of the imperial population.
25 Now concerning virgins I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgment, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present distress, I say, that it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned. Nevertheless such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

These slaves were regarded as cattle: Schaff, ibidem. See Allard, Les Esclaves chrétiens. Manumission then must have been a boon even to a Christian even in civilized Corinth, and we cease to wonder at the corrective clause "if thou canst become free, rather do so."

25-40. It is obvious in these verses that St. Paul gives not an inspiration but an opinion, and an opinion to be estimated by the worth of his own Christian character. He seems to suggest measures which he considers good and salutary under the circumstances of an impending crisis. He does not insist upon the general moral superiority of celibacy to matrimony but states his own view that just now in a time of straitness celibacy is better than matrimony, that it is a state more conducive to well-being, inasmuch as it delivers from domestic distractions and facilitates a less divided and more devoted service to the Lord, whose advent is imminent. He writes as a casuist and therefore is obliged, in stating general rules, to modify their application in special instances: hence the frequent corrective διὰ = yet or however. It is clear enough that the precepts here laid down are not intended to be binding on all ages of the Church, but to have an elastic adaptation, more or less stringent, according to the pressure of the times. The Greek of these verses is of such a character that it is often difficult to elicit the exact idea that was in the Apostle’s mind: but that the general drift of the whole passage is as above stated, seems to admit of no doubt.

25. Render: — "Concerning virgins (not, as some, unmarried persons of both sexes, but maidens) injunction of the Lord have I none; an opinion however I offer, as one graced with mercy to be faithful." His own trustworthiness St. Paul here bases upon the mercy of Christ shown to him in his conversion and calling to the Apostolate. The infinitive to be faithful marks one of the lines on which the mercy moves, precisely as in our Litany, "to endue us with the grace of thy Holy Spirit to amend our lives," the special grace is indicated which gives an impulse to amendment of life.

26. Many interpretations of this perplexing verse. One thing seems likely, that the τούτο points forward to the ἀρτον, which defines. No commentator here apparently makes a distinction between ἐβαίνω and ἔμπροκες. This last word is difficult; it seems to mean sometimes "to be originally," "to be substantially or fundamentally," or, as in Demosthenes, "to be stored in readiness." An idea of propriety sometimes attaches to it: comp. ἐκπέφρες "property" or "substance." The word however asks for further investigation. Here the meaning may be "I consider then this to be an excellent principle, or good fundamental rule, in view of the straitness now imminent, namely that an excellent thing it is for a person to be thus." But what is the meaning of of to be ἀρτον? Some explain "to be as he is;" others "to be as I am;" others "to be as the virgins are" i.e. unmarried. None of these explanations are quite satisfactory. A better way perhaps would be, as τούτο points forward to the following ὡς, so to make ωρίως point forward to the following sentence or sentences and indicate their didactic contents (for construction comp. ix. 3), for the expressly preceptive clearly commences with verse 27 and continues long.

27. Direct precepts fingerprinted by the ὅτι of verse 26. "Bound to a wife art thou? Married? Seek not release. Loose (perfect denotes state of exemption simply) or free from a wife art thou? Bachelor or widower? Seek not a wife: if however thou do marry (the future in the protasis swiftly to the writer’s mind becomes the past in the apodosis), thou sinnedst not." The rendering of some "If also thou shalt have married" is to be avoided, as being incorrect and uncouth and not true to the aorist, which here denotes an action begun, continued and ended. For this use of ἔγιναι kai compare ἔγιναι καὶ διώκεται verse 21. It may also be rendered "if thou shouldst marry," never "if thou shalt marry:" quite different.

28. "And if the virgin should marry, she sinned not." Again St. Paul, as he writes of a marriage possible in the future, looks back upon it as a fact accomplished, when he describes its moral character. "Affliction, however, quæ the flesh shall such people have?"
29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short: it remaineth, that both they that have wives be as though they had none;

30 And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not;

31 And they that use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

i.e. in such marriages there is no sin: only in a crisis like this they are not ἀλογῶν τι, but adverse to well-being. Those who marry, circumstances allowing or demanding, do not sin, it is true: yet material afflictions, such as domestic sufferings, penury, nakedness, maltreatment, spoliation, banishment, they shall not escape in the squeeze and crush of the coming struggle. The flesh here denotes not the ethical but material relations of life: it is the dative of department or locative: comp. 1 Peter iii. 18, "put to death qua flesh, quickened qua spirit," i.e. the spirit of His humanity. 

"I however am for sparing you" these afflictions: the very aim of my offered opinion is to save you from the sharp disasters that will beset the married state in the pinching stress of the coming time: ἀπ' ὑμῶν from δυνάμης: Lat. necessitas (?)

29-31. "This however I affirm, brethren, the time (καιρὸς is to χρόνος what the aorist is to the imperfect; it denotes a time regarded as definite or bounded at both ends; whether long or short, circumstances determine; here it means "the time of acceptance" or "day of salvation") is strained in what is left (of it).

it remaineth. A.V. not right. The χρόνος λαμβάνει not "henceforth," as many, but ἄπαντα what the time of the present hour: it denotes the limits within which the straining takes place, the curtailment of the last reach of time. Strained = "contracted" or perhaps shortened or shrivelled, 2 Macc. vi. 13 and Eurip. Herc. Fur. 1417. The word is by Diod. Siculus applied to the dwindling or shrinking of the Nile waters, and in Acts App. v. 6, it seems to mean packed. Some take χρόνος λαμβάνει with ἂν: so if the rendering must be, not "it remains that," but "what remains is that they who have wives be as . . .," ἂν being purely definitively. If however we render, "The time is strained in what remains," ἂν surely cannot signify, as nearly all the expositors insist, in order that, denoting "the divine counsel in shortening the time." For is it probable that a state of sitting loose to worldly interests should be described as the aim or purpose of God in curtailing the season of the great tribulation? This might be a divine motive for the terrors and portents of the last time being lengthened, hardly for the last time itself being shortened. Again, is it probable that St. Paul should assign such a motive for the curtailment, when evidently he is merely giving an opinion or making an assertion of his own, not recording a divine inspiration? This error of "the only right view of ἂν, as it has been called, arises from a too restricted view of the uses of ἂν: in fact ἂν, like our that, has three uses: final (in order that he may go), definite (I advise that he go), subjectively ecstatic ("have they stumbled that they should fall").

This last use, denoting a contemplated moral result, surely is the right one here, as the judicial Bengal saw when he wrote ejusmodi ut, i.e. reason enough "that they who have wives should be as . . ." Render then, "The time is straitened in its residue, so that they who have wives should be as men having none, and they who weep as weeping not, and they who purchase as men not holding fast their gains, and they who use the world as men not overusing it, or using it to the full."

31. "For passing away is the fashion of this world," or it may be, "Pass away doth," the present tense of destiny. Most expositors make these words refer to that mighty revolution of things, herald of the Parousia, which St. Paul deemed to be imminent. The ordinary illustration "is being changed as a passing scene in a play" is not a true one in itself: besides it misleads, as tending to confuse scene with schema. Schema means fleeting fashion and belongs to accident or circumstance: it differs from form or lasting shape proper to the essence which it represents. For example, a tree wears its winter fashion when it is a skeleton of bare boughs, its summer fashion when it flourishes in full leaf: the form of the tree however remains the same, and the substance too. In this instance, the fashion of the tree between the two solstices slowly changes with the changing seasons: but it appears that the transfiguration of the cosmos will be one swift process: even as at the Parousia the analogous change of fashion in the bodies of the living saints will be quite instantaneous. See 1 Cor. xv. 52 and Phil. iii. 21 "Who shall transfigure or re-fashion the body of our humiliation unto (lasting) conformity with the body of His glory." Yet after all it is not
But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

There is difference also between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

And this I speak for your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

unlike that in this text, of this world is the genit. of identity: in that case “this wicked world,” as sullied with sin, is itself the passing fashion or perishing husk of a lasting form, is itself the turbid phenomenon of the serene noumenon see Hebr. xi. 3, which “in the morning of the resurrection,” like a dissolving dream, shall be superseded by the divine realities of a transfigured creation, “the new heavens and the new earth.” This archetypal order of the universe is often described as even now imminent and ready to be unveiled and waiting only for “the last time.”

34. Jerome’s arrangement, reproduced by some recent commentators, that καὶ μητροματι with a full stop after it be annexed to verse 33, is open to serious objections: (1) that the verb means parted rather than distracted and if it meant divided even, would be a feeble appendage; (2) it destroys the symmetry of the clauses; (3) the verb is actually wanted in verse 34 just as ἐγερθακε placed (by Jerome after the words καὶ την θηρίαν) is not wanted there: compare in verse 25 virgins without an epithet. Render therefore, “Parted also are (or is) the wife and virgin alike.” i. e. these two classes of women, as well as the two of men, the husband and the bachelor, are parted: their aims of life are different: these separate aims or interests are further specified in the next sentence. “That she may be holy,” rather “that she be holy,” for the word that seems to make special the more general “the things of the Lord” and to define their direction: this is all but cer-

36. But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry.

Nevertheless he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doeth well.

So then he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage doeth better.

The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord.
40. But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgment: and I think also that I have the Spirit of God.

— which you may not value much—"ye" (another corrective) "I think that I too, as well as Apollos and other teachers, have the Spirit of God." A truly modest way of saying, Under the guidance, if not of a special revelation, at least of general inspiration, I have been stating my own views.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on verses 9, 21.

9. Alford is hardly right in rendering "but if they are incontinent"; for, when two states or cases are contrasted, ov after ei is better than ou, as making vivid the contrast; besides the ou does not coalesce with the word following, except in phrases similar to en ou the a non-god or ou laos a no-people. The no or none should be always kept in translation. Even in Alford's cited line of the Ajax

1131, ou eis cannot coalesce into disallow: rather, "if, as the fact is, you do not allow"; here too ov is better than ou, as the ei, like et, eterus in a non-hypothesis, but a recognised fact. The instance in this ver. 9 of ov after ei stands on a different ground. It seems that in cases of contrasts and of facts ov after ei is admissible. In Medea 87, ou does not coalesce with storpeis at all, as meaning dislikes: for the true idea is "if, as is notorious, the father loves not:" ei ou = nisi, ei ou = ei non. In Thucyd. i. 131, curiously in one sentence we have these two uses of ov after ei (1) pointing to known fact, (2) to contrast.

21. This passage is a hotly contested field: the battle has raged and still rages around the ei kai, which after all is not the central position! Herrmann's famous distinction was made between two phrases that cannot be compared. For in ei kai the ouch has nothing to do with the ei, since kai always acts upon the word or words immediately following. So kai ei =even if or and if may be dismissed. In ei kai dionasa the ei means if, and kai affects dionasa . . . , but ouch! In what way? The context decides it to the reader, the intonation of the voice to the hearer. There are two ways of rendering: (1) "If you are (voice raised) able to become free;" (2) "if you are even able," nearly = "although you are;" (3) "if you are also able to become free," if you are also as well: where the office of kai is to set the power of becoming free side by side with the state of being a slave. For this use comp. Soph. Antigone 89. ei kai dionasa γ', ἄλλα δημηγήσων ἐρήμου.
On the above grounds it seems better to explain thus: "In slavery was thy called? Never mind—still if thou art also able to become free, rather make use of it than not." The above rendering, which (in spite of the four grammatical and three logical objections advanced by some and stated at length in Alford's commentary) Greek usage appears simply to demand, receives logical support from the next verse, rightly understood.

CHAPTER VIII.

1 To obtain from meats offered to idols. 8, 9 We must not abuse our Christian liberty, to the offence of our brethren: 11 but must bridle our knowledge with charity.

N ow as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he hence the otherwise strange omission just here of such logical links as yet or however (and the consequent efforts of commentators to establish a parenthesis somewhere): hence also the reappearance for the fifth time in this epistle of the significant and contemptuous term puffeth up. We may suppose therefore that starting at the echo of the ominous word "knowledge" the Apostle with mournful or indignant emphasis reiterates it in vehement asyndeton to his amanuensis. "We all possess knowledge" (complacently): "knowledge!" (insincerely) what is it worth? How does it work? "Knowledge puffeth up, whereas charity buildeth up."

If the above view is correct, it accounts for the otherwise stubborn asyndeton: it also renders unnecessary the assumption of a "logical parenthesis" as it is called, advocated and assigned within different limits by different expositors. The article before γνῶσις and ἀγάπη seems to contrast the intellectual habit of knowledge and the moral habit of charity. On the word charity see note at end of this Epistle.

The sense of v. 2 is: mere knowledge, true and sound in its substance though it be, yet unless it be transfigured by the light of Christian love, inevitably tends, human nature being what it is, to puff up its possessor, to distend him with self-arrogance, to blow him into a conspicuous bubble full of moral emptiness and of intellectual vanity. Charity, on the other hand, or regard for the true welfare of others, is that industrious benevolence which, like a conscientious mason, in the building of God's house helps to set solid and to keep steadfast living stone upon living stone. For in the specific instance of idol-meats the righteous and righthearted man, abstaining from questionable food on proper occasions, actually edifies by setting an example that may snatch from perdition many a brother for whom Christ died.

As αἰσθήσεως and γνῶσις occur often in this Epistle, it may not be out of place here to distinguish between the two verbs. For this
knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,) 6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we 'in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

5. Reasons for the above statement. Render—"For even if indeed there are so-called gods whether in heaven or upon earth, whether in the upper or the lower region of the aforesaid cosmos (see Gen. ii. 1), just as there are gods plenty! and lords plenty! nevertheless to us one God the Father." Polytheism is a question quite irrelevant to our position as Christians. See Note at the end of the chapter.

6. The reasoning here runs upon several antitheses. Plainly contrasted with each other are (1) one God and many gods (2) one Lord and many lords; and as plainly related mutually to each other are (1) one God and all things (2) one Lord and all things. Thus there is a double contrast and a double correlation: and the writer clearly intends that the double correlation between the one and the all should make vivid and conspicuous the double contrast between the one and the many. So far then the reasoning will be, If to the heathen are many gods, nevertheless to us Christians one God, the originative cause of all things: again, if to the heathen are many lords, yet to us one Lord, the mediatorial cause of all things. The oneness excludes the manyness, and the allness is as the oneness. This last idea is truly Pauline: out of many texts one very similar to this is in 1 Tim. ii. 5 "One God, one mediator too between God and men, Man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a ransom for all." Here the universality of redemption is as the unity of God and the unity of the mediator. Precisely by the same mode of reasoning in the text One God, of whom is the All, the universality of creation is as the unity of the Creator, and in the text One Lord, through whom is the All, the universality of the lordship is as the unity of the Lord. But, it may be asked, why is the double correlation between the oneness and the allness translated here? As stated above, in order to make conspicuous the nothingness of the many gods and many lords as compared with the one God and one Lord. Thus; if there be one God, the primal creator of the

distinction see an Additional Note at the end of the chapter.

2. If anyone imagines that he knows this or that, if he fancies that he is a know-something, he never yet came to know anything as he ought: as, to wit in the way of Christian charity. Vanity, not charity, moved him to acquire what he calls his knowledge. But if anyone I do not say imagines that he knows, I do not say really knows this or that, but if anyone loves and loves God, what then? In that case He (God) is known by him; and such a man possesses the highest and the true knowledge, that which alone can regulate and give a right determination to all other and inferior forms of knowledge whatsoever, whether discernment in adiaphora as for instance idol-meats or in anything else.

Probably the first clause of ver. 3 should be read with a slight pause after the word loueth thus: "But if anyone loueth—God. Compare ch. vi. 20 "ye were bought—with a price."

The above interpretation differs from the usual and apparently universal explanation of this text in making be (οὗτος) refer to God. For the ordinary view and for some reasons against it see Additional Note at the end of the chapter.

4. To revert to the eating of idol-meats—the term eating makes the general proposition of ver. 1 more definite—"we are aware that nothing in the world is an idol," strictly so called or what an idol is generally supposed to be, a symbol of a superhuman being: we are aware that nothing in the sphere of God’s created cosmos is a visible representative of such or such a divine archetype, "and that no being is God except one (Being)."

The form of the Greek seems to favour the latter half at least of the above translation, especially as the phrase there is no God is in the LXX Deut. xxxii. 39, Psalm. xiv. 1, expressed by one ηεις Θεός; whereas in our verse the Greek is οὐδεὶς Θεός εἰ μὴ εἰς, which can hardly mean there is not one God except one. Compare also Mark and John οὐδεὶς διάθεσιν εἰ μὴ Θεός, "no one is good except God." The usual rendering of Chrysostom and of many others is, "an idol is a nothing-
7 Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour eat it as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conscience being weak is defiled.

Universe, what then? This fact undefies all the gods many, for so far from being "gods by nature" or having a share in creation, they must have been themselves created, as parts of the universe, and therefore not meet objects of worship. Again, if there be one Lord, the acting creator and ruling governor of the Universe, which He created, what then? This fact dethrones from a share in the supreme dominion all the lords many, and reduces them to subordinate and accountable powers.

It may be observed that ὅτι καὶ αὐτὰ here means the universe absolutely, "all the cosmical systems of actual creation." It often means the same as πάντα ὁσιόμως or (as in Heb. i. 2) αἱ αἰῶνες i.e. "the infinite multitude of worlds which have their existence in unlimited periods or successions of time;" in other words, the concrete contents of the abstract time-reaches of unknown duration. The above clauses in inverted commas are from Delitzsch in loco, Heb. i., who also adds (pertinently to our text) "Creator of this universe of worlds is God: Mediator of that creation is the Son."

We unto Him (God), and we through Him (Christ). Besides the two contrasts between the one and the many, and besides the two correlations between the one and the all, we now come to another antithesis between two creations, the physical and the spiritual. This distinction stands out clear: "one God the creator of the cosmos, and we unto Him," i.e. He is the centre unto which we, the new creature, or new creation of the redeemed church, all converge.

Again, "Our Lord Jesus Christ and we through Him": i.e. He is the way and the sole medium by which we reach the goal of God. In fact, the Father is here represented as the aquifer of natural creation and the final cause of the spiritual; the Son as the mediator, and agent in both. Compare Hebr. x. 7: "Lo! I come to do thy will, O God," Unquestionably to the Father, as Father, is here assigned a priority both in Deity and in the fact or creative power that issues from Deity; but this is a priority of order, not a superiority in degree; for there can be no degrees either in the substance or in the power of godhead. He who is here called one God, is so called as being Fons Deiatis to the eternally begotten Son; and St. Paul's statement, "there is one God the Father," no more excludes Jesus Christ from being God, than his other statement, "there is one Lord Jesus Christ," excludes the Father from being Lord; and if it be blasphemy to exclude the Father from being Lord, it is no less blasphemy to exclude Jesus Christ from being God. Hence there is nothing at all in this passage that is at variance with the Athanasian Creed, "The Father is God, the Son God; the Father is Lord, the Son Lord; and yet One Lord and one God." The distinction of divine operations in the material and in the spiritual creation is as the distinction of the divine PERSONALITIES.

7. The Apostle in ver. 1 has said in an easy tone of general acquiescence half-ironical, "We are aware that (as you remind me in your letter) we all possess knowledge." He now states seriously and more incisively his own opinion as to the actual universality of this knowledge or enlightenment in moral truths. "Nevertheless not in all, but in some only is knowledge;" to wit, there is among you a class of converts, men half-enlightened, who cannot altogether shake off a lingering suspicion that the soul of man, when they so lately worshipped, may after all not be nonentities, but existences, and that idol-meats therefore ought not to be eaten by a Christian monotheist. "Not in all is such unhesitating discernment, but some with their scruple of conscience about the idol to this hour do eat (an idol-meat) as offered to an idol:" i.e. believing, or at any rate suspecting, that the image, to which the victim was offered, represents some superhuman being. Hardly correct is the rendering of many "with a consciousness of the idol;" rather "with the scruple of conscience which they feel about the idol," with a touch or twinge of conscience concerning the image, whether after all there may not be a corresponding god behind it. About the idol, objective genitive of simple relation. Besides, εἰδέειν εἰδοθον = "to know about an idol;" see note on ἡμα, ver. 2. This scruple or misgiving is an expression or effect of the conscience itself, and is called by the name of its originating faculty; a use of words common enough, in which an effect is called by the name of a cause; just as we say "to make a conscience of it," or even to "make a face:" compare στομα = (1) a mouth (2) mouth's utterance or speech. In the next clause their conscience denotes the faculty itself. A few remarks upon the meaning of this important word, several times occurring in these kopp, may be in place just here.

Conscience is a man's inward knowledge of his relation to God. It is an inborn faculty,
8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither, if we eat, 'are we the better; neither, if we eat not, 'are we the worse.

9 But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols?

11 And through thy knowledge

Neither if we eat not, do we find ourselves inferior (middle voice), nor if we eat we superior. If we eat not... this probably to encourage the weaker brethren, lest from a feeling of false shame or from a fear of being thought narrowminded or of incurring some loss, they might be led to act against their own conscience by the example of men endowed with more knowledge than charity. Nor if we eat, gain we an advantage: this probably to check the loud confidence of the self-styled Paulines, men who had formed right conceptions indeed of Pauline principles, but erred in the application; men who boasted of a large intelligence, yet abused their Christian privileges; their motto was all things are lawful, their watchwords knowledge and freedom. See Neander, History of Christianity, vol. ii. p. 244. Members of this party, very likely, expected from the Apostle in his letter of reply an opinion favourable to the unrestricted use of all meats in all circumstances, under the impression that by their own indiscriminate eating they were doing God service and themselves a benefit in thus exhibiting both their contempt of idols and an undivided allegiance to the one Lord. St. Paul's reply is a rebuke to their conceit: "esculents are things irrelevant to God's judgment; at His bar they will not weigh a grain of sand in either scale against us or in our favour; if we eat, we gain no superiority." The better reading of one first-rate MS. is περιπατευομασα.

9. Sense is, Let your motto be forbearance not privilege, and your watchword cbarity not knowledge. Never flaunt your knowledge, seldom use your privilege. Seest thou thy brother reclining at the same feast with thee? In his presence abstain from questionable food; for to him, a dullard in moral truths, thou art a knowsomething, a lumina,y in the church; beware lest he, like a moth dabbed by a candle, circle round thy perilous example and perish in its light.

10. "For if any (dullard) should see thee, who hast knowledge, in an idol temple reclining at table, will not his conscience, he being weak, be edified unto the eating of idol-meats? and so like to perish is the weakling by thy
shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died?

12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.

**knowledge, be a brother—for whom Christ died!**

By = within the circle and attraction of thy knowledge. Be edited, with a touch of irony; be finely built up indeed! "Emboldened" A. V. will hardly do: "fortified" would perhaps be better; but even that is not correct, as clearly a pointed allusion half-sarcastic is made to ver. 2 charity edited.

Idol-temple; in which feasts often followed the sacrifice: see Horace, "Voveram divos apis et album Libero caprum." Odes iii. 8.

13. "In fact, when in this way ye sin against the brethren and smite their conscience, it is against Christ ye sin." For the loving and lasting sympathy of the Divine Head with all His members, even with the meanest and least of His brethren, see Matt. xxv.

13 Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

**ADDITIONAL NOTES on verses 1, 2, 5.**

1. οἶδα = I know about one, I know by seeing or by hearsay, by observation from externals: hence often it means, I am aware of this or that fact, οἶδ᾽ ὅτι. For instance, I am sure that there is such a place as Stamboul, I am aware of it by hearsay: but not having been there, I have no personal knowledge of the city; οἶδ᾽ ἐν τῷ πόλει. ἔγνωκα ὅσ᾽ ὅλον θυμοῦ, while it includes οἶδα, contains also much more: piercing through circumstantial knowledge it reaches to discernment of the inner nature, of character, of moral qualities, habits, temper, affections. It signifies appreciative or experimental acquaintance, whether good or bad, such as exists between intimate friends or inveterate foes. Instances are Matt. viii. 23 "I never knew you," ἐγνώκα: I never recognised in you any likeness or affinity to myself. Contrast this with the demon’s exclamation in Luke iv. 34 "I know thee wūbō thou art, the Holy One of God;" ὄντος εἰς τίς ἐλ. Again Luke xxiv. 35 "He was made known to them in the breaking of bread," and John x. 14 "I know my sheep, and am known of mine." the recognition of affinity and of mutual affection. One more instance denoting interior familiarity is St. Paul’s famous description of our Lord as τῷ υἱῷ γενόμενο διαφθορά, i. e. one "who never by His own personal experience came to know sin in its evil nature," one "who himself ever environed by the subtle moral atmosphere of sin, never admitted a breath of it (so to speak) into His moral lungs." Hence in this second verse γνώσει means "discernment of truths in morals:" just as εἰσηγήθη strictly means a knowledge of truths in science, of such truths as are ascertained by demonstrative reasonings from axiomatic principles.

2. In the new explanation ὁδὸς is made to refer to τῶν Θεῶν. If however, as all commentators seem to think, the structure of the Greek demands that the ὁδὸς be referred to εἰς τις, then in accordance with their explanation we must, in order to make the argument complete, supply a missing link by appending a clause thus: "If anyone loveth God, He is known of Him (God)," and therefore knows Him by whom He is known; in other words the Apostle states the logically less important truth, leaving its correlative truth to be inferred. This latter view, being apparently universal, may be correct: yet against it must be urged that the emphatic ὁδὸς, as pointing to εἰς τις, a construction common enough, is nevertheless simply not needed here, and that instead of the enclitic ὁδὸ we should certainly have expected the emphatic τοίρον, and perhaps a different order of the words. Bengel goes so far as to translate ὁδὸν ὁδὸν ab ipso! It is also better, if possible, not to resort to the expedient of a missing link, and that especially when it is a significant one.
As regards ἀλλοις being referred to God compare, Acts x. 36 where it is referred to Jesus Christ.

5. If the above view be correct, place a comma after ὅσπερ εἰρήν and then gods plenty and lords plenty is an after-thought added with a touch of sarcasm, and each εἰρήν will denote a subjective existence in the heathen mind.

Another view held by many, for the Greek is ambiguous, is to make each εἰρήν point to an objective existence, the sense being, "For even if indeed there exist (I do not say that they do exist), I leave that an open question) so-called gods, such as in heaven Zeus, Pallas, Apollo, or upon earth deified men or deified powers of nature, even if such gods exist just as in the sense that there exist gods many and lords many (angels and possibly demons), still to us Christians one God the Father."

The reasoning of ὅσπερ εἰρήν and ὅσπερ εἰρήν is one of analogy, namely, if on the ground that gods many and lords many do actually exist it be granted that the so-called gods of the heathen also actually exist, nevertheless the great truth for all believers remains unshaken that there is one God the Father and one Lord Jesus Christ. St. Paul's alleged existence of many gods and many lords is founded upon Deut. x. 17 "The Lord your God, he is God of the gods and Lord of the lords." See also Psalm. cxxxvi. 7, 8, 2 and 3.

Of these two interpretations the first is on several grounds preferable, more especially as the double πολλοὶ has a ring of impatient sarcasm in it, twice accentuating the Apostle's contempt of polytheism. The same vehemence of irony will account for the absence of λεγόμενοι before the second δεός, if indeed its presence is desirable.

CHAPTER IX.

1. He sheweth his liberty, 7 and that the minister ought to live by the gospel: 15 yet that himself hath of his own accord abstained, 18 to be either chargeable unto them, 22 or offensive unto any, in matters indifferent.

24. Our life is like unto a race.

AM I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord?

2. If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you:

CHAP. IX. St. Paul proves at some length his Apostolic claim to ecclesiastic maintenance (1-15) but immediately asserts that he never did and never will exercise this right. Why not? Because (vers. 15-21) he finds an ample recompense for gratuitous gospel-work in an enlarged access to all sorts and conditions of men, and in a correspondingly enlarged hope of attaining to the great Messianic salvation at the Parousia.

N.B. Some serious difficulties in this chapter will be better met, if attention be first drawn to certain words and phrases. In vers. 9, 10, 19 γάρ is used elliptically in the sense of uby surfe, and in each instance after an interrogative sentence. Again Greek words containing ἐκαλός occur nine times, making prominent the great mission and business of St. Paul—to set forth the gospel continually. Conspicuous in the argument is the oft-recurring term ἔκκοινία, which must be briefly discussed. This word is stated in Plat. Dein. 415 c. to mean ἐστίντινω κόμων, a grant or permission of law. Compare with this definition Acts xxvi. 12, where the two words come together, "with authority and commission from the chief priests." This view tallies with the word's etymology: for ἱερός = "it is permitted from without," "it is lawful," just as ἵναιτε μοι = "it is in my power," "within my reach." One instance of this use Matt. xxvii. 18 "There was given me all power in heaven and earth," i.e. a grant of full power ab extra from the Father. This word occurs in N. T. in frequent connection with δικαγορία, denoting a conferred license or authority or free permission. Hence it often signifies "a right of power over this or that bestowed from without," whether by God or by law or by consent of the community: perhaps privilege may meet its requirements. Liberty of action, a rendering now in vogue, fails to hit the true idea, as ἐκκοινία or being is not to without but from without. In this chapter privilege or prerogative or license seems to suit all the places.

1. Am I not free? In civil or social sense. Am I not an apostle? In the time of our Lord apostles were accredited envoys or delegates, armed with full powers to execute commissions abroad, and despatched from their own seat of government into foreign countries. Hence our Lord applying the ready-made title to the chosen twelve, says, "As thou didst send me into the world, even so I send them into the world." It seems then that an apostle may be regarded as "an ambassador of peace despatched into the world by Christ the King, with full authority to preach the Gospel and to found churches." How truly foreign, how hostile, both the divine Apostle...
for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them that do examine me is this,

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

5 Have we not power to lead of the Father and the human apostles of Christ found the cosmos, see ch. iv. 9–14.

have I not seen Jesus?] Full sense, 'How can any of you Corinthians call in question my claim to the apostolate, when mine eyes have seen the risen Jesus? Are the other apostles eyewitnesses to the fact of the resurrection? So am I.' Here St. Paul might have added 'I indeed more than they: for they believed Him after His resurrection and before His glorification: I saw Him after both: my claims are at least equal to theirs.'

St. Paul is here asserting his own official claims against his Judaizing assailants, and it should be noted that in this indication the visible and audible manifestation (Acts xxii. 6–11) is a much more important element than the ecstatic revelations (Acts xx. 17 and xviii. 9), because "a mere ecstatic vision," writes Neander, "could not have legitimated St. Paul's apostleship." In fact he would have been his own witness in that case, whereas there were other witnesses to his interview with the Lord near Damascus, who themselves beheld the light of the glory.

2. If to others—emissaries from Palestine or Judaizers I am not an Apostle—Paul is no Apostle of ours! say they—still to you at least I am.

N.B. The γε does not strengthen ἀλλά, as so many say, for ἀλλά is not an intensifiable word: the particle throws forward a strong light upon ὅτι. Compare καρι γε νοῦσεν. Further proof of the assertion "I am an Apostle." For my seal of the apostleship you are. Emphasis on you. In the Lord, the in is not easy to explain. Comparing other parallels, it seems to denote an inner circle, with Christ for its radiating centre, of spiritual light environed all round by an unlimited dark margin of profane cosmos. Here the Corinthian church itself is represented as the genuine seal of a genuine Apostle, a seal legible in the light of the Lord. In other words, not the miracles wrought by St. Paul (as Chrysostom), but his living converts to the faith are the monument to which he points: the fact of the church is the seal of his call.

3. "My reply to those who examine me is this," the existence of a Christian community. If me and my title the Judaizers are sifting by preliminary scrutiny in hopes of finding a true bill against me, my reply is, The fact of the Church is the warrant of my title. The terms reply and examine are forensic; see on anacritus ch. iv. 3, 4, 5.

4, 5. Having verified his own divine call to the Apostolate, St. Paul now substantiates his claims to certain rights or privileges of the Apostolate. The chief of these privileges was an Apostle's right of maintenance at the charges of the Church, both for himself and, if needs be, for a wife traveling with him. "Have we not privilege to eat and to drink?" (at the cost of the Church is implied in the word privilege). We have. "Have we not privilege to take about with us a Christian woman for wife?" Don't say (μή) we have not: for we have. The word γυνὴ means here just what it means elsewhere. How Suicer and others make it σερβίους matronas is not easy to see. As also the rest of the Apostles implies that, if not all, yet most of the Apostles were married men. St. Paul was not married.

6. Or is it only I and Barnabas that have not privilege to abstain from working for our daily bread?] In full: "or, if there is allowed to other Apostles and to Cephas a maintenance for themselves and wives, do you make an exception against myself and Barnabas and deny to us the privilege, which is accorded to Peter, of exemption from manual labour?" We may fairly infer from the word only that Barnabas and Paul both took the same view of self-maintenance and acted upon that high principle, whereas the rest of the Apostolic teachers claimed means of support from the Church: so Meyer. St. Paul pried the trade of tentmaking: how Barnabas wrought is not recorded. Barnabas, colleague of Paul in first missionary journey, and himself an Apostle. Both he and Saul were together consecrated and ordained Apostles at Antioch with fasting and praying and laying on of hands A.D. 46.

7. Proof of this Apostolic right or licence of exemption from self-maintenance drawn from three analogies in common life. Consider the case of the soldier, of the vine-dresser, of the shepheard.

"Who serveth in the army at his own charges ever? Who planteth a vineyard . . . who tendeth a flock!"
vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?
8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?
9 For it is written in the law of Moses, "Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?
10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt,

this is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope; and that he that thresheth in hope should be partaker of his hope.
11 If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?
12 If others be partakers of this power over you, are not we rather? Nevertheless we have not used this power; but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

8, 9, 10. Further proof, and that from Scripture, of this acknowledged principle of a proper privilege. Render, Is it by man's rule—from the low level of human judgment—that I so speak, or doth the law too not say so? Why surely (κερας) in the law of Moses it is written. Thou shalt not muzzle the ox while he treadeth out the corn. Is it of oxen that God is thinking (in this statute), or is it for our sakes entirely that he saith it? Why of course (κερας) with an eye to us (the clause was written, to show that he who ploweth ought to plow in hope and he that thresheth to thresh in hope of having a share (in the fruit of labour).

In ver. 9 "Is it of oxen that God is thinking here?" This clause does not of course question God's providential care for animals, but only asserts that the passage cited has a higher sense.

Against certain rationalistic interpretations of these verses it may be remarked that in ver. 10 that (οτι) is not because in argumentative sense, as some, but in demonstrative sense = to show that; or in explicative sense = in respect that, the clause itself containing a specific interpretation of the general statement for our sakes. The argument of the whole passage is simple enough: the statute "I hou shalt not muzzle the ox..." was written for the benefit of us Christian teachers to show that we spiritual husbandmen in the field of God (ch. iii. 9) ought to plough in hope, and we spiritual threshers (corresponding to the corn-trampling oxen) ought to work in hope of having a share in the products of our spiritual labour. To this effect both Chrysostom and Theophylact: and that this is the right view appears on the very face of the diction, which is strictly metaphorical. Nevertheless, strange to say, the majority of interpreters make us = "mankind in general," and the plougher and the thresher to mean "labourers in agriculture." This view cannot be right (1) because us in this Epistle always points to Apostles or teachers or Christians; (2) because—what then becomes of a metaphor's propriety? The very use and aim of a metaphor is to elucidate certain points of resemblance in two things essentially different, often in things physical and things ethical: it reasons from the seen to the unseen, from the lower level to the higher. It is manifest that in this quotation from the O. T. St. Paul intends that the mind of the reader should glance quickly from the low plane of oxen trampling corn to the high plane—not of men threshing corn but—of spiritual cultivators tilling God's field. For the strict point of the analogy is this; as physical labour, so moral labour, has a right to hope for a share in the fruit of labour. A corn-treading ox and a plough-driving man are not on two levels, but on one level, and that material. See Cic. de Oratore, lib. iii. on translato or metaphor.

11. Special application of the general argument. The double contrast and juxtaposition of we and you should be noted. Render "If we to you did sow spiritual (blessings), a mighty thing is it if we of you should reap material (goods)?" More correctly "your material goods:" such goods as meat, drink, clothing. Did sow, when we planted the church in Corinth.

"If we should reap." N.B. On logical grounds the subjunctive here is preferable to the future indicative, because et with the subjunctive lays stress on the alternative of reaping: compare Sophocles: ει σου στερηθω = "if I should be bereaved of thee." Whereas ει with future tense not merely lays stress on the alternative of reaping, but makes that alternative likely or certain to eventuate: an idea hardly applicable here, as the Apostle we know emphatically refuses to exercise his privilege.

12. Render:—If others in the privilege or allowance that concerns you (or comes from you) have a share, have not we more? i.e. much rather. Em-
13 'Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things
live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar?
14 Even so hath the Lord or-
dained that they which preach the
gospel should live of the gospel.
15 But I have used none of these things: neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for it were better for me to die,
than that any man should make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel!

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? Verily that, when I preach the gospel,
I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

20 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law;

21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law.

saved the blessings of the gospel in the great day.

The above explanation of ver. 17 seems more than any other to preserve the logical continuity: space forbids to state other views.

N.B. In vv. 15, 16 καύχημα = gloriatio, not materies glorianti; see ch. v. 6, and a note there. In ver. 18 render "that I should," or more exactly "that I shali" (byvo). It is the iva of contemplated result, for the recompense is a contemplated cause (i.e. a full Messianic salvation) of a contemplated effect i.e. refusal of the privilege. Equally common in English is this subjectively ecstatic use of that: exactly parallel (for a negative is cousin to an interrogative) is 1 Thess. v. 4, "You are not in darkness that the day should overtake you as thieves."

In sum, this recompense, stated in full from ver. 19 to ver. 23, is a rising tier upon tier of spiritual gain to St. Paul (exodilos occurs four times) culminating in a possible reward at the Parousia. It is a continual excelsior, like the successive achievements of an Alpine climber, winning eminence after eminence, and, to carry out the image, to St. Paul pressing forward and gaining one set of souls after another, the distant summit of his long labour is the dim hope of a joint attainment with his many saved (the more saved the better hope) to the Gospel promises at the first "resurrection from the dead." For this doctrinal view of his and for this modest estimate of himself compare what he says elsewhere, Phil. iii. 11, and this chapter ad fin.

19. First instalment of the recompense. Free here = independent as to means of subsistence. For being free from all, unto all I made myself a slave (when I resolved to preach gratuitously) in order that I might gain the more. Antithesis between all and more. Oxyymoron also in free and slave: the all-sided freedom gave full scope to an all-sided service in the cause of the gospel. This word slave should not be pressed beyond the oxyymoron. But what does the more mean? This is important. Not "the greatest number" as Alford and others; the comparative is strictly comparative: rather a greater number thence, as the article here points backward to all, the correlative of more, and denotes the contemplated more souls convertible under gratuitous preaching attracting all, than under paid preaching attracting some but repelling others. Just as in examinations, the higher the fixed maximum of marks, the higher is the numerical total that may be achieved: an examinee, examiners being equal, is more likely to obtain 4000 out of 12,000 than out of 1000. Or if the four quadrants of a circle may represent all the classes of men accessible to the all-facing Apostle, he may reckon on gaining more converts in number out of all the four than out of one or two quadrants only. The rendering of the A.V. is right, for it is the more of comparison between a lesser number gained out of some classes and a greater number gained out of all.

20. And I behaved to the Jews as a Jew, that Jews I might gain.

E.g. Paul, in compliance with Jewish customs, 6e loutodios, circumcised Timothy at Lystra; Acts xvi. 1.

To them that are under the law, not Judaic Christians (as Grotius) but Jews (as Theophylact), regarded from their religious position, into which St. Paul condescended to enter in matters indifferent such as observance of vows or ceremonial cleansings: see Acts xxi. 26. Whereas I was not myself under Law: see Gal. ii. 19, and a clear and useful note by Bp. Lightfoot on τούτος. See likewise 'Intro. to Romans,' p. 41-48 in this volume. Not being, as I knew that I was not: μη denotes consciousness.

21. Another instance of condescending, and that to the outside Heathen, see Acts xvii.; St. Paul at Athens discoursed to Greeks in Greek fashion, quoting from Greek poets. To God's outlaws (I behaved as an outlaw, not being, as I well knew, an outlaw of God, but an outlaw of Christ. If here the word outlaw, or "one put out of the law's protection," be thought too positive a term for Heathen, who simply lay outside the pale of the Mosaic Law, in its place may be suggested lacklaw, formed like lackland, lackbrain, lackwits, lacklustre. Lacklaw and lowless are terms both true to the Greek, rather more so than outlaw: but lowless is now too much identified with insubordinate or impious.
22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

Inlaw (compare an inland town) is used by Somner and by Bacon as a verb = “to restore to the law’s protection.” Full sense—“whereas I was not without law in relation to God, but under law in relation to Christ,” to wit (as Chrysostom) “under the law of the Spirit and of Grace.” Bengal here observes, with equal truth and pith, “He who is an outlaw to God, is likewise an outlaw to Christ; and he who is an inlaw to Christ, is also an inlaw to God.” What is the law of Christ? See Gal. vi. 2, lex Christi lex est caritatis.

23. I behaved to weaklings (in the faith or in discernment of moral truths) as a weakling. A notable instance of this accommodation we had in ch. 8, abstention from questionable meats. To them all I have become all things (all-sided to all classes) that by all methods I may save some. He now for gain substitutes save, or bring to salvation. Why so? Because the Apostle’s mind has run over the long course of winning all souls, and is approaching the final goal of the Messianic salvation, the culmination of the recompense.

24. Here the particle of correction or of transition yet or now brings to view the keystone suspended over the uncompleted arch; it reveals the possible crown of gratuitous labour dimly discerned through a long perspective of spiritual winnings, the last bright link of the manifold recompense, that induced Paul (see the iva of ver. 18) to renounce his privilege and to remain a tentmaker. Render. Now or yet all that I do, I do for the Gospel’s sake. Then comes a further definition; in order that I may be a fellow-communicant (communis?) therein, to wit, in the immortal contents of the divine message. Most admirable is this modesty and self mistrust in an Apostle, who with indomitable zeal wrought harder than all others; the aim and apex of his long climbing toil is to share, if it may be so, in the grand redemption that is to be unveiled at the Parousia!

25. And this I do for the Gospel’s sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24. Know ye not that they which run in a racecourse run all, but one taketh the prize? So run that ye overtake.

Overtake (used absolutely) what? The other runners? Probably: the Greek amply sanctions this; numerous instances in the LXX, where this verb is often adjoined to the verb pursue and applied to persons chased and caught. If this view be right, the sing! winner here is a representative number, denoting the numerical unit of the first company of the redeemed, men of all times who in their course of probation, putting forth their full spiritual powers, overtake the multitude of moral laggards and in the end take the Messianic prize held out by the divine human umpire. In this grand race many run, few win; and the comparative few who do win have in strong faith trained long and wrought much; he who overtakes the mass, alone takes the prize. The text in paraphrase means, “As in a batch of competitors in a foot-race all indeed run, yet one only wins, the rest lose; but he who wins runs all the way with all his might so as to catch up and outstrip the rest, in like manner, with such speed (oNnos) run ye, O Corinthians, as to overtake.

It may be, however, that St. Paul after overtake mentally supplied the prize. So all the commentators; in that case satisfiers may still be rendered overtake, the image now being that of men running towards the prize, as towards a mark not yet reached (Philipp. iii. 14), or even chasing it as a quarry with the aim of overtaking. Or, “that ye surely take” or secure, may perhaps suit this view; catch is feeble, and grasp is not true to the word’s idea; besides, in translation it is better to preserve the Pauline paronomasia or play upon words; of which we have a parallel instance in a parallel passage (Philipp. iii. 12): “Not that I have already taken or am already finished in my course, but I pursue if I may but overtake, seeing that I was also overtaken by Christ,” i.e. in the miraculous surprise near Damascus.

According to this second view, the underlying doctrine, with a slight variation, will be this: the single winner in the race prefigures the one Church triumphant, the few chosen out of the many called, the first fruits of His resurrection who first rose from the dead, the alpha of the Alpha, the foremost conquering division or company (klyma, ch. xv. 3) of veteran saints in the salvable army of man-
run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain.

25 And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible.

kind, the peculiar people zealous of good works. To be enrolled in this praezogativa centuria or "assembly of the first-born" is the culmination of the recompense, to which St. Paul by dint of unpaid labour and by stress of gospel-work humbly aspirations, leading the way himself and pointing it to others. He strives to overcome self that he may overtake the crown: that he may secure the imperishable crown of the Messianic salvation together with the regal office and the sainthood assessorship with the divine king and the government of the nations and the subjugation of the Powers. "He that overcometh, to him I will give to sit with me . . . ." Rev. iii. 21.

Critical notes on ver. 24. Take it better than "receive," A. V.: one may take without receiving; besides, the simple act of taking by him who runs is the true idea; and the giver of the pinewreath only comes to view in the next word βασιλεὺς = umpire's award. Took the prize is a familiar English phrase. "So run that ye may obtain" can hardly be right: for that here denotes not the aim or end of running, but the contemplated result of the manner and style of running; the so makes all the difference; comp. 1 Thess. v. 5. "Ye are not in darkness that ye should overtake you as thieves:" subjectively ecstatic use of that. N. B. Observe here that ἵνα knows nothing of a mixed use, such as "combination of purport and purpose:" language is simple and one use at a time is enough for ἵνα. We do not speak in resultatives.

25 But training comes before racing or boxing; self-restraint, spare diet, no wine for ten months. Even so in all holy competition moral discipline prepares for moral energy in the spiritual encounter. Render, Every one, who will contend for the prize in all things practises self-control. They of course, that they may take—a pine-wreath—gathered from a neighbouring pine-grove. The πρόδρομος here does not associate with φόβος; see note on verses 4 and 7, ch. vi.

26. I then—who am an exemplar—do so run not as one who runs with unsteady aim—like some of you with a roving sidelong glance at an idol's temple (Chrysostom)—so do I practice boxing as no air-striker, but—the very reverse of hitting wide of the mark—I bruise black and blue—whom? my antagonist?—Yes. What antagonist?—my body, and lead it a slave in bonds (so far in vehement incisive tones, now in modified or mournful accents), lest so be after playing herald to others, I myself may turn out unapproved.

Ψωποδείκτης = "to mark with livid lines under the eyes, to eye-blacken." This agonistic allegory should not be pressed too close: it is rather a cartoon of broad touches than a painting finished in detail. St. Paul appears in three dissolving views runner, boxer, herald: one duty of the herald was to proclaim the laws of the contest; the office of St. Paul was to preach the law of the Gospel; it is curious that in Herod. i. 21, herald and apostle are nearly synonymous.

unapproved.] The figure is, lest, when asssayed in the testing fire of Messiah's advent, I be found of inferior moral metal, rather spurious than genuine, and so unqualified for admission into the first instalment of men re-deemed, even the glorified Church.

CHAPTER X.

1. The sacraments of the Jews 6 are types of our's, 7 and their punishments, 11 examples for us. 14 We must fly from idolatry. 21 We must not make the Lord's table the table of devils: 24, and in things indifferent we must have regard of our brethren.

CHAP. X. The Apostle returns from the long digression of Ch. IX. to the subject of idol-service. Call to mind, O Corinthians, what befall our fathers in the wilderness. They

MOREOVER, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea;

2. And were all baptized unto all came out of Egypt, and "there was not one stumbler among their tribes," Ps. cv. 37. They all underwent baptism unto Moses, and all ate the same food spiritual and drank.
Moses in the cloud and in the sea;

the same drink spiritual. Yet not all responded to God’s purpose of grace: some of them, indeed the greater part, fell by evil lust, by idolatry, by fornication, by sore tempting of the Lord, by murmurings against Jehovah and against their own theocratic leaders. Thus fell they: beware, O Corinthians, of a similar fall; you, like them, are lured back by the Egyptian savours of Corinthian license, are enticed by a surrounding polytheism. But still ye are not tempted beyond what ye are able to bear; and God, who for your probation assigns the temptation, will with the same appoint the way of escape. From all idol-service flee away: take warning and take courage: what happened to the wandering Hebrews, whether mercies or judgments, were patterns and outlines of what shall under like circumstances of steadfastness or of declension happen to yourselves. The Church of Christ has federal safeguards against relapses just as the congregation of Israel had: a common bond of union with Christ, and with each other, we all possess in the ‘one bread which we break’ and in the cup of the blessing; even as our forefathers in the desert were associated together in one ‘meat spiritual’ and in one ‘drink spiritual.’ Their ‘angel’s food’ was the same to them all, and our ‘bread from heaven’ is one to us all. And as that manna and that water, gifts common alike to all the sons of Israel, were intended to keep God’s congregation one and undivided, so the one bread and the one cup are designed to be the means of keeping us all one body by union with the humanity of Christ. This holy fellowship with Christ and with one another is in its very nature indivisible; it is therefore utterly exclusive of a divided worship; it recoils from all dalliance with idols. Ye can no more be guests at the table of the Lord and at tables of demons, than ye can serve God and Mammon.

1. A good reason I have why I should exhort you to conquer self, even as I strive to conquer self by keeping under my body, lest I should prove disqualified for the prize of the great inheritance: consider what befell the mass of the Israelites; they were all, save two, rejected from entrance into the Land of Promise: for I do not wish you to be unwitting that our . . .

our fathers.] The ancestors of the Jews, of whom am I and some amongst you, O Corinthians. Moreover the Gentiles have taken the room of the Hebrews. All is emphatic, and four times repeated: it is contrasted with the few in whom God’s purpose of good took effect, ver. 5; and it is also correlated with the same twice occurring in ver. 4.

The Apostle omits the pillar of fire as irrelevant to his argument and brings to view the cloud and the sea: these two, being ‘moist elements’ and aqueous natures, both together typify the water of baptism. We must not suppose, with some, that the cloud and the sea represent the two elements in Christian baptism, the cloud the heavenly or the Spirit, the sea the earthly or the water, because this idea would tend to confusion: for with what consistency can the cloud and the sea in the same clause typify the one a natural, the other a spiritual element?

The two phrases were under the cloud, and ‘passed through the sea,’ seem to prefigure the double process of submersion and emersion in baptism. The analogue however is not to be pressed in the details, for neither rain from the cloud nor wave from the sea wetted the marching sons of Israel.

2. ipbhraro, took baptism, or it may mean received baptism: certainly not, as some, ‘baptized themselves’ nor, as Meyer, ‘had themselves baptized,’ both these renderings are against the true idea of the middle voice. Unto Moses, i.e. to obey Moses, in whom they trusted as God’s servant and their own accredited leader. This baptism of the Exodus from Egypt, it may be noted, preceded the giving and teaching of the Law on Sinai: compare the antitype (Matt. xxviii. 19, baptizing them and teaching them).

On this verse Theodore comments to this effect: ‘The sea of transition represents the laver of regeneration, Moses foreshadows the true High Priest, his staff the cross, Israel the baptized, the pursuing Egyptians are a type of chasing demons, Pharaoh himself is an image of the devil.’

3. As the baptism unto Moses was a type of the true baptism into Christ, so the gifts of the manna and of ‘streams in the desert’ were figures of the body and the blood of Christ. The sacraments of the Old Testament are made by St. Paul to foreshadow the substance of two sacraments in the New, of two and no more.

The emphatic word all occurs several times. The children of Israel all without exception stood on the same level of divine favour; in His marvellous dealings God was one and the same to them all; to the standing and to the falling He was gracious alike, for as all took baptism in the cloud of the Exodus and in the passage through the Red Sea so
And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.

in the wilderness the same meat was common to them all and the same drink to all, both of divine origin. And, had they not murmured, had they but remained 'stedfast in the covenant,' the same prospect of reaching the Land of Promise was before them all. The mass of them, at least, might have entered Canaan; but in the mass of them, proving rebellious, 'God's purpose of good' failed to take effect.

spiritual meat.] The manna descended in the form of grains of corn (see note on manna at the end of Exodus ch. xvi.), and supplied the place of bread during the forty years. It came like rain out of the air and was unquestionably, like the column of cloud and of fire, of supernatural origin. But how spiritual or spirit-wrought meat? No doubt this 'corn of heaven' was in a way unknown to us given by Him who, fifteen centuries later, gave Himself the 'true Bread' from heaven. The Word, not yet incarnate, was ever moving in the midst of Israel. But this presence of Christ does not exclude the idea of angelic mediation. Inasmuch as the manna is called "the bread of angels," the power of the Word in this oft-repeated miracle may have been put forth by the mediation of angels ministering to Him: compare Jacob's Ladder. This idea is in keeping with the fact that the Law of Sinai was ordained by a twofold agency (1) of angels clustering in the foreground of Jehovah, (2) of Moses standing in the foreground of Israel; but as below Moses was the congregation, so above the angels was the Word and above the Word was God: see ch. iii. 22.

4. And it was spiritual drink that they all drank. Why spiritual? Because, as Bengel says, qualis Petra talis aqua: for they used to drink of a spiritual accompanying rock. Most important to the sense of this passage is the difference between the tenses of ἐσορω συν and ἐσορω συν. The two tenses interpret each the other, and both together throw a considerable light upon the perpetuity of God's extraordinary dealings with Israel during the forty years. The aorist ἐσορω συν means they drank throughout from end to end of their wanderings. It refers here, as is plain from the Imperfect following it, not to a single instance of drinking, e.g. at Rephidim in Horeb, but to a series of instances regarded as one process: just like a chain seen at a distance from end to end, the links of which fail to strike the eye; or like a swiftly revolving wheel, the spokes of which disappear in the rapid whirling and the rotation seems to stand still. The Imperfect ἐσορω συν, on the other hand, means they drank from time to time: the several instances become visible; the wheel revolves more slowly and the spokes are distinguishable; the links of the chain come to view. From the grammatical structure, then, it is clear that the rock of Rephidim and the cliff in Kadesh were not the only occasions of the gift of water. Between these two recorded instances, comprising an interval of nearly forty years, during which the first rebellious generation died out, many rocks and cliffs must have been hallowed by the presence and vivified by the power of the Spiritual Rock accompanying the march of Israel. This view, which agrees with what is stated in this Commentary vol. i. part ii. p. 720, is rendered certain by these two tenses playing into each other, and equally so by the fact, well attested by travellers, of the arid and waterless nature of the Arabian Desert.

But what is the more precise meaning of the phrase spiritual rock? We know that Jehovah was 'in the pillar of smoke and of fire,' which was a pavilion round about Him' (Psalm xviii.), a holy veil woven out of the physical elements. By means of this opaque or luminous cloud, outwardly natural, inwardly supernatural, God manifested His own real presence, making darkness or light to His people. In a like mysterious manner the material rock of the desert, standing here or there, at Rephidim or in Kadesh or elsewhere, was made the vehicle of an extraordinary power of spirit permeating and quickening dead material, causing fresh springs to gush forth out of a dry ground. Chrysostom's comment is, "It was not the nature of the rock that sent forth the water, for that alone would never have bubbled up in streams, but it was another species of rock, even spiritual, that was ever ready to operate, i.e. Christ, who in all places was present, and in all cases working wonders." Akin to these last words are the last words of the Wisdom of Solomon concerning Israel's God, who was ἐν παρα παραι καὶ τοις παρατασαίοις.

The rock, to wit, was Christ, or ye the rock was Christ.] The water is termed 'spiritual drink,' inasmuch as it was called into existence by the living power of a spiritual rock. It welled forth indeed from a material rock, but it came not of the nature of the same but out of a higher nature called 'spiritual rock.' And this spiritual rock is termed Christ, because
5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

6 Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, "The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed by serpents.

being the expression of His power it was Christ in effect: for He was the cause both of it and through its medium of the spiritual drink. The rock was therefore Christ in effect, and the effect is here designated by the name of its cause; a very common mode of speech: one instance of it is 'To depart from evil is understanding,' i.e., in effect, for understanding is a cause of departure from evil. This very common mode of speech arises simply from the fact that the cause is in its effect, or in the words of Hooker "every original cause imparts itself to those things which come of it."

It may be remarked that 'spiritual' in this verse cannot mean typical, as some, nor miraculous, as others: nor can 'was' signify represented or prefigured, as many. No doubt the 'meat and drink spiritual' were figures, if not analogues, of the Eucharistic flesh and blood of Christ, and perhaps indicate the spiritual nature of both the flesh and the blood. And if, as it is written in the heading of this chapter in the A. V., 'the sacraments of the Jews were types of ours,' then we must suppose that the children of Israel were unconscious of the sacramental import of their 'meat and drink spiritual,' and knew not that by them 'the Lord was healing them' (Hosea xi. 3).

The legend of the Rabbins, often quoted in comments upon this passage, that the water-yielding rock of Rephidim followed the Israelites all about in the desert, rolling like a round beehive or barrel of stone to the door of the tent, is a false; a false "simply founded upon a literal interpretation of certain rabbinical statements concerning the identity of the well at Rephidim with that at Kadesh. These statements were evidently intended to be figurative. Their true meaning was that those waters which flowed out in Horeb were the gift of God granted to the Israelites and continued through the desert, just like the manna. For wherever they went, fountains of living waters were opened to them, as occasion required. And for this reason the rock in Kadesh was identified with that in Horeb. Still less ground is there for supposing that "Paul alluded to any such rabbinical fable in the words, They drank of a spiritual rock following them." The above from Keil on Pentateuch, vol. iii. p. 130. But even if this tradition was before the Apostle when he wrote this chapter, he illuminated it by a spiritual and corrective interpretation. His own forms of expression tend to verify the view that the guidance of Israel through the desert, the passage of the Red Sea and of the Jordan included, was a long succession of miracles: and so beyond question it was.

5. But still not with most of them did God purpose for good.] Not withmost, tragic litotes, for with very few. Sense is; although God, who nourished and guided them all in the desert, had a gracious design for them all viz. that they should enter the Land of Promise, yet that counsel for good was frustrated in a murmuring majority. It took effect only in two males of the first generation, Caleb and Joshua. [εἰκονίζεσθαι, not as in A.V. 'was well pleased' but deemed for good: the εὖ here= the gift of the promised inheritance.]

6. Now these things came to pass for outlines or marks belonging to us to follow or to avoid, to follow the tracks of obedience and mercies, to avoid the footprints of rebellion and judgments.

7. Neither become ye idolaters, as the Israelites did, when they sat down at the idol-feast of the golden calf in Horeb. Beware, O Corinthians: even to partake of idol-meats is an implication in idol-service.

8. three and twenty thousand.] Numb. xxv. 9-10: where 24,000 is the number stated. St. Paul follows a Jewish tradition which deducted 1000, as being the number of those who were hanged by the judges: so that only 23,000 would be killed by the plague.

9. Nor let us sorely tempt the Lord.] ἐκπειράσθη, try to the uttermost, as the Israelites did, by their length of frowardness testing the tension of divine endurance, as curious to see at what point God would punish, or whether he would punish at all.
10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

14 Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

15 I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we

Such rebels perished from time to time (ἀπόλλυμι) by the inflammatory bite of the serpents or burning snakes, the κοινωνίας or the torrida ditas of Lucan, (Phars. ii. 718).

Application: be not ye also discontented, but accept the Christian's position of a pure and sober life, nor look back with longing upon what you have renounced for ever, those pleasures of Corinth which are as the flesh-pots of Egypt.

10. Neither murmur ye.] Change to the second person plural from the first of ver. 9, because the Apostle wishes to point an arrow at the party-spirit so rife in the Church. 'As they murmured against Moses and Aaron, so murmur not ye against Paul and Apollos.' See Numbers xvi. 41.

of the destroyer.] i.e. the angel commissioned by God to deal the pestilence.

11. 'Now all these things by way of outline or lesson happened one by one to them:' the word them emphatic: all these judgments left their prints behind them legible to us unto whom the ends of the ages have reached i.e. of the antediluvian, patriarchal, theocratic, world-periods.

12. Beware lest your arrogance and confidence fill up the sketch and outline of Israel in the desert. All growth in grace has its root in humility. So far I have said to you, 'Take warning: now I say, 'Take courage; for the same God, who is watchful that no temptation take you but such as is within man's compass to resist, is 'faithful also in that he will not suffer you to be tempted beyond what ye are able (are in a position) to bear, but will make with the temptation the way of escape also.' He who knows how to arrange the circumstances of a temptation for the strengthening of your moral powers of resistance, surely knows also how to arrange the proper exodus out of the same. Wherefore linger not in the temptation, but escape for your life: stop not to daily with idolatry but flee and flee away from it! (imperf. imperat.).

15. Render, as being intelligent men I say to you Judge ye what I affirm. Ye emphatic: for the construction see Ephes. v. 28. 'Husbands ought to love their own wives as being their own bodies.' The anti-types of the spiritual meat and drink of the Arabian desert now come to view. St. Paul has just been forbidding his readers even to tamper with the heathen feasts, such dalliance being dangerous, smacking of idolatry and decaying to apostasy. This prohibition he now enforces by shewing how solemnly binding to steadfastness in the faith is that holy fellowship of the Lord's Supper and that older one of the Jewish sacrifices.

16. The cup in its contents. Which we bless—i.e. more explicitly 'over which we speak the word for good': the word (λόγος), for good (εὖ). So in the Latin, benedictimus = we utter the word bene i.e. bene fuit. Cum Deus bene dicit, tum bene est: cum homo, tum ut bene fuit. God blesses man in deeds: for He speaks, and it is done: His benedictions are benedictions. Hence the phrase 'shall inherit the promise.' In the Holy Supper what is offered to God of His own earthly gifts, with the prayer that He bless it into an heavenly good, is given back by God in the new form and substance of the supernatural good itself. The divine good (εὖ) spoken over the elements is in the Holy Communion the same divine good (εὖ) appropriated and realised: and the bread and wine after their benediction or consecration (the two are often identified) are not indeed changed in their nature but become in their use and in their effects the very body and blood of Christ. This, of course, to the worthy receiver.

The cup of the blessing pronounced by Christ in His holy institution of the sacrament which we bless, when in the celebration we Apostles or our successors, Apostols and others, bless the cup in the words of the institution, is it not communion in the blood of Christ? i.e. the means of communion. The keyword communion (κοινωνία) never signifies, as Waterland and many insist, communication
bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

(in the active sense) nor, as Meyer and others insist, participation. The Greek for 'participation' is μετασχηματισμός, for 'communication' perhaps διαποιητικός. Nowhere in the N. Testament, nor elsewhere apparently, has the word either of these meanings. It almost always means fellowship or communion—both the same—sometimes taking the more concrete sense of community or society. Even where it seems to denote 'contribution' (Rom. xv. 29), it does not properly mean 'communication,' but retains its essential sense of fellowship, which with the addition of the circumstantial sense amounts to the expression of fellow-feeling in the form of almsgiving: or, the same issue by another avenue, this is another instance of the frequent use of the metaphor: the effect called by the name of the cause, as in the text "the rock was Christ" or as in the Psalm "He gave their labour (in effect), to the locust" or as in Ep. Rom. "the minding of the flesh is death" (in the issue). It may be remarked that the breaking of bread is called communion so early as Acts ii. 42, and fellowship of one with another in i. 10, associated with the "blood" which cleanseth from all sin.

In this ver. 16 the meaning cannot be communion with the blood, as some say; for that is an incorrect idea. Union with the body and with the blood there is, but not communion: fellowship is with persons (1 Cor. i. 9) or with things personified (2 Cor. vi. 14): compare "We have fellowship with the Father and with the Son and with one another" (1 Joh. i.) This word communion generally denotes the fellowship of persons with persons in one and the same object always common to all and sometimes subete to each. By way of illustration: when the sun shines upon a band of haymakers in a field, these do not, properly speaking, partake of the sun: there is no true participation: we cannot say that a portion of ten beams is assigned to A, of twelve to B, of twenty to C: rather the undivided sun is common to all the labourers and whole to each of them: they all have ζωονωμία or common interest in one and the same sun. Even so Christ, the Sun of Righteousness, shines upon His own, equal to all and total to each. One more instance of this use of the Latin formula, Communio legis est comminio juris = "an equal privilege of law is an equal enjoyment of right" (Forcellini).

Communion of the blood without the prefix of the (as in A.V.) is a good rendering; if of here denotes 'proceeding from' or 'in relation to': something similar in construction is the phrase 'the death of the cross,' the cross being the instrumental cause of death Philipp. ii. 8. Similar too is the text Philippians ii. 11, "if there be any fellowship of Spirit:" which is well explained by one of the early Fathers conjunctio animorum per communitatem Spiritum or fellow-feeling wrought by one Spirit common to all: compare the explanatory word likened in next verse.

The sense then will be, communion in relation to the blood with persons; and these persons are divine and human. (1) the Father and the Son, (2) the members of Christ's body. This will become probable from the following considerations: communion is not the same thing with union,—but rather proceeds from it, growing out of our mystical union with Christ's humanity, whereby we are made "members of His body, bred of (περι) His flesh and of (περι) His bones" (Ephesians v. 30). This mystical union, founded in Baptism, is strengthened and consolidated in the Eucharist by means of mystical communion. And as the union itself is twofold, for thereby we are "members of Christ" and "members of one another" (Rom. xii. 3), so is the communion twofold, for thereby we have "fellowship with the (incarnate) Son" and "fellowship with one another." In like manner St. Paul's peace is twofold, viz. peace between Jew and Gentile and between both and God (Ephes. ii. 15).

In favour of this view may be cited from Damascenus Orthod. Fid. lib. ix. c. 14, "It (the Eucharist) is called communion, because thereby we commune with Christ, while at the same time we commune and are united (ένωσις) with one another: for since of one bread we all as one (οί πάνες) partake, we become one body of Christ and one blood and members of each other, and so are called concorporeal with Christ."

In tracing the right relation between the terms communion and of the blood or in the blood, it may be remarked that as 'communion' here denotes fellowship of the members both with the Head and with each other, so it implies fellowship in a nature common to all. Of this inner communion with Christ and with such as have been baptized into His divine-human nature the divine-human blood is the life-giving medium. For in Baptism we "put on Christ" just as a graft by insertion puts on a tree: and as the graft after insertion drinks the sap of the tree or in the words of St. Paul "has in common with the root the fatness of the good olive." (συνεκκολληθεὶς τῆς φύσεως τῶν σπόρων τῆς οἴνου, Rom. xi. 17), so in the Eucharist we drink
17 For we are many and one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

The blood of Christ more truly than the graft drinks the sap of the tree in which it has been inserted. What a κοινωνία there is in a tree! Bouhs and sprays in union and communion with each other and with the stem, all drawing the same nature and the same nourishment and the same substance from a common root.

This idea of communion of fellowship, with its inner teaching, may be made clearer by a parallel text from Ep. Heb. ii. 14, where the blood is mentioned before the flesh, as in this text of St. Paul it is before the body: "Forasmuch then as the children have been in common with one another the nature of blood and flesh (κοινωνίας σποράς καὶ αίματος), he also himself took of the same nature with them" (μεταοίκησε).

That is, in the Incarnation He assumed our nature in its weakness of flesh, so that He might first by suffering hallow it and by His bloody Passion consecrate it on the cross and by His resurrection exalt it to God's right hand and might then from heaven give it back to us in the Eucharist, to the end that we might become possessors in common of a divine nature (κοινωνίας Θείας φύσεως, not, as in A. V., 'partakers of the divine nature' or Deity): in other words, that we might become fellow-servants with Him and work one another in His own Humanity, enriched with new qualities and ennobled with divine attributes, even with "all the complement of the Godhead corporeally" (Ep. Col. ii. 9). For He descended to fellowship with us in our humiliated humanity in order that we might be 'exalted exceedingly' to brotherhood and fellowship with Him in His glorified Humanity. Similarly Chrysostom makes our Lord say, 'I have become a fellow with you (κοινωνίας) in flesh and blood for your sakes: again that Flesh and Blood, by which I have become akin to you, I give back to you."

The bread which we break after consecration or benediction is it not (the medium of our) communion (with one another) in the body of Christ? Christ with emphasis. The sense seems to be: As the material bread, God's earthly gift, we do eat together with "the outer man," so the spiritual food of Christ's most precious body, God's gift from heaven, we receive together and manducate with "the inward man" (4 τῷ ἄνθρωπος of St. Paul); the natural bread after consecration being not only the symbol, but also the vehicle (in effect) of Christ's body (in essence). How often in Scripture is the natural consecrated to be the medium of the supernatural! And there is always a congruity and meekness of correspondence between the outward sign and the inner thing signified. The material rock gushing with streams in the desert was a vehicle of a spiritual rock, even Christ in effect. The sacred animal breath which our Lord breathed on his disciples was not only the meet emblem, but true vehicle also of Holy Spirit; for "He blew or breathed steadfastly on them and said Take Holy Spirit," and they received His sensible breath, and with it the gift of His own Spirit (Joh. xx. 22).

17. Because (there is) one bread, one body are we the (assembled) many. The sense is, Because the bread of many parts, into which it is broken, is yet one bread, one body are the many we. Many fractions, one bread: many members, one body. Comp. Ignatius ad Ephes. Ye all individually come together in common in one faith and in one Jesus Christ, breaking one bread which is the medium of immortality, our antidote that we should not die but live for ever in Jesus Christ.

It is worthy of note how St. Paul makes an easy transition from the body proper of Christ (ver. 16) to the corporate body, the Church (ver. 17). This is remarkable, as attending to shew that he identifies the two bodies in essence or substance. He certainly seems to do so in Ep. Col. ii. 19, 'The Head, out of whom (as out of a well-spring of vital forces and divine energies) all the body through all the touches or points of contact with the head and through common ligaments binding the members to each other (a twofold means of union) is furnished with large supplies of nourishment and is coarticulated (Ephes. iv. 16) and compacted together into a living organism.' This inner teaching of St. Paul stands out clearer in the famous text 'We are members (mystical) of His body (proper), members bread of His flesh' (Ephes. v. 30).

In accord with this interpretation, which seems obvious from St. Paul's easy gliding here from the Christ's body to the Church-body; many ancient Fathers held that while in Baptism we obtain incorporation into Christ, in the Eucharist we receive also by degrees and rudimentally concorpority, if not consanguinity, with Him. Two instances of this: "The Church (is) one body, not only generally and mystically, but properly and corporeally, because all are really (re-aller) united to Christ" (Chrysostom). Again, "In sacra communione finus non
I. CORINTHIANS. X.

The logical connection is, 'Because there is one bread of many fractions, one body are we the many membered totality; and one body are we, because we all, as one whole, have received the very body of Christ, as the mystical effect of the one bread.' In this passage, the prominent phrases one body and the many we and the total we suggest that 'fellowship of the members with one another' is the dominant idea in the writer's mind: fellowship or communion with Christ stands in the background.

18. Connection: not only that sacramental Feast of the Eucharist, which strengthens and quickens the holy fellowship of the guests with each other and with their unseen divine Host, is a means of communion and a seal of solidarity, but also the Jewish sacrificial feasts of old were. Both alike are dissuasives from idolatry.

Israel after the flesh.) I.e., the Jews proper, members of the Theocracy. "The Levitical sacrifices were outward acts for maintaining membership in the commonwealth of Israel in the sphere of the flesh, i.e., natural and earthly life consecrated to God." Delitzsch, Hebr. ii. p. 95.

Partakers of the altar can hardly be a right rendering; for κοινωνία nowhere seems to mean partaker; even in Ας. Aγαμ. 1004 κοινωνία χειρίσθω = 'with a common property or interest in the lustral water' or 'with an equal right to it with others.'

The sense in this text is, Are not they who eat the sacrificial fellows (or associates) in relation to the altar of sacrifice? Clearly a double connection here, (1) between the sacrifices and the sacrificial altar, θυσίας and θυσιαστηρίου; (2) between the act of eating and the act of communing or holding fellowship. Bengel seems to go wrong when he explains, 'He to whom the offering is made, and the offering itself, and the altar which bears the offering, these three have communion.' Between these three there is a connection indeed, but no communion. For here, as in ver. 16—see note there—the true idea is not 'participation' nor 'communication,' but 'fellowship of persons with persons,' communion (1) of men with God (2) of men with one another as members of one holy congregation. And 'the sacrifices,' while they are being eaten, are the medial cause of this communion, as the sacrificial altar is the local and instrumental. There is no such thing as communion with an altar or with a victim: rather it is by means of both with God. No wonder some, who make κοινωνία = μεταχειρίζονται, ask 'why did not Paul write ἔσορθον instead of ὕσσωσιν;'? While others to altars affix Deique, to make out the sense.
19 What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?
20 But I say, that the things which

The truth seems to be that in the Levitical sacrifices there was communion between Jehovah on the one hand and the priests and worshippers on the other. This communion was effected by means of the slain bullock in the Peace offering, for instance, or ἰβολὰ σώματος. The slain bullock in the burning of the fat or succulent food of firing for Jehovah, who by fire consumed His portion of the sacrifice: the same victim also furnished food of flesh hallowed by the altar, to the altar and worshippers; who in this feast common to all were fellow-guests with one another and with God. This common feast was a sacrificial meal after the sacrificial offering. In like manner the blood, after its effusion from the body of the bullock in the slaughtering (comp. Luke xxii. 20), was affused or poured against the altar (ἀποτρέπειν τὸ δέλερον ἐπὶ τὸν θυσίαν ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἀνεμούμον ὀλίγον), for atonement, and then, hallowed by the altar, was given back in the form of sprinkling upon the people for cleansing. Thus the same animal, slain and sacrificed, was from the altar given back both in its blood and in its flesh to the priest and the people. The blood of the victim was regarded as one blood, although it was set in bowls by the priest in two halves, one half for affliction to make atonement, and the other for offerings to the altar. The altar, the only altar in the temple of God given to His people, the other half for the aspersions of cleansing to make the people meet for drawing nigh to their God. Thus the altar, on which the victim was given to Jehovah and from which it was given back to the offerers, was a meeting-place of communion between God and His people; and the substantial medium of this personal communion was (1) all of the common sacrifice that was consumed by the fire of Jehovah, (2) all that was eaten by the worshippers: by means of the first God held or celebrated a federal feast of holy fellowship with men, by means of the second men with God and with one another. The idea then of the rendering partakers of the altar is simply incorrect on these grounds as well as on grammatical. A careful study of the Jewish sacrifices in the light of this text will repay labour, for it seems to be a text bearing much upon the Holy Supper, as that κοσμίω δίκαιον of Chrysostom, "wherein it cannot be that of the master's gifts one domestic receives and another receives not, but all alike receive of what is common to all." According to St. Paul the Eucharistic Feast is an antitype of the sacrificial meal of the Peace-offering here as it is of the Passover in ch. 5. And from the significant word altar of sacrifice it seems as if the Apostle's thought was that the flesh of Christ, as given back from the altar of the Cross, is the medium of communion in the eating thereof and the real and therefore spiritual food of His Body, by feasting on which we have fellowship with Himself and with one another and through Himself with God. His human nature then of flesh and blood is the res sacramenti or thing signified; and the virtus sacramenti or remission of sins and all other benefits of His Passion is that which is given through the res: and the res is the effect, how produced we know not, of the consecrated bread and wine. This being true, it follows that the Lord's Supper is not a sacrifice, save in the offering of self-dedication and of God's creatures of bread and wine, but a sacramental Feast upon the great sacrifice which was once for all offered to God upon the altar of the Cross.

19. "Does it not shame you, O Corinthians, to roll back to the chalice of idols from this chalice which emancipated you from idols?" (Theophylact.)

Render:—What therefore do I affirm!—Connection: from the two Christian and Jewish sacrificial feasts of holy fellowship, which I just now adduced as analogues of 'the spiritual meat and drink' in the desert, do you raise the question whether there may not be another analogue in the Heathen sacrificial feasts? Nay, do I affirm—that what has been sacrificed to an idol is something! ri rather than τ. That it is an aliquid! That it is something or other, what the heathen may think it to be, a meat consecrated to a god? I tell you, it is a mere piece of flesh and nothing more. 'That bread and that cup of ours are what they are and something more' (Bengel). Or that an idol is something! Is some god or other, Zeus or Aphrodite or Apollo, corresponding to the heathen's conception of it? It is not the carpenter nor the statuary that makes gods out of wood or stone: who then? Qui fingit sarcos auro vel marmore volitus, Non facit ille deos; qui colit, ille facit: Martial Epigr. An idol is nothing; no god at all except in the imagination.

20. Nay but (what I do affirm is) that what things the Gentiles sacrifice, to demons they sacrifice and to a no-god. Not only to what is no-god do they sacrifice but to demons who behind the screen and
I. CORINTHIANS. X.

21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he?

23 All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.

24 Let no man seek his own, but every man another's wealth.

25 Whosoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake:

curtain of idol-worship are busy in their work of ruin to the souls and bodies of men who serve images. Sense is: while you offer to what you think to be a god, you are really offering to a vanity, a noentity of a god: that would be harmless by comparison: but here comes the grave mischief: you at the same time lay your souls open to the enticements of demons and your bodies to their obsessions.

The ordinary way of rendering this clause 'to demons and not to God' cannot be right. And not to God ('as you ought'—Bengel) is a negative addition simply not needed: it encumbers the march of the argument: moreover it seems quite certain that St. Paul here had in his mind Deuter. xxxii. 21: "They aroused my jealousy by a no-god, provoked me by their vanities: and I also will arouse their jealousy by a no-people, provoke them by a foolish nation," i.e. the future Gentiles. The Greek too of the LXX. bears out this rendering, for the οὐ θεόν after δαμασκίνεις in ver. 17 is explained in its sense by the εἴναι οὐ θεόν and the εἶναι ἀνθρώπον of ver. 21. Nothing can be clearer. Compare Οἶνον or Νομαν of the Odyssey, and εἰς ἀδῖνας καὶ οὐκ ἀδίκως, LXX.

Demons, (not, as in A.V., devils) are agents of the devil, moving in his kingdom of darkness, dwelling in the air near the earth. Some of them are, says Josephus, 'disembodied spirits of wicked men,' some mischievous, some malignant; others are described by Justin Martyr in a passage bearing on this text as "Evil demons who in times of old," just before the flood, "assuming various forms so astonished mortal minds with the wonders which they displayed that men not knowing them to be evil demons styled them gods and addressed them by the name which each demon imposed upon himself" (Apol. p. 55, Paris ed.)

and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils. The A.V. gives the right sense of κοινωνία at last: still rather render, now I do not wish you to become fellows with the demons, i.e. to become associates with that class of beings called demons (force of article), to enter into fellowship with them by attending idol-feasts, the haunt of evil spirits.

21. Sense is: it is morally impossible for you to drink the cup that brings into communion with the Lord, i.e. Christ, and to drink the cup that brings into fellowship with demons.

be partakers of the Lord's table.] Literally 'to have with others of the table.' S. Coena convivium est, non sacrificium: in mensa, non altari (Bengel). True: for it is a sacramental Feast after the Sacrifice: the Feast is held at the Table of the Lord often, the Sacrifice was made upon the Altar of the Cross once for all.

22. Render, Or do we exasperate the Lord to jealousy! 'Or (dreadful alternative!) are we just doing what Israel did of old in the Desert, embittering the Lord to jealousy?' See Deut. xxxii. 21... Really! are we stronger than He? Don't say that! An abudctio ad absurdum.

23. St. Paul now returns to the principle of Christian license in things indifferent, see vi. 12, presenting it more from its pure ethical side. See the counterpart of this in Rom. xiv. 13-20, and notes there.

All things are...[.] Render, All things are permitted me, but still not all things edify: i.e. build up the Christian life of the brethren. See ch. vi. 12. All things are permitted me seems to have been a sort of watchword or motto used by the Pauline party in Corinth: see note ch. viii. 8. Sense then is: 'All things indifferent are allowed me;' boasts the self-styled Pauline: 'True,' replies the Apostle, 'but nevertheless not all things indifferent edify;' or as in vi. 12, 'are conducive to the welfare of others.'

24. Render, Let no one seek his own but every one another's (interest). Here 'another's,'—"his neighbours," for in the eye of charity who is another is a brother. Supply the word every one from the preceding no one: very common ellipse. Comp. Horace, Quir fit, Mecenas, ut nemo followed by laudet (quiique).

25. Render, Anything that is on sale in the meat market eat ye, making no inquiry from regard to conscience: i.e. not stopping to consult conscience: in this
26 For the earth is the Lord’s, and the fulness thereof.
27 If any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.
28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake: for the earth is the Lord’s, and the fulness thereof:

instance conscience is, like Camarina, “better undisturbed.” Chrysostom’s view, followed by many, is clearly wrong, for the negative μὴ covers the whole participial clause, although in the next verse it covers only the verb following. Sense and connection are; in eating meat bought in the market raise no scruples, for all meat is the gift of God: “the earth is the Lord’s and the fulness thereof.”

26. Fulness, or πλεροματικός ‘complement’ in active sense. Not uncommon this sense (Euripides has λογίαν διαπότομον φρουρόμενον). This word in Ephes. i. 23 is used to describe the Body as the complement without which the Head would be imperfect as Head: hardly receptacle, as Bp. Ellicott in his notes there. In ancient times oars, tackling, sailors were called the complement of a galley: chairs, tables, bedsteads, carpets may be termed the pleroma of a house: in manner herbs, fruits, fish, fowl, ‘the cattle on a thousand hills’ belong to the pleroma of the earth.

27. 28. Render, If an unbeliever invites you (several of you Christians) and you consent to go, anything that may be set before you eat ye, making no inquiry from regard to conscience: if, however, some one (of your fellow-guests, a weak Christian or a possible convert) should say to you, This is sacrificial meat, forbear ye to eat from regard to the informant and to conscience: now by conscience I mean not one’s own but the other’s. One’s own, i.e. the conscience of the Christian guest who has been warned what the meat just offered to him is: the other’s, i.e. of him who gave the warning, the informant’s.

for why is my liberty? My because St. Paul descriptively puts himself in the place of the guest who has been warned against a sacrificial meat. The sense is, ‘If I, one of several Christian guests in a mixed company in Corinth, were told by a neighbour—say a weak brother or a possible convert—that such and such a dish contained sacrificial meat, I should in that case forbear to eat of it out of respect to my informant and more especially (εἰς) from regard to his conscience: not at all from his regard to my conscience, lest it should be troubled from eating sacrificial; for why is my liberty in matters indifferent to be judged or determined by another conscience, which happens to differ from my own in taking a narrower view of a Christian’s liberty in these indifferent things?

30. If I with grace (said) have meat with others (αιρητός), why am I evil spoken of for having meat for which I have said grace! (χαίρειτε) with grace in the heart, properly with thanks felt: the verb denotes thanks given for God’s gifts (εὐχαριστεῖται). Emphasis to be laid on the double I.

31. therefore] An inference of the general from the particular. Or ὑπακούσω καί ἐστι. Surely this is a correct, even happy rendering, for εἰσερχόμεθα may be said to μέν ήττο. See an exact Latin parallel in sive meaning or if (Hor. Odes. I. xv. 35), where the si belongs to the subordinate and the εἰς to the principal clause. This as against Alford’s alteration: nor can Meyer be right when he makes the first do emphatic: whatsoever and all are rather emphatic.

to the glory of God.] Using His gifts aright, consulting the true welfare of others, now eating, now not eating, according to the social context. All Christian conduct redounds to his glory.

32. Give none offence.] Literally, behave (γειμωνία) without offence given to . . . i.e. ‘so as to place no moral obstacle before.’ . . . The three classes here specified are set on the same level as to the general rule: no occasion of stumbling to any one is to be created by the conduct of any Christian.
33. I please,] Rather, I am ready to oblige: the tense is present imperfect: comp. Acts xxvi. 28, “In a truce thou thinkest to persuade me to turn Christian” (μείβως). In all things, i.e. in all indifferent things.

CHAPTER XI.

1. He reproves them, because in holy assemblies their men prayed with their heads covered, and 6 women with their heads uncovered, and because generally their meetings were not for the better but for the worse, as in profaning with their own feasts the Lord’s supper. Lastly, he calleth them to the first institution thereof.

B E ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

CHAP. XI. Contents: women should veil their faces in public assemblies for divine worship. The Agape or love-feasts are not to be abused but reverentially celebrated.

1. Render, Prove or show yourselves imitators of me as I also of Christ. Christ is the highest Exemplar: do ye copy in your lives my copy of the Original. I strive to please others (x. 33) after His pattern, who “pleased not himself” (Rom. xv. 3).

2. Render, ye hold fast the delivered instructions in what spirit I delivered them to you: namely directions in matters of discipline as well as of doctrine. These were given orally at Corinth, or possibly written in the lost letter.

3. Now I wish you to know that of every man the head is Christ, as head of the woman is the man, as Head of Christ is God. The ranks and relations of Christian fellowship, as organised on the basis of redemption, are here brought forward: see Ephes. v. 21.

In this climax Christ is the centre, the middle between God and man: from Him the line of gradation descends to man and ascends to God. On the doctrine of the last clause see notes ch. iii. 23.

The particle ἐκ may be rendered likewise or again.

Head in metaphorical sense: as in the body the members are subject to the head, so in the family to the husband, so in the state to the king, so in the Church to Christ: and Christ Himself is subordinate to the Father.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered to you.

3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.

4 Every man praying or prophesying, let him pray or prophesy, every one in a proper manner.

Deus est caput Christi: hoc non de essentia dicitur sed de ministeriis. Filius saepè inquit, Pater misit me. Tum tum non arcanae essentiae sed ministeriī (Melanchthon).

4. disbonoreth) Rather puttheth to shame or maketh ashamed. Which of the two heads? Certainly the spiritual Head, even Christ. This view is favoured by the preceding context, where the clause of every man the head is Christ is the principal, the two next clauses being rather subordinate: for the particle ἐκ does not always usher in a coordinate clause. Wherefore the connexion is, “Of every man the Head is Christ: every man when he prays in the church or discourses in Spirit with veil (hanging) from head puts to shame His Head, or the Head of Him: Head with emphasis, him without emphasis, as in the phrase ‘the life of me.’ Literally, ‘wearing (something) down from head.’ The veil was probably a large lap or loose fold of a body-shawl thrown over the left shoulder and so arranged as to fall down over the face. The head was to be covered that the face might be concealed. See two other views on this verse in a Note at the end of the chapter.

But, it may be asked, bow may a man by wearing a veil in the holy assembly be said to put Christ to shame? Or, to put the question in another form, why should a man not appear veiled on the ground that he is next under Christ his Head, and yet a woman appear veiled on the ground that she is next under man her head? The idea seems to be this: the veil, a badge of subordination in the wearer, is worn by an inferior when he
saying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.  
5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven.  

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.  
7 For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the principal of man in relation to woman and by exposing to obloquy her own character: for her face bare and unveiled in church tends to attain her of moral barefacedness.  

8 Another lash of censure: sarcastic reason for sarcastic statement: ‘for if she takes one false step in discarding the veil, let her be consistent throughout and take the next step in the same direction, clipping her locks and shaving her crown forsooth! Let her part with nature’s veil as well as with the artificial! So far an argumentum ad absurdum: now comes the alternative of escape from such degradation step by step expressed in serious vein of exhortation: ‘if however it is a shameful thing to a woman to clip her tresses or to submit to tonsure let her veil her face in religious assemblies.’  

The verbs in this verse are all in the middle voice, not in the passive as in A. V.; and the words ‘covered’ and ‘uncovered’ should be rendered veiled and unveiled, for a woman may cover her head with a turban and yet not conceal her face with a veil. Render with emphasis on not (ob after ei; see note on ch. vii. 9). For if a woman do not veil, let her also ollip (tresses); if however it is a shame to a woman to ollip (her tresses) or to shave (her crown), let her veil. For έσπαρασαι, mid. voice = to submit to tonsure, see Misch. i. 26, LXX. Plus est re causam ponderi (Gröttius). The Greeks sacrificed bareheaded, the Romans velati (Vergil, Aeneid iii. 406, assigns a reason for this custom): the Jewish men prayed with head covered, nay more, with a veil (tallest) before the face, Lightfoot Hor. Hebr. p. 210.  

7. Additional reason for the advice Let the woman veil. St. Paul has already argued that, if to appear veiled in the congregation betokens the presence of a visible superior and to appear not veiled the non-presence, then a woman should always appear veiled, a man never. He has also with a dash of satire indicated the impropriety, and indecency even, of physical barefacedness as leading to the inference of moral—in a city like Corinth. He now proceeds to assign a third reason for this ritual distinction of head-gear. The logical connexion of the whole sentence from v. 7 to v. 10 entirely depends upon a right appreciation of the particles μία and δι; for clearly the δι usher in the principal clause.
image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man.

tude, even in affinity of essence. For man is the image of God by virtue of his spiritual nature, which because of the primal in-breathing (Gen. ii. 7) is akin to the divine; for when the body of Adam was formed from the dust, then the Lord God breathed into it the created, but God-like and God-related, breath of life.

and the glory of God.] How was man created the glory of God? The divine doxa or glory itself is the eternal self-manifestation to the Triune God of His own holy nature, His form of light (Philipp. ii. 16), the έδωκε probably of John v. 37, the Divinity (θεότης) or effulgence and expression of Deity (θεός).

In the divine counsel of creation this inner self-manifestation was to become an outer manifestation filling all creation. But it was through man, the created lord of the created cosmos, that the glory of God was to be communicated to the cosmos. This glory was from heaven to be reflected in him, the representation of God in the universe, the connecting link between heaven and earth, and from him the head of all creation to be again reflected in all creation subordinate to him. As this derived glory, to be mirrored in man from the surrounding cosmos, was to be the effulgence of the self-manifested divine doxa, which is itself the eternal effulgence and expression of enshrined Deity; so man in his higher nature of spirit, inbreathed into him from Spirit, was created actually the image of God, but in his lower nature of body, moulded from earth, was created potentially the glory of God, that is, constituted with the possibility, contingent on obedience, of a glorified body and soul and spirit. Adam's spirit, "the light of the Lord in him" kindled from the divine nature, was to become a light of glory, to be communicated to Eve, and from both progenitors to pass on to the human race and to lighten with this glory of theirs all creaturely existence. The design was baffled by Satan for a season. Meanwhile humiliated in body, yet now transformed in spirit, fallen man awaits in faith and in hope the unveiling of the 'new creation' in Christ and his own bodily assimilation to the body of His glory, the effects of the Parousia. Adam was not qua body made in the likeness of God, but qua spirit: the image was in esse, the glory in posse. See Bibl. Psych. p. 85.

8. Connection: man by original constitution (εμφάνως) is actually God's image and potentially His glory, the human embodiment and centre of a divine radiation to the uni-
9 Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman
to have power on her head because of the angels.

11 Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman

verse: woman is neither God's image primarily nor even His glory: she is man's glory; for man is not of woman, but woman of man. It is true she has, like man, the spirit in the divine image: but she has it not immediately from God, but mediately from God through man. Her flame of life is kindled at His "lamp of the Lord." She came absolutely out of the man (ἐξ ἀνδρός), flesh of his flesh and bone of his bone. And not only was she framed out of him, but also created for him: woman has in man both the initial and the final cause of her being. Her relation to him is a figure of the mystical relation of the church to Christ, that of the πλείρωμα or complement. She was therefore made for man, that she might fill to the full his measure of happiness, otherwise incomplete. Woman, like man, is "light in the Lord" ( Ephes. v. 8), but a lesser light than man; so Grotius, minus aliquid viro, ut luna lumen minus sole. The sun may be called the glory of the supreme source of all light and the moon the reflected glory of her source of light, the sun.

10. For this reason a woman is morally bound to swear authority upon the head. Strong emphasis upon ought or is bound, for the connection clearly is in full; 'Wherefore if the man is by creation God's image and God's glory, whereas the woman is by transmission through the man God's image and by derivation from the man's glory; if the man is the immortal echo of God's word spoken, but the woman only the secondary echo of the primal echo, a reflection of a reflection:—who can call in question the divinely constituted superiority of the man to the woman? And if to cover the head and conceal the face is a ritual confession of that moral superiority, how dare the Corinthian women appear in the holy congregation unveiled, thereby asserting and proclaiming woman's equality with man?'

Ἐξουσία here means, as elsewhere, permitted or assigned power, authority; see ch. ix. introductory note. There is no real difficulty in the use of the word in this text. Two things may be observed; first, the sign or veil is denoted by the name of the thing signified or authority: very common use this: compare "and bears his blushing honours thick upon him" and in Greek he wears royalty (βασιλεία, a diadem)=insignia of royalty. Secondly it should be noted that as all authority has for its correlative subject

New Test.—Vol. IIII.

and implies it and causes it as an effect, so the two correlatives sometimes pass over and change places, and the effect (subjection) is designated by the name of the cause (authority). The woman wears the veil as a badge of her subordination to man, and this veil is called conversely, what it also is, the sign of man's authority over woman. The second use is less common than the first. For the combination of the two uses in one word compare Macbeth, Act 3, Sc. 4.

"Present him eminence both with eye and tongue," i.e. offer him marks of homage, for signs of obedience in you are signs of eminence in him: the two signs are correlative and connected like two opposite poles, the one abstract, the other concrete.

because of the angels.] The reason, specified in vv. 8 and 9, shewing why a woman ought to wear upon the head the badge of man's God-given headship over woman, is now brought nearer home and made more vivid by the after-thought "because of the angels," i.e. from respect or regard for those unseen ministers of God and guardians of His order, who are present in the holy congregation, watching the behaviour of their human charge. If a woman be so lost to sense of shame that she shrinks not in church from the public eye, let her hear the moulting gaze of those divine sentinels. Or again, if she be so ambitious of equality with her superior, man, as to discard the veil of subordination, let her remember that she is watched by the order-loving angels, who themselves veil their faces before the face of God. The Greek Fathers often express their belief in the presence of angels in public worship: Chrysostom on this text: "Open the eyes of faith and thou shalt behold a theatre of spectators: for if the air is filled with angels, much more the church!" Again, "Knowest thou not that in the company of angels thou standest? With them thou singest, with them thou chantest, and yet dost thou stand there laughing?" St. Paul does not mean evil angels, as Tertullian: to escape the gaze of such angels as those who fell from God and from heaven 'ob concupiscientiam foeminam,' for how could thickest veils afford an escape from the gaze of demons? If forms of spirits pass through walls of buildings, why should not eyes of spirits see through veils of women?

11. Nevertheless] Corrective caution: for
woman without the man, in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.

13 Judge yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?

not the principal contemn the subordinate, nor a daughter of Eve undervalue her own position. The scales of the balance sometimes hang equal; and there are relations of life in which the woman stands level with the man. Though by creation the male is to the female as the sun to the moon, as the spirit to the soul, as the animus to the anima, yet in loving dependence on each other the two are one in their oneness with the Lord.

12. Reason for previous statement that the two sexes in domestic relations being mutually supplementary are in a sort of equipoise, and the woman gets her compensation: for just as the woman is out of the man, so is the man also by means of the woman: all these (relations) however are of God. That is, the woman has an equivalent in the divine order of nature, that, as man is the initial and the final cause of being to the woman, so woman is the instrumental cause of being to the man.

13. I appeal to each of you in your inner judgment: beseeching is it that a woman offer up prayer to God unveiled? Not as in A.V. uncovered, for a woman may cover her head and yet not conceal her face.

14. Nature is divine arrangement of things; here one of nature's laws that long hair is of the woman, short of the man; according to others it means 'inborn sense of propriety.' Argument: Is not the male sex, having short hair, by nature unveiled, and the female, having long hair, by nature veiled? If luxuriating tresses are a glory to a woman because they are given her as nature's veil, surely the textile fabric also, the moral badge of subordination, is equally becoming to her, inasmuch as it indicates her perception of harmony between what is physical and what is ethical in God's order of things.

15. Long hair is a glory to her, being nature's gift to serve as (ωφρήν), is not, as Meyer, 'instead of,' here a circling mantle or veil floating about her (περιθάλασσα = a cast-around), a textile envelope or hood.

16. Surely this verse, not the next, introduces a new topic, viz. the divisions in the Church and misconduct in the Agapae. Render, Now if any one is minded to be contentious, (let him know that) we (with the emphasis of authority) do not allow of such practices (contentiousness) nor do the churches of God: now this (our disallowance of contentiousness) is an order that I give, or this I command (from the Lord) for I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse.

18. For first of all, when ye come...
I. CORINTHIANS. XI.

10. For there must be also dispensations among you, that which is approved may be made manifest among you.

19. For you must be also brecisses among you, that those which are approved may be made manifest among you.

20. When ye come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lord’s supper.

21. For in eating every one taketh before another his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22. What? have ye not houses to

ing only to a charitably supposed minority of disorderlies: excipi innocentes et mit sermone utitur (Bengel). The word divisions in this text does not mean schismi, as in the margin of the A.V. The Greek schismata may be literally rendered by our word splits in the modern sense, as ‘splits in the cabinet,’ marked dissensions threatening disruption. It should be remembered that this Epistle says nothing of separation into sects, but speaks of partition into schools, as Pauline, Apollosite, Petrine, Christiana; see Introduction to Epistle: it describes an arrogant party-spirit tending indeed to a breach of outward unity, but not yet sundering the bond. 

19. For there must be also brecisses.] Must denotes a necessity growing out of the divine order and government. Not brecisses in the sense of ‘false doctrines’ nor sects as in the margin of the A.V. The word in Greek means ‘self-chosen views’ differing from received opinions. (The u here is not climactic for apotere is not stronger than storysa, but simply cumulative). They which are approved; metaphor from assaying metals, see end of ch. ix. May be made manifest: rather may become so, may come to light. The sense is in full: ‘there must needs be self-assertions and headstrong opinions as well as divisions, as a means of testing, in order that the approved may come to view amongst you and the genuine be sifted from the spurious, the true metal from the base alloy, the gold from the dross.

20. therefore.] i.e. because of the splits and divisions that are rife amongst you, coming together as you do (i.e. in the way you do) for the same object (en to airo) of celebrating a Love-feast and with it or after it the Holy Communion, it is not possible to eat a supper meet for the Lord: more literally, there is no eating a Lord’s Supper. Full sense: Seeing you do not tarry for one another (ver. 33), but come disorderly in straggling fashion, instead of waiting for the whole congregation to arrive and then keeping the feast in concert and eating all collectively of the one bread and drinking all collectively of the one cup—when this is the manner in which you meet, how is it within the compass of such irregularities to eat a meal that shall properly culminate in the Supper of the Lord? It is out of the question: non est, ouk eino: ‘there’s no such thing.’ The whole assembly should first meet as one body, and then celebrate the social and the heavenly banquet: as things now are, instead of the company combining (so to speak) into a continent, every man is an island and the straggling totality an archipelago.

into one place.] A.V. Rather in moral sense than local. ‘bent upon the same thing: (en to airo), ‘for one object.’ The phrase elsewhere has a local sense, but not so in Acts ii. 1, where enou means ‘in the same place,’ and en to airo sees the sense of ‘for the same purpose,’ so Acts ii. 44, and iii. 1, and Psalm ii. 1, LXX.

The Agape was a social feast combined in some way with the Eucharist. If in the Apostolic age it was the prologue to the Holy Communion, it afterwards became the epilogue. Chrysostom, in loco locos throws light: ‘The first Christians had all things in common: this custom ceasing, as it did in the time of the Apostles, there came into its room a sort of offshoot or efflux of it. For though the wealthy no longer deposited their goods in a common fund, nevertheless on stated days they kept an open table for the Agape. After divine service and the communion of the mysteries the rich and the poor together feasted in kindly fellowship.” (Hom. 27.) An interesting passage bearing upon this custom is found in Augustine, Epist cxviii. ad Januar. cc. 6, 7. Placuit Spiritui Sancto ut in honore tanti sacramenti in os Christiani prius Dominum corpus intraret quam exteri cibi .

21. Connection: if your manner of assembling for the same professed object is what I hear it is, feast you may in tumultuous fashion, but eat a Lord’s supper, one meet for Him, ye cannot; for one by one (instead of each taking equally sibit the rest of the common Supper) forstakons (takes before the rest) his own singular supper in the source of the meal! i.e. during the repast (the en. gar is eating begun, continued and ended: not every one as in A.V.: teuro = one by one, first A and then B and C, each singly).

and one is hungry, and another is drunken.] This rendering of the A. V. just misses the
I. CORINTHIANS. XI.

23 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: Matt. 26. Mark 14. Luke 22.

24 And when he had given thanks, he took bread; delivered (παραδόω, Rom. ix. 32) Christ into man's power, who crucified Him. Judas also delivered Christ to the authorities and was therefore called ὁ παραδόως (Mark xiv. 42), but because he did so with treachery and for a price, he was also called traior, πρωτοπήρ (Luke vi. 16). The essential sense of our word deliver is to release from: whether I release from my own keeping into another's, and so hand over or transfer (as a postman delivers a letter or a preacher a sermon) or whether I release from another's power into my own keeping and so emancipate, is a thing determined by circumstances: the essential sense is unaltered: I deliver in either case.

The verb in the imperfect tense: atmospheric imperfect for the shadow of the coming event was even now felt. A deed has its commencement within the mind, its completion outside; and the threefold delivery, God's surrender of His Son and Christ's surrender of Himself and Judas's betrayal of his Master, had already set in.

24. took bread.] A cake of bread lying on the table. Given thanks, i.e. for eō or God's good gifts of bread and wine: the idea of thanks is exhausted in the καίρια. N.B. So in εὐλογεῖν 'to bless' or 'consecrate' the Word speaks the word eō, and eō becomes when it indicates: no doubt this is the inner sense. In these several compounds eō always indicates God's good gifts to man, whether in evangel (or tidings of good) or in the text, 'This is my beloved son in whom I purposed for good, i.e. for man's salvation: εὐδοκία = ἡ ἐν εὐθυγάμη ἐν θαλασσί (Oecumenius).

Take, eat.] These words should be omitted: they occur in St. Luke xxii.

this is my body.] The much controverted is means precisely is. It can never mean, as many, signifies or represents, nor can it combine, as some, both senses is and signifies. It is the copula pure and simple, the link of correlation between the subject this and the predicate my body: In general this correlation is one of identity, but identity of what kind or to what degree lies not in the copula to determine but solely in the context, i.e. in the character of the surroundings and also in the nature of the case. In the text 'I am the vine' the am is am simply, and the 'vine' is vine in a mental figure. In this phrase 'I am the vine' the identity between subject...
v. 25. — I. CORINTHIANS. XI.

... and predicate is limited to certain properties of mutual immanence and consequent fruitfulness which are absolutely common to Christ himself who is seen with the eye of the body and to the natural vine as contemplated with the mind's eye. So in Gal. iv. 24, 'These women are the two covenants,' i.e. are, in so far as freedom and bondage are states absolutely common to the women and the covenants. For one thing may not improperly be said to be another within the precise limits of certain qualities or properties common to both. It may be added, given by our Lord at the Institution, speaking in Aramaic, would omit the copula, but when He made His revelation to St. Paul, speaking probably in Greek, He would insert it. So far for the sense of is. But the sentence This is my body has really no analogy whatsoever to the text I am the vine or These are the covenants, as many assert: this is evident from the nature of the case: it clearly belongs to that class of passages in which the copula links together subject and predicate not merely as identical more or less, but chiefly as correlated in the way of cause and effect. Such passages are numerous in St. Paul: one may suffice from Rom. vii. 10, the Spirit is life, i.e. the principle of life, as cause, is energy or activity of life as effect. Similarly in the text before us, there is no identity indeed, but there is a certain congruity between God's lesser good (εὖ) or gift of bread and God's inestimable good (ἀξία), or gift of the Body, given by Him and self-given by Christ; for from the earthborn food comes natural nourishment, from the heavenly spiritual; and there is besides this congruity a correlation also of cause and effect. So that the meaning seems to be: This (in effect) is my body: bow such instrumental cause produces such effect, is to us unknown: but, as Hooker says, 'That which produces any certain effect is not improperly said to be that very effect whereunto it tendeth,' and this usage in language is far from uncommon. One instance in Vergil, the archer in battle "levels wounds" at the foe; volnera derigit: the arrow is called by the name of its effect. In this very chapter, v. 29, we find a similar usage in a construction where the immaterial copula is does not occur: be eateth judgment: clearly the natural bread: that the man eats is not judgment in itself, is not sickness or death in itself, but a cause of judgment: the irreverent communicant eats in the consecrated bread what is in effect judgment. In the Lord's Supper the bread taken and eaten is in the mystical effects thereof the Body really received, not 'partaken of,' but as Augustine says corpus acceptum. This interpretation seems to be supported by the neuter τοῦτο: for the subject being in gender attracted to the predicate tends to shew a correlative affinity between the bread taken and eaten and the Body received (in St. Luke's account Take, eat immediately precedes ἂν θείος). For if our Lord had intended to give a definition purely objective, meaning This bread as it is, most probably ὡς τοῦτο would have been used, not τοῦτο: this appears from the fact that in Greek, as well as in Latin, generally speaking, the demonstrative or the relative pronoun, when it is used to define objectively, is attracted in gender not to the predicate of its own clause but to its own antecedent in the previous: see Coloss. i. 24. For the usage in this text comp. Livy, cxxi (= boves) avertere praedam, the booting being the effect of cattle carried off. (See Acts ii. 16, τοῦτο εἰρήνη και ἀκοή and Acts vii. 10, ὀφρὸς ἁρπαν.) The dogma of transubstantiation is a baseless fabric, apparently founded in part upon ignorance of linguistic usage.

25. After the same manner also he took the cup when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft

... for a remembrance of me.

... in my blood.' Emphasis here on the my, with a tacit reference to the typical 'blood of bulls and of goats.' An emphasis should be placed on the word new also: this from its position. Full sense: 'this cup is the instrument of the new covenant, i.e. of its consecration in my blood.' In St. Luke xxii. 20 (where the immaterial is in the Greek is not) we have the same truth in the same form, save that there it is 'in my blood,' not 'in my blood 'as here: but in Matthew and in Mark...
I. CORINTHIANS. XI.

326 [v. 26—27.]

as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eat this

bread, and drink this cup, ye do the shew the Lord's death till he come.

27 Wherefore whatsoever shall eat

we find the same truth in another form; this (cup in the effects of its whole contents drunk) is my blood of the covenant; the construction being precisely the same as in the sentence, *This* (bread eaten) in its effects is *my body*. But when in ch. x. 16 we read that the *bread broken is the communion* (personal), we must supply mentally 'the medium of.' All these underlinks of logical connexion are, for the sake of brevity, so often omitted in uttered speech that they are at the time of speaking unconsciously supplied in the mind; but in the interpretation of written language it is sometimes not easy to trace these underlinks: the difficulty is to catch the colour of the context.

testament in my blood.] Double antitype, the new in my own: the new covenant, not of the law written (γράφματος, 2 Cor. iii. 6) but of the Spirit writing in the heart, established for ever in one Blood. This Blood is (1) poured (the ἐκχύσασθαι, of Luke xix. 20, is for us the aor. ἐκχύσατε) on the cross for atonement (2) given back from heaven with vivifying powers in the Eucharist. For in the great sacrifice, never to be repeated, it was poured once for the potential remission of all the sins of all mankind; in the sacraments it is applied often as the potential remission may become actual, for (as the learned Dean Jackson says) 'no sins are actually remitted before they are actually committed.' These features in the antitype will stand out clearer, if it be borne in mind that in the typical covenant-sacrifice there were two parties to the divine arrangement, God and man (Israel): the poured blood of the victim was therefore divided into two halves, one for scattering (Keil on Pentat.) on the altar with a view to reconciliation, the other, as given back from the altar, for sprinkling in the people with a view to cleansing or purifying. The blood, thus divided, was regarded as one blood in itself, two in its uses. In close harmony with these typical facts is the admirable comment of Chrysostom, who makes our Lord say, 'I have become a possessor with you (μετοικών) of flesh and blood for your sakes: again that flesh and blood, by which I have become akin to you, I give back to you.' Clearly the sacramental *Communion* is the sequel and the effect of the sacrificial Covenant: διαβάθη potentiates κοσμωτικά.

N.B. The word διαβάθη in Israelite usage means covenant, in Hellenic testament: the Greek word for covenant is συνθήκη. The under-lying sense common to both uses is arrangement or settlement: this and nothing more: e.g. διαβάθη τὸν (Xen.) 'to arrange a quarrel.' With which of the two circumstantial senses 'covenant' or 'testament' the essential sense chooses to clothe itself, the context alone determines. It is curious that in this passage of St. Paul διαβάθη means the wearing of covenant in the presence of the blood, *of testament* in prospect of the death (v. 26). No one word in English comoines the two meanings. The *blood of the covenant* and the *death of the testator* are phrases well-known from E.p. Hebr.

It is called God's covenant because He makes the whole arrangement, of His free grace bestowing on man not only the inheritance attached to the covenant on stated conditions, but also spiritual gifts whereby man fulfilling the conditions may be made meet for the inheritance. On these grounds, perhaps, the A.V. rendering of testament is better than covenant, which rather implies some equality in the two parties to the arrangement: see Hebr. ix. 16.

*this do ye.* The analogue of the Paschal *sue will do* (σωτήρος) in Exod. xxiv. 7: "The people answered, all the words which the Lord hath said will we do. And Moses took the blood and sprinkled on the people and said, Be bold the blood of the covenant." After the sprinkling of the blood on the altar and before sprinkling it on the people the answer was given, 'We will do.'

in remembrance of me.] Rather 'for the remembrance.' When the typical Passover was instituted, 'the Lord said unto Moses and Aaron, This day shall be unto you for a memorial, and ye shall keep it a feast to the Lord throughout your generations: these last words correspond to the words until the Lord come in the antitypical Institution of the Eucharist. As conditions were annexed to the Mosaic covenant, so to the Christian in the words of our Lord, *This do ye as oftest as ye thus eat and drink; do what I have done, first give thanks for good (εὐξεῖα) and speak the word of good (εὐδοκία), that God's earthborn gifts of the bread and wine offered by you may in their use become to you His heavenly food of the blessed Body and Blood.

28. Connexion: "this do for the remembrance of me, for as often as." *This bread:* τότε, not in demonstrative sense, but in predicative, "the bread of the future thus consecrated": comp. V. ea fama vagatur, 'a rumour to that effect.'
this bread, and drink this cup of the
Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of
the body and blood of the Lord.
28 But let a man examine him-
self, and so let him eat of that bread,
and drink of that cup.
29 For he that eateth and drinketh
unworthily, eateth and drinketh

These mystical effects then are the veritable Flesh of the glorified Body, that living Bread from heaven which is the Flesh of Christ (Joh. vi. 51), of which heavenly Bread the earthly bread is to the faithful receiver in eum et suum the material cause. This divine flesh, spiritually eaten, assimilates to our bodily substance the material bread physically eaten: to this effect Augustine, Hic panis sacer comestus non mutatur in nostram substantiam sed nos potius in se transmutat sibiique unit et similes facit, quod non facit panis communis. The same Latin Father adds Credet et manducasse; true, for as in the heart the regenerate man is circumcised without hand, as with the eyes of the heart also the enlightened man sees (Ephes. i. 18), so with "the mouth of the spirit" the inner man of the new creation eats that Bread from Heaven which is the Flesh of Christ. This text compared with v. 26, 27 seems to shew (1) that unworthy communicants and worthy alike declare the Lord's death; (2) that he who has eaten the sacramental bread without appropriating the blessed ephemeris thereof is not after eating the bread that which he was before, let alone his liability to corrective judgments in the shape of bodily sufferings for non-discernment of the divine human Body. For the deeper teachings of these important verses see Note at the end of the chapter.

29. Unworthily in this verse should be omitted. Render, for the eater and drinker (who beyond eating and drinking has no ulterior view to the sacramental gifts, who eats ἀτροφον, not ἐκ ἄτροφον as well) eateth and drinketh judgment to himself, not discerning the body. Damnation of the A.V. is wrong. Bentley and others make the clause not discerning, &c., to be not a modal definition of the subject, but a condition ing clause = if he do not discern or appreciate: but does not this construction belong rather to Attic usage than to Hellenistic or Pauline?

The verb διακόπτω = to find the right and true by searching between two objects having some points of resemblance in common; διακόπτω verum et fictum amorem (Cic.) Here it means to reach the essence by sifting from it the accidents, to discern the spiritual substance beyond the natural circumstance, to find and appreciate the phenomenon of the Body, discriminating it from the phenomenon of the

ye do iberw.] Present imperfect: action
continuing into the future: ye do proclaim
down the centuries as they roll to their ter-
minus the Advent: The Lord's death ye
thus declare onwards until the day of His
coming, when the kingdom long ago be-
quethed (Luke xxii. 39) shall be bestowed
and the Inheritance long ago released by the
death of the Testator (Hebr. ix. 16) shall
become a possession for ever, and the Testator
Himself shall appear as Executor. "The
Lord's death" has other correlations besides
that of His Father's kingdom 'in which the
fruit of the vine shall be drunk new': see Col.
i. 22; Rom. v. 10. In the clause till be come,
the absence of the "to" denotes in St. Paul's
mind the absolute certainty of the Coming
despite the uncertainty of the time.

27. Wherefore] Inference of St. Paul
from the words of the institution revealed
to him by Christ Himself. The statelessness of
the six articles in the Greek draws attention
to this solemn declaration. Or drink: the or gives
no countenance to 'communion under one
kind;' for though the particle is disjunctive it
does not tend to put asunder the bread and
the cup: and even if it did, it would just as
easily allow the cup without the bread to be
taken as the bread without the cup: so
Bengel. The word unworthily, as the
general context (v. 19-21) clearly shows,
points to irreverence of manner, which of
itself argues unmeetness of spirit. The or is,
in fact, preferable to and, as in the prevailing
disorderliness of the neophyte Church in
Corinth this or that dissembler would take
the bread reverently and the cup irreverently,
or vice versa. Formal unseemliness in eating
or drinking implies moral unworthiness in
the eater and drinker. The meaning then is,
if a man eat or drink unworthily, he is liable
to judgment (what kind of judgment, see
v. 29) for contempt "of the body and the
blood of the Lord." (Here Εξωτερικος under
guilt or obligation to punishment, 'in-hold',
or 'in-bond' to . . .)

28. Emphasis on examine: metaphor from
metal-testing: let him approve himself, sifting
what is refuse from what is sterling, the
carnal from the spiritual. And so—after
such examination—let him eat—the grammatical
structure now changes—no longer
'this bread' but 'of the bread,' the of
(ἐξ) by position emphatic, seeming to de-
note, precisely as in ch. x. 17 (see note
there) the mystical effects of the bread eaten.
I. CORINTHIANS. XI.

30. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.
31. For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.
32. But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.
33. Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.
34. And if any man hunger, let him eat at home; that ye come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

bread. In these verses the A. V. renderings are not happy: it should be noted that crima means 'judgment' temporal, such as 'divers diseases and sundry kinds of death': these judgments are intended to be corrective and remedial in this life, lest a worse thing in the next befal the frivolous communicant: that worse thing is catacrisma or final judgment to death eternal, damnation, the fearful but necessary alternative of ineffectual crimata. The assonance of these several cognate words, the recurring ring of the common cri, is not easy to reproduce in English.

30. many sleep.] Rather, fall asleep not a few. Weak and sickly, physically and perhaps morally.
31. Connexion from v. 29: not spiritually discerning the Body, and on that account liable to bodily affections, which we might escape by duly searching our hearts beforehand, for if our own selves we morally discerned, we should not be judged. There are two discernings, the one leading to the other, (1) of the inner man receiving, (2) of the inner gifts received: how can these last be appropriated unless there be a correlative appropriativeness, such as the expectancy of faith and surrender of the will unto receptivity of spirit—all fruits of moral sifting? If this duty be practised, the fruitifying seed of sacramental grace will fall no longer on rocky stubbornness or fallow indifference, but on the honest heart of diligent preparation well exercised with the moral ploughshare of self-examination. It is scarcely possible to imagine a more inaccurate rendering of this important ver. than the following:—"If we had judged (diakriημεν) ourselves, these judgments would not have fallen upon us from God (οντι δυ εκπιρομενον)."
32. condemned with the world.] Not the judgment of the church at the Advent, but the final judgment of the world, to which careless Christians are in danger of being relegated: see ch. vi. and ix. at end: many crimata far better than the one irreversible catacrisma.
33. when ye come.] Rather 'as ye come' or in coming together. See notes on vv. 18, 20.
34. that ye come not together unto condemnation.] Rather may not: final, not definitive use of τοτε. Unto condemnation: render, for a judgment; 'to get a bodily affliction.' When I come; rather, according as I come: the presence of the αυ points to uncertainty of the time and of the event: for this use comp. Ἀσχ. Eum μαννόνα γαρ ὑς ἐν ἀγίῳ θείῳ.
I. CORINTHIANS. XI.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on verses 4, 28.

4. Some eminent scholars—Estius, Bengel, Neander—take the other view of the natural head. But, it may be objected, if St. Paul had meant to describe the man's physical head, he would probably have omitted αὐτοῦ or his after τῷ κεφαλῶν: compare ver. 10, where αὐτοῦ or ber is under similar circumstances omitted. In fact instead of using the more ordinary phrase κατακαλώμενος ἔχων the Apostle prefers the more homely and graphic and somewhat contemptuous phrase ' wearing (drapery) from head,' intending more suo with a touch of sarcasm to point an epigrammatic antithesis between the two heads. See on this frequent manner of his ch. viii. Introduction, and ver. 10: and vi. 12.

A third view, that strives to combine both the literal and metaphorical senses into a single double, is one that tends to mar simplicity of interpretation. It is, that "the physical head of the man is to be regarded as the representative of his spiritual Head," quoted by Alford. This compromise serves rather to confuse: one sense at a time is enough for one word. Is it not a strange idea also, that a man's head, whether representative or not, should be put to shame?

28. A brief abstract upon the subject of this verse may be inserted here, from Bibli. Psych. p. 411, E.T.: "There is no such thing as a saving effect of the sacraments that occurs ex opere operato, that is not conditioned upon faith. Without faith there is attained no reflex possession of the sacramental gifts. But even in the case where the faith of the receiver does not respond to the sacraments, they remain in their substance and power, what they are in themselves by virtue of the immutable will of God, which is linked to no human condition. He who is baptized, even if he have not received baptism in a right mental comprehension, needs not to be baptized again: the substantial contents of the sacrament have in him a living presence once for all. Let him by faith allow this presence to realize itself in a reflex manner in him to his salvation, which (salvation) he already has nigh to his inward self actu directo. And he who does not receive the Lord's Supper in true faith, still receives Christ's body and blood, and the sacramental gifts are in him, in the hope that he may allow them to rebound to salvation as disciplining powers (1 Cor. xi. 29-32). They are brought into immediate nearness to the man: they are appropriated to him by God, in order that he may appropriate them to himself by means of faith." To which may be added; as in the sphere of divine grace, so is it in God's world of nature: in the case of a blind man, the eye is in the light, but no light in the eye: the light is near and around him, seeking admittance, and so he is not in darkness; darkness is in himself: yet he is in a better position than if the darkness were double: for then, even if his blindness were healed, he could 'never see light.'

THE CHARIISMATA, OR EXTRAORDINARY GIFTS OF GRACE IN CONNECTION WITH CHAPTERS XII. AND XIV.

The first divine impulse, which in the form of charismata or miraculous grace-gifts was communicated to the new creation of the Christian Church, was destined in the course of two or three centuries to subside by degrees into the quiet pulses and more regular life of a growing organism. The infancy of Christianity from the day of Pentecost was, in all who yielded themselves to the divine influence, emphatically marked by depth of purpose and power of action and in particular by extraordinary experiences of mystical raptures manifested in the threefold ecstasy, mystic, prophetic, glossolalic. This marvellous light shone all the brighter from its marked contrast with the marginal darkness of the heathen world that environed the luminous centre. This initial outpouring of miraculous endowments seems to have settled down slowly within more defined limits into a calm current of spiritual graces and of acquired knowledge. As regards the singular manifestations recorded in these chapters, the following remarks may help to clear away some of the hæse (ἀσάθεταν, Chrysostom in loco) which to us moderns, owing to our lack of experimental knowledge, continues to veil these mysteries of the Apostolic ecstasies.

That which in man thinks and wills and experiences is called in general πνεῦμα, or spirit. This noblest and innermost region of human nature is self-
I. CORINTHIANS. XII.

conscious, and appears to be tripartite. For Gregory of Nyssa makes πνεύμα and νόης and λόγος constituents or factors of a human trinity in the human spirit. Thus there will be a spirit within spirit, a special within the general, something like a citadel in a city or a keep in a castle or a shrine in a temple: indeed, Bengel calls it penetrare. This culminating point seems to be the quintessence of man’s spirit-nature: it is the meeting-place between God condescending and man apprehending; the central point of contact and of communion between the divine Spirit and the human, which are two substantially kindred natures, for spiritus humanus et substantia et efficientia simillimus divino est. This eminent nature, towering above the nous and the logos and yet in constant communication with both, excepting cases of ecstatic glossolalia, is the serene region of immediate experience of the divine love and also of immediate intuition into divine mysteries. All three, nous and logos and pneuma, are in their nature consubstantial, i.e. of one spiritual contexture; and thus all three together make up the human spirit, regarded as one division in the human trichotomy (1 Thess. v. 23).

From this special constituent pneuma of the general spirit-nature in man we now come to the other constituents, the nous and the logos. That by which a man thinks and determines himself is called νοεις or γνωρις, etymon, Sanscrit root gnā = spiritual perception, Lat. gnāvis. It is the thinking and willing faculty, flexible to the σαρκις in the natural man, flexible to the πνεύμα in the spiritual man: swayed by the flesh, it is called νοεις τῆς σαρκινς (Col. ii. 18); controlled by the spirit, it is termed νοεις τοῦ πνεύματος οτ mens animi, which of course is to be distinguished from the above-described πνεύμα τοῦ νοεις or “shrine of the temple” = spiritus or animus mentis. This distinction is necessary to a clearer apprehension of ch. xiv. It appears then that the believing nous or capacity of reflexive thought is a spiritual or rational faculty, directed heavenward to the ultimate root and essence of things, ever striving through and beyond God’s visible phanomena to discern His unseen noēmena. The product of this nous is logos, the speech or word of a personal nature; for it should be borne in mind that the human spirit, regarded as a constituent of the trichotomy, is endowed with self-consciousness: it is spirit capable of speech. Accordingly, nous is to logos as thought speaking to thought spoken or word, even as a silent well-spring to a babbling brook (Philo) or as Moses to Aaron (Philo). Wherefore speech is the capacity, the efficiency, the embodiment or investiture of thought, out of which, as out of cognate stuff, it is woven, for the two are the same nature in different stages of quiescence or of advancement; both are essentially identical, inasmuch as thought is inward speaking and speech is thinking aloud. To this effect Eusebius on Ps. lvi. 5. “Our speech (logos), which has its substance in syllables and words and names and is uttered by means of tongue and voice, is not properly to be called speech; for it has a producer in another, the inward speech: this is the true logos.” This last quotation and the general substance of the above remarks are borrowed from Bibl. Psych. iv, Sect. V.

It may help to elucidate one or two texts in these chapters if it be borne in mind that this triplity of specialties in the one nature of the human spirit is, or seems to be, the created image of the Eternal archetype in the Tripersonal Godhead: wherein the Father, if He may be designated analogously to the Word, is the absolute Noei, while the Son, as the Logos, is “the one eternal self-thought of God (ενόημα τοῦ Θεοῦ, Clem. Alex.), the Thought of His whole proper nature, made objective and personal in the Word of God. This everlasting Word is Himself the divine Archetype of the human logos, of the thought of Ego, whereby man becomes objective to himself as a person.” Does not this hidden truth unconsciously transpire to us in such familiar phrases as “Said I to myself, and myself said again unto me?”

As therefore in the Spirit-nature of the Godhead there is personally distinguished the Holy Ghost, so within the
I. CORINTHIANS. XII.

spirit-nature of man, or pneuma in comprehensive sense, stands out the culminating spirit or pneuma in concentrated sense. There is a beautiful passage in Claudian Mamercus de Statu Animae, i. 26, apposite to this subject, only let spirit-nature be substituted for the word soul; Ego et Pater, saith the Lord to the soul, et Caritas nostra unus Deus sumus; tu mens rationalis et verbum et diletio tua unus es homo, ad similitudinem auctoris sui factus, non ad æqualitatem, creatus nempe, non genus. Recede ab his qua infra te sunt, minus formosa quam tu es: accede formaci forme, quo possis esse formasor. From the above passage it appears that the pure and concentrated spirit of man's spirit-nature is the meeting-place of God and man; of God lavishing gifts of love and instilling that peace which passeth all nodes, and of man receiving and adoring; in fact, the divine Caritas, filling the human diletio (which diletio is a capacity of the Caritas and by nature akin thereunto), like mighty sunshine filling common daylight. It should be noted moreover that the greater attracts the lesser, the divine the human, and sometimes, as in the ecstasy, absorbs and transports even: for there is an affinity of essence between the two, even as between a magnet of steel attracting and a bar of iron attracted; or, as in the production of the electric light, between the two carbonic poles, positive and negative, the positive ready to communicate the current, the negative apt to receive the same; but these illustrations are not to be pushed beyond their terrene limits.

This idea that it is the inmost spirit of man's spirit-nature which comes into immediate contact and ineffable communion with the Holy Spirit, will serve to account for the order of sequence which in the cardinal texts of ch. xii. 4, 5, 6, St. Paul assigns to the three Divine Persons, the order namely of an ascending climax, beginning with the Holy Ghost. This idea may also tend to throw some light into the recesses of the two ecstasies of prophesying and of uttering with tongues; for that which is common to both these divine raptures is consciousness exalted above the human sphere, yet consciousness at the same time exercised in man's what may be termed shrinal spirit. In this penetrale, possessed in the ecstasy by the divine influence, experience or tasting of heavenly mysteries seems to precede intuition or comprehension, even as Bernhard well observes, "Nisi gustaveris, non videbis: manna absconditum est, nomen novum est quod nemo scit nisi qui accipit. Non illud erudito sed unctio docet, non scientia sed conscientia comprehendit." It may here be remarked, in reference to ch. xiv., that in the glossolalia communications between a man's higher pneuma and his nodes, or between the 'citadel and the city,' are during the ecstasy interrupted and suspended; in the prophetic utterance they are maintained without interruption.

CHAPTER XII.

1 Spiritual gifts are divers, 7 yet all to profit unitah. 8 And to that end are diversely bestowed: 12 that by the like proportion, as the members of a natural body tend all to the 16 mutual decency, 22 service, and 26 sus-
cour of the same body; 27 so we should do one for another, to make up the mystical body of Christ.

NOW concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

CHAP. XII. 1. concerning the Spirit's gifts.] Brief summary: the general distinctive feature of speaking in the Spirit is the confession of Jesus as the Lord, but the special utterances of the Spirit, vouchsafed to individuals for the welfare of the community, differ from one another. One and the same Spirit is the supreme source of these varied endowments, just as in the natural world a single water is the higher source of innumerable irrigations. From ver. 12 onwards the unity of the Spirit expressed in a variety of grace-gifts is illustrated by the unity of the human body, which consists of a
2. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.

3. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.

4. Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5. And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all.

7. But the manifestation of the multiplicity of members in harmonious combination. From the reciprocal service rendered by all the members to each other, not one of which is out of place or without its proper use, an inference is to be drawn that, as Christians are constituents of a spiritual organism, none of them should depreciate either himself or any of his fellows; even the need and worth of such as are endowed with fewer or inferior gifts should be fully recognised. Still there ought to be a striving after the more excellent barisma, and the Apostle (ver. 31) will show the Corinthians the way thereunto. In this verse τῶν πνευμάτων is clearly neuter, not (as many) masculine.

2. Render, Ye know that when ye were heathen, as haply ye were led, ye were led away to worship those idols so speechless: those mute images which, so far from inspiring speech, were not able to speak themselves! No doubt, in St. Paul's mind the leading power here is Satan, who behind the old-world machinery of idolatry and of oracles was by the ministries of his delusive demons the wily wirepuller of moral mischief: ch. x. 20. In this verse the result of being drawn at all is the being drawn away: attraction becomes absorption. The opposite to this leading astray is expressed in Rom. viii. 14. (The ἀφί ναν as on occasions. The Greek parallels quoted by Alford are no parallels at all, because in them the ἀφί occurs in the apodosis; here it occurs in the prothesis: in fact here ἀφί = ἀνὰ τοῖς.)

3. Wherefore.] Sense and connection: 'Because the experiences of spirit-gifted men could not be known to you, O Corinthians, in your then heathen infatuation, and inasmuch as in your letter to me you put the question—Who in general is a God-inspired speaker and who not, and by what moral touchstone are we to test them?—learn ye who have abandoned that wretched once for the happy now, that the criterion of Christian inspiration is the confession of Jesus as Lord, a divine watchword that can only be uttered from the heart in the power of God's Holy Spirit.' There is indeed a terrible negative running parallel to this positive, which is, anathesma is Jesus. This execution comes from tongues not set in motion by the Holy Ghost. The Christian says Lord (verbum solenne in LXX. for Hebr. JEHovaH) is Jesus! The antichristian Jew (see Bengel) says Accursed is Jesus! Render λέγει τινι and σαιτι σαυ, and read ιησους. The personal name Jesus is better than the official title Christ here, as denoting: the historical Messiah of the Christian's faith, the Lord exalted to the same throne with God.

4. Connection: there is no changeableness in the one watchword of the believing heart, no variation of sound in the one keynote of God-inspired speech, which is evermore Jesus is Lord! Yet, notwithstanding this constant and loyal monotone, there are manifold distinctions of barisma in the church. These miraculous endowments wrought by the grace of God, these supersensuous powers designed to operate for the edification of the community, and therefore appropriated to special individuals, adjusted in kind to their several natures and meted out in measure according to their capacities—some greater, others less—all proceed from one and the same Spirit. But corresponding to these distinctions of grace-gifts, all derived from the same Spirit, are distinctions of ministries all appointed by the same Lord, definite channels within which the grace-gifts are manifested; and besides these two, there are, thirdly, distinctions of miracles all springing from the same God, who worketh them all in all, who being the first Cause originates all the gifts in all the gifted.

This passage, from Chrysostom and Theodoret downwards, has been ever regarded as a bulwark of Trinitarian truth. For reasons why the order of Personal sequence commences with the Holy Ghost, see Introduction to this chapter. It should be carefully observed that here the same Spirit connotes the Person—this is quite clear from the analogues in the context of the same Lord and the same God; but in ver. 3, where it is stated that it is a moral impossibility to say Lord Jesus save in the element of Holy Spirit, the influence of the living Power comes to view, the shine of the sun, the divine spirit-atmosphere which the inner man breathes when the outer man speaks.

7. One and the same Tripersonal Deity
Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit;

9 To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;

10 To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to ano-

originates and operates: yet in the Christian society to individuals is given the manifestation of the Spirit with a view to the common weal.

8. These nine charismata are not easy to classify, and probably the Apostle had in view no strict logical arrangement.

The word of wisdom.] i.e. discourse, bearing upon the higher wisdom and deeper doctrines of God's counsel of redemption; exposition that elucidates these inner truths and makes them plain for practical purposes.

The word of knowledge implies a less practical than speculative discussion of the same profound truths regarded as the divine philosophy of Christianity: it means discourse, theoretic or scientific, about the profound mysteries; see ch. xiii. 2.

9. Faith here denotes something higher than the fides salutifica, common to all Christians, and something wider than the fides miraculosa of Matt. xvii. 20, being the mother or condition not only of cures and of miracles, but also of prophetic speech and of discernment of spirits: to this effect Meyer, who also well terms it a berosism of faith. "To another grace-gifts of cures:" tiaura = miraculous cures of bodily distempers effected not by natural skill, but by spiritual power: under this class came castings out of demons.

10. To another the working of miracles.] Or more exactly, "expressions in act of God-given powers:" under this class came restoring the dead to life.

to another prophecy.] Render: prophesying. The Apostle in these chapters lays considerable stress on the gift of prophetic announcement. In this charisma, 'prediction of the future' is only one of several forms of revelation or of vision communicated to the prophet or seer. The idea of foretelling does not essentially belong to the word προφητής; the πρό has a kind of local reference.

The prophet is one who, standing in the foreground of God, announces on divine impulse and with divine power truths unveiled to his spiritual perception. These truths, often significant of salvation, it is his office to report for the welfare of the community. He receives them in his own higher spirit; unto which, as to an observatory of heavenly visions, his life for a season withdraws itself, and where shrinking from all discourse with others, it becomes "a seeing eye, a hearing ear, a perceiving sense" for the things of eternity or of the future. What the prophet thus receives in the sanctuary of his spirit or meeting-place of the two worlds, that he announces through the medium of the subordinate mind and its outflowing speech: for in the prophetic ecstasy the three constituents of the spirit-nature, nous and logos and pneuma, continue in unbroken communication with each other. If he be a seer, he contemplates that which is seen, not as it is in itself, but as it comes to view in a symbol: this symbol is divinely formed for the purpose and often accommodated to the man's natural bent or educational mode of thought, being chiefly framed out of materials found in his subjectivity. The prophet is not indeed, like the subject of the mystic ecstasy, rapt or caught up to the confines of the third heaven or blissfully translated into the presence of God; but he contemplates the reciprocal immanence of the human spirit and of the divine, there arise manifestations to his mind in a clothing or colouring borrowed from his individual nature. The supersensuous which he is permitted to behold, passes immediately (as remarked above) through his own nous into logos, and thus in the form of speech travelling through his mouth out of himself enters the ears and the noés of the listening congregation and so becomes intelligible and therefore profitable to the assembled church: see ch. xiv. 3, 4, 5... Some of the above ideas are taken from Bibl. Psych. p. 420... It may be added that St. Paul (2 Cor. xii.) seems to have experienced the mystic ecstasy, in which abit animus, manet anima (Lactantius); and it is said that Thomas Aquinas in his last illness, awaking out of a long mystic ecstasy, exclaimed Arcana verba audivi. In the prophetic ecstasy, the arcana verba are reported, as they are received, for the good of the church.

In the glossolalia or exalted utterance of tongues in ecstatic elevation of spirit, alluded to in ver. 11 of this chapter, the supreme spirit of the ecstatic utterer, encompassed and penetrated by the Holy Spirit, in adoring raptures of supernatural prayer (spiritual oratio, Tertull.) soaring beyond the range of
ther divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues:

11 But all these worketh that one

the rational apprehension, fails to find its natural expression in rational speech or logos begotten of νοῦς: accordingly it resorts to supernatural expression of blissful experience, not indeed in speech engendered of the mind, but in a tongue created of the Spirit. These instantaneously spirit-created tongues appear now to be in their character as little known to ourselves, separated from them as we are by so many centuries, as they were then unintelligible to the Corinthian church, unless there happened to be present in the assembly one specially gifted with the charisma of interpretation of tongues. One thing seems certain, that this extemporised creation and irremovable utterance of unknown tongues was quite distinct from the speaking in foreign languages (Acts ii.). In the charisma of glossolalia the ecstatic became so to speak λειψάνις: he was during his rapture of adoration an inspired γλωσσοκοιτος.

10.—(continued.) To another discernings of spirits.] i.e. in each instance of utterance, the power of rightly judging whether the utterance comes from the Holy Ghost or from the human spirit unaided or from delusive spirits of demons (1 Tim. i. 4): “for there was at that time a great diversity of false prophets, the devil ambitiously striving to plant in rivalry by the side of God’s ‘Truth his own Lie.” Chrysostom.

divers kinds of tongues.] These unknown tongues of divers kinds are perhaps to be identified with the new tongues of Mark xvi. 17. If so, were these new tongues or γλώσσαι καυκός connected with the new creation or καινὴ κρίσις? Rapturous ejaculations of the new man or καινὸς αὐθαῦσιος? Glimpses or specimens, pledges or foretaste (passing with the passing ecstasy) of the future glorified speech of the glorified saints? They cannot be identified, as stated before, with the foreign or other tongues than Aramaic, which brake forth from the Galileans “according as the Spirit granted them to give voice” (περιστράφθηκας) in Acts ii., because glossolalia is always connected with supernatural prayer and ecstatic adoration. The kinds of tongues in this text of St. Paul may be rather identified with those of the second outpouring of the Spirit—upon the Gentiles—described in Acts x. 46: and equally so with those of another effusion upon twelve neophytes (Acts xix. 6) who “uttered in tongues and prophesied,” where, as in these chapters, the two distinct charismata are conjoint. It may be added that the three above cited instances from the Acts of App. In (1) the disciples wereinstantaneously filled (ἐπηλθέως) with Holy Spirit before they spake in foreign tongues, in (2) “the free gift of the Holy Ghost is outpouring upon us” (ἐσορθάουσαν, Acts x. 44), and then they proceeded and continued to utter in the kind and in the degree (ἐλίδου καθός, Acts ii. 4) in which the Spirit granted them to give voice. In the glossolalia the divine Spirit was the immediately originative and steadily operative producer in the human spirit of new tongues moulded by new views and descriptive of a new state and fitted for high intercourse with God, while the human spirit again was the conscious recipient of the same and the delightfully producer of them in utterances worthy to give expression to its own sensations of adoring jubilancy. The plural kinds because the kinds of tongues would in tone and in form, like faithful echoes, correspond to the kinds of divine communications: these last would vary in degree, if not in kind also, accommodating themselves with ready elasticity to the individual nature and capacity of the human spirit-organ.

11. Emphasis on all, which has for its correlate the one and the same. Sense is: what a diversity of results, but what unity of principle behind them all! Even as in artificial waterworks, or in a playing fountain, numerous jets and spouts and rills, more or less brilliant, are different manifestations of one unseen element, operative of them all.

dividing severally to each.] Rather, distinguishing properly to each, i.e. in kind and mode and measure suited to the receptivity of the individual. In σώ. 4, 5, διαφοράς means distinctions, not ‘distributions’ as Meyer, who so renders it because he thinks that διαφορά here must mean distributing: rather διαφοράς or διαθέσις to express that idea. The personality of the Holy Ghost is distinctly implied in the word listēb.

12. The multiplicity of gifts harmonised
13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

In the unity of the Giver is illustrated by the human organism of one body in many members and many members in one body. Similarly in Aristotle the purpose of the state is the unity of a whole, a totality in manifold harmony consisting of members mutually dependent and organically connected with each other and with the entire community. This illustration is immediately transferred from the natural organism of the human body to the spiritual organism of the Church here designated by the title of its head, the Christ.

13. The harmonious growth and gradual coalition of the many-membered community into a single totality in the all-combining unity of the Holy Ghost, is founded upon the fact that in one spirit also we all into one body were baptized. One and all are here again, as so often in St. Paul's epistles, in contrasted correlation; they are, in fact, mutually complementary: the idea expanded is, unity must dominate multiplicity, until the myriads upon myriads of living members of what nationality soever and of what social status soever, all of them one by one engrafted into the church through the coming centuries of the Gentile Aeon, shall from a growing multiplicity become a settled totality at the Parousia. Into one body with a view to forming one body: common use of εἰς; compare εἰς ἐπιθέσεως with a view to obtaining remission.

14. Render, For the body also is not... Again appears the illustration of unequal charismata from the human organism, now in curious detail. The connection with the foregoing is plain enough: we many members of the Church or the Church were all drenched with one Spirit outpoured from a single fountain, yet not outpoured in a single form of manifestation common to all believers, but in several kinds and degrees of manifestation fitted to each receiver: for the human body also is not one undifferentiated member but many diversified. Apposite to this illustration is the fable (Liv. ii. 33) addressed by Menenius Agrippa to the mutinous plebes.

15. Render afresh, If the foot should say, Because I am not hand, I am not of the body, it is not on account of this (peevish ejaculation) not of the body—is it? The first not negatives the second: the mark of interrogation is better away: if it is put, it amounts only to a semi-interrogation like our eb? or is it? Here ῶπατι=along of and τοῦτο=this querulous declaration uttered by the discontented foot as deploring its own lot of inferiority to the hand. Others explain: the foot does not, because it is not hand, on that account cease to be part of the body. The application to ambitious rivalries and contentious jealousies among the mercurial Corinthians is obvious.

16. Render, If the ear should say, Because I am not eye...
17. If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?
18. But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.
19. And if they were all one member, where were the body?
20. But now are they many members, yet but one body.
21. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee; nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.
22. Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary:
23. And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely.

17. Render, If all the body were eye, where were the hearing? For example, we might say, if all the church were overseer or bishop, where would be evangelist or preacher? The two are mutually complementary; they are necessary one to the other and both to the community.

It should be noted with what skill St. Paul places together foot and band as belonging to the middle classes of the bodily society, ear and eye as movis in the highest circles: the reason is not far to seek; jealousies arise between the almost equal: where much disparity of rank is, there no rivalry is: for true is the ancient proverb καὶ καταφέρεται καὶ κατεργάσεται, θείον θείων, potter with potter, joiner with joiner jars. (Hesiod. Op. 25.)

18. But now, you see, God set: not bath set, the aorist to points the time of man's creation. Now in logical, not temporal sense: as it is.

19. Again an abductio ad absurdum as in ver. 17. Sense is: if all instead of being many were one member, where would be the body, which in its very idea has many members?

20. Render, But now, as many members, so one body. The μέν and δὲ present different aspects of the same idea. It may also be rendered many members, yet one body.

21. Hitherto this figure of a manifold membership, coadjudged and harmonised in a single corporeity, has been employed to rebuke the discontented inferiors among the spirit-gifted in the Corinthian church: it is now further employed to rebuke the contemptuous superiors. Connection: if it be absurd that the foot should murmur at its own position in the body and should covet the somewhat higher capacity of hand, equally preposterous is it that the head should despise the feet or the eye look down upon the hand. All opposites or variants, high and low, weak and strong, delicate and robust, comely and uncomely (i.e. parts of the body reputed by man, ρα βοσκοῦσα, to be uncomely, but being ethically rather than physically such), are all absolutely necessary to one another, and that for the furtherance of the individual and of the common weal. What use A lacks, that Z supplies: for how can the head walk through air without the co-operation of the feet? Or how can the eye without the hand, or the hand without the eye write a letter? The proper use of both organs, directive and executive, must b combined.

22. Nay, on the contrary, what parts of the body seem to be contemptible, so far from meeting with contemptuousness, actually receive from us attention much more (a fortiori), as being absolutely necessary in themselves and actually distinguished by us with more than ordinary honour in the form of raiment. There seems to be an allusion in these verses to Gen. iii. 21, "The Lord God made coats of skins and clothed them." These coats of skins were as honour covering shame, i.e. material honour covering moral shame, and in Targum of Onkelos are called "clothing of honour."

23, 24, 25. upon these we bestow more abundant honour.] Rather, On these we put in the form of apparel honour extraordinary in comparison with the comely face which with the neck and hands and feet is left bare and exposed to weather and to view. In these verses the rendering and the punctuation of A.V. are both faulty. Put a comma after the first γίνεται at end of ver. 23, and a full stop or dash after the second γίνεται, and render all together, And our uncomely or unseemly parts have in the adornment of attire a comeliness more exceeding, whereas our comely parts have or feel no need that they should be decked with "the clothing of honour." Then in the sentence immediately following, the but (ἀλλά) sums up the whole argument with emphatic and authoritative abruptness; render; But, the truth is, God it was who tempered the body together giving or assigning to that which shrinks behind the rest, a more exuberant honour, in the extraneous and superadded (περισσώς) garniture of apparel,
parts have more abundant come-
liness.
24 For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked:

25 That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another.

Critical notes on the above: It is plain on the surface of the language that St. Paul here almost personifies the human body and members. The last clause, "have the same solicitude", perhaps rather than care, proves this. Such personification easily accounts for the middle voice in τῆς ὑποστολῆς = that which feels its own shortcoming in comparison with other parts of the body: it is the middle voice of consciousness: see ch. i. 7, and note. In ver. 25, that there should be, ἵνα is used in the subjectively ecstatic sense denoting contemplated result: A.V. quite right in its rendering, not right Alford and Meyer.

More exceeding or exuberant means in ver. 24 a seemliness in excess or surplusage of the other members, and denotes nature adorned versus the same nature unadorned, i.e. God's gift of clothing added to God's gift of creation.

26. On this text Chrysostom shrewdly comments to this effect: "As when a chance a thorn is planted in the heel, all the body manifests a fellow-feeling; back bends, paunch and thighs are drawn together, hands like attendants or esquires approach the wounded part and proceed to extract the painful fixture: head stoops, eyes look sad, the brow is delved with parallels of solicitude." In the above all the members, feeling and expressing sympathy with one member suffering, correspond to the bomo or ego in Plato's Polit. p. 462: When one's finger is hurt, such is the fellow-feeling which spreads along the body to the soul until it reaches the ruling principle that, the whole condoling with the part afflicted, the man says not "my finger is in pain," but I have a pain in my finger (δυσημόσις τοῦ δικτυλίου ἄχαλε)."

27. Now ye are body of Christ.] According to St. Paul every single church, whether Corinthian or Ephesian, is either the ideal Temple of God or, as here, the ideal Body of Christ. Each Christian community is the Church Universal in miniature New Test.—VOL. III.
the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. 29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles?

Word was God' (θεὸς). Meyer justly calls it qualitative.
This is one of many passages in St. Paul's epistles pointing to the inner doctrine, that as by virtue of our union with Adam we derive from him in the elements of our nature the ethical and physical substratum of his corporeity, so from our union with the new Head of the new Creation we are reconstituted out of the elements of Christ's hallowed Humanity and are here rudimentally consubstantiated with Him in the threefold nature of body and soul and spirit. Nothing short of this seems to satisfy the plain and simple language of St. Paul, here and elsewhere. Our incorporation into Christ, founded in baptism, strengthened and nourished in the Lord's Supper, issues in our complete spiritual con-corporeity with Him to be manifested at the Parousia.

28. in the church.] Catholic, not simply the Corinthian: comp. Ephes. i. 22. Apostles: for the origin and import of this title see notes on ch. ix. 1, and for the apostolate's elasticity of limits and for a full and able dissertation on the office see Bp. Lightfoot on Galat. p. 89-97. Prophets: see notes on ver. 10. Teachers: men whose natural gifts of teaching and acquired knowledge were enhanced by divine illumination. The Apostles

professed the manifold fulness of the Spirit, and could work as prophets, teachers, healers, utterers of tongues. Helps or services of belp, the duties of the diaconate, such as tending the sick and the poor. Governments, administrative functions of the episcopate—kinds of tongues, see notes on v. 10.

29. Terse and vehement application of the long drawn figure of the human organism, in a series of impassioned interrogatives. As much as to say, the members of the body—are they all eyes to oversee? All mouths to prophesy? All hands to lay on healing? All tongues to utter spirit-born and exquisite utterances?

Preposterous! Non omnia possimus omnes. In this list of gifts the utterance of tongues is placed last as being least: so Chrysostom.

31. Strive ye for the greater gifts, i.e. the more noble and useful: then with some abruptness, and besides—I proceed to show you a surpassing way, in the ensuing chapter or "Psalm of Love" as Meyer calls it. Upon the present imperfect tense of διερχομαι Bengel finely observes, jam ardet Paulus et fertur in amore. No need of ἀπ' here: an adverbial substitute for adjective not uncommon: "a par excellence way." Compare Eumenides, ὁ δεδομένων ἄφθαρτος.

CHAPTER XIII.

I. CORINTHIANS. XII. XIII. "[v. 29—1.

1 All gifts, 2, 3 how excellent soever, are nothing worth without charity. 4 The praises thereof, and 13 prelata before hope and faith.

CHAP. XIII.—After a difficult and tedious passage through the previous chapters, this eulogy of charity comes like a haven of rest. The moral drift of the chapter is simply this: while faith is necessary to salvation and hope desirable, love, which is in the spirit and in the will, is absolutely indispensable. It is that something without which anything, that we may do or suffer, becomes nothing. If faith and hope, being human, are "theological virtues," love is much more than this, being divine: for it is not merely an attribute to God Himself, but of His very essence. Hence the Holy Ghost was sometimes termed by the fathers Caritas, and the human spirit diletio or kindred capacity of the divine Caritas.

"Agape, charity or love," a word not found in Greek philosophy but "born in the bosom of Christianity," denotes brotherly love, which
2 And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up,
5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; 

6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; 

7 Bearth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. 

8 Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they
shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

through the Gentile Aeon straight at the Parousia and contemplates Charity, amid the dissolution of physical surroundings, standing upon the spiritual Creation now disincrusted from its material envelope, herself too disincumbered of alien time and of transitory knowledge and of phenomenal prophecysings and of sensational tongue-utterances, and at last triumphant in her own serene and untrammelled eternity, from which she had condescended for a season to be an exile with man. This idea, more or less, is substantially apparent from one or two terms in this verse significant of the Advent and also from the aorists future. It should be noted that oiôsere, stronger than oiôsore, means nothing like never.

Render and explain Charity never falleth — never but ever when all around is falling and in motion, remains steadfast and unmoved (Beal, assieves, âxiôsere suâminouera, Theodoret in loco); faileth of the A.V. not true to the true idea. Sense of the whole is, Charity being supersensuous and imperishable, shall abide the shaking of the things that are shaken abide alone unshaken; but as to your brilliant charisms, O Corinthians, at the Parousia prophecysings if there be (âsxe implies an easy air of indifference to things in themselves indifferent by comparison, save for a time as a mere scaffolding to God's building) they shall be done away, and tongues if there be, they shall cease, and knowledge if there be (searching, inquisitive knowledge), it shall be done away. For what is our present knowledge? Good, as far as it goes, but still nothing more than the alphabet of language or the rudiments of the true wisdom. And what are our glossolalies or tongue-utterings? Fleeting flashes, smart smatterings, fine stammerings of our spiritual infancy: but these preparatory prattlings shall at the Parousia be transfigured into articulation and intelligibility in the Paradisiacal speech of our spiritual manhood. For when our new humanity shall be completely consubstantial with the long ago glorified humanity of the ascended Christ, then shall the new tongues themselves be glorified, and our new spirit-given uttering shall become spirit-given speaking. And what again are these vaunted prophecysings? Good also, as coming from God, but still revelations for a season only, meted out in measure meet to our now limited capacities; intelligible indeed to ourselves and to others because from our spirit they pass through our nous and thence through our mouth and thence into the ears and nous of our hearers. But even prophecysings are grace-gifts restricted in our own narrowness, just like our so-called scientific knowledge, which therefore "puffeth up" (ch. viii. 2), because it is so little and so onesided. All this must needs be: for it is from a part of the complete whole that we know what we know and it is from a part only that we do prophecy; it is from the earthset end of the angelic ladder which in its other end is planted in heaven, it is on this world's plane of that childhood, which attains its full stature in the world to come, that we acquire knowledge and announce prophecies.

N.B. The true idea of the rare phrase éê miôs in ver. 9, may be gathered from its contrast to tò tîleioû fullsound or perfect in ver. 10, and more plainly still from ver. 11, where ânpios has for its contrast ânîp. It is clear as day from these three verses taken together that éê miôs; ânpios = tò tîleioû: ânîp. Compare also Ephes. iv. 13, 14: where ânîp tîleioû and ânpiôs are in contrast.

10. Is come.] Tîthn, a word significant of the Parousia or Advent. Then shall be done away or be brought to naught that which appertains to a part of the complete whole, viz. prophecysings and tongue-utterances and imperfect knowledge.

11. I speak as a child.] I speak is an unfortunate rendering, precisely what St. Paul did not mean: render as an infant I talked (âxîînôs = to speak rationally and articulately); âxîînôs = 'to talk,' 'prate,' 'chatter.' Comp. the pungent line of Eupolis kakîn ânîsot, âdunastotostos kaihnu.

In these three chapters kakîn kakînoushas has been rendered " to utter in tongues," not "to speak," which would be untrue to St. Paul's idea. Possibly talk might in some places be somewhat better, as the word glossolalia or 'talking in tongues' denotes such utterances as were simply unintelligible without the aid of a specially gifted interpreter. No doubt glossolalia is indicated in the I talked here, as prophecysings and knowledge are in the other two clauses. ânpiôs according to its etymon means infant. Render the last clause, since I am become a man I have done with the ways of an infant.
I. CORINTHIANS. XIII.

12 For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face:

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

I shall know in full, even as I was also known in full. I am known of the A.V. is incorrect, because of the Past Aorist. In this verse S. Paul, like one acquainted with divine transitions, swiftly takes his stand upon a height in the future beyond the Parousia, from which he looks back upon his speck of earth-life, the scene of his conversion and ecstasies and visions and prophesysings and preachings and sufferings, in all of which he was in communion with God and which were thoroughly known of Him. It should be noted that εἰδος means 'according as,' i.e. in what manner or measure. From this it appears that our completed knowledge of God hereafter will bear some proportion to the knowledge He condescended to take of us here: for in this verse is described not the intellectual sīre but the moral noise or the personal knowledge of spiritual affection based upon affinity of character. See Additional Note on ch. viii. 1.

This view does not exclude the idea of future progression in knowledge whether intellectual or moral, because the verb here used denotes properly after-knowledge whether in the form of recognition or of a higher knowledge super-added to a lower, just like storey upon storey in a rising edifice: it does not denote absolute or coronal completeness, like a capital set upon a column, so as to exclude future growth and enlargement in the kingdom. In the state of perfection even there are degrees of ascension: in eternity when shall the summit of Perfection be attained?

13. And now.] Render so now, you see, (logical sense of νῦν) abideth faith, hope, charity. Abideth of the A.V. quite correct: much better grammar than abide, as some; for the plural factors are regarded as a singular whole in the one common property of continuance. Full sense: those splendid gifts of prophesysings and of tongue-utterances together with ambitious knowledge shall vanish, but this modest triad of graces shall remain: in this triad of graces, however, greater than the other two is—charity. For faith and hope are human, moral attitudes of the soul firmly trusting and fondly waiting; whereas love is simply divine, coming down from heaven on the day of Pentecost and leaving earth with the risen saints to meet the Lord returning. Nevertheless, faith and hope too shall abide and survive the Parousia; but our brilliant charismata, O Corinthians, shall not abide; they shall then be no more.
CHAPTER XIV.

1. Prophecy is commended, 2, 3, 4 and preferred before speaking with tongues, 6 by a comparison drawn from musical instruments. 12 Both must be referred to edification, 22 as to their true and proper end. 26 The true use of each is taught, 27 and the abuse taxed. 34 Women are forbidden to speak in the church.

Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy.

The noble episode or parenthesis of charity, the Apostle returns to the charismata and shows, at some length, that, while all of them should be coveted and none despised, nevertheless prophesying as being profitable to the congregation, is superior to talking in tongues; for this last endowment is beneficial only to the individual, unless indeed it be accompanied by the gift of interpretation and expounded thereby. It should be borne in mind that the more excitable and vainglorious of the Corinthians were inclined to make an intemperate exhibition of the more brilliant but less edifying glossolalia. It may also be noted that in ver. 9 the article γλώσσα denotes the physical organ; elsewhere in these chapters it always means an abstract tongue created by the divine Spirit and by the human in mutual implication. For the fuller understanding of this chapter the reader may consult the Introductory Remarks to c. xii. and the comments on xii. 10.

1. Rendering in full: Pursue after love, meantime, however, eagerly desire the spirit-gifts, yet more than all the rest that ye prophesy. Definitive use of ἵστασθαι, not final or telic.

2. Compare 2 Cor. v. 13 and render:—For whose uttereth in a tongue, not unto men uttereth he, but unto God. Why so? Because he holds high converse with God in the shrine of his own transfused spirit, between which and the thinking faculty or logos communications are intercepted and suspended during the ecstasy. How then can his ecstatic utterances, unless they have passed through the reflective logos into logos or rational and articulated speech, become utterances intelligible to ordinary men? Impossible: in the rapture of adoration or supernatural prayer the talking does not descend to become speaking: the supersensuous utterances are more or less audible as marvellous mutterings or chucklings in exquisite tones, but not in the least intelligible in themselves without the added gift of interpretation. In next verse a reason is assigned; for no one hears (i.e. so as to understand: no one has an inner ear), as (ὅτα) it is in the Spirit that the man uttereth what are—mysteries. Emphasis on spirit and on mysteries. Fuller sense; no one but an interpreter, one who is specially gifted to comprehend the drift of the divine communications and to reproduce it in the form of current human speech, has a perceiving ear for such utterances of spirit-created tongues, which in fact are akin to the ἀποκρισία ἡμῶν that fell on the Apostle's spiritual ear from God's Paradise: 2 Cor. xii.

3. Render:—Whereas (ὅτα) whose prophesies (i.e. announces and reports divine secrets communicated to him in an ecstasy), unto men uttereth he (what? That which is in effect) edification and exhortation and word of comfort—σπνθερω = address to the heart or side of a person, ‘word of comfort’ The utterances of the prophet, or inspired herald of divine intelligence, are utterances unto men, because from his own inmost spirit, or pneuma of the human pneuma possessed and controlled by the divine Pneuma, they pass through his reflective nōς into logos and from utterances become articulated speech and therefore intelligible to others.

The phrase υπεραγωγή και εἰσαίων is in its linguistic nature similar to ἐκκλησία (in effect) is my body (see c. xi. 24) and in form is just the same as eiseth a judgment unto himself; or as to inherit the promise, which ‘promise’ is in effect the kingdom.

4. Render:—Whose uttereth in a tongue, his own self edifieth he, whereas he who prophesies (or proclaims mysteries) edifieth a congregation. The sense of this verse will be plain from what has been said above.

5. ‘As many of the spirit-gifted in the Corinthian Church uttered in tongues, the Apostle, lest he should appear from a motive
I. CORINTHIANS. XIV.

344

of envy to depreciate the gift of tongues' (Theophylact), proceeds to say with some approbation and yet correctly (render), Now while I wish all of you to utter in tongues (i.e. wish to exclude none of you from doing so), yet I prefer that you should prophesy; more literally, yet still more do I wish that ye prophesy; being a gift more useful to the community: as (δὲ) greater—morally greater, more serviceable—is he that prophesieth than he that uttereth in tongues, with exception, unless, that is, he should interpret, that the church may get edification. The last half of this verse clearly shows that one and the same person might be endowed with the gift of utterance in tongues and with the gift of interpreting their utterance: comp. v. 13 below. It should be remembered that ὁ διαφυλακτός or 'through-interpreter' was one who was purely inspired to understand the new tongues, as they were uttered, whether by himself or by others, and to translate their substance into the current language, that the contents might be 'understood of the people.'

N.B. Meyer, followed by Alford, makes εἰρήνος ἐν μνημοσύνῃ, to be 'a mixture of two constructions, so that μνημοσύνῃ seems now pleonastic.' This cannot be: the mixture of two constructions is as questionable as the figure Henodiadys or Hysteroneproneron, or as the 'combination of purpose and of purport' in ἡμῶν. Here εἰρήνος is general and the ἐν μνημοσύνῃ clause specific, defining the general: a very natural mode of expression, especially in an easy-going style, when the writer throws out a general notion as a skirmisher while he prepares at leisure to formulate the particular.

6. Render:—So now, ye see, brethren (a term of affectionate address), if I should come unto you uttering in tongues, what shall I profit you? Nothing, unless I should give utterance to you either in the way of revelation or of knowledge or of prophesying or of doctrine: in that case my utterances, as they would edify, would also benefit: but as to the glossolalia, in which you glory so much, well—that is a gift not to be disparaged: it is, no doubt. a splendid endowment, but yet an endowment rather splendid, it seems to me, than useful, brethren.

N.B. To one accustomed to observe the architecture of Greek sentences it is clear at first sight that in this verse the if I should come uttering in tongues is a clause containing of and a sentence following, namely the apodosis what shall I profit you together with its second prothesis unless I should give utterance, so that to the idea of the first prothesis is subordinated the idea of the apodosis, with that of its other prothesis. This construction is well known, and Meyer in his 'second thoughts' seems to have adopted it. Nevertheless this explanation cannot be correct: the grammar indeed is blameless and upright even stately, but against the grammar protests the inexorable logic. For how can St. Paul be made to say in the same breath, 'If I utter in tongues I shall not profit you, unless I give utterance in the way of prophesying?' The two endowments were not only distinct, but quite different, the one self-edifying and requiring an interpreter, the other edifying the hearers and self-interpreting. If, indeed, there had been a καί before ἀποδιδέω, then the double prothesis would have been necessary to sense invenio charism to a brilliant. But there is no καί: we must therefore dismiss the double prothesis and mentally repeating the one apodosis must be appropriate to the second prothesis thus: If I should come uttering in tongues, what shall I profit you? What shall I profit you in fact, unless I should give utterance in prophesying? This sense, which logic seems to require, grammar also permits, being as flexible to this construction as to the other, for it is a known feature of a terse and vehement style to omit a link, when that link may be readily supplied from the context. This view is better also than to retain the structure of two protases and regard the second as correct of the first. That is awkward.

On the four substantives in the last clause of this verse Estius well says, 'duo juga, ut conjuga sint revelatio et prophetia, scientia et doctrina;' i. e. not as a team of four, as seriatim, but as two yokes of oxen, each yoke or pair denoting one charism of two sides. In fact this is a fine specimen of the old and useful figure chiasmus in the form of A: C=B:D, revelation being the condition and foundation of prophesying, knowledge of doctrine: for prophesying is God's revelation being announced to man, doctrine is knowledge formulated.
v. 8—10.] I. CORINTHIANS. XIV.


giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?

9 So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air.

10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and...
none of them is without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh a barbarian, and he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret.

And nothing is voiceless. N.B. The A. V. cannot be right here: for ὑμῶν does not refer to γῆνος or kind but means nothing, not used here absolutely but with some latitude. Connection of the argument in full: 'unknown and untold kinds of voices or inarticulate sounds are there in the universe; nothing without voice of some kind; animals have voices (.forName) is in classic writers used to denote cries of animals, cries of vendors of goods in streets, cries of rumour, Acts ii. 6, all manner of vague and indistinct cries); harps, flutes, trumpets have voices; all nature in her winds (John iii. 8) and seas and rivers has voices: everything has a voice sui generis et suæ potestatis: in God's universe how many kinds of voices there be, who knows?' Ὑδραίος, εἰ ὑδραίος—myriads of myriads: for creatures, as in the seen world, so in the unseen have voices: spirits have voices, but such voices as are not speech to men in the flesh, because they are not articulated by the human organ of speech. And what are your much-prized glossolalies, O Corinthians, but spirit-voices, or utterances of a human spirit encompassed and interpenetrated and transfigured by the divine Spirit, utterances unutterable of an ecstatic adoration, which cannot employ the tongue as an instrument of their expression, cannot be formulated into human speech, cannot become signs of ideas to a congregation more interested or astonished than edified. The γῆν φωνῶν must not be confounded with γῆν γῆσασθαι.

11. Render:—If therefore I do not know the force or meaning of the voice, I shall be to him who utters a foreigner and he who utters will, to my mind, be a foreigner. Emphasis both times on the word foreigner, which is here used in Ovid's sense, Barbarus hic ego sum quia non intellige illi.

12. Application of the above analogies drawn from instruments of music and from the voices of the cosmos. Some members of the church in Corinth were eager aspirants (γθωραί) after the more dazzling charisms, especially the ecstasy of glossolalia; to this ambitious craving the Apostle allows free course, yet at the same time gives a right direction: let your aim be that ye be exuberant, that ye overlap one another in these gifts: certainly! nevertheless let your aspira-

13. Render:—Wherefore, if you wish to edify the church also, let him who utters in a tongue pray that he be an interpreter.

Two ways of taking this, (1) Let him, who possesses the gift of glossolalia before the ecstasy pray to God that during the ecstasy (or immediately after it?) he interpret what he utters: (2) Let him during the ecstasy so adore as to make intelligible the contents of his adoration, i.e. so pray that he interpret: compare "so run that ye overtake" ch. ix.

The objection to the first (made by Luther and by Meyer) that, in what sense the word pray is used in ver. 13 in that sense the same word must be used in v. 14 is futile, because the essential meaning is retained by the word in both verses, only the circumstantial sense differing. An exact parallel to this usage we have had in ch. x. 16, 17, where the body of Christ is followed in the next verse by the same word body applied to the Church in a
I. CORINTHIANS. XIV.

14 For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.

16 Else when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than ye all:

sense circumstantially different yet substantially the same. Moreover here after the second pray is added the explanatory in a tongue. In favour of (1) are Chrysostom, Theodoret, Theophylact and others.

N.B. The Greek, however, is flexible to either view, for in (1) the των is purely definite, with no mingled notion of half purpose (as sometimes stated in the critical notes of Ellicott and of Alford), but simply ushering in a definitive clause that specifies what are the contents of the general clause let him pray: comp. Joh. xiii. 14. "A new commandment give I unto you, that ye love one another," των ἀγαπήσατε. In the second explanation the των is used in the sense of contemplated result=let the ecstatic utterer, while he adores, turn a side-glance in the direction of interpretation. The difficulty lies not in the Greek, but in our own lack of experimental knowledge of these manifestations.

14. Reason assigned why the ecstatic utterer should pray for the gift of interpretation. Render:—For if ever I pray in a tongue (not with my tongue or organ of speech, but in a tongue not of this world), my spirit prayeth, while my mind is all the while unfruitful. How can it be otherwise, when all communications between the higher pneuma and the lower yet cognate nous are during the ecstasy suspended and in abeyance? when the triumphant and rapt spirit soars beyond the grasp of the mental apprehension? when the activity of the self-consciousness is repressed by the divine seizure of the human pneuma? This divine influence takes complete possession of him who is uttering in the unintelligible tongue of a higher world: his mind not receiving cannot produce, cannot bear fruit in thoughts and words (for logos is engendered of nous); his sequestered adoration of prayer and of praise is edifying indeed to his own self gathered into his own spirit: others on the outside of himself it cannot edify, for the contents of his ecstatic adoration are not formulated into speech.

15. Render:—What therefore ensues? What is the result, if I pray to God that my ecstatic spirit be not so far entranced or ravished as to lose sight and let go of the thinking faculty but be permitted to retain in hold the mind as a receiver and reproducer?

Why, in that case, (render) While I shall pray with the spirit, I shall pray with the mind also. Clearly not, as A. V. and as many, "I will pray—and," the objective shall is necessary to the right connection of the argument: the particles μύ and βί also do not signify and, but denote different sides or aspects of the same proceeding. Render likewise the next clause:—While I shall sing with the spirit, I shall sing with the mind also: namely improvised psalms, which by the ecstatic were sung with his spirit.

16. The A. V. not quite right here: (εὐλογεῖς is in imperf. subj. For its fuller sense see note ch. x. 16, εἴον = if ever or whenever). Render:—For else if ever or when thou art blessing (God for His unspeakable goodness in the ecstasy) in spirit, how shall one that occupies the place of a layman say the Amen after thine own giving of thanks (for the divine εἶχα experienced in the ecstasy), seeing he knows not what thou art saying all the time? How can he know what thou art saying to God, except thou sing forth thy spiritual praises through the mind formulating them into ideas, and with the tongue articulating the ideas into language?

The Amen: from the Jewish synagogue was derived to the Christian Church the time-hallowed usage of pronouncing the loud Amen at the close of a public prayer: it was an expression of assent to the contents of the prayer and a declaration of faith in its being heard by God. This custom here receives Apostolic confirmation. (For the sense of εἰςον see notes on Acts iv. 13 and 2 Cor. xi. 6.)

17. Render, For thou (in thine own exalted sphere of the spirit) givest thanks for grace beautifully, splendidly, but nevertheless the other (the ungifted layman) is not edified.

18. I thank my God, I speak with tongues.
Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.

In the law it is written, With open mouth he shall speak great things.

This version not quite right; here the style becomes abrupt and climactic: render, I give thanks for grace (in an ecstasy) unto God—more than all of you do I utter in a tongue. Clearly the verb to give utterance has in vv. 17 and 18 the same meaning, both essential and circumstantial.

But nevertheless (however self-edifying glossolalia may be to me in private) in church I had rather give utterance in five words with my mind (mots), that I may by speech instruct others also, than to ten thousand words in a tongue—i.e. in a tongue not interpreted in speech articulated from mind informed by spirit.

Here λαλήσας = to give utterance, not to utter. Why the aorist? Because of the definite numbers of 5 and 10,000. The reason of the rather (which is omitted in the original as unnecessary) is, that the five words or λαλήσας proceeding from the voice, as with reflected consciousness it thinks in Greek, are all ideally intelligible and verbally expressible.

Hitherto St. Paul has been shewing how unedifying it is and useless to the Church, that a charismatic should in public utter in tongues without an interpreter, whether himself or another. He now, wishing to reduce the conceit of the Corinthians, appends a winning admonition. Render:—Brethren (a term of affectionate address), prove ye not children in understanding, but in wickedness show yourselves infants: in understanding prove ye adults. The verb νηπίαζεν = to play the infant: comp. xiii. 11, "When I was an infant, as an infant did I talk, as an infant did I feel and think."

Connection of the argument. You may ask, O Corinthians, if the gift of glossolalia is to be thus restricted, what are the tongues for? Of what great use are they? My answer is, in private devotions this charism is for self-edification: in public, if it be accompanied with its proper complement of interpretation, it is for the edifying of the Church. These two uses I have already set forth at large. I am now going to show you another use of it: this glossolalia is given also for a judicial sign to unbelievers.

This third use of the most striking of the charisms St. Paul now exhibits by taking a text from Isaiah xxviii. 11, 12, where note the context of vv. 9, 10. Citing the passage from the Greek of the LXX, he recasts the words in a new form, and then stamps on the remodelled contents a new application. Under divine illumination he transfigures the prophecy, making the foreign-speaking Assyrian foreshadow the Corinthian utterer in tongues and the Hebrew scoffers of old to figure the Hellenic unbelievers. It should be noted how he changes λαλήσασας into λαλήσας. It is most likely that the phrase show yourselves infants of v. 20 suggested this passage to the Apostle's mind because of the suitable context "line upon line—here a little, there a little."—God's own simple and initial instruction to a stolid and stubborn people, which elementary teaching the Jewish wise men of that day simply derided. Render:—In the law (i.e. in the Old Testament) it is written, For with alien-tongued men and with lips of aliens shall I utter unto this people, and even then shall they not hearken unto me, saith the Lord.

There are divers views of this text. At first sight it might be inferred from the phrase alien-tongued men or heteroglotos that the tongues in these Pauline chapters admit of being identified with foreign languages. This would not be correct: far from it: the two phrases alien-tongued and talkers in strange tongues are connected as type and antitype: nothing more. That which is common to the barbarian language of the Assyrian and to the new tongues of the new creation is the property of both being unintelligible. The Assyrian language was to the Israelite just what the strange tongues were to the Corinthian layman: both required an interpreter. This is the first analogue in St. Paul's curious adaptation of Isaiah's prophecy which had already been historically fulfilled. The second and more serious analogue is the judicial sign. This point requires care. Clearly, as the elementary "precept upon precept, here a little, there a little" was derided by the Jew, so the illogical chattering of the new tongues were regarded as a railing and a ranting (v. 23) by the Greeks. In fact, the glossolalia is viewed by St. Paul as a double antitype: (1) qua unarticulated and fitful utterances of voices, it is an antitype of the inceptive "line upon line, here a little, there a little." (2) qua its own undecipherable character, it is an antitype or
men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there

the foreign language of the Assyrians. It is with the first of these two that the judicial sign has to do. For, as to the Hebrew scoffer the contemned “stammering lips” or rudimentary lessons were a sign of coming judgment, so to the Hellenic scoffer the contemned chatterings of the new tongues were a similar sign. Hence, to take the matter by the root, it appears that sceptical scorn it is both in Jew and Gentile that brings down the divine judgment. The glossolalia becomes to the unbeliever a sign: itself may vanish, but the sign abides: the sign is in store for the great day.

It should be noted that St. Paul variesthe LXX, when he makes Jesus himself uttering by the organs of “alien-tongued men,” i.e. (in the antitype) of “utterers in strange tongues.” Why so? Because in the Apostle’s mind ever dwells the idea that the new tongues are in their origin divine, communicated by the Holy Ghost to the impressive human spirit. Again, why his phrase “with lips of aliens!” Probably because in the ecstasy of glossolalia the lips were in motion, the tongue being in quiescence because the mind was in abeyance. For no mind, no speech; without voice where is language? Lips moved, strange voices were heard, not ordinary speech in the local language, unless indeed the utterer was also an interpreter. Hence Meyer is not right in supposing that in this ecstasy the physical tongue was an organ of the Holy Ghost: unde et nomen."

22. Render:—Accordingly (i.e. in harmony with scripture) the tongues are for a sign not to men who believe but to unbelievers, whereas prophesying—as voice versa. The sense of this is plain. It should be noted that these tongues—which in so far as they found expression in uninterpreted voices were of the numberless kinds of voices (γένες φωνῶν v. 10), and comprised in themselves manifold kinds of tongues (γένες γλώσσων xii. 9), sometimes translated into human language, sometimes not—probably got their name of the tongues from the primal miraculous effusion on the day of Pentecost. The term is here plural in number, because the spirit-moulded tongue was plastic to the inbreathing of the divine communication: from the varied character of the revelations the varied voice of utterance or λαλία took its tone whether of continuity or of fitfulness or of other mysterious peculiarities.

23. Inference from the above axiom. Connection: what therefore, O Corinthians, will be the practical effects of that fascinating and overvalued glossolalia upon simple novices in the faith or upon heathen men, if such should happen to stroll into your church assembled in full? Will the plain layman be edified by your unintelligible utterances? And the heathen stranger—is he likely to be stricken with awe and converted to the faith by your incomprehensible chatterings? Nay, your unearthly voices he will identify with senseless jargon; he will say ye are raving, he will call you ranters!

In verses 23, 24, 25, the A. V. and other renderings, not marking the imperfect tense of two subjunctive moods, rather miss the full sense. It should be noted that ἐν ὑμῖν αἰών ἐδόθη rendered into one place in the A. V. appears often to signify for the same purpose; here clearly for the one object of exercising the gift of glossolalia. This more correct rendering serves to elucidate the word all occurring four times in these verses, inasmuch as the one object, whether of uttering in tongues or of prophesying, is evidently correlated to the fourfold all, as well as to the word συνελθεί. The all or πάντες in each instance means not “all together,” but “all in succession or one after another.”

The general drift of these texts is to show the superiority in usefulness of the intelligible prophesying to the incomprehensible glossolalia. Render, If therefore the whole church be come together (συνελθήσαντες) for the same object (of uttering in tongues) and, while all (in succession) are uttering in tongues, there should enter laymen or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are raving? Whereas (ἄλλες) if, while all are prophesying, there should enter some unbeliever or layman, he is convinced by all (as they announce one after another God’s immediate revelations), he is examined by all (as they announce one after another God’s immediate revelations), he is examined by all, the secrets of his heart come to the light, and so falling upon his face he shall worship God. Some stress to be laid on the word are uttering, more on the word are prophesying. In the above verses the layman or ἰδιῖτεseems to connote also ‘a weakening in the faith.’ The verb is examined means in full, he is sub-
come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?

24. But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all:

25. And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest; and so falling down on his face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.

26. How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying.

27. If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret.

28. But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church; and let him speak to himself, and to God.

27. The above general direction formulated into special precepts in reference to the several grace-gifts. The sense is: ‘if the exercise of glossolalia be the object of the gathering, let two or three at the most in one assembly utter in tongues, and then not together but in turn, one after another: moreover let one and no more than one interpret the contents of the several utterances.’ Only one interpreter, probably to allow more time for the more useful prophetic and didactic addresses.

28. Render, If however there be no interpreter, let him (the ecstatic utterer) be silent before the congregation: to himself only let him utter and to God. The clause if there be no interpreter implies two possibilities (1) that the utterer cannot himself interpret, (2) that no one else gifted with interpretation is present. Under such circumstances the glossolalema, not translated into Greek, would not be edifying to the Church: τὰ καυνά γὰρ διὶ ἤμαθε ψηφι-

26. Directions about the orderly exercise of spiritual gifts in the church assemblies. In this verse the Greek word ἕκκατος, as elsewhere in this Epistle, means not “every one” (A. V.), but one or other in sequence, A and B and C, this and that man among the charismatics.

The verb bath also is used in the objective sense, ‘has in store for others.’ Paraphrase the whole. What therefore is the conclusion, brethren? Whenever ye come together— are assembling—one or other is ready with a psalm to improvise. is ready with a doctrine to expound, with a revelation to communicate, with a tongue for utterance, with an interpretation to append thereunto and to translate the utterance into Greek:—good! let all the gifts in their exercise proceed by all means with due regard to edification.
29 Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.
30 If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.
31 For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.
32 And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.
33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

34 Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the law.
35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

32. Render:—and (besides) spirits of prophets to prophets are under control. This epigrammatic mode of speaking the Apostle prefers to the more ordinary are under their own control, not because it is more rhetorical and picturesque, but for a better reason, because while he writes or dictates the first half of the sentence his mind glances aside from “the prophets” to “the utterers in tongues,” whose spirits in the ecstasy were not under the control of their will. Some emphasis therefore on the dative to prophets. Full sense is: to prophets their own spirits are under control, because they do not, like the spirits of utterers in tongues, soar aloft in the ecstasy beyond the grasp of the thinking and willing faculty. The mind, or seat of the will and of discursive thought, still retains its hold of the prophesying human spirit illuminated with divine revelations. If therefore the communications between spirit and mind and speech and tongue continue unimpaired, the prophet in the ecstasy, having full command of speech and tongue, can either hold his tongue or give speech. It should be noted, to make the logical connection clearer, that the καί ("and besides") here places its own sentence in coordination with the preceding sentence, and introduces an additional reason why the first prophetic speaker should find no difficulty in checking his discourse.

33. Summary reason, set as a crown on the precepts, why decorum and method should be observed in the exercise of gifts in the congregation. Render:—For not on the side of disorder or tumult is God, whose the Church is, but on the side of peace. God has nothing to do with irregularity. Precisely parallel is the construction of the genitive case in Gal. iii. 20, "A mediator has nothing to do with what is one," i.e. is out of place where duality is not.

34. How ambitious of publicity the Corinthian women were, how apt to assert equality of privileges with men, e.g. in discarding in church the veil or badge of subordination, is
I. CORINTHIANS. XIV.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only?
37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.
39 Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.
40 Let all things be done decently and in order.

known from ch. xi. St. Paul here administers a summary rebuke to such frowardness.

Saitb the law, Gen. iii. 16.

36. Sudden lash of sarcasm. Render:—What! from you was it that the word of God started, or unto you alone did it reach? Is your Church the first and the last station on the line of the Gospel? Metaphor from the stadium: a favourite one with St. Paul. In LXX the word καιρίνη means a goal.

Full sense: method, order, decorum should be observed in your assemblies; no irregularities, such as glossolalia apart from an interpreter in public, such as rival prophets declaiming two or three at once, such as women presuming to utter aloud in the congregation: all these anomalies must cease: or (the only possible alternative) are you Corinthians aspiring to take the initiative? Are you really the model and exemplar of all the churches? The Alpha and the Omega of Christendom? The terminus a quo and the terminus ad quem of the word of God?

37. After the sarcasm, gravity; serious assertion of apostolic authority; render:—If anyone thinks that he is a prophet or spiritgifted (a charismatic), let him recognise that what I am writing is from the Lord. N.B. 'Επετύμβωσαν, not here know fully, as in xiii. 12, but recognise: the essential sense is just the same in both passages; the circumstantial only varies.

38. Render:—If however any one ignores (the divine source of what I write), let him ignore: let him persist in refusing to recognise my high mission: he is irreclaimable: I relegate such a man to himself and to his own soli- dity.

39. The flash of irony and the assertion of apostolic authority tone down into Christian tenderness expressed in the word brethren. Render, Wherefore, brethren, the sum of the matter is, Aspire ye to the gift of prophesying; and the gift of uttering in tongues hinder ye not, but let this less profitable endowment have free course within the prescribed limits: only let all the charismata in their public exercise proceed in seemly manner and according to order; i.e. let all the gifted utter and prophesy and teach within due bounds and in sequence meet, each at the right time and not too long.

INTRODUCTION TO CHAPTER XV.

After his instructions on the right use of the spiritual gifts St. Paul proceeds to combat a more perilous heresy. The vices, rebuked in the earlier chapters, of sensuality, of covetousness, of arrogance, of insubordination, all these were moral maladies of limited mischief, affecting members here and members there: besides, however dangerous in themselves if not arrested in time, they were by comparison easy of healing. But this new form of evil was something more than a moral malady of local mischief: it was a doctrinal gangrene eating into the very core of the community and sapping the constitution of Christianity.

It appears that within the pale of the Corinthian church there had arisen certain freethinkers of decidedly Gnostic tendencies. Self-confident and outspoken, as may be inferred from passages in this fifteenth chapter and in Clemens Romanus Ep. ad Corinthios, these ringleaders in neology had attracted and gathered around them from the four parties any one who was wise in his own conceits. These men, probably few in number and designated as “some among you” in v. 12, puffed up with what they called their knowledge (ch. viii.), had ventured to broach a baneful heresy to the effect that a resurrection of dead men is an
absurdity. 'Such a thing,' said they emphatically, 'non est! How, we should like to know, by what process or in what manner are they raised—those dead? Again, with what sort of body do they come (v. 35)?' If dead men are raised at all, and if being raised they shall come when the Lord comes, as this Apostle tells us, will they then come each with a body? If so, with a body of what sort, forsooth, will they come? A dead man's body buried moulders, rots, perishes: it is actually unified with the earth (φυσαρχης του γη): the animal organism is disintegrated in the dust, may the very matter is dissolved: that which above ground was a body, in the grave quoa body non est, and therefore a setting up from the grave (ανάκορισθας) of that which non est, is itself nil. Resurrection of men once dead? There's no such thing: all pious enthusiasm: flat against the laws of nature: χειραφοςει: our sneer of doubting swells into the jeer of scouting.' And as the wise men of Corinth did, so had the wisemen of Athens done just before them; "when they heard of a resurrection of dead persons, some jeered," Acts xvii. 32.

Analysis of the Argument. Chrysostom draws attention to the delicacy of tact with which St. Paul here handles his theme. No dogmatic reiteration of his own views, no reassertion of Apostolic authority. He begins by gently refreshing the memories of his hearers, making an appeal to their inner consciousness, their first conviction of the truth. This chord of subjectivity vibrates here and there through the first twenty verses.

The exordium is marked by courtesy and by terms carefully picked to avoid offence. "I now proceed to make better known to you," he quietly commences, "that evangel with which I once evangelized you." The substance of this evangel, he modestly implies, was not in any way of his own origination: it was drawn whole from a divine source. He himself was not much more than a human cistern continually being filled from the Fountain and continually overflowing unto others. He merely delivered (v. 3) what he had received.

New Test.—Vol. III.

The gospel that he had preached in Corinth was a revelation made to the preacher. What was the substance of this gospel? The death and burial of Jesus Christ followed by the resurrection of the same. The certainty of this resurrection the writer makes more certain still, fortifying it in vv. 4-9 with a chain of ocular testimonies drawn out in chronological order. Moreover he reminds his readers that what he and others had once preached in Corinth, they themselves also had once believed, even when they were first converted (as they must well remember) and when they passed through the laver of baptism with their minds intent upon the two capital dogmas, the death of expiation for sin and the resurrection in His complete manhood of Jesus Christ: for these twin articles are the staple of the gospel and the ground of all faith.

'From whichever of us apostles' he proceeds in v. 11, 'whether from Paul or from Cephas, ye learned these cardinal truths, these correlative poles of doctrine upon which Christianity turns, that in itself is a thing quite immaterial: but let me draw your attention to the grave fact that as this teaching is still the basis of our preaching (εκατοντομαν), so was it then the basis of your belief when ye first became believers (ενπροποιησεται)._

Thus with a wise discretion, evincing his knowledge of human nature, he rolls back the memory of his converts on their former selves, back even to the tender time of their first faith, that they may recall to mind and 'inly ruminate' their earliest and strongest convictions.

Having stirred to its depths the consciousness of the Corinthian church he glides in v. 12 into his main task of refuting the thesis of the freethinkers. This he begins by asking, If Christ is preached as one risen from the dead, how is it that of a congregation listening to this doctrine preached certain members say, Resurrection of dead men—no such thing! Can you (he proceeds) believe this general assumption of theirs to be true? Impossible! for if it is true, it follows of course that Christ also is not risen; seeing that Christ not only became man, but also became a dead man.
Si homines mortui non resurgunt, then Christ, who as man died, was not as man raised, and if He is not raised, neither is He alive for evermore (εὑρίσκειν). Thus the argument of these rationalists fails, as proving too much, for it proves that Christ Himself too is not risen: their theory is an absurdity. Moreover, in propounding such a monstrous thesis these persons give the lie to themselves: they gainsay their own professed views: for in denying the resurrection of dead men in the universal they deny, what they do not intend to deny, the resurrection of Christ in particular; for what is true of the class is true of the individual. In other words, these freethinkers allow the firstfruits but deny the harvest. Fools! for if they allow the first, they are bound to allow the second, and if they deny the second they are bound to deny the first. But they cannot deny what, logically speaking, they ought to deny, namely the resurrection of Jesus, because this is a fact well attested by many eyewitnesses, as was His crucifixion. These two solid facts are the pillars of our creed: they are the warp and woof of the gospel. In preaching this gospel we older Apostles, who with our eyes beheld the risen Christ, were all of one mind, and 'of one mouth.' Clear as day was our unity of teaching. And if this gospel is preached in Corinth, I ask how in the world can these persons, hearing it thus preached, with any consistency say, as by implication they do say when they maintain a non-resurrection of dead men, that the Incarnate Son of God is not qua homo risen? These wisemen with their εἴδοσιν τι (ch. ii.), these 'knowsomethings' as they style themselves, while they think that they know something more than others are now shewn to know something less than themselves; for professing to accept the gospel, they unconsciously reject it when they deliberately reject the resurrection of dead men.

In vv. 17-19 St. Paul emphatically declares the fearful alternative that must ensue to the Church upon the truth of the hypothesis (logically deduced from the no-resurrection theory) that Christ is not risen. He then in v. 20 warily and in an easy manner, that takes for granted the unflawing faith of his hearers in the article of Christ's resurrection, proceeds to shew dogmatically that the resurrection of Christ involves that of all Christians: that the two resurrections are separated merely by an interval of time that shall expire at the second coming. But now, ye see—but as it is, ye know, Christ is absolutely risen from the dead. Alone is He risen? Well, yes—for a season, but not for long alone, not unique, not an Alpha without a train of letters down to omega, not a μονογένης ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν, but a πρωτότοκος ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν. He is risen the firstfruits of them that are fallen asleep.

This doctrine that Christ is the firstfruits, and that, as the firstfruits, such is the harvest, leads the writer onward to contrast the two Humanities, the old and the new Creations, and then in swift succession to unfold marvellous revelations of things to come, passing even beyond the resurrection of the dead. His style now becomes grand and terse, a measured march of stately antitheses: he co-ordinates homo with homo, Christ with Adam. For according to St. Paul's view the Word of God took the nature of all men, died in that nature, in that nature was raised and remains risen, and that because the same nature which by death had been defeated must, according to the divine order, itself defeat death and triumph over it unto life.

It should be noted in this argument that from v. 20 the apostle suddenly passes into depths of doctrine far beyond the ken of Corinthian consciousness: that henceforth he makes few or no appeals to the knowledge of his readers, but proceeds to utter oracle upon oracle from his own intuition. On massive columns he rears a prodigious pile of thought, speaking after the manner of one prophesying and announcing the summary contents of some ecstatic vision. No doubt, from v. 22 to v. 29 we have the contents of one of St. Paul's superabundant revelations disclosing to our view a dim perspective of long Ἑωνικός reaches, extending from our Lord's resurrection
to His Parousia and stretching away beyond the Parousia over a period of conflict with spiritual principalities and dominions, which results in their complete subjugation and then ushers in the telos or end. In a few touches the prophet presents to the gaze of the Church outlines rising beyond outlines of a stupendous future—a vast sketch, and no more, that may be filled up in detail only when the Parousia shall belong to the Past and the then of apostolic presentiment shall become the now of Christian experience.

In v. 29 from his soarsings into the divine future he brings his thoughts down to earthly things and back to the painful present. From the Church jubilant he returns per salutum to the Church militant. Like one awaking out of a vision he pauses a moment before he dictates to his amanuensis: For else—i.e. if all these revelations of the final triumph shall not be realised, as they shall not, if absolutely true is this new cry of no resurrection of the dead, I ask you what is to become in that case of all who receive baptism on account of the dead, when of the dead there is according to this new cry no resurrection at all? What shall they do but sink into despair? Again, if really there is no such thing as a raising of these dead, why on their account (τρεπ αἰρω), why with a view to the resurrection of them do converts receive baptism at all? If the Resurrection is a vanity, the Sacrament becomes a mockery.

CHAPTER XV.

3 By Christ's resurrection, 12 he proclaims the necessity of our resurrection, against all such as deny the resurrection of the body. 21 The fruit, 35 and manner thereof, 51 and of the changing of them, that shall be found alike at the last day.

MOREOVER, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand;

2 By which also ye are saved, if argument or discourse I preached the Gospel unto you, with (this) exception—unless ye believed at random or inconsiderately.

The last clause that contains the exception means in full, Unless ye embraced Christianity at a venture, without weighing well the

2 2
For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures;

And that he was buried, and frame the clause which formulates the exception. It might have been omitted as far as the sense goes: but its presence seems to denote deliberateness or solemn hesitation in the writer. N.B. Meyer is not correct in his explanation of ἐκτὸς εἰς μή: the μή is not redundant.

N.B. on εἰκῇ rendered in vain in the A.V. This word in classical Greek seems never to signify in vain, but always at random, rashly, unadvisedly, at haphazard, without due reflection, without a settled plan or purpose. Two instances of this certain use may suffice, Εἰδιπ. Τυρ., 970, εἰκῇ κράτισσον γὰρ ἐν τοῖς ὀνόματι τῶν, and Prom. Vinct. 450, εὕφυοι εἰκῇ πάνω. In the Oratores Attici we find more than once the phrase εἰκῇ καὶ ἀλογίστων ποιεῖν (Lysias περὶ τοῦ ηπείρου p. 109), which Cicero translates by tenere et nulla ratione et tenere et inconstuì. Compare also εἰκόνως = tenéramus. The meaning in vain seems quite foreign to the word. Neither in the Hellenistic of the N. Testament does εἰκῇ ever seem to signify in vain (μάρτυρ): even in Gal. iii. 4, viewed in the light of the contextual words: 'Ye irrational or inconsiderate Galatians,' it appears to denote 'without any assignable reason corresponding in weight and measure to what one has done or suffered': nor does the εἰκῇ, rightly rendered, militate against this view. Cicero too uses the word in the sense of unreasonably.

It should be observed in ver. 2 that the last qualifying clause unless ye believed beedlessly or without solid reason covers the whole of the preceding sentence in both its clauses. It affects the apodosis by which ye are being saved taken in strict connection with its dependent protasis if ye be bold fast.

which ye also accepted. Accepted is perhaps better than received in the A.V. The παρά indeed is flexible to either meaning, but accepted is a word that brings the fact itself more home to the Corinthian consciousness. The same verb seems to mean assumed in Matt. xxiv. 40.

3. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received. For, i.e. in explanation of the contents of my preaching. Render—For I delivered unto you in the foremost place what I also received. Rather what than that which: for the clause is almost parenthetical.

which I also received.] i.e. straight from the Lord by special revelation: ἀνόθω τοῦ Κορώνου is ex-
that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:  
5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve:

pressed in ch. xi. 23. In this παρθηκάζων the proposition is objective: not so in παρθηκήσετε of ver. 1.

In the foremost place means in the first ranks or foreground of my gospel, as cardinal points of doctrine. In the next sentence these two cardinal points, Christ’s atoning death and resurrection, are specified.

I delivered unto you principally, how that Christ died for our sins. For our sins means in full ‘on account of our sins with a view to their expiation’: by no means in behalf of, as some now explain, for how could Christ be said to die in behalf of our sins? In behalf of our selves, of our bodies and souls and spirits, He did die, but surely not in behalf of our sins. On this elastic use of the proposition see Additional Note at the end of this chapter.

according to the scriptures.] i.e. of the Old Testament. Why does St. Paul append this clause? Because in his time it was known to all that the man Jesus was slain on the cross, but it was known comparatively to few that the same Jesus was the predicted Messiah who thus died for the sins of mankind in fulfilment of the prophecies.

4. And that he was buried.] Why is the clause according to the scriptures omitted after the burial and expressed after the death and the resurrection? Because the burial is a natural consequence of the death and a pre-supposition of the resurrection; it lies between the two, a necessary link: it is not indeed unforetold (see Isaiah 53), but the Old Testament bears more marked witness to the death of Christ and to His resurrection, as being the two eyes in His work of redemption. Between these visible poles lies the connecting burial: beyond them lies on the lower side the descent into Hades, on the upper side the Ascension.

and that he rose again on the third day.] The Greek tense here requires that rose again be altered into is risen. Render with a break, And that he is risen—on the third day. In reciting this sentence a brief pause should be made after the word risen. No doubt St. Paul in dictating it made such a pause. For to utter in continuity or in one sustained breath such a proposition as He is risen on the third day would be an incongruity in terms. We do not, for instance, say uno spirito ‘I have seen the comet last night at eleven o’clock,’ but ‘I saw.’ In fact, the definite time on the third day should properly be joined to a tense connoting a definite time, i.e. to an aorist, as is done in the Nicene Creed in an article based upon this text, on the third day be rose again according to the scriptures.

The perfect here indicates not a particular action of a definite time but a state continuing and abiding. He is risen to die no more. It is probable that St. Paul, after dictating the article was buried, rises with the coming thought into an exultant mood and exclaims in triumphal tones and is risen! In his emotion he soars above grammar and beyond the range of logic: he then with lowered voice adds the accurate afterthought on the third day, not caring to formulate the proper appendage he was raised. Chrysostom indeed on ver. 20 makes the Apostle, reverent and jubilant, bare his head and shout aloud, Now is Christ risen from the dead!

5. And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.] Render: And that he appeared to Cephas, after that to the twelve. A matter of such moment and a fact not easy of credence demanded a host of witnesses: Grotius. To Cephas, see Luke xxiv. 14. To the twelve. See John xx. 19–14 and Introduction to 1 Peter. After the death of the traitor only eleven remained: Thomas too was absent at this appearance. In fact, the number twelve is here an official designation, used in the same way as decemviri and centumviri among the Romans.

6. After that he was seen of above five hundred.] Render, Next after that (ἐνεχθα), not εἰς) he appeared to upwards of five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain unto this present, though some fell asleep (when they did fall asleep).

When and where this simultaneous manifestation to so many spectators occurred, whether in Galilee, as some think, or in Jerusalem as others, is nowhere recorded. Probably, however, it occurred in Galilee: see notes on Matt. xxviii. 16. But, as Theodoret remarks, the testimony of such a multitude of eye-witnesses on one occasion (ἐφανε) places the fact of our Lord’s Resurrection beyond suspicion. It should be remembered that this long-drawn argument of ocular testimony is addressed by St. Paul to the Church in Corinth, as a preliminary basis for reducing to silence the new cry of no resurrection. The under-
7 After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles.
8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am correct, the ordinary view of this verse is inaccurate, namely 'ut abortivus non est dignus humano nomine, sic apostolus negat se dignum apostoli nomine; Bengel.'

'last of all.' A.V. quite right—that is, 'the last of all the appearances.' (Hávov is neuter : Meyer makes it masculine, referring it to the Apostles and rendering of them all. The Greek for that idea would rather be ἐγκαίρων αἰῶνων πάντων, see v. 10, or τῶν πάντων.)

9. St. Paul, having just stated what he conceives that the Lord must have thought of him, now proceeds to state what he thinks of himself.

10. But by the grace of God I am, &c.

This verse should be taken in strict connexion with the preceding one, which indeed it modifies and illustrates, placing it in its true light. (The rendering of the A.V. is not happy here, misled in part by a reading not genuine, ἂν before σιν. The first δέ is corrective = yet, not adversative = but, as in the A.V.)

Render the whole verse and explain in connexion with the preceding one. Not meet to be called Apostol am I, not worthy in myself of that honourable name, yet by the grace of God I am what I am (a hard-working Apostle), and his grace which reached unto me (me emphatic) proved not ineffectual, but (on the contrary) more abundantly than they all did I work hard, yet not I, but the grace of God (did work along) with me. Emphasis strong on the last me: not 'with me,' but 'with me,' i.e. in combination with myself. The grace of God and the concurrent will of His Apostles are two coefficients in evangelistic labour. Augustine takes the right view of this passage, who saw that the last word me was to be accenteduated: this is plain from his writing cum illo, not cum eo in his comment; Non ego autem, i.e. non solus, sed gratia Dei mecum: ac per hoc nec gratia sola nec ipse solus, sed gratia cum illo.

Some moderns explain this verse, as if "divine power wrought with St. Paul in such overwhelming measure, that his Apostolic labour was no longer his own work, but all of God's grace." But this view cannot fairly be extracted from the text rightly rendered. Rather must we infer that God, knowing the hearts of men, gives His grace...
12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen:

14 And if Christ be not risen,
then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised:

(emphasis on the not), void then is our preaching also, void is your faith also.

Connexion and expansion; If true be the proposition of these scholiasts or self-styled knowsomethings, its logical inference is inexorable—Christ is not risen. But the consequences to us and to you of this necessary inference are terrible to contemplate; for in that case (ἀναστ.); the substance of our preaching likewise and the contents of your believing likewise are all hollownesses—vanities ventilated for a season. These floating bubbles, suddenly prickled by this new philosophy, melt into air. For if you remove the resurrection, immediately one of the two pillars that support the archway of the evangel falls, and with it the whole fabric falls: Christi-anity, no longer resting on the resurrection, collapses, although its other pillar of the crucifixion may be left standing in monumental solitude.

15. Yea and we are found false witnesses of God.] This forms another link in the long chain of inferences that may be logically drawn from the first necessary inference Christ too is not risen of the preposterous thesis Resurrection of dead men is a mere chimera.

Woo'm be raised not up, if to be that the dead rise not.] The A.V. not quite right here. Render whom he did not raise (emphasis on the not), if indeed after all dead men are not raised (emphasis again on the not). The reasoning much the same as before: Christ became a dead man and, as such, He was not raised by God, if it be true that dead men universally are not raised by God.

Critical Note. Εὐσίππορας here is evidently passive, not middle as in the A.V. This is clear both from the immediate context of ἔγραφον and from the use of the verb elsewhere. The ἀναστ. seems to mean as they say, i.e. according to the view of these scientists.

16. The A.V. not quite right. Render, For if dead men are not raised, neither is Christ risen. Solemn repetition in sub-

stance of ver. 13, made partly in proof of the last statement in the foregoing verse, partly as a firm basis of new inferences more startling still and more disastrous than ever.

17. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins. Rather But if Christ is not risen (emphasis on the not), idle is your faith; ye are still in your sins. Connection and expansion; for if this startling theory of theirs be verified and if per consequentum the non-resurrection of Christ be established, what becomes of you believers? This: your faith is proved spurious and futile, its substance a mere castle in the air: your bodies and souls and spirits are unredeemed: if Christ is still in the grave, ye are still in your sins: most certainly ye are, if it be no more than a beautiful dream that was raised for our justification.

18. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished.] Rather, So then, they also which fell asleep in Christ perished!

A gleam of serious irony or indignant sarcasm seems to run through this verse. This appears from the form in which the thought is expressed, the form of an oxymoron or epigrammatic contrast. St. Paul does not say they which died or went the way of all flesh, but they which were laid asleep in Christ. How can any one seriously be said to fall asleep in Christ and at the same time to perish? A contradiction in terms: they perish or go to perdition who die outside of Christ, not they who fall asleep in Him. The particle ἀναστ. so then is a suitable verger to irony.

19. If in this life only we have hope in Christ.] Rather, If only in this life we have set our hopes upon Christ. The word only affects the whole clause from in to Christ, uttered uns spiri. In the Greek it is placed last, the sense being, 'If in this life we are hopers in Christ and nothing more,' i.e. with no possible future before us of His beatific vision and of God's immortality and kingdom and glory.

we are of all men most miserable.] According to the Greek more miserable or pitiable
the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept.

21 For since by man came death,

by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, even

than all men are we: the sense being, we Christians are more real objects of pity than the heathen, who constitute the mass of mankind. Miserable means not 'wretched' (miserr) but 'meet for compassion,' objects of mercy: compare the prayer in the Litany, 'have mercy upon us, miserable sinners.'

Perhaps this verse may be better rendered, 'In this life we have set our hopes upon Christ, only that, most miserable of all men are we.'

20. A new phase in this chapter now presents itself. The style with the theme changes: lofty dogmatic statement supersedes vehement argument: the logician becomes the prophet. Hitherto St. Paul has written level to the inner consciousness of his readers: he now rises to planes exalted far above their Christian knowledge, and discloses to their view a long perspective of a divine future, the contents of revelations made to himself. The inspired Apostle dictates oracles: the Resurrection and the Parousia are but the imposing vestibule of the Messianic Aeon, that age of all the ages: see on these points Introduction to this Chapter.

The contrast between the first and second sections will be made more apparent by a brief résumé. In the foregoing verses St. Paul has demolished the new theory no resurrection at all of dead men by shewing that the argument fails as proving too much, proving even more than its own advocates may have intended: for carried out to its fair issues it proves that Christ also is not risen; but this result, however true in logic, is not true in fact, for that He should not be risen is a thing absolutely incredible, seeing that after His own resurrection He appeared bodily to hundreds of eyewitnesses, most of whom are still alive and therefore producible. One of these eyewitnesses is the writer himself. St. Paul has moreover enforced his own logical refutation of the new thesis by a stirring appeal to the moral sense of his readers, picturing in a few touches a terrible alternative. If this startling theory should after all (ἀπο) be correct, what then? calamitous consequences; we are still in our sins; we are on the way to perdition! This cloud of gloom the apostle in v. 20 removes, letting in the sunshine of truth. He makes an easy and triumphant transition from melancholy possibilities to the one joyous reality, the incontestable fact of Christ's resurrection. No wonder Chrysostom makes St. Paul in this verse 'shout jubilantly the key-note of the chapter Christ is risen from the dead!'

But now.] Now used in logical sense = now, you know. The words and become should be omitted, and that slept is wrong. Render, But, as it is, Christ is risen from the dead, firstfruits of them that are fallen asleep: more exactly of the fallen asleep, i. e. of all departed saints from Adam to the Adent. The writer's mind leaps forward to the Parousia, and glances back through the ages. This may be inferred both from the phrase fallen asleep, which in the New Testament denotes the death of the saints, and from the fellowship of all believers with Christ as implied in the word firstfruits.

Underlying the dogmatic statement of this verse is another argument for the general resurrection aimed at the freethinkers. For it may be asked, Why is Christ risen from the dead? For His own sake? Not so, but for the sake of His brethren and of mankind, that these too may be raised at their proper times. He is the firstfruits—a harvest, and as surely as the harvest follows the firstfruits, so surely shall all they who die in the Lord be raised just as He was raised who died for them. He is the one true Paschal Sheaf that hallows and ensures the many after-sheaves, the earnest and guarantee of the final ingathering of His elect: these too, when risen, shall 'be like Him,' for they shall be reaped from the same field: as the firstfruits, so the harvest. The above view does not exclude the fact that Christ shall raise unbelievers also, only that He is not their firstfruits: they too shall be reaped, but not from the same field.

21. For since by man came death.] Rather since through man is death, through man is resurrection of dead men. Here the statement of the previous verse is made to rest upon a divine arrangement and principle, namely, In what nature defeat has been sustained, in the same nature conquest must be achieved: if bome put on trial has lost immortality placed within his reach, bome again put on trial must win back immortality. The conclusion is, says Meyer, a causa mali effectus ad similem causam contrarii effectus. Death here is physical, the result of moral and spiritual death.

Through or by means of man: ἄνωθεν, not ἀνωθένως. Why so? Because mortality came by means of Adam from the Tempter as from the source of evil, for 'by envy of
so in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.

24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom

the devil sin entered into the cosmos," Wisdom of Solomon ii. 24. In like manner immortality is through Christ as the mediating cause but from God as the efficient cause, who is the only source of only good. Man in his nature is here described as the instrumental cause both of man's death and of man's resurrection.

22. For as in Adam all die.] Rather in the Adam and in the Christ. The abstract ideas of the previous verse now reappear in concrete form: man becomes the Adam, man again the Christ: death becomes all men dead, resurrection becomes all men made alive.

all shall be made alive.] i.e. in the Christ all men without exception, both believers and unbelievers, shall be raised bodily. Nevertheless they shall not all be raised together, not all mankind in one massed army but in several divisions and at distinct epochs. This idea, not discernible in this text, comes to view in the next. It may be remarked that, divorced from its context, this passage wears on its surface a hope of universal salvation in the end: but in the next verse this gleam disappears before the corrective δια and the disjunctive ἐστιν. In fact, a comma or semicolon should be placed after made alive.

23. Connect and render; All shall be made alive, every one, however, in his own division or class, as firstfruits CHRIST, next in order they that are Christ's in his coming; afterward the end. The word every one individualises and the phrase in his own division classifies the undistinguishable all of v. 22.

In his own order of the A. V. is not correct according to the modern sense of the word 'order.' If St. Paul, like Polybius and Xenophon, uses τοιχόν here in the sense of legion or brigade, the image becomes military. The whole human race, like one army, dictates before us in three divisions separated from each other by long intervals. The Lord Himself constitutes the first division: He is four times in the New Testament designated our Commander-in-chief (αὐτοκράτωρ, compare ἀναχριστός); as the Archon or Foremost Leader, He is already nearly two millenniums in advance of His own battalion, the next division of the resurrection, the Church of the Redeemed. The rest of mankind constitute the third and largest division: an interval of unknown duration separates the second from the third.

At his coming or parousia.] Rather perhaps in than at. The phrase seems to denote within the saving circle of His Advent, when He comes terrible to His enemies, environed with a margin of flaming fire that shall devour the adversaries.'

Critical note. Afterward of the A. V. might be replaced by next in order or next after that: compare τί πρῶτον; τί δ' ἐστερα; not to mention the word's etymology. A semicolon should be placed at the end of this verse.

24. Then cometh the end, when be shall have delivered up the kingdom to God . . .] Render, afterward the end, whenever he delivereth the kingdom or kingship to God the Father.

What the end here may signify, cannot be determined: aliis alia: in all likelihood 'the end' is its own interpreter. Two things seem clear from the tenses in this verse, (1) the end or terminus ad quem will then be, whenever the Son shall make to the Father a transfer of the regal office and government; (2) that this transfer will be made not before the disablement of all hostile powers, but after it. No doubt, the intuition of the inspired apostle enables him to glance beyond the grand epoch of the Advent and to discern dimly on the other side of it a period of conflict with a succession of evil dominations, angelic and human, the high ones that are on high and the kings of the earth upon the earth: Isaiah xxiv. 21. How long this period of conflict may last, is left undetermined in this verse; but it will cease as soon as Christ has dispossessed or made ineffectual (καταργήσῃ) all that exalts itself against God. This final subjugation will be followed by the formal abdication: since this is an end, this terminus ad quem of the mediatorial regency being accomplished, the resignation thereof will take place. Hence it seems probable that the kingship (βασιλεία) will be handed over by the Incarnate Son to Him who is God and Father (τῷ Θεῷ καὶ πατρί); but the kingdom of His own founding, in its contents of citizens, the πολίτευμα of Philipp. iii. 20, will continue: so that His kingdom shall have no end; Nicene Creed.

Critical Note. The ἀποσία here, τὸ ἀποσία (forsa), has two protases. The second ἐνταύθων clause is in its contents subordinate and in its time anterior to the first ἐνταύθων clause: this is clear from the aorist καταργήσῃ. The subject to καταργήσῃ is Christ.
to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.

25 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

27 For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him.

28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son
also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?

30 And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?

31 I protest by your rejoicing, which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus,
what advantage it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink; for to morrow we die.

33 Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousness, and

sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

I became or turned beastfighter, a word formed like our 'prizefighter': the Greek is ἐναγνατισμός: the Greek for I fought with beasts would be θησαυρὸς ἐναγνατισμός. Compare γεννακαργεὶς (Sophoc.). = to be an old man's guide—a settled occupation—not to guide an old man.

Evidently beasts in a figure are here meant, brutes in human form. Ignatius ad Rom. 5: 'From Syria all the way to Rome I am a beastfighter by land and sea.' These brutes in Ephesus were, probably, exasperated Jews, ferocious enemies of the cross and of St. Paul; compare Acts xx. 19. The aorist in I became beastfighter points either to some incident unrecorded or more probably to a definite period of time during which the conflict raged and then ceased.

It may be added that these brutes could not possibly be wild beasts of the amphitheatre inasmuch as St. Paul's right of Roman citizenship protected him from the arena: by his juss creatiois he was shielded from condemnation and death.

What in human fashion (καί αὐθαυσία) means, is not clear: it is a phrase obscure in the obscurity of its context, which yields an uncertain light. It may signify on the level of man's view, i.e. with no aspirations beyond the horizon of this life, regardless of the future glory which is conditioned by resurrection.

Let us eat and drink.] Isa. xxi. 13. See LXX Version, whence this text is taken verbatim.

33. Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.] Full sense: Be not led astray in this maze of Satan (διάδοχοι): those freethinkers will tell you that, as the body in the grave perishes, so the sins of the body touch not the immortal spirit: this is not true (ch. vi. 19): beware of intercourse with those freethinkers: remember the proverb 'Evil companionships corrupt honest characters.' This last proverb is a Greek verse from the Thais of Menander.

34. Awake to righteousness.] A fine expression, but scarcely a true translation: there is no notion of awaking unless it be in the preposition εἰ: nor does δικαιοσύνη = δικαιοσύνη, as some, who quote Thucyd. i. 21. Rather shake off your stupor (drunken fit) in a right spirit, or be sober again in right

fashion (see Ajax, 550): others as in duty bound: not so good.

And sin not.] Change from the aorist to the imperfect imperative; ἐκμυρισθεῖτε, but ἐκμυρισθήτε, not ἐκμυρισθῶ. The imperfect here does not denote habit but a process commencing. Full sense: 'beware of seduction into error, tamper not with the evil, but take heed lest ye decline step by step from the faith and from Virtue into heresy and so into immorality. Glide not insensibly into sin by listening to the perilous fallacies of those some (τινις of v. 12) for (I tell you) ignorance of God some have in the grain. Here have = are affected with: so Meyer well.

N.B. ἄγνοια, not ἐγνοια, seems to mean unknownness or incapacity of knowing God; but are there instances of this use? The phrase πρὸς εὐπορίαν means (expanded) with a view to producing shamefacedness: pregnant or elliptical use of preposition, as in a thousand other passages: compare ἵπτε τὸν πηρόν with a view to the dead being raised (precisely same construction, only a change of mental posture) and Coloss. ii. 23, πρὸς πληροφορίαν τὴν ἁπάντησιν with a view to checking licentiousness. The verb λαλῶ here means not I speak this, as in the A.V., but do I talk.

Render and explain this last sentence—for absolute ignorance or unknowingness of God some have in the grain: to make you feel ashamed am I talking; in order that feeling ashamed ye may be wary of keeping company with those some.

35. But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?] Render, But still, some one will say, how raised are the dead? or with what kind of body do they come? An objector is now supposed to moot a question to this effect: But nevertheless, granting the fact of resurrection, I should like to know in what manner and by what process they are raised—those dead? or with what sort of body, forsooth, will they come, when the Lord comes? That the Apostle makes the objector speak with the self-assurance and contemptuousness of a 'knowsomething' may be inferred from his own sharp reply, Fool! what thou sowest ... Connection between vv. 34 and 35. St. Paul having warned his hearers to avoid intercourse with the deniers of resurrection,
36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die:
And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of
wheat, or of some other grain:

who because of this denial were becoming morally careless (so intimately bound up together are right doctrine and right practice), now proceeds to expound the nature of the future bodies.

N.B. The word but here means but still, and belongs not to the statement of St. Paul some one will say, but to the question of the objector nevertheless who, I ask. And with . . . rather or, i.e. 'or to put the question in another shape;' the disjunctive particle presents a different side of the same idea.

36. Thou fool . . . ] Analogies drawn from common experiences of nature, preparatory to the dogmatic teachings of v. 42 ff. Render, Fool what thou sowest: emphasis on thou: argument a minori ad majus: if what thou, a silly mortal, sowest is after decomposition quickened, how much more shall what God soweth by the hand of the sexton, even the human body, be made alive after dissolution. Meyer makes thou anti-theatical to God in v. 38: but the interval is too great.

Chrysostom in loco to this effect: 'These heretics say, The body is not raised because it dies: I reply, The body because it dies is therefore raised. Again they say, If there be a raising, one body falls, another is raised. I reply, Resurrection is a raising of that which is fallen: whatever body falls, the same is raised and yet raised not the same, in many respects different, in all superior.

is not quickened, except it die.] The seed sown and dying is the analogue of the body buried and decaying. Every living seed contains within itself a germ or minute embryo plant. Under ground this germ begins to grow at the expense of the seed: soon the main bulk of the seed is gone, and nothing remains of it but the rotten shrivelled husk. Thus it 'dies:' this dying of the seed corresponds to the decaying of the body which is already dead and buried. Decomposition is a condition necessary to reproduction: every higher form of life presupposes the loss of that which precedes it. This is a law of nature. The growth of tuberous and bulbous roots is analogous to that of seeds. In digging up potatoes the decaying corpse of the old one which was planted is found among the new ones.

37. And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain.] Render and explain: And in what thou sowest, thou sowest not the body that shall appear (the stately plant of bladed stem, clothed with verdure and with ears of corn), but a naked grain, perchance of wheat. Emphasis on the word naked: the resurrection body shall be clothed with glory.

38. But God giveth it a body, as it bath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.] Render and explain: But or while God (it is who) giveth it a body, in what manner he willed (i.e. in His counsel of creation before the worlds), and to every seed a proper body or a body of its own. He willed: all things created are God's thoughts of eternity made actual in time.

God giveth it a body.] Full sense: God's omnipotence is the efficient cause, as corruption is the necessary condition, of a seed's reproduction in a new and nobler form of life. In the latent processes from decomposition to reconstitution identity of kind and (in some degree) of substance is preserved, not identity of state: the vital germ of the grain reappears the same in its nature, but in form and in constitution how much handsomer! in quality of substance too how much better! Ridiculous is the question of the caviller, 'With a body of what sort do they come—those dead?' For if God gives to every sown grain a plant-body corresponding in kind to its new state, shall He not in like manner give to every buried man a proper resurrection body? Or does this caviller imagine that the dead body shall come forth just the same? as did the body of Lazarus? Every stalk of wheat shakes its luxuriant head at him.

39. All flesh is not the same flesh.] Render Not all flesh is the same flesh. Another argument for some identity, yet more diversity between bodies buried and risen. Flesh is a substance common to all animals and yet how different in each species, in mankind and in cattle, fishes, birds. Beasts here should be rendered cattle. The underlying sense of this verse seems to be: there is identity and yet diversity of human flesh in the old creation and in the new: the same flesh, that
40 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power.

44 It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

was taken of the first Adam by the last, was by Him who took it made diverse in that it was hallowed and glorified. In the resurrection the flesh of the saints shall be consubstantiated with the glorified flesh of the risen Christ. De Wette and others make flesh here to mean animal organisms: rather the substance is meant: the idea of organism appears in the next verse. The sequence of the things co-ordinated is flesh, body, luster.

40. Render, Bodies too celestial there are and bodies terrestrial. Emphasis both times on the word bodies: the argument proceeds from diversities of flesh in God's creation to diversities of bodily organisms. Bodies celestial here can hardly denote bodies of angels, as de Wette and Meyer, for it does not appear that angels possess constituted bodies: they can impregnate corporeities and appear in human form, as two of them did to Abraham at Mamre. Neither can the phrase denote the planets, as Delitzsch, because the idea of the heavenly bodies presents no proper parallel to that of flesh in the preceding verse. Living bodily organisms are here meant. St. Paul may possibly have been thinking, not of the planets themselves, but of bodies dwelling upon the planets (ἐνυψώσα) as diverse from bodies dwelling upon the earth (ἐνυψοῦσα). For if the planets are inhabited, the Apostle might easily have learnt this truth, not indeed scientifically but in one of his superabundant revelations. If so, bodies planetariens will be contrasted with bodies terrestrial, as organisms differing the one class from the other. This theory would not be invalidated by the next sentence, for there the contrast is apparently not between a natural glory and a supernatural, but between two natural glories. This is made probable by the contrasted glories of sun, moon, stars in the next verse.

41. Not only stars differ from sun and moon, but star from star differs in glory: the diversities of brilliancy are infinite.

42. Connection with the foregoing: there is a sameness in some respects and a difference in others between the seed and the plant, between the flesh of man and the flesh of animals, between living bodies in the heavens and living bodies on the earth, between the dazzling sheen of the sun and the rayless sheen of the moon and the sparkling sheen of the stars, yes between the diverse brilliancies of stars compared with stars. Unquestionably: but just as between these manifold creations in their several co-ordinations there is identity of nature and of substance and community of certain properties, but at the same time diversity in form and in rank, quality, beauty, glory; in like manner is the resurrection also of the dead (saints). There is between buried and risen bodies of saints identity in kind and same in substance, yet much diversity in form and in state: for what was sown or buried, the same is raised, but raised not the same: that which was disfigured by death and corruption is now transfigured into life and incorruptibility: for 'sown it is in a state of corruption, raised in a state of incorruptibility' (ἀφθαρσία, compare ἀνάρροια, v. 54).

43. It is sown in dishonour: ...] Hardly, as Meyer, 'the sowing is man's act, the raising is God's': rather man buries, and God sows by the hand of man who buries: He who sows, raises also. In dishonour is to be understood of the fadistis cadaveris. In glory, a state proper to the resurrection bodies, Phil. iii. 21. In weakness, in a condition of utter powerlessness. In power: what a change! a body radiant with the glory and endowed with fulness of capacity (βαρύς) for life and activity in a new sphere.

44. It is sown a natural body. Natural here means animal in the sense of psycbical, i.e. a body fitted for the anima or psyché, a tenement meet for the life of the soul: a material instrument of flesh and blood and sense-organs, by which the soul holds converse with the outer world of sensible objects, seeing, hearing, touching, acting. This communication is good or evil precisely according as the soul is willing to be guided by man's spirit, itself guided by God's Spirit. A spiritual body is a bodily organism adapted to the life of the spirit, and controlled thereby. In it the soul has taken its proper position of subordination: man's spirit now
45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.

holds the administrative power and, ruled by God's Spirit, rules the body through the executive medium of the willing soul. Man is at last, what God originally intended him to be, a creature in whom the spirit is the personifying principle and the seat of government: his proper self down from his own spirit, as from a throne, reigns supreme over the soul and through that over the body, in a threefold harmony: the harmony of the parts is the unity of the whole: for the body is now reconstructed meet for the new government: it is pneumatic, no longer psychical.

N.B. In the hour of Adam's probation, as his spirit was to him the vehicle of fellowship with the Holy Spirit and his body the channel of communication with the sensible world, so his soul or self-living nature had to decide between two attractions, a higher and a lower, whether it would consent in accordance with the divine intention to be determined by the spirit and thereby continue in fellowship with God, or would conclude against God and choose a life of selfish independence. By the fall of Adam his fellowship with God was dissolved, and the divine life of the spirit was quenched, although its divine substance remained, but not unimpaired.

There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.] Render, If there is an animal body, there is a spiritual also. Emphasis on is both times: is means exists. Full sense: if God could create a body fitted for the soul, He can as easily create a body fitted for the spirit, and He has: there is already such a body created by Him, and that body possessed by Christ, as being united to the Word.

45. And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.] Render, So it is also written, The first man Adam became to be a living soul, the last Adam to be a spirit making alive.

Became unto or to be, is. Not was made, for the Greek verb means to become, denoting a transition from one state to another or from one mode of existence to another. Here the state of being a living soul is declared to result from a prior process of becoming: what this prior process was, must be gathered from the scripture, Gen. ii. 7, here cited in part by St. Paul. From it we learn that God first fashioned the body of Adam from earth moistened with dew and then breathed or rather blew (ἐνίωθεν, the same word as in Joh. xx. 22, a significant repetition of a similar act) into his nostrils the breath of life. This breath of life was spirit and of the divine essence, for God who breathed it from Himself is Spirit. This communicated pneuma of the unlimited Pneuma made man in his highest nature of spirit akin to God; but akin only, for by this breath of God man was as far from being God, as a breath of man is from being man. 'If a man,' says Tertullian adv. Marc. ii. 8, 'blow into a flute, he will not make the flute a man, though he blow from his soul as God from His Spirit.' In this process of creation the soul was the product or outflash (ἰνεοιησαν) of the spirit and the connecting link between it and the body. It is called a living soul because it was designed to be for a time the self-acting and determining element of man's life, but not for ever—only during his probation. Thus man was created into the position of a living soul, but created also for a position still higher, should he prove obedient. For if he had obeyed, he would have been advanced into a position in which the spirit and not the soul would have been the ruling principle of life. But Adam failed in his obedience: wherefore the Son of God assumed a body, like Adam's before the fall, consisting of flesh and blood, whereby He ate, drank, slept and suffered and died. He became man, in order that He might become (by means of a sinless obedience unto death or, some say, by means of the resurrection simply) to be (after His resurrection and more fully after His ascension) not only a spirit made alive for evermore, but a spirit making alive for evermore, Himself both rising from the dead and raising others, man immortal making men immortal, an inexhaustible Fountain of the resurrection life to all believers. The last Adam: St. Paul by this declares the destination, for which man was originally designed, to be an object defeated in Adam, but attained in Christ: the last Adam concludes the history of humanity.

N.B.—Some understand ζωονοιησις, life-giving and life-bestowing: that cannot be correct; for example, ζωοποιησις means not to take life but, the contrary, to take alive. So ζωοποιησις (from ζωης alive, not from ζωη life) means not 'to vitalise' but to 'vivify' or 'make alive from a state of death.'

46. Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and
The first man is of the earth, earthly: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

As is the earthly, such are they also that are earthly: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

And as we have borne the verse the material or earthly and human (from homo, it is said) side of the first man’s origin is sharply contrasted with the spiritual or divine side of the origin of the Godman. Others render both earth and from heaven in local sense, connecting the latter phrase with the manifestation of the Lord at the Parousia. Rather against this view is the appended phrase made of dust or mould, which will then lack a proper correlative in the second clause. If in γη here means out of earth or terrenus, not terrestis, θανατός will be an emphatic enhancement of the same idea, meaning pulvereus, i. e. not only of earth but of earth’s mould; compare Gen. iii. 19, ‘earth thou art and into earth shalt thou return!’ εἰς τὰς εἰς γην. This material dust was watered with the dews of Eden: compare Milton’s accurate phrase mortal mixture of earth’s mould and Horace’s princeps limus.

It may be added that memorials of man’s double-sided origin and destiny are perpetuated in the sacraments. The terrane or earthborn elements of water and of bread and wine are symbols or counterparts of the Spirit and of the heavenly body and divine blood.

The distinction between Heaven and the heavens in these verses should be noted. Caesar ipsum est caelum in quo Deus est etiam quando caelum creatum nullum est, ipsa gloria divina: Sebastian Schmidt.

As is the earthly, such are, Etc. From the caelum ipsum (Heb. ii. 21), or God’s Heaven, ‘out of which the Son of man came down’ (John iii. 15), the mind of the Apostle makes a transit to the lower local heavens, or ‘the Father’s house of many mansions,’ and to them that are in those heavens, first to the Godman Himself, and then to all who are such as He, all who after the resurrection are like Him.

There is a contrast here between the two creations, as in the preceding verse between the two heads. Akin to the head of the old humanity are the members of it, all of them from dust and unto dust, out of earth in the beginning moulded, and upon earth for a while sojourning, and into earth at last returning. Akin also to the Head of the new humanity are the members thereof; born from above, they are a new creation in Christ destined to be like Him, of the celestial commonwealth (ἐνοπάτους), that is, to dwell with Him in the new heavens and
image of the earth; we shall bear the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

the new earth, when God shall plant heavens and lay the foundations of an earth and shall say to Zion, Thou art my people (Isaiah li. 16).

N.B.—The local sense of the word heavenly in this verse, as indeed in v. 40 above, may be certainly inferred from Hebr. 9, 23, where τὰ ἐρευνάσαν and τὰ ἐν τοῖς αἰώναις are identified.

49. And as we have borne the image of the earthly, we shall also bear.] We have borne: render, we are borne: the view is a retrospect, looking backward from the point of the resurrection in the Parousia. Emphatic here are the utterances of the words born and bear: they both point to external appearance: the second denotes the manifestation of the sons of God in spiritual bodies at the resurrection. If the word image is borrowed from coinage, the sense of the whole will be: The substance or material of the old humanity is even in this life in process of being secretly transmuted and refined by a 'celestial fire' and recast in a heavenly mould: in the resurrection the new metal will be restamped with the new image. Now, indeed, we carry in the animal body the unmistakable copy of our earthborn original, but hereafter we shall bear in the spiritual body the indelible impress and character of our divine archetype. More probably, however, the figure is taken from clothing, as in the bladed plant evolved from the naked grain ver. 37; in that case, the idea will be, We shall wear the image of the Godman, when we have put on immortality.

50. flesh and blood] i.e. the psychical or animal organism of the present body. cannot inherit.] i.e. from its very constitution, is not in a position to do so. Read διαβαρα, not διαβαρα: for clearly flesh and blood represents one twofold idea, and therefore requires a verb singular. 
doth inherit.] i.e. ever inherit: the timeless present of a constant truth.

51. Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep . . .] Rather, Behold (a word arresting attention), a mystery (divine secret revealed to me) do I tell you: not all of us shall fall asleep, all of us however shall be changed. The rendering of the A.V. is correct; only for but may be substituted yet or nevertheless or however.

Not all denotes such as shall be alive in the body at the time of the rapture prior to the advent: see 1 Thess. iv. 15, 16. All of us shall be changed: all saints, whether alive or deceased, quick or dead, shall be transfigured. That the transfiguration will be instantaneous is shown from the context: that it will be complete is shown by the aorists.

N.B. Objections of some commentators to the A.V. rendering of this text cannot be sustained. Meyer, for instance, states correctly the well-known distinction between ὀλ πάς and πάς ὁ, but he misapplies the rule: he fails to perceive that this law, true in all other texts, is in this exceptional passage absolutely overridden by a higher law. In fact πάς ὁ here must be rendered precisely as if it were ὀλ πάς: the structure of the sentence demands it: the presence or absence of μὲν makes no difference. This might be shewn in full, did space permit.

52. for the trumpet shall sound.] In the Greek, 'he, the trumpeter, shall trumpet.' and we shall be changed.] i.e. into a state of incorruption: the full sense is: We, who shall not have put off the body, shall be changed not by putting it off but by putting on over it the immortal that shall absorb the mortal: see 2 Cor. v. 4 and notes.

54. Death is swallowed up in victory.] Rather, was swallowed up unto victory.
have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.

55 a Death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?
56 The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.
58 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

The apostle transplants himself, as once or twice before in this chapter, to an eminence beyond the Parousia, and views therefrom the sudden absorption or abolition of death in fulfilment of a prophecy, which he adapts from Isaiah xxv. 8; see notes there. Unto victory, as the result of Death's disappearance in the lake of fire. The final engulfment of the all-engulping monster issues in victory.

55. O grave.] Render, O Death.
58. Therefore, my beloved.] After dogmatic declaration comes affectionate exhortation.

Be ye stedfast, unmoveable.] Render, prove ye stedfast, unshaken, that is unremoved from your moorings and fixedness of faith in the Article of the Resurrection: querasinymos, not alexinymos.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on verses 3, 29.

3. Christ died for our sins.] Of all the prepositions in the New Testament none has been so controverted and misunderstood as the preposition for (εἰς). The importance of a correct view of it must furnish a plea for this note: for it is not too much to say that numerous texts have been misinterpreted simply because of an erroneous notion which seems to prevail amongst modern commentators concerning this preposition. The ancient Greek Fathers found no difficulty in it. The differences of moderns about it are due apparently to the fact that a kind of theological crust has been allowed to form around the pure and intrinsic meaning of the word. This time-hallowed accretion seems now to be stereotyped in the two senses in behalf of and instead of. Whereas the truth is that neither of these is the essential sense of the preposition. To ascertain this radical meaning is most desirable, if we wish to understand more thoroughly other texts besides the one before us, such for example as 'He was delivered for our offences and was raised again for (ἐξα) our justification.' What is this radical meaning? In the two well known texts, He died for our sins, i. e. 'with a view to their abolition' and He died for us, i. e. 'with a view to our redemption,' what is that essential sense of for (εἰς) which is common to both the uses? It is this: the for properly means over, Latin super. In the New Testament it happens never to signify over in the sense of local or physical position, as when a man leans over a table or bends over a grave, but is always used in a moral or rational sense, as when a man talks another man over or thinks a matter over. In short, this preposition denotes mental posture, the attitude of a spirit or mind bending over an ideal object either in tender solicitude or simply by way of contemplation and nothing more. Whether this attitude has relation to persons or to things, the context determines: the preposition itself is quite indifferent. This view will become clearer, if we explain the two cognate texts He died for us and He died for our sins by means of a familiar illustration. When a surgeon, for instance, is called in to attend a wounded soldier, he bends over the patient whom he examines in general, then over the wound which he examines in particular, before he proceeds to apply remedies. Not otherwise the divine Physician Himself, moving through the vast hospital of fallen creations, when He comes to the stricken Adam, stoops over him in deepest commiseration, stoops over the moral wound of universal sin, and proceeds to apply the remedy. Knowing that there is but one remedy and that an extreme one, no less than the sacrifice of His own life, He notwithstanding applies it, draining into his own suffering humanity the moral virus, apart from guilt, and healing death by death. Mors mortui morte mortui mortuus. Mankind indeed were in the saddest case. See Athanasius de incarnatione Verbi, § 26-27.

It should be remarked that whether the moral or spiritual attitude denoted by this word for is an attitude to be referred to the
I. CORINTHIANS. XV.

Incarnate Son, or to God the Father as the first cause of man’s redemption, or to the Tripersonal Deity, is a question lying outside the preposition itself.

It may be added that Meyer takes the correct view of this text in ver. 3, rendering it *on account of our sins with a view to their expiation*. But why did Meyer take the same view of the same preposition in a clause of the same construction in this chapter, *What shall they do who are baptized for the dead?* Probably because in that text the *for* is connected with *things*, in this with *sins*. He failed to extricate his generally accurate mind from the deep-set groove of modern opinion that this preposition *ἐν τῷ* associated with a personal genitive, must signify *in behalf of* or *instead of*. This last idea is not true.

Chrysostom says well in loco, “If Christ died on account of alien sin, it follows that He himself was un-sinned, or more exactly un-sinned (ἀναπληρωμένος).” The doctrine of vicarious satisfaction is to be inferred from other texts, not from this. ἀνέληφε not *ἐν τῷ* conveys this idea.

29. *what shall they do who are baptized for the dead?* It seems strange that such a variety of views should mark modern commentators on this controverted text. This variety may perhaps be traced in its source to a rooted opinion that the preposition for *ἐν τῷ* connected with *things* for *with the benefit of* or *in place of*. This opinion is not true: for the construction in this verse is precisely the same as in verse 3, and there is no more difficulty in this text than in that.

Just as Christ died both *for us and for our sins*, i.e., with a mind bent over *us* in order to our redemption or *over our sins* with an eye to their abolition, even so catechumens in baptism emerged from the hallowed streams with their thoughts busy about or intent upon the dead: not upon the dead, as so many particular persons (another modern view scarcely correct), but as a general class or category—distinct from the living on earth. This distinction of two categories is shewn by the generic articles *οι* and *δότων*, the latter used for the first time before *τρίτην* in this chapter and for the purpose of contrasting class with class, i.e., the plural object in one class *the dead* with the plural subject in one class *the baptized*. *The dead* here means all the possible dead up to the Parousia contemplated as being raised in Him who is the Firstborn of “the church of the firstborn.” The risen Christ may be included in the category, and even the catechumens themselves prospectively.

As on this v. 29 moderns differ much from each other and still more from the ancients, this critique may be allowed to proceed a little further. The controversy turns upon the preposition. According to modern commentators it means *in behalf of* and a little more; according to the ancient it denotes *in behalf of* and much more. Frequent in Greek both Attic and Hellenistic are uses of this preposition denoting not only *in behalf of* but also *on account of*, *with an interest in*, *concerning*, *with a view to* or *simply in relation to*: the specific nature of the relation, lying outside the indifferent preposition, is always determined either by new text (failing such context) by the familiar circumstances of the case. For instance in the verse *He died for our sins*, with the outlying circumstance which alone explains this verse all Scripture rings again: without this broad sunshine from without, the text would be to a Pagan a dark problem. Even so in the clause *baptized for the dead*, i.e., *with respect to them or with an eye upon them* or (as in the Greek idiom) *with the mind over them*, what is the context of this clause, which without a context is a problem without a solution? The whole chapter roars with the context, not to mention the familiar circumstance of the baptismal rite: both *context and circumstance* together proclaim that the ulterior view of a neophyte’s mind bending over the long roll or class of the dead is their resurrection. But to make certainty doubly certain and misconception simply impossible, in the very next verse St. Paul in context of thunder reiterates the same keynote: *if absolutely not raised are dead men, why do persons actually receive baptism on their account?*

The A.V. rendering *for the dead*, rightly understood, is good and may well be retained. In defence of it, and in further illustration of the elastic and elliptic use of prepositions, the following remarks may be added. Nothing is more common in our own language whether written or spoken, than the elliptical use of the preposition *for*. In fact, in what way St. Paul in our text writes, in the same way we *daily talk*. One instance of this may be cited. The writer of this note remembers, many years ago some time between the death of the Duke of Wellington and his public funeral how by chance he heard a lady, pointing to some crape lying on a table near her, say: “This will be of use for the Duke of Wellington.” Immediately came to his mind this text: *‘What shall persons do who are baptized for the dead’ as parallel in structure to the sentence uttered. For the sentence expanded in full signified, This crape will be of use for me to wear on the day of the funeral of the Duke of Wellington. The for here denoted in relation to, and the several links of the relation between the crape and*
the Duke were on the instant mentally supplied from the well-known circumstances of the case. The context of the remark was familiar. The remark itself may be fairly rendered in Greek χρησιμα ταύτα δι’ εις ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἀνατώτως: see Xen. Cyth. 6, 2, 34.

But a passage from Shakspere will serve better to illustrate this use of for and to elucidate our text. Macbeth, iii. iv. sc. 3.

'They all were struck for thee.' Who could tell the meaning of this sentence without the context? With a suitable context for thee might signify in thy stead or in thy behalf—

with a view to saving thy life: but the actual context shews that the words do mean in full with a view to thy chastisement—to make thee smart for thy sins, Macduff. The application of this elliptical use of for to our English text is obvious.

Unquestionably the right view of this controverted passage is that of the Greek Fathers, Chrysostom, Theophylact, Theodoret and others. In reading their comments it is quite clear that they found no more difficulty in St. Paul's elliptical use of the Greek ὑπὲρ than we do in Shakspere's elliptical use of the English for. They did not hesitate in their homilies to expound that the phrase for the dead meant with an interest in the resurrection of the dead or that for by St. Paul even so much as in expectation of the resurrection. A sample of this from Theophylact, τι ποιησωσιν ἀπανθημίσης; τι δὲ ὅλος καὶ βαπτιζόμενοι ἀνθρώπως ὑπὲρ ἀναστάσεως, τοιούτοις ἐπὶ προς θησίαν ἀναστάσεως, τι μεκροὶ οὐκ ἐγείρονται; In other words, they, in preaching to the audiences of their own day, inserted in this text that illuminative context, which to a Corinthian congregation, hearing this 5th chapter read aloud throughout, might be well omitted and was omitted by St. Paul. For in simple speech all unnecessary contexts are omitted in order to save time. Hence the phrase the elliptical use of a preposition.

But notwithstanding the obvious correctness of the one patristic interpretation the modern counter-view seems to be gaining ground. Against this view, mischievous as well as erroneous, a few words must be said. It seems, as before stated, to have sprung from contracted notions of the elastic ὑπὲρ. To such lengths has this prepositional error led recent commentators that actually they seem to see lurking in the folds of this text, which their own perplexities have made a mazy labyrinth (see in loco Alford's note of bewilderment and Stanley's prodigious inferences), a veritable Minotaur in the shape of vicarious baptism. Nowhere in all the contexts of this verse (and there are three) nor in the text itself is there the shadow of a peg on which to hang this monstrous superstition. If 'monstrous' should appear to any one a strong epithet, let him peruse persons 40 of Chrysostom, who seems to have moved his audience to loud laughter by drawing a ludicrous picture of this profane custom. After assigning its origin to Satan, who delights in caricatures of holy rites, the preacher proceeds to shew that vicarious baptism in its legitimate issues must lead to something like salvation by proxy. Now if such a superstition, even in the germ, had appeared in Corinth before the date of this epistle, would not St. Paul have come down upon it with all his thunder? Would he not have devoted a whole chapter to its extinction? A chapter commencing with a quite a significant verse in the usual way (see ch. v. 1), I bear or it is reported that some among you receive baptism more than once—δι' ἐννεακον καὶ τριτον καὶ τεταρτον—and that for dead persons—ὑπὲρ νεκρῶν without the τῶν and perhaps with a τίνος to balance the τίνες and to contrast living persons with dead persons, and the many who seem to be contrasted with the whole class of the dead by the ei and the τῶν in the text. This calm commencement would have been followed by keen argument and keener inductive. For if in ch. vi. the Apostle lashed his converts with cutting sarcasms for presuming to litigate before heathen tribunals, certainly he would have chastised them tenfold for harbouring in their midst the rank heresy of the one holy baptism repeated: let alone its being repeated vicariously for the benefit (as Meyer says, misunderstanding the ἑνδεικνυμένας of believer's who had died unbaptized! The truth of the matter is, that this famous text was afterwards singled out by heresiarchs and made the basis of vicarious baptism and its mischievous sequels. The wicked Marcion (see Chrysostom, Hom. 40) boldly distorted it from its contexts and by willful misrepresentation (μαραθοντας) made his credulous hearers believe that ὑπὲρ in this passage meant over in a local sense: and so it does sometimes with suitable context, but not in this passage nor elsewhere in the Greek Testament. But what cared Marcion for that? Marcion had a heresy to found, and he founded it on this text.
I. CORINTHIANS. XVI.

CHAPTER XVI.

NOW concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever ye shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberality unto Jerusalem.

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall pass through Macedonia: for I do pass through Macedonia.

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way; but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit,

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost.

CHAP. XVI. Summary: directions about the collection and transmission of alms for the poor saints in Jerusalem: after which come salutations, autograph, benediction.

1. as I have given order to the churches.] Render, just as I made arrangement for the churches. The time and occasion are not known. Bengel, referring to 2 Cor. ix. 2 and Rom. xv. 26, aptly remarks, 'St. Paul holds up as an example to the Corinthians the Galatians, to the Macedonians the Corinthians, to the Romans the Macedonians: great is the force of example.' See Rom. xv. 26.

2. let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.] Rather, storing up whatever he may prosper in, that when I come no gatherings may then take place: for then will be the time, not for collecting, but for producing the sum of what has been week by week hoarded at home from profits in trade.

3. And when I come, whomsoever ye shall approve by your letters.] Place comma after approve and render when I arrive, whomsoever ye may approve, these with letters (credential) will I send to carry home your bounty unto Jerusalem; if, however, it should be worth while that I too make the journey, with me shall they journey. Emphasis on me. The givers of the sum are to choose the bearers of it; St. Paul is to be the sender, being God's apostle and steward: he is to furnish the bearers with letters commendatory to leading saints in Jerusalem. If however the greatness of the collection or the dignity of the occasion should require it, instead of writing letters of credit, he will travel in person: the bearers of the bounty shall be the Apostle's escort from Corinth to Jerusalem. Quiet assertion of apostolic dignity: justa estimatio sui non est superbia: Bengel.

4. Now I will come unto you, when I have passed through Macedonia; for through Macedonia do I pass (without halting), but with you (you emphatic), I shall perhaps make a stay, or shall even winter, that you (you emphatic) may escort me wherever I may journey. St. Paul here announces a change in his plan of route: he had intended to pass from Ephesus across the Egean to Corinth, from Corinth into Macedonia, and from Macedonia back again to Corinth, so as to pay a double visit to his Corinthian converts: he now prefers a single visit to the double. See 2 Cor. i. 15, 16. Shall winter: this intention he executed: he spent three winter months in Achaea: Acts xx. 3.

5. For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.] Connect with the foregoing verse and render: When I have traversed Macedonia, I shall perhaps make a stay or even spend the winter with you: for I do not intend to see you just in passing: for I hope to stay on some time with you, if the Lord permit.

6. To see you here means 'to catch a sight of you': aorist tense: emphasis on you: this is the third emphasis of delicate or affectionate preference on the word you in vv. 6 and 7.

just in passing.] The word just (ἀπρός) is timeless in itself: it serves to make precise
For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do.

Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me; for I look for him with the brethren.

As touching our brother Apollo, I greatly desired him to come unto you with the brethren; but his will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

Let all your things be done with charity.

I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the firstfruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints,)

That ye submit yourselves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us, and laboureth.

I am glad of the coming of with the brethren. Who were these? The Corinthian Christians who journeyed from Ephesus to Corinth with this Epistle? Or fellow travellers with Timothy and Erastus? Not known: historical data are lacking.

there was not a will that he should come. In suborn there was no will, is not specified: Theophylact and others explain 'it was not God's will:' this is more correct than to refer the will to Apollo, for if St. Paul had meant this, he would probably have written oik. ἐδέσσων αὐτόν. N.B. The word greatly of the A. V. should be rendered often (πολλα): this is the aorist tense demandi, let alone other reasons.

Watch ye. Rather, Be ye wakeful. Of these two verses the several clauses are levelled against existing evils in the church of Corinth: against the drowsy infection of bad example (xv. 33), against the clamour of no-resurrection, against effeminacy and profligacy, against factiousness and party-spirit. The imagery is military: be ye wakeful, lest Satan's crafty assaults in the guise of evil companionship surprise you napping; at your post: stand fast in the faith maintaining firm foothold in the outwork of the Resurrection: quit ye like men, be hardy repulsing all sallies of sensuality: let all your doings proceed in charity and move on the lines of love—a sure safeguard against internal divisions and ambitious rivalries.

the firstfruits. i.e. unto Christ: see Rom. xvi. 5: the household of Stephanas was the first family of converts in Achaia.

That ye submit yourselves unto such. Render that ye also: that ye likewise, in recognition of their primacy in the faith, submit or defer to men of this high stamp and holy mark.

for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied. Rather perhaps,
I. CORINTHIANS. XVI.

Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed my spirit and your's: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you.

Greet ye one another with an holy kiss.

21 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema Marana-tha.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

your vacancy or deficiency they by their presence filled up: i.e. their arrival filled up the void created by your absence. Stephanas, Fortunatus, and Achaicus were delegates from Corinth, bearing to St. Paul the letter of the Corinthian church.

18. For they have refreshed.] Omit have: the time of their arrival was the time of refreshing.

19. [The churches of Asia.] The churches on the western coastlands of Asia Minor, where Ephesus also lay.

Salute you much.] Rather, greet you many greetings: on Aquila and Priscilla, see Acts xviii. 2: they had removed from Corinth to Ephesus.

20. All the brethren] i.e. of the Ephesian church.

with an holy kiss.] See Rom. xvi. 16 and notes.

21, 22. Endorsement of the Epistle's contents by the Apostle's autograph. St. Paul now takes the place of his amanuensis and himself sums up, like a judge, with a terrible brevity. Apostolic judgment takes the form of a solemn statement: no imprecation in it: 'if any one does not love the Lord, let him be destroyed'; 'not may be anathema,' but 'let him be:' there is no help for him; maranatha, 'the Lord cometh.' Compare Rev. xxi. 10, 11, "the time is at hand: he that is unjust, let him be unjust still, and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still."

This sentence is a stern epitome of the whole epistle: 'if any one by profligacy, by contentiousness, by covetousness, by idolatry, by arrogance, by heresy, evinces an utter lack of love to the Lord Jesus, he must abide the consequences of his moral status: there is no outlook in the future for such a man, but the perdition from the presence of the Lord at His coming. Maranatha, an Aramaic expression, denoting 'our Lord is come.'

If any man love not should be rendered if any one does not love, with emphasis on the not: for the negative does not coalesce with the verb, as some maintain, but sharply marks off from the class of faithful Christians all who are not faithful.

ADDITIONAL NOTE.

Love, which comprises charity, is personal affection grounded on moral esteem, and in the nature of things reaches to comparatively few objects and those personally known to him who loves. Charity is goodwill, expressed in good deeds when possible, to others, whether friends or strangers. Thus love and charity are the same in kind, differing in degree: the one is intensive, the other extensive and diffusive. Charity is even universal in its reach. A Christian should be in charity with all men, i.e. should wish well to all: love to all, in the sense of personal affection, he is not as yet in a position to entertain. Amor, ἀγάπη; caritas, ἀγάπη: Quinctilian. The principle may be intensified into passion. It is this principle or ethical attitude of humanity, of brotherhood, of readiness to help, of gentleness, forbearance, courtesy, which St. Paul describes in ch. xii. and viii. 1: and in texts like these, where ἀγάπη occurs alone, without on ἀγάπη in Chap. XIII.

a defining context, it is better rendered by charity, as giving the true idea. But in texts where ἀγάπη has a defining context, such as the love of God or love of (Christian) brethren, let it be rendered by love, because here the context gives a special determination to the nature of the love (otherwise vague) and condenses it within hallowed limits. It is linguistically correct that the same Greek word be rendered sometimes charity, sometimes love. This variation is common: comp. ἀναπαύω, fellowship or contribution according to circumstances. Moreover caritas of the Latin versions is a word consecrated by long use in the Church: see Collect for Quinquagesima. The objection that charity has of late years become narrowed into almsgiving, can hardly be sustained: poor people in general seem to know better, and where they do not, they can be taught.
SECOND EPISTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS.

INTRODUCTION.

I.—THE CIRCUMSTANCES UNDER WHICH THE SECOND EPISTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS WAS WRITTEN.

The exact circumstances under which the Second Epistle to the Corinthians was written are but imperfectly known from direct historical evidence, and have to be traced by inferences from which some uncertainty is inseparable. The chief points which furnish a clue to the position of the author and his readers are the following:—


The fact of this visit, which was made after that on which he founded the Church, but before writing the two Canonical Epistles, is proved by 2 Cor. ii. 1, xii. 14, 21, xiii. 1, 2, as is now generally admitted, and these passages also shew that it was a visit of grief and humiliation to himself. We are not without indications of the reason why it was so. There were several evils in the Corinthian Church which caused him grave uneasiness. One was the sectarian divisions treated in 1 Cor. i. 10—iv. 21; but this passage contains no trace of such grief as was occasioned by this visit. On the contrary, in the midst of his counsels on party spirit, he says:—"I write not these things to shame you, but, as my beloved sons, I warn you" (1 Cor. iv. 14). Another was the wicked machinations of the Judaizers treated in 2 Cor. x. 1—xii. 18; but this passage shows that he regarded them, not with grief, but indignation. To suppose that personal defamation or impeachment of his Apostolic office by these men, or any ringleader amongst them, could grieve and humiliate him when present, and when absent cause him affliction, anguish, and tears, seems a radical misunderstanding of his great character.

The most glaring evil in Corinth was heathen immorality within the Church; and there is always a reference to this when he speaks of grief in the Second Epistle. In 2 Cor. ii. 3, 4, 5, he passes at once from the letter, which he wrote with such extreme distress, to the case of the flagrant offender against purity; and in 2 Cor. vii., especially in ver. 13, there is the same connection. Indeed, in 2 Cor. xiii. 21, 22, where the second visit is alluded to, he says that he dreads a repetition of humiliation on his forthcoming third visit, and that he may have to mourn over those who had previously sinned by extravagant licentiousness; thus showing that the besetting vice of Corinth had occasioned the pain of the second visit, and suggesting a presumption that it had occasioned the visit itself. His grief had not come upon him unexpectedly when he was at Corinth about other matters, for he had gone thither in grief (2 Cor. ii. 1). He had received intelligence of the immorality, and, either on a summons or of his own accord, he went to check it. There are one or two hints which supply a fair general idea of what occurred. He gave the offenders an opportunity of repentance (xii. 22); he spared (xiii. 1), but announced that he would not do so when he came again. Instead of sharp discipline, he contented himself with a menace. There were good grounds for the milder course. He found the plague widely spread, and the fact that certain persons maintained an antinomian theory with regard to sensuality was in itself sufficient to grieve the founder of this highly-gifted Church, and even to damp his energies. But the embarrassment was complicated, for his Jewish and Judaizing adversaries were standing by, and, no doubt, sneering at what they deemed the
natural fruits of his universal and spiritual Gospel, which, in a certain sense, professedly set aside the restrictions of the Law. They watched contemptuously for his measures of correction, but at the same time desired nothing more ardently than that he should resort to them, because this was the surest method of hopelessly embroiling himself with the heathen believers. See 2 Cor. ii. 11 and note. He would have played into their hands, had he used severities; and when, in this dilemma, he confined himself to a threat, the baffled Judaizers would detest, the libertines would think that they had carried the day, and both would ascribe his conduct to pusillanimity and fear. To this he must submit, because he could not wisely pursue any other course; but it was humiliation. All this is strongly corroborated by 2 Cor. x. 10. His opponents said that "his bodily presence was weak, and his word quite set-at-nought." This contumelious criticism must have arisen out of his second visit, for that anything which took place on his first should have elicited it is out of the question. Its purport is that he had not shewn the strength requisite to deal vigorously with the moral disorders, and that his threat remained a dead letter. One is tempted to think that he may, at the very crisis of this visit, have been prostrated by suffering from that "stake for the flesh" which he commends the Galatians for not setting at nought when they witnessed its effects upon him (Gal. iv. 13, 14). This idea might seem countenanced by xiii. 4, where see note, and by the expression, "lest God should humble me" (2 Cor. xii. 21), when taken in connection with, "there was given me a stake for the flesh" (2 Cor. xii. 7). It would account pointedly for the humiliation, would harmonize with the phrase "bodily presence," and make it comprehensible that he might actually lack the force necessary for dealing adequately with the circumstances before him. But see note on the stake for the flesh at end of chap. xii. However this may be, the visit failed to attain its object, for there is abundant proof in both Epistles that heathen dissoluteness increased, instead of diminishing.

Another particular which confirms the above view of this second visit is what we hear of a letter, no longer extant, but written previously to the First Epistle. The opinion that 1 Cor. v. 9, where this letter is mentioned, refers to the First Canonical Epistle, although countenanced by the Greek Fathers, does not bear the test of strict examination. All that we know of the contents of this letter is, that it counselled renunciation of social intercourse with those who, professing to be believers, led unchaste lives. The identity of this topic with the cause of the visit points to a connection between the visit and the letter, and irresistibly suggests the impression that the Apostle tried, in a letter supplementary to the visit, to give his warnings that efficacy which the so-called weakness of his bodily presence had impaired when he delivered them in person. This connection is again strongly corroborated by 2 Cor. x. 10; for in that passage, as the words "his bodily presence is weak" refer to his bearing on his second visit, so the words "his letters are weighty and powerful" undoubtedly refer in part to this lost letter. The plural number alone implies that his Corinthian enemies were acquainted with more of his letters than the First Canonical Epistle.

It has been fairly asked why, as there is an allusion to the missing letter in the First Epistle, there is none to the second visit. The answer is, that there is an allusion to it; for it is said in 1 Cor. iv. 8, "But, as though I were not coming to you, some got puffed up." This refers to some past occasion, not further defined, on which the persons meant grew elated, the rendering of the A.V., "are puffed up," being incorrect. This elation is exactly what his enemies and the worst of the moral offenders would feel at or after the exhibition of the weakness of his bodily presence. Nor is there anything else to account for it, or for the confidence that he would not appear in Corinth again, except the discomfiture which he seemed to have suffered on that occasion. To this must be added that the lost letter having intervened between the second visit and the First
Epistle, it was in that letter, and not in the First Epistle, that allusions to the second visit would naturally occur. It has, indeed, been supposed that there are other allusions to the visit in the First Epistle, but they are doubtful.

Amongst other things which the above considerations help to make clear is the fact that one of the sorest points in the disturbed relation between the Apostle and his Corinthian converts was the growth of unchaste practices in the Church.

As to the date at which the second visit was made and this lost letter written, all the indications, carefully investigated, point decidedly to the period of St. Paul's three years' residence in Ephesus: a view which does not involve any difficulty, when the length of his stay there, and the facilities of communication between Ephesus and Corinth are taken into account.

ii. Plans for a Third Visit.

When present at Corinth for the second time, the Apostle said that he would come again (2 Cor. xiii. 2); and it was indeed a necessity for him to return, unless he meant to abandon his own cause and that of the Gospel. But his purpose was also declared by letter; for in 2 Cor. i. 13, where he repels the charge of deliberate equivocation with regard to this promised visit, he says: "we write none other things except what ye read." It was then in the missing letter that he gave the first written notice of this third visit. It could not have been in the First Canonical Epistle, for the plan of his journey there stated is not the one first entertained. The first plan is reproduced in 2 Cor. i. 15, 16, in order to show what he had originally intended, and that he had been as honest in his first scheme as he had been in the alteration of it. The difference between the two projects is simple. According to the first, he had designed to cross the Ægean from Asia Minor, to make a very brief stay at Corinth on his way to Macedonia, to return again from Macedonia to Corinth, so that the Church might have the benefit of a second visit on one and the same journey in Greece (i. 15), and finally he desired to have a Corinthian escort to Jerusalem, preferring it to an escort from any other Church. Note the personal pronoun in ἐνθοῦ and its position in i. 16, and compare 1 Cor. xvi. 6. According to the second project the first of the two visits was omitted. He now intended to go to Macedonia first, and then pass on to Corinth, where he would, to use his own expressions, "perhaps," and "if the Lord should permit," remain some time, or even winter with them, as a compensation (δέ) for the loss of the first visit. He had, apparently, also resolved to adjourn for a while the time of his starting for Greece, and he speaks doubtfully about his going to Jerusalem (1 Cor. xvi. 5, 8). Even these modifications betray a misgiving as to the conduct of the Church. The uncertainty about his going to Jerusalem arises from a doubt whether a sufficient sum would be raised to make it worth his while to accompany it (xvi. 4); and, although he assigns a good reason for protracting his stay at Ephesus, he says plainly that he has no inclination now to see his readers in passing (xvi. 7). In fact, the motives to which he afterwards ascribes his delay in coming, a desire to spare them, and a determination for his own sake not to come to them again in grief (2 Cor. i. 23, ii. 23), had already begun to operate. We know from the context in which these motives are mentioned that they had reference to the immoralities in the Church (ii. 5, 6), and just before he announced his change of plan he had not only told the Corinthians that they were notorious in this respect, but he had passed sentence upon one scandalous transgressor (1 Cor. v. 1-5). His reason for abandoning his first visit, therefore, is quite apparent, and we see again how this terrible heathen impurity within the Church was the main cause of alienation. Nevertheless, he still says positively that he will go to them, and that he may perhaps winter with them.

St. Paul himself gives us no more information about his intentions as to his third journey than is contained in the
clear statement of his two plans. But we meet, in 2 Cor. i. 12-18, some striking charges brought against him on the subject. "He had shewn levity; he had written what he did not mean; he had formed his plans with carnal cunning; he had written with regard to his coming a 'yes' and a 'no.'" In other words, he had made a positive affirmation that he would come, behind which lurked as positive an intention not to come, if he should find it inconvenient. These charges were most false, but they were not sheer imaginations. They had a sufficient semblance of a foundation in facts to induce him to refute them carefully, which he would never have done, had they not obtained circulation and some credence amongst his own adherents. Yet neither the difference between his two projects, nor anything else found in the First and Second Epistles furnishes ground for such imputations. He nowhere makes two statements about his visit so contradictory to one another as a "no" to a "yes." This points to the inference that 1 Cor. xvi. 5-8, was not his last word about this visit, but that he sent some further intimation which did actually seem to stand to his antecedent statements in the relation of a "no" to a "yes." If he did so, it was a written and not oral communication, for it was the equivocation of his letters that was imputed to him (2 Cor. i. 23). This gives rise to the important question whether there did not intervene between the First and Second Epistles another letter which is no longer extant. The argument is not to be lightly put aside. When present, he had said he would come. He had repeated this in the lost letter, and even promised two visits. He had again written in the First Epistle that he would certainly come. Where is the written "no" to this three-fold "yes"? It is not found. On the other hand affairs at Corinth were so bad, especially in one particular, that they might well induce him to write and say that his coming now depended entirely upon improvement. If the interpretation of "I wrote this very thing," given in the note on ii. 3, be correct, we have an actual mention of the letter which contained the missing "no." What good reason he had for writing it may in some measure appear in considering the next point.

iii. The Mission of Timothy.

We learn from Acts xix. 21-22 that, when St. Paul had resolved at Ephesus to go to Jerusalem after having "passed through Macedonia and Achaia," he sent Timothy (and Erastus) to Macedonia. In exact accordance with this, we see from the First Epistle that, having changed his first plan and resolved to go to Macedonia before going to Corinth (xvi. 5), he despatched Timothy to Corinth (iv. 17), i.e. by way of Macedonia. Timothy started therefore very nearly at the time when the First Epistle was written. He could not have been the bearer of it, because, in that case, the Apostle would scarcely have said: "if Timothy come" (xvi. 10). He was intended apparently to arrive shortly after the Epistle, when the Corinthians were considering its contents, with the general purport of which it may be presumed that Timothy was acquainted. His commission was (1 Cor. iv. 17) to support the statements and directions of the Epistle: to see, as far as possible, that they should be adopted and acted upon, and, if any opposition should arise, he was to point out that the letter contained no doctrine, counsel, or sentence, at variance with the Apostle's ways and teaching "in every Church." St. Paul gives him a special recommendation (1 Cor. iv. 17; xvi. 10), although he was well known to the Corinthians, having been a coadjutor in founding the Church. He had misgivings about Timothy's success, and thought it possible he might be treated with contempt: "Let no man therefore set him at nought" (xvi. 11). He even apprehended some personal risk: "See that he be with you without fear" (xvi. 10). He awaited the issue with anxious expectation: "conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me; for I look for him with the brethren." He had appealed to Apollo, and "exhorted him much" to share Timothy's task, but
INTRODUCTION.

Apollos absolutely declined (1 Cor. xvi. 12). All this proves that the mission was a very important one, that St. Paul and his colleagues thought the situation at Corinth very critical, and apprehended some outbreak. Now, when the Second Epistle was written, Timothy had not only returned to the Apostle, but is joined with him in the salutation (2 Cor. i. 1). Yet the letter contains no mention of his visit to Corinth, or its results, of his reception and treatment, or of his other experiences. No item of anew intelligence can be distinctly traced to him, although in some parts of the Second Epistle the Apostle certainly may be proceeding upon information brought by Timothy. Still the chief news comes through Titus, whose reception and experiences are mentioned. In explanation some say that Timothy had reached and left Corinth before the First Epistle was delivered, a conjecture most unlikely in itself, and put out of the question by the intimate connection of his mission with the Epistle. Others say he never arrived at Corinth, either having given up the enterprise, or because something occurred which made it impossible for him to proceed. Yet it is to the last degree improbable that he should have taken upon himself to abandon such a commission, and, had any insuperable obstacle stopped him, some explanation of his failure must have been given. If the Apostle himself caused great discontent and incurred disrepute for delaying a promised visit, his emissary could not have omitted a visit, also promised, without an account being rendered of so unhappy a circumstance. But no such explanation is found, and the conclusion remains all but certain that Timothy had gone to Corinth, had seen what welcome the First Epistle met with, and had brought back his report to St. Paul. Yet it is patent that the mission had in some way miscarried, and this is implied in every explanation of it as yet offered. When the silence of the Second Epistle about its results is taken in connection with the mission and subsequent tidings of Titus (2 Cor. vii.), the most natural solution certainly is that the First Epistle had not been well received, and that the Church, having declined to comply with one or more of its injunctions, Timothy had immediately gone back to the Apostle to report his ill-success. If we ask upon what matter opposition was most likely to arise, the old rock of offence crops up, and the sentence upon the immoral offender at once suggests itself. The order that this sentence should be executed does not stand at all upon the same level with the other directions of the First Epistle. It was a strong blow dealt at the rooted habits of Corinthian life; it involved what was regarded as the ruin (2 Cor. vii. 2, ἐφθαίραμεν) of one, about whom the Corinthians had been puffed up and had boasted (1 Cor. v. 2, 6), as though he had, by his lawless act, only asserted the natural liberty and rights of man against the narrow restrictions of the Gospel; and it was the only point which demanded prompt and decisive action. St. Paul must have known that the party whose persistent sensuality had already occasioned him grief and humiliation, and over whom he is still afraid that he shall have to mourn, even when he writes the Second Epistle (2 Cor. xii. 21), would not let his verdict pass unresisted; and hence arose his anxiety about Timothy. That there was in fact a strong resistance may be regarded as certain, because all that could be obtained even through the subsequent mission of Titus was a punishment less than St. Paul had prescribed, as plainly appears from 2 Cor. ii. 6. If, when the subject first came on for discussion, the opposition carried the day, and it was resolved that the judgment should not take effect, Timothy would have no other course than to rejoin the Apostle in Asia with that news. The Church would have failed to comply with the Christian obligation to purity, and would have set aside its founder's Apostolic authority. We can well understand how, in that case, grief and humiliation would become "affliction."

iv. The Mission of Titus.

The intimations given us upon this subject are as follows. After the affliction in Asia, the Apostle, proceeding
INTRODUCTION.

from Ephesus to Greece, when he came to Troas had "no rest in his spirit," because he did not find Titus there on his way back from Corinth with tidings. His trouble was so great that he could not properly avail himself of a favourable opportunity of preaching the Gospel. His restlessness drove him on to Macedonia, but his distress, accompanied by fears, remained unabated until Titus came with news which brought him not only consolation but great joy (2 Cor. vii. 7, 13). Titus had been received at Corinth "with fear and trembling" (vii. 15), and he also derived from his visit consolation, refreshment of spirit, that is, relief after depression, and joy (2 Cor. vii. 7, 13). These were the immediate results of what he had seen and experienced, and of the effects of a letter written by the Apostle. We find also that St. Paul had boasted of the Corinthians to Titus (2 Cor. vii. 14). It appears then that Titus had not merely happened to be in Corinth on the arrival of the second Epistle, engaged in the work of the collection or other business, but that he had been expressly despatched, for the statements in 2 Cor. ii. 12, 13 and vii. 5, 6 shew that St. Paul had pre-arranged with him his return-route in order that, if he himself should quit Ephesus before Titus rejoined him, he might know on what track he should find his emissary, and obtain, at the earliest moment, the tidings for which he so painfully yearned. It is also clear that Titus's mission was in closest connection with the Corinthian crisis, because he shared the Apostle's anxiety, otherwise he could not have derived consolation and refreshment from his visit. To suppose that 2 Cor. vii. 14, refers to some general boast made at some previous time is to leave it out of all relation to the context. It shews that St. Paul had desired Titus to go to Corinth on a discouraging enterprise, and that Titus had manifested the same reluctance, which had been insuperable in Apollos, but which had been overcome in Titus by the Apostle expressing to him a favourable opinion of the Corinthians. Now in the First Epistle there is not a trace of this feverish and torturing anxiety about Corinthian affairs. It must have come on after that Epistle was penned and been caused by some new events. But it is fully accounted for by the failure above ascribed to Timothy, and it is not a groundless inference that Titus had taken up Timothy's mission in order to bring the Church, if possible, to a better mind, chiefly with regard to the sentence passed upon the immoral offender. This view is in remarkable agreement with the specific contents of 2 Cor. vii. 7, 11, which it is otherwise very difficult to explain. It makes it intelligible that Titus should have gone forth much depressed, although the Apostle had, in spite of his own distress, encouraged him with some hopeful commendation of the Corinthian Church. But Titus would certainly, if this be the true view of his mission, be armed with another letter from the Apostle, which could not fail to be written in severe terms and in much tribulation. It would be unreasonable to suppose that Titus, who was not so influential a person as Timothy in Corinth, could have produced the desired effect by his mere presence, while the Apostle remained mute and at a distance. It would be this letter and not the First Epistle which wrought the extraordinary revolution of feeling described in 2 Cor. vii., and the same letter would account for the silence of the Second Epistle about the results of Timothy's mission, because they would be spoken of in it, and not in the Second Epistle. The presentation of such a despatch at Corinth would be a good reason, after what had occurred, for Titus being received "with fear and trembling," whereas, otherwise, such a reception remains wholly unexplained.

v. Further indications of a Letter written between the dates of the First and Second Epistles.¹

The Apostle has to meet more than

INTRODUCTION.

once in the Second Epistle the charge of habitual self-commendation, which 2 Cor. iii. 1 seems to connect with his letters. This, like the charge of saying "yes" and "no," has no adequate foundation in the First Epistle. On the contrary that Epistle contains some strong expressions of a most unmistakable humility, as in iv. 9-13, and especially in xv. 8, 9. But if the Corinthians had proved refractory, and a further letter was sent, it would be very natural that he should assert himself somewhat strongly and insist upon what was due to him as their spiritual father, as well as upon other grounds; cf. 2 Cor. xi. 8.

There are two marked allusions in the Second Epistle to a previous letter. We read in 2 Cor. ii. 1-4, that the Apostle had written this letter for the purpose of avoiding a second visit of grief, which grief would have been caused by the necessity of inflicting in person punishment (2 Cor. i. 23) for sinful conduct, and also that he wrote it "out of much affliction and anguish of heart, with many tears." From 2 Cor. vii. 7-12 we learn that he had repented for a while of ever having written it, because of the excessive pain which he knew it would cause his readers. The effect which it did, in fact, produce upon them was a tumult of mixed feelings, grief, repentence, fear, an anxiety to clear themselves, indignation against some person or persons, a wish to take satisfaction for some evil conduct, together with a warm zeal and affection for the Apostle (vii. 7, 11). That both these allusions refer to one and the same letter is beyond controversy, because in unbroken connection with both, he proceeds to speak of the notable offender against purity. It was presumed, until a recent date, that the letter in question was the First Epistle, but there are great difficulties in the way of this identification. It is not easy to understand how it could be said of a letter of such compass and variety as the First Epistle, that its object was to spare the writer a second visit of grief. Neither is the general strain of it such as a man would use who felt that it would be so painful for him to meet his readers in person that he must make his visit conditional upon a rectification of their conduct. What modifications he did make in the plan of his journey, and why he made them, we have seen (p. 379), but still he speaks positively of his coming, and mentions the time and possible duration of his visit, which was not brief (1 Cor. iv. 18; xi. 34; xvi. 2, 5). Again, it is scarcely comprehensible that St. Paul should have said, even in a moment of strong excitement, of so costly a monument of Christian truth as the First Epistle is, that he repented for a while of ever having written it. Further, if these passages in the Second Epistle allude to the First, the agony of distress and the many tears with which he wrote are very perplexing. There is no actual expression of any such extreme trouble as this in the whole range of the First Epistle; and one expositor, who does not acknowledge an intermediate letter, says ingenuously, that in the exercise of a wise self-control, the Apostle "put such chains upon his feelings, that his letter reflects no true image of them." The general tone of the Epistle is deliberate and self-possessed throughout, and many details are discussed with calm minuteness. There are also special passages, such as 1 Cor. i. 7, 8 and xi. 2, which, with the greetings of love in the concluding chapter, seem quite at variance with "much affliction and anguish of heart" and "many tears." The passage usually appealed to in justification of these strong phrases is 1 Cor. v. 1-7, 13, and, without doubt, it cost the Apostle not a little to write it. Yet there is neither in it nor behind it any trace of a grief melting into tears. It is a brief, decisive verdict, delivered under a solemn and stern sense of duty. It has all the dispassionateness, dignity, and firmness of a judicial sentence.

It is impossible to read 2 Cor. vii. without being convinced that Titus narrated to the Apostle what he had witnessed in Corinth with his own eyes and the agitation which he so vividly described was clearly one of fresh and newly-kindled feelings. This is comprehensible, if the letter which produced it
INTRODUCTION.

(2 Cor. vii. 8) had just been brought by Titus himself and was one of severe reproach and menace for grievous immoral conduct of which the case so often mentioned was only one extreme example, as well as for rebellion against St. Paul's apostolic authority, and, further, the particular emotions enumerated in vii. 7, 11 are one and all completely accounted for. But that the First Epistle, which the Church must have had in its possession several weeks, at the least, should have brought on this paroxysm of excitement just when Titus was present, seems most improbable, even if its contents were of a nature to operate in such a manner.

The force of these reasons for thinking that there was a second missing letter is and will perhaps continue to be variously estimated. Some assume an à priori improbability and even entertain an antipathy against the view. Yet there seems great reasonableness in Calvin's remark upon 1 Cor. v. 9:—"That letter of which he speaks is not extant. Nor is there any doubt that many have dropped out of existence; but it is enough that there survive for us as many as the providence of the Lord has deemed sufficient." When the theory was first advanced, some good expositors, like Neander and Olshausen, adopted it, others, like Billroth, conceding that much was to be said in its favour, nevertheless hesitated to accept it without further investigation. It has recently been tested with great care, and is clearly gaining ground amongst competent judges. Its strong claim, independently of positive arguments in its favour, consists in the service which it renders as a key to the interpretation of the Second Epistle. It fits the lock. It lets in light upon many passages otherwise obscure; and in others, which have been vaguely interpreted, it discloses a pointed meaning. How far it does this can only be seen in the course of the Commentary.

It should be no matter of surprise that such a letter has perished. From the nature of the case, it could not have been a long one, and neither writer nor readers could greatly desire to preserve a memorial of the most painful passage that ever occurred between them.

vi. The Judaizers.

The Apostle's grief, properly so called, proceeded from the spreading of heathen immorality, but this was complicated by an evil of a very different kind, though not of less magnitude. It is plain from the large polemical sections of the Epistle that Judaism had assumed a far more developed and organic form than it wears in the First Epistle, and an attitude of declared and malignant hostility to St. Paul. The immediate causes of this seem to have been: 1. The intrusion of Judaizing teachers from abroad, some of whom must have been sheer impostors, whilst some brought with them letters of commendation, apparently from the Mother-Church at Jerusalem; 2. The repugnance of the Jewish believers to the heathen dissoluteness, which they thought the Apostle either unable or unwilling to check. This feeling, which must have been aggravated by what had taken place with reference to the recent gross case, would dispose them favourably towards the stricter discipline of the Judaizers and tend to alienate them from the Apostle. The more respectable of the new comers may have been originally Pharisees (Acts xv. 5) whose Pharisaism had not yielded to the spirit of the Christianity which they had adopted. Some of them had clearly been disciples of the Lord himself. It is easy to understand how such men might, by the outward decorum of their lives and perhaps by a Pharisaic zeal of proselytism, prompting them to an active propaganda of that form of the Truth which was established at Jerusalem, win esteem, and for the purpose of preaching abroad, might obtain letters from men of some standing at Jerusalem, testifying that they were what they claimed to be. On their arrival at Corinth, they would find a licentiousness such as they had never before witnessed and, having already a vehement antipathy against St. Paul and his work (Acts xxii. 20, 21), they would at once conclude
INTRODUCTION.

that he was the *fons et origo mali*. In this view the previous Jewish opponents whom St. Paul encountered on his first visit to Corinth (Acts xviii. 6, 13) would of course concur, and whatever their views of Christianity might be, would at once make common cause with any opposition to him. We may also fairly suppose that others who were members of the Church, but of whom we learn (1 Cor. vii. 18; ix. 1 ff) that they wished to impose circumcision on the heathen converts, and that they questioned St. Paul’s Apostleship, joined the intruders, although there is no reason to think that they were numerous. Probably not a few Jewish believers, estranged recently, followed their example. This formidable union of hostile elements immediately organized a system of opposition to the Apostle.

i. They met his Gospel by a counter-gospel, which turned primarily upon Christ’s person and secondarily upon the Mosaic law (ch. iii.). They recognized in Christ only the Son of David, born under the law, himself observing the law, and offering the blessings of the Messiah’s Kingdom to Jews alone. They estimated Christ only according to his outward circumstances and manifestation in the flesh. This is what St. Paul terms a “Christ after the flesh.” They did not deny that Christ died and rose again and ascended into heaven. But they looked upon these things as bare historic facts. The crucifixion was not to them what it was to St. Paul, a stripping away from Christ of the flesh and all its restrictions and the sole foundation of reconciliation with God, not for the Jews alone, but for all men. The resurrection and ascension had no doctrinal significance for them. They thought that through these Christ changed the region of his existence, and no more. To St. Paul the crucifixion and resurrection were the stages through which the Saviour passed to a new, spiritual glorified form of life, of which new life all Christ’s true followers were capable of partaking through faith in Him. In this form St. Paul himself had seen Him, and therefore preached, in contrast to their Christ after the flesh, a Christ who is spirit, the Lord of glory,

*New Test.—Vol. III.*

not merely the Son of David, but the Son of God.

Further, as the Judaizers considered Christ to be a pattern to men only as he lived and acted during his earthly career, they declared it necessary for all men, in order to be saved, to obey the Mosaic Law as He had done. The Mosaic Law therefore, together with the Mosaic Ministry, which they considered to be continued in their own persons, were of eternal validity and glory. They did not deny that the Gentiles could be saved, but they contended that obedience to the Law was for them, as for Jews, not only the rule of life, but the means of salvation. All this is quite clear from the repeated statement that they adulterated the word of God (ii. 17; iv. 2), from the whole tenor of chap. iii. from iv. 4; v. 18–21; xi. 4, as well as from other passages. The theory that a man received, through faith in Christ, forgiveness of sins, a righteousness of God, union with Christ, died to self and the flesh, had a new principle of life, became a new creature, a son of God, was made free, was gradually assimilated to Christ’s glory, possessed in the in-dwelling Spirit an earnest of the future inheritance—all this was to them unintelligible (2 Cor. iv. 3).

ii. They assailed the Apostle personally at all points in order to drive him out of Corinth, though it was part of that Gentile world which God had originally assigned to him, and he had made it his own domain by right of spiritual conquest. They ridiculed the sources from which he professed to have derived his Gospel. Because he ascribed it to direct communications from the glorified Saviour (Gal. i. 12; 1 Cor. xv. 1, 3), they said it was the product of madness. All his ecstatic states, his visions and revelations were only illustrations of his unsound mind (v. 13). He had created a Gospel out of his own disordered imagination, and preached merely himself (iii. 5; iv. 5), going hither and thither and deceiving the world.

They denied the genuineness of his Apostleship. They had known Christ personally in the flesh (x. 7). He had not. They had letters of recommendation. He had none. They were
Hebrews, Israelites, of the seed of Abraham. His very sufferings and persecutions proved that he was the object of God’s disapprobation (iv. 7). As to the Churches founded by him, to which he pointed as the fruits of his ministry and proofs of its validity, what were they but nests of iniquity? He had himself no confidence in the legitimacy of his office, because he did not use the acknowledged privilege of taking the means of subsistence from those whom he taught (xi. 7).

With a view to overthrowing his personal influence, they assailed his character unsparring with charges of levity, carnal wisdom, self-commendation, malversation of money (vii. 1; viii. 20), usurpation of lordship over the community, partizanship, personal animosity, cowardice, harshness in his letters, and the like.

His own view of these men St. Paul sketches in a few bold strokes. They sophisticated God’s word. They were pseudo-Apostles, deceitful workers. They resorted to secret practices of shame, and to crafty wickedness. They were carnal boasters. They plumed themselves upon mere external things, not upon anything that belonged to the real man of the heart (v. 12). They were pretenders of unbounded self-complacency and arrogance, claiming the fruits of other men’s labours (xi. 15); enslavers, devourers, plunderers of the community, self-exalters, men of violence (xi. 20). They were blinded by the god of this world (iv. 4); were ministers of Satan, who, exercising their master’s power of transfiguring himself into an angel of light, put on the outward disguise merely of ministers of righteousness and Apostles of Christ.

All the accusations against the Apostle are traceable to this party, as is shewn both by their nature and by the connection in which they are mentioned as well in the earlier apologetic portions of the Epistle (i.–ix.) as in the final combat d outrance in x.–xii. 18. The earlier self-defence is indeed more moderate in tone, because he is speaking to the main body of the Church with a view to reconciliation, while in his last passage of arms with those of whom he had no hope, he uses unsparring language. The agreement, however, of several expressions distinctly shews that he was dealing with the same antagonists in both cases. Compare iii. 5 ff. with xi. 22; v. 12 with x. 7; v. 16 with xi. 18; iv. 4 with xi. 3, 14–15; iv. 1–16 with x. 1, 10, 11, and other passages.

Such were the ringleaders of the systematized and unscrupulous Judaic combination which St. Paul has to encounter in the Second Epistle. The Cephas party of the First Epistle is not even named. Its members may have been in some measure absorbed in the general league, or may have been amongst those whom the Apostle hoped to regain, which is more probable. But the Christ party has not wholly disappeared, for not only did the entire conflict turn upon the person of Christ, but there is evidence (x. 7) that the adversaries considered themselves to belong to Christ by a special bond, to which St. Paul could lay no claim. This was the bond involved in their having been personal disciples of the Saviour, or having received their teaching from those who had been his disciples, and in modelling their outward lives strictly after the example of Christ in the flesh. It would seem that amongst the sections which divided the Church, the intruders found the party of Christ to approximate most closely to the views and rule of life professed by themselves and therefore adopted its designation.

It is quite an untenable theory that they were acting with the approbation of the Apostles at Jerusalem, to whom there is no reference in xi. 5, xii. 11. Their teaching was such as no Apostle could have maintained. Their methods were so dishonest, and their treatment of St. Paul so iniquitous, that it requires all the well-known bigoted and fanatical hatred of Jews against any one who depreciated the Mosaic institutions to explain how even they could have resorted to them. All that we know of St. Peter, the great representative of “the Gospel of the circumcision,” and his relation to St. Paul, either from the Acts, the First Epistle to the Corinthians, or the Epistle
to the Galatians, renders it impossible to
impute to him the remotest complicity
in this nefarious conspiracy. If St. Paul
had been aware that, in denouncing
his Corinthian opponents, he was also
assailing the original Apostles, how he
could expect that his collection on
behalf of the poor Saints in Judæa would
help to maintain a good understanding be
tween himself and the Church at Jerusa-
lem would remain an insuble enigma.

II. The Date of the Second
Epistle.

The date of the First Epistle was the
early spring of A.D. 57. The Second was
written in the same year, but the exact
interval between them is not easily de-
determined. It depends mainly upon
the length of the Apostle's stay in Asia after
he despatched the First Epistle. He had
intended to remain in Ephesus until
Pentecost (1 Cor. xvi. 8). Whether the
riot of Demetrius took place at the great
festival of Diana in May, and whether,
whenever it took place, it precipitated the
Apostle's departure or not, is quite
uncertain. He continued in Asia long
enough for Timothy to go by Macedonia
to Corinth and rejoin him, and then for
Titus to go to Corinth, and, returning by
Macedonia, to be due in Troas. But
how long these journeys occupied cannot
be computed with precision. Wieseler
thinks that St. Paul cannot have met
Titus earlier than two months after their
parting. He must have waited a while
at Troas, for 2 Cor. ii. 12 does not im-
ply that he did not preach the Gospel
there at all, and there was naturally some
risk of missing Titus on the way if he
started before his arrival. On the whole
the circumstances indicate a longer so-
journ in Asia than he had contemplated,
and with this his unqualified statement
that he had preached in Ephesus "three
years" agrees (Acts xx. 31). He arrived
in that town towards the end of a year
(see Acts xviii. 18—xix. 1, and Wieseler),
and if he stayed no later than Pentecost
A.D. 57, he was only there 2½ years at
the most, which is too short a period for
the precise language of Acts xx. 31.
(Note the prominent position of τρειάν
in the original, and the words "night
and day.") There was further waiting
for Titus in Macedonia, which left on
his mind a deep recollection of painful
expectation, and he then had to write
the letter. But there was still time for
Titus to bear it to Corinth, and complete
the work of the collection before the
Apostle arrived (2 Cor. viii. 17, ix. 3).
...
Hausrath wrote "The Four-chapter Letter of Paul to the Corinthians," in which he contended that the last four chapters were a separate composition, and constituted, in fact, the intermediate letter between the First and Second Epistles. He has been effectually answered by Klöpper. Whether a letter is an organic whole or not does not depend upon its contents merely, but upon its contents viewed in their relation to the situation of the writer and his readers. If the subject-matter and the circumstances agree, it is sufficient to establish the unity of the writing; and there is, undoubtedly, such an agreement in this case, notwithstanding the disparity of length between the sections of the Epistle, a seeming disharmony in their tone, some abrupt transitions, and some obscurity in the connection of ideas. No one can expect a letter penned under strong conflicting emotions, and the immediate pressure of complex circumstances, to have the symmetry and clearness of a classical composition.

IV. THE EFFECT PRODUCED BY THE EPISTLE.

The effect produced upon its readers by this most remarkable Apostolic writing is not recorded. The passage in the Acts (xx. 2, 3), which tells us that St. Paul's long-promised visit was at length paid, only says that "he came into Greece and there abode three months." When we consider the strong reaction in his favour as described by Titus in ch. vii., we cannot but think that the extraordinary "weight and power" of this Epistle, written expressly to take the favourable tide at its height, produced a deep impression, and this is confirmed by the mere duration of his sojourn at Corinth. It is more strongly corroborated by the fact that during his visit he wrote the Epistle to the Romans, in which many momentous topics receive a calm, profound, sustained treatment, shewing that he had recovered that rest of spirit and flesh of which he had recently been so sorely destitute. The collection also came to a happy issue, for he had said (1 Cor. xvi. 4) that if the amount subscribed "should be worthy of his going also," the Corinthian bearers of it should accompany him to Jerusalem, and we find (Rom. xvi. 26) that it was found worthy of his going. So far the letter bore its proper fruits, but his original Jewish persecutors (Acts xviii. 6, 12, 13) were not likely to be mollified by such a passage as 2 Cor. iii. 6—18. His Judaizing adversaries also would naturally remain implacable after his polemic against them in 2 Cor. x. 1—xii. 18. We can imagine the malignant rage with which they would witness a three months' demolition of their satanic strongholds (2 Cor. x. 4). But so long as he was in the bosom of the Church, he was safe, and it was only on his departure that an unsuccessful attempt was made to take his life (Acts xx. 3). If we look beyond the record of Scripture towards the end of the first century, we are again presented with a dark picture of the Corinthian community. Some passages in the Epistle of Clement of Rome to the Church of Corinth (see especially chapters iii. and xxx.) shew that there existed even a more extravagant spirit of faction and insubordination than we find in St. Paul's Epistles and almost as bad a state of moral corruption. Certainly a fresh race of men had sprung up, but it would seem that even an Apostle must not expect the fruits of his labours to outlive the generation amidst which he has toiled. Perhaps no influence could have been lasting in so mixed and volatile a population. It was, however, a glorious achievement, if the much people which God had in that city (Acts xviii. 10) entered, under the Apostle's guidance, into their blessed rest. If their children did not, like their fathers, remember him in all things (1 Cor. xi. 2) and keep the precepts which he delivered unto them in this Second Epistle, yet the Epistle itself, to which the words of the great Greek historian have been happily applied (κτίμα ἐστι ἀνικήτω ἀνικήτω ἀνικήτω, Thuc. i. 22) has become a possession of all men for all times; has done and will continue to
do its divine work, accomplishing that which God pleases, and prospering in that whereto he sent it (Isaiah lv. 11) through the long march of all the ages.

V. Commentaries.

Of the manifold works upon this Epistle it is only necessary to mention here two or three of the less familiar and more recent to which the writer of the present commentary is more or less indebted. Osiander's work (1847, 1857) has scarcely met with due recognition. Its usefulness is perhaps impaired by its fulness, by its criticism of too many views, and by a tendency to amalgamate two or more interpretations into one; but it contains the results of wide and conscientious research. The portion of Hofmann's Heilige Schrift Neuen Testamentes, which treats of this Epistle, was reissued in 1877 in an improved form, and is a very searching commentary. But the most valuable of recent contributions to the literature of the Corinthian Epistles has been made in the very able writings of Klöpper (1869, 1874). Some of his conclusions must await the test of time, but he has undoubtedly thrown great light both upon the Second Epistle as a whole and upon particular points. With regard to textual criticism, both Hofmann and Klöpper are rather unduly swayed by internal evidence.
THE SECOND EPISODE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAPTER I.

3 The apostle encourageth them against troubles, by the comforts and deliverances which God had given him, as in all his afflictions, 8 so particularly in his late danger in Asia. 12 And calling both his own conscience and their’s to witness of his sincere manner of preaching the immutable truth of the gospel, 15 he excuseth his not coming to them, as proceeding not of lightness, but of his lenity towards them.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, even the Father

Dionysius the Areopagite of Athens and many other Athenians had been converted before Stephanas and his family at Corinth, and would have a better claim to the title “firstfruits of Achaia.” The name Achaia therefore is either used in its early restricted sense or means the Peloponnese.

all the saints.] This seems to imply a considerable body of believers. They are however addressed as individuals, not as Churches. There was, no doubt, a Judaizing propaganda carried on from Corinth in the neighbouring districts, and the dissoluteness of the metropolis naturally extended itself to the vicinity. It is not surprising therefore that the address of a letter bearing expressly upon the circumstances of Corinth should include also the believers of other places, closely connected with it who were more or less in similar danger. St. Paul himself must have visited other towns in Achaia besides Cenchrea.

2. To his salutations St. Paul usually appends some praise (Rom. i. 8; Eph. i. 15; Phil. i. 3–8, &c., &c.), and that his withholding it here is significant, appears from the like silence in the Epistle to the Galatian Churches, which, like that of Corinth, had fallen into grievous errors. In v. 6 he is addressing the better-minded part of the community. When we compare the warm eulogy in 1 Cor. i. 4–8, it is clear how much matters had changed for the worse, in the interval between the First and Second Epistles, for although Titus had reported decided symptoms of improvement, the Apostle could
of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort;

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

not yet look forward with perfect confidence.

3. Thanksgiving for deliverance from the affliction in Asia. For proof that this affliction was his overpowering distress at the lamentable state of the Church of Corinth as reported to him by Timothy, see note at end of chapter. The tidings fell upon him like a prostrating calamity, and the deliverance was the partial reformation which had since been wrought. The extremity of his trouble and the intensity of his gratitude appear in the reiteration of the word 'comfort' ten times in five verses, and of 'affliction' four times in four verses. The force of this repetition is unhappily lost in the A. V. by a needless alternation of the terms 'comfort' and 'consolation;' and, on the other hand, of 'tribulation,' 'trouble,' and 'affliction' for the uniform expressions of the original.

Blessed be God even the Father.] It is not quite certain whether the rendering should be: 'Blessed be God the Father of our Lord,' or 'Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord.' In other introductory passages (Rom. i. 7, Cor. i. 3, Gal. i. 3, Eph. i. 2, Phil. i. 2, 1 Thess. i. 1, 2 Thess. i. 2, 1 Tim. i. 2, Phil. i. 3) God is spoken of in His relation to man rather than to Christ. On the other hand, we find in Eph. i. 17, "the God of our Lord Jesus Christ" (cf. John xx. 17, Matt. xxvii. 46), and St. Paul had just used the very expression of the verse before us in Eph. i. 3, where the A. V. renders "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord," as it does also in 1 Pet. i. 3, which translation the original here favours. "The Father of commiserations," or "pityings" would be slightly more correctly than 'the Father of mercies.' God is so designated because of His manifold dealings of pity, and He is the God of all comfort because there is no kind of true comfort which he cannot and does not administer.

4. That God is rightly blessed under these designations is illustrated by what the Apostle has recently gone through and by the use to which God intends him to apply his experiences. Whatever may be the form or weight of his affliction, God furnishes the appropriate comfort, to the end that he may be able to administer the comfort which he has himself so received to other sufferers, whatever may be the form or weight of their affliction. The terms are general, and capable of wide application, but a special drift underlies them. The comfort is that which he derived from the tidings of Titus, as is proved by the similar language of vii. 4, "I am filled with the comfort... in all our affliction." In accordance with God's purpose this comfort should now re-act upon the Corinthians and solace them in their "fear and trembling" (vii. 15), their "grief" (vii. 11), their "lamentation" (vii. 7) for the evils which they had partly caused and partly tolerated. It is only this specific sense that gives their proper force to the last words of the verse, which imply that the comfort of the Apostle and his readers is one and the same. See how he re-imports them to chapter vii. the selfsame comfort which had been imparted to him.

5. States the principle upon which comfort is obtained in his own case. The endurance of the sufferings of Christ in overflowing abundance involves as its correlative the reception of a commensurate comfort through Christ. The connecting link between the sufferings and the comfort is Christ, but with a modification. The Apostle's sufferings are those of Christ; his comfort is received through Christ. The "sufferings of Christ" are those which are identical with Christ's. This identity consists in their springing from the same cause and serving the same end. Whatever set itself in antagonism to Christ or hindered Him in accomplishing God's work of redeeming the world from sin and evil, caused Him suffering. The forms of opposition were manifold, but they were all referable to one source,—Satan. Christ's victory over this opposition, which could only be won by sufferings culminating in death, was the accomplishment of his meritorious work of Redemption. But this was not the complete end, which God and Christ had in view, for there remained the application of redemption to mankind. This work, which is also, in a most true sense, Christ's work, He committed to his ministers and followers, and, whatever sufferings they endure in encountering opposition, are Christ's sufferings. The difference between a Redemption and its application involves the essential difference between Christ's sufferings in His own person and His sufferings in the person of His ministers. The sufferings which procured Redemption were sacrificial; those which
II. CORINTHIANS. I.

6 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

7 And our hope of you is stedfast,
II. CORINTHIANS. I.

9 But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead:

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us;

11 Ye also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift be-

9. But it did not come to that issue, for he now describes the frame of mind which he had attained and continually preserved, and which led to the opposite of death, viz., resurrection. The verse may be thus paraphrased:—'But so far as we ourselves and our power of delivering ourselves are concerned, whenever, in any crisis of life and death, the question comes before us, whether we are to live or die, we have got, and keep (perf. of an aor. form) in ourselves, as the standing answer (εἰσφορῆμα), the verdict of death.' The object of maintaining this standing answer is permanently to destroy self-trust, which could only precipitate death, and foster trust in God who raises the dead, as he did Christ, and therefore could deliver Christ's minister, when on the point of dying in Christ's cause. It is implied that the Apostle, in his extremity, committed himself and the issue to God.

10. His trust was not in vain, for God delivered him from so great a death. Had he died with the sense of a signal defeat, inflicted by the enemies of the Gospel, and the ruin of his mission among the gentiles, it would have been a death "so great" that none could have been more terrible to him. But God revived him, and he made a new effort, "yet not he, but Christ" living in him. The result was that the Church of Corinth had been plucked like a brand from the burning. His renewed energy and its success were the deliverance. It continued still, for he had reason to believe that his influence and the cause of the true Gospel were establishing themselves in Corinth, and he hopes (ver. 7), though he cannot be sure, that this will last. He was well aware that his victory in Corinth was not yet won. The next verse, however, renders it probable that "doth deliver" and "will deliver" are not to be restricted wholly to his Corinthian difficulties, but have a wider reference to his present and future work amongst the gentiles. The expression "without were fightings" in ch. vii. 5, seems to imply that he met with opposition in Macedonia, and he may have felt that God was delivering him from that also even at the time of his writing.
II. CORINTHIANS. I. [v. 12—14.

stowed upon us by the means of many persons thanks may be given by many on our behalf. 12 For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our con-

versation in the world, and more abundantly to you-ward.

13 For we write none other things unto you, than what ye read or acknowledge; and I trust ye shall acknowledge even to the end;

14 As also ye have acknowledged us in part, that we are your re-

11. His further deliverance depended, in part, upon the co-operation of the Corinthians themselves, which he assumes that he will have in the form of intercessory prayer. It is implied that the substance of the prayer was, that God would bestow upon him so powerful a gift of the life of Christ as should ensure the triumph of his cause with all its attendant blessings. Such a special gift as this he properly calls a Charisma. The object of the prayer was that this gift should be made matter of thanksgiving to God from the many to whose inestimable benefit it would redound. This end and aim is quite in accordance with the Apostle's view of thanksgiving as a state of his in other passages. The glory of God is with him the final cause of all things (see particularly Rom. xv. 5, 6, and cf. 2 Cor. iv. 15) and, in contemplating multitudes in the act of rendering this glory by thanking God on his behalf, he expresses his satisfaction in the fulness of his language. "By means of many," who through their prayers help the Apostle's continued deliverance, seems the right rendering and explanation (διὰ πολλῶν). But "by means of many persons" (A.V.) cannot be the correct translation of ἐν πολλῶν προσώπων, which describes merely those from whom the thanks proceed, i.e. further multitudes who, by the prayers of the Corinthians and the consequent deliverance of the Apostle, are enabled to receive through him the blessings of the true Gospel. There is much difficulty in finding a right translation for προσώπων, which does not, in the N.T., exactly mean "person" in the modern sense of the word. Hence some render:—"from many faces," turned heavenward, as we may imagine them, in the giving of thanks.

13, 14. He re-asserts his sincerity, "for" it is not true that his letters have any other sense than that which presents itself on the simple reading, or any at variance with what they well knew of him personally. The first key to the meaning of a letter is what is written: the next is the personal knowledge which the reader has of the writer. Both guides should have shewn the Corinthians that the imputation was false. What he expects them to know well of him is stated in ver. 14 and is, that there exists between him and them so close and sacred a relation as to preclude the possibility of his deceiving them. One side of this relation is that he, as their spiritual Father, was a pride and boast to them. This, no doubt, alludes to the manifestation, on the part of his readers in their first gratitude for their conversion, of some such feelings towards him as are mentioned in Gal. iv. 14, 15. It is a reminder of a former and happier state of things which he desires to see restored. The other side of the relation is that they also are his pride and boast. This he connects, by anticipation, with the
II. CORINTHIANS. I.

joicing, even as ye also are our's in the day of the Lord Jesus.

And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that ye might have a second benefit;

And to pass by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judæa.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightness? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea yea, and nay nay?

18 But as God is true, our word is, toward you was not yea and nay.

day of the Lord's coming, when he will have to present his readers as members of the pure Church unto Christ, and when the secrets of all hearts will be made known. Looking forward to the glory and the disclosures of that day, it is impossible that he should cloud his prospect by insincerity. As a portion of the Church did actually (καί) come to know him in this relation to them, so he hopes that they will maintain it until the Advent.

15, 16. State what he originally wished in regard to visiting them in his confidence that this knowledge subsisted in full force. See Introduction, pp. 379, 380. He shewed the Corinthians two preferences. 1. He purposed to pay them two visits on the same journey, while the Macedonians were only to have one. 2. He preferred an escort from them, to one from any other Church. He uses an extreme particularity of language. In the compass of a few words we have "before," "second," "again," used to bring out nearly the same idea. The name "Macedonia" and the phrase "come to you" are both repeated. We have in succession "to you," "through you," "to you," "by you." This minuteness almost suggests that enemies had tried to detect an equivocation in the terms of his first statement about this visit, and that he here labours to bring out the natural sense of what he said. The translation of the verse is: "And in this confidence I wished to come to you previously" (before going into Macedonia), "that you might have a second grace" (on my return from Macedonia), "and again from Macedonia to come to you, and by you to be escorted into Judæa."

17. The right reading (δουλόμενος) and rendering is: "While this then is what I was wishing, did I, as is inferred, resort to levity" (in altering my plan), "or what I plan, do I plan according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay?" There were two uncharitable explanations of his not coming. One that he was a man without steady, earnest purpose, without ballast, who shifted lightly from course to course. The other, that he formed his plans according to a carnal rule, so that at the very time when he made a positive promise, he might be contemplating a positive refusal to perform it. As such a method could not be dictated by the spirit, it is rightly said to be "according to the flesh," which means here not only that it is weak, as leviathan is, but unprincipled. Amongst many interpretations of the double 'yea' and double 'nay,' the best is that which takes them respectively as an emphatic affirmation, a decided 'yes,' and an emphatic negation, a decided 'no.' Cf. Matt. v. 7. In the case before us "yea, yea" is a positive 'yes, I will come,' and 'nay, nay,' a positive 'no, I will not come.' This implies, as stated in the Introduction, that he had actually said something which looked like a positive refusal to come. His Judaizing adversaries asserted in order to ruin his character that he intended from the beginning to substitute for his promise this refusal to fulfil it, whenever it suited his purpose, and this assertion, it appears, had its effect upon the Jewish Christians. For another interpretation of "yea, yea" and "nay, nay," see the note at end of chapter.

18. It is rather doubtful whether language allows the first words to be taken as an adjuration, as in the A.V. Many, therefore, regard them as an asseveration. "But God is faithful, in that our word to you did not prove yea and nay." God's faithfulness to his promises is substantiated in our not having preached a Gospel which was a compound of affirmation and negation. In any case, he draws an argument from the straightforwardness and good faith of his preaching to that of his letters and conduct. So far as a man's preaching is really an index to his character, the general reasoning is, no doubt, sound, but it would be far fetched if it had not a special application. The point in debate is the fulfilment of promises. The Gospel is the fulfilment of all God's promises of salvation. It was faithfully set forth as such, in St. Paul's preaching, without reservation, equivocation, or negation. He would have it inferred that he deals with his own promises in action, as he does with God's in preaching, in perfect good faith, not playing fast and loose, and this involves a sharp reflection upon the Judaizers. They were the
II. CORINTHIANS. I.

19 For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me and Silvanus and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now he which establisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God;

22 Who hath also sealed us, and

persons who accused him of bad faith, while they themselves did not preach in good faith the unreserved fulfilment of God's promises. Their preaching placed God in the predicament in which their accusation tried to place St. Paul. God had promised salvation by faith to all men, both Jews and Gentiles, while they restricted this promise to a legal and Jewish salvation. They made God 'yea' to the Jews and 'nay' to the Gentiles, whereas He was 'yea' to both. See Klopfer. The sum of the argument is: 1. One whose preaching honestly sets forth the complete fulfilment of God's promises will not practise double-dealing with his own. 2. Those who make God a double-dealer are not to be believed when they make St. Paul one, but are double-dealers themselves.

19. This and the following verse further explain the argument. Jesus Christ, the concrete sum and substance of St. Paul's preaching, was also the concrete fulfilment of all God's promises, not a compound of contradictions; not affirmation to the Jews and negation to the Gentiles. That this Christ is described as the Christ preached by Paul, Timothy, and Silvanus, shews that the Apostle had in his mind another Christ preached in Corinth, who was a compound of 'yea' and 'nay.' This was the Christ of the Judgiers. St. Paul's Christ is designated by the great title "Son of God." The other was not the son of the one faithful God, Father of Gentiles as well as Jews, but at the most a son of David according to the flesh, who disappointed the vast majority of those to whom the promises were made. In St. Paul's Christ an unqualified 'yea has,' as he says, 'been brought about.'

20. For as many promises of God (as there are), in Him 'is their yea.' The next sentence has to be read and rendered thus: "and through him (ensued) your amen, for glory to God through us." In St. Paul's Christ all God's promises—not those given to Jews only—had their absolute fulfilment. Further, "through Christ," because he was such a fulfilment, there followed on the part of the Corinthians an acceptance of Him as such, expressed in their "amen," which signified their assent to the Apostle's preaching. This reminds the readers that they had confessed the true Christ, and therefore hints that they must not fall away to a different Christ. Glory redounded to God through St. Paul and his colleagues, because they preached, and their hearers accepted thankfully, a Christ who left none of God's promises unredeemed, but made Him a true God, who keepeth covenant.

21, 22. Self-defence continued. He is ever receiving from God a firmer establishment into Christ. As God is the author of this continually-strengthened bond, and as Christ is a uniform self-consistent 'yea,' the Apostle, being animated with the spirit of Him into whom he is established, cannot drift through vacillation or shift through bad faith from 'yea' to 'nay.' Moreover, this establishment is a consolidation with his readers into Christ. How could he be indifferent or untrue to those who were participators with himself in this holy union? There may possibly be a hint intended that they should not let their firm hold of the true Christ be relaxed. Further, he received (συνέκασεν, or.) from the same God, in his Apostolic appointment, an anointing, a sealing, and an inward earnest of the Spirit, which are so many pledges of a loyal discharge of his ministry. The three figures represent three aspects of the operation of the Spirit upon him and in him. Anointing was the theocratic rite by which Kings, Priests, and Prophets were consecrated to their high offices, and it symbolised their reception of the Spirit of God, which alone could qualify them for the right performance of their functions. St. Paul was thus consecrated and endowed immediately after his conversion; for Ananias said to him, "The Lord ... hath sent me, that thou mightest ... be filled with the Holy Ghost" (Acts ix. 17). There is an agreement in sound and sense, in the original, between the title 'Christ' and the word for anointed which it is not easy to reproduce in English. "He who establisheth us with you into Christ and gave us a chriam is God." It intimates that the very same Spirit is in St. Paul which is in Christ. The pseudo-apostles at Corinth imagined that the qualifications for Apostleship were such things as having been the disciples of Christ in the flesh, or having been taught by disciples of Christ, or having received letters of recommendation from such persons. Accord-
II. CORINTHIANS. I.

given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

ing to St. Paul, the true qualification was an union of the Spirit, such as Christ received at His baptism and the Apostle himself at his conversion and baptism (Acts ix. 18). A seal is a mark of validity and genuineness, or of property, or of destination. He may have had all these ideas in his mind here. The seal, as a mark of genuineness, might then denote, according to its nature and use, the more visible and outward marks that he was a true ambassador of God and Apostle of Christ, such as his miraculous powers, the Churches which were his spiritual creations, and the like. The ideas of property and destination would apply thus. God "sealed" him "for Himself" (mid. voice) in a special manner at his conversion, as a "chosen vessel unto Him, to bear His name among the Gentiles" (Acts ix. 15). Both in Eph. i. 13 and iv. 30, however, the sealing "by the Holy Spirit of promise" signifies the destination for redemption in the day of the Lord. If this be meant here, the sense runs into that of the next words, which represent the Spirit as the earnest or pledge in the Apostle's heart of the future inheritance (Eph. i. 14), and the difference is that the seal is more external and the earnest internal. All believers have this earnest, and, in a modified sense, an anointing and a sealing also. The Apostle, however, is not speaking of these things as shared by him with his readers, but as so many spiritual guarantees of his true Apostleship and pledges of his ministerial fidelity towards them.

23. Explains the delay of his visit, which had been the ground of the imputations against him. The solemn adjuration shows the importance which he attached to clearing himself. The emphatic pronoun "I" brings the Apostle prominently forward in his own person, apparently in relation to God, who had done so much to qualify him for the due performance of his work. "But I invoke God upon my soul as a witness, that wishing to spare you I came no more to Corinth." If the soul may be regarded as the seat of the motives, the sense may be that he calls God, as it were, to overlook and inspect his soul, as a witness that the true ground for his not coming to Corinth is that which he states. If the soul be regarded as that which God has power to save or destroy, the meaning is that he is prepared to endure the visitation of the divine wrath upon his soul for the guilt of abusing God's great ministerial gifts, and for perjuring himself in the Divine name, if his allegation upon oath be not true, that he deferred his visit from the desire to spare them a deserved chastisement.

24. This motive, however, must be guarded from misconstruction. He who claims the power of sparing and punishing seems to assume a lordship over the subjects of his discipline, and he had, no doubt, been charged with this pretension, both in the case of the immoral person whom he had condemned and in other matters. In no instance was such an imputation more baseless than in his. He taught that, as soon as a man has attained to faith, he comes to full age and liberty. Until that time he is under bondage, but through faith he receives the spirit of adoption, and can call God his Father. See Gal. iii. 25; iv. 6; v. 1. Consistently with this, he asserts that he is not exercising lordship over their faith, but, on the contrary, an opposite function, viz., that of a fellow-worker of their joy.

Joy for reception of the unmerited blessings of the Gospel is one of the firstfruits of the Spirit, following upon faith, and is the gift of God. It is capable of diminution or increase, according as men stand erect and firm, or vacillate and stumble in faith. Now in respect of their faith, his readers were standing fast, and so needed no one to exercise mastery over them. It only remained for the Apostle to co-operate with God in promoting their Christian joy by counselling, encouraging, comforting, and similar functions of his ministry. It may seem remarkable that he ascribes so unhesitatingly a steady faith to his readers; but here, as elsewhere in the Epistle, when he addresses the better disposed amongst them, with whom he trusts to effect a complete reconciliation, he speaks in that spirit of love which believes and hopeth all things. He is speaking to different persons in ch. xiii. 5, to men whose far-going heathenism or Judaism had cast doubts upon the reality of their faith. With the contents of this verse the difficult passage in Gal. iv. 31, v. 1 should be compared. The translation "by faith ye stand" is usually supposed to signify that faith
furnishes the sure base of salvation in general, which is not the sense that the context requires. The Apostle by no means asserts that he has no authority over them in any circumstances. If they should lapse from the faith, they would again fall under tutelage and need a schoolmaster to bring them again to Christ.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on Chap. I.

Ver 3.—THE Affliction in Asia.

There are many opinions as to what this affliction was. The uproar of Demetrius at Ephesus, a dangerous disease, a shipwreck (2 Cor. xi. 25), some machinations of the "many adversaries" (1 Cor. xvi. 9), a plot of the Jews which imperilled his life somewhere between Ephesus and Troas, have all been suggested. The circumstances and St. Paul's language seem to show that it was his trouble about the condition and the conduct of the Church of Corinth.

1. It came upon him in Asia, and it was known to his readers. How his affliction accords with these particulars we have already seen.

2. It must have had special reference to the Corinthians. Otherwise it could not have stood prominently in the head and front of an Epistle bearing so closely upon their peculiar circumstances and all that is said about its conducting to the comfort and salvation would be vague and strained, instead of appropriate and natural.

3. A comparison of the terms used about this affliction in ch. i. 3-11 with those employed in other parts of the Epistle to describe his feelings about Corinthian affairs strongly favours this identification. In ch. ii. 4, the grief in which he had written is called "much affliction and anguish of heart." Compare ch. ii. 12. In Macedonia again, when "his flesh had no rest" on account of his anxiety for news from Corinth, he says that he was "afflicted" (ch. vii. 5). This could scarcely have been a different affliction from that of chap. ii. The term "comfort" points still more decidedly in the same direction. It is very difficult to think that ch. i. 3-4 and ch. vii. 4, 6 refer to different occasions of comfort. We have, as has been already noted in ch. i. 3-7, one form or other of the word for "comfort" ten times in five verses, and, in ch. vii. 6-7, 13, six times in three verses. In other words there is exactly the same harping upon comfort in connection with his deliverance from the affliction in Asia, that occurs with reference to his release from devouring anxiety about Corinth.

It is also very doubtful whether a man like St. Paul would have used such language as that of ch. i. 8, about danger or suffering which threatened his body or his life merely.

It must have been something which afflicted his spirit as well.

Ver. 7. Matted regard the second 'yea,' and 'nay' as predicates of the first 'yea' and 'nay' respectively. According to this view, the rendering is, "that with me my yea should be yea and my nay nay;" and the drift, 'Do I form my plans after a carnal rule, and make it my sole object, when I have once said that I will do or not do a thing, to let nothing whatever divert me from carrying out my stated purpose, through mere perniciously or in order to maintain a false consistency?' He thus asserts his right to retract or modify any plan of proceeding which he may have announced, if he should find it good or desirable to do so. As a matter of language, no doubt, the second 'yea' and 'nay' may be taken as predicates, as in Jas. v. 11, ἢ ἐγὼ ἐραξὼ τὸ ναι, ναι, και τὸ δὲ, δὲ. But there are strong reasons against the interpretation.

1. In ver. 18 we find the single 'yea' and 'nay.' In the double, and καί uniting them, so as to represent a compound of affirmation and negation, even according to the advocates of the above view; and it would be strange if καί did not serve the same purpose with regard to the double as it does with regard to the single 'yea' and 'nay' in two consecutive verses, the double 'yea' and 'nay' being only a stronger form than the single, as in Matt. v. 37.

2. He was not accused of obstinacy or the dogged desire of consistency, but of weakness and of carnal cunning, and the line of defence which this interpretation attributes to him against these accusations would have been a very questionable one. The remark that he was bound to admit, in the present case, that he had substituted a 'nay' for a 'yea' is scarcely quite correct; for he had never said absolutely that he would not come, but only, that he would not come unless the Corinthians reformed their conduct (2 Cor. ii. 3). That he was always "ready to come" is proved not only by his assertions, but by the fact that he was on his way to them at the very time of his writing. The impression conveyed by vv. 18, 19, 20, 21 decidedly is that he asserts himself to be a man of his word, and not that he claims a right of replacing a 'yea' by a 'nay' when ever he thinks it desirable.
II. CORINTHIANS. II.

3. Nearly all the supporters of this interpretation, in order to make the defence implied in it less doubtful, think the meaning is that it depends upon God’s permission whether the Apostle carries out a ‘yea’ or a ‘nay’ that he has once uttered. Hofmann brings out this sense prominently by rendering “that ‘yea’ should be ‘yea,’ and ‘nay’ nay, according to my judgment,” not according to God’s. But that there is no such reference as this is clear from ver. 23, where he says that it was his merciful consideration for his readers that prevented his visit, and from ch. ii. 1, where he says be decided out of consideration for himself not to come. Nothing could have been easier than for him to say that God hindered him, had he meant this. Nevertheless Chrysostom, Theodoret, Theophylact, Erasmus, and Bengel all hold this interpretation.

CHAPTER II.

1 Having showed the reason why he came not to them, 6 he requireth them to forgive and to comfort that excommunicated person, 10 even as himself also upon his true repentance had forgiven him, 12 declaring withal why he departed from Troas to Macedonia, 14 and the happy success which God gave to his preaching in all places.

BUT I determined this with myself, that I would not come again to you in heaviness.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me?

3 And I wrote this same unto

CHAP. II. 1. Merciful consideration for his readers (i. 23) was not his only reason for staying away. “But I determined, for my own sake, this, not again in grief to come to you.” The rendering, according to the Received Text, would be: “not again to come in grief to you,” but it has little or no authority, and probably arose out of the assumption that St. Paul had been only once in Corinth. But even it is not inconsistent with a previous visit of grief. It is arbitrary to say, on account of i. 23, that ‘in grief’ means ‘bringing grief with him to inflict it upon them.’ Nor is this sense supported by 1 Cor. iv. 21, where the phrase of the A. V. “with a rod” is literally “in a rod.” The true parallelism of that passage to this lies in the words which follow “in a rod,” viz. “in love and the spirit of meekness.” As the love there meant is a love felt in the Apostle’s own heart, so is the grief here. The language indicates that he is introducing a different idea from that in i. 23, nor is the beginning of the next verse against this.

2. States the reason why it was for his own sake that he took his decision. It was, that to come in grief to them would be to seal up the source of his own joy. “For if I grieve you, then who is it that gladdens me save he that is grieved by me?” It would grieve him to inflict a punishment which would grieve them. Between him and them there was a mutual relation of joy-giving (i. 24) which a mutual grief-giving would destroy.

N.B. Although there may be no actual instance of kai introducing the second clause of a compound conditional sentence, when that clause is a direct interrogative, its occurrence here should not have created so much difficulty, because there is no reason in language why it should not be so used. It denotes the close and immediate juxtaposition in the Apostle’s mind of the question with the antecedent condition, and may properly be rendered ‘then’ or ‘in that case.’ It is merely the apodotic kai and that the apodosis is a question is accidental.

The singular number has led some to think that in “he that is grieved” there is an allusion to the great offender, which would require a totally different turn to be given to the verse. ‘I would not come to you in grief and grieve you in person, but I did so by letter: for if I grieve you by letter (ver. 3), there is this advantage, that he who is grieved in that way is the same who gives me joy by repenting.’ Some adopt this interpretation without supposing any reference to the offender, but it lacks simplicity. The singular sums up as one person all those whom he would have pained by coming, and describes them as a single object of his personal love (cf. xi. 4).

3. States what he did in accordance with his decision, and because his readers were the proper source of his joy. “I wrote this very thing.” Inasmuch as the “this” here clearly takes up the “this” of ver. 1, “this very thing” can be nothing else than his decision not to come to visit them, so long as it would be necessary for him to come in grief. Here then we have disclosed the foundation of the charge that he had written a “nay” contradictory to his former “yea,” and the reason why he had done so. He did not
II. CORINTHIANS. II.

you, lest, when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice; having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears; not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficent to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many.

write this in any extant letter. In the First Epistle he still declared categorically that he would come. It can only be inferred that he wrote it in a letter subsequent to the First Epistle, and that must have been the letter carried by Titus. His object was that he might, by adjourning his visit until he could make it without grief, remove what would grieve him when he did come, at the hands of those who ought to be fellow-workers of his joy, as he was of theirs. He wrote with this object in the confidence that there was an identity of joy between him and all of them. This would prompt them to take the steps requisite for preventing his grief, not simply because it was their duty, but with gladness. What the steps were he had stated in his letter, and one of them was the execution of the sentence of excommunication, for opposing which he had, in that letter, not spared them.

4. If he had been so anxious not to grieve them, why had he written so severely? His enemies had appealed to his letter as a proof that he was a reckless disturber of the peace and happiness of the community and its individual members. He explains. The anguish out of which he wrote shews that this was a calumny. So does his object in writing, for his purpose was not that they should be grieved, but that they might know the overflow of his affection for them. Had he loved them less, he would not have felt so insufferable a repugnance to giving pain in person, nor so profound an anxiety to remedy the prevailing evils by a letter. It was from the sense of his love which he endeavoured to awaken in them by writing, that he expected to rouse them to take with energy the desired measures.

5. The main topic of his letter, and cause of his grief, had been the case of the sinful person often mentioned (1 Cor. v. 1, ff.). Against this man he had been accused of proceeding with personal exasperation, as if the offence had been committed against him individually. He disclaims this, by declaring that not he individually, but all the Church, had been aggrieved by the offender. Yet in order not to press heavily upon the guilty but now penitent man, by representing too strongly the heinousness of his conduct, he will not say that absolutely all the Corinthians had been grieved, but only "partly" all of them. He alludes to a section in the Church which had either all along, or in the progress of the discussion about the case, taken more lenient views and deemed it one in which pardon might be granted or some mercy shewn. The fact that there had been a portion of the community which held this view, St. Paul uses with great tact, in order to mitigate the constrictor's sense of guilt. He could not have applied for this purpose the views of the thoroughly antinomian party, nor the feelings of persons whose conduct was almost as bad as that of the chief transgressor himself. It is plain that there was another more respectable class which advocated milder treatment. The Apostle does not, of course, assert that the case in question had given him no pain, but only denies that he regarded it as involving a personal offence against him, such as could awaken a personal animosity, and it is on that account that he puts the personal pronoun first. For ἐνδυσάμενος, which means 'to be a burden to,' 'to weigh heavily upon,' see 1 Thess. ii. 9; 2 Thess. iii. 8. In the verse before us it has no expressed object, and perhaps ought to be rendered simply "in order that I may not oppress." But the tacit reference must be to the guilty man. See note at end of chapter.

6. Since the last letter an assembly of the Church had been held to discuss the case, and the debate had been closed by a division in which the majority had voted for punishment of the offender. It is plain that the sentence passed had been referred to the Apostle for his approval or disapproval, and the absence of any connecting particle indicates that he is now delivering his judgment upon it. What the punishment was is not stated, but it fell short of what St. Paul had prescribed, for the reasons which he assigns for pronouncing it sufficient are that it was inflicted upon such a one as the guilty man had by his contention proved himself to be, and that it was all that the majority had thought it right to impose. Some think that no decree had been actually passed, but that the majority had practically treated the
II. CORINTHIANS. II.

7 So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you that ye would confirm your love toward him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it in the person of the right Christ; 

offender as an excommunicated person. But as the word "ratify" (confirn A.V.) in ver. 8 points to a formal decision, by which he was to be restored, he must have been under some regular sentence. Whether it was excommunication for a limited time, or excommunication without delivery over to Satan, there is nothing to shew.

7-8. It appears that, with the appeal to the Apostle upon the reduced sentence, there had been submitted also a memorial, brought by Titus, and suggesting to some members of the Church, that the punishment should be increased to the severity which had been originally prescribed. Only on this supposition can the term "contrariwise" be explained, and it is a very natural supposition, for one of the feelings which they had manifested so strongly in the presence of Titus was their 'exacting of punishment' (2 Cor. vii. 11). However, from the results obtained, and the nature of the case, the Apostle is in a position to recommend the opposite course, that a pardon should be granted, comfort administered, and that the Church should pass a decree for the restitution of that brotherly love which had been for a while withdrawn from the unhappy man. The first part of this verse should be taken in close connection with the preceding; for it contains no idea of obligation, such as the "ought" of the A. V. implies. The literal translation simply is "so as Titus to you to pardon," and the drift is that, in such an instance, the punishment already imposed is enough for them, on the contrary, rather to pardon than to increase the penalty. His object in counselling a plenary pardon was to save the condemned from being "swallowed up" by remorse. He seems to have been in danger of spiritual ruin from despair, or of dying of a broken heart, or perishing by self-destruction.

9. The adoption of his advice will be in accordance with the object of his writing. He had intended to put them upon their probation, and "ascertain their approvedness whether they were obedient on all points." This was partly his aim with regard to the sentence of excommunication delivered in the First Epistle to be executed by them in his absence. They did not answer to that pro-

New Test.—Vol. III.
II. CORINTHIANS. II.

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christ's gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord,

shewed theirapprovedness, but "for their sakes," and in the full consciousness that Christ was cognizant and approved of what he did and of the object which he had in view.

11. This object he states in order to shew how he had acted "for their sakes." It was to prevent the Corinthians and himself from being over-reached, and having advantage taken of them by Satan, whose devices or thoughts he did not fail to see. These devices were the malignant designs of Satan's ministers in Corinth (xi. 15), with regard to the case in question. These were the extreme Judaizers, and they were playing the devil's part in the matter. Had they been honest, they must have declared themselves in favour of the penalty prescribed by the Mosaic law, which was death. But they held themselves in reserve in order to allow the Apostle to ruin his own cause. They pointed, no doubt, to the flagrant sin as the natural and inevitable fruit of St. Paul's preaching, which, by setting aside the law, opened the door, as they said, to all heathen abominations. They would find not a few Jewish believers ready to listen to them, and those whom they influenced may have been some of the party who advocated the severer punishment. See ver. 7. But the Apostle discerned that the end in view was to create an irreparable breach between him and the community, and to gain full possession of the field for themselves. He would save himself and his readers from this satanic machination.

The delicacy and reticence with which this very tender subject is treated in these verses deserves remark. There is no name, no specification of particulars, not a word more than is absolutely needed to make his meaning clear, not a vestige of anything calculated to reawaken irritation or give pain. Having asserted the great principle of pure morality in the Church and, in a great measure, succeeded, he is able, in the most loving and gracious manner, to pour oil into a smarting wound. The burning question is now on the way to a happy settlement.

12. "But it had, with all its attendant circumstances, given him excessive pain. Such seems the simple connection which is greatly obscured by the "furthermore" of the A.V. Nothing can be more natural than that he should, after seeing his way to the end of a

distressing matter, recur to the great affliction which it had caused him, and out of which the desired issue had sprung, in order that he may do justice to the unspeakable relief which the news of Titus had brought him. The change which Titus reported he regards as a triumph and paints it in brilliant colours (vv. 14, 15, 16), as a contrast to the dark picture of his previous tribulation. The extent of his distress shews how different his feelings towards the Corinthians were from what his enemies represented them. He pours out in strong touches. He went to Troas to preach, which was the great object of his life, but though "a door stood open" (perf. part.) to him "in the Lord" leading to labours which promised success, he could not fully avail himself of it. His spirit, that part of his nature which was least liable to perturbation, most active in his gospel-work, the centre of his religious life, lacked the requisite calm, because he did not find Titus with tidings from Corinth. The unrest is so vividly engraven on his mind, that he seems to throw himself back into the situation, for he says—"I have not got relief to my spirit." The original is a perfect tense of an aorist form. It almost suggests the idea that he may be reproducing the very words in which he assigned to the people of Troas his reason for leaving them, 'I must go. I have got no relief for my spirit.' "Them" refers to the inhabitants of Troas implied in the name of their town in ver. 12.

14. No sooner has he mentioned Macedonia than he raises a hymn of Thanksgiving for the blessing there received. The success achieved through Titus and announced to him in Macedonia, he regards as a turning of the tide which will lead to the victory of himself and the truth in Corinth, and to the overthrow of his enemies. He represents himself as continually waging war with Satan and his agents, and exhibited at all times, together with his fellow-labourers, as God's triumphal pageant, in which, as it proceeds through the Gentile world, God, by means of the Apostle's preaching, visibly spreads, in every place, the odour of the knowledge of Himself, like the smoke of the incense in the midst of which the conqueror's train defiled.

(See note at the end of the chapter.) In the
II. CORINTHIANS. II.

savour of his knowledge by us in every place.
15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish:
16 To the one we are the savour of death unto death; and to the other the savour of life unto life.
And who is sufficient for these things?
17 For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.
to render their account. The atmosphere in
which the Apostle spoke was Christ, which is
the cause of their success; while that in which
their Judaizing adversaries spoke was Satan
(16, 15). The unsophisticated word of God
thus proclaimed puts forth all its living powers,
divides mankind into two opposite hosts, and
delivers them over to two opposite destinies.
"The many" cannot denote, as
the original often, but by no means always,
does, 'the majority.' That sense, as has
been well observed, would cast an unmerited
shadow upon the Apostolic Church. Neither
does it necessarily mean that the false teachers
in Corinth were absolutely numerous, al-
though they did no doubt outnumber the
true preachers and sorely beset the simpler
minded. But the phrase conveys an idea of
contempt, intimating that such persons
belonged to the common herd of mankind,
and acted for ignoble ends, like cheating
traders.

This whole passage (14-17) refers so clearly
to the happy issue of Titus's mission, and all
its points bear so distinctly upon the an-
tagonism of the Corinthian Judaizers as in-
dicated to us in other parts of the Epistle,
that the question whether it alludes to some
deliverance and successes in Macedonia need
not be discussed.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on Chap. II.

Ver. 5. The interpretation of this verse
depends upon the connection of ἀπὸ μέρους,
and upon the object of ἐπιδαιρῶ. Upon both
points there are various views.
1. Ἀλλ' ἀπὸ μέρους is taken closely with
οἱ ἐκ λελεκυτῆς, and πάντας ὑμᾶς is made
the object of ἐπιδαιρῶ. "It is not me that he
has grieved, save part: in order that I may
not overcharge you all." This is the view
of Luther, of the A.V., of Bengel, and others.
Had the grief fallen entirely and exclusively
upon him, they would all have been guilty
of indifference to a heinous sin. To avoid
bringing so heavy a charge upon them, he
says that he has not been grieved except in
part. It had not been a "grief due to a single
heart," but, as it "concerned the general
cause," his readers had shared it. But the ὑμᾶς
standing first, and the ὑμᾶς last, shows that
the ἀλλὰ is the connecting link between
the two, and therefore that they have the same
grammatical dependence upon λελεκυτῆς.
Moreover ἀλλὰ is a strongly adversative
particle, whereas the above rendering expresses
no opposition at all. If the Apostle's mean-
ing had been what it attributes to him, he
might at once have made it clear by writing
ἀλλὰ οὐ or εἰ μόνος instead of ἀλλὰ, which is
scarcely good Greek in the sense given to it in
this interpretation.
2. Ἀπὸ μέρους is taken with ὑμᾶς, and
πάντας made the object of ἐπιδαιρῶ. "But
partly, that I may not overcharge all, you." Billroth explains the drift thus: 'Whether
grief has been caused to me is not the ques-
tion; I was not the person who had to
suffer (pay) for him, but you, at least a part
of you, for I will not be unjust and impute
the guilt to you all of having been indifferent
to his offence.' It is clear that Billroth has
confounded the grief for the pain and disgrace
of punishment with heartfelt sorrow at the
sin. The fatal objection to the view, which re-
quires a comma between πάντας and ὑμᾶς, is
that if St. Paul had intended this to be his
meaning, he could have avoided all obscurity
by saying οὐ μὴ πάντας ἐπιδαιρῶ, ὑμᾶς. Ols-
hausen, who adopts Billroth's punctuation,says
that οὐ μὴ ἐπιδαιρῶ πάντας is a touch of irony,
which, however, would be quite out of place
in such a passage.
3. To supply ἀπὸ μέρους 'partially,' 'in a
measure,' non admodum, non valde, and make
it qualify a λελεκυτῆς to be supplied before
πάντας ὑμᾶς. Fritzschc contends that this is
the invariable sense of ἀπὸ μέρους, which Bill-
roth rightly declines to admit. The statement
would not be true, because the Apostle knew
perfectly that there were many at Corinth
who had not been grieved at all, and to say
that they had all been grieved 'in a measure,'
in the sense of 'not greatly,' would really
have been a reproach to them quite out of
harmony with the fine delicacy of the whole
passage.

4. To supply ὑμᾶς after ἐπιδαιρῶ: 'but
partly, that I may not overcharge (you), all
of you.' But the context shews plainly that
the person upon whom the Apostle does not
wish to press heavily is the guilty man. He
abstains from mentioning him as the object
of ἐπιδαιρῶ from his desire to spare him.

Hofmann's interpretation is characteristic
and as daring as his arguments are intricate.
Meyer has briefly pointed out one or two
insuperable objections to it.

Ver. 14. The interpretation depends upon
the difficult word θρησκείας. The verbs in -εωrequire a more complete investigation than
they have yet received or can receive here.
Two familiar words will furnish an illustra-
tion of the use of θρησκείας in this passage.
Μάθηταίμων is 'to be a disciple' or 'to make a
disciple.' We may imagine some such con-
necting link as 'to disciple,' which is plant
either to a neuter or a transitive sense.
Βασιλεὺς is 'to be a king,' but also 'to
make a king,' as in Isaiah vi. 7, Βασιλεῖσιμων
II. CORINTHIANS. II.

νό γάρ οὖν Ταβιδ, and in many other places. We may conceive some such middle term as 'to king.' 'To feast 'is 'to fare sumptuously,' but 'to feast a man' is 'to make him fare sumptuously.' Ἐρωμένοις and Διάθεμάς, whatever their etymology, were names of the Greek god Dionysus or Bacchus, and also denoted a processional hymn sung in the great Dionysiac festivals. Ὠραμάς came to mean a Dionysiac festive procession, and was adopted by the Romans in the form triumphus in the 2nd century B.C. From θραμβός was formed the verb θραμβεύειν, which occurs in Polyb. vi. 53, 7, and from 'triumphus' the verb 'triumphare.' θραμβεύειν then, used intransitively in the Roman sense, meant 'to hold or lead a triumphal procession,' which is exactly the meaning of the equivalent for it used in Polyb. θριαμβός είτημον. Θραμβεύειν τοις πολίταις would mean in an active sense, in strict analogy with μασθέων and βασιλεύειν. 'To make the citizens a θραμβός, a triumphal procession' or 'to lead them in triumphal procession.' Hence the expression ascribed to Cleopatra with reference to the wish of Augustus to lead her in a triumph at Rome, οὐ θραμβευθοῦσα is quite correctly interpreted by Horace (Ode I. xxxvii. 30):

"Invidens
Privata deduci superbo
Non humilis mulier triumpha."

A glance through Suicer's article on the word shews how constantly the Greek fathers and others attached the idea of 'display' to it, rather than of that of 'triumphing over,' although there certainly seems to be an underlying notion of a public exposure involving more or less of discredit or disgrace. Theodoret's explanation of the passage before us is γένες κυρίον περιεικα δίκαιον ἡμᾶς πᾶσιν ἀποφαίνων, and the view that the apostles were displayed as sufferers seems to be common to the Greek Fathers. We find, however, a passage in Tatian, 'Oratio ad Graecos,' ch. xxi, where θραμβεύειν implies no discredit or disgrace. Πώς εστήκατε λόγους ἀληθείας θραμβεύσεσθαι, καὶ ὡσπερ ὅ κολοφο, οὐ βίοις ἑπισκοπούμενοι πτώνοι. 'Cease making a grand display of other people's words and thoughts, and, just like the jackdaw (of Lusor), dressing up in feathers not your own.' Upon this passage Gesner says: —'θραμβεύειν eleganter usurpat pro jactare et tanguam in triumpho ducere.' These Greeks did not, of course, parade their plagiarised thoughts and language in order to hold them up to shame or disgrace, but they shewed them off as fine things, just as the jackdaw did his borrowed plumes. Similarly ποιμένεις, which is also used of a Roman triumphal procession, occurs in Epictetus, Diss. III. xxiv. 18, for 'making a parade of power.' Μένον μη γάρ μετα ναύς αὐτήν (i.e. ἀφήν). The idea of leading persons in public procession in disgrace or shame was no part of the essential sense of θραμβεύειν, but only circumstantial, flowing from the fact that the vanquished captives constituted a striking feature in the conqueror's train. Indeed, when used of the Dionysiac festivals, it could not have had any such sense, because in them all was mirth and gaiety. In a Roman triumph the victorious officers and troops were as conspicuous a group as any other, and there is no reason in language why the commander-in-chief or emperor should not be said with reference to his legates and soldiers, θραμβεύειν αὐτοῖς, 'to lead them in triumphal pagant.' The emperor himself indeed was the eye of the show, and in that sense Horace says (Odes, IV. iii. 5-10), speaking of what a triumph does for the leader of it—

"Ostendit Capitoli." The meaning, therefore, of the verse under consideration is: 'Thanks be to God who at all times makes a triumphal pageant of us,' as His victorious officers or soldiers. It is doubtful whether θραμβεύσεως, triumphare and triumphari, are ever used merely in the sense of 'to triumph over,' or 'be triumphed over.' At any rate no instance seems to be forthcoming in which 'to lead' or 'be led in triumph,' is not the more suitable rendering. Even Virg. Aen. vi. 8, where the triumph over Corinth is mentioned, is no exception to this remark. The rendering of the Vulgate, 'qui triumphat nos,' may well bear the same meaning. It is probable that it was merely a literal translation of τῷ θραμβεύσαντι ἡμᾶς, and the fluctuating interpretation of Jerome favours that view.

It will be seen that the meaning above assigned to θραμβεύειν is not identical with the so-called 'factive' sense unhistorically given to it by many lexicographers, e.g. Passow: triumphiren lassen; Wahl: triumphare facio aliquem; Grimm: facio ut aliquid triumphet; and that it is not touched by Alfords objection, for it does not make the verb to mean 'triumphatores facere.' Those who desire to see the exposition of the verse which is founded on the idea that θραμβεύειν τόν means 'to triumph over' a person as conquered, must consult Meyer, Hofmann, and Alfard. To say nothing of particular objections, it is, from whatever point of view regarded, a strained interpretation.

Little aid can be obtained from the use of θραμβεύειν in Col. ii. 17, until that passage has been more strictly examined. Bishop Lightfoot does not speak very confidently about his own interpretation of it, but the
II. CORINTHIANS. III.

1. Let their false teachers charge him with vainglory, he sheweth the faith and grace of the Corinthians to be a sufficient commendation of his ministry. 6. Whereupon entering a comparison between the ministers of the law and of the gospel, 12. he prooveth that his ministry is so far the more excellent, as the gospel of life and liberty is more glorious than the law of condemnation.

So we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you?

2. Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men:

3. Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.

CHAP. III. 1. What St. Paul has just said of his triumphs was sure to elicit from the assailed “many” the taunt that he was recurring to his tactic of self-praise, which they now regarded as the standing characteristic of his letters. He turns the edge of this sarcasm against its authors. According to their views and practices, he was bound to bring letters of commendation from others. But he needed no such letters. The “some” who did need them were the “many,” who, because they corrupted the truth for self-seeking ends, were incapable of achieving any such triumphs to speak for their office and ministry as he could point to on behalf of bis, in the creation of the Church at Corinth. The bearers of these letters of introduction obtained further letters from the Corinthians, recommending them to the believers in other places, and this is partly the reason why this epistle is addressed, not only to the Corinthians, but to all the saints in the whole of Achaia, that they also might be on their guard against persons so recommended.

2. He needs no letters to his readers, because he is no unknown newcomer, but their spiritual Father, and they are his children. They are themselves his commendatory letter written in his heart, inscribed on his affections. Reading them there he feels that he needs no commendation to them either from his own or any other pen. As a Christian Church at a conspicuous centre of Greek civilization, they are also an external letter of commendation, taken cognizance of and read as such by all men. The wonderful spiritual manifestations, spoken of in the First Epistle, the fruits of his ministry among them, had not escaped the general observation of the world. Thus he needs no commendatory letters from them, they themselves being the strongest warranty of his genuine Apostleship that could be given to mankind at large.

3. Explains, with particular reference in the word “manifested” to the “known and read of all men,” the full sense in which the Corinthians are such a letter as he has described, and the conception is a truly grand one. The author of this letter is Christ. He dictated it. The scribe, Christ’s amanuensis, is the Apostle. The vehicle or material in which it stands written (perf.) is not lifeless ink, but the spirit of the living God. The material on which it is written is not cold unimpressible stone, but the fleshy, warm, susceptible tablets of the heart. In such an epistle all mankind may discern that a new and mighty power, the Spirit of God, has entered into men through the Apostle’s ministry, is living, working, manifesting itself in them. Nor is the idea out of place that all men might also herein mark the fulfilment of those prophetic promises, which announced the blessings peculiar to the Messiah’s kingdom, as in Joel ii. 28, 29; Ezek. xi. 19, 20; xxxvi. 26; Jer. xxxi. 33. From
II. CORINTHIANS. III.

4. And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward:

5. Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God;

these passages, and from Prov. iii. 3; viii. 3, "write them upon the tablets of thy heart," some of the language of this verse seems to be borrowed. It is obvious that his adversaries can write no such letter as he has written in the Corinthian Church. They are exercising a ministry after the old fashion. They are writing encomiums of law with ink upon stone, while he writes with the Spirit upon hearts. Instead of paper or parchment which might have been expected in conjunction with ink, he introduces tablets of stone, partly because he is leading up to a contrast between the new dispensation and the old, of which latter the tables of the Decalogue were the monuments, and partly because there is an allusion to the stony heart of Israel in Ex. xxxvi. 26, for which God had promised to substitute a heart of flesh. There is no inconsistency in saying first that the Corinthians are themselves the letter, and then that the letter is written in them, because it is not in the outward man, but in the inner man of the heart that the letter is written, and, in such a case, the heart is the man. The main point is that Spirit, the vehicle of the Apostle's letter, penetrated to the innermost centre of man's being and traced its living characters there, whilst ink, the material used by his adversaries, never went below the hard surface.

N.B. The best-attested reading of the last words of this verse would yield the rendering: "in tablets (which are) hearts of flesh," or "in tablets (which are) hearts, being fleshy (tablets)."

4. He is confident that the Church of Corinth is such a standing testimony to his ministry. This confidence is not mere self-assumption, but a firm assurance, reaching through Christ to the presence of God, and therefore valid in the sight of the searcher of hearts.

5. But even this, although he viewed himself as a mere instrument, implies a lofty estimate of himself and his work in Corinth. Who made it competent to him to take no an estimate? Foretelling this question, he asserts that this competency did not proceed from himself (i. g. laurw) in the sense that he was the original author of it (os i. I. lau)w), but it had its origin from God. The proof that he had it from God is given in the next verse. Both the expressions, "From ourselves," and "as (coming) out of ourselves," of which the latter more precisely defines the former by denoting a more immediate origination with self, go with the word "competent" and not with "to take account of," as is clear from the antithesis—our competency is from God. The verse cannot bear the sense often given to it, that we have no ability of ourselves to plan and work out our own salvation, but that such ability comes from God.

6. Proof that this competency comes from God. God gave him a further and a greater competency, which involves the less. God made him competent (i. 22) to be a minister of a dispensation, which from its very nature must produce, when it took effect, exactly such a result as he counts the Corinthian Church to be. He cannot therefore be wrong in estimating it as he has done in ver. 2, 3. Here begins a fine polemical passage, which strikes at the root of the difference between the Apostle and the Jews and Judaizers, by contrasting the superiority of the new dispensation and ministry with the inferiority of the old. "Who also made us competent to be ministers of a new dispensation, not of written enactment but of spirit, for the written enactment putteth to death, but the spirit maketh alive." The first point of contrast is expressed in "new." It was this newness that the Judaizers failed to discern, or discerning declined to acknowledge. They thought the new dispensation valid only in conjunction with the old, and used the new cloth to patch up the old garment. They did not understand that "old things were passed away," and replaced by new. The next point is that the old dispensation was one of written enactment, the new was one of spirit. The old was a dispensation of external law, making exactions, but communicating no inward power of obedience. The spirit which was received through the new was a life-giving agent. The Judaizers adhered to the literal requirements of the law. For instance, they insisted upon circumcision, whereas the true circumcision was not "that which was in the visible, in the flesh, but the circumcision of the heart, in spirit not in written ordinance." Rom. ii. 28, 29. Similarly the true service of God is "in newness of the Spirit, not in oldness of written law," Rom. vii. 6. There is no justification whatever for taking 'letter' in the sense of a letter of the alphabet nor for the
7 But if the ministration of death, written and engraved in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away:

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.

10 For even that which was made glorious had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech:

 application of it, so often made, to literal as opposed to spiritual interpretations of the Gospel.

The third point of contrast is that the written enactment "put to death, but the Spirit life." "Put to death" is better than "killeth" (A. V.), for the process meant is judicial and the original often occurs for judicial execution. The superiority, already implied in the term 'new,' appears in the respective effects of the two dispensations. How the written law puts to death is fully explained in Rom. vii. 8-13. "The law is spiritual" (Rom. vii. 14) and was "ordained unto life," but it brought about, in the first instance, an effect at variance with its essential nature.

7, 8. Notwithstanding this superiority of the new dispensation over the old, the Jews vilified St. Paul's ministry and glorified their own, which they deemed that they held as the successors of Moses. But the glory of the respective ministries being as the glory of the respective dispensations, he proceeds to show how this question of comparative glory stands. The characteristics of the old ministry, death, written enactment, engraving on stones, were in their own nature at variance with glory, yet a glory too bright for human eyes, albeit a temporary one, was imparted to it, Exod. xxxiv. 29-35. "Surely more shall a ministry of the Spirit, whose characteristics, righteousness, life, peace (Rom. viii. 6) are in their own nature glorious, "be in glory," and that not a temporary but a permanent glory. The glory of Spirit is in fact as imperishable as Spirit. The Apostle says "shall be in glory" because he is looking forward to the Messiah's kingdom, in which the glory now hidden shall be manifested. The original for the 'was glorious' of the A. V. in ver. 7 means 'was brought' or 'made to pass into a state of glory' and implies that the glory was extrinsic and communicated. It might almost be rendered 'was glorified.'

9. "For if the ministration of condemnation had a glory, much more does the ministration of righteousness superabound in glory." (The right reading is τὴν διακοσμίαν). This second argument confirms the first by going one step further back in the stages of salvation and ading a further contrast between the two ministries. Condemnation, which is antecedent to death, is wrought by the old, and righteousness, its opposite, antecedent to the spiritual life, by the new. The same relation between spirit, life, and righteousness is found in Rom. xiii. 10 "The spirit is life by reason of righteousness."

10. Justifies the claim to a superabundance of glory by a general assertion applicable to the case in point. "For" "that which is glorified" or more simply and forcibly, "the glorified is even stripped of its glory" or "deglorified in this particular" of relative or comparative glory, "on account of the glory which surpasses." The surpassing glory of the new shines down the old with its overpowering splendour. The original lays the emphasis upon the deglorification.

11. The next argument corroborates the statement just made. The extinction of glory recalls the fading of the glory from the face of Moses, and it is now clear that he regarded its vanishing as a symbol of the transitoriness of the Mosaic ministry, for he applies here the same expression to the ministry which he applied to the glory: "It that which is being done away had (transitory) passages of glory, much more will that which abideth be in (permanent) glory." The two prepositions of the original (ἐκαθάρισε 'through' and ἐν 'in') do not necessarily express the difference between transitoriness and duration, but they may do so as a matter of language, and the distinction is too much in accordance with the context to be set aside. For the old ministry glory was a brief stage through which it traveled, for the new it was a fixed sphere of existence. The law ceased because the old ministry had fulfilled its purpose of educating men to Christ; the new ministry abides because the righteousness and life which it ministers are of eternal duration.
13 And not as Moses, which put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished:

14 But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which

15 But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart.

16 Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

14. The effect produced by the vail. The strongly adverbial conjunction (ἀλλὰ) requires a thought to be supplied. They did not see the end of that which was passing away, but "on the contrary their thoughts got hardened" (οὐραίος). St. Paul does not say: "Moses hardened their thoughts," but "their thoughts got hardened." This was the exact opposite of the result produced by the Apostle's frank discharge of his office which inquired the tablets of the heart with the spirit of the living God. The "thoughts" are the spiritual perceptions, discernments, intuitions. These lost their sensibility and quickness, and became callous. The effect of this vail of Moses upon the thoughts of the beholders is the transition-link to its transference to the hearts of the people in the next verse. There are two vails, of which one covers first the face of Moses personally and next Moses as read in the Pentateuch; the other lies upon the hearts of the Jews. The proof of the hardening of their spiritual perceptions is that it has lasted until the present time. The vail covers those written records of the old dispensation which represented Moses, and is said to remain "upon the reading" of them, because it was mainly by public reading in the synagogue that the Jews maintained their acquaintance with them. The vail continued "not uplifted," because it was in Christ that it was (to be) done away, and the Jews had not yet been converted to Christ. He is speaking of the national conversion, the salvation of all Israel, which is treated at length in Romans xi.

15. Here, again, we have to supply a thought, as in v. 14. The vail is not uplifted, "but," on the contrary, "to this day a vail lies upon their heart." The Apostle, in holding to the figure of the vail, is aware that he is using it in a rather different sense from that which it has in vv. 13, 14. So he says not "the vail" A. V. but "a vail." This vail upon their hearts is equivalent to the hardening of their thoughts, for, as this hardening was the result of the vail upon the face of Moses personally, so the vail upon their hearts was the result of the vail upon Moses read. The heart is the seat of the
II. CORINTHIANS. III.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

thoughts; and spiritual vision. The right reading and rendering in Eph. i. 18, is "the eyes of the heart."

16. The means of being stripped of the vail is conversion to the Lord. "But whenever it shall turn to the Lord, it is stripped of its vail." Both the form of thought and the language are borrowed from Exodus xxxiv. 34. "But when Moses went in before the Lord to speak to him, he used to strip off the vail until he came out." The Lord is not God the Father (as Pearson on the Creed, Art. viii.) but Christ, as is clear from the statement that the vail is to be done away in Christ. The subject of "shall turn" is the heart mentioned in the last verse. That it is not usual in the N.T. to speak of the heart turning to Christ is not a sufficient reason for supplying a new subject such as 'Israel' or 'all Israel' according to Rom. xi. 26. The practical drift of this verse is that the Jewish Christians should turn with their whole heart to the Lord, whom St. Paul preached, and not be drawn away from Him by false teachers.

17. When the heart is stripped of its vail, the screen between it and the Lord is removed. The Lord obtains access to the heart and communicates Himself to it. "But the Lord is the Spirit." When he communicates Himself therefore, He communicates the Spirit. It is clear from Rom. viii. 9, 10 that the expressions 'the spirit of God being in men, the spirit of Christ being in men, and Christ being in men, signify the same thing. At the root of this variety of representation lies the truth that "The Lord is the spirit." The connection shows that this proposition declares Christ the Lord to be the Spirit so far as Christ's being and working in us is concerned. The Spirit in us is Christ in us, and Christ in us is the Spirit in us. "But where the Spirit is there is liberty." The context compels us to interpret this liberty as freedom from the bondage of the Law, which freedom however when analysed amounts in reality to Christian liberty in its entire scope, the glorious liberty of the children of God. St. Paul regarded the Law with all the reverence due to a divine institution and his seemingly disparaging expressions are only applicable when it is put into competition with the Gospel.

18. "But we all with unveiled face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord are transfigured to the same image, as from a Lord (who is) Spirit." This is the crowning glory of the new ministry. In contrast (8.) with the unconverted, heart-vailed, unslaved Israel, all those who through conversion to "the Lord who is the Spirit" have come into their liberty as sons of God, enjoy unclouded communion with Christ. They see Him with the face of their inner man unveiled. As the true Christ is Christ glorified, it is the glory of the Lord that they thus behold. With this unobstructed gaze a metamorphosis begins by which they are transfigured to the "same" image which the Lord Himself wears. The transfiguration is progressive; it advances from one stage of glory to another. This transmutation is exactly a suitable result to proceed from one who is spirit. Glory is of the essence of spirit and is the outward form in which spirit manifests itself. The future spiritual body or rather 'body fit to be the organ of spirit,' in 1 Cor. xv. 44, is the same as the 'body of glory' in Phil. iii. 21. All this besides its polemical purport is put forth as an inducement to those Jewish Christians at Corinth who were in danger of being led back into the servitude of the Law, to turn wholly to Him, who by removing the vail from their hearts could make them also recipients of spirit, liberty, and glory. That the word rendered "behaving as in a mirror" is capable of this sense is clear from an interesting passage in Philo. Alleg. p. 79 E. That the meaning "reflecting as in a mirror" is either impossible or would yield no sense is scarcely correct. What decides in favour of the former sense is that "with unveiled face" expresses unhindered, as the vail upon the heart in v. 15 expresses hindered vision.

The mirror cannot mean either the Gospel or the heart. The idea apparently is that the glorified Saviour is realised by the spiritual vision as clearly as in a burnished mirror (iii. 14). Certainly the Apostle explains 'seeing through a glass' (1 Cor. xiii. 12) as seeing 'in an enigma' or darkly, but that does not prevent a mirror from being used as a figure for clearness of view, which indeed the context here requires. That the words rendered in the A.V. "even as by the Spirit of the Lord" should be translated "as from a Lord (who is) Spirit" seems almost certain from the immediately foregoing phrase, "The Lord is the Spirit," and from the appropriate sense which it furnishes.
CHAPTER IV.

1. He declarest how he hath used all sincerity and faithful diligence in preaching the gospel, and how he daily endured for the same the just rewards of the praise of God's power, 10 to the benefit of the church, 16 and to the apostle's own eternal glory.

THEREFORE seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not;

2. But have renounced the things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.

3. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

4. In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

CHAP. IV. There should be no division of chapters, for the same topic and reasoning are continued to ver. 7.

1. The persons addressed are still those whom he hopes to save from Judaism and to whom therefore he must justify fully his Apostleship and his mode of exercising it. *On this account,* i.e. because of the transcendent superiority of his ministry, holding it not by self-appointment, but having received it, utterly unworthy as he was (1 Cor. xv. 9), by an act of God's mercy, he does not fail in the courage which both the mercy and the ministry demand of him. He claims for his office all the glory that belongs to it and he preaches boldly the pure Gospel whatever it may cost him (iii. 12).

2. He turns now from the misguided Jewish Christians to their false teachers, referred to also in ii. 17. He does not fail in courage, "but" on the contrary (διὰ λόγου), when God made him an Apostle, he renounced (aor.) "the hidden practices of shame." The "hidden θερέσεις" refers to the vail, yet the whole expression does not of course apply to the great lawgiver, but only to his possessing successors in Corinth. When he says that he renounced these things, he does not mean that he ever practised them, but that he foresaw them. He explains what he renounced, and what his adversaries practised, in the expressions, "not walking in crafty villany, nor yet falsifying the word of God." By the first he means all the covert and cleverly devised calumnies, intrigues, and manoeuvres employed to ruin him in Corinth, which would not bear the light of day (ρα κοινωνία); by the second, the adulteration of the Gospel with elements of the law, tradition, or false notions of Christ's person and character. This course his adversaries followed because it appealed strongly to Jewish prejudices (Gal. vi. 12). He pursued an opposite line which required no little courage. With open manifestation of the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, as a minister of the Spirit and a preacher of a spiritual Gospel, he commended himself to that faculty in man which is most akin to spirit, conscience. He appealed to this least corruptible of tribunals in its least corruptible form, not as it exists in individuals or sections, or even in a nation, in which it is liable to be perverted by feeling and passion, but "to all conscience of man" to that general witness of Himself which God has planted in mankind. This he did, knowing that God was cognizant of his proceedings, and therefore feeling that He approved them.

3. But instead of his Gospel actually commending itself to the general conscience of men, the Judaizers said that it was as much "vailed" to them as he said the Law was to the Jews. If so, this was not due to the nature of his Gospel but to the spiritual condition of those by whom it was not understood. "It is among those that are perishing that it is vailed." They were on the road to perdition, and as he said in ii. 15, 16 to such persons he and his Gospel were "an odour from death unto death."

4. Assigns the reason why to those that are perishing his Gospel was vailed. "In whom the God of this age blinded the thoughts of the unbelievers." The term "unbelievers" designates according to the occasion of their blindness, the same persons who are described according to the state and destiny of their souls, in the words: "those that are perishing." It was their unbelief which gave Satan his hold upon them. When salvation by faith was offered to the Jews, those who refused it thereby constituted themselves unbelievers. Through this act of unbelief they fell under Satan's power and he 'blinded' (not 'bathed blinded' as in the A. V.) their faculties of spiritual perception. Thus they were brought into a perishing state in which St. Paul's Gospel was vailed to them. It is said that spiritual blindness cannot be the
II. CORINTHIANS. IV.

5 For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake.

6 For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

result of unbelief. Why not? The successive steps in the opposite case of the believer are exactly analogous. He accepts reconciliation by faith, and so is a believer. As a believer there is communicated to him the Holy Spirit, whose inness is the opposite of Satan's, and who enlightens his powers of spiritual discernment. He is in a state of progressive salvation (Σωτηρισμός) and St. Paul's Gospel is to him not vailed, but an odour from life unto life. Satan is called the "God of this age" (aion), because the period preceding the Saviour's advent was regarded as one of extreme wickedness and peculiarly under Satan's dominion. The power of spiritually binding is a proper attribute of one whose element is darkness. Satan's object was to prevent from "shedding its brightness" the illumining of the Gospel of the glory of Christ." The words 'unto them' of the A. V. have no right in the text. The verb of the original (αὐθέντες) means 'to be bright,' 'to shine,' in Lev. xiii. 25-28, 30; xiv. 56. The context requires this sense here, for the main idea of ver. 6 is a light shining in the heart. The word rendered 'light' in the A. V. means "illumination" and denotes not the illuminating which the Gospel receives, but that which accompanies and flows from it, when faithfully preached. "The Gospel of the glory of Christ" is that which has the glory of Christ for its substance, and it is a specific designation of St. Paul's Gospel as contrasted with that of the Judaisers. Who is the image of God? I. It denotes the idea of the glory of Christ, and further shows that in the transformation of iii. 18 the image to which we are assimilated is no other than God's. The mention of God indicates the consistency of Satan, God's "adversary" in binding men to God's image; and that this should be Satan's work was well calculated to alarm the misguided Jewish Christians. If the vailing of St. Paul's Gospel was thus due to Satan, it was a proof that it was the true Gospel.

N.B. There is much in favour of the view that the "age" meant in the title "God of this age" began with the time when Satan brought sin into the world through the first Adam, thereby gaining a dominion over men and a power of binding them to divine truth. If so, "this age" means the period during which Satan's power remains what it is. Still it is better not to render αἰών by 'world,' which term more properly belongs to κόσμος, but how closely the two Greek words approach each other in idea appears from Satan's designation. "The prince of this world," John xii. 31, xiv. 30, xvi. 11, and their combination in Eph. ii. 2. Αἰών has, in any case, an interesting analogue in the Latin 'seculum' (age) as used by Tacitus, which is fairly reproduced by 'the world'-'-'corrumpere et corrumpi seculum vocatur.' For the restriction of αἰών to the period immediately antecedent to Christ's Advent see Grimm. Lex. Aion. 3.

5. We preach the Gospel of Christ's glory, 'for' the accusation that we preach ourselves is not true. Such a disclaimer he never would have made, had the charge not been actually brought against him. It probably meant: 1. That his Christ was not Christ as He was known upon earth, but one whom he had fashioned out of his own imagination. 2. He had put himself so prominently forward in his preaching as to become its chief subject. He set forth his own example for imitation, 1 Cor. vii. 7; iv. 16, xi. 1; 1 Thess. i. 6; ii. 4; iii. 9; Gal. iv. 12; Phil. iii. 17. He said that he had 'the mind of Christ.' Other points might have been similarly perverted. The misrepresentation is echoed in the Clementine Homilies, where St. Peter is made to state that Christ must be preceded by Antichrist and then identifying Simon Magus, the representative of St. Paul in these Homilies, with Antichrist, he adds that "being death," he has been desired "as if he were a Saviour." All this was not true, "but," on the contrary, (ἄλλα) he preached "Christ as Lord." The title "Roi" implies the "All power in heaven and upon earth" which was given to Christ." Matt. xxviii. 18; the Lordship over the dead and the living, to obtain which, St. Paul says, "Christ both died and rose and revived" (Rom. xiv. 9.) Thus to preach Him as Lord is to preach Him crucified, risen, exalted, glorified, wherein is brought out once more the antithesis between the Apostle and the Judaisers. The epitome of the Christian confession is "Christ is the Lord." (Rom. xiv. 19.)

The only mode in which St. Paul preached himself was as a "servant" of his readers, yet a servant only "for the sake of Jesus." Though he was free from all men, yet he made himself servant unto all that he might gain the more for Christ (1 Cor. ix. 19). It is not unlikely that the term 'servant' or, more accurately, 'slave' is in contrast with the arrogant and violent behaviour of the Judaising leaders (2 Cor. xi. 20).
II. CORINTHIANS. IV.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

8 We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair;

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed;

10 Always bearing about in the body the dying of Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our bodies.

6. States the reason why it is impossible for him to preach himself in any other capacity than that of a servant, or to preach any one else except Christ as Lord. "Because the God who said 'out of darkness light shall shine' (Act 4:23) is he who shone for the illumining of the knowledge ..." The God whose 'fict lux' caused light to shine out of darkness in the physical creation, shone out of Jewish darkness in a new spiritual creation in the Apostle's heart. The allusion to his conversion is obvious. Those scales which fell from his bodily eyes at Damascus were but types of those which fell from the eyes of his spirit. What was revealed to him was "the glory of God in the face of Christ," God's image, whom he saw in His glorified form at his conversion.

The express object which the shining of God in his heart was to serve was the "illumining" or the luminous diffusion amongst men of the knowledge of this glory. See Acts ix. 15 and compare Gal. i. 16. When God had so converted him and so disclosed him the object of his conversion, how could he do otherwise than preach Christ as Lord and the express image of the Father's perfection, or himself as anything else than the servant of the Church for Christ's sake? With this striking verse he quits for the present the glory of his ministry.

The practical hint to the Jews at Corinth is that they must be divested of the veil, as he was delivered from his darkness. They must turn from the glorious Christ, revealed in his preaching, as was revealed, in a different manner, to the Apostle himself.

7-18. From the bright side St. Paul turns to the dark. Is not the pretension to inward and unseen glory contradicted by the visible facts of his bodily existence? The glory of Moses dazzled the eye. Christ had His hour of manifested splendour in the mount of Transfiguration. Nothing of a like kind attached to St. Paul. He had only a mean body, afflicted by a peculiar infirmity and stigmatised with traces of suffering, which were regarded as the marks of God's disapprobation. That his physical condition was one of humiliation he does not deny, but only places this fact in its true light and answers the false and wicked misconstructions put upon it by his enemies.

The substance of his argument up to the end of the chapter is:—1. It is God's purpose that His instruments for spreading the Gospel should be weak, the power by which it triumphs his own, 7—9. ii. In the alternation of deadly sufferings and deliverances, the Apostle is a veritable illustration in his own body of the crucifixion-death and the resurrection-life of Christ, 10—11. Such a bond with his master is a high comfort and an answer to all hostile taunts. iii. His bodily afflictions tend to other men's salvation, 12—15. iv. They work out for him an eternal weight of glory, 16—18.
body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which live are always delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

12 So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

13 We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, "I believed, and therefore have I spoken;" we also believe, and therefore speak;

destroyed. The notion is the pursuit of a fugitive in war, who when overtaken and thrown down is usually slain. Here was the overthrow but, by God's grace, not the slaughter. The first pair of these contrasts refer to circumstantial difficulties: the second to the animosity of enemies.

10. This and the following verse put the coping stone upon the preceding antitheses and show besides in how intimate a relation to Christ the Apostle stands through these sufferings and survivings. "Bearing about" refers to the earthenware vessels and describes with great force the incessant activity and the world-wide travel of the Apostle's missionary life. "The putting to death" or rather "the doing to death," if such a phrase could be used, would be a more correct rendering than "the dying," as the original denotes the process of "making a corpse," but it has no exact English equivalent. The idea is exactly the same as that of the "sufferings of Christ" (i. 11), except that these sufferings are here restricted to the body (cf. Gal. vi. 17), and are represented in the culminating and deadly form in which they are the analogue of the Lord's crucifixion. There is a communion of bodily death between the Lord Jesus and His confessors, and the object of this is that there may also be a manifested communion of bodily life between Him and them. The putting to death never comes to actual death, because it is always arrested by the intervention of that very same power of life by which Christ rose from the dead. The continual deliverance of the Apostle from death is a standing and visible miracle of resurrection and a testimony to the world that the progress of the Gospel is God's work. The Judaizers had no such communion with Christ as this. They escaped persecution by preaching a legal Gospel (Gal. vi. 12).

11. Explanatory. "Always," which is emphatic and begins the verse in the original, shows more distinctly that the being put to death is not a thing undergone once for all, but a continually renewed process. He dies daily. "We the living," which is rather more pointed than "we which live" serves in part the same purpose, signifying that he is maintained in life only to be handed over to death again. It perhaps also expresses, by placing life in close juxtaposition with death, the terrible character of these trials in which living men are face to face with death. The original word for "are delivered" is the same which is used of Judas Iscariot's "handing over" Jesus to His Roman executioners. Christ applies it both to himself and his disciples (Luke xxi. 13). It means strictly 'being handed over.' It is a regular term for delivery over to justice and punishment. "For Jesus' sake" helps to identify the putting to death with that of Christ and is the connecting-link between putting to death and manifestation of the life of Jesus. The strong phrase "in our mortal flesh," in an emphatic position at the end of the verse and substituted for "in our body" of v. 10, indicates how deeply the resurrection-life of Christ penetrated in the Apostle's physical organism. It communicated a living power and a kind of imperishableness to the very substance of the body, to the flesh which is essentially mortal and corruptible. A very striking statement this is.

12. The result of the above considerations is: "the death takes effect in us, but the life in you." Though his physical vitality is maintained, nevertheless his deadly sufferings work and tell upon him in the gradual enfeebling and wearing away of his frame (v. 7). His ever-renewed life, on the other hand, has its effective operation among the Corinthians, who thereby have their spiritual riches increased out of the treasure which he carries in the battered earthenware vessel. He has all the worst; they all the best. They should therefore be the last persons in the world to despise him for his wasted frame.

13. The connection is, 'but though death works in us, we have that which prevents us from being silenced.' He illustrates his meaning by quoting from the LXX. Ps. cxvi. 10. very briefly, because the passage, being part of the little Hallel, was familiar to Jewish readers at any rate. Psalms cxvi and cxv. according to the LXX. constitute Psalm cxvi. according to the Hebrew version, and they certainly seem, in matter, to constitute only one composition. The writer had been in imminent peril of life, and in consequence of his belief in God's protection, he spake in prayer for deliverance. Having obtained it,
II. CORINTHIANS. IV.

14. Knowing that he which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you.

15. For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God.

16. For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

He proclaimed the mercy and righteousness of God, and declared that he should be well-pleasing to God in the land of the living. Similarly the Apostle, having faith, confirmed by experience, that he will be delivered from his deadly trials further to serve God in the land of the living, does not allow his sufferings to stop his speaking. The original word for "speaking" is used for preaching (Phil. i. 14; Col. iv. 3, 4; 1 Thess. ii. 3, 4, 16), and the "mercy and righteousness" of God which the Psalmist proclaimed, when invested with their Christian sense, are in a large measure the subject-matter of the Gospel. There is, however, no need to exclude his bold speaking (iii. 12) about his ministry.

"The spirit of faith" may denote that temper or frame of mind of which faith is the characteristic (cf. 1 Cor. iv. 12, 1 Pet. iii. 4, and Grimm Lex. on πνεύμα, p. 356), but it is usually understood to signify the Holy Spirit, according to which view, faith must be taken mainly in the sense of trust in God which the Spirit fosters. "The same" either means the same Spirit which actuated the writer of the Psalm, or there is a slight irregularity of expression for "the same spirit which is according to the passage of Scripture," i.e. the same Spirit of faith which found utterance in the passage of Scripture:—"I believed; wherefore I spake."

14. Whether the knowledge here is the faith of the last verse in its complete form of assurance or the basis of the trust implied in faith, it is the ground of his continued persevering in preaching. What the Apostle knows is that "God . . . . will raise us also with (σὺν) Jesus and present us with you." It is impossible that the reference can be to the resurrection of the body at the Parousia, for St. Paul was persuaded, when he wrote the First Epistle that he should live until the Lord's coming, and there is no indication in the Second that his view had undergone any change, nor was this possible in so short an interval. The idea is still that of preserving him alive by raising his moribund body from sufferings which would otherwise destroy it. This takes place "with Jesus," because it is in virtue of his communion of life with the Lord, i.e. by the very same power of God, which raised Christ from the dead, that the deliverance is effected. The verb "present" occurs often in St. Paul. He looks forward with pride (ii. 14) to his function of presenting the Church to the Saviour at His advent as a pure bride, 2 Cor. xi. 2; Eph. v. 6; Col. i. 22. In the verse before us God will present to Christ the Apostle, as the parapet, or bridegroom's man, together with the bride. His life will be prolonged for that great event. In Eph. v. 27, Christ is said to present the Church to Himself, and in Col. i. 22, according to one view, the members of the Church present themselves to Him. These variations have their analogies in other cases.

15. He has said "with you," for all his dying and reviving is for their sake. As God's providential dealings with the ministers of the Gospel generally were for the salvation of mankind, so His protection of St. Paul in particular was for the sake of those who were the special objects of his ministerial care. The statement resembles that of i. 6, and the object which God has in view is the same with that described in the latter part of i. 11. "In order that the grace having abounded may, through the greater number of those who will benefit by it, make thanksgiving to supersound." "The grace" is the continual deliverance from death, as is the gift" in i. 13. Its "having abounded" consists in its being ample and always vouchsafed. The original means:—'having come to greater increase.' The longer he is spared, the greater will be the number of persons won to Christ or confirmed in Christ, and the greater the company of thanksgivers. The rendering of thanks and glory to God for the inestimable benefits received through Christ implies the restoration of the true relation between God and man and is, according to the Apostle's view, the end and aim of everything in this world.

16. With the attainment of this great object before him, he does not lose courage, but, on the contrary, amidst the wear and tear of suffering, he receives a continual accession of strength. He admits, as in v. 12, that his natural man undergoes, in spite of its revival through Christ's life, a gradual waste. But to compensate for this a counter-process is going on which he calls "a day-by-day renewal of the inner man." The phrase "outward man" occurs only here. The "inward man" is spoken of in Rom. vii. 23.
II. CORINTHIANS. IV.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;
18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

Eph. iii. 16. In both passages it denotes not the whole of man's immaterial nature, but its highest part, through which he is receptive of divine influences, of illumination, of becoming a new creature, and of which the representative faculty in the natural man is vice or reason. The idea of 'renewal' occurs in three other places in St. Paul, and in two out of the three is expressly applied to this faculty of man's nature. Rom. xii. 2; 2 Eph. iv. 23; Col. iii. 10. The meaning in the verse before us is not that he is receiving new supplies of resolution, courage, energy, enabling him to continue his work with intensified vigour, but that the spiritual man according to Col. iii. 10, is "renewed. . . . . . . ." according to the image of Him that created him." In other words the transfiguration of iii. 18 is daily advancing. His argument is on its way to the final stage of that transfiguration, which is the glorification of the body, when the earthen vessel shall have fallen to pieces.

17. The explanation of these two opposite processes going on simultaneously is that the same affliction which works the physical waste works also the spiritual renewal. It is almost impossible to reproduce the force of the original, in which the language labours under the load of glory. "The momentary lightness of our affliction worketh for us in a surpassing manner to a surpassing result an eternal weight of glory." The spirit of faith which realises the substance of things not seen inverts the usual relation of ideas. Affliction, generally regarded as a load, has here the quality of lightness. Glory, generally regarded as an etherial splendour, is a weight. The affliction is not light in itself, but only when put in the balance with the weight, nor momentary in itself, but only when set against eternity. As the word for "worketh" also means 'earns,' Roman Catholic expositors use the passage to support their doctrine of a merit of condignity. The idea in the Apostle's mind is that the sufferings of Christ borne by his ministers and followers lead them to glory, even as they led Christ Himself to glory, because they are always accompanied by rich supplies of the Spirit and life. Rom. vii. 17, 18, is the parallel to this passage:—"If we suffer with Him, that we also may be glorified with Him." Compare Heb. ii. 9, 10. Compensation for affliction does not seem to be any part of the meaning, and it is even doubtful whether the moral working of tribulation described in Rom. vii. 3, 4, 5, is comprised. He is speaking rather of the immediate communication of Christ's spirit and life to those who bear His sufferings, which in the forthcoming Kingdom will reveal itself in glory. In the expression "weight of glory" one is tempted to think that he is anticipating the figure of raiment used in the next chapter for the glorified body, and that the conception is that of a royal robe heavy with costly embroidery of gold and silver. The phrase was probably suggested by an etymological connection between the Hebrew terms for 'weight' and 'glory.'

18. It is scarcely in harmony with the loftiness of the context to suppose that the Apostle here inserts a precautionary condition, under which alone affliction works glory. Nor does the subjective negative of the original at all necessitate this view. He describes the mental attitude, the direction of the gaze of himself and others, which accompanies and in part accounts for the maintenance of courage (v. 16), the renewal of the inward man, and the working out of glory by affliction. They do not contemplate as the end and goal of their career the things which are seen, but the things which are not seen. The things which are seen are this visible world with its circumstances and experiences, whether they bring with them earthly good, or such evil as extreme bodily suffering. The things which are not seen are the future Kingdom with all its glorious circumstances and mode of existence, not excluding the body of glory itself. The reason for fixing the view upon the things not seen and averting it from the seen, is that the gaze at the eternal qualifies, the gaze at the temporary disqualifies, men for glory.
II. CORINTHIANS. V.

CHAPTER V.

1 That in his assured hope of immortal glory, 9 and in expectation of it, and of the general judgment, he laboureth to keep a good conscience, 10 that he may herein boast of himself, 11 but as one that, having received life from Christ, endeavoureth to live as a new creature to Christ only, 18 and by his ministry of reconciliation to reconcile others also in Christ to God.

For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2 For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven:

In virtue of its immediate divine origin it will possess the attributes ascribed to it in 1 Cor. xv. which may be summed up in one phrase: — 'fit to be the organ of spirit' (σώμα πνευματικόν), whereas the natural body is only 'fit to be the organ of soul' (σώμα ψυχικόν). "Not made with hands" seems to have an antithetical reference not to the natural body itself, but only to the figure of the tent which represents it. The phrase however appears to have passed away from its literal signification into a more general one. The author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, explains it (Heb. ix. ii.), as meaning 'not of this creation or world,' i.e. not belonging to this visible and perishable, but to the heavenly and imperishable world. Elsewhere, as in Col. ii. 11 (cf. Eph. ii. 11) it is equivalent to spiritual. In either or both of these senses it is very applicable to the future body. A comparison of Mark xiv. 58 with John ii. 19-21 might almost induce one to think that it came to be used of the Lord's resurrection body, regarded figuratively as a Temple.

2. Corroborates that which he knows about the future body by his sensations in the present body. "For in fact in this (tent) we groan, longing to put on over it our habitation, which is from heaven." He longs to put on the new body by change according to 1 Cor. xv. 51. He is already clothed with the corruptible body and, if he should assume the incorruptible before he has been divested of the corruptible, the process will be a superinvestiture or putting on of an over-garment. If his yearning thus to put on the more excellent body is so strong that he cannot prevent it from finding utterance in groans, it is a ground for the conviction that there is such a body and a confirmation of his knowledge, because all natural desires, and especially desires which are expressly wrought in man by God (v. 5) must have a real corresponding outward object. A similar argument is found in Rom. viii. 18-24. The term rendered "habitation" means properly the "place-of-a dweller," and denotes an abode which belongs more peculiarly to the occupant than the tent-house does. Some such expression as 'home-house' might give its
If so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked.

For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not of his natural body by death but still alive, his assumption of the new body will be a superinvestment, a process like that of putting on an upper garment. See additional note at the end of the chapter.

After the parenthesis he naturally reverts to the contents of the preceding verse and, recommencing almost with the same words, exhibits a harm growing from a somewhat different point of view. It is prompted not only by a longing for the more excellent body, but also by a sense of oppression in "the tent-dwelling," which term itself shows wherein the burdensomeness of the present body consists. It is too slight a shelter against sufferings, too fragile an instrument for the work of his ministry. On account of this disparity between it and what it had to bear and to do, it became a kind of burden which he had to drag about with him. Some think that he had in his mind his peculiar bodily affliction. Under such circumstances, it might be expected that he would long to be released by death. But not so, for he adds "whereupon" or "on which ground" (στὸν ἀρχήν) "we do not wish for disvestment, but for superinvestment." To suppose that he here expresses a natural human shrinking from death would scarcely be in harmony with the context and would be unworthy of the Apostle. To wish that the treasure should be stripped of its earthen vessel would run counter to God's object and would shew a faint-hearted weariness of his Apostolic work, which is exactly what he disclaims. For these reasons he does not wish to put off the body, but only that the advent may come quickly and he may be changed. The object for which he desires this is "in order that the mortal may be swallowed up by life." "The mortal" may either mean 'mortality,' or 'the mortal body,' or 'the mortal element of the body.' On the whole the last rendering is the best, because there would seem to be some spiritualised centre of the body which is imperishable. There is apparently a reference in the figure to the contrast between the two mighty antagonists life and death as described in iv. 10, 11, and in this case perhaps the rendering ought to be 'by the life.' He desires change in order that the alternations of this terrible and oppressive conflict (βασάνωμα) may come to an end, when the life will be completely triumphant and swallow up that in the body upon which alone its adversary can take effect. The language is taken from Isaiah xxv. 8, where it is said of God that he "will swallow up death in victory." The original word means...
for that we would be unclothed, but
clothed upon, that mortality might
be swallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us
for the selfsame thing is God, who
also hath given unto us the earnest
of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are always con-
fident, knowing that, whilst we are
at home in the body, we are absent
from the Lord:

7 (For we walk by faith, not by
sight:)

8 We are confident, I say, and
willing rather to be absent from
the body, and to be present with the
Lord.

9 Wherefore we 'labour, that,1 Or, en-
devour.

‘drink up,’ which, when we attempt to apply
the figure to the change, suggests the cognate
term ‘absorption.’

5. The sensations upon which his reasoning
is based might be said to be purely fanciful or even be set down to what was
called his madness. So he now guarantees them
as a solid foundation for his anticipations.

"But he who wrought us to this very
(state) is God." What God wrought him to
was the inward groaning for superinvention.
No doubt, God wrought the inward spiritual
fitness for it as well, but that is not, as some
have thought, the point here meant. It was
in fact part of God’s design in committing
the treasure to earthen vessels that the
inadequacy of the vessels to their contents
and their service should generate a strong
desire for a better vehicle and organ. If
God be the author of this great longing of the
heart, there must be an objective reality corre-
sponding to it, that is, there must be a body
of glory with which believers who survive to the
Advent will be over-clothed. “Who gave
us the earnest of the spirit” — shews not only
how God wrought him to the longing but also how infallible a guarantee he has of its
being one day satisfied.

6, 7, 8. The event of either of the two pos-
sibilities, death (v. 1) or change, (v. 3, 4) must
be a happy one for him. It follows that he is
of good courage “at all times,” not only
when, in the midst of suffering he con-
templates the bright and as he was persuaded
the probable issue of change, but also at
times when death seemed imminent. Know-
ing ‘that while he is at home in the body, he
is absent from the Lord,’ and that the moment
he quits it he will be at home with the Lord,
‘he thinks it good rather,’ that is, holds
it preferable to migrate from the body
and in a disembodied state to pass to the
immediate presence of his divine master.
He would fain remain at his post to the end
but the better thing for him would be to
depart. There is no inconsistency with
anything just said. A man may easily long
for one thing when he knows that another
may be more for his own advantage. It is
very interesting to compare this passage with
Phil. ii. 21-24, written at a later period and
under different circumstances; still there is no
contradiction but only a very natural modi-
fication of his feelings. What has obscured
the sense of the verse before us is the idea
that the original for “we think good rather”
expresses a wish or something like it, as in the
A.V. we are willing rather,” which is not
correct.

The grammatical structure of 6, 7, 8, is a
little irregular. He had at first intended to
say:—‘Being courageous and knowing . . . .
we think it good rather.’ But the parenthesis
in v. 7, inserted as an explanation of the
thing which he knew induced him to revert
to the courage again in a slightly altered
form. So his sentence runs thus:—‘Being
courageous and knowing . . . . for we walk
through faith and not through visible
form, we are courageous I say (6e), and think
it good rather to emigrate from the body
and to get home (aorists) to the Lord.’
Residence in the body is exile from the Lord
and absence from the true home, for while the
believer is in the body, the region, element or
atmosphere through which he walks is one
in which the heavenly things gazed upon are
not seen in their actual substance, but only
realised, as far as that is possible, by the
spiritual discernment of faith (Heb. xi. 1).
When he migrates to the Lord, he enjoys
the sight of the things themselves. The
Apostle leaves no doubt as to his own condi-
tion between death and the advent, should he
be destined to die. He will pass into the
immediate presence of Christ. We are fully
justified in concluding that the disembodied
spirits of all believers are translated after
death into the glorified Saviour’s presence.
That St. Paul thought such a state of exis-
tence possible is clear from what he says in
xii. 2. That he was “rapt as far as the third
heaven,” but “whether in the body or out of
the body” he knew not.

9. These high anticipations and the in-
ward warranty of their fulfilment do not lift
him above the ordinary motives to duty.
Whether he is to be changed or to die,
he will go to the presence of the Lord (v. 8, and
1 Thess. iv. 17), upon his right relation to
whether present or absent, we may
be accepted of him.
10 For we must all appear before
the judgment seat of Christ; that
every one may receive the things
done in his body, according to that
he hath done, whether it be good or
bad.

II. CORINTHIANS. V.

Knowing therefore the terror
of the Lord, we persuade men; but
we are made manifest unto God;
and I trust also are made manifest in
your consciences.

12 For we commend not ourselves
again unto you, but give you occasion
to glory on our behalf, that ye may

whom his future bliss depends. For this
reason, besides thinking it good for him to go
home to the Lord, he also (eal) entertains a
desire, like the ardent aspiration after high
honours and distinctions, to be the object of
Christ's good pleasure, whether he remains
in the body or migrates from it. "Wherefore
we are also ambitious, whether being
at home or from home, to be well-pleas-
ing to him." This is the strongest imagin-
able inducement to a courageous and faithful
disharge of his ministry. "Haec una legiti-
tima ambitio." Notwithstanding the differ-
ences of expositors about this passage, it seems
sufficiently clear. The "ambition" is felt
now, and the object of it, Christ's approval,
is to be enjoyed in either of two states, viz.
continuance in the body or being at home
with the Lord.

10. A good reason for his ambition is that,
for all believers, himself included, either in
the event of change or of death, the question
whether they are well-pleasing to Christ or
not, will come to open decision before His
judgment-seat: - "We must all be made
manifest." The object of this public dis-
closure of character and conduct is - "that
each may reap the things done during his
bodily life-time, according to what he did
(during that time) whether (it was) good
or evil." Men's actions are not spoken of
as a number of items, but their conduct is
taken as a whole, "whether good or evil."
The question which will determine the
future position of believers will be how far,
after they have been reconciled through faith,
the spirit of holiness has or has not been the
regulating and fruitful principle of their lives.
The expression implies that our probation
terminates with our earthly existence. It is
very probable that this allusion to the judge-
ment is a warning to his unscrupulous enemies
(cf. xi. 15), "whose end shall be according to
their works."

11. His knowledge that Christ is to be
feared as the future righteous judge prevents
him from flagging in his work and from being
indifferent to the good opinion of men about
him, so far as this is essential to his ministerial
success. This fear regulates all that he does
and says to persuade men of the truth of the
Gospel as preached by him, of his full
authority to preach it, of his integrity and
general blamelessness, so that in all his minis-
terial pleading with men for this end there is
nothing which is unworthy of one ambitious
to please Christ. The persuasion of men
might indeed mean his efforts to convince
them of the truth of the Gospel generally, to
produce in them that Christian faith (pietatis)
which is the fruit of his persuading (weibw).
But his conduct in his office is the under-
lying topic of the whole context (iv. 16;
v. 6, 8, 9), as it is of the greater part of the
Epistle. To this the next expression must
refer: "but to God we are manifested." It is
a clause antithetical to "we persuade
men," as is quite clear from the contrast
between "men" and "God." So the per-
suasion and the manifestation refer to the
same matters. He must unhappily always be
trying to accomplish with regard to men
what is already accomplished with regard to
God, by whom he is clearly seen as he truly is.
"But" (not 'and' A.V.) there is also a power
of discernment in the hearts of his readers, not
easily distorted or corrupted, conscience; and
he hopes, more than a hope he does not venture
to express, that, to this faculty in them also
(ea), as well as to God, however much
enemies may have tried to blind it, he is
apparent in his true character.

12. Since his last disclaimer of self-com-
mandation in iii. 1 he has furnished abundant
materials which might serve his enemies for
a reiteration of the charge; and the contents
of the very last verse might easily be so
misconstrued. But the immediate connection
is probably this. He has just appealed to
God and the consciences of his readers, and
these are precisely the tribunals to which a self-
commerder does not appeal. So the thought
"we are not commending ourselves again"
suggested itself very naturally. The 'for'
of the A. V. is not countenanced by the best
MSS. He is not commending himself, 'but'
on the contrary, he says, 'we speak giving
you a means of boast on our behalf, that
you may have it (to use) against those
who boast in person not in heart.' The word 'occasion' of the A. V., although
not incorrect, is rather weak. The original
have somewhat to answer them which glory in appearance, and not in heart.

13 For whether we be beside our-selves, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause.

14 For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge,
II. CORINTHIANS. V. [v. 15—17.]

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away, behold, all things are become new.
II. CORINTHIANS. V.

423

things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation;

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then we are ambassadors which he had himself received. As in the last verse the great point was that salvation consists in a man being brought into a state entirely new, so in this verse it is that the foundation of that new state is entirely of God's laying, and the Apostle was only the instrument which God employed for actually laying this foundation in the hearts of men. The Judaizers persisted in retaining the old which had passed away, and they preached a salvation which was not entirely of God's grace but partly by the observances and works of the Law.

19. Adds, in a dogmatic form, proof, explanation, and expansion of the statement contained in the last verse. "Seeing that (or as is the case because) (it is) God (who) was in Christ, reconciling a world to himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them (the inhabitants of the world) and having vested in us the word of reconciliation." What gave Christ's conciliatory work its entire validity was that God not only originated it (v. 18), but was Himself active in it. It embraced a whole fallen world, not the Jews alone. Two explanatory participial clauses follow, one shewing the manner of God's work in Christ, the other reiterating more expressly than in v. 18, the means appointed by God for the application of the work to the world. "The way in which God was reconciling all men to himself in Christ, when He died, is by not imputing their trespasses unto them, Christ's death being the atonement for these trespasses. The phrase "vested in us" is probably borrowed from Ps. civ. 27 (LXX.)—'He vested them (Moses and Aaron) the words of his signs and wonders.' It seems intended to express the personal commission given by God to the Apostle. "The word" of reconciliation is the announcement of reconciliation and of all that man is concerned to know about it, together with the condition to accept it. The polemical drift is that St. Paul is independent of all human authority and control both with regard to his commission and his preaching (Gal. ii. 6), for he had both directly from God.

20. It follows from the first part of the preceding verse ("reconciling in Christ") that it was "on Christ's behalf" that he was acting, i.e. in order that Christ might not fail to attain the object of his work; and
for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

from the last part ("vested in us the word of reconciliation") that his mission was that of an ambassador, and again from the first part ("God reconciling") that in his ambassadorial capacity he represented God. The passive form "become reconciled" is undoubtedly used to indicate that men are more acted upon than agents. God is the author and giver of the reconciliation, men are the recipients.

21. Shews how strong an inducement to comply with his prayer he is empowered to hold out in his preaching, on account of the manner in which God's love and mercy established reconciliation. The important statement is more emphatic without 'for,' which has no right in the text. "Him who came to no acquaintance with sin, on our behalf He made (to be) sin, in order that we should become the righteousness of God in Him." "Came to no acquaintance with sin" can only refer to Christ's life in the flesh from his conception by the Virgin Mary until God made Him to be sin. The subjective negative of the original for "no acquaintance" indicates that Christ's sinlessness was the qualification which fitted Him in God's eyes to be the agent of reconciliation. Him, the sinless, God identified with sin—all sin that ever has been or will be committed by man, gathered up, as it were, into one total, God imposed upon Him the guilt of all this, regarded and treated Him as guilty of it all. Christ took it on Himself in a most real sense, and felt all the horror of it. This He did "on our behalf," for the object was "that we should become the righteousness of God in Him," Christ. That is, that God might regard and treat us as though we were righteous, having a righteousness, not of our own, nor of the works of the law, but yet a most real righteousness of which God is the author and giver. The idea involved in the words "in Him" is that of representation, as in v. 14, "if one for all died, therefore all died." The abstract terms "sin" and "righteousness" signify that there is no sin whatsoever of which Christ did not bear the guilt, nor any element of righteousness which believers do not obtain from God in Christ. "Made (to be) sin" refers to a specific act on God's part, and there are only two passages in the Lord's life to which this act of making Him sin can be referred. One is His Agony in Gethsemane and the other His death. The context of this chapter seems to point to the latter (v. 15), but it is not an unfounded opinion that our Lord's Passion, properly so called, which extended from Gethsemane to Calvary, consisted of distinct stages, not only with regard to His sufferings, which is obvious, but with regard to the divine work which His sufferings were accomplishing. But the work was completed only by His death.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on ver. 3.

3. The only difficulty in interpretation given is that the words rendered "when we do put on" should according to more ordinary usage be rendered 'when we have put on,' that is, should denote an act antecedent to the finding and not simultaneous with it, the tense being an aorist and not a present. But it is certain that an aorist participle very frequently expresses an act not prior to, but contemporary with, that of the finite verb which accompanies it. Moreover, a perfect participle (ἐνδούμενος) could not have been used, because it would signify a completed act and a consequent state existing before the finding, which would yield no sense. Neither could an imperfect participle (ἐνδούμενος) have been employed, because it would express an act in course of performance and not complete, whereas the change will take place in a moment, 'in the twinkling of an eye,' and to such a case the aorist, the tense of momentary occurrence, is precisely suitable. The above very simple interpretation of this vexed verse is that of Professor Evans, who suggested and defended it in the Journ. of Classical and Sacred Philology (No. ix. 1858). If ἐνδούμενος is to be read instead of εἰ γε, it points more precisely the supposition under which the putting on of the new body will be a super-investiture.
CHAPTER VI.

1 That he hath approved himself a faithful minister of Christ, both by his exhortations, 3 and by integrity of life, 4 and by patient enduring all kinds of affliction and disgrace for the gospel. 10 Of which he speaketh the more boldly amongst them, because his heart is open to them, 13 and he expecteth the like affection from them again, 14 exhorting to flee the society and pollutions of idolaters, as being themselves temples of the living God.

WE then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.

The section consists of:

i. A brief introductory summary of his exhortation with the ground upon which it is based, vi. 1, 2.

ii. A description of his ministerial conduct and experience, the object of which is to show that he is a fit person to give his converts practical warnings and that he can be actuated by no other motive than love, vi. 3-10.

iii. The details of the warning, vi. 11—vii. 1.

1. As God's ambassador his exhortation is "become reconciled" (v. 20), "but" on another side of his ministry, which has to do with the effective appropriation of God's offer of grace. He is a co-operator with God, and in this capacity he has also an exhortation to give. "But co-operating we also exhort that ye receive not the grace of God in vain."

There is an emphasis on the "ye" from its position at the end of the clause in the original. It seems as if St. Paul had in his mind some others who had received the grace of God in vain, and these may have been either the Israelites referred to in the prophecy quoted in the next verse or the Judaisers.

2. It was this party which had scandalised the Jewish believers and brought upon St. Paul's teaching and ministry the reproach that it allowed gross immorality. Although the persons so deeply affected by his last letter (vii. 10, 11) seem to have been of this class, and there was thus a decided promise of improvement, yet it was absolutely necessary to remind them that their practices were a stain upon the Gospel and imperilled their salvation, to show that the peculiar calumny which they had occasioned was unfounded, and to wrest from the Judaisers all pretext for saying that they were the sole guardians of pure morals, and so claiming the right of discipline over the heathen converts.
II. CORINTHIANS. VI.

2 (For he saith, "I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.")

3 Giving no offence in anything, that the ministry be not blamed:

4 But in all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in toil and fasting.

from the context (v. 18–21). Compare 1 Cor. iii. 9. The Apostle certainly was, as a matter of fact, a fellow-worker also with his converts, but that is not the point here.

2. A statement of God Himself is adduced in support of the exhortation. God declares that He offers His grace to the heathen nations, amongst whom were the Corinthians, with a definite opportunity of accepting it. If the opportunity is allowed to slip, it will be lost. In the passage cited, Isaiah xlv. 8, the Messiah, "the servant of God," complains of Israel, "I have laboured in vain (exvni, LXX); I have spent my strength for nought and in vain," which expressions suggested the Apostle's "in vain" here. The Lord answered: "Though Israel be not gathered . . . I will give thee for a light to the Gentiles . . . thus saith the Lord," still addressing the Messiah, His servant, "in an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I succoured thee." This hearing and this succour, as the context of the prophecy implies, were to be realised in the bringing over of the Gentiles to Christ's cause. The grace of God therefore offered to the Corinthians was a part of the hearing and thesuccour rendered to the Messiah. This shews in what sense St. Paul applies to the heathen believers what was originally addressed to the Saviour. It is in the very nature of "a time" and "a day" that they are fugitive and pass away. It is now or never.

We might at this point have expected to hear at once how the heathen converts were in danger of losing their opportunity, and to have the substance of the exhortation which they needed. Instead of this, the Apostle breaks off and states in detail in what ways he had as a minister of God endeavoured to commend himself. He is going to touch upon the most delicate point between himself and the community, where the slightest friction might set up a new irritation. He therefore proceeds warily and paves a way through their affections for his admonition. He seems to feel sure, after the effect of his last letter, (ch. vii.) that what he here says of himself will not be doubted, and he probably wished it to secure a warmer reception for the reconciliation between him and them which he is going to announce in vii. 16.

3. The line of conduct which he pursues as suitable to one who has exhortations to deliver in co-operating with God. The construction takes up that of co-operating in ver. 1. The subjective Greek negatives imply that he regards the conduct mentioned as essential for the efficacy of admonitions and reproofs. The original does not mean that he succeeds in giving no offence, but only that he tries to give none. The grarest anxiety of a minister of the Gospel must always be the apprehension that, through his fault and the blame thereby incurred, the cause of God, whom he represents, and the work of Christ should be hindered.

4. "But," on the contrary, as a minister of God, he strove to commend himself in everything, which does not mean that he endeavoured to be highly thought of in his sacred office, but that his holding this office was the reason why he tried to commend himself and was one of the regulating principles of his ministerial work. Many things which he had done or left undone with regard to the Corinthians would, if measured by this standard, have brought him approval instead of giving offence. The first particular of his self-commendation is much steadfast endurance. The original, inadequately rendered by 'patience' (A.V.), denotes a masculine constancy in holding out under trials. This grace is exhibited in the things which he had to bear and of these there are three classes, each containing three members (vv. 4, 5).

i. Difficulties which hindered his activity. 1. Afflicting straits. 2. Necessities. 3. Difficulties which so pen him in that he is powerless. In the first of these he is like a man crushed by a multitude, unable to move according to his will. Compare Mark iii. 9 and Matt. vii. 14, "the straitened way." By the second are meant situations in which he is opposed by a force which no effort of his can overcome. The original term is used by the Greek poets for irresistible fate, and is the "dira necessitas" of the Romans, Hor. Od. i. xxxv. It is derived from a word which denotes the compression of strangulation. The third are positions in which he is jammed into a corner and cannot move to right or left. Ample illustrations suggest themselves in the known events of his life.
tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings;
6 By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,
7 By the word of truth, by the cumbent upon all believers. So baseless was the calumny that his doctrine produced immorality and that he winked at it. 2. The two last graces, which appertained mainly to his conduct in God’s sight, are followed by two exhibited in his conduct to men, long-suffering and kindness. Both are forms of that charity (1 Cor. xiii. 4) which as he urges so strongly (1 Cor. viii. 1) should attend upon knowledge. Another connecting link probably is that the pure are often intolerant of the impure and those who have not abused knowledge of those that have. Not so St. Paul. He had been accused both of hastiness and harshness in the case of the great transgressor, yet all the facts show that he had endured long and been very gentle with regard to the sin of which that person’s conduct had only been one marked example, as well as with regard to the person himself (1 Cor. v. 5; 2 Cor. ii. 6, 7, 10, 11; vii. 2, 3. See 1 Cor. iv. 21; 2 Cor. i. 23; ii. 5–11). 3. That the two next graces form a pair is more apparent in the original than in the A. V., and is shewn by each having an epithet, “holy” and “unfeigned.” The relation between the spirit and love is stated in Gal. v. 22: “The fruit of the spirit is love.” The Apostle had commended himself by both in his general ministry; but the specific point is that, being guided by the Holy Spirit, he must condemn the opposite of holiness, heathen immorality, yet he does it with genuine and not with simulated love. The term “unfeigned” plainly points to the charge that in his discipline he forgot the charity he professed so often. It was probably said that his panegyric of the cardinal grace (1 Cor. xiii.) was itself but the tinkling of a cymbal and mere hypocrisy. 4. From the spirit and love in the heart the advance to word and deed is natural. “The word of truth” includes both his preaching and his communications in ordinary intercourse, for he had been accused of falsehood with regard to both. The “power of God” (iv. 7) comprises the whole of his ministerial activity but the context must determine what manifestation of this power is particularly meant and it points to his disciplinary courage and firmness. It might have seemed ungracious to allude to this here, had he not been charged with weakness on one side and severity on the other. He claimed no power of his own, for it was God’s, but as he had exercised it decisively in one case (1 Cor. v. 4), he might use it so again, if his warnings were neglected. At
II. CORINTHIANS. VI.

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and yet true;
9 As unknown, and yet well known; as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed;
10 As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.
11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth the same time he could not exercise God's power to wrong, to destroy or to serve grasping purposes (vii. 2), as his adversaries employed their power. Rom. i. 16 furnishes no ground for restricting the expression to his power in preaching. The context requires a more special reference. 5. The power of God suggests the weapons by which it is exerted. They are the weapons of righteousness, nor could God's power be put forth by any other. The general idea is best explained by 2 Cor. x. 3, 4. “Powerful for God,” there, corresponds with “power of God” here, and “carnal weapons,” there, are the opposite of “weapons of righteousness” here. A comparison of the passages indicates that he means weapons of integrity which smite with perfect impartiality, undirected and unhindered by fear or favour or any regard for self. “The right-hand and left-hand weapons” may either signify a perfect accoutrement, or defensive weapons like the shield on the left, and offensive like the sword on the right. In favour of the first notion is the fact that the expression is not, “the right-hand and the left-hand weapons” which would give an express specification to each, but “the right-hand and left-hand weapons” which describes them more collectively. According to the second, the sense is that he is no more afraid, as was falsely said, to assail with his right hand pagan corruption than he was to pull down Judaizing strongholds (2 Cor. x. 4), and that he was equally ready to parry with his left by all righteous means in his power every blow aimed at him in his office or person. This interpretation yields the complete sense. In any case the weapons of righteousness are a contrast to the unrighteous and carnal warfare of his enemies.

8, 9, 10. A series of contrasted situations through which he is continually passing and most, if not all of which he had just experienced in the recent crisis of the Corinthian church. They run in nine combinations, or rather in four pairs of combinations; in the fourth of which the last combination is twofold.

1. “Through glory and dishonour, through evil report and good report.” Glory and dishonour may befall a man either in his presence or his absence, either in word or deed, either together or in succession. For an example of glory see Gal. iv. 14, and for a summary of dishonour, 1 Cor. iv. 11-13. In Corinth St. Paul had first honour, then dishonour, and at the time of writing a mixture of both. Evil report and good report are generally awarded in a man's absence, and are glory and dishonour expressed in words. The A. V. is not quite correct in rendering “by honour;” for the preposition of the original does not mean that the honour and the dishonour, as such, are the means by which he commends himself. To make out this sense it would be necessary to import the idea that the honour comes from the friends and the dishonour from the foes of the Gospel. He is only describing phases of his life, in passing through which he commends himself. 2. The second pair of combinations illustrates the evil report and good report respectively: “as misleaders and true; as failing to find recognition and finding true recognition.” The misreading expresses the opinion which the Judaizers held of his preaching, and a very forcible illustration of it is found in the Clementine Homilies xviii. 19. The original term is a contumelious one, denoting a compound of the vagrant and the cheat. As he had been thought dishonest in his ordinary statements, there is no need to exclude an allusion to this and “true” repels both this imputation and the other against his preaching. “Failing to find recognition and finding true recognition” is rather a paraphrase than a translation of the original, but gives the right drift, which is that, whether from incapacity, indifference, or hostility of others, he ever and anon fails to be known, and, again, finds himself ever and anon well known in his real character. This happened to him continually, but he is probably thinking of his late experience in Corinth. At first he was well known there; then set in a current of misrepresentation, now the tide had again turned. His right aspect, clouded for a season, was once more coming into light. Neither 'unknown' nor 'ignorant' gives the force of the original, which also precludes the idea that he is speaking of his obscure antecedents and, as a matter of fact, he was no obscure personage. 3. That the next two combinations go together is shown by the mention of death in both. The connection with the
is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels.

preceding perhaps is that the dying and the chastisement result from failing to be known which caused rejection and persecution. The dying and living are explained by iv. 10. It was a continual dying replaced continually by a sudden ("behold") reviving, which is not a mere respite or prolongation of a miserable existence, but a repeated resuscitation by Christ's life, restoring him to activity, hope, and joy, as if he had never been on the verge of death. He is alluding in part to what he said in i. 8, 9, 10. "Receiving chastisement and not dying, the death" is an application of Ps. cxviii. 18, "The Lord hath chastened me, but not given me unto death." He does not, in the least, exempt himself from the general law of being schooled by sufferings (μαθᾶς μαθῶς, Aesch. Agam. 177). He grants that his sufferings are God's discipline, and expressly states this with regard to one of the severest of them, his "stake for the flesh" (2 Cor. xii. 7), only he must add the fact that God never allows them to advance to the extremity of death. Not only does he suffer, but he feels his sufferings: "as grieving yet always rejoicing, as poor yet making many rich." External sufferings never caused him grief (Rom. v. 3, ff.), but he sorrowed when his work did not prosper, when he saw his converts relapsing into sin, giving ear to seducing teachers, listening to calumnies against himself, disobeying his authority, slighting his affection. He readers would well understand all this (i. 4—10; ii. 4). Yet God continually removes these causes of his grief and substitutes for it joy. Exactly so had matters gone in Corinth (vii. 9), but similar things had no doubt occurred in other cases, and the words admit of a more general application. The transition from grief to poverty, from the pain of the heart to its wants, is natural. The original term does not denote a person in circumstances of poverty merely, and the word which does express that idea (πλούτος) occurs but once in the New Testament (2 Cor. ix. 9), and that in a citation from the Old. The term before us designates one who feels his poverty. It may certainly refer to the Apostle's outward circumstances (1 Cor. iv. 11; Phil. iv. 13), but must mean also in a higher sense that he is, of himself, nothing, and is conscious of his nothingness (2 Cor. vii. 9). Yet he makes many rich by dispensing to them out of his earthen vessel the true and incorruptible riches. Earthly poverty comes out more clearly in the next antithesis: "as having nothing yet keeping or holding fast or retaining all things." He had surrendered all worldly goods and interests for the gospel, yet even here not worldly things alone are meant, for he had dedicated his body and all the great natural powers of his soul (ψυχῆς) to the same cause. Still he was sensible that in this he had lost nothing, but had secured the permanent possession of all things. He experienced the fulfillment of the Saviour's promise given in Mark x. 28—30, and the greater promise: "whosoever will lose his life (soul) for my sake shall find it" (Matt. xvi. 25).

11. He adds the last touches to the preface of his warning in vv. 11, 12, 13, still appealing to their affections. The current of his joy at the changed situation in Corinth had swept away all the barriers to free speech. So he exclaims:—"our mouth is open. . . ." He remembers how he had to speak in his last letter decisively, shortly and, as it were, with compressed lips, and he now experiences an irrepressible sense of relief. His open lips are but the outward sign of his expanded heart. That also had been contracted, and the space which the Corinthians had occupied in it been narrowed. Now the chambers were widened again.

12. The scanty room was not in him, but in the seat of their own affections, and it hampered bis free admission to their hearts. Even now the feeling in Corinth towards him was not all that he could desire.

13. "But as a requital, the same (in kind and degree), I speak as to children, be ye also widened." He claims, instead of their present narrow-heartedness, a reciprocation on their part of his capacious love for them. They should repay in the same kind and to the same extent as they received. They should lay aside all suspicions and sinister impressions which calumny had infused into them and grant their spiritual father and his warning free access to the hearts of his children. Assuming that his request is granted, he proceeds after this noble preface to deliver in detail (vi. 13—vii. 1) the admonition which he couched in general terms at vi. 1, 2.

14. "Do not become incongruously
fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye

yoked to unbelievers.” A rather stricter rendering would be “heterogeneously yoked.” The allusion is to Lev. xix. 19: “Thou shalt not let the asses of thy father, and the young asses of thy cattle, go to their way; but thou shalt turn them to the way of their master.” The LXX use a word of which St. Paul’s is a derivative, whence it is clear that this was the passage in his mind. Different yokes are adapted to different species of animals, so a creature of a different species from another is called a creature of a different yoke. The life of the heathen is regarded here as a yoke. Compare Gal. iv. 8, 9. The same figure is applied to believers in Rom. vi. 18, 19, and is aptly illustrated by Clem. Rom. i. Cor. i. 16, where Christians are called those who had “come under the yoke of righteousness,” an expression partly fashioned after St. Paul and partly after that of the Saviour “my yoke is easy.” Nothing could be more diverse than the yokes of the believer and the heathen. So those who bear them are beings of a different race and species. Believers are a spiritual, pagans a natural generation. In the pagan the old man prevails, while believers are a new creation. These two races cannot be mingled, as they would be by making common cause in life and habits. The specific form of the original prohibition might seem to imply that the Apostle is forbidding only mixed marriages or other mixed consorting of the sexes; some would restrict the reference to participation at idol feasts. That no such limitation is intended seems clear from what immediately follows up to ver. 17 and from 1 Cor. x. 7 ff. How pervading a principle of the Mosaic Law purity was may be seen by a comparison of Lev. xix. 19 with Deut. xxii. 10, where the prohibition is extended: “Thou shalt not plough with an ox and ass together.” In both passages it is forbidden to wear raiment of linen and wool mixed, and to sow a field with “divers seeds, and the reason assigned is “lest the fruit of the seed . . . be defiled.” The fundamental idea is that everything has been created by God “after its kind,” that everything is to be allowed to retain undiluted the qualities which belong to its kind, and that there is impurity in mixing them. The Apostle proceeds to enforce the prohibition by five rapid questions pointing out the essential opposition existing between the two yokes.

1. In the moral and spiritual states which they respectively represent. The righteousness meant is not imputed, but realised in practice, i.e. holiness (Rom. vi. 19), just as the lawlessness was that which was actually practised by the heathen. How far the Corinthian believers had, in fact, attained to holiness no more comes into account than the question how far those were, in fact, saints whom he habitually calls so. Rom. i. 7; 2 Cor. i. 1, &c. &c.

2. In the elements to which these two states respectively belong. The element of the one is light, that of the other darkness, and these exclude each other in the spiritual as in the natural world.

16. 3. In the heads of the two kingdoms, Christ and Beliar. Beliar, the later Syrian and Greek form of Belial, means ‘worthless-ness,’ ‘depravity,’ and represents the Prince of Darkness, as the chief of unclean spirits and the impersonation of impiety and iniquity. The reference to Corinthian sensuality and the antithesis to Christ, the anointed “with the spirit of holiness” (Rom. i. 4), are equally pointed. St. Paul considered heathendom to be under the rulers of the darkness of this world. Between them and Christ there is no harmony but absolute discord.

4. In the difference of the bonds which unite these rival powers and their subjects. The bond between Christ and His followers is faith, a compound of belief and trust. The bond between Beliar and his slaves is unbelief. Satan and his angels indeed are not deceived, for they believe and tremble, but they deceive men and lead them in a confederacy of disbelief and defiance. The original for “portion” means a portion of meat, a political party, a class of citizens, a portion in an inheritance (Col. i. 12). Any one of these meanings gives an apt interpretation; but whichever is taken, a joint portion can only express a general assimilation of life, and cannot be restricted to any one thing, such as partaking at idol feasts. Two societies with opposite organic principles cannot make common cause in life and conduct.

16. 5. In the contradiction which would be involved in any concordat between the Church of God and the objects of heathen adoration. The Apostle has not used a compendious expression for “what covenant has the sanctuary of God with that of idols.” The sanctuary of God is the community of believers, and these are forbidden, exactly as in Exod. xxiii. 13, which passage St. Paul clearly had in his mind, to make covenant,
are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. 17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, 18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

not with the temple of idols, but with the heathen or “with their Gods.” The usual application is that, as the Temple suffered desecration by the introduction of idols, which happened more than once in Jewish history, so the Church of Christ would be profaned by adopting a manner of life which brought it into contact with idols and idol worship. Individuals are also sanctuaries of God, and may profane themselves by making covenant with idols (Ezek. xiv. 3) but the context shews that St. Paul is speaking collectively. As it is the crowning glory of the Church that it is God’s sanctuary, he dwells upon the idea. He justifies his application of it to believers as a body by reiterating it in a stronger form: “for we (ἡμεῖς) are the sanctuary of the living God.” The epithet contrasts God with dead idols, suggests the spiritual death to which the demons represented by idols must bring them, and reminds them of the spirit of holiness through which the living God dwells in them (iii. 3), which is the agent of their new creation of life, and at enmity with all heathen impurity. He supports his application by citing Lev. xxvi. 11, 12 with the omission of a clause, and the substitution of their for your, possibly caused by Ezek. xxxvii. 27. The second clause may have been omitted because the Apostle quoted from memory, and possibly a reminiscence of Ez. xxxvii. 27 caused the substitution of their for your in the last. “I will set my tabernacle among you, and my soul shall not abhor you, and I will walk among you and be your God and ye shall be my people.” Lev. xxvi., being a constituent part of God’s original covenant with his people was exactly suited to the Apostle’s purpose. It commences by prohibiting idols, which is the point in question here; and compliance with this prohibition was a condition of God’s dwelling in Israel. The allusion is to Jehovah’s presence and the visible token of it in the tabernacle, and ‘I will walk among you’ refers to the travelling of that provisional sanctuary during the wanderings of the Israelites. God became a pilgrim amidst his pilgrim people.” He dwelt among them equally when the temple became His fixed habitation. The emphasis upon “we” seems to contrast the spiritual and personal sanctuary of the Church with the material sanctuary of the tabernacle. Under the new covenant God dwells not amongst men merely, but in them. See note at end of chapter.

17. The obligation imposed by the fulfilment of this promise is expressed in the charge delivered to the chosen nation through Isaiah, when God was about to bring it back to its own land from the Babylonish captivity and renew His dwelling in the midst of it (Isa. lxx. 17). “Depart ye, depart ye, go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go ye out of the midst of her; be ye clean that bear the vessels of the Lord.” The Apostle quotes the LXX. from memory, which accounts for the modifications. The double “depart” urges promptitude, as if the people had become attached to the land of their servitude, and is appropriate to a voluntary separation of Christians from pagan pollutions. The verse following that cited assigns as a reason for purifying themselves the close proximity to God into which they were to come in their exodus:—“for the Lord will go before you and the God of Israel shall be your recompense,” which being in fact a walking of God with his people, is also very appropriate. The prophet addresses the priests and Levites, as bearers of the sacred vessels of the sanctuary and of the worship, now to be restored, and possibly the idea at the root of the application is that believers constitute a priestly community, which is no less a Pauline than a Petrine view; cf. 1 Pet. ii. 9 “a royal priesthood.” ‘And I will receive you’ (A. V.), which should be “and I will welcome you in,” represents the marginal rendering in the A. V. of the last words of Isaiah iii. 13: “The God of Israel will gather you up” (ὁ ἐπισκόπων ὑμᾶς, LXX.), which expresses the collecting of the nation, after their march, into one body with a view to their re-entering the Holy Land. It may however have been suggested by a reminiscence of Ezek. xx. 34 (LXX.) or of Zeph. iii. 20, where the same word (εἰσδεικνύμας) is used for the same thing. In St. Paul’s quotation the antithesis between, “come out,” and “I will welcome you in,” is obvious. That into which God will welcome those who come out is what the land of Canaan symbolises in the prophetic passages, and the next verse suggests that St.
Paul had in his mind the idea of the family and household of God.

18. The blessings consequent upon this welcome are the privileges of adopted sons and daughters of God. When the titles, Father and Son, designate the relation between God and His people in the O.T., they signify only paternal affections and treatment on one side, and filial feelings and conduct on the other, that is, a sonship by adoption. So St. Paul says of the Jews: "to whom pertaineth the adoption" (Rom. ix. 4). Under the new covenant a higher sonship is accessible, also by adoption, not by generation. The condition of it is faith (Gal. iii. 26) in Christ. But to as many as receive Christ by faith and so become sons (υἱοί) of God, Christ grants the privilege of becoming also children (παιδες) of God, that is, sons by generation, by a new birth which is of God (John i. 12), through the Spirit, and is regeneration. With this new birth begins the holy life of a new creature, and it is only by perseverance in this life of holiness that the position and blessings of adoption can be maintained. It is precisely this that the Apostle is urging upon his readers. The language is culled from different passages of the O.T. See 2 Sam. vii. a Messianic Passage concerning the temple and the throne of David, in v. 8 of which the LXX. insert "saith the Lord Almighty," and in v. 14 occur the words, "I will be his father, and he shall be my son." See Jer. xxxvi. 9. The word of the Almighty is a guarantee that his promise will be fulfilled. St. Paul expressly makes the paternal relationship of God to include women as well as men. "Ye shall be to me for sons and daughters." See Isaiah xlii. 6. It is characteristic of Christianity that it was the first system that ever recognised the dignity of women and raised them generally to the same moral and spiritual level with men. It was very suitable to the Apostle's admonition to notice the unhappy women at Corinth, where above all places in the world they were lured to ruin by organised immoralities under the cloak of religion.

NOTE on ver. 16.

God Dwelling with Men.

16. It is only possible here to give a few references and combinations upon this important truth. Its beginnings, under the Jewish dispensation, are found in the cloud and the fiery pillar; then in the Shechinah in Tabernacle and Temple: then in prophecy, Ps. cxviii. 23; Is. xxviii. 1; and Ezek. xxvii. 21-28 intimates that its fuller realisation was reserved for the time of the Messiah, while Joel ii. 28, 29 foretells the mode of its accomplishment. Compare Mal. iii. 1 with John i. 11 and see Godet and Westcott on the application, of temple (ταυτές) in Mal. iii. 1 to the Jewish nation. Many think, with Chrysostom, that Is. vii. 14 announces the Godhead of the Messiah. If so, the title Immanuel (Matt. i. 23) was primarily fulfilled in the Incarnation, and the flesh (John i. 14) was the tabernacle of Godhead. Compare John ii. 19-22, and see Godet there and on John i. 14. In Matt. xxii. 42 and the parallels the Saviour applies Ps. cxviii. 22 to himself: comp. Matt. xvi. 8. Next, see Christ's sayings in John xiv. 15-24, xxii. 23, and with them comp. Luke xvii. 20, 21. Apostolic expansions are found in 1 Pet. ii. 4-7, iv. 17.
HAVING therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2 Receive us; we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

CHAPTER VII.

1 He proceeded in exhorting them to purity of life, and to bear him like affection as he did to them. Whereof lest he might seem to doubt, he declares what comfort he took in his afflictions, by the report which Titus gave of their godly sorrow, which his former epistle had wrought in them, and of their lovingkindness and obedience towards Titus, answerable to his former boastings of them.

CHAP. VII. 1. The sum and substance of the exhortation in the form of a conclusion from the promises. "These then being the promises that we have" marks the promises as unique in character and strong in motive power. Believers have them not merely as pledges of future benefits, but in part already realised. Still they may be forfeited by unholiness, which disqualifies men from being members of a holy God’s family, and unifies the community or the heart of the individual from being His habitation, Rev. xxi. 27. His inclusion of himself among the exhorted, and the title “beloved,” show that he is not a harsh spiritual dictator, and that, whatever their conduct may have been, it has not altered His affection for them. Defilement of the flesh refers to all sensual sins, such as drunkenness and gluttony (Cor. v. 11, vi. 10, xi. 7, 21), but especially to licentiousness in all its forms (1 Cor. v. 9, 16; vi. 5-20). The objection that St. Paul views the flesh itself as the source of pollution, and cannot regard it as contracting pollution, is untenable. In Adam the flesh was for a while pure, and in Christ it never ceased to be so. In those who have died with Christ the flesh is ideally dead, and its actual cleansing begins with the reception of the spirit. But it lusts against the spirit, is always liable to defilement, and always needs further purification. The exact sense of “defilement of spirit” is not so clear, but it seems most probable that St. Paul here designates as spirit our highest faculties spiritualised. One fair illustration of defilement of spirit, which, however, may occur in manifold forms, is furnished by 1 Cor. viii. 7. With negative cleansing, is to go on the positive process of “perfecting holiness.” The original for “perfecting” is used in Gal. iii. 3, Phil. i. 6, in contradistinction to the initiatory stages of Christian progress and work. It is a hieratic word, used in classic Greek for the due performance of sacrifice and other religious rites, and so expresses aptly the full accomplishment of the sacred work of sanctification. The completeness does not consist in its being a sanctification both of the flesh and of the spirit, but in the perfection of the holiness itself. Still it can only mean a relative holiness, because absolute sanctity is unattainable in this world. Holiness of the flesh would exist, if all its principles were only instruments of righteousness, as in Christ, and holiness of spirit, if conscience were free from all sense of sin committed, and its cognate faculties were spiritualised into the very highest form of their activity. But sharp lines cannot be drawn between holiness of spirit and holiness of flesh, nor between the defilement of each, because they act and react upon each other. The atmosphere in which holiness moves on to perfection is the fear of God. This motive power belongs mainly to the old dispensation and to the earlier stages of the Christian course. It was most applicable to the Corinthians, and, so long as man is liable to sin, cannot be dispensed with.

2-4. The link of connection between his warning and the resumption of the subject which he commenced in ii. 12, abruptly broke off at ii. 17.

2. "Make room for us" reverts to the “be ye widened” in vi. 13, so that the first word of the epilogue to the warning corresponds with the last of the prologue. When a father speaks to children, he and his words deserve admission to their heart. But he adds three specific reasons why he should have it, and in his earnestness, omits all connecting particles. "No one did we wrong: no one did we ruin: no one did we overreach." That the person alluded to is the flagrant offender is proved by ii. 5-13. He is on the point of taking up again (v. 5) the trouble mentioned in ii. 13 ff., and the preceding verses there (5-12) all allude to that person’s case out of which the trouble arose. Similarly here the case is referred to just before a recurrence to the same trouble. These allusions are also exactly in their proper place, because the offender belonged to the very class which is addressed in vi. 14—vii. 1, and in order that the present warning should be taken rightly it was quite necessary that it should not be viewed as his sentence and admonition in 1 Cor. v. 1-8 had been, by which it had been said that he had wronged, ruined, and overreached the guilty man. To refer these expressions, as some do, to money matters is quite at variance with the context, and not at all necessitated by the language.
II. CORINTHIANS. VII.

3 I speak not this to condemn you: for I have said before, that ye are in our hearts to die and live with you.

4 Great is my boldness of speech toward you, great is my glorying of you: I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation.

5 For, when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; without were fightings, within were fears.

6 Nevertheless God, that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus;

7 And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more.

3. Another reason why they should open their hearts. "For condemnation I do not speak." The idea is not that the three apologetic sentences just uttered involved a condemnation of the Corinthians for putting him on his defence, but he denies that such condemnation is the purpose of his "warning in vi. 14—vii. 1, as appears from the proof:—"for I have said before that you are in our hearts for union in death, and union in life," being a clear allusion to vi. 11, 12 in the introduction to the warning. To have persons so in your heart that you are ready to die with them, that you have no desire to live without them, is one of the strongest tokens of love (Hor. Odes II., xvii. 5—12). But from another point of view a wish to spend your life with them may be a stronger, which possibly accounts for its standing second, inasmuch as it shews a conviction that the existing attachment will not only bring present delight, but that it will never be broken by the continual society of the persons loved. The view that the point is their dying and living with him, not his with them, imparts an obscurity, and the grounds for it, which are chiefly grammatical, are insufficient.

4. "Great is my frankness of speech toward you." This, again, plainly refers to vi. 11, and there is no reason to dilute the idea into "confidence," although the frankness is that of confidence in his readers. This, and not the desire to condemn, is the explanation of the unreservedness of his warning. More indicative of his love still than free speech to them is glorying speech to others "on their behalf." The boasting of them to Titus was, no doubt, qualified, but, after what had occurred, he resumes it, and it was now "great." He is filled with "the comfort," of which he had already spoken in i. 4—7, on which he is going to dwell further on (6, 7); he superabounds with "the joy," which was implied in ii. 14, and to which he is going to surrender himself (7, 16) now that he has said all that is necessary in the way of self-defence and counsel. The tribulation meant is undoubtedly that of chap. i. although there would be no need to exclude the "fightings" in the next verse, if they were of sufficient importance to be put in the category of tribulation.

5. Takes up the narrative dropped in ii. 17 with an allusion to ii. 12, 13. "For even when we came into Macedonia, our flesh got no relief, but (we were) in every respect afflicted." Even on his arrival he had not only still to wait for Titus, but apparently fell among foes. "Without" and "within" explain in every respect. The fightings were the new troubles in Macedonia; the fears concerned the upshot of affairs in Corinth. In Troas his unrest was in spirit, now it is in his flesh. Possibly the perturbation of his higher nature descended to his lower.

6, 7. Affliction turned into joy. "But he that comforteth the humble comforted us viz. God, by the presence of Titus" (i. 3, 4). The mere arrival of a trusty colleague to stand by him and Timothy, downcast as they were, was a comfort. But the main relief came from the comfort which Titus felt over the Corinthians. The strict sense is that Titus was comforted in and by delivering his report of his experience at Corinth, and that this his comfort comforted the Apostle. St. Paul might well feel the visible satisfaction of Titus to be a more palpable proof of the improved state of things than the substance of the report itself. Titus clearly delivered his account with joyful emotion, and indeed the scene which he had to describe was extraordinary, as may be seen in v. 11. The comfort was such as for the Apostle to "feel rejoiced rather" than troubled as before. The next verses which assign a reason for a change of feeling, as well as the aorist shew that this and not "rejoiced the more" (A. V.) is the true sense. The position of "rather" in the original is not, as alleged, against this. See 1 Cor. v. 2; vi. 7; vii. 21.
8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle hath made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry 'after a godly manner, that ye may receive damage by us in nothing.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold this selfsame thing,
II. CORINTHIANS. VII.

that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

him to St. Paul. They could not have contended that they were blameless, but only that they had not deliberately meant to countenance the offence. Some had perhaps been silenced by threats and fear. The "indignation" would be directed not against the immoral person exclusively, but against all who had complicated the case and misrepresented St. Paul's treatment of it. "Fear" alludes to the disciplinary measures of which he had given warning. (1 Cor. v. 21. Cf. 2 Cor. xiii. 1 ff.) The word rendered 'vehement desire' means a "yearning" for his presence (see ver. 7). They were tossed by opposite feelings. They dreaded his chasteisement, yet longed for his coming, whether to receive the merited correction or a restoration to favour through contrition. The "zeal" is no longer, as in v. 7, "on my behalf" but, as the next term shews, for a vindication of the claims of purity in the person of him who had outraged it and of those who had aided and abetted. The last link of the chain is "full exactation of punishment," not only for the sin itself perhaps, but also for resistance to Apostolic authority. The allusion is to the severer penalty which, according to ii. 6, some members of the Church desired to impose, whatever it may have been. This point stands last, and completes the climax because the punishment in question had constituted St. Paul's chief difficulty all along. The summary about their conduct during the visit of Titus is:—

"In every respect ye commended (aorist) yourselves (as) pure in the matter." They had proved themselves free from the contamination of countenancing an unclean offence. The absence of a connecting particle gives the words something of the formality of a judicial sentence of acquittal.

"In every respect" refers to all the particulars just specified in which they had commended themselves. A comparison of this sentence with 1 Cor. v. 6 might seem to imply that he had either overcharged the matter there or shewn a large leniency here. But the persons who are spoken of as glorying there are not identical with those fully absolved here. There was an extreme heathen as well as an extreme Judaizing party.

12. Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort: yea, and exceed-
ingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting, which I made before Titus, is found a truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembereth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling ye received him.

16 I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

"we are comforted." No comfort could have come from attaining such purposes as had been imputed to him. "But besides our (εἰς) comfort, we were more superabundantly rather rejoiced at the joy of Titus." Such is the rendering of the true reading. The Apostle felt that 'comforted' was a term that did scanty justice to his feelings. It only stated that his previous anxiety had been removed, whereas he had an overflow of satisfaction and, in order to describe this, he corrects his expression and says he was superabundantly "rather" made glad than merely comforted. The ground of this exuberant gladness was the joy of Titus, for his comfort also had mounted to the higher level of joy, which is more than was stated in v. 7. The reason why the Apostle so exulted in this joy of Titus was: "because his spirit has been refreshed of you all." The word "refreshed" alludes to the dejected spirits in which Titus had started on his discouraging mission at St. Paul's urgent request. Under such circumstances the Apostle's unusual delight at the scarcely anticipated issue and its effect on Titus is fully accounted for. He probably makes express mention of the satisfaction and joy which the Corinthians had given Titus because he wished to recommend him for further work amongst them (viii. 16, 17, 18). "Of you all," does not mean that the entire community but all the better-minded, whom the Apostle is now addressing, had refreshed him. Still the expression seems to denote that a larger number than he expected had proved patient and loyal.

"I was not put to shame" is the right translation, not "I am not ashamed" (A.V.), and "was found" or "proved truth," not "is found." It was a special ground of rejoicing to St. Paul that the conduct of the Corinthians had shewn the boast, which partly induced Titus to go, to be true, and that he was spared the humiliation of seeing his praise of them proved hollow. The truth of this boast he compares with his general veracity in all that he "said to them" in his preaching or his promises. As before (i. 17-20) he argued from the consistent truthfulness of his preaching to that of his promises, so now he represents all his utterances together, whether made to them or about them, as a uniform whole pervaded by the leaven of sincerity and truth. Some of his readers must have felt the fact that he had been delivering favourable sentiments about them at the very moment when they were listening to very unfavourable representations of him.

18. The impression made upon Titus by his visit, about which the Corinthians would be not a little anxious, was so favourable that the Apostle can use it as a seal of the established reconciliation between the Church and himself which he declares in v. 16. "His affections are more superabundantly towards you, as he remembers (from time to time) the obedience of you all." His love waxed stronger and stronger with every recollection of their readiness to comply fully with St. Paul's directions and his own counsels. This readiness had been apparent from the first moment of his arrival, for he could call to mind "how with fear and trembling they welcomed him." Their penitence seems to have begun even before his arrival, and it almost looks like the after-fruit of Timothy's mission. Their feelings were mixed, for they were glad to receive another emissary of the Apostle, as the word of the original (ἐπιθυμεῖ) in some measure implies, but they dreaded the consequences of their previous conduct, as we may well imagine, when Titus presented himself with another letter from the hand of one whom they knew by infallible proofs to be the bearer of a divine commission.

16. The conclusion of the matter is a declaration at once of an amnesty for the past and of confidence for the future. It is also a transition link to the topic of the next two chapters for his "confidence in them in everything" enabled him without misgiving to urge their obligation on one special point.
II. CORINTHIANS. VIII.

THE COLLECTION FOR THE POOR SAINTS AT JERUSALEM (VIII. IX.).

It had been customary since the Dispersion of Israel for the Jews and Proselytes in foreign lands to send 'sacred money' annually to Jerusalem through commissioners called Hieropompi. This usage may have suggested or facilitated the raising of subsidies in the gentile churches for the mother-church at Jerusalem. But the character as well as the motive of the contributions were different in the two cases, for whereas the Jewish consisted of the Temple tribute, which was paid from a feeling of religious patriotism and traditional obligation, the Christian consisted of free-will offerings for the alimony of the poor, and the duty of giving rested not only upon the Saviour's injunctions to succour the needy brethren but also upon the specific ground stated in Rom. xv. 27.

The sale and distribution of their possessions by the first converts to Christianity in Jerusalem could only have been a slight factor in causing their destitution. The provisions of the Mosaic law for preventing large accumulations of wealth on the one hand and extreme penury on the other had ceased to be operative. Judaea was in a state of social and economical confusion. The abnormal condition of the labour market is illustrated by the fact that Agrippa II. was compelled to resort to artificial means, such as paving the streets of Jerusalem with white marble, after having declined a proposal to destroy and rebuild Solomon's porch, in order to supply with work and wages 18,000 workmen who had been employed in repairing the Temple. At the same time an apprehension existed that the Romans intended to lay violent hands upon the Temple treasury. Life and property were rendered painfully insecure by the terrible atrocities of the Sicarii, at once assassins and robbers, who, although the Christians were not likely to be the direct objects of their attacks, must have helped to make the means of their subsistence precarious. There was a famine in the reign of Claudius and the privations accompanying it, for the mitigation of which St. Paul had previously been instrumental in providing (Acts xi. 29, 30), may have been still continuing. Independently of the general disorder, it is easy to comprehend how difficult the Christians, regarded as renegades from the national faith may have found it to earn their daily bread, and their sufferings were probably much more severe than is usually imagined.

It was not general Christian duty merely nor even his fervent love towards his brethren according to the flesh (Rom. ix. 2, 3), which drew the Apostle heart and soul into the work of relief. One of the articles in the compact concluded between him and the pillar-apostles in A.D. 51 (Gal. ii. 10) was that he should remember the poor amongst the Jewish believers. His preaching and ministry were looked upon with no great favour by many at Jerusalem, and some even doubted whether his churches were properly Christian communities at all. The wider and remoter his missionary activity became the more would these misgivings gather strength, and they had been confirmed by recent reports from Corinth. An extreme party, which pretended to the support of orthodox persons in the parent Church, had pursued him with hostility into the field of his labours and had strained every nerve to destroy his work. He was on the point of bringing his ministry in the East to a close, and what might befall his Gentile foundations, when he was no longer present to fight their battle, must have caused him grave concern. If, before his departure for the far west, he could send or convey to Jerusalem, as a last memorial of himself, a bountiful gift from the heathen brethren to the impoverished members of the mother community, he might anticipate that it would have a favourable effect with reference to all the matters which he had now deeply at heart. It would be a testimony that he was as faithful as ever to the contract between him and the original Apostles and that there was not a great chasm between them and him, as it pleased his adversaries to assert. It would be a proof that both he
II. CORINTHIANS. VIII.

although they might have been expected to yield to no one in zeal for such a cause, no doubt resisted it with all their might, partly from hatred to St. Paul's teaching and person, partly because they foresaw that the success of the scheme tended to overthrow their own influence. This attitude of things would be observed by Titus and reported to the Apostle, who seems thoroughly to have comprehended the entire situation. It was not one which promised a brilliant issue to his cherished project, but still the reaction of feeling in his favour and the enthusiastic regard for him, manifested in the presence of Titus by a considerable portion of the Church, furnished sufficient grounds for hoping that he might not only rekindle the flame of charity which had sunk down into its embers, but stir up such an activity as might lead to an immediate practical result not unworthy of a Church which had been so highly gifted with other graces.

With this object in view and aided by the splendid example of Macedonian self-sacrifice, of which he was an eyewitness, he writes these two chapters, which leave no motive-spring of Christian bounty untouched, and which are pervaded with a spirit of united earnestness, delicacy, and simplicity. Their position in the general structure of the Epistle is most intelligible, for they constitute an admirable supplement to its first and conciliatory portion and it would have been impossible from the nature of their contents to have appended them to the unsparing polemic against his irreconcilable antagonists (x.—xiii.) without awakening a painful sense of disharmony.

CHAPTER VIII.

1. He stirreth them up to a liberal contribution for the poor saints at Jerusalem, by the example of the Macedonians, 7 by commendation of their former forwardness, 9 by the example of Christ, 14 and by the spiritual profit that shall redound to themselves thereby: 16 commending to them the integrity and

willingness of Titus, and those other brethren, who upon his request, exhortation, and commendation, were purposely come to them for this business.

MOREOVER, brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia;

CHAP. VIII. 1. “But we notify to you, brethren, the grace of God which is given in the Churches of Macedonia.” “But” denotes transition to a new topic in slight antithesis to the confidence (vii. 16). He has confidence in them, but there is something by which his trust
II. CORINTHIANS. VIII.

2 How that in a great trial of affliction the abundance of their joy and their deep poverty abounded unto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to their power, I bear record, yea, and beyond their power they were willing of themselves;

4 Praying us with much intreaty that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints.

5 And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Insomuch that we desired Titus,
that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

7 Therefore, as ye abound in every thing, in faith, and utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and

in your love to us, see that ye abound in this grace also.

8 I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love.

need not be diluted into surmise or expectation. He had hoped well of them, but, on account of their poverty had looked for only slender assistance. On the contrary, however, they made no slight contribution, nor was their gift one of money merely, but of themselves, first and foremost, to the Lord, who gave Himself for them (Gal. i. 4; ii. 20), and also to the Apostle, as the minister, through whom Christ's self-sacrifice had been made known to them, and through whom the work of love for the saints was proceeding. "First" may mean to Christ primarily and chiefly, and to the Apostle secondarily and subordinately, or that the greater gift of themselves was made in the first instance, the subsequent less important gift of their substance being not expressly mentioned but implied. In any case they placed themselves and all that they possessed at the absolute disposal of Christ and his Apostle. This they did "through the will of God" working upon their will (v. i.) with prompting and solicitation, yet they acted "of their own choice," because of their instant and eager compliance with the divine impulse.

6. These noble manifestations are enough — "for us to exhort Titus," that according as he previously initiated, so he should also perfect towards you this grace also." The self-devotion and self-sacrifice of the Macedonians induced him to take steps which should draw the Corinthians also into the same strong current of charity, and prevent them from being outstripped by other Churches. The mention of this exhortation would save Titus from any imputation of having put himself too prominently forward and urgent in a matter in which this was the Apostle's purpose in mentioning it or not. The words both for "initiate" (ἐμπφηγήσαται) and for "perfect" (ὑπερέξου) are hieratic terms, the former referring to the preliminary rites, the latter to the due and full performance of sacrifice. They are happily applied here to the "oblations" of almsgiving. Titus had, as we may easily suppose, intimated to the Corinthians that the best mode of giving substantial confirmation to their professions of zeal for the Apostle was at once to set about the execution of this lingering plan of charity, and they had apparently acted upon his counsel but, through the shortness of his stay, had not completed the work. The "also" in "this grace also" refers to the other happy results which Titus had attained, or it may be taken in the same sense as "also" at the end of the next verse. "Perfect towards you" means that Titus was commissioned to accomplish a good service to the Corinthians.

The Corinthians presented a marked contrast to the Macedonians, for they had shewn an alacrity to give without doing anything: they had suffered no persecution or affliction; they were comparatively wealthy (v. 14); they had been reminded of their duty, 1 Cor. xvi. 1-3: they had not given themselves to Christ, nor yet to Christ's minister, the Apostle, but had held themselves in reserve from unworthy considerations: they had fallen short of St. Paul's hopes: yet he is so jealous for the honour of the Church of his pride and affection, that he sends a colleague attached to it by newly-knit bands of love, to help them forward in their duty, that they may fall behind in no gift.

7. He had apparently thought of trying here by exhortation or reasoning to remove the difficulties which he knew stood in the way of Titus's success. "But" he abstains. "But" should be substituted for "therefore" in the A.V. He only desires that their charitable giving should be on a par with the riches of their other graces. It would be very inconsistent if persons of high Christian endowments should fail in the chief grace of charity. To throw themselves into a work which the Apostle had so warmly at heart was also only a natural mode of proving the love for him, which he says, in effect, as is much clearer in the original than in the A.V., comes from the depth of "your heart and is settled in the depth of mine."

8. His applications for money had been misconstrued into a sort of claim to lordship over their property, and he had not escaped the charge of malversation. When he says that he is "not speaking by way of command," he repudiates these imputations and also accounts partly for his refraining in the last verse from all further injunctions. A command would have been a reflection upon their love, and Christian bounty is not, in fact, a fit subject for command, as its virtue depends upon its spontaneity. He is only "testing through the warm zeal of others the genuineness of your love also." He was doing them the
For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.

And herein I give my advice:

good service of enabling and inducing them to shew that their Christian love was as genuine as the eagerness of the Macedonians proved theirs to be. The love may be, as in the last verse, that of the Corinthians for the Apostle, but it need not be so restricted. It may embrace Christ, St. Paul and the brethren.

The reason why he does not speak by way of command is that his readers know the great motive to Christian charity. Christ's act of self-sacrifice is attributed to the "grace of Christ" only here and in Rom. v. 15, and in Gal. i. 6 compared with v. 4. The expression places that great act in the category of manifestations of brotherly love and marks its uniqueness as an example in the present case (vv. 1, 4, 6, 7), for it was in the truest and fullest sense a benefaction to the needy. The title "Lord" magnifies the condescension of the grace and turns the example into an à fortiori. "Jesus," the individual name of the Saviour, presents the act as one of personal favour. "Christ" also enhances the dignity of the grace, and, if it be allowable to take it in the sense of 'anointed with the spirit of holiness' (Rom. i. 4), it points to the unspeakable love of the Holy One of God suffering for the unholy. "For your sakes he became poor, although he was rich, in order that you, by His poverty, should become rich." "For your sakes" standing first, points the motive for charity emphatically. Believers are to consider that Christ impoverished Himself for them in order that they might be enriched in an immeasurably higher sense than that of worldly riches and, in gratitude, they are to follow His example on a humber level, by doing an incomparably slighter thing, sacrificing a portion of their worldly substance to supply the natural needs of those who are Christ's. "When" or "although he was rich" refers to the form of existence which Christ had with the Father before the Incarnation, and the question with regard to "became poor" is what was the nature and extent of the poverty which He assumed when "the Word became flesh." It consisted both in what He gave up and in what He took.

He gave up the circumstances of heavenly glory; those splendours surrounding the throne of God, which St. John depicts figuratively in the Apocalypse. The passage is thought by some to imply that Christ, without ceasing to be essentially God, which He assuredly never did, surrendered also the divine attributes in the Incarnation. Its parallel, according to this view, is considered to be Phil. ii. 7, where it is said that He "emptied" or "stripped" Himself, and this is there explained by the statement that He did not think the form of God, by which is meant the form and the characteristic attributes of God (Bp. Lightfoot), a thing to be clutched with a tight grasp, but relinquished it. Whether surrender of the attributes and retention of the essence of Godhead is a contradiction; if not, how far and in what sense Christ made such surrender; by what term out of many suggested since the "deposuit Deum" of Irenaeus is to be designated, and how far it is strictly consistent with the doctrine of the assumption humanitatis, are questions beyond the scope of a commentary. The reader may be referred to Steinmeyer, Geschichte der Geburt des Herrn, pp. 45-93, and Godet, Etudes bibliques, 2nd Serie, pp. 130-142. Two things are absolutely certain, that Christ never parted with the substance of Godhead, and that, when He was in the flesh, He exercised powers of Godhead. But it is contended by those who favour the above view that He received these back from the Father from time to time, according as His work required them and in answer to His prayers. Christ took the imperfections of a human mode of existence, circumstantial, such as poverty, and physical, such as liability to exhaustion, pain, and death. He accepted contact with sin in others, and the capacity of temptation, being tempted Himself. He stooped to the very humblest offices of love (John xiii. 3). But that the chief element of His poverty was His suffering and His death on the cross for sin is the purport of Phil. ii. 6-8. The object of this self-impoverishment was "That you by His poverty should become rich." This object was, of course, universal, and is specifically applied to the Corinthians in order to bring home to them the motive to charity. Christ parted with his riches and took our poverty, in order that we might part with our poverty and take His riches. Man is to be raised from earth to heaven, from humiliation to glory. He is to be transfigured into the image of Christ, that is, he is not only to be perfected in his human nature, but also to become Godlike. This is the purport of the great statement of Rom. viii. 29 (Heb. ii. 10-13, 2 Cor. iii. 18). When he has attained to that state, the final cause of his creation and existence will be achieved.

And" carries back the connection through v. 9 to v. 8. "And it is an opinion"
II. CORINTHIANS. VIII.

for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be forward a year ago.

11 Now therefore perform the doing of it: that as there was a readiness to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which ye have.

12 For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For I mean not that other men be eased, and ye burdened:

14 But by an equality, that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want: that there may be equality:

15 As it is written, "He that had gathered much had nothing over; and he that had gathered little had no lack."

or "judgment that I offer in this matter," not a command. What weight was to be attached to his opinion appears from 1 Cor. vii. 25, 40. "For this is expedient for you" does not mean that it is expedient for them that he should give a judgment rather than a command, which would fall short of his high sense of the word 'expedient.' It refers to the substance of his judgment in v. 7, that they should "abound in this grace also," as they did in others, which was conducive to their spiritual welfare. "Inasmuch as not only the performance, but also the willingness ye were beforehand in initiating since last year." The nerve of the exhortation is the start taken by the Corinthians which explains the order of ideas. They were the first to take steps towards doing, and had a still earlier precedence in the will to do. The more bound were they to expedite the performance now. How far the expression "since last year," dates back is not clear, but it points to a time prior to the First Epistle, for 1 Cor. xvi. 1, 2, 4 shews that the collection was not prospering.

11. "But now perfect," i.e. duly and fully accomplish the doing or performance also, that, just as there is the readiness of willing, so (there may be) also the perfecting or full accomplishment, according to the having i.e. in proportion to the measure in which you possess the means. The original for "now" is a form which lays stress upon the present moment, in antithesis to the length of time expressed in 'a year ago,' during which performance had lagged behind will.

12. The reason why the giving is to be according to the having, why a man is required to give only according to his power (v. 1) is that the value of the gift in God’s sight depends upon the good will of the giver. "For if the ready will is patent (obvious), according to what it may have, it is right acceptable, not according to what it hath not." The words ‘any man’ (A.V.) have no right in the text; “the ready will” is personified. Its patency, like its acceptableness, refers to God. Some think that the word (mposkias) which expresses this patency means merely ‘is present,’ but that falls short of its full sense.

13, 14. This standard is to be applied to the present case: “for the object is not for others ease (relief) and for you straits, but,” on the contrary, the true design proceeds on a principle of equality: in the present season your superabundance for their lack, in order that their superabundance also may serve for your lack, in order that there may be brought about an equality.” The Apostle is probably glancing at actual discontent inspired by his adversaries about his requisition of money. “Ease” denotes a relaxation from a previous strain. “Straits” is the pressure or pinch of poverty. Res angusta. Givers are not to incur the latter in order that receivers may enjoy the former. Such a result is to be prevented by the only true communism, which depends upon times, circumstances, free will, and love, and which, in a Christian brotherhood, so adjusts ever-changing inequalities that no one shall starve while another has abundance. The Apostle gently reminds his readers that they may, one day, need a requital in kind from those whom they assist.

15. The end and aim of charity illustrated by the divine example in giving manna in the wilderness. “He (that gathered) his much got nothing the more, and he (that gathered) his little got nothing the less.” St. Paul regards the ordinance that whatever amount each individual had gathered was found on measuring to be no more than an omer for every man (Ex. xvi. 16-18), as an index to the kind of equality which God contemplated in a holy community. Only what was effected under the old Dispensation by a wonder-working providence is left, under the new, as a gracious task for brotherly
16 But thanks be to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted the exhortation; but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

18 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel throughout all the churches;

19 And not that only, but who was also chosen of the churches to travel with us with this grace, which

is administered by us to the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready mind:

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administered by us:

21 Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.

22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things,
II. CORINTHIANS. VIII. IX.

but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which I have in you.

23 Whether any do enquire of Titus, he is my partner and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren be enquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

makes it probable that he was the brother who accompanied Titus on his recent mission (xii. 18), for, if he had been an eyewitness of what is reported in ch. vii. 7, 11, his confidence, of which the ground is otherwise not apparent, is explained. As he and the other brother are both called "messengers of the Churches" in the next verse, St. Paul must have obtained a regular commission for him also and, if it extended to the conveyance of the money to Jerusalem, he may have been either Gaius, or Tychicus or Trophimus, Acts xx. 4. Of the three Tychicus is much the most likely, for both in Eph. vi. 21, and Col. iv. 7 he is called a "faithful minister" (διακόνος) of the Apostle, and in both cases he is sent with a commission, as he is also in 2 Tim. iv. 12, and another is contemplated for him in Titus iii. 12.

23. Epitome of recommendation for all three. "Whether (I speak) for Titus, he is my partner and fellow-worker towards you, or (they for whom I speak are) our brethren, they are emissaries of the Churches, the glory of Christ." "Fellow-worker towards you," refers mainly to Titus's recent mission, which was his best claim to a welcome on a second visit. The commendation here given of the other brethren is official. They are no subalterns or partisans of the Apostle sent to push his cause in Corinth, but accredited representatives of the Churches, and entitled in that capacity to a respect more than could belong to them as individuals. The last words of the verse shew that he would have this respect carried to the pitch of reverence, for in these men who come to do Christ's work as the legates of the Churches, which are Christ's body, the glory of Christ Himself, who is the head, is reflected.

24. The representative character of these delegates involves a further inducement to a cordial welcome of them, and co-operation in their work. "The manifestation of your love, therefore, and of our boasting on your behalf in manifesting to them, (ye manifest it) before the face of the Churches." Such is the rendering of the true reading (ἐνθιστάνεσθαι). The argument cuts two ways, for while, in shewing their love, whether to the Apostle or the messengers, or to the poor saints, or to all three, and in verifying St. Paul's boasting of them, they would win honour and glory in the eyes of the Churches, so, on the other hand, if they fell short, their Christian good name would incur a tarnish, for, of course, a report of their conduct would go back to the Macedonian communities.

CHAPTER IX.

1 He yieldeth the reason why, though he knew their forwardness, yet he sent Titus and his brethren beforehand. 6 And he proceedeth in stirring them up to a bountiful alms, as being but a kind of sowing of seed, so which shall return a great increase to them, 13 and occasion a great sacrifice of thanksgivings unto God.

F OR as touching the ministering to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you:

CHAP. IX. A little perplexity is caused by the Apostle seeming to take a fresh start with the same topic, as if it had not been mentioned before. It has been thought that a new letter begins here; or that there was an interval between writing ch. viii. and ch. ix.; or that he intended to dismiss the subject with ch. viii., but on glancing it over again, deemed a supplement desirable. It is indisputable that he has urged the duty of ministering to the saints in viii. 7-15, and that he returns to it again in ix. 6-14. But the connection obviously runs straight on from viii. 24 to ix. 1 if, and there was still something to be added since the precise object for which he sent the envoys (ix. 3-5) has not been declared, and though it might be superfluous to urge liberality to the Saints, yet there were one or two considerations which might profitably be mentioned even upon that head (ix. 6-10). Further, had he failed to point out how the
II. CORINTHIANS. IX.

2 For I know the forwardness of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal hath provoked very many.
3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as I said, ye may be ready:
4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, we (that we say not, ye) charitable work tended to the glory of God and strengthened the communion of saints throughout the world (ix. 11-14), he would have omitted what constituted its chief significance.

1. He seems to reflect that in vii. 16-24 he had been writing rather about the receivers of the collection than of the givers or the giving, and therefore explains this circumstance. "For about the ministry to the saints indeed it is superfluous for me to write to you." Our own use of language shews that when we say it is superfluous to touch upon a topic, we do not mean strictly either that we have not touched upon it or do not intend to touch upon it. The very word "indeed" (μᾶλλον) implies that there is something to come in connection with this subject, and in slight contrast with the superfluity of writing about it. It does come in v. 3. "About the ministry indeed it is superfluous to write," "but I send the brethren." Again v. 6 is also in antithesis to v. 1. It was superfluous to urge ministering to the saints in a letter "but this" he would call to their notice—"he that soweth sparingly, &c." This connection is not indeed put as a classical writer would have put it but it does not exceed the usual freedom of St. Paul's style. There is an emphasis upon "the ministry to the saints," implying that for such a work there is no need of urging—and this may be the entire force of the particle (μᾶλλον). There is a slight stress also upon "to write" given by the addition of the article in the original, which serves to bring writing into relief against the sending of the brethren in v. 3. "To you" is likewise made prominent by standing last. To write to them was superfluous.

2. We might have expected to hear at once what he did instead of writing. But that he defers, and assigns the reason why he need not write to them, which is his knowledge of their ready will. This he specifies here, because it had led him to something else closely related to his exact object in sending the brethren, which is on the point of stating. It had caused him to boast of the Corinthians having had their contribution ready since the previous year, and that boast had produced its intended effect of stimulating the Macedonians. The question is how be could so boast, for it is implied that he was still boasting. There is little doubt that he had made timely preparations beforehand for this collection, and communicated with the Macedonian churches, as he had with that of Corinth. It was probably in one of these early communications that he first made the boast in question, and it must have been before writing the First Epistle, because i Cor. xvi. 1-5 shews that the collection was anything but ready. The disorder in the Church had, in fact, then begun, and had since culminated, so that everything had been for a season in confusion. Had this continued, thence could have been no further boasting. But after the reassuring success of Titus, the Apostle's hopes revived, and he had the courage not to recall the original boast. He could still hope that, when he himself arrived, the collection would actually be ready, and if this was not quite the same thing as having had it ready since the previous year, it implies no such disregard of facts as needs defence or excuse. That he is speaking of his boasting in the past appears from the sentence: "the zeal (which started) from you provoked the greater part." It is not ' hath provoked' as in the A. V. There is no inconsistency between this and the assertion that the Macedonians had subscribed "of their own choice." He speaks here only of 'the greater part,' i.e., of the many persons found in all churches, who are actuated by secondary motives, good in themselves but not the highest.

3. It is now plain why, although it was superfluous to write, it was not so to send the brethren. "But I send the brethren, that our boast may not be made void in this particular," that is, in the complete readiness of the collection, as he goes on to explain:—"in order that, as I (repeatedly) said (you were), you may be ready." The careful specification, "in this particular" may mean that in any case their willingness to give would not be doubted. That however was not now the main point, but that the fruits should be gathered in before his arrival.

4. Personal humiliation would ensue if this object were not attained. 'They of Macedonia,' in the A. V., should be simply "Macedonians," and for 'this same confident boasting' should be read "this confidence," the word 'boasting' having no
should be ashamed in this same con-
dtident boasting.

Therefore I thought it neces-
sary to exhort the brethren, that they
would go before unto you, and make
up beforehand your bounty, whereof
ye had notice before, that the same
might be ready, as a matter of bounty,
and not as of covetousness.

6 But this I say, He which soweth
sparingly shall reap also sparingly;
and he which soweth bountifully
shall reap also bountifully.

7 Every man according as he pur-
poseth in his heart, so let him give;
not grudgingly, or of necessity: for
* Prov. 11
13. Rom.
13. 8.
Ecclus. 35. 9.

And God is able to make all
right to stand in the text. These Mac-
donians would be an escort of honour, which
might probably accompany him. He wished
to spare himself from being brought to shame
for false confidence and them for unreadi-
ness before members of Churches which,
poor as they were, had just given proof
of large bounty.

5. As an inference from this, and in order
to avoid misconstruction, he states with
emphasis his exact aim, which was that every-
thing should be done beforehand and pre-
tected to his coming, as he shews by touch-
ing this point three times. The stress laid
upon “necessary” by its position in the
original and the force of the term itself indi-
cate how important he thought this. The
brethren who were to go on before perhaps
required ‘exhortation,’ because they had
wished to accompany the Apostle himself,
as a part of his escort of honour. “That
they should come beforehand to you and set
in order beforehand your blessing, which
has been promised beforehand (προερ.
not προκαταγγελμένη), that this should be
ready, so as a blessing, not as covet-
ousness.” The word for ‘setting in order’ is
often used for restoring that which has
fallen into disrepair, and is appropriate to the
re-adjustment and completing of a business in
which there had been flaws and delays. “Pro-
mised beforehand” means promised to the
Apostle, not to the Saints of Jerusalem or
to the Macedonians by the Apostle. Under
the old covenant God called the plentiful
fruits of the earth his blessing, the original
term for which here is properly spoken bless-
ing. Lev. xxv. 24. Ez. xxxiv. 26. Similarly
the barrenness of the ground is God’s curse.
Gen. iii. 1. Hence according to their
strictly religious view of temporal goods,
the Jews called all benefactions blessings.
The root of the idea is that God’s words are
always realised. His good spoken is good
done; His benediction, benediction. The
two following verses (6, 7) show that,
when a human gift is called “a blessing”
it’s bounties and spontaneity are meant, such
being the characteristics of God’s gifts. Yet
the words “so as a blessing and not as covet-
ousness” are not a hint to give freely and
liberally so much as to give promptly, because
it is in the nature of a blessing to be ready
at the moment when it is wanted, and in the
nature of covetousness, which wishes to keep
for itself what it gives away, not to give until
the last moment.

6. To write that they should give libe-
rally would have been superfluous, “yet this”
he allows himself to say. Giving is not
a sacrifice, but a sowing followed by a
reaping, and as is the sowing, so the reaping:
spare sowing, spare reaping; rich sowing,
rich reaping. The giver of the recompense is,
of course, God. Both idea and language
are taken from the Old Testament. See
Prov. xi. 24, where the word of the LXX
for ‘scatter’ is σπείρων.

There need not have been so much dis-
cussion about the construction of the first
words: “But this.” There is no necessity
to supply any verb at all. It is only a short
formula, used by one dictating rapidly, in
order to emphasize what follows. The precise
sense of the last words of the verse is:
“He that soweth on the principle of
blessings, on the principle of blessings
shall also reap.” The plural number “bless-
ings” serves to bring out the fulness of the
truly charitable man’s giving.

7. Passes from amount to motive, and states
the inward moral condition, without which no
man can reap. “His sowing must spring out
of deliberate preference, not out of a state
of mind in which grief is felt at parting with
possessions, nor out of compulsion, in which
a man thinks that he must give, whether for
respectability, reputation, position, or from
urgent admonition. “(Let) each (give)
according as he has deliberately pre-
ferred (perf.) with his heart, not out of
grief or out of necessity.” See Deut. xv. 10.

“Thou shalt surely give, and thine heart
shall not be grieved” (οὐ λυπηθήσῃ τὸ κατὰ
LXX). The reason for their giving, “for it
is a cheerful giver that God loveth,” is a
reminiscence of an addition made by the
LXX. to the Hebrew Text in Prov. xxi.
8, “a man that is cheerful and a giver
God blesseth.” “Loveth,” which St. Paul
grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work:

9 (As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad; he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever.

substitutes for "blesseth," shows the connection of ideas, for the harvest of blessings springs from God's love.

8. A further inducement is God's ability to bestow abundant means of charity. His power is not restricted to dispensing spiritual blessings only, for He "is able to make all grace superabound" and to give temporal goods as well. God's purpose however is not to gratify selfishness, but "in order that having all self-sufficiency in everything at all times, ye may superabound to every good work." Our language is compelled twice to substitute "every" instead of the uniform Greek for "all," which occurs four times in this short sentence to express the completeness of God's giving. The original for "deliberate preference" in the last verse occurs nowhere else in the N. T. and that for "self-sufficiency" only once again (1 Tim. vi. 6). Both are found in the Ethics of Aristotle, and "deliberate preference" plays an important part in his moral system. He defines self-sufficiency (Eth. I. vii. 6, 7) as that which, without the addition of anything, makes life eligible and in want of nothing. That it does not here mean an inward feeling of self-contentment appears from the context as well as from the very circumstantial additions "in everything" and "at all times." One is tempted to believe that St. Paul had some knowledge of the Ethics of Aristotle, which is, in itself, far from improbable and it is curious that this Epistle was written from a country in which Aristotle had resided seven years. The adjective 'self-sufficient' (οὑσαράγος) also is used in a letter written to Macedonians (Phil. iv. 11) and occurs there only in the N. T.

9. God can provide abundantly for givers, and that He actually does so is now shewn by scripture. It is said of the man that feareth the Lord (Ps. cxxii. 9):—"He scattered, he gave to the poor." "Scattered" denotes not without reference to sowing, liberal giving in many directions. "To the poor" shows that the giving discriminates its proper objects. The original for "poor" occurs here only in the N. T. and that in a quotation. It signifies merely one who is destitute of means and, as such destitution is by itself a sufficient ground for charitable help, the term is in its right place here. The regular word for "poor" in the N. T. denotes one who feels his poverty. The abiding of righteousness for ever is God's reward for scattering. Under a legal dispensation, justice, which is obedience to law, or righteousness, as δικαιοσύνη is usually rendered, was the summary of all goodness and holiness. It was not unnatural that beneficence, the most helpful and popular form of goodness, should appropriate the general name. The LXX. often render the Hebrew equivalent for 'justice' or 'righteousness' by the Greek equivalent for 'almst.' (cf. Matt. vi. 1). That righteousness in Ps. cxii. (cxi. in the LXX.), signifies almsgiving, implying both the means and the will to give, is quite apparent from the context of the Psalm. A promise is given of earthly substance and power as a divine requital of liberality to the needy and as furnishing the ability to continue it through the God-fearing man's future generations. Cf. Isaiah xxxiii. 1.

10. God who can and does thus bless charitable giving, will do so in the case of the Corinthians. "But he who plentifully furniseth seed to the sower and bread for eating (Is. lv. 10) will furnish and multiply your seed and will increase the fruits of your righteousness." This designation of God amounts to an argument from analogy, and from the less to the greater. He who in the natural economy of the world supplies seed to the sower and bread, as its fruit, for the support of life, will, in his moral economy, likewise require those who till the soil and sow the seed of charity. "The fruits of your righteousness" might mean, so far as the expression is concerned, only the earthly goods which are the requital of the righteousness, but the increase of these is already implied in the multiplication of the seed.

11. States an accompanying circumstance, which shows how and why the fruits of righteousness will be increased. "Whilst ye are enriched in everything to all single-mindedness." The construction of the original is irregular, but the sense clear. The "ye" takes up the "your" of the last verse. 'By the fulfilment of the promise just
12 For the administration of this service not only suplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God; given they are enriched in every kind and particular (ἐν πάντι) of worldly possessions, in order that they may exercise a single-mindedness, which keeps its gaze undistracted by selfish considerations and fixed solely on doing good to the poorer brethren, and which is ready to manifest itself on all occasions, in all ways, and to all suitable objects (μισθοῦ). Active charity and worldly substance grow by acting and reacting on each other. The Apostle, bringing his subject to a close, glides suddenly but naturally to the Godward side of the consequences of charity, by stating why God supplies substance for the exercise of single-mindedness. The force of the original for “which” is “because it,” i.e. single-mindedness, “worketh through us thanksgiving to God” or “for God.” When men through the agency of God’s ministers, by a right use of previous gifts, themselves thankfully receive God’s further gifts, and again, in imitation of His bounty, use them for the good of others, so that these recipients also thank God for the benefaction, it is, as far as it goes, the re-establishment of the right relation between God and men, and men and men.

13 States the means by which the thanksgivings are produced, and assigns two grounds for them. "While through the approvedness of this ministry they (the thanksgivers) glorify God." This is not the approvedness of the Corinthians established and attested by the collection, but the collection itself is regarded as a matter which had been upon its probation, as it had most truly been, and the Apostle here assumes that it has come honourably out of the ordeal. The assumption is a hint that the readers should take care to bring it out of its trial in such a form that it should be an occasion of glorifying God. The first ground upon which this glorifying would be based is expressed in a difficult sentence involving some grammatical questions, which may be seen discussed in Osiander, Meyer or Klüpper. "Upon the subjection of your confession to the Gospel of Christ." Some Jewish Christians at Jerusalem were not of opinion that the Churches founded by St. Paul confessed the same Gospel of Christ which they confessed themselves, and this view was studiously fostered by the Apostle’s enemies. They thought also that his Gentile converts held the confession of Christianity to be compatible with a disregard not only of the Mosaic law, but of moral law generally. When to persons entertaining these notions a large bounty was presented from those about whom they entertained them, the reflection between a mere "filling up" and a "super-abounding," or "overflowing" intimates that the Apostle attached greater weight to the Godward than to the human side of the charity. The Greek term for "service," which furnishes us with the word ‘liturgy’ originated at Athens, where it denoted certain expensive duties rendered by individuals to the state at their own cost (v. 10). It may possibly have been used by the Corinthians in the same sense, and it was, at any rate, quite familiar to them. In itself it denotes nothing more than a public service, but when it was applied to things Jewish, as the services of tabernacle or temple (see Grimm, Lex s. v.) or to things Christian, as here, it assumed a sacred sense, because it had reference in both cases to a holy community. It involves therefore the ideas of the public and the holy character of the service, and cannot be reproduced by a single English word.

New Test.—Vol. III.
14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

would naturally suggest itself that the gift proceeded not from persons who deemed that they were subject to no practical obligations, but from men who fully recognised the cardinal law of love. Further, in considering what motive prompted the benefaction, they could scarcely come to any other conclusion than that it was the true sympathy of sincere men for those who hold the same religious convictions with themselves. The original for "confession" is not adequately rendered by its English representative. It denotes an agreement with persons and also a conformity of professed views and feelings either with facts, as when it is used for confession of sins, or with some other standard. The full drift probably is that the Jewish Christians would glorify God for the submission and conformity of the Corinthians both in their views of Christian truth and their sense of Christian obligations, to the same Gospel which they themselves professed. The words "to the Gospel of Christ" refer not to the subjection alone nor to the confession alone but to both together. The idea of subjection of a man's confession of faith to the Gospel is illustrated by x. 4, 5, "bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ," and also by Rom. vi. 17. The second ground for glorifying God is "the single-mindedness of your communion to them and to all." Communion is the Christian fellowship which unites believers as brethren, and its single-mindedness consists in its being entertained without selfishness or narrowness. In the case before us it would be shewn not merely by liberality, but by the fact of heathens and particularly Greeks, with their strongly-marked national characteristics, so overcoming prejudices, antipathies, and idiosyncrasies, as to acknowledge a common bond of love with men of a nationality as strongly marked as their own but quite of an opposite cast. The contempt and aversion of Jew for Gentile was only equalled by that of Gentile for Jew. This collection was a concrete expression of Corinthian communion towards Jews only, but it was a sufficient earnest of a like communion with all believers. This second ground for glorifying God is the result of the first, viz. of a submissive confession of one and the same faith.

14. As the recipients could not be said to glorify God on the ground of their own intercessory prayer for the givers, this verse does not state a further ground, but the mode of glorification, and it is obvious that the prayer of brethren for brethren is as much a glorifying of God as thanksgiving itself. The Apostle attributes to the grateful Jewish Christians a feeling, prompting their prayer, "while they long after you," i.e. yearn for personal intercourse with you. He was probably thinking of a frequent interchange of communications through messengers and envoys. He wishes to impress his readers with the deep sincerity and the value of the prayer and to awaken in them a reciprocal interest. The reason of the longing was "the exceeding grace of God (resting) upon you." This grace would be inferred from the gift, and all that the gift implied, and it would be regarded as "exceeding" because the givers were gentiles. Perhaps the Apostle was also tacitly anticipating a liberal gift. All the happy results present themselves to the Apostle's mind as a whole, and elicit a final ejaculation of gratitude, which is a prelude to the thanksgivings hereafter to come from the many saints (v. 12). "Thanks be to God for his indescribable gift." This is too strong to refer merely to the collection, and to suppose that the "gift" is that of God's own Son (viii. 9), is too wide a deviation from the immediate context. The Apostle would have been bound to indicate such a meaning. He was perhaps chiefly contemplating the establishment of a universal brotherhood of mankind in Christ, of which this work was a prognostic and a partial realisation.

Final Polemic and Warning Addressed to the Judaizing Leaders and their Followers, and to the Heathen Sensualists at Corinth (x.—xiii.).

The third main section of the Epistle (x.—xiii.) undoubtedly bears the appearance of an annex, and its tone is in marked contrast with that of the preceding sections; conciliation and comparative calmness giving place to sarcasm, menace, and defiance. But St. Paul would have dealt with his situation very inadequately, had he been content merely to append to chap. ix. a
valedictory conclusion. He would have presented a very feeble front to the Judaizers, who, being organs of Satan, were doing their master's work upon the Church. The previous portion of the Epistle had little direct bearing upon them. They were beyond the reach of conviction, of exhortation, and even of charitable consideration. Of what avail was it, so far as they were concerned, to insist upon the spirituality of his gospel, to explain the true nature of the new ministry and of God's message of reconciliation through Christ, or in fact to reason with them at all? Why attempt to establish a good understanding with them? What they required was ruthless exposure, open war, and denunciation, and this is the treatment they receive in that portion of the closing chapters which has special reference to them (x.—xii. 18). The new matter here adduced, itself shows how imperfectly St. Paul would have discharged his task, had it not been added. At the same time its solidarity with the first section of the Epistle is placed beyond all doubt, because, although these antagonists are there made to stand aside while the Apostle appeals (i.—vii.) to the main body of the Church with self-defence and gracious offers of reconciliation, which was much the most important object of his letter, there are unmistakable proofs of their presence. To say nothing of the accusations against him, which must have proceeded from them, we find over-reaching plans of Satan to be guarded against (ii. 11); persons who are perishing, to whom the Gospel is an odour of death unto death (ii. 15), who adulterated God's word for gain (ii. 17), who brought letters of recommendation to Corinth (iii. 1), whose eyes the God of this world had blinded (iii. 11). See Introduction, pp. 384, 386. Besides these ring-leaders, the Apostle, having with the aid of Titus and perhaps of Timothy analysed the community carefully and correctly, knew that there was another group also distinct from those to whom he speaks in chapters i.—ix. It was composed of men whom the ministers of Satan had in a considerable measure drawn under their influence and beguiled and who consequently were in great peril of making entire shipwreck of their salvation. These are they to whom chapters x.—xii. 18, are directly addressed, their seducers being mentioned only in the third person, as standing beyond the pale of the Church and constituting by themselves a synagogue of Satan. The Apostle still hopes that he may win back their victims from the abyss on the verge of which they are hovering, but he has great apprehensions (xi. 3), and the strain in which he reproaches, taunts, and warns them, although animated with affection, is essentially different from that of the earlier chapters (i.—vii.) addressed to the better disposed.

He was also far from having delivered his entire message upon the burning sore of immorality. See Introduction, pp. 377, 379. His farewell word about this is contained in the passage which extends from xii. 21 to xiii. 10. In the first section of the Epistle this evil is expressly dealt with in chapter vi., which plainly has in view only those whom an earnest, but at the same time calm and kind exhortation might be expected to check; persons who sinned from previous habit and from weakness. But as there was an extreme party of Judaizers, so was there of sensualists, which upon an Antinomian theory deliberately discarded moral obligations to purity, and was "puffed up" (1 Cor. v. 2) by the conduct of the great offender. For these the gentle admonition of chap. vi. was quite out of place. They brought shame upon the Christian profession and branded St. Paul's ministry with the stigma which, in the eyes of the Judaizers it richly deserved, as encouraging immoral excesses by setting aside the Law. These professed libertines also had their following of men who, prompted by evil inclination, had given ear to their reasonings and were in danger of making common cause, although they were not yet identified with them. This following also the Apostle seems to distinguish from its leaders in xiii. 2: "I write to those who have sinned before and to all the rest!" where however see the Note. There is even an appear-
II. CORINTHIANS. X.  

\[v. 1-3.\]

Annece of a disposition to mention these leaders like the Judaizers, only in the third person (xii. 21). Nevertheless he threatens all that are involved in immorality and recommends those of whom he has not lost all hope to test themselves whether they be in the faith (xiii. 5), even though he does suggest the terrible possibility that they may be reprobate. There is not a syllable in this strain in chap. vi., because he was there warning a different class, whereas he is now dealing with delinquents much more deeply involved in guilt whom it was impossible to leave unwarmed.

The analysis of the final section is, according to the above remarks:—x.—xii. 18, against the Judaizers and their followers; xii. 19, 20, two verses of transition upon the general disorders of the Church xii. 19—xiii. 10 on immorality; xiii. 11, 12, 13, farewell greeting and benediction.

---

CHAPTER X.

1 Against the false apostles, who disgraced the weakness of his person and bodily presence, he set forth the spiritual might and authority, with which he is armed against all adversary powers, 7 assuring them that at his coming he will be found as mighty in word, as he is now in writing being absent, 13 and while taxing them for reaching out themselves beyond their compass, and vaunting themselves into other men’s labours.

NOW I Paul myself beseech you by the meekness and gentle-

ness of Christ, who in presence am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you:

2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present with that confidence, wherewith I think to be bold against some, which think of us as if we walked according to the flesh.

3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh:

CHAP. X. 1. He addresses directly those who are under the influence of the Judaizers, and indirectly those false guides themselves, of whom he speaks in the third person, not regarding them as members of the community. "But I myself Paul exhort you." He appropriates, with fine irony, the character with which his Judaizing friends are kind enough to accredit him. 'I, in the very character attributed to me.' The reference is to the last words of the verse:—the very man who in personal presence am humble among you but absent am bold toward you." Satisfied, for the moment, with this delineation of himself, he desires that it may continue always true, and that his readers may not give occasion, by their conduct, for his being the opposite of humble and meek when he comes again. He appeals to them therefore "through the meekness and goodness of Christ." Meekness deals gently with behaviour calculated to arouse indignation, and the original for goodness denotes that habit of mind which makes kindly allowance for wrong doing, and does not insist upon dealing with it according to the letter of the law (Aristot. Eth. Nic. vi. 11). The charge implied against him in the last words of the verse is more distinctly formulated in vv. 9, 10, and there is also an allusion to it in xiii. 3. See Intro. pp. 377, 378.

2. The substance of his exhortation he now gives in the stronger form of a prayer. "But " resumes 'I exhort,' in its altered form, and also slightly contrasts the courage, to which he begs that he may not have to resort when present with the courage attributed to him when absent. He "counts" to exercise a bold courage against "some," who "count" of him as walking according to the flesh, which they did by their imputation that he was afraid of offending heathen believers by strict discipline or that he courted popularity with them by over-ideniety. His prayer is that those who follow such leaders may not constrain him to use the same courage towards them as he purposes using towards those who had led them astray.

3. The reason of his prayer and of his purpose manifestation of courage is that the estimate taken of him is false. That he walks "in the flesh," he allows. All men, even the regenerate, walk in the flesh. They are liable to be tempted by the flesh, and suffer from the weaknesses of the flesh. But the flesh is not in them the dominant power, and he denies therefore that his warfare is waged "according to the flesh." Infirmities of the flesh rendered his body a very imperfect organ for the exercise of spiritual powers and one which may at times have depressed his
4. (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;)

5. Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

6. And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7. Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? If any man rate arguments, by which they constructed a composite system out of the purely objective elements of the Gospel and the principles of the Mosaic law, in which the latter entirely preponderated, St. Paul's Epistles and the Clementine Homilies amply prove. The high structures are not identical with the reasonings, but are the towering arrogance and pretensions put forward in the endeavours to thrust St. Paul out of Corinth. "The knowledge of God" was the spiritual Gospel preached by him and designated in iv. 6. "The knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ." After the overthrow of the siege-works follows the "leading captive" of "every thought into the obedience to Christ." The thoughts are not those of the beleaguers, for the context shows that the Apostle regarded them as reprobat, but those of the deserters from the garrison. When the works under shelter of which they now are shall have been pulled down, these runaways will be taken prisoners and their thoughts, temporarily decoyed into disloyalty, will be led back, like vanquished captives out of a rebellious district, and restored to the allegiance due to the true Christ. For the term "obedience" as applied to the thoughts, see ix. 11.

8. All will not be led into this happy captivity. Some will be too deep in defection to accept the gracious terms proposed. When the better-minded have, after surrender, been completely reconciled, he is ready to inflict full punishment upon the residuary recalcitrants. He leaves this painful part of his work to the last, so as to give the delinquents an ample locus poenitentiae. The penalty in his mind was probably a handing over to Satan whose service they refused to relinquish.

7. Endeavouring to effect his end before his visit, he delivers an assault at once upon one of the reasonings that most menaced the knowledge of God. He asks in surprise whether his readers regard merely external advantages destitute of all spiritual worth, such as his Judaizing enemies possessed. The specific point of their supposed superiority was the boast that they belonged to Christ in some special manner in which the Apostle did not. They had apparently known Christ...
trust to himself that he is Christ's let him of himself think this again, that, as he is Christ's, even so are we Christ's.

8 For though I should boast somewhat of our authority, which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction, I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters.

10 For his letters, say they, are weighty and powerful; but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such an one think this, that, such as we are in word by letters when we are absent, such

in the flesh, perhaps been disciples, possibly claimed the qualifications of Apostleship specified in Acts i. 21, 22. These claims of course could not have been advanced by all the Christ party, but the followers naturally took the designation of their chiefs. The Apostle however is speaking of the character of Paul, with the utmost self-confidence, that their connection with Christ was enough without commission from Him or any one else, to constitute them Christ's ministers (xi. 23) and Apostles. They thought there was no true Apostleship without this connection and denied the Apostleship of Paul. He demands that, as they are so confident in themselves and their position, they should, per contra (v. 10), of their own motion and without argument on his part, consider that he also must, in some sense or other, if not in theirs, belong to Christ. There is a vein of sarcasm in this. If they, without call or appointment, without recognition from the Twelve (Acts xv. 25), without compact (Gal. ii. 9) with them, without any great creative work to attest their Apostleship, were nevertheless so sure that they were Christ's ministers, could they not at once discern that he, and then in all these ways, was also a minister of Christ? But this, once admitted, involved great consequences, because his bond with Christ was wholly different from theirs and was, in fact, the basis both of his spiritual Gospel and his spiritual ministry.

8. A proof, stated hypothetically, of his belonging to Christ is that, if he should put forth higher claims about the authority and power committed to him, and utter more formidable disciplinary threats than he has either here, in vv. 4, 5, 6, or in the letters in which he was said to have displayed his paper-courage, he would not be put to shame by any facts showing his words to be empty boasts; but would be able so to substantiate them, as to leave no doubt as to the validity of his office. The language in which he describes his power involves the reason why he abstains from thus asserting it. The right use of it was to found, rear, and restore, and to work of that kind he could appeal over a vast area. But to fulminate and execute severities, as some would have him do (ii. 11), would be to follow the example of his antagonists, whose work was the antithesis of his, being constructive of Satanic strongholds, destructive of the Temple of God; while his was destructive of Satanic strongholds, constructive of the Church of Christ. He does not mean that he will not punish at all; but his chastisement itself would be for the general good, and for the salvation of those who suffered it (1 Cor. v. 5).

9. 10. The object of his reticence is — " in order that I may not seem, as it were, to terrify you through my letters." The ground of this sarcastic allusion is that he had been accused of such terrorism. The letters meant are, of course, those only which he had written to the Corinthians. The weighty and strong passages in them were those in which he denounced heathen immoralities, as we know that he did in all the Corinthian letters. Whether the taunt about the presence of his person referred at all to his unimposing bodily appearance, resulting from persecutions and hardships, which left upon him "the marks of the Lord Jesus," is very doubtful. See Introduction, p. 378. The contemptuous disregard of his word was the perseverance of the heathen believers in their excesses.

N.B. For a good note on the rendering "as it were" for ὡς ἐστιν, see Butt. N. T. Gram. p. 189. The single word of the original, rendered in the A.V. 'they say,' is a semi-impersonal use of the Greek equivalent for 'says.' It resembles the French 'on dit,' and the German 'man sagt.' Its literal force is apparently 'says this, that, or the other person,' but it is rightly translated "they say" in the current and vague sense of that phrase. The true reading, however, is the singular φωνή, and not the plural φωναί. But it is a mistake to suppose that the singular implies a reference to any individual critic of the Apostle's letters.

11. Suggests to any one who passes such criticisms upon him, to consider ἔτι:—that "such as we are in our word through letters
II. CORINTHIANS. X. 455

12 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the rule which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

14 For we stretch not ourselves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you: for we are when absent, such (are we), also when present, in our deed.” This is again a simple appeal to the work achieved by him in founding and building up such a Church as that of Corinth. Had he not been weighty and energetic in personal presence, that Church could not have existed. Its existence is the solid monument of his strength, and to this kind of proof alone will he point. The sense might indeed be that his adversaries may count upon his shewing the same energy in administering discipline when present, that he has confessedly shewn in his letters, but it is less favoured by the context.

He assigns the reason why he thus confines himself to the logic of facts, in a strain of sharp irony. One kind of courage he does lack. “For we have not the boldness to pair or compare ourselves with some of those that commend themselves.” The Corinthian church is his commendatory letter (iii. 2). His enemies, having no such letter, are driven to commend themselves. To rank himself with them or compete with them in this respect, demands a kind of courage which he does not possess. The word above rendered “to pair with,” means to ‘rate’ or ‘estimate amongst,’ and is so rendered in order to reproduce a play upon words in the original, which materially helps the sarcasm. “But,” while we thus refrain, “they” on the contrary, in complete self-reliance (αὐτοῖς), “measuring themselves among themselves, and comparing themselves with themselves, do not understand.” In settling the extent to which they are competent to carry their operations, as supposed ministers of the Gospel, they are guided by no other tests or landmarks than those which they choose to set up among themselves, and in appraising their own value they refer themselves to no objective standard but regard merely the advantages and claims to distinction, which they imagine to attach to their own persons, such as are specified in xi. 21, 22, and elsewhere. “Measuring themselves” and “comparing themselves,” refer to two different things. The former seems, at first sight, to denote taking a self-estimate of personal worth. But vv. 13, 14 show distinctly that the Apostle is speaking of the sphere of action which these persons thought themselves entitled and fitted to fill. The scope of his irony, it means that their self-measurements and self-comparisons had only blinded their understandings as to the true qualifications of an Apostle.

13 The result was that they set no limits either to their worth or their range of action. But he will not boast ad infinitum, “beyond all bounds.” With εἰς τὰ ἀντίθετα, which might however bear the sense given to it in the A.V., compare such expressions as εἰς τὰ μᾶλλον. He on his part will only assert himself with regard to his ministerial sphere, “according to the measure of the defined space, which God appointed to him as a measure,” i.e. for the express purpose of its serving as a rule for marking out his field of operations. But as God had assigned to him the whole of heathendom, his proper region was such as “to reach as far as you also.” Omne majus continet minus. The original for “defined space,” is a word naturalised in English, “canon,” which, meaning properly a measuring instrument, is transferred to that which is measured, by it, just as the Canon of Scripture is the body of sacred literature determined according to a certain rule or test.

14 Applies more closely the statement.
come as far as to you also in preaching the gospel of Christ:

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other men's labours; but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly.

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another man's line of things made ready to our hand.

17 "But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

18 For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

that he will not boast beyond bounds, though he does assert his claim upon Corinth, and adduces an accomplished fact as confirmation.

"For we do not, as though we were persons not reaching to you, over-extend ourselves, for as far as you also we forestalled (others) in the Gospel of Christ." The idea involved in over-extension of self is, as in v. 12, that of a commensurateness between the person and the place which he holds, such as exists between a man and a fitting garment. If any one wishing to be great, undertakes a province, which he cannot fill, he over-measures or over-extends himself. This was not the case with the Apostle, for God gave him his province and he filled the Corinthian district of it, having taken possession before any one else had set foot in it.

15. Expands his denial of over-extension of self, in pointed contrast to the conduct of his adversaries. "Not boasting beyond all bounds in other men's labours." His principle was not to preach where others had preached before him, nor build upon another man's foundation (Rom. xv. 20). His enemies spoke and acted as if the fruits of his missionary toil had been produced by them. Against this lawless and vaulting ambition he sets his own most legitimate aspirations. "But having hope, as your faith grows, to be magnified," or "to attain increased stature among you, in accordance with our defined space superabundantly," or "to an overgrowing." As opposed to a false over-extension of self, he hopes for a real growth to an excess of stature amongst the Corinthians. This growth of his depends upon the growth of their faith, which ought by this time to have been full and ripening. But the agents of Satan had sowed tares and impeded it. Pari passu with the progress of a new wholesome up-shoot of his own Apostolic authority and influence would also advance and would not only fill the whole space of Corinth and Achaia but would over-expend it. He would be enabled to carry his missionary labours to still remoter regions, which would nevertheless, according to the wide terms of his original commission, be "in accordance with his defined space." This anticipation was happily fulfilled, for we find him saying in Rom. xv. 32, that he has "no more place in these regions," i.e. in Achaia, which he had filled.

16. The purpose or result of his over-growing Achaia. The further countries which he had in view were Rome and Spain (Rom. xv. 22), and, if between writing this Epistle and that to the Romans, he visited Illyricum, he was also thinking of western Greece. Rom. xv. 19. In contrast with this lawful expansion of his work, he aims another side-blow at his opponents, by pointing out a consequence that will not follow, viz., that of boasting over work ready done in the space meted out to others. The countries he was contemplating were not yet evangelised. Christianity had made its way to Rome (Rom. i. 14, 15); but had plainly not been preached there by any Apostle. The unqualified tone in which he speaks in Rom. i. 14, 15, renders it very improbable that he is thinking, in v. 15 of this chapter, when he talks of 'getting his stature increased,' of obtaining a new concordat with the original Apostles similar to that of Gal. ii. 9, which should authorise him to embrace these new districts within his 'rule.' He could not now have deemed such a step necessary and, in fact, the original contract, which he had never violated, was perfectly general in its terms and still valid.

17. The rule of true boasting from Jer. xi. 23, which applies to him as well as to his enemies; only, while they do not observe it, he does. Its purport is that, whenever it is necessary to assert your work, powers, or claims before men, you should refer them all to their true source, which is God, as he invariably does. In v. 8 he ascribes his power to Christ, and in v. 13 the limits within which he boasts to God, whom, as in the Prophet, the title 'Lord' here designates, and not the Saviour.

18. Negative and positive foundation of the rule just cited: God commended him by the wide and continued successes of his work, and therefore guaranteed him to the world as a true Apostle. His antagonists, having no such successes, but being only self-critics, remained unapproved.
CHAPTER XI.

1 Out of his jealousy over the Corinthians, who seemed to make more account of the false apostles than of him, he entereth into a forced commendation of himself, 5 of his equality with the chief apostles, 7 of his preaching the gospel to them freely, and without any their charge, 13 shewing that he was not inferior to those deceitful workers in any legal prerogative, 23 and in the service of Christ, and in all kind of sufferings for his ministry, far superior.

WOULD to God ye could bear with me a little in my folly: and indeed I bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtility, so your minds should be

Testament the marriage-tie represents the holiness and closeness of the bond between God and his people. In the New Testament the spiritual Israel is the betrothed, and Christ, the incarnate God, is the Bridegroom. "For I betrothed you to one husband, to present you a pure virgin to Christ." What John the Baptist was to the Saviour before His first coming, the Apostle is before His second, the Friend of the Bridegroom. This intermediary made the first overtures, was the channel of communication between the engaged parties, arranged the preliminaries of the marriage and presented the bride to the bridegroom on the wedding day. The Apostle's office therefore would only terminate with the presentation of the church at the marriage of the Lamb, until which great day his responsibility as custodian of the Bride remains. When there is a possibility of unfaithfulness he shares the jealousy of the Bridegroom, which is also that of God, who makes the marriage feast for His Son.

3. The apprehension which causes the jealousy is placed in antithesis to the object of his office as Bridegroom's Friend. "But I fear lest perchance, as the serpent succeeded in beguiling Eve in his wicked cunning, so your thoughts should be corrupted from your singlemindedness to Christ." In this comparison the two cases are identical so far as the tempter, Satan, and his general method of wicked subtlety are concerned; analogous with regard to the instrumentality used and the particular form of the subtlety. The agency was in the one case, that of the serpent, "more subtle than any beast of the field" (Gen. iii. 1); in the other that of the Judaizers, "crafty workers (v. 13), ministers of Satan" (v. 13). In the one case the appeal was to a desire of the flesh (Gen. iii. 6) with a falsehood about God and His word, and the promise of a superiority of knowledge and position to be gained by disobedience; in the other to carnal Jewish prejudices with a perverted Gospel and the offer of a "Christ according to the flesh." The Judaizers asserted also that their Gospel furnished the
II. CORINTHIANS. XI. [v. 4—6.

corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

4. For if he that cometh preacheth another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.

5. For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles.

6. But though I be rude in speech,

true knowledge of God and Christ and that in the Christ preached by them the Jews had a prerogative claim superior to that of the Gentiles. St. Paul expresses his fear about the success of this seductive wooing in a manner which shews his great anxiety, but he abjures from the charge that his readers had actually yielded. The conceptions which the Church entertained of the true Christ are very suitably called her "thoughts" about the Bridegroom, and these would be corrupted and alienated from (φορεύονται) their undivided integrity of love, if there were substituted for Him a Christ according to the flesh. The comparison of the Church to Eve involves, as in iv. 16, the analogy between the natural and spiritual creations in each of which Satan played his part of adversary.

4. The reason of his apprehension. "For if indeed the omer preaches another Jesus, whom we did not preach, or ye take a different spirit, which ye did not take, or a different Gospel, which ye did not receive, ye were doing finely in tolerating (him)." Caustic satire and reproach. The deceivers are designated by an obnoxious characteristic of their class and by a term in the singular number, one of them being taken as a representative of his tribe, just as we might say 'the Englishman' for the whole nation without pointing to a particular individual any more than St. Paul does here. See Winer, 104; Butt. N. T. Gr. 253. "The omer" describes the false teachers as adventitious, a foreign and intrusive element. It may also mark the vast importance which they claimed. They were the 'coming men' as though St. Paul had been only their humble forerunner. The context, not the original form of expression, shews that the Apostle considered what he puts hypothetically to be actually going on. Jesus preached by the Judaizers was so different from the Jesus of St. Paul, that he is called another. See ch. iii. and v. 16. Introd. p. 383. From their preaching his readers took or 'caught' a spirit different in kind, from that which they took from his, i.e. a spirit of fear and bondage (Rom. viii. 16), instead of a spirit of liberty and adoption (iii. 17). They took also a Gospel of a radically different character from that which they "received" from him, for the glad tidings of free salvation, justification by faith, and sanctification by the spirit, were cancelled if men still had to be saved by imitating Christ's obedience to the law. From a different Christology followed a different theory of salvation. The A. V. endeavours to reproduce the distinction between the words, used in the original (αὐθεντέω and δικτάσεω) for 'take' and 'receive,' by rendering them 'receive' and 'accept.' The former (αὐθεντέω) does not imply a giver nor necessarily a distinct concurrence of the will, which the latter (δικτάσεω) does. If this is what is taking place at Corinth, 'Ye were doing finely,' he says, "in your toleration." It was so obvious an approximation to disloyalty to their first faith and love, a consumption by flesh of an initiation by spirit (Gal. iii. 3), that he cannot suppress this cutting reflection. He represents the toleration as a thing going on in past time, because he had in his mind the favourable report of Titus, and this spared him the pain of speaking as if it were continuing still. The A. V. assumes that the particle ὅταν is to be supplied, but that is not possible, and if it were so it would only help to take the edge off the sarcasm. The 'indeed' (μὲν) at the beginning of the verse makes a little difficulty. It suggests that a slightly antithetical apodosis is coming, which does not come. He possibly altered the form of his idea. If not, and if he really intended the isolated τὸν, the sense perhaps is:—if what I hear is indeed true!

5. His boasting now begins. They should not have tolerated:—"for I reckon that I am in nothing behind the superlative (or superexcellent or transcendent) Apostles!" It is difficult to reproduce the original exactly. It means that these men quite over-acted their assumed Apostolic part. He is not seriously comparing himself with them, but speaking with incisive bitterness of the supposed position of inferiority which they had tried to assign him. The notion that by these persons any of the original twelve are meant is a sheer figment. See Introduction, pp. 386, 387.

6. He allows one adverse criticism. He is untrained in speech, but that is more than compensated by the fact that he is not so in knowledge. Deficient in the unessential, the artistic skill to convey his teaching in an attractive rhetorical form, he is not lacking
yet not in knowledge; but we have been throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7. Have I committed an offence in abasing myself that ye might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely?

8. I robbed other churches, taking wages of them, to do you service.

9. And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied; and in all things I have kept myself from being burden-some unto you, and so will I keep myself.

10. As the truth of Christ is in

in the essential, a full acquaintance with the truth to be conveyed. The drawback acknowledged attached to him in common with the other Apostles (Acts iv. 13), but it was more conspicuous in him perhaps because of the superabundance of his new revelations, and the depth of laborious thought requisite to mould them into the organic whole which constitutes his Gospel. Language was a weak vehicle for these mysteries and their mutual relations. The defect which he acknowledges is illustrated by his letters, notwithstanding their amazing force and characteristic eloquence, and it was probably more apparent in his personal addresses than in his writings. He had been contrasted at Corinth with the accomplished Apollos. See 1 Cor. i. 17; ii. 4, 13 and cf. iv. 7. The apprehension of v. 3 seems to intimate that his adversaries had considerable persuasiveness of speech and there are independent proofs that the class to which they belonged contained men of no ordinary ability.

It is not clear whether the words rendered in the A.V., “thoroughly... in all things,” mean “in everything... among all,” or “in everything... in all details or particulars.” The drift is, in any case, that he and his fellow-labourers had, by their conduct in Corinth, been fully made known in their relation to the readers in all things, knowledge included, and so the judgment might be left to themselves.

N. B. The well-supported and more difficult reading ἔφωτόσαρες would apparently restrict the manifestation to the knowledge.

7. In all things—or was there anything in which this was not so? In one matter he had, after his Master’s example (viii. 9), shown his humility, but it had been turned against him. It was his gratuitous preaching (Intro. p. 386), and this point occupies him to the end of v. 12. When the object was that they might be exalted from the depths of heathenism to the heights of Christianity or from the yoke of the Law to the liberty of God’s sons, his converts were the last who should answer this question in the affirmative. Christ’s pure Gospel without price and the corrupted doctrine of the Judaizers at a cost
me, 'no man shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia. 11 Wherefore? because I love you not? God knoweth. 12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

13 For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. 14 And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. 15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness;

of the verse (φραγμέναι, not σφραγίσται) may be either that of damning up water so as to hinder its free course or barricading a road or stopping a mouth. The original word is used in this last sense in Rom. iii. 19, and it yields a good meaning here, "This boasting shall not be gagged with regard to me." The boasting is half personified and the reference of it to himself as well as the passive form, indicates his hope that the boasting will not be left entirely to him but be made by others for him. His specific mention of "the regions of Achaia" seems to imply that adherence to his self-denying ordinance was peculiarly necessary in that province and its capital. In trading and wealthy societies, where gain is the great end and more or less chicanery inevitable, there is a greater liability to the suspicion of a love of lucre, and money is more highly prized than in simpler and poorer communities. He goes so far as to say in 1 Cor. ix. 15 that it were better for him to die than to lose the glory of gratuitous preaching.

11, 12. The motive disclaimed may have been imputed to him or he may have thought that some of his readers might suspect it and feel hurt. His real motive is twofold. The Judaizers smote under the reproach which his refusal of support reflected upon them, and they tried to provoke him out of it by the taunt that he declined to use an Apostle's prerogative (1 Cor. ix. 13) because he distrusted his Apostleship. But if they calumniated his absence, how much more, if he deviated from it, would they calumniate him for rapacity? They would then obtain the handle against him which they desire, but shall not have. They did accuse him and his colleagues of mal-appropriation (xii. 14-18). They boasted too of their own unselfishness but their practice contradicted their profession (li. 17; xi. 20). They did not receive money or goods openly but they did so in secret. "They did not take, in order that they might take the more." He is resolved that his example shall constrain them to desist from this clandestine spoliation and be like himself. Herein appears the hypocritical villany which he now proceeds to denounce.

13. What the last verse implies with regard to his adversaries and states with regard to his own objects is not without ground. For men of such motives and conduct as he has just indicated are spurious Apostles usurping the title, authority, functions, and privileges, without the call, the mission, or the qualifications. It followed that they were deceitful workers (ψευδοδεσμοι) in God's vineyard because they could only maintain their false position by imposture. In order that their true character might not be detected they resorted to disguise and transfigured their outward semblance into that of Apostles by assuming the name, the mask, and the habit.

14. These dark touches might be thought by those who had given ear to the deceivers whom they depict too strong for truth. Not so. They are to the life:—"no marvel, for Satan himself changes his form into (that of) an angel of light." If the lord does this, it is natural that his servants should follow his example, using his power and imitating his wicked skill. "Like master, like man." Again, if the Prince of Darkness can stride over the vast gulph which separates his real nature from the outward appearance of an angel of light, his agents can step over the narrower chasm which divides them from Apostles of Christ. What makes the dividing space less in the latter case than it is in the former, is that beings of darkness and beings of light are opposites, whereas human beings are capable of living and moving in either region, darkness or light. They are flexible to either element, although they cannot belong to both at the same time. Satan, who is "the ape of God," counterfeits the Divine, and his strategy is a terrible caricature of the Almighty's ordinances. Whether St. Paul here ascribes to Satan a power of physical metamorphosis, by which he can assume at will false forms visible or seemingly visible to the eye, is doubtful. Such a power is conceivable, but the passages cited from the O.T. in support of it furnish inadequate illustrations (Gen. iii.; Job i.; 1 Kings xxii. 19). The strongest instance is the Lord's Temptation. The extracts adduced from Rabbinical literature to show that the notion
whose end shall be according to their works.

16 I say again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwise, yet as a fool receive me, that I may boast myself a little.

17 That which I speak, I speak it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly, in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 For ye suffer fools gladly, seeing ye yourselves are wise.

20 For ye suffer, if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour you,

had a place in Jewish theology or in the popular creed render little assistance. The view is not required for the Apostle's drift in this passage, which is clearly moral and spiritual and is rather clouded by it than elucidated. To draw explanation from so mysterious a region is, as has been said, like gathering light out of darkness. The literal interpretation is defended by many Roman Catholic expositors who appeal for proof to the lives of the saints.

15. The conclusion here drawn from the last verse naturally agrees in substance with the statement (v. 13) of which the same verse (14) assigned the reason, but is varied in form, in order to point the meaning more forcibly. No marvel, if the ministers of him whose nature and work is unrighteousness, who is the father of lies and hypocrisy, should mimic the exterior of persons whose character and work is righteousness. They simulated righteousness in their false boast of unselfishness (v. 12) to which there is clear allusion, but they doubtless boasted also of every form of righteousness which consisted in obedience to the law, asserting, as they did, that the righteousness of faith "without the law" (Rom. iii. 21) was only a pretext for the practice of iniquity, and that it made Christ "a minister of sin" (Gal. ii. 17). It cannot be supposed, with Meyer, that they pretended to be ministers of righteousness in St. Paul's sense. Their conduct presents itself to the Apostle as something deserving a direful retribution. Their professions are Apostolic, their deeds Satanic. Which will decide their ultimate fate? Their deeds. They will have their place with Satan and his angels (Matt. xxv. 41), with whom they have already cast in their lot (Phil. iii. 19). And the practical purport of this is not so much to console the pious (1), as Calvin says, but to deter the misguided.

18. As he is now advancing, after having asserted his claims on two points (vv. 6, 7), to what may be more properly called boasting (21-23), he inserts a further apologetic preface, strongly tinged with irony, which extends to the middle of v. 21. "Again, I say," refers to v. 1, where he also spoke of his boasting as folly. His desire for acceptance here is also an echo of his wish there. It matters not whether he is regarded as wise or foolish. His antagonists had made boasting and his readers had allowed it to be made the order of the day, and he requests only that he too should be permitted to comply a little with the fashion.

17. But he guards himself at all points. Feeling and meeting the possible objection that he was compromising Christ by boasting, he exempts his Master from the responsibility. What he was going to say was not "according to the (will of the) Lord"—not uttered by His direction or under the inspiration of His Spirit, but in folly—though only a quasi-folly, because committed in "this confidence of boasting" prevalent at Corinth, where it had become necessary to answer fools according to their folly. The words rendered "according to (the will of) the Lord" might mean "according to the spirit" or "temper of the Lord," who never boasted in this manner.

18. States explicitly the excuse first intimated. It is "because many boast according to the flesh, that I also will boast. The emphasis lies upon the reason. The words "according to the flesh" shew how such boasting cannot be "according to the will of the Lord," and that he requires some apology for resorting to it. They prepare his readers also for the carnal strain which he is about to adopt; carnal only because the things which were boasted of are external and circumstantial, such as Hebrew descent for instance (vv. 22, 23).

19. The encouragement which he has to commit folly is the pleasure which he says derivatively his readers in their wisdom take in the toleration of fools. See 1 Cor. iv. 10. It was a pleasant exercise of the superiority with which they accredited themselves.

20. The extent to which their sufferance had gone could be accounted for in no other way, and a fine spectacle it presented. Christ's freemen endured a tyranny which made them abject (καταδουλου] slaves (Gal. ii. 4; v. 1, 13); a rapacity which devoured their substance; a wicked craftiness which took them in snares (λιμπαδις, xii. 6; Luke v. 5); an inflated and over-extended self-exaltation (x. 14—xi. 4); a
21. "I speak in a strain suitable to
dishonour, on the ground you know
that we proved weak." He does not seek
toleration (v. 16) for such exercise of power
as he has just described, for he claims no such
power, but speaks as becomes a person with-
out position, rights, authority (ἀρχήσ) ac-
cepting for himself and his colleagues the allega-
tion made against him, on account of his feeble con-
duct on his second visit, that he was "weak"
(x. 10). The tense of the original (aorist)
shows that there is an allusion to that occasion,
and a slight particle (ὅταν) intimates that
the weakness was one imputed to him by others.
which idea may be expressed consistently with
the biting irony of the passage, by the words
"you know." The dishonour cannot possibly
be what that attaches to the Corinthians for
enduring the conduct of the Judaizers, because
the mention of it would be quite superfluous
after v. 30, and it would be out of all harmony
with the sarcastic tone. "Yet" though he
claims no title to maltreat the community,
and though he is called weak and speaks as
one without rights (ἀρχήσ) "in whatever any-
one is bold (it is folly that I speak), I
also am bold." Whatever grounds for daring
pretensions his adversaries have he has as well
as they. But remembering how worthless
these grounds are, he interrupts himself to
repeat that he speaks in folly.

22. The first of them concern Jewish ex-
 traction. They are stated in a rising scale,
and may be described broadly as nationality,
theocratic privileges, and the natural right of
inheritance in the promises of the Messiah's
kingdom. 'Hebrew,' a term of geographical
origin denoting one of the trans-Euphratian
stock to which Abraham belonged, distin-
guished the Jews and their language from
foreign nations and tongues (Gen. xxxix. 14, 17;
xii. 12; xiii. 32; Ex. i. 15, 16; &c., &c.). In
later times it implied mainly birth in the holy
land, adherence to the national religion, usages,
and traditions, knowledge of the ancient sacred
language in which the Scriptures were written,
and use of the popular Aramaic. 'Israelite'
implied the participation in the signal bless-
ings bestowed by God upon his elect people
which St. Paul commemorates in connection
with the name in Rom. ix. 4, 5, which passage the
reader must consult. 'The seed of Abraham'
was supposed to have an indefeasible claim
(Matt. ii. 9; John viii. 39) to a share in the
fulfilment of the great promise that in Abra-
ham's seed all the nations of the earth (Gen.
xxii. 18; xiii. 15; xv. 18; xviii. 18) should
be blessed. When St. Paul's opponents
claimed these designations in contrast with
him they meant that by his birth at Tarsus,
his Roman citizenship, his intercourse with
the Gentiles, his mode of treating the Mosaic
law, he had forfeited his nationality, his privi-
leges, his natural right in the Messiah's king-
dom. This is what he does not allow either
here or in Rom. xi. or Phil. iii. 5, 6. Upon
the grounds stated in these passages and in
Acts xxii. 3; xxiii. 6 he justly claims to
stand, with regard to all the points in ques-
tion, on the same level with his opponents,
although he attached a very different value
to them.

23. The controversy, however, turned
mainly upon their respective relations to Christ.
On Jewish ground he claims equality; as a
minister of Christ, superiority. "Ministers
of Christ are they? I talk in madness; I
am more." It does not materially affect
the general drift, whether this be taken to mean
that he is more a minister of Christ than they
or that, if they are ministers of Christ, he is
something beyond that. He does not con-
cede that they are ministers of Christ (v. 15),
but he takes them at their own valuation
and speaks with an incisive irony which
extends also to his madness. He knew his
adversaries would say, in their blind arrogance,
that it was a part of his habitual insanity
(vi. 13) to set himself above them when he
had in fact no true Apostleship at all. To
substantiate his assertion that he is 'more,'
he sketches in vivid detail a picture of his
labours and sufferings, bodily and mental.
The comparison between himself and them
with reference to these conclusively shews
how far they were from being ministers of
Christ. They did not labour, but claimed
24 Of the Jews five times received I stripes save one. 3. 25 Thrice was I beated with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered the fruits of bis labour (v. 15, 16) and, for a reason stated in Gal. vii. 12, they lacked while he had the indispensable sign of Apostleship foretold by Christ (Luke xxi. 12, 13), persecutions. See I. 4-10; iv. 7-16; vii. 4-10. The rush of his feelings over-rides exact construction in the first touches of the picture, but “in labours more superabundantly” is quite intelligible as it stands. If “more superabundantly” is a strict comparative, it means that his superabundance of labours is greater than theirs, and it would then be a covert taunt, because their superabundance of labours was none at all. In favour of taking it only as a strengthened positive is the simple word “often” at the end of the verse. The labours meant are the wearing toils of a missionary life (vi. 5). The stripes may either be the class of which he presently distinguishes two forms, or those which he received in popular uproars as distinguished from punishments at the hands of police. For imprisonments see vi. 5. The plural “deaths” denotes either the various forms in which death had impended or the many occasions on which he had been in articulo mortis. 24. Death leads him on to penal sufferings which were closely connected with death and execution (Matt. xxviii. 26) and in the infliction of which death itself sometimes actually occurred. He perhaps gives precedence to Jewish punishments because it was peculiarly galling to him to have been thus handled by his brethren according to the flesh whom he loved so fervently (Rom. ix. 2, 3), and because he would have escaped that treatment had he preached a Jewish Gospel. For scourging see Deut. xxv. 1; xxviii. 58 ff. The instrument used in later times is said to have resembled the Russian knout. The legal number of stripes was forty and the omission of one stripe was a precaution against violating the strict order (Deut. xxv. 3). Some think the scourge had three lashes and that thirteen strokes were administered. That St. Paul endured this penalty five times and yet lived is an illustration of his continual delivery over to death in order that the life of Christ might be manifested in his mortal flesh (iv. 11). 25. Beating with rods was the Roman punishment, inflicted with wands which were represented by the licitors’ fasces. Only one of the three cases is recorded (Acts xvi. 22) in which Silas also suffered. The Apostle might have saved himself by pleading his Roman citizenship (Acts xxii. 25), but he probably preferred to share the lot of his colleague. The one instance of stoning took place at Lystra and at the instigation of Jews (Acts xvii. 21). Five sea-voyages, besides the last to Rome, are recorded in the Acts, in any one of which, supposing what is not likely, that they were all the Apostle made, one or more of these shipwrecks may have occurred. “A night and day have I passed in the deep.” This must have befallen him in one of his shipwrecks, for context and language determine the deep to mean the sea. If the “in” were pressed it would indicate an experience like that of Jonah, but the expression need not mean more than that he had been driven about at sea on a raft or a fragment of wreck, or had been cast upon some rock ever and anon over-washed by the waves. The perfect tense adds to the vividness by placing the past in connection with the present and almost representing this experience as a characteristic of the Apostle. “I am one who have passed.” 26. He reverts from particulars to general and from verbs to substantives without the addition of the preposition “in,” as in v. 23, for which therefore it is well to substitute “by.” Such modifications are natural in a long catalogue, the items of which succeed one another in the rapid sweep of strong feeling, and they are not to be subjected too strictly to grammatical tests. His disasters by sea remind him of his journeys by land. The eightfold and emphatic reiteration of the word “perils” signifies that nowhere was he safe. The first two forms of peril are suggested by “journeyings.” He had to wade, swim or cross rivers at the risk of life from shoals, rapids, whirlpools or floods. Robbers, like those on the road between Jerusalem and Jericho in the parable, abounded in Palestine, Syria and Asia Minor. For instances of danger at the hands of his own race, who hated him for his apostasy and his doctrine, see Acts xiii. 45; 50; xiv. 2, 5; xvii. 5, 13; xviii. 16; xix. 9; xxi. 27. It was not unusual for them to lie in wait for him in his journeys, and he doubtless had these cases particularly in his mind. The heathen were generally stirred up against him by Jews, as most of the references just given prove. The same insecurity of life attended him in all places inhabited or uninhabited, whether the wilderness of land or of water. For towns, as Damascus, Acts ix. 29; 2 Cor. xi. 32; Antioch in Pisidia, Acts xiii. 50; Iconium, xiv. 5; Lystra, xiv. 19;
II. CORINTHIANS. XI. [v. 27—29.

perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren;

27 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.

28 Beside those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not upon him daily. 2. "Apart from those things which there are besides, viz., the daily onset upon me, the anxious care for all the Churches." According to this "the things which there are besides" are the onset and the care, and the construction is not so much an irregular apposition of nominatives to a genitive, as an exclamatory mode of speaking, which causes the Apostle to throw in two nominative cases without any regular construction. See Butt. N. T. Gramm. p. 69. The onset is the continual resort and reference which parties and individuals made to him with their various difficulties, questions, wants, complaints. These he describes by a strong term which denotes a hostile insurrection or assault (παρετροπή) which is applied in Numb. xxvi. 1 to the uprising of Korah, Dathan and Abiram. The objection to this application of a term which is generally used of enemies, is not a strong one because even his own acts, though the opposite of hostile, are, in the forcible diction which characterises these chapters, designated by hostile terms. See x. 5 (ιππαύξ) xi. and xii. 16. He does not mean actual hostility but a pressure as urgent as that of attacking enemies.

The second is the best of the two views above given, and the grammatical difficulty, which seems to be against it at first sight, is really in its favour, because it is natural and Pauline. It is right to say that some good scholars still maintain the rendering 'without' for παρετροπή and hold the drift to be:—'apart from those things that are without the care of all the churches presses upon me daily,' which is favoured, it appears, by the Coptic. This implies the reading παρετροπή upon which see note at end of chapter.

29. Illustration of the onset and the anxiety. Whenever anyone whose conscience, having been fashioned upon the law, has not grown to the true understanding and exercise of Christian freedom, is weak and therefore troubled by the use or abuse of this freedom on the part of others, the Apostle is, by the identification of sympathy, weak with him and feels his weakness as if it were his own (1 Cor. ix. 22). That this is the form of weakness meant is rendered almost certain by what we know of the relation of Jewish and heathen converts in mixed Churches and especially by such a passage as 1 Cor. viii. 7,
II. CORINTHIANS. XI.

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king kept the city of the Damascenes with a garrison, desirous to apprehend me:

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

which furnishes a case exactly in point in connection with meats offered to idols. These weak brethren resorted to him in their perplexities and made an onset upon him for counsel and help. They had clearly appealed to him both about the relations of the sexes and participation in idol-banquets. 

Who is entrapped (into sin) and I am not on fire, (with indignation)? The original for “is entrapped,” is too often rendered by ‘is offended,’ which does not give the proper sense. The case mentioned in 1 Cor. viii. 7 shows exactly what is meant here. If a man has the knowledge to discern that an idol is nothing and that the fact of meats having been offered to an idol makes no difference with regard to them, he is strong and may eat with impunity. If anyone has scruples of conscience about an idol and an impression that meats offered to it have been desecrated and become unholy, he is weak. If the example of the strong, who in strength eat such meats leads the weak to participate also, although he has a misgiving of conscience, he is decoyed into sin, his conscience is defiled. It is plain from 1 Cor. viii. 13, where the same word “entrap” occurs, that his indignation was much and often kindled by the reckless conduct of the wise and emancipated at Corinth.

30. A retrospective and prospective reflection furnishes the transition-step from what precedes to what follows. To make it wholly prospective because of the future tense is far too rigid and quite unnecessary. That tense in “I will boast of the things pertaining to my weakness” expresses the standing rule by which, whenever circumstances require it, he does and will boast, and which distinguishes his boasting from that of his adversaries. “Weak” in the last verse suggested “weakness” in this. His sympathy with the weak and his indignation are part of his anxious care (v. 28), and imply an unrest of flesh and spirit which is justly termed weakness. But the reference plainly extends to vv. 23-28, his sense of the term weakness being a wide one.

The God and Father of Him who is the Truth and will hereafter be the judge of truth and falsehood, God, who knows all things, knows that he lies not in what he has said and is going to say. “Who is blessed for ever” New Test.—VOL III.

is a brief pious doxology adding solemnity to the asseveration and perhaps expresses thankfulness for deliverance and support in all these distresses. The adjuration points to something forthcoming which might be thought incredible. It does not refer chiefly to the specific incident of vv. 32, 33, because that, although remarkable, must have been known at least to the Judaizers in Corinth, but extends to the supernatural experiences of the next chapter and applies mainly and most appropriately to them, inasmuch as they were very extraordinary, and no one could vouch for them but the Apostle himself. Thus, although there is apparently an abrupt apophasis at the end of this chapter, yet the narrative really runs on unbroken.

32, 33. “In Damascus the Ethnarch (Governor) of Aretas the king was watching the city of Damascus, to apprehend me, etc., etc.” Acts ix. 23-25. There is reason to think that the word “desirous” (βιω月末) of the A. V. was imported into the text. This event also illustrates the Apostle’s weakness because he was driven to extreme straits and his mode of escape was perhaps not without a tinge of seeming ignominy. For Aretas, Harethath II., surnamed Aeneas and called the ‘friend of the people,’ King of Arabia from B.C. 7 to A.D. 40, see Smith’s ‘Dict. of Bible.’ He seems to have wrested Damascus from the Romans and to have entrusted it to an ethnarch or provincial governor. If the statement be true that there were 10,000 Jews in Damascus, it is not surprising that they should have had influence enough to induce the governor to watch the gates of the City (κατοπτριζον) by a military or police force, and this would sufficiently explain what is said in Acts ix. 24, that the Jesus watched the gates. The window may have been that of some disciple’s house, situated like Rahab’s on the town-wall, which would account for the disciples (Acts ix. 25) finding safe access in spite of the watch. The name of Damascus, somewhat irregularly repeated here in that of its inhabitants was deeply graven on the Apostle’s memory, being inseparably associated with the great turning point of his life, which is the reason why his experience there is mentioned. The drift is:—

2 G
there, where my minstry began, began also
my weakness; there the persecutor became
the persecuted." This also partly accounts
for his specifying only this one deliverance
out of many. Similarly in the next chapter
he speaks of only one vision and revelation.
Each was, in fact, a type of its class. If
the vision and revelation were coincident or
nearly so, in point of time, with the deliver-
ance there was good ground for adducing
them together. If his preaching at Damas-
cus, which immediately preceded the attempt
upon his life, was subsequent to his three years' sojourn in Arabia, i.e. about A.D. 43, as this
Epistle was written A.D. 57, the deduction of
14 years (xii. 2) would bring the vision and
revelation exactly to A.D. 43. His return
to Jerusalem also is spoken of in the Acts
ix. 25, 26 as if it followed immediately after
his departure from Damascus. See Gal. i.
17, and Bp. Lightfoot's note on St. Paul's
sojourn in Arabia.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on ver. 28.

28. Besides some support from MSS. and
the concurrence of the Greek Fathers, ἐνσωτη-
σας, the reading of the Received Text, has
some weighty internal considerations in its
favour, which may be seen in Osianl. Hofm.
or Klopger. But it must be allowed that
external evidence is almost overwhelming
on the side of ἐνσωτησις, which is found in Sin. B.
D. E. F. G. 17, and is reproduced in the 'in-
stantia' of the Vulgate.

The two words are in competition also in
Acts xxiv. 12, and it is asserted that ἐνσωτη-
sας was imported from that passage into the
one before us. If ἐνσωτησις is the true
reading there, the circumstance is in favour
of it here, because it occurs in a speech of
St. Paul, which would show that it was a
Pauline word. Some of the editors are most
arbitrary. In Acts xxiv. 12 ἑστις. is supported by
Sin. A.B.E. and several cursiveS. If Meyer
can put aside that strong testimony with a
single word 'Schreibehler' (clerical error)
and Alford with the phrase "correction to
more simple word," and prefer ἐνσωτησις
there, why do they not determine in the
same way here?

They admit that their stumbling-block is
the hostile sense of ἐνσωτησις, which is
precisely what would make it the more suit-
able term. Some editors who read ἐνσωτησις
seem to find no difficulty as to its meaning,
and Meyer is satisfied with a construction
out of all harmony with the style from v. 22
onward and with a rendering which has
fairly been called a 'tautological curiosity.'
If ἐνσωτησις is the true reading it is probable
that it should be rendered in a sense approxi-
mating that of ἐνσωτησις by some such
term as 'onset,' 'pressure on,' and the verb
from which it is derived undoubtedly has
some similar senses. This is the view of
Rücker, who accepts ἐνσωτησις as the true
reading, as well as of Buttm. (N. T. Gr.
p. 156) and Klopger who reject it. "He ἑστις
τῆς κοινοῦς in 2 Macc. vi. 3 with Grimm's
interpretation of it may be compared. Meyer's
remark that ἑστις there denotes 'setting in'
or 'beginning' is very doubtful. Other
meanings of the word, some possible and
others impossible, which have been tried
upon the verse under discussion, all yield a
forced or obscure sense.

CHAPTER XII.

1. For commending of his apostleship, though he
might glory of his wonderful revelations, yet he rather chooseth to glory of his instru-
ments, 11 blaming them for forcing him to this
vain boasting. 14 Hepromiseth to come to them again; but yet altogether in the affection

of a father, 20 although he feareth he shall
to his grief find many offenders, and publick
disorders there.

IT is not expedient for me doubt-
less to glory. I will come to
visions and revelations of the Lord.

CHAP. XII. 1. "To boast indeed is not
expedient for me." It is, as before said, folly,
and conducive to his best welfare.
The reason why he makes the remark (ὑπὸ) is
that he will now adduce those supernatural
experiences, which raised him so immea-
surably above his adversaries, but which
might easily prompt any one to boasting, and
which they regarded as vainglorious halluci-
nations (vi. 13). He intimates that he
knows well the folly of boasting about
them and accordingly, in speaking of them,
he scrupulously shuns every semblance of a
boast.

N.B. This interpretation is based upon the
Received Text which is here approved by
many good expositors. But the reading which
has by far the strongest external support yields
II. CORINTHIANS. XII.

2 I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

the following rendering:—"I needs must boast; though (it is) not expedient, yet I will come to visions and revelations, the drift of which is quite intelligible and suits the context excellently. See note at end of chapter.

The original for visions (παντοπως) signifies, with only one or two exceptions, supernatural sights presented to the spiritual or spiritualised gaze of one sleeping, waking, or in ecstasy. The "visions and revelations of the Lord" does not mean those in which the Lord was the person seen and revealed, although the words admit of that sense (Mat. iii. 2; Luke xxxiv. 23), but those of which the Lord is the author and giver. See the undoubted parallels, Gal. ii. 12 and Apoc. i. 1. Where "the revelation of Jesus Christ" is mentioned (1 Cor. i. 7; 2 Thess. i. 7; 1 Pet. i. 7, 13; iv. 13), it signifies His manifestation at the Parousia, which cannot be the sense here. Visions and revelations thus include not only those cases in which Christ himself was seen and revealed and of which He was also the author, but also others, such as that of Acts xvi. 9. The vision "permits only to see," but the revelation "discloses also something deeper than the thing seen" (Theophyl.). It may reasonably be conjectured that, in the case before us, the vision and revelation concerned, in part at least, St. Paul's return from Arabia to a new sphere of action. For other instances take, above all, his conversion and see Gal. ii. 1, compared with Acts xvi, 2 ff.; Acts xvi. 9; xviii. 9; xxii. 17-23. As he received many such disclosures of Christ's will, his teaching, his conduct of his ministry, and his government of the churches were placed beyond question or appeal.

For the reading in the first part of this verse see note at end of chapter.

2. One example, "I know of a man in Christ, fourteen years ago, whether in the body I know not, or out of the body I know not; God knoweth: (I know) of such a one as this (having been) rapt as far as the third heaven." He shrank from saying 'I was rapt,' which would have seemed like a boast. His personal will was for the time so annihilated that he speaks of himself as though he were another and not himself. "A man in Christ" might merely describe his Christian state, but in this context it expresses that his individuality was swallowed up in Christ; that it was the spirit of Christ in which he lived that rendered him capable of the translation and its experiences. "Fourteen years ago" is to be connected with "having been rapt," as are also the phrases "in the body," and "out of the body." The specific date enables us to synchronise this rapture approximately with the events at Damascus, but whether it was meant to serve the same purpose for the first readers is not clear. It seems to come from the Apostle quite naturally in the vividness of his recollection as marking the great epoch of his life. The undercurrent of his own thought probably was:—"at that town and time, the place and the period of God's mercy towards me, began not my sufferings only but also my super-terrestrial experiences." The circumstance of the exact time shews that he is describing an actual fact, not an imagination. Of the rapture he knows. What he does not know is whether the entire man was rapt, body included, or the man without the body. Which of these two things had befallen him was his doubt and not at all "whether he was carried up into heaven literally or only in a figure." His human consciousness, as to this point, was obiterated, and he must also have been alone at the time of rapture, otherwise he could have solved his doubt by enquiry of others. All interpretations which exclude from his thoughts the notion of a possible bodily translation are against the plain drift of his language. Translation in the body was an idea familiar to Jewish theology and Irenæus thought that Enoch and Elijah had been admitted into Paradise in the body. "Such a one as this" means a man in Christ, so long ago, unconscious whether in the body or disembodied. The original for "rapt" (ἀπορρέω) denotes more than once miraculous seizure and transportation, not always into heaven but sometimes from one earthly place to another, the agent being the Holy Spirit. Ez. iii. 14, where the word however is ἐγκαίνεις. 1 Kin. xviii. 12; Acts viii. 39, 40. "As far as the third heaven." The interpretations of these words which deny their numerical and local sense, taking the number three only as significant of what is excellent and perfect, may be discarded. Nothing could indicate number and space more pointedly than "as far as." But it is impossible to determine precisely St. Paul's conception of the heavens. He mentions here three heavens with Paradise in v. 4, and the passage into Paradise is assuredly a further stage of the translation. Paradise can only be identified with the third heaven on the supposition that "as far as" means 'to the confines of.' Yet it seems to be universally assumed that the first stage of the translation was into the third heaven. Scripture nowhere gives an enu-
3 And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) 4 How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

5 Of such an one will I glory: yet of myself I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool; for I will say the truth: but now I forbear, lest any man should think

meration or a scale of the heavens, but a plurality of them is recognised both in the O. and the N.T. Christ is said in Eph. iv. 10 to have "ascended high-above all the heavens," where "all" has a prominent position, and in iv. 14 to have "passed through the heavens," from which it might be inferred that "the Paradise of God" (Rev. ii. 7), where Christ dwells is an altogether super-celestial sphere, yet he is said in Heb. ix. 24 to have entered "into heaven itself," which may mean "the very heaven" and elsewhere, as in Luke xxiv. 51, Acts i. 11, "into the heaven." But the heaven which God and Christ inhabit is itself represented as complex, as in the Lord's Prayer: "Our Father which art in the heavens," while we have in the same prayer "thy will be done as in heaven so on earth" (Matt. vi. 10), where, however, "heaven" does not necessarily denote God's immediate or personal habitation. St. Paul, no doubt, had a definite conception, but he has not declared it distinctly. The majority of expositors think that he recognises three heavens, of which the third is Paradise.

3. The copulative "and" itself shows what he here knows is something more than what he stated in v. 2, and therefore that his admission into Paradise was a continuation of his translation. If it were not so, this verse would be pure tautology. "Such a one as this" therefore now implies, in addition to its meaning in v. 2, 'a man rapt as far as the third heaven.' At the gates of Paradise, before access to the divine presence, he seems to pause with reverential awe, and restates his unconsciousness as to his embodied or disembodied state in the same language as before, substituting only " apart from" for "out of." The repetition may imply that he conceived the possibility of his body having been left in the vestibule of Paradise, so to speak, and that his spirit and soul alone were admitted.


43. He does not say what he saw but only what he heard; but, as he is giving an account of vision, and also speaking with reverential reticence, we are justified in inferring that he saw the things incorruptible, undefiled, which fade not away, reserved in heaven for the Saints (1 Pet. i. 4), and that he beheld the glorified Lord. He heard

"unutterable utterances" which seems the only way of reproducing the play upon words of the original. "Unutterable" means what the divine will does not allow to be uttered, as is explained by the words that follow:—"which is not permitted for a man to speak," the original for "permitted" denoting authorization. The word for "speak" is that used in xi. 17, 21, and may involve a suggestion of the profundity there would be in making the contents of the revelation matter of ordinary communication, and this is, no doubt, part of the force of the word "man," for a human being may not treat divine disclosures as he will.

5. The application of the facts, just narrated, to the boasting which is the question in hand. "On behalf of such a one as this I will boast," if need be, "but on behalf of myself I will not boast." "Such a one as this" has again accumulated its meaning, and signifies now, in addition to what it implied before, one who "heard unutterable utterances." On behalf of one, who in all this was entirely passive and recipient, without exertion or merit of his own, he will boast, but not on behalf of his personal self, his own will, work and service, except with regard to his infirmities. He has already in mind the infirmity of v. 7, the correlate.of his visions and revelations.

6. The reason why he will thus limit his boasting, although he need not do it. "For if I should be disposed to boast, I shall not be a fool, for I will speak the truth." Should he please to go beyond merely passive and receptive experience, and adduce something connected with his visions and revelations and referring to himself, which he saw at liberty to communicate and which did admit of being put forth as a ground of boasting, still he would not be guilty of that vaunting folly which violates truth, for there really was something of that kind. "But I forbear, lest any one should take account with reference to me beyond what he sees me (to be) or hears aught from me." Whatever estimate his person or speech, as known to his readers, might occasion, he was content with it and would not try to raise it by anything to which their eyes and ears could not bear testimony. He knew in fact that all personal
II. CORINTHIANS. XII.

of me above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

defects were in accordance with God's will and served His purpose, as he goes on to shew.

N. B. It is doubtful whether 'aught' should stand in the text.

7. "And" he has good reason for abstaining.

"In order that I should not be over-exalted with the excess of the revelations" and so inclined to make them matters of self-glorification "there was given to me" (by God) a stake for the flesh, an angel of Satan to buffet me, that I should not be over-exalted." The simple copulative "and," which plainly joins "was given" with "I forbear," shows that the boasting from which he abstains refers to something closely associated with his visions and revelations, if it was not an actual part of these, immediately concerning himself personally. "The excess of the revelations" means that they transcended all ordinary limits either in measure or in character or both. It is still contended by some good expositors that the original for "stake" here means 'thorn,' chiefly on the ground that "stake" yields an exaggerated figure, the answer to which is that the affliction, being altogether extraordinary, required to be forcibly expressed. Certainly a stake was an instrument of pain because of its pointed end; "thorns (κασθώλαι) and stakes (σκιλοτης) signify pains because of their sharpness," Artemidorus. The right translation, however, is not a 'stake in the flesh,' which would yield an overstrained idea, but a stake for the flesh. Now the stake was used for the dreadful punishment of impaling and a derivative of the word for stake (ἀνακολοπτίσμον) signifies (Herod. ix. 28) a form of execution not essentially different from crucifixion. The Greek for a cross (σταυρός) denotes an upright stake (crux simplex) and σβατυν only differs from it in having a sharp end, which a σταυρός also might have. If the Apostle merely meant a thorn, he might have used the more exact word σκόλιον. The mortification or crucifixion of the flesh is a familiar idea with him (Rom. vi. 6; viii. 13), and it seems almost certain that this was in his mind. The flesh signifies here the sinful principle from which the tendency to self-exaltation arises and which, as it is seated in the body (Rom. vi. 6; vii. 23; viii. 13; 1 Cor. ix. 27), is capable of subjugation and destruction by bodily suffering. The giver of the stake cannot be Satan, who is but the secondary agent, subservient to an over-ruling God (Job i. 11, 12), and whose object it could not have been to prevent over-exaltation, but only to torment and cripple and, if possible, to ruin. The stake is further described as "an angel of Satan," and the seeming incongruity of so designating a stake may perhaps be accounted for by his sense of the suffering attached to it, which is so strong that he cannot regard niceties of style, but identifies the instrument of torture with Satan's subordinate who bears it. St. Paul recognises here and elsewhere Satan's derived power of inflicting bodily suffering and disease (1 Cor. v. 5). Satan's immediate purpose was to "buffet" his victim or 'smite him with the fist' (κολοφησθαι). These words go closely with "angel," which contains etymologically the idea of a person sent. They express violence, like that of a stunning blow, and indignity. The buffeting may denote the first assault, the maltreatment preliminary to the more deadly application of the stake. The tense of the original implies that the buffeting was a continued one, unceasing without interruption, but inflicted from time to time. The impression given by the passage is that the buffettings and sufferings were closely connected in time with the visions and revelations. The words which repeat the divine purpose at the end of the verse are omitted in many good MSS, but this may be accounted for by the copyists not appreciating the repetition and thinking that the same thing would not be said twice or supposing, when their eyes fell upon the words, that they were those which they had just written. The repetition was prompted by the importance of God's purpose to the Apostle's argument, and the great consolation it involved.

The sense might be 'concerning this' angel of Satan, but the reference probably is to the whole statement of v. 7, and in that case, Luther's rendering "for this" is the right one, the drift being 'for its removal!' Knowing the divine purpose St. Paul must have felt the pain and humiliation of the stake very deeply before he prayed for deliverance. One is irresistibly reminded of Gethsemane. He prayed three times and no more, not on account of any religious significance of the number nor even after his Master's example, but for the plain reason that after
II. CORINTHIANS. XII. [v. 9—10.

9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in the third petition he received his answer. The word for “bougth” (παρακάλεσα) is never used in scripture for prayer to God, and Socinians have picked out of it an argument against Christ's divinity, as signifying not invocatio but advocatio, as if one who is 'advocatus' may not be 'invocatus' also. Even St. John applies a derivative of the same word, Paraclete, advocatus, to the Saviour, 1 Jno. ii. 1, "If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father." Παρακλήσας was precisely the right word here, for Paul, now the sufferer, calls to his side or aid Christ, once the sufferer, that He may remove that distressing affliction, which the servant thought, in his human view, an impediment to his Master's cause.

On the stake for the flesh, see note at end of chapter.

9. The Lord's reply. "He has said to me." The perfect tense denotes that what the Lord said was a standing answer valid for the Apostle's whole life. It has the solemnity of the formula so often used by the Prophets:—'Thus saith the Lord,' or 'The Lord hath said,' and approaches the force of 'It is written.' The context is entirely against the notion that this answer was a 'testimonial Sancti Spiritus internum.' It was a special communication belonging to the same class with the revelations of which he has been speaking and a part of one of them. "Sufficient for thee is my grace." The prayer was not granted any more than the Saviour's in the garden but a surpassing compensation was made. The close relation in which the words place the Apostle and the Saviour was itself unspeakable comfort. Christ's gracious favour exercised in bestowing gifts upon men according to their need sufficed for maintaining His servant's energy for his work and the great law upon which such sufficiency is based is: my power is perfected in weakness." The logical conclusion (οὐσία is a delightful revolution in his feelings and views about weaknesses. "Most gladly therefore will I rather" (than desire the removal of them, v. 8) "boast in my weaknesses." The position of 'rather' in the original shows that it cannot mean 'rather than in anything else' or 'rather than in revelations' and the idea above given is strictly in accordance with the context. The boasting, of course, implies a real inward joy like that of Acts iv. 41, but still must be taken in the full sense in which it is one of the key-notes to the whole passage, as uttered glorying. The object of it is that he may obtain the promise of grace and power implied in Christ's answer:—"in order that there may tabernacle upon me the power of Christ." The figure has not the same purport as in Ps. xxxvi. 5, "in the secret place of His tabernacle shall He hide me," where it signifies outward protection more than inward strength. Nor is the idea that of Christ's power descending to over-canopy him as with the awning of a tent. But the Apostle is the person upon whom the power comes and itself makes tabernacle. In-dwelling is not expressed in the words, but follows from on-dwelling, by reason of the nature of the case. The Holy Spirit, the agent of Christ's power, subsisting and operating within, is often represented as being over or coming upon the subjects in whom it works. "The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee and the power of the most High shall overshadow thee" (Luke i. 35). The Spirit descended upon our Lord at His Baptism (Luke iii. 22) and 'abode upon Him' (Jno. i. 32), and immediately afterwards we hear that he was full of the Holy Spirit (Luke iv. 1). The two ideas are brought together in Acts i. 8. "Ye shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit has come upon you;" and again, ii. 3, 4, "it settled upon them and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost." The very term for 'to tabernacle' in the original, occurs in profane Greek with precisely the same construction (ἰνι with acc.) to denote soldiers taking up quarters in houses, exactly as we speak of being quartered or billeted upon houses, Polyb. Hist. IV. xviii. 8; cf. IV. xlii. 1. There is probably an allusion to the Tabernacle and the Shechinah. In Exodus xl. 34, 35, the luminous cloud abode upon the tent of the congregation and the glory of the Lord filled the tabernacle, which closely foreshadows the settling of the Pentecostal fire upon the disciples and their being filled with the Holy Ghost. The on-dwelling and in-dwelling of the Shechinah is confessedly the type of God's presence amongst and in his people in the higher sense of the New Dispensation and the representation of the Church as a whole and of its members individually as Temples of God occurs several times in the two Epistles to the Corinthians.

10. A final inference from the relation of his weakness to Christ's strength and going beyond that of the last verse, by passing from a feeling of elation in weaknesses to a calm
II. CORINTHIANS. XII.

11 I am become a fool in glorying; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were approved of them by the mind and judgment (εὐδοκεῖ, v. 8), and by specifying various extreme forms of them with a sense of triumph that, in all, the strength of grace conquers the feebleness of the flesh. He then worthy winds up his boasting by a noble Christian paradox, which identifies the times of his weakness precisely with those of his strength.

11. On a retrospect, however, he finds that he has actually shewn himself in that character, which he would have no one ascribe to him (xi. 16), but in which nevertheless his readers must accept him. The extenuating circumstance, excusing him and inculpating them, is compulsion. He has not been a free agent. "It was ye that compelled me." The reason of the necessity laid upon him is:—"I," not others, "ought to have been commended by you." They not only failed in their obligation to make his boasting needless by their own commendation of him but they set his opponents above him and commended them. The emphasis upon I cannot well express according to the context any other antithesis except that between the Apostle and his adversaries as objects of commendation. The ground of their obligation to commend him:—"For in nothing did I fall short of the superlative Apostles, nothing though I am." The difference between this statement and that of xi. 5, is that there he asserted a general and standing non-inferiority, whereas he here asserts a non-inferiority proved in his actual ministry among them (aor.). Hence the clause is a transition-link to the appeal to facts (11 ff.) with which they were acquainted. In himself he was nothing, only by the grace of Christ had he been, what he had been in Corinth (1 Cor. xv. 9, 10).

12. Proof of his equality. "The signs indeed of an Apostle were fully wrought among you in all patient endurance by signs and wonders and powers." In signs (A. V.) is based on a very doubtful reading. The original is 'of the Apostle,' the article marking that an individual is taken as the representative of his class (xi. 4). The "indeed" implies something antithetical, which however the reader has to supply for himself. The proofs "indeed" of Apostleship were furnish'd, but their right effect did not follow.

The full force of the expressed and the suppressed ideas might perhaps be rendered by 'at any rate' or 'at least.' 'The signs of an Apostle' are miracles as credentials of genuine Apostleship. St. Paul was placed on a level with the original Twelve by possession of the superhuman powers with which Christ had formally endowed them all (Luke ix. 1, 2). The miracle was a true and essential sign of an Apostle, and the fact that his adversaries had no power of miracles was probably the point of inferiority which galled them most and it was impossible to leave it unmentioned. If they wrought miracles, it could only have been by Satanic help, but if they had put forward any pretensions to supernatural agency, there would probably have been some allusion to it. The passive form "were wrought" was used purposely to exclude all idea of the Apostle having wrought them by his own power, Acts iii. 12, 16; Rom. xv. 18. The original (κατὰ τὸν ἐνεργεῖ) is a strong term meaning more than merely were 'realised' and, if not so much as 'pericere rem arduam factuque difficulm, yet expressing the complete and unmistakable performance of miracles in the sense in which St. John calls them continually by a cognate term "works." The frame of mind in which his miracles had been wrought was "all patient endurance." It can easily be imagined how often he may have been tempted in his difficulties at Corinth to resort to the miracle in order to confirm the doctrine of Christ crucified (1 Cor. i. 23) by a sign following (Mark xvi. 20), or to inflict a well-merited punishment (Acts xiii. 11), or to establish his Apostolic claims, or to assert his strength when taunted with weakness. Accordingly he had wrought miracles many and various, as the accumulated designations of them here intimate, but he had exercised a long-suffering endurance which did not fail him in any circumstances, (μαρτυρία) having been patient under opposition and calumny and in tolerating error and weakness. He had been forbearing in his recourse to miracles and had left, as much as possible, his Gospel and himself to the best of all human attestations, the inward approval of conscience. See iv. 2, and v. 11. For the combination of the three terms, signs, wonders, and powers compare Acts ii. 22; 2 Thess. ii. 9; Heb. ii. 4.

13. Newly-founded Churches naturally regarded miracles as a glory and a blessing,
inferior to other churches, except it be that I myself was not burdensome to you? forgive me this wrong.

14. Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you: for I seek not your's, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly spend and the reasoning of this verse is: You had this distinction and benefit, 'for (γινομεν)' there is nothing in which you were made to fall short beyond. The word of the Churches.' But instead of saying categorically 'there is nothing in which,' he says with animation 'what is there in which?" He does not imply either ironically or really that the churches founded by him were at a disadvantage as compared with those founded by others. But he had treated the Corinthians with even greater favour than the rest of his own churches (see vi. 8), as a single exception, which he specifies with sarcastic reproach, proves. He revert to his gratuitous preaching of the Gospel, upon which he had already dwelt in vi. 7-12, because he has not yet said his last word about it. He has still a slander to repel and a claim to make for his colleagues (v. 17, 18), whom he was on the point of sending to them a second time. The subject led him on in the last chapter to the contrast between himself and his adversaries, and it now leads him on to the likeness between himself and his companions. He distinguishes his person from his office, in which case the drift would be: 'I who did the work and exhibited the signs of an Apostle, and therefore had a right to maintenance, did not personally become a burden to you; or himself from his adversaries, in which case the force is: 'I who had most right to support, was the very person who did not do what others with no claim did.' His prayer to be pardoned for this as an injury is a cutting version of what he said without irony in vi. 8.

14. The pardon is to be prospective as well as retrospective, because he purports on his forthcoming visit to use the same astuteness as he had done on his two previous visits. It was well to state this beforehand, because after the establishment of reconciliation he might be pressed with offers of alimony, which however it would have damaged his cause to accept, and this announcement would make it easier to decline. The first words of the verse might, as far as language goes, express only a third readiness to come, although it would be rather illogical to represent a readiness to come as a third term to one actual coming and a second readiness to come. But the context is decisive in favour of two antecedent actual visits, because it would be absurd to allude to a disinterestedness which he only would have observed had he come when he was ready to do so a second time, as a reason why he should maintain his thornish his upon this point. The reason why the words a third time are not placed in juxtaposition with to come, is that they stand first for the sake of emphasis. In order to strip his resolve to persist in taking nothing of all appearance of unkindness, he assigns as his motive the very opposite of that suggested in vi. 11. "For I do not seek what is your's, but you." The motto of the whole Epistle might have been "my son, give me thine heart." He bases this motive affectaneously and almost playfully upon the duty which parents owe to children: "For there is no obligation upon children to store up treasure for parents, but upon parents for children." The links of connection are subtle and beautiful. By taking their unrighteous mammon he might lose them, but if by desiring them he should win them, he would win them not for himself, but for Christ, and they would receive from Christ through his hands the true riches. He would thus fulfill his paternal obligation to lay up treasures for them (vi. 19).

15. But he is ready to go far beyond the requirements of this natural law. "But I will most gladly spend and be spent to the uttermost for your souls." He will not only lay up riches for them, but will give as purchase-money in order to gain and save their souls, all that he has, will spare no labour, self-denial, suffering; nay, will be lavish of himself to the complete wearing out of his earthen-vessel, that they may receive of the treasure which it contains. Cf. Rom. ix. 3; 1 Cor. ix. 23-27; Phil. ii. 17. He cannot forbear appending to this avowal of ever-increasing and superabounding love, a reproachful reminder of the niggard and, until recently, ever-diminishing requital of it by his readers. "Though, for loving you the more superabundantly, I am the less loved."

N.B. The reading of the original is not the usual Greek for 'though,' but means simply 'if,' which rendering some approve, making the drift of the verse to be: 'If the requital of love is in inverse ratio to the love, I will try to rectify the disproportion by boundless self-devotion;' heaping coals of fire on their head. But this would scarcely harmonise with the "most gladly," and a
and be spent for you; though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved.

16 But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless, being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother. Did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

19 Again, think ye that we excuse ourselves unto you? we speak before God in Christ: but we do all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear, lest, when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, and that I shall be found unto you such

view better entitled to consideration, is that the Apostle is assigning, in affectionate irony, the reason of his self-devotion, in which case the perfectly admissible rendering 'since,' must be adopted (Herod. vii. 46). But 'et' admits also of being idiomatically translated by 'though,' according to a use of it called by some grammarians 'concessive.' 'If' is used similarly in our own language: 'If you are learned, do not be arrogant.' If ἀγγέλω, not ἀγγέλω, were the true reading and the clause were taken interrogatively it would yield a good and simple sense. 'If I love you more superbundantly, am I the less loved?' Is that reasonable?

16. He had been charged with declining support himself for the dishonest purpose of obtaining it more largely through his agents, and the imputation was connected with his endeavours to expedite the collection through Titus and others. For the sake of argument he allows the charge in order to see how it tallies with facts. "But be it so; I did not become a burden to you; yet (per contra), being a crafty villain, I caught you by guile." The original for 'crafty villain' means strictly one who chooses with shrewd discernment the aptest means for attaining unprincipled ends (Arist. Eth. Nic. VI. xii. 9). For the rendering "caught" see xi. 20.

17. How stand the facts? "Any one of those I despatched to you—did I, through him, over-reach you?" The original asks feelingly a question which demands a negative answer, its real force being—do not say that I did.'

18. Appeal to examples. The mission of Titus is not that alluded to in viii. 17, upon which he had not yet been actually despatched, but that on which he had "previously initiated" (viii. 6) the making up of the collection. Who the "brother" was, is not certain, but he was probably the person so strongly recommended under the same designation in viii. 23, and now on the point of accompanying Titus again in the same capacity. "Was it not by the same spirit that we walked?" expresses the inward law which regulated their conduct, and which was the guidance of the Holy Spirit, excluding every covetous and interested motive. "Was it not in the same footsteps?" passes from the directing principle in the heart to the outward walk, of which those who witnessed it could very well judge. The Apostle speaks quite confidently of the incontrovertibleness of these proofs, and it would appear therefore that Titus had taken no part of the collection into his own keeping, much less conveyed anything to St. Paul. He probably prevailed upon the Corinthians to comply with the counsel given them in 1 Cor. xvi. 2, and perhaps to establish a general fund.

19. The apology and boasting, now completed, have to be guarded from a misapprehension. It was easy for his readers to glide into the tribunal and imagine that theirs was the judgment-seat from which sentence had to be delivered. "Ye are this long time (πάλαι, with many MSS. not πάλαι) thinking that it is to you we are making our defence." Not so. "It is before God, in Christ, that we speak." It would have been impossible, under any circumstances, for an Apostle to place himself before a human bar (1 Cor. ii. 15; iv. 3) for judgment, but it was peculiarly necessary to repudiate the jurisdiction of that section of his readers which he is now addressing, because they had shewn a bias in favour of his accusers. He takes the sting out of his repudiation, however, by his closing words: "but the whole, beloved, (is) for your edification." So far as his authority in Corinth was undermined, so far were they tottering and it was necessary to reconsolidate its position in order that theirs might be restored and secured.

20. He has reason to labour for their edification, for he entertains the twofold fear that he may find them, when he comes, not such as he wishes, and may himself therefore "be found for them not such as they wish." His fear about them again takes a double direction, one towards the Judaizers on the
II. CORINTHIANS. XII.

as ye would not: lest there be debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults:

21 And lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed.

right (v. 20), the other towards the heathenizers on the left (v. 21). Both parties wished to see him as they thought they had seen him on his second visit, weak and without energy. Instead of that and instead of being a fellow-worker of their joy, he apprehends that he may have to wield a severe rod of discipline. The first class of dreaded evils are those party-divisions which he had to rebuke and threaten in the First Epistle (i. 10-13; iii. 3-5; iv. 21). The list is:—strifes, jealousy, outbursts of anger, intrigues, calumnies open and secret, inflated airs of superiority, and finally, the disastrous result of all these to the Church, "disturbances" which destroy its established order. It appears from this dark calendar that, although the chief developments since the First Epistle had been those of Judaism and of heathenism, and the main struggle was between these two great streams, against both of which St. Paul and his adherents had to contend, yet other currents of rivalry had not ceased to be active. Partizanship was in fact an habitual part of the mental and moral life of a society like that of Corinth.

21. His fear with regard to those who lived in pagan immorality is: "lest again, when I come, God shall humble me before you, and I shall have to mourn for many of them who were sinners before and did not repent over the uncleanness and fornication and licentiousness which they practised." It is plain that the "again" goes with the "humble" and not with the "come," because, if it belonged to the latter, it would have absolutely no meaning, and it would have been quite sufficient to say "when I come." As it is, it emphasises, by standing first, a second humiliation and implies that the Apostle had already suffered one, viz., on his second visit. It has already been seen (Introd. p. 378), that the first humiliation was caused by the moral evils which he had gone to check, but found it expedient or possible only to rebuke, not to punish. The persons rebuked are the same that he now mentions. They were in a state of sin before his second visit and did not come to repentance, when he was there, although threatened. To find them persisting and setting his word at nought (x. 10) would be humiliating enough, but the scorn of the Judaisers for not applying sharp discipline, which was a part of his previous humiliation, he did not intend to incur again, but still he dreads a pain of another kind. He had, no doubt, learned from Titus, that "many" of the immoral persons were none the better for his warnings and over these he fears that he will have to mourn. This cannot mean a mourning of mere pity and sorrow, as if these men were carried away by the infirmities of nature. The original term properly denotes mourning for the dead, and here signifies grief for those who will suffer the chastisement which he declares (xiii. 2) that he will inflict. As they belonged to the same class with the notable offender of 1 Cor. v., it may be inferred that he contemplates passing the same sentence of excommunication upon them that he did upon him, and so would have to sorrow over them as severed and, for a while at least, dead members of the visible Church. This view is pointedly corroborated by the language of 1 Cor. v. 2. "Ye are puffed up and did not rather mourn, that he who did this deed should be removed from the midst of you;" and again, by 1 Cor. v. 7, "purge out the old leaven," with reference to the same subject. See also v. 13. The obscurity which has overhung this verse has arisen mainly from the fact of expositors not accepting the simple meaning of an aorist, and therefore rendering, 'who shall not have repented,' i.e., 'when I come again,' instead of 'who did not come to repentance,' i.e., when I was last at Corinth. It is thus obvious why he anticipates having to mourn only over many of those that did not repent, and not over all, for some had clearly repented since he was there (ch. vii.). There is a very perceptible ring of forestalled grief in the three terrible words towards the close of the verse.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on verses 1, 7.

1. Much, undoubtedly, admits of being said on behalf of the Received Reading, which is retained by Beng. Wettst. Tisch. Osiand. De Wette, Hofm. Klöpper. Reiche's elabo-rate defence of it (Com. Crit. tom. i. 390-345), though obviously incorrect in several points, may yet be consulted with advantage. But neither it nor Klöpper's strong protest
II. CORINTHIANS. XII.

is sufficient to overthrow the external evidence in favour of καυχώδης δέ, οὐ κυμματίζων μεν, θειόσωμα δέ, which is as follows: For δέ Β.Δ.Ε.Ρ.Γ. 17. 37. Vulg. Syr. Goth. Arm. For κυμματίζων μεν, Sin. Β.Σ.Γ. 17. Pesch. Memb. Goth. Arm. For δέ instead of γαρ after θειόσωμα, Sin. Β.Σ.Γ. 17. Vulg. Memb. Arm. Against such an array of authorities Meyer's observation, that μεν—δέ is an obvious importation made to disguise the difficult γαρ and that κυμματίζων for κυμματίζει falls with μεν—δέ, will not stand. Meyer does not succeed in eliciting from his reading an interpretation either consistent with Greek usage or with the context.

ST. PAUL'S STAKE FOR THE FLESH.

7. Of the passages adduced as bearing upon this subject, the most important and perhaps the only two in which the reference to it is unquestionable are:—2 Cor. xii. 7; and Gal. iv. 13, 14. The others are 1 Cor. ii. 3; 2 Cor. i. 8; x. 10; 1 Thess. ii. 18. On 2 Cor. x. 10, see Introduction and the notes. The right reading and rendering of Gal. iv. 13, 14 is:—"But ye know that by reason of an infirmity of my flesh I preached the gospel to you on the former visit; and your temptation in my flesh ye did not utterly despise (set at nought) nor loathe." The drift of the first of these clauses is that on the former of two visits, he had not purposely preaching in Galatia, but did so because he was detained there by his peculiar infirmity. The drift of the second clause which is rather irregularly expressed, is that the Galatians did not scorn his infirmity nor regard it with abhorrence, although it constituted a temptation to them to repudiate the Gospel, when preached by one so afflicted. This passage and 2 Cor. xii. 7 taken together point to the following results.

1. The affliction was bodily. The proof of this is not the expression "stake for the flesh," which only describes figuratively a means for the mortification, whether conceived as impaling or crucifixion, of the carnal principle of pride which over-exalts a man. The decisive phrase is "in my flesh," which shows that the seat of the affliction was the material substance of the body. This is confirmed by the language which follows, for the effect of shocking and revolt ing those who witnessed it, which is pointed to in the word 'loathè' could only be produced by visible symptoms. "Infirmity of my flesh" also suggests most naturally, although not necessarily, that the infirmity attached to the body. From its tendency to bring him into contempt the Apostle looked upon it as a grievous impediment to his ministry. The words "smite with the fist" (2 Cor. xii. 7) indicate the violence and the suddenness of its approaches and his detention in Galatia, where he had not meant to stay, shews that he could not forecast its coming on and apparently also that its aftereffects were of some duration. The current impression that it was attended by agonising pain is not positively justified by anything that is stated. It probably arose, in part, from a misunderstanding of "stake for the flesh," in part from a notion that only bodily pain could mortify spiritual pride, whereas a liability to bodily humiliation would do this even more effectually: and, in part, from the expression "an angel of Satan to smite me with the fist," taken in conjunction with the undoubtedly scriptural view that to inflict torture upon men is Satan's congenial occupation.

2. It was an adjunct of his visions and special revelations in two ways, inasmuch as it served a disciplinary purpose in connection with them, and because its particular visits were the immediately antecedent if not the conditional accompaniments of the visions and revelations themselves. This last relation is not only indicated by the Apostle's general statement but appears more distinctly from the fact that the answer "my grace is sufficient for thee" is exactly one of the special revelations in question, and it is reasonable to suppose that it was given in direct reply to the third prayer for deliverance, uttered at a moment when he was painfully sensible of the pressure of his bodily trial. It is to be borne in mind that he is speaking in 2 Cor. xii. of visions and revelations experienced by him while in an ecstatic condition, i.e., when the connection between the inner spiritual man and the body was either in complete abeyance or actually for a while severed, and this strongly commends the supposition that the abnormal state of body was a transition-stage to the ecstasy. The three petitions would, in this case, be made, when the Apostle, under some painfully humbling physical conditions, felt his conscious union with his material organism dissolving and the Lord's answer to the third petition would be heard by him when one of the ecstatic states had set in. See Kiipper's remarks on this point. The ecstasy, the visions and revelations, and the peculiar affection of the body, would thus be coincident in time, possibly of the same duration, and, in a certain sense, the complements of each other.

Considerable light is thrown upon the subject by the incidents of the conversion, of which the Apostle's own account, given in Acts xxvi. 11-18 is important, because it proves incontestably that his very first vision and revelation of the Lord was accompanied by bodily effects of an altogether unusual and
overpowering kind. First the divine radiance shone round about him suddenly like lightning (Acts xxii. 6 ἔκλειψεν προσωπικώς), and he fell to the ground stricken blind, at which moment it may be safely assumed that he lost all consciousness of earthly things. Whilst he lay, he had a vision of the glorified Saviour, for he said:—"Who art thou, Lord?" Then ensued an express revelation, of which St. Luke, in Acts ix. 4-6, gives only an imperfect report, because the Apostle himself says that the Lord declared to him, in or, to speak strictly, immediately after (στις) "the heavenly vision," that he had appeared to him in order to make him "a minister and a witness of the things which be saw." The vision and the revelation therefore must have been very extensive in their scope. When he "was raised" from the ground (Acts ix. 8), "though his eyes were open," he could not see and those who were with him led him by the hand into Damascus. There he remained three days in abstinence from meat and drink and during that time he had a vision of Ananias (Acts ix. 12). When he recovered his sight, there fell from his eyes as it were scales. After such a convulsion of his entire nature and long want of sustenance he was in a state of weakness and prostration (Acts ix. 19). The Lord also intimated to him in this his first vision and revelation that further like experiences were in store for him (Acts xxvi. 16 de ex eclipse, or merely stating his own personal impressions in accordance with popular views, but affirming what he knew to be a truth, and his statement is amply supported by other representations in Scripture. The words of Delitzsch are correct and applicable:—"The power of wrath of this (the Satanic) kingdom over men only reaches so far as God permits it; and this permission is measured by his Holy will and grace, which make all created powers, whether of wrath or of love, minister to himself."

This admixture of Satanic action makes the attempt precarious to identify the stake with any known malady or ailment, such as acute headache, earache, a complaint in the eyes, or epilepsy. The view which chiefly claims consideration under this head, although there is an ancient and sustained tradition in favour of headache, is that it was epilepsy. Both Jews and pagans deemed epilepsy a supernatural visitation, and hence its name morbus divinus, or sacer. Another designation of it, morbus comitialis, rested upon the same idea, for if anyone was seized with it in the Roman Forum during an election it was supposed to be the intervention of a god and business was suspended. The original for 'loathe,' in Gal. iv. 14, means literally to "spit out," and it is curious that epilepsy was also called "morbus qui spatuatur," because those present were accustomed to spit upon the epileptic or into their own bosoms, either to express their abomination or to avert the evil omen for themselves." Persons may become subject to epilepsy at middle age by a great shock, physical or moral or both, such as St. Paul's conversion was. Almost all medical writers on epilepsy mention a patient who before a
II. CORINTHIANS. XIII.

seizure imagined that he saw a figure approach and smite him a blow on the head, after which he lost consciousness. This has a resemblance to the expression "smite with the fist," which might well represent the suddenness of epileptic attacks. Those who happen to have seen a person seized with epilepsy while officiating in divine service will comprehend the language of Gal. iv. 14 and how natural it would be for St. Paul to regard any bodily liability at all resembling it as a terrible sense of his feebleness. After epileptic convulsions have ended there often ensues an insensibility and patients sometimes fall into a profound stupor or coma, which has been known to last as long as a week. This symptom would harmonise with the Apostle's forced stay in Galatia. Still it is doubtful whether any of these points are more than superficial agreements. An epileptic remembers nothing of what passed during the fit, whereas St. Paul had the most vivid recollection of everything. Epilepsy, frequently suffered, generally impairs the intellect, and the cases of Julius Caesar, Mahomet and Buonaparte, who are quoted as instances of high intellectual power remaining in spite of epilepsy, are not deemed by medical authorities to be of much value.

An attempt has been made to find an analogy of nature for the Apostle's cross from a different point of view, viz., by taking his visions and revelations from the starting point. A large number of instances are upon record of religious visionaries, as they are called, and ecstatical persons, who have seemed to themselves to be translated into the invisible world and to have seen and heard its inhabitants and transactions as sensibly as they could have seen and heard anything with their bodily organs. They have for the most part a strong conviction that they are under the immediate guidance and influence of spiritual beings during the disclosures made to them. The body is in many cases in a state resembling that of catalepsy, in which the will exercises no power over it; the expression of the eyes, though open, is extinguished; the limbs are like those of an automaton, and remain unaffected by the law of gravitation in any attitude in which they may be placed; and the face is like that of a dead person. Deutzsch, speaking with reference to St. Paul, says:

"What is experienced in such ecstasies is a prelude of that separation of the soul from the body which results in death, during which separation the body is usually found in a cataleptic condition."

It may be questioned whether such inquiries and speculations as these, although interesting, can lead to any solid results, on account of the perfectly exceptional character of the Apostle's case. There is reason to think that no malady or bodily disorder brought about by demoniacal agency is ever identical with ordinary disease. If similarities are traceable, they are rather symptomatic than essential affinities. There are not sufficient data for determining what peculiar ingredient characteristic of Satanic malignity there was in the Apostle's affliction, but it would seem to have been something calculated to overwhelm him with ignominry rather than to exculpate him with pain. It is consolatory to know that, however hard it was to bear, the grace of Christ enabled him ultimately to rejoice and glory in it as a means whereby the power of the Lord more fully tabernacled upon him and invested him with the true strength for doing his Master's work.

CHAPTER XIII.

1 He threateneth severity, and the power of his apostleship against obstinate sinners. 5 And advising them to a trial of their faith, 7 and to a reformation of their sins before his coming, 11 he concludes his epistle with a general exhortation and a prayer.

T HIS is the third time I am coming to you. In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

2 I told you before, and foretell you, as if I were present, the second among them, they must now be prepared for sterner procedure. Both the literal purport of the words and the argument they involve imply a second visit actually made, because only forbearance already exercised in fact on two previous occasions, could shew the reasonableness of trenchant discipline on a third. As the first visit lasted a year and a half, there was, no doubt, abundant occasion for admonishing offenders of all kinds with
time; and being absent now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that, if I come again, I will not spare:
3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.
4 For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God. For we also are

long-suffering and kindness (vi. 6). He will proceed according to law against obdurate offenders, whether those described in xii. 20 or in xii. 21. "At the mouth," or "upon the statement of two and" (if need be) "of three witnesses every word shall be established." Trials there shall be, but strictly legal. Cognizance shall be taken of each case, but without heat or partisanship, and there shall be no condemnation without proof. Such precautions, in a strife-torn community, where false accusations were sure to abound, were most necessary. For the law of witnesses which passed, in a certain sense, from Jewish into Christian practice, see Deut. xix. 5, Matt. xviii. 16-18, John viii. 17.

2. That they may be fully advertised, he reminds them pointedly of one warning already given, which, as he means to act upon it, is still valid (perf. tense), and gives another in such a way as to intimate that it has the same weight as if he had administered it in person, by word of mouth, and as expressly as he did his predecessor. It is not merely the strong phrase of a letter written at a distance (x. 10) which will have to be modified in application when facts are confronted. "I have said beforehand and do say beforehand, as (I did) when present the second time, so also when absent now, to those who were in sin before and to all the rest, that, if I come again, I will not spare." The words "if I come again" leave no more doubt about his coming than the expression "if Timothy come" in 1 Cor. xvi. 10 represents Timothy's coming as doubtful. The original particle admits of being rendered in both cases by 'when,' as it does in other instances. The phrase "all the rest" seems at first sight, by its connexion with "those who were in (a state of) sin before" to denote men who had been involved in the same kind of sin, viz. immorality, yet who, inasmuch as they were not already notorious at the time of his second visit, had not been specifically warned, but are on that account warned now. If so, they would be such as had been led away by the example of the libertines, and would constitute their following. They may however be the propagators of strife (xii. 20); which would harmonise rather better with the next verse, where the Judaizers are referred to, though not exclusively. It is certain that "all the rest" of the church cannot be meant.

N. B. 'I write' (A. V.) should not be in the text.

3. The reason of his meditated severity is that they demanded an attesting-proof in energetic action of that Christ who spoke in him. Since they demanded it, they should have it. "Since ye seek a test of the Christ that speaks in me." The words "in me" are obviously emphatic, and shew that the Christ who spoke in him is contrasted with the Christ which spoke in the Judaizers. In accordance with their entire system, they ascribed the weakness shown on his second visit to the Christ whom he preached and who, being not a legal, but a spiritual Christ, they said was powerless to enforce obedience to law. Thus they challenged his Christ to a proof of his power. The libertines by their defiance did the same thing, for if they did not take up the taunt of the Judaizers, they clearly counted upon the same weakness for escaping punishment altogether (1 Cor. v. 2, 5). In reply he adds with reference to his Christ: "who towards you is not weak, but is powerful in you." The emphasis upon "towards you" is again the key to the thought. In Himself, in the days of His flesh and humiliation, Christ was weak, but towards those who profess His name and yet call upon Him for a proof of His power, He is, in His exaltation, not weak. On the contrary He is present and mighty amongst them, and although from long-suffering He may not put forth His strength, yet He can at any moment make it felt.

4. Shews that the ground upon which they scornfully based the inference of Christ's weakness does not prove it, but justifies the opposite conclusion. An essential and distinguishing characteristic of St. Paul's Christ was that He was The Crucified. This was a snare to the Jews (1 Cor. i. 23) and for the Judaizers the Crucifixion had no vital significance. Christ was to them not the crucified but the strict observer of the Law, who exacted a like observance from his followers. St. Paul's Christ, they said, shewed truly all the weakness of one crucified and lacked the strength to enforce this observance. Again, a crucified Saviour was to the Greeks foolishness (1 Cor. i. 23) and even a converted Greek, so far faithless to his Christian profession as to live in pagan immorality,
II. CORINTHIANS. XIII.

weak in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you.

5 Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear whether ye are in the faith; prove yourselves, not Christ and his organ should they bring to the test as to whether they are strong, but themselves, as to whether they are in the faith. If they are, Christ is in them, living and powerful, and they have in themselves already the proof they demand. The word for "prove" is stronger than "try," and means that the spurious is to be sifted by self-examination from the genuine within them, the dress of the gold. "Or do ye not well know yourselves, that Jesus Christ is in you?" You must know this unless perchance ye are (unapproved) reprobate. They ought to see that self-testing is the right mode of obtaining the proof which they seek of Christ's power, "or" i.e. "otherwise," he must conclude that it is no part of their sure self-knowledge that Christ is in them. Yet it cannot but be a part of their self-knowledge, unless perhaps they cannot stand the probation of self-examination and are not in that faith by which Christ is grasped and retained.

6. "But" whatever they may find about themselves, he hopes they will discover when he is brought to test that he is not unapproved, but that Christ is in him indeed with power to chastise. As hope is not quite in harmony with the painful prospect of punishing, some think that he wishes them to learn his approvedness by acting upon his present warnings, which would be a spontaneous recognition of Christ's power in him. But the original for "hope" often has a sense little different from 'expect' and, in any case, the thing hoped for is not merely the inflicting of punishment but the effects, the vindication of his Master's power and his own, and the consequent acknowledgment of it by his readers.

7. His hope is one thing, but his prayer is that the right issue may be obtained by a better course. "But we pray to God that you do no evil, not in order that we may be shown to be approved, but," on the contrary, "that you may do what is good, but we may be as it were unapproved." The deprecated 'evil' cannot be the offences already committed, and the original cannot mean the discontinuance of evil. The sense is that ye may not produce (σωτερα, aor.) evil or mischief, by making punishment inevitable. Penal discipline in a Church, however indispensable, is an evil, and there could have been no more
II. CORINTHIANS. XIII.

approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.
8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.
9 For we are glad, when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection.
10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present I should use sharpness, according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction.
11 Finally, brethren, farewell. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

marked illustration of this than the trouble which had followed the sentence upon the immoral offender. It is no objection whatever to this view that "what is good" in the antithetical sentence, means what is morally good, because to reform and so save the Church from such rents as sentences of excommunication is what is morally good. The object of his prayer is not that he may be seen to be approved, although he really would be approved in a very acceptable way by their submissive compliance with his counsels. The approvedness itself is the same as it is throughout the passage, and only differs here with regard to the mode of establishing it. Should they spare him the necessity of bringing them to order by severity, he would, in another way, remain "as it were unapproved." He would not achieve a triumph of power over the contumacious, but he can forego that poor advantage because the approvedness of being voluntarily obeyed is of a higher order and involves all that he desires.

8. The reason why, if his prayer should be fulfilled, he would be as it were unapproved is: "We have not any power against the truth, but for the truth." Should those who had fallen away from the true Gospel (xi. 3) return, should those who had violated the obligations of love (xii. 20) and purity (xii. 21) repent, the cause of truth, doctrinal and practical, would be thus far re-established, and his power of chastising would be nullified, because it is, in its very nature, capable of being applied only for and never against the truth.

9. This inability to act against the truth is corroborated by the positive joy which he feels when the weakness, which the inability implies, exists on his part and the power, which it equally implies, exists on their part. The power is that of Christ in them (v. 5) reconfirming them in their faith in the true Gospel and also enabling them to use it in the truth. This, prevailing in them, disarms the Apostle and he is delighted to be disarmed. "Tèsis," that you should be powerful and we weak, "is what we even pray for, your amendment." Power after weakness is amendment, restoration or reparation. The original is used for mending torn nets, setting dislocated limbs, re-organizing a faction-rent State. How ardently he desires this restitution of order appears from his even praying for it, which is more than rejoicing in it and means also that it could only be brought about by God's help.

10. "On account of this," i.e., your amendment, "I write these things when absent, in order that, when present, I may not have to deal sharply (abruptly)." Drawing to a close of his letter he "gives these things," i.e., the menacing section of it, commencing at xii. 20, as gracious an aspect as possible, consistently with abating nothing from its strictness. He would not write to them severely from a distance (x. 10) except for the purpose of avoiding severity of action when present. With all his resolve to punish, with all the authority which the Lord gave him to punish, he will do anything rather than punish. This he expresses by repeating what he said in x. 8, that the true end for which his authority was given him was to build up and not to pull down. However necessary or beneficial chastisement may be, it is still 'a pulling down,' because it is, in the form here contemplated by him, plucking out stones, for a season at least, from the temple of the Lord. It is that evil which he prays they may not bring about (v. 7).

11. The conclusion of the letter, properly so called, contains a final admonition (v. 11) a parting salutation (v. 12), and the Benediction. "As to the rest, brethren, rejoice, amend, exhort, be of the same mind, be at peace, and the God of love and peace shall be with you." "As to the rest," means that he has no more to say than what follows. "Brethren" seems to turn aside a little from those to whom he has first spoken so decisively and again to address the better-disposed for whom the first great section (i.-vii.) of the letter was meant. But it is more like the breadth of his character that it should comprise the entire church. It is significant, however, of the circumstances which produced this Epistle, that the title "brethren," so frequently used elsewhere and found not
II. CORINTHIANS. XIII.

12 Greet one another with a holy kiss. Christ, and the love of God, and the
13 All the saints salute you. communion of the Holy Ghost, be
14 The grace of the Lord Jesus with you all. Amen.

less than nineteen times in the First Epistle, occurs only four times in the second. It is curious that whenever he uses the term rendered "as to the rest" in this sense, he always adds the word 'brethren' (Eph. vi. 10; Phil. iii. i–v. 8; 1 Thess. iv. 1, 2; 2 Thess. iii. 1). "Rejoice." Without joy which is one of the firstfruits of the Spirit (Gal. v. 22) no one can be thriving in the faith. This joy had been heavily overcast in Corinth. Still the sky had brightened and as a "fellow-worker of their joy," he can now bid them sweep the shadow of the clouds from their hearts. But they can only do this by "amendment," and a great means of securing amendment is "exhortation," practised amongst themselves. The Greek for 'being of any one's mind' means to hold by any one's party, so "be of the same mind" means that partisanship and faction are to cease. As sectarian views and feelings invariably lead to enmity, he adds the injunction "be at peace." The endeavour after religious agreement must be accompanied by an abstention from all hostility in the intercourse of life. There will thus be in and around them an element of peace and love in which God, the 'dator et amator' of both, delights to dwell and He will be with them as a helper in the good work.

12. The same direction as in Rom. xvi. 16; 1 Cor. xvi. 20, and 1 Thess. v. 26. See notes on the first of these passages. The salutation of all the saints can only mean those of Macedonia. It would be a mere formality, if St. Paul undertook, without commission, to greet the Corinthians in the name of the saints throughout the world.

13. The letter finishes with the Apostolic Benediction, in its completest form, the deep and comprehensive purport of which cannot be exhausted in the notes of a commentary. The three Persons of the Trinity are invoked each to vouchsafe His presence according to His essential nature, or the part which He bears in the divine work of salvation. The second Person takes precedence, because through Him we first obtain access to God (Eph. ii. 8; iii. 13). Grace belongs to the Father, but is here ascribed especially to Christ, because through Him God's love manifested and still manifests itself in the form of unmerited favour towards men, and most signal in Christ's great act of grace or power (2 Cor. vii. 9); also because Christ is Himself "full of grace," and "out of His fulness" believers "receive grace for grace" (Jno. i. 14, 16). His grace with us implies conscious enjoyment of His gifts and riches (2 Cor. ii. 9) and growth to His likeness. But the fountain from which grace flows is the love of the Father, from whom cometh down every perfect gift (Jas. i. 17), and who is Love. God's love with us implies the abiding and joyful sense that we are His children and that we shall one day be like Him. See 1 Jno. iii. 1, 2. The Father has the absolute title, God, because He is "the eternal source and origin of the other two Persons," Himself neither begotten nor proceeding. The Holy Ghost is the living agent of fellowship between believers and the Father, for by the Spirit "we cry, Abba, Father" (Rom. viii. 15; Gal. iv. 6); also between believers and the Son, for "if any one hath not the spirit of Christ, this man is none of His" (Rom. viii. 9). The Spirit is also the living personal bond of that holy fellowship amongst believers themselves which is the Communion of Saints. No words could have expressed more perfectly than this sublime Benediction does the divine unity of the Church. "There is one God and Father of all . . . who is in us all" (Eph. iv. 6). We are all "one body in Christ" (Rom. xii. 5; Gal. iii. 28), and "we were all baptized in one Spirit into one body" (1 Cor. xii. 13). What is, if possible, of greater moment still is that our fellowship with one another is of the nature of the intercommunication between the Blessed Persons of the Trinity themselves, for Christ prayed on behalf of all that should believe on Him: "that they all may be one; as thou Father art in me and I in thee, that they also may be one in us" (John xvii. 20-21).
### GALATIANS.

---

### INTRODUCTION.

| § 1. Date and Occasion of this Epistle | 483 |
| § 2. History and Character of the Galatians | 487 |
| § 3. Contents and Doctrine of this Epistle | 489 |

#### § 1. Date and Occasion of this Epistle.

No Epistle is more characteristic of St Paul than this. None bears more distinctively the impress of his personality, or proclaims its authorship more convincingly. This is true in regard to both its tone and its style. We must especially remark, in this connection, its sudden condensations of argument, its rapid-alternations from severity to tenderness, and its incalculable practical duties side by side with a high strain of doctrinal teaching. It is to be added that there is not one of St Paul’s Epistles, concerning the genuineness of which less doubt has been expressed even by the most destructive critics. It has been justly remarked that he who denies its genuineness, “pronounces on himself the sentence of incapacity to distinguish false from true.”

At the same time it must be admitted that this Epistle cannot be connected with a definite part of the Acts of the Apostles by the same kind of evidence as that which determines the chronology of the Epistles to the Corinthians and the Romans in connection with the facts recorded in the nineteenth chapter of the history and the early part of the twentieth. The links of person and place and circumstance, which are available in those cases, are not available in this. The evidence which determines the chronological position of the Epistle before us must be of another kind. Though, however, it cannot be anchored in its right place by the side of that narrative in the same way as those other Epistles, its true moorings can be determined in a different way; and the evidence is very strong which leads to the conviction that it was on the whole contemporaneous with those three Epistles, and that it is a document belonging to the memorable period of St Paul’s Third Missionary Journey.

The close affinity of this Epistle with that to the Romans is manifest at first sight. Every thoughtful reader of the New Testament mentally connects these two documents together. Even on a cursory comparison of the two documents there arises a strong prima facie presumption that they were written about the same time. And this impression does not rest altogether on mere identity of theological statement. An argument based on this ground might easily be pressed too far. Even in Acts xiii. 38, 39 we find a doctrinal statement regarding Justification quite as mature as anything in the Epistles. It is rather the general sequence of thought, and similarity of illustration, on which stress must be laid in considering this question. It is hardly necessary to give the more conspicuous instances: they are very obvious; and several of them are alluded to in the notes. Some of the smaller examples of resemblance between these two Epistles are perhaps of even greater weight in this argument. Thus let Rom. viii. 14—17 be verbally compared with Gal.
INTRODUCTION TO

iv. 6, 7. The "Abba, Father" is a very remarkable point of resemblance, especially as taken in combination with the manner in which the Holy Spirit is named, and the privileges of sonship and heirdom. Again, the same texts from the Old Testament are quoted, and in the same manner. Let Rom. x. 5, for instance, be placed side by side with Gal. iii. 12. The language concerning the promises to Abraham and his seed in Rom. iv. 13, 14, 16 not only reminds us of the language on the same subject in Gal. iii. 14, 16, 29, but has all the appearance of the same train of thought, flowing almost contemporaneously in a different channel. Once more, if Rom. xi. 31, "God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that He might have mercy on all," is set down in close juxtaposition with Gal. iii. 22, "the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe," there is a very striking suggestiveness in both the resemblance and the contrast. In fact there is between the letters to the Romans and Galatians a relationship very similar to, though neither so extensive nor so minute as, that which connects together the letters to the Ephesians and Colossians.

And if there is a strong presumption that this Epistle was sent to the Galatians within that well-marked period of St Paul's life in which the Epistle to the Romans was written, a further point is more than probable, viz. that the shorter of these two letters preceded the longer in its date. Hardly any commentator of note has taken a different view of this matter. There is in the letter to the Galatians all the appearance of the first vehement expression, under the urgency of a great crisis, of the religious truths which were afterwards elaborated, calmly and at length, when he wrote to the Romans. We must not indeed press this argument too far. The same truths, as was remarked in the preceding paragraph, were present in St Paul's mind at an earlier date. It would hardly be theologically correct to say that we have in the document before us the first rough sketch of that which reached its maturity in the longer document sent soon afterwards to Rome. Nor need we attempt to say how long an interval separated the times of writing the two documents, whether it was a few days or several months. All that is urged here is, that while the Epistle to the Galatians belongs to the same Pauline epoch as that to the Romans, it almost certainly preceded it in point of time.

Now if from this comparison we turn to the affinity of our Epistle with the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, we find again this affinity to be very close, but of a different kind. Here the resemblance is rather personal than argumentative. Not only are there very remarkable verbal connections between the two letters, but, what is perhaps more to the purpose, the same state of feeling is indicated on the part of the writer. "If we look, as it were, into his mind, we see the same conflict, the same depression, the same vehemence, the same indignation, the same tenderness. The subjective evidence, obtained in this way, is very strong. In this respect no two Epistles of St Paul are so much alike, though in other respects they are very different. But some particulars must be given in detail.

The same state of health is not obscurely indicated in the two Epistles. There is not only the same general reference to suffering and infirmity: but in one most remarkable and specific allusion of this kind the two Epistles are found in combination. Paley says in the 'Horæ Paulinae' (Gal. No. iv.) that "There can be no doubt but that the temptation which was in the flesh, mentioned in the Epistle to the Galatians, and the thorn in the flesh, the minister of Satan to buffet him, mentioned in the Epistle to the Corinthians, were intended to denote the same thing;" and he adds most truly: "In both Epistles the notice of his infirmity is suited to the place in which it is found. In the Epistle to the Corinthians the train of thought draws up to the circumstance by a regular approximation: in this Epistle it is the subject and occasion of the Epistle itself." Paley uses this coincidence as a proof of the authenticity of the Epistle to the Galatians. Here it is brought forward for another reason, i.e. as an argument for the belief that these two Epistles were contemporaneous. In each case St Paul not only speaks of the intensity of his
THE EPISTLE TO

THE GALATIANS.

suffering, but describes it as a kind of suffering which hindered him in his work, discouraged and disheartened him, and humiliated him before others. If we look closely into his expressions in both Epistles regarding this malady, and weigh them well, we find it very reasonable to believe that at the time of writing them he was again suffering in the same way, and that both these documents were written within the range of this painful experience.

This leads to another point of comparison. In these two Epistles the same remarkable sensitiveness is displayed, as it is nowhere else; the same passion, as it were, for speaking of himself. Professor Jowett has seized upon this point of resemblance and expressed it forcibly: “In both Epistles there is a greater display of his own feelings than in any other portion of his writings, a deeper contrast of inward exaltation and outward suffering, more of personal entreaty, a greater readiness to impart himself.” And the same commentator adds another point, “There is in both the same consciousness of the precarious basis on which his own authority rested in the existing state of the two Churches.” If we suppose these two letters to have been written in Macedonia, at a time of extreme depression from illness, and with anxious news from Galatia and Corinth pressing on him at the same time, and moving his indignation, each Epistle gains much from this theory in the impression of its reality.

But, to come to details, there are remarkable links between these two Epistles, as regards both persons and places. In respect of places we must specially name Damascus and Arabia. That St Paul should have pointedly named Damascus in each of these two Epistles (2 Cor. xi. 32; Gal. i. 17), and not have mentioned the place at all in any other Epistle, is a very singular fact. We might add that in the two cases, though he mentions the place with evident feeling, he does this in connection with two very different trains of thought, and thus without any semblance of one Epistle being suggested by the other. Here the coincidence, however, is noted as an indication that the Epistles were written under the same mental impressions, and therefore probably about the same time. As regards Arabia, it must suffice to refer to the longer note at the end of the fourth chapter. The reminiscence of this region, in connection with his conversion, was evidently very fresh in the Apostle’s mind when he wrote the Epistle to the Galatians (Gal. i. 17, iv. 25); and though he does not actually name this region in the other Epistle, he virtually does so (2 Cor. xi. 32): for Aretas, whose officers kept the gates of Damascus, was king of Petra in Arabia.

The person on whose name it is most important to dwell in this connection is Titus (2 Cor. ii., vii., viii., xii.; Gal. ii. 1—3). In no other Epistle beyond that addressed to himself is he mentioned at all, except quite casually in 2 Tim. iv. 9. In these two Epistles he is made very prominent; and they shew that he was much in the Apostle’s thoughts at the time of writing them. In the Galatians he appears as having been a close companion of the Apostle on a very memorable occasion. In the other letter his companionship at the very time of writing is made evident, with the warmest expressions of affection and confidence. That Titus should not be mentioned at all in the Acts of the Apostles, need cause us no difficulty. St Paul had many intimate friends, whose names find no place in that general history. This intimate friendship was a part of his personal biography; and if these two Epistles were written at the same time, and if Titus was actively engaged at this time in helping him, it is very natural that his name should appear in both, though in connection with very different trains of thought. Such a coincidence has all the air of reality.

We may turn now to various verbal links, which, as seen from our present point of view, are worthy of careful attention. Let, for instance, the manner in which St Paul speaks of his absence and presence in Gal. iv. 18, 20, and in 2 Cor. x. 1—11, xiii. 10 be compared. They not only bear the impress of the same writer, but are very like what would be written

1 The reading “Titus Justus,” which some MSS. shew in Acts xvi. 7, has no authority sufficient to justify any exception to this statement. See the Bishop of Chester’s note on the passage.
by him at the same time, with a double anxiety pressing upon him. Again the catalogues of sins in Gal. v. 19—21, and in 2 Cor. xii. 20, 21, have very close resemblances, especially as regards the words "debates, envyings, wraths, strifes," in the one case, which in the original Greek are identical with the words "variance, emulation, wraths, strifes" in the other. The manner in which spiritual "sowing" and spiritual "reaping" come before us in Gal. vi. 7 is remarkably similar to what we find on the same subject in 2 Cor. ix. 6. The English Version obscures the resemblance between Gal. iv. 17 and 2 Cor. xi. 2; but in the Greek it is very close. Finally, we may note the singular use of the word "devour" in Gal. v. 15 and 2 Cor. xi. 20. This enumeration is not complete; but it is sufficient to make the argument very strong. 1

On the whole a very confident opinion may be expressed that this Epistle was written during the Third Apostolic Journey, before the Epistle to the Romans, which was sent from Corinth, and about the same time as the Second Epistle to the Corinthians,—hence that it was written in Macedonia at the time corresponding with Acts xx. 1, 2, though there is no objection to supposing that it was written at Ephesus in the later part of the "three years" (Acts xix. 8, 10, xx. 31) which immediately preceded the crossing over into Macedonia. 2

It is essential, however, that we should see how far this theory fits such direct chronological marks as we possess. Now there is nothing whatever in it to contradict them, but on the contrary some things in it which distinctly harmonise with them. Our first note of time is the fact that this Epistle was written after the first visit to Galatia (Acts xvi. 6). Next, on the assumption that the argument in the note (p. 510) is sound for identifying the journey to Jerusalem of Gal. ii. with that of Acts xv. in connection with the Council, it is evident that the Epistle was written after that occasion: to which must be added the further fact that some time must be allowed for the meeting of Peter and Paul at Antioch (Gal. ii. 11—16), which was manifestly subsequent to the Council. But further, the language of St Paul in this Epistle shews that it was written after the second visit to the Galatians (Acts xviii. 23). He says (Gal. iv. 13) that it was "on account of illness that he preached the Gospel to them on the first occasion." Hence he had been among them on more occasions than one. No other interpretation of the passage is at all natural. Thus too we reach the most natural interpretations of the following phrases—"as we said before, so say I now again" (i. 9); "I testify again to every man" (v. 3); "of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past" (v. 21); and especially, "am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?" (iv. 16). He could not possibly know what the effect would be of what he is now writing. Hence he must have expressed misgivings, when he had been personally among them. He probably saw at that time anxious symptoms of incipient evil, though the full news of the defection of the Galatians came upon him like a shock.

Thus by internal evidence of a different kind from the former we again bring the writing of this Epistle within the range of the Third Missionary Journey, and in general connection with the Epistles to the Romans and Corinthians. The only question which now remains has reference to the particular part of that journey which seems the most probable; and this depends on the interpretation of "so soon" in Gal. i. 6. At first sight we might be disposed to interpret it literally of lapse of time: and on this interpretation we should naturally fix upon the early part of the long residence in Evp-
THE EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS.

sue. But really not so much a short period of time, as moral haste and want of consideration, is denoted by the phrase. See the note on the passage. Thus we are quite at liberty to bring down the writing of this Epistle to the immediate neighbourhood of the writing of the Second to the Corinthians, and to fix upon the later part of the sojourn at Ephesus, or (more probably still) the short stay at Troas (2 Cor. ii. 13) or the longer stay in Macedonia.

As regards the occasion of the writing of this Epistle, this can be very easily stated. The document in this respect speaks very clearly for itself. After St Paul had left Galatia, emissaries of the Judaizing party had come from Judea, proclaiming that circumcision and the keeping of the Mosaic law were necessary to salvation, or at least essential to the higher Christian life, thus making Judaism an antecedent condition of Christianity: and the result had been a disastrous kind of fascination over the minds of some of the Galatian converts. At the same time, as was indeed quite essential for their purpose, these mischief-makers denied the independent apostleship of St Paul, represented him as inferior to the other Apostles, and accused him likewise of inconsistency. Thus in writing this Epistle he had two purposes in view, each essentially bound up with the other. He found it necessary on the one hand to assert and demonstrate his apostolic independence and authority, and on the other hand to re-state and to prove by argument the doctrine of free justification through faith. These things are done with great vehemence and force. The news from Galatia had startled him and filled him with anxiety. He saw what great principles were at stake, and how the whole future of Christianity was likely to be compromised. Hence there is in this Epistle an impress of severity and indignation, which we find in no other.

§ 2. History and Character of the Galatians.

Just as this Epistle has peculiar features, which belong to no others, so is there a distinctive stamp upon the Galatians themselves, in both the national and the religious sense, which we find in no other community addressed by St Paul in his Epistolary writings. We may first take note of the national characteristics of the Galatians.

The Epistle to the Galatians is really the Epistle to the Gauls. The words Celts, Galata and Galli are in fact only various forms of the same word. A Latin writer, speaking of the Galatians of Asia Minor, would naturally call them "Gauls," and a Greek writer, speaking of the Gauls of France, would naturally call them "Galatians." We may give, as instances, Livy on the one hand and Polybius on the other.

The inhabitants of central Asia Minor, to whom St Paul wrote this Epistle, were an offshoot of that great Keltic migration which made itself memorable in Northern Italy and Northern Greece. After these barbarians had recoiled in confusion from the cliffs of Delphi, some of them crossed the Bosphorus, and penetrated into the region which afterwards bore their name. At the outset they were somewhat like the Turks, on their first invasion of the same district, a moveable army, encamping, marching and plundering at will. The surrounding monarchs gradually curtailed their power and repressed them within narrower limits. In the end their divided sections coalesced into one united kingdom. For a time their kings were recognised by the Romans; but in the reign of Augustus this district was made a province of the Empire, reaching from the borders of Asia and Bithynia to the neighbourhood of Iconium, Lystra and Derbe. This was the political condition of Galatia, when St Paul passed in this direction on his Second and Third Missionary Journeys.

A question here arises as to whether, when Galatia is named in the New Testament, we are to understand the term in its general popular sense, or as denoting, with a more restricted meaning, a Roman province: and this question is not very difficult to answer. Phrygia was not a Roman province: and we find this term combined with the name of Galatia on both occasions when St Paul is described in passing through this region (Acts xvi. 6, xviii. 23). The same remark is applicable to other geographical terms which St Luke employs.
INTRODUCTION TO

in his history of St Paul’s travels through these districts, such as Lycaonia (xiv. 6 —11) and Mysia (xvi. 7), which had no political import. The fact may be different in certain other cases, as when the pro-consuls of Asia (xix. 26, 38) and the jurisdiction of Cilicia (xxiii. 34) are specially named. But, on the whole, there is no reason to doubt that Galatia in the New Testament is used ethnologically and popularly, to denote a region of indefinite extent, in the middle of Asia Minor, inhabited by a people whose history was very curious, and whose character was very strongly marked.

The Keltic characteristics are not unknown to us. It may be sufficient here to quote one early and one recent writer on this subject, and then to note how far their remarks find any illustration in the Epistle to the Galatians. Caesar, in his ‘Bellum Gallicum’ (iv. 5), speaks of the ‘infirmitas’ of the Gauls, or their unsteadiness of purpose, adding ‘sunt in consiliis capiendis mobiles, et novis peregrinam remus subest,’ and hence ‘nihil committendum existimavit.’ Thierry, in his ‘Histoire des Gaulois’ (Pref.), sums up as follows those characteristics of the Gaulish family, which in his opinion ‘differentiavit’ it from other sections of the human race:—‘une bravoure personnelle que rien n’égale chez les peuples anciens—un esprit franc, impétueux, ouvert à toutes les impressions, éminemment intelligent—mais, à côté de cela, une mobilité extrême, point de constance, une répugnance marquée aux idées de discipline et d’ordre si puissantes chez les races germaniques’.

1 Jerome, who had been both in Galatia and in Germany, says that he found in the former country the same language spoken which he had heard in the neighbourhood of Trèves. This raises two questions; first, whether there were Germanic elements in the Gaulish horde which invaded Asia Minor, and secondly whether the language spoken on the Moselle was in that day Germanic or Keltic. It is curious to see both in the earliest and the latest of the copious series of Protestant German commentators on this Epistle a disposition to claim the Galatians as ethnologically related to them. Luther says: ‘Some think that the Germans are descended of the Galatians: neither is this divination perhaps untrue: for the Germans are not much unlike to them in nature: and I myself am constrained to wish to my countrymen more steadfastness and constancy: for in all things that we do, at the first brunt we be very hot, but when

beaucoup d’ostentation, enfin une désunion perpétuelle, fruit d’excessive vanité.’ We find all the features of this picture very definitely reflected in the Epistle to the Galatians—in the eager welcome which they gave to St Paul’s doctrine at the first—in their enthusiastic affection towards him personally—in their readiness ‘so soon’ to take new impressions, to throw off the Apostolic yoke and to adopt ‘another Gospel’—in their readiness to ‘bite and devour’ one another—in the warnings given here by St Paul against vanity and self-conceit. No careful reader of the New Testament can fail to observe that we have in this Epistle something very different, as to general features of character, from that which we find in other Epistles, as, for instance, those addressed to the Colossians and Philippians.

Another distinguishing mark of the early Galatian Christians is to be carefully noted. They are not specially identified with any great city, as is the case with Thessalonica and Corinth with respect to the early Christians of Macedonia and Achaia, but are rather spoken of as though they belonged to village communities. The chief cities of Galatia were Ancyra, Pessinus and Tavium, but none of them are named in the New Testament. The phrase used in the history is simply ‘the region of Galatia’ (Acts xvi. 6), ‘the country of Galatia’ (xviii. 23). The Epistle is addressed (Gal. i 2) to ‘the Churches of Galatia,’ and the very same language is used (1 Cor. xvi. 1) when the Apostle refers to them in writing to Corinth. There is no reason indeed to doubt that St Paul did visit the large towns in Galatia; and the Jews, whom we know from Josephus (‘Ant.’ xvi. vi. 2) to have been settled in this region, were probably for the most part in the towns.

the heat of our affection is allayed, anon we become more slack.’ Bishop Lightfoot notes how Olfhausen claims this Epistle as addressed to Germans and the German Luther as its great expositor. And Meyer says that ‘the conversion of the Galatians is the beginning of German Church history.’

2 It is possible also that in the strong mention of ‘drunkenness and revellings’ (v. 21) there is an implied reference to the fault of intemperance, which is said by Greek and Latin writers to have been prevalent among the ancient Gauls.
THE EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS.

But we must not fail to notice the general diffusion of Christianity, as a characteristic of this section of the earliest Church history, in contrast with its concentration in any large city.

§ 3. CONTENTS AND DOCTRINE OF THIS EPISTLE.

We may, with a very near approach to accuracy, divide this Epistle into three equal sections, each consisting of two chapters, the first containing St Paul’s assertion and proof of his independent Apostolic authority, the second unfolding his argument for free justification through faith, and the third pressing home on the consciences of the Galatians injunctions to Christian duty and practice. It is true that this division is not absolutely exact: for the transition to the subject of the second section begins before the end of the first, and again this second section in some degree overlaps the third. Still the proposed arrangement is sufficiently correct for practical purposes, and it is very convenient.

I. In this section, after a severe and indignant preamble, in which he asserts that the Gospel preached by him in Galatia was immutable, he shews that the whole tenor of his life, both before and after his conversion, proved his independence of all human authority and teaching. His devotion to Judaism before his conversion was such, that only a direct Divine power could have procured that change. From Damascus he did not go, in the first instance, to Jerusalem at all; and when he did go, it was not to obtain instruction and to receive authority from those who had been “Apostles before him,” but to make acquaintance with Peter. At the Great Council, when the very questions were discussed, which were now at issue in Galatia, both his doctrinal teaching and his Apostolic commission were fully recognised by the very “pillars” of the Church—Peter, James, and John; and afterwards, at Antioch, when the first of these three was guilty of an inconsistency of conduct, which put these principles in jeopardy, St Paul withstood him openly in the maintenance of the freedom of the Gospel. A vehement and forcible speech was then made by him, in which the main point at issue was firmly stated (ii. 14—16). Here we obtain our starting-point for the second section of the Epistle, St Paul first meeting the obvious objection to free justification, that it gives a sanction to sin, and shewing that the justified man really acquires through his union with Christ a new life of holiness (17—21).

II. St Paul now rapidly brings forward a series of brief and condensed arguments in defence of the doctrine of free justification by Grace, as opposed to justification earned through obedience to Law. And first he appeals to the experience of the Galatians. The spiritual results which came in their acceptance of the Gospel, came to them not through Law but through the operation of the Holy Spirit. Nor was this any new method on the part of God. He is one and immutable. There was in fact a rehearsal of these great principles in the patriarchal life of Abraham. They were asserted in the very nature of the promises, and there was an allegorical meaning, to this effect, in some of the very details of early Hebrew History. The Law was a parenthesis in the Divine dispensation, intended to manifest and develop the true nature of sin, and to prepare the way for the acceptance of salvation through free forgiveness. It is to be observed that in this argumentative section St Paul inserts by the way (iv. 8—20) a most earnest and affectionate appeal to the feelings and conscience of the Galatians.

III. So, conversely, in the third section, which is mainly an appeal to conscience and an instruction in duty, the argumentative part of St Paul’s writing continues for a short space (v. 1—12). Justification by Law, he urges, is absolutely inconsistent with Justification by Faith. The Galatians were in the utmost danger of an absolute defection from the Gospel. For himself, he says (v. 11; cp. vi. 17), his very sufferings prove his faithfulness and consistency. But the main characteristic of these two chapters is that they contain a description of the beauty and blessedness of

1 See the note on i. 18, and compare Canon Cook’s remarks on the word ἐρωτικός in the Introduction to the Acts, p. 333.
the Christian life, as contrasted with that life which is a mere gratifying of the carnal nature. The strongest injunctions are given to unity of spirit, forbearance, and mutual help. For a moment, near the end (vi. 12, 13), he recurs to stern condemnation of the enemies of the Truth; but, after a warm and vehement expression of his own absolute allegiance to Christ, he concludes with the utmost tenderness of feeling towards his Galatian converts.

As regards the general doctrine of this Epistle, it is an instruction for all time in the great truth that Christianity is pre-eminently a spiritual religion as opposed to a religion of mere outward observance. One point to be particularly noted is its emphatic reference to the Holy Spirit in His direct action on the human soul. The utter futility of all efforts to obtain acceptance with God by mere human exertions is urged in the most forcible language which it is possible to employ. The Law is opposed to Grace, just as the Flesh is opposed to the Spirit. Hence this Epistle has been, and is now, and will be, a storehouse of argument and admonition, on the necessity arising for making a firm stand against legal and ceremonial corruptions of Christianity.

1 One very important particular under this head is the question whether, when St Paul is arguing in this Epistle concerning Law, he means the Mosaic Law or Law in general. On this subject reference must be made to the notes, taken in conjunction with the notes on the Ep. to the Romans.
THE EPISODE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

GALATIANS.

CHAPTER I.

1. Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,)

6 He wondereth that they have so soon left him and the gospel, and accurseth those that preach any other gospel than he did. 11 He learned the gospel not of men, but of God: 14 and sheweth what he was before his calling, 17 and what he did presently after it.

I—5. Opening Salutation and Doxology.

CHAP. I. 1. Paul, an apostle] So far this Epistle does not differ essentially in its opening from other Epistles written by St Paul. But he passes immediately to the use of language which gives to this document a character quite unique.

not of men, neither by man] Here he springs at one leap to his subject. He suddenly asserts, at the very outset, that his Apostleship came neither directly nor indirectly from any human authority, but altogether and in every sense from “Jesus Christ and God the Father.” No other Epistle of St Paul begins in exactly the same way. There is something of passion and indignation in the very first words. At the same time there is something of tenderness also. We must observe that there is no commendation here such as we find in the opening of the first letter to the Corinthians, in which likewise he has to express blame. It is remarkable too that there is in this preamble none of that expression of prayer and thanksgiving which is found almost everywhere else in the opening sentences of his Epistles. This letter differs in a very marked way from all the rest; and yet none is more characteristic of St Paul.

In the words immediately before us are two contrasts, first between the prepositions “of” (ἀπό) and “by” (διὰ), and secondly between the plural “men” and the singular “man.” The first preposition refers to the ultimate origin of his appointment. This was altogether Divine. The second refers to the possibility of human instrumentality, even when the ultimate origin may be Divine. The existence of any such instrumentality in his own case he absolutely denies. The communication was made to him from Heaven; and his Apostleship was altogether independent. It might have been said of Matthias, for instance (Acts i. 21—26), that he was not an Apostle “from men,” but it could not be added that he was not “through man.” It could not be asserted of St Paul that there was, in any sense, any human action whatever in his appointment. As to the change of number from “men” to “man,” it probably arises from this circumstance, that he is about to mention Jesus Christ. Yet it may be remarked that there is a special force in the use of the singular in this second instance. No single human being had anything to do with the placing of St Paul in the position of an Apostle.

but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father] No antithesis could be stronger than that which we find here between Jesus Christ on the one hand and “man” or “men” on the other. It is impossible that this language could have been used by one who believed that our Lord was a mere man. Again, we have two persons of the Trinity combined in one collective phrase, governed by one preposition. Such is the case below in v. 3, but with the order inverted. At first sight it might be thought that “from” (ἀπό) would have been a more natural preposition than “through” (διὰ) to have used in reference to the Deity. But really there is much greater emphasis in the employment of διὰ. The action on the Apostle’s soul, in regard to his Apostleship, was without any human intervention at any point. See Acts xx. 24.

who raised him from the dead] This sudden mention of the Resurrection, casually and by the way, if we may so speak, shews the high place which this subject occupied in the Apostle’s thoughts: and this is consistent with the doctrine of the whole body of the Apostolic Epistles and the Acts of the Apostles. Everywhere the Resurrection is the cardinal fact on which the assertion of the Christian revelation is made to turn. It has been thought that St Paul wished to lay stress at the outset on the fact that it was from the risen and glorified Saviour that he himself received his
2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia:
3 Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,
4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this call: and this need not be denied. But it is more in accordance with the Apostle's manner, if we see here one of those sudden digressions of thought and feeling, arising out of a heart full to overflowing, which are characteristic of his style. We have an instance below in the fourth verse. See the note there.

2. *all the brethren which are with me* In order to conjecture with reasonable probability who these "brethren" were, it would be necessary to fix with tolerable exactitude the time and place of the writing of this Epistle. This question then properly belongs to the Introduction. Assuming that this Epistle was written during the 'Third Missionary Journey, these "brethren" may have included some of those who accompanied the Apostle on his return from that journey, namely, Sopater, Aristarchus, Secundus, Gaius, Timotheus, Tychicus and Trophimus, besides St Luke. See Acts xx. 4, 5. Assuming also that the writing of this letter was nearly contemporary with the writing of the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, we may add the name of Titus as a probable companion. See 2 Cor. ii. 13, viii. 23, comparing Gal. ii. 1.

Another question arises in regard to this phrase in the opening part of the Epistle before us. It has been supposed that St Paul mentions the concord of his companions with himself that he may give weight to his rebuke and add authority to his teaching. This view, however, is not quite in harmony with the general tone of the Epistle, which has preeminently the character of individual assertion and authority. It is quite improbable that he associates his companions with himself here in the same sense as when, at the opening of the Epistles to the Thessalonians, he gives with his own name the names of Silas and Timotheus, who had laboured with him at Thessalonica. Still it was something to shew "that all the brethren" that were "with him" were one with himself in affection towards the Galatians. This phrase is a conciliatory element in the preamble of a very severe epistle.

3. *unto the churches of Galatia* This language is consistent with that which he uses elsewhere on the same subject. See 1 Cor. xvi. 1. All that he knows leads us to the conclusion that the Christians of Galatia were not for the most part gathered into a great city, as was the case in Macedonia, Achaia and Asia, but scattered through various communities. See the Introduction.

3. *Grace...and peace* What is said else-where, in the notes on the Epistles, of this form of salutation is applicable here. It is singularly rich and beautiful, combining as it does Greek and Hebrew elements, and thus symbolizing the union of East and West. It is a benediction for all churches in all ages. It is not denied here to the Galatians, much as they deserved blame.

4. *Who gave himself for our sins* This is a specimen of what have been termed St Paul's "inimitable digressions." He suddenly turns aside to mention something of which his heart is full, but the mention of which is not essential to the completion of his sentence. See note above on his reference to the Resurrection in v. 1. Here it is the Atonement which fills his thoughts as he names Jesus Christ. There is a marked instance of the same kind below (ii. 20) in the sentence which ends with the words "who loved me, and gave himself for me." See 1 Cor. i. 13; Eph. i. 7; Tit. ii. 14. As illustrations of this feature of St Paul's style, we may mark the words "whose I am and whom I serve" (Acts xxvii. 23) which express a world of feeling, but which appear very unexpectedly in the midst of the sentence spoken during the height of the gale.

N.B. As to the preposition used here, the true reading appears to be *epi* and not *evi.* On the other hand there is no doubt that *epi* is the right word in ii. 10. The correct distinction appears to be this, that *epi* is more properly applicable to the sin and *evi* to the sinner. Christ gave Himself on account of our sins and on our behalf. And this distinction is observed in 1 Pet. iii. 18. On the other hand it must be noted that we find precisely the contrary usage in Heb. v. 1, 3. That he might deliver us from this present evil world. The more correct rendering would be "that he may deliver us." The deliverance is viewed as an ever-present blessing: and this illustrates the meaning of the rest of the sentence. "The world" (αὐξίω) here is the existing state of things, considered in reference to time, rather than in reference to its constituent elements (which would require ἀσκέτος). It denotes that which is present as opposed to that which is future, and that which is transitory as opposed to that which is eternal. And the Greek participle (ἐνωτάς) is applied here strictly according to...
6 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel:

6. I marvel] The change which is taking place in Galatia is utterly inconceivable to the Apostle's mind. All Christian truth had been so clearly set before the Galatians, their reception of the truth had been so hearty, his own personal influence over them had been so strong, that the change seemed like some unaccountable fascination. See iii. 1.

so soon removed] With regard to the verb (συναρπάζω) used here two things must be observed, first that it is in the middle voice, and secondly that it is in the present tense. Their change of mind was a revolution in progress, and a revolution for which they were responsible. The worst results had not yet been reached; but they had allowed bad influences to distort their minds; and they were in danger of utterly losing their loyalty to the true Gospel. The verb is just that which would be used to describe a political revolution in its earlier stages, when there is serious risk of allegiance being transferred from one government to another. Thus it is employed with great exactness of the attitude of the Galatian Christians.

From the phrase "so soon" (σύνυπαρξώ) we cannot confidently infer that a very short time had passed since the Apostle left Galatia, and so obtain some guidance for approximately fixing the date of the Epistle. All such terms are relative. See the Introduction. Commentators have speculated as to the point to which the phrase "so soon" refers, whether it be the time of the conversion of the Galatians, or the time of the Apostle's last visit among them, or the time of the entry of the false teachers. But such questions really require no answer, if the words have a different meaning. And the true meaning seems to be that the Galatians were changing their position hastily and without due consideration and with no sufficient reason. So the phrase is used in 1 Tim. v. 22 and 2 Thess. ii. 2. It is to our purpose to add that this state of things was in harmony with what Caesar tells us, to quote Tenison's words ('In memoriam,' cix.), of the "schoolboy heat, the blind hysterics of the Celt."

6—9. sudden and vehement rebuke of the fickleness of the Galatians. the gospel is immutable.

St Paul begins with startling vehemence. He does not approach the matter of his blame with cautious and well-considered steps, as in the First Epistle to the Corinthians. But his indignation springs out instantaneously, like a river full and copious from its very source, and flows on, carrying everything before it.
7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel, than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

and it was this that made their fault and their danger so serious.

into the grace of Christ] The translation of the Authorized Version here is undoubtedly wrong. The preposition ἐν denotes not "into" but in. Free grace was the sphere in which, and the power in virtue of which, this calling had taken place. See Acts xv. 11; Eph. ii. 2; and note what is said above concerning "the will of God" in v. 4 of this chapter. This blessing of free grace had surrounded them, and had exerted its full power on them at the outset. Now they were desiring and obliterating it.

unto another gospel] a different kind of gospel (ἔκκρισιν) — a modified and perverted Gospel—a Gospel of which the old characteristics were obscured and defaced. As to there being two Gospels, as to any choice of Gospels being presented to mankind, with equal claims on their attention, any such supposition is impossible. This he says in the next verse.

7. Which is not another] The Greek word here is a different one (ἄλλος). It is to be regretted that the A. V. conceals the relation of this to what precedes, by using the same English word to translate two different Greek words. Bishop Lightfoot discriminates between the meanings of the two words thus:—"ἄλλος adds, while ἐκκριθαίνω ... ἄλλος is generally confined to a negation of identity, ἐκκριθαίνω sometimes implies the negation of resemblance." The contrast in the usage of the two words may not always have been maintained; but here and in 2 Cor. xi. 4 (ἄλλος ἐκκριθαίνω ... ἄλλος) it is exact.

but there be some that trouble you] Literally, "unless indeed there be some that trouble you." There was another Gospel among the Galatians just so far as this, that certain persons were unsettling their minds as to the true nature of the Gospel. Who the persons denoted by the vague term "some" were we do not know; and St Paul forbears to name them or to describe them more precisely. There is indignation in the very vagueness. The construction is similar to what we find in Luke xviii. 9, and Col. ii. 8. The word translated "trouble" (ραπαντορέως) is a resumption of the metaphor in περιαριστάω. Strictly it is a political term, applicable to the incipient stages of revolution.

would pervert] Literally, "are desirous of perverting." They might not be ultimately and completely successful: but their plan and purpose was thoroughly bad. St Paul warns the Galatians of the motive of those who were disturbing their consistency.

8. But though we, or an angel from heaven] He supposes an impossibility. No stronger language could be employed for stating that the originally-communicated Gospel was absolutely immutable. Even if he himself and those who had been his associates in evangelizing Galatia (we know from Acts xv. 40, xvi. 1, 6 that these companions were Silas and Timothy) were to contradict themselves, and to present Christianity in an altered aspect, still the old Gospel must hold its ground. If an angel were to come from heaven and present to them a modified Gospel, the mistake would be in the angel, not in what had been originally taught to the Galatians. Chrysostom suggests here that the false teachers may have pretended that they had the sanction of the older Apostles. "Don't tell me of John," he says, "don't tell me of James. If one of the highest angels were to come, corrupting the truth originally preached, he must be rejected."

any other gospel ... than that which we have preached] The preposition (ἐπὶ) denotes one thing set by the side of another, so that it is seen to be utterly different from that other thing. This phrase, having some bearing on the question of tradition, has been the occasion of much controversy. The language of the whole passage is so strong, that it seems most natural to understand this phrase as excluding any deviation of any kind from the original Gospel. Those who claim the existence of a body of oral tradition co-ordinate with the written tradition of the N. T. certainly cannot gain much from this sentence.

let him be accursed] Here again controversy has been busy. It has been supposed that "anathema" (ἀναθήματα) in this passage denotes ecclesiastical excommunication. But those who have wished to assign this sense to it have overlooked the fact that it would not be suitable to an angel. Nothing more surely disturbs the proportion of Scriptural truth, than the introduction into the Bible of the meanings of words which belong to a later age. The word "anathema" denotes that which is devoted to a curse, because it is hateful to God. The best commentary on the passage, so far as this word is affected, is 1 Cor. xvi. 22.

9. As we said before] It seems best to refer this to St Paul's recent (i.e. the second)
gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed.

10 For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

11 But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.
13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews' religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

two preceding clauses he has stated, negatively, from what sources he did not receive the Gospel. Now he states positively from whence he did receive it. The illumination came to him direct from Jesus Christ. A question still remains as to the time when this "revelation" was given: and the right answer is probably this, that it came on the way to Damascus: not however that this need exclude subsequent revelations: and especially we must think of Arabia (v. 17) as a probable scene of further illumination.

13-24. HISTORICAL PROOF THAT HIS APOSTLESHIP AND KNOWLEDGE OF THE GOSPEL WERE INDEPENDENT.

He now enters deliberately upon a careful and detailed proof of the truth of the statements made above. He first points out that he had been a persecutor of the Church and notorious for his zeal in Judaism. For the conversion of such a man Divine interposition was essential (13. 14). Next he says that on his conversion he had no communication with man at all and did not go to Jerusalem (15-17). Thirdly, he says that, when he did go to Jerusalem, it was not till after three years, that he went in order to make the acquaintance of Peter, and saw only one other Apostle (18. 19). In the fourth place, after leaving Jerusalem, he was in a far-off region, and was not personally known to the Christians of Judaea, though they recognised him as a true preacher of the Gospel (21-24).

13. For ye have heard. More correctly ye heard. When St Paul was first in Galatia, he told them of his previous history: and they must have heard the particulars of it from other sources. He was fond of referring to the time when he had been a persecutor. See (besides 1 Cor. xv. 9, and 1 Tim. i. 13) his words before the Jewish mob (Acts xxii. 4, 5) and before Festus and Agrippa (Acts xxvi. 10, 11). In both these cases he spoke, as he writes here, under apologetic conditions: and this similarity in his manner of arguing might most correctly be termed an "undesigned coincidence."

my conversation... in the Jews' religion] By "conversation" is meant here "conduct" or "way of living."

St Paul has two ways of speaking of the Jewish religion, according as he makes himself a Jew to the Jew or a Gentile to the Gentile. Thus, to take the two apologetic speeches in the Acts of the Apostles, to which reference has just been made, speaking to the angry Jewish mob he says that the letters he obtained as a persecutor were for "the brethren" at Damascus, and that Ananias there was "devout according to the law" (Acts xxii. 5, 14). Speaking to Festus and Agrippa, he says that "the Jews" knew his manner of life from his youth and complains that "the Jews" were his accusers (Acts xxvi. 4, 7). In the one case he speaks as if he were within the sphere of Judaism, in the other as if Judaism were external to himself. Compare a similar contrast between Rom. ix. 3, 4 and 1 Thess. ii. 15. In the two verses before us he wavers between the two methods of speaking of the Jews. "Judaism" (Ἰουδαϊότης) is in itself a neutral term; and here he uses it as if it were something external to himself. He is addressing Gentile Christians, on whom Jews are exerting a mischievous influence.

bow that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God] In harmony with what has been said above we should mark how he speaks of the Christian Church as a body separate from Judaism. The language is precisely the same in 1 Cor. ix. 20, wasted it. He did his best to destroy it. The same Greek word is used in Acts ix. 21. See below in this chapter v 23.

14. profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals] More correctly made progress in Judaism. He has just been speaking of his persecution of Christians as a proof that Divine intervention must have been needed to make him a Christian. He now puts forward another aspect of his earlier life which was a proof of the same thing: and here he speaks of Judaism in a less hostile tone. He was distinguished among his contemporaries for religious zeal and for proficiency in legal knowledge. In this there was everything to make him a keen opponent of Christianity.

in mine own nation] He uses exactly the same phrase in speeches recorded in the Acts. See xxv. 3, xxvi. 4, xxviii. 19. This is a coincidence which should not be overlooked.

being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers] The Greek (ὑπερβλαπτω) denotes that he had this zeal from the outset—from his very boyhood. We find precisely the same language in Acts xxii. 20. There was a party among the Jews, which gloried in the name of "zealots," and which gave its name to one of the Twelve, Simon Zealotes. To this religious party St Paul may have belonged. As regards the word here translated "tra-
15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace,
dition," it is pointed out by Schaff (in Lange's 'Commentary,' p. 24) that it "embraces everything which is taught and handed down, either orally or in writing, or in both ways, from generation to generation"—that it may be used in a favourable sense, as in 1 Cor. xi. 2; 2 Thess. ii. 15, iii. 6, or in an unfavourable one, as in Mark vii. 3, 5, 8; Col. ii. 8—that in this passage it means "the whole Jewish religion, or mode of worship, divine and human, but in the Pharisaic sense."

15-17. He now passes to the time which immediately succeeded his conversion. At this critical period of his life when his Christian conversion was communicated to him, and he received his call to the Apostleship, he had no communication whatever with the older Apostles. In fact he was far distant from Jerusalem, nor did he regard himself as under any necessity for going thither.

15. *who separated me from my mother's womb*] This version might easily be misunderstood. The meaning is that even from his birth St Paul was set apart by Divine predestination for the work to which he was appointed. So Isaiah (xlix. 1) and Jeremiah (i. 5) speak of their own predestination, even from birth, to the prophetic office. St Paul uses similar language regarding himself in Rom. i. 1. It is an essential part of his argument here that from the first moment of his existence it was God's free choice and grace that made him what he was.

called me by his grace] As in his predestination from the first, so in his "effectual calling," when the appointed time came, all was of God's free and gracious agency. It depended not in any way upon himself, or upon any co-operation of man. This "calling" took place on the way to Damascus. Of this we should be sure from the very nature of the case: but it is made certain by the mention of this place two verses below: "I returned again to Damascus."

15, 16. *when it pleased God...to reveal his Son in me*] The two points mentioned above give clear emphasis to the word used here, as this word in turn enhances its force. All the language of the passage calls our attention, as distinctly as possible, to the fact that the Divine will acted supremely in this whole matter, independently of any human plan or effort. The verb (εὐλογείν) denotes the free and unconditioned (and, at the same time, good and gracious) will of God, operating first, in the choosing of St Paul, and secondly, in his calling. The Apostle now passes on to a third point, the inward revelation which fitted him for the efficient discharge of his high mission. The phrase "to reveal his Son in me" is indeed capable of two interpretations. It might mean to make Christ known to the world in and through the conversion and instrumentality of St Paul. Thus it is said at the end of this chapter: "They glorified God in me." See also very similar language in 2 Tim. i. 16, where he says that he obtained mercy that "in him" a pattern of long-suffering might be shewn to all believers in after-time. And this mode of interpretation might seem preferable here, were it not for the words which immediately follow, where the communication of the Gospel to the world is declared to have been the end and purpose of the revelation in him. Hence, to avoid tautology, it seems that we must understand the phrase as meaning inward illumination. Light was given to him subjectively, in order that objectively he might be a light to others.

16. *that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood:* The verb (προσώπωσθαι) used in this place denotes the being in close conference, with the view either of obtaining or of communicating knowledge. In the latter sense it is employed in ii. 6. In the former sense here. The expression "flesh and blood" denotes man in general, with a shade of depreciation in reference to the weakness and ignorance of human nature. It is so used in four other places of the New Testament. See 1 Cor. xv. 50; Heb. ii. 14; Eph. vi. 13. The remaining passage deserves a close comparison with that before us. It was with St Paul, as with St
17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but I went into Arabia,
and returned again unto Damascus.
18 Then after three years I went again into Arabia.
up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and abide with him fifteen days.

19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lord’s brother.
20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia;
22 And was unknown by face which must not be doubted. Compare Rom. ix. 1 and 1 Cor. i. 18.

21—24. He now points out that on leaving Jerusalem his life was spent for a considerable time in the far-off regions of Syria and Cilicia, in such entire separation from Palestine that the members of the Christian communities in Judaea did not even really know him, while yet (and this addition is important) they were in thorough sympathy with him, and rejoiced that their former persecutor was now spreading the truth which he and they believed.

21. Afterwards] He does not mention the circumstances which forced him to leave Jerusalem suddenly after the short fortnight spent with St Peter. These circumstances are given partly in Acts ix. 39, 40, partly in Acts xxii. 17—41. It was not to his purpose here to name either the persecution which arose in consequence of his faithful preaching, or the command which he received during his vision in the Temple. It is enough for the present argument if he points out that the time spent in Jerusalem was very short, that he had no intercourse then with the general body of the Apostles, and that “afterwards” he was in a region very remote.

the regions of Syria and Cilicia] The statement in Acts ix. 39 is that “the brethren,” to ensure his safety, took him down from Jerusalem to Cesarea on the coast, and then sent him to Tarsus—from which place afterwards (ix. 25, 26) Barnabas brought him to Antioch. There is nothing in this inconsistent with what we find in this part of the Epistle to the Galatians. The phrase “Syria and Cilicia” is a generic term, which we find similarly used in Acts xv. 23, 41. The course of the range of Mount Taurus causes Cilicia to have a closer geographical affinity with northern Syria than it has with the rest of Asia Minor. Moreover, Cilicia was often a political dependency of Syria. The more important name is naturally placed first. We find the word “regions” (εὐρύχωρα) used in the same vague general way in Rom. xv. 23, and 1 Cor. xi. 10. But again, these four verses cover a considerable space of time, and include the work done with Barnabas at Antioch. More important work was, in fact, done during this period in Syria than in Cilicia. The expressions of v. 23 (see the notes there) denote continuity of occupation on his part, with the coming of Jews to Jerusalem from time to time.

22. unknown by face unto the churches of
unto the churches of Judæa which were in Christ:

23 But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

Judea] In Jerusalem itself he was undoubtedly well known. But he had not travelled about as a missionary in Judea, like Philip, whom we find near Gaza and at Azotus (Acts vii. 26, 40), or like Peter, whom we find at Lydda and Joppa (ix. 35, 43). These are specimens of the places in which Christian communities were formed. We should observe how St Paul (as in v. 13) speaks of these communities as bodies outside of, and independent of, the Jewish Church. The remark made in this verse, says Schwoller in Lange's Commentary, "belongs also to the proof that he had not been a disciple of the Apostles; for, had he stood in near connection with them, he could not but have been known to the Churches of Judea."

23. they had heard] This is not a correct translation of the Greek, which denotes "they were hearing from time to time," and is similar in form to what we find in the preceding verses, "I was unknown all the while." the faith] The use of this word as a definition of Christianity is remarkable, and strikes a kind of key-note for the remainder of the Epistle.

which once be destroyed] He had done his best to destroy it. The Greek verb is the same as that which is translated "wasted" in v. 13.

24. they glorified God in me] He is careful to say that they praised not him but God. We have here an exemplification of the precept given in the Sermon on the Mount, "Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven." For the expression "in me" see on v. 16. Compare Exod. xiv. 11. Meyer says here, "With the impression which Paul thus made on the congregations of Judæa the hateful plotting of the Jews in Galatia against him stood in striking contrast; hence this added clause." The primary point of the Apostle's argument is that his Christianity could not have been formed under the influence of the Apostles at Jerusalem; but a secondary point of the argument is, that in all his earlier work he had the sympathy and respect of the Christians in Judæa.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on Chap. i. 10.

Many commentators have failed to appreciate the extreme difficulty of this verse. Assuming the αὖτις, with which it begins, to be the same in its reference as the αὖτις of the preceding verse, they have supposed the Apostle to mean: "Is this language which I am now using like the language of a time-server or a men-pleaser?" But surely such a sentence would be very destitute of force. Moreover in this way the ἐγὼ in the latter part of it would not be accounted for: nor indeed would the ἦν at the beginning of it be easily explicable. The difficulty arises partly from the fact that a great amount of feeling is condensed into a few words, and partly from another fact, that something is taken for granted, which the Galatians would easily understand, though it must be a matter of conjecture to us. It seems probable that he had been accused of time-serving, because he had conciliated various classes of persons by becoming "all things to all men." His conscience too might tell him (and if this were so, he would certainly acknowledge it) that he had once been by no means indifferent to the favourable opinion of men.

CHAPTER II.

1 He shewed when he went up again to Jerusalem, and for what purpose: 3 and that Titus was not circumcised: 11 and that he resisted Peter, and told him the reason, 14 why he and other, being Jews, do believe in Christ to be justified by faith, and not by works: 20 and that they live not in sin, who are so justified.

CHAP. II. This chapter, in which St Paul pursues his historical argument, is divisible into two well-defined sections, having reference to two very marked occasions, one at Jerusalem and the other at Antioch. On the former his independent Apostleship was recognised by the other Apostles themselves (1–10), on the latter he openly resisted St Peter, when that Apostle was compromising the freedom of the Gospel by weak accommodation to Judaism. Within the first section there occurs, by the way (3–5), a collateral argument drawn by St Paul from the fact that he refused to consent to the circumcision of Titus, because, under the circumstances of the moment, this would have compromised the freedom of the
Then fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

Gospel. At the close of the second section (17–21) is a condensed argument on the general principles involved in the doctrine of free justification.

1–10. At the Council in Jerusalem, St Paul refused to circumcise Titus, and his independent Apostleship was recognised by the other Apostles.

It is assumed that this visit to Jerusalem is identical with that which is described in Acts xv. 1–23. The difficulties connected with this question are discussed in a longer note at the end of the chapter.

1. Then fourteen years after 1. A long period, he says, elapsed, during which he had no opportunity of obtaining instruction from, or acting under the influence of, other Apostles. All this time he was engaged in the work of an independent Apostleship. For the question as to the moment of time, from which these "fourteen years" are reckoned, whether it is his conversion, or the last-mentioned visit to Jerusalem, reference must be made to the longer note. The point of importance in the argument is that he was labouring in the cause of Christ many years, without any interference from the older Apostles, and without any dependence upon them.

2. I went up again to Jerusalem 1. For the question whether he had not been there at all since the last-mentioned visit, or whether he had not been there under circumstances which afforded an opportunity of being instructed and directed by the older Apostles, reference must again be made to the longer note. The expression "went up" denotes, as in i. 17, the going to a metropolis. As to the place from which he thus went up, it is to be presumed that it was "the regions of Syria and Cilicia." See i. 21.

2. with Barnabas 1. Close attention must be given to this mention of Barnabas, partly because it supplies some help towards determining the chronology of the incidents here described, partly because he had an important biographical connection with these incidents, partly because there is extreme interest in every point of association between St Paul and this friend.

3. and took Titus with me also 1. The occurrence of this name also must be very carefully marked. It does not appear in the narrative of the Acts at all. See note on Acts xv. 2. But his companionship with St Paul at this time, besides its relation to the topic immediately before us, is an important link of connexion between this Epistle and the Second Epistle to the Corinthians which was nearly contemporary. Cp. 2 Cor. ii. 13, vii. 6, 13, 14, viii. 6, 16, 23, xii. 18, and see the Introduction. It seems evident that Titus was much in St Paul's mind and heart about the time when he wrote the Epistle to the Galatians: and this may have quickened his recollection of what happened in reference to him on an earlier occasion.

2. I went up by revelation 2. Probably through a prophet, as in Acts xiii. 1. See Introd. to the Acts, pp. 347, 344. In this there is nothing inconsistent with what we learn from Acts xv. 4, where we are told that he was sent from Antioch to Jerusalem, in order to promote the settlement of an anxious controversy. In the history his outward commission is named, in the epistle the inward communication to himself. This is quite natural: and we have parallel cases both in i. 18 above, compared with Acts ix. 23–25, and in Acts xxii. 18 compared with Acts ix. 29, 30. In each of these cases we have an inward subjective communication on the one hand, and the pressure of outward objective circumstances on the other. Nor is it out of place here to refer to Acts x. 17, 18, 19, xi. 1, 12. The sending of messengers by Cornelius cooperated with the revelation made to St Peter's mind and conscience. And indeed it may be added that similar experience is common in the ordinary course of Christian life.

2. to them which gospel which I preach among the Gentiles 2. The persons to whom this communication was made were, of course, the Christians in Jerusalem. For the meaning of the word "communicated" (ἀναθέματος), we should refer to Acts xxiv. 14, the only other passage in the New Testament where this verb is used. There we are told that Festus laid St Paul's case before Agrippa II., with the view of careful consultation concerning it. So here St Paul (in harmony with the commission named in Acts xv. 2) laid before his fellow-Christians at Jerusalem a statement of his manner of preaching the Gospel to the Gentiles. We should observe that the word "preach" is in the present tense. This asserts the continuity and consistency of his manner of preaching, even to the moment of his writing this letter. See note above on εὐαγγελίζωμαι (L. 16).

2. but privately to them which were of reputation 2. It is to be regretted that both here and below in ν. 6 and ν. 9 the A. V. has changed the tense of the original. "Them which are of reputation" is the phrase which St Paul
3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:

which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain.

uses. It is no part of his plan to depreciate the older Apostles, while he asserts the independence, both of his own call to be an Apostle, and of his knowledge of the Gospel. The difficulty of his position is that he must both render due honour to them and also firmly maintain his own ground; and neither of these points is overlooked in any part of his argument. That he should have privately conferred with the leading men in Jerusalem, before the public discussion of the anxious question in hand, was an indication of true wisdom; and it furnishes an example very useful to ourselves on critical occasions. The words in Acts 4, “they declared what things God had done with them,” are quite in harmony with all that is stated here.

_liesd by any means I should run, or had run, in vain_ The personality of St Paul here comes to view, in a startling manner, through the sudden use of one of his characteristic metaphors. We find the same imagery, drawn from the foot-race, in a lively form below (v. 7)—“Ye were running well: who put a sudden hindrance in your way?” Images drawn from the Greek Games, and especially the foot-race, are conspicuous in St Paul's spoken and written words, while on this Third Missionary Journey, perhaps because Corinth was much in his thoughts. See 1 Cor. ix. 24—16; Rom. x. 16; Acts xx. 24. We find in an epistle of later date (Phil. ii. 16) the exact phrase, (περιτολω τιτους) which is used here. To turn now from the form of St Paul’s language to his motive on this occasion at Jerusalem, he acted with great caution lest his past work or his present work should be to no purpose. The nature of his apprehension seems well expressed by Bishop Lightfoot. He was anxious “lest the Judaic Christians, by insisting on the Mosaic ritual, might thwart his past and present endeavours to establish the Church on a liberal basis.” A mistake in his conduct at this time might have compromised the future liberty of the Gentile churches. Moreover there was imminent risk of a schism.

3. But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised] He now introduces an incident, connected with the visit to Jerusalem, which, through his firmness, was made to express a great principle and resulted in benefit to the Galatian Christians themselves. Those who went with St Paul from Antioch to Jerusalem (Acts xv. 2) were probably all representatives of Gentile Christianity. Titus certainly was. That he was a man too of some mark, as to position and character, seems clear from the office which he afterwards held in Crete. See the Epistle to Titus. Strong pressure was brought to bear on St Paul to cause Titus to be circumcised. It might easily have been represented as a conciliatory act, like the making common cause with the Nazarenes afterwards at Jerusalem (Acts xxii. 21—24), a course which St James recommended, and which St Paul adopted. But the circumstances on this earlier occasion were peculiar. The question of the necessity of circumcision for Gentile converts had been raised. See Acts xv. 1. Before the later occasion this question had been settled for ever. This was largely due to St Paul’s firmness.

As to apparent inconsistency in St Paul's conduct in comparison with what he did subsequently in the case of Timothy, the plausibility of such an accusation was probably in St Paul’s mind as he wrote. He caused Timothy to be circumcised as a afterwards: and this must have been known to the Galatians, because the Apostle was then on his way to his first visit among them, and Timothy had been among them the companion of his labours. See Acts xvi. 1—3. But the two cases were very different. Titus was a pure Gentile. Timothy was half a Jew. This is perhaps one reason why so much stress is laid in the present passage on the Heathen parentage of Titus. Moreover over the question of circumcision in relation to Gentile converts had been settled before the beginning of the Second Missionary Journey. Thus the two cases were as different as possible. It was quite consistent in St Paul at Lystra to circumcise Timothy “because of the Jews which were in those quarters—for they knew all that his father was a Greek,” and to refuse to circumcise Titus at Jerusalem “because of false brethren,” who wished to bring the Christian Church “into bondage.”

But a question has been raised, and has been argued on two sides by opposing commentators, as to whether the meaning of this passage is that St Paul refused on this occasion, though urgently pressed, to circumcise Titus, or whether Titus really was circumcised, but only as an act of free concession and friendly arrangement, not under any compulsion. The original Greek would bear either interpretation. But the grammatical construction in this paragraph is peculiarly intricate, and when no help is to be gained from this source, it seems natural to decide the question by the general course of the argument. And surely the main point of the case, and the whole tone of the Epistle, require us to believe that St Paul resisted and refused. Moreover, if he
had yielded, he would have been guilty of just that kind of perilous compromise at a critical time, which he blamed so much in Peter afterwards, and which forms the subject of the second half of this chapter.

The strict meaning of the Greek here is—"Not even was Titus compelled to be circumcised." There were strong prima facie reasons for consenting. Titus was a Gentile by birth: his circumcision would have brought him into easy and satisfactory association with the Judaic Christians; and controversy for the moment would have been avoided. But St Paul knew that he was responsible for the future, and that, in order to make the future safe, he must be firm in the present.

4. And that because of false brethren] The construction is difficult: but the simplest way to understand the sentence seems to be this—that because of the mischievous influence and bad motive of these "false brethren" he refused to yield to the moral compulsion brought to bear upon him. By "false brethren" is meant Christians in name who were not Christians in principle. It is worthy of note that the word occurs only in a contemporary Epistle. See 2 Cor. xi. 26.

unawares brought in] This is a military metaphor. By παρασκεύαστος is meant one who, during war, is stealthily introduced into our camp in the guise of a friend.

who came in privily to spy out our liberty] The metaphorical language derived from warfare is continued (both in παρασκεύαστος and in κατασκοπία). In illustration of the former word see παρασκεύασται in Jude 4. The verb κατασκοπέω, which is equivalent to the latter word, is used of the spies in Joshua ii. 2 (LXX.). The spirit of the passage is well caught by Chrysostom, who says: "See how under the image of spies he points out the nature of the warfare that was then going on, "that they might bring us into bondage." The true translation is "that they may bring us into bondage," or even more strongly "with the certain consequence that we should have been enslaved." St Paul always has regard to the future and to the continuity of true Gospel principles. See the end of the next verse. N.B. The reading of the best MSS. is κατασκοπέω. The irregular use of the future after τών (as in John xvii. 3) is very emphatic. So also is the verb itself, which denotes the bringing into utter slavery.

5. To whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour] This strong language seems to shew, beyond a doubt, that the course followed by St Paul was a firm denial to yield with that submission which was so urgently claimed. The word for "subjection" has the article. That the truth of the gospel might continue with you] "That it may continue with you" is the correct translation. St Paul points out the subsequent benefit which had resulted from his firmness at that time. His motive had been to make the future safe. And he turns here suddenly on the Galatians, with a claim for their gratitude. We may add that our own gratitude is equally due to St Paul for this service. The word translated "continue" (θεραμένω) is very strong, and expresses thorough continuance for ever.

6. of those who seemed to be somewhat] See note above on v. 2, especially as regards the tense of δοκοῦσιν. The construction is resumed in a new form near the end of the verse, after an abrupt parenthesis. In this passage (6—10) St Paul reverts to the general narrative, after giving the episode of Titus, which may be viewed as a digression, though it has an important bearing on his argument.

whatevery they were, it maketh no matter to me] He does not say that the other Apostles did not occupy a great position. This he fully recognises, especially as regards their having known Christ on earth: and this is probably the meaning of εἰρικός, which is overlooked in the A. V. What he says is that this made no matter to him. He was independent of them.

God accepteth no man's person] We have here an instance of the new Christian vocabulary which came into the Greek language at this time. Appearing first in Luke xx. 31, it is very conspicuous and forcible in Acts x. 34; and it is a reasonable conjecture that St Peter used here at Jerusalem the language he had used at Caesarea on the reception of Cornelius into the blessings of the Gospel. Instances of the same language appear in Rom. ii. 11; Eph. vi. 9; Col. iii. 25; James ii. 1, 9.

for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me] This resumes, with a change of construction, what we find at the beginning of the verse. For the meaning of the verb προσφέρω see note on i. 16. The English rendering here is very exact: nor could
Galatians. II.

who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me:
7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter;
8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles:)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.
10 Only they would that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

any language express more strongly the independent knowledge and commission of St Paul and the complete concord between him and the other Apostles. See Intro. to Acts, p. 334.

7. when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me] More accurately, "is committed." They clearly saw that St Paul had an independent commission to preach the Gospel to the Heathen. This is now no mere assertion on his part, but a recognition on theirs. The construction is similar to that in 1 Thess. ii. 4, and the tense is so chosen as to express the continuity of St Paul's responsibility and work up to the moment of his writing these words, as in i. 16 and ii. 1.

as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter] The two Apostles were co-ordinate in authority, each having a separate sphere of missionary work. There was no subordination of St Paul to St Peter, either in fact, or in the opinion of those who were assembled in Jerusalem on this solemn occasion. And, further, as to the division of missionary work between these two Apostles, there is often great exaggeration as to the meaning of what is stated here. On the one hand we find St Paul, after this time, when entering upon new ground, addressing himself first to the Jews. See Acts xvii. 2, xix. 8, xxvii. 17. On the other hand, to say nothing of credible tradition, we find traces of St Peter's activity at Antioch and Corinth. See 1 Cor. i. 12; Gal. ii. 11. Moreover the earliest Churches, almost everywhere, were mixed bodies; and we cannot really discriminate between their Hebrew and Heathen members. See Introduction to Peter, § 3.

8. For he that wrought effectually in Peter, &c.] Here is given parenthetically the reason for this state of opinion; and no reason could be stronger. It was the evidence furnished by the working of God Himself. The Holy Spirit supplied His own witness. See the beginning of St Peter's first Epistle. The phrases "in Peter" and "in me" should rather be "for Peter" and "for me,"

the same was mighty in me] It is to be regretted that the A. V. obscures the fact that the same Greek verb (ἐνεργέω) is used in both members of the sentence.

9. James, Cephas, and John] The order in which the names occur is not without its importance. The position in which James is placed is precisely that in which we find him in Acts xv. 13. See also Acts xii. 17, xxi. 18. Another coincidence with the Acts of the Apostles has been justly noted. It is now no longer necessary to call him "the Lord's brother," as when he is mentioned in connection with the first visit of St Paul to Jerusalem (i. 19). Since that time the other James had suffered martyrdom. See Acts xii. 1.

who seemed to be pillars] They had the reputation of being "pillars" of the Church, and justly. See on verses 2 and 6. No disparagement is intended. The Church is compared to a building, and the Apostles are pillars therein. Under this image a promise is given to the faithful Christian in Rev. iii. 2, and an injunction given to the Christian minister in 1 Tim. iii. 15. Using the same language Clemens Romanus speaks of St Peter and St Paul as "the greatest and most righteous pillars" of the Church.

perceived the grace] The language used here (ἐνέργεια) seems to imply fuller and more detailed information than the ἑνεργέω of v. 7. The word "grace," too, which is so carefully employed, should be noted, as involving the assertion of a great principle characteristic of this Epistle.

the right hands of fellowship] A personal contract was made: and there seems no reason to doubt that the right hand was used in some significant gesture on the occasion, as has been the custom in solemn agreements in all nations. If this was so, it invests the circumstances of this meeting with great life and force.

we...unto the heathen] These denote Paul and Barnabas.

they unto the circumcision] It appears then that from this time forward, John and James, like Peter, were viewed as exercising their Apostleship specially among the Jews.

10. that we should remember the poor] There is abundant proof that the Christians in Judæa were very poor. Such charity, coming through St Paul to them from Gentile con-
II But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

11. But when Peter was come to Antioch, we should note here the easy mention of Antioch, without any pains being taken to call attention to the fact that the event, now to be mentioned, occurred there. It is a parallel case to the easy mention of Damascus in i. 17. Antioch is vividly before St Paul's mind here, as Damascus was when he wrote the earlier paragraph. Assuming that this occurrence took place very soon after the Apostolic Council, we see that this fits very well with what we read in Acts xv. 30, 35, especially as regards the presence of Barnabas at Antioch. As to the reason why St Peter went to this city, on this subject we are quite in the dark.

I withstood him to the face] This conflict is one of the most remarkable and important events in all Church History. We see St Peter and St Paul in open antagonism: the rebuke coming from St Paul, and the blame resting unequivocally on St Peter, and this on a question very seriously affecting Christian faith and conduct in all future ages. The bearing of this on a great and momentous controversy is evident. Some, who are concerned to maintain the supreme authority, if not the infallibility, of those who are termed the successors of St Peter, and others, to whom, without being thus fettered, the notion of a conflict on a serious question between Apostles was to a distinguished person, have endeavoured to explain away the facts of this collision. Two different modes of doing this have been adopted, to which a brief allusion must here be made.

By Clement of Alexandria and by Eusebius in ancient times, it has been suggested that the Cephas mentioned here is not Peter the Apostle, but some other eminent Christian disciple. This theory needs only to be stated to refute itself.

Another theory is that the conflict was a dramatic scene arranged after a mutual understanding by the two Apostles, in order that through the pretended rebuke and submission of St Peter a strong effect might be produced upon the minds of the Judaizers. It seems strange that this immoral view, first brought forward by Origen, found strong advocates in Chrysostom and Jerome. The controversy on the subject between Jerome and Augustine is one of the most famous parts of early Christian literature. Augustine not only was victorious over Jerome, but, on the whole, has commanded subsequent Christian opinion. Augustine, in one of his letters to Jerome, asks where the authority of the Scriptures is gone, if they are made to sanction deliberately-arranged falsehoods like this, referring to St Paul's words above, 'Behold, before God, I
12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that

lie not," and calls on his opponent to retract. This subject has received a very full treatment by Thierry, 'Saint Jérome' (1867), Vol. II. pp. 118—176.

It seems certainly very strange that St Peter should have acted as he did after the decision of the Council at Jerusalem. A difficulty on this account has been seriously felt by some commentators. Even Paley says, at the close of his remarks on this Epistle in the 'Horae Paulinae': "there is nothing to hinder us from supposing that the dispute at Antioch was prior to the consultation at Jerusalem, or that Peter, in consequence of this rebuke, ought to have afterwards maintained former sentiments." But we feel Peter's conduct to be equally strange, when we think of his experience at Caesarea in the case of Cornelius. There is, in fact, no further difficulty in the matter than to suppose he was guilty of inconsistency. Such inconsistency, too, is precisely in harmony with what we read of his character in the Gospels. He bravely walked on the waves and then lost all confidence. He professed more love to Christ than the rest of the disciples and then denied his Master. Moreover we must not exaggerate his offence at Antioch, but must observe in what follows exactly what it was.

because he was to be blamed] The true translation is because he was condemned. His very conduct palpably carried its own condemnation, and this is the point of the argument which follows. Compare John iii. 18 and Rom. xiv. 23.

12. before that certain came from James] There is no reason to suppose that James had been in any way inconsistent with what he himself had said at the Council, "my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God" (Acts xv. 19). The name of James may have been used without any authority whatever: or some message or opinion of his may have been altogether perverted. The phrase "certain" (τινες), used here by St Paul, is full of indignation as in i. 7. The occasion seems to have been similar to that which had happened before the Council, as we learn from the beginning of the official letter: 'Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain (τινες) which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment." Acts xv. 24.

be did eat with the Gentiles] This was precisely what he had, after much scruple, decided to do at Caesarea (Acts x. 28, 48), and precisely what gave occasion to his custom afterwards at Jerusalem (xi. 3); and there is no reason to doubt that this was his custom ever afterwards. The tense in the passage before us implies this. So also does the δισανάζειν of v. 14 below.

be withdrew and separated himself] In two respects this is progressive in its meaning. The tense of the two verbs expresses what was gradual: and the second verb is stronger than the first. St Peter, on the arrival of these people from Jerusalem, began timidly to withdraw from his customary free intercourse with the Gentile Christians, and then absolutely discontinued it. This was the sum of his offence. This change of conduct might in itself be excused on the grounds of charity and prudence: but under the circumstances of the case, especially when his position in the Church was taken into account, it was full of the most serious danger. It arose too from a most unworthy motive.

fearing them which were of the circumcision] His motive was the fear to which, with all his zeal and courage, he was characteristically liable. Again we may refer to what took place on the Sea of Galilee and in the High-priest's house at Jerusalem. By 'them which were of the circumcision" is meant Christians who had been Jews. These were the men who came from Jerusalem, with possibly some at Antioch who shared the same Pharisaic views.

13. the other Jews dissembled likewise with him] These were the general body of Jewish Christians at Antioch, who had hitherto lived in free intercourse with the Gentile Christians. The words "dissemble" and "dissimulation" correctly express the original Greek. Peter, and the other Jewish Christians after his example, were assuming a habit of life quite inconsistent with their true principles. The consequences were likely to be very serious. There was an imminent danger of an absolute social schism in the Church of Christ. Separation at meals might at first sight appear of no great moment. But this carried with it many other results: and especially there was the risk of separation in communicating at the Lord's Supper.

insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away] This mischief came like a flood in which even he was involved. The vehemence expressed in the verb (σώφρονη) here employed by St Paul is well illustrated by its use in 2 Pet. iii. 17. The case of Barnabas is forcibly put by Bishop Lightfoot: "Even Barnabas, my own friend and colleague, who so lately had gone up to protect the interests
Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14. But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

of the Gentiles against the Pharisaic brethren:" and he adds, "It is not impossible that this incident, by producing a temporary feeling of distrust, may have prepared the way for the dissension between Paul and Barnabas shortly afterwards led to their separation (Acts xv. 39). From this time forward they never appear again associated together."

14. walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel] More correctly, "walked not in a straight path." They deviated from the right path and walked tortuously. The words "according to the truth of the Gospel," express not the point to which the path led, but the line of its direction.

before them all] The collision took place on some very public occasion: and this gives to the scene greater animation and force. Bishop Ellicott refers to 1 Tim. v. 20.

being a Jew] The Greek means more than this, and denotes that he was "a Jew by birth, a Jew to begin with." We find the same phrase in Acts xxvi. 10.

livest after the manner of Gentiles] The appeal is made to that which had been his custom hitherto. See note above on v. 12.

why compellest thou] It is true that this was only a moral compulsion: but under the circumstances of the case it was irresistible. Peter might have said that he had no desire that others should follow his example. But moral compulsion is often more weighty than any other. He not only was an Apostle, but had gone through a large and varied experience.

15. Who? You and I. The point of this cannot be mistaken. Both had been Jews to begin with. Both had felt the force of hereditary prejudice. Both had overcome this prejudice. Both had upheld Christian freedom, alike in theory and in practice.

Jews by nature] This repeats the phrase of the preceding verse, but in a stronger form.

not sinners of the Gentiles] St Paul puts himself for the moment in the position of the most prejudiced Jew, uses his language, and thus makes his argument as strong as possible. Admitting to the full all the religious advantages of Judaism, and all the moral degradation of Heathenism, yet "even we" have renounced this hope of being justified through Judaism. This manner of speaking of the Heathen was customary and proverbial among the Jews. We may even refer to the language of the Sermon on the Mount. See Matt. vi. 7, 32.

16. a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ] We cannot be justified by the works of the law; in fact we cannot be justified at all, except through the operation of faith. This is the full and exact meaning of the sentence. When St Paul turns to speak of faith, he changes the preposition (from εἰς to διὰ), perhaps to mark the truth that even faith is not meritorious, but only recipient. In the next verse he reverts to the preposition εἰ. The word for "man" here is ἄνθρωπος, including every member of the human race, and repeated more strongly below in the phrase πᾶς ἄνθρωπος.

even we have believed in Jesus Christ] The tense points to a definite time when Peter and Paul respectively came to the conviction that their only hope, in order to secure justification, was simply to set their faith on Jesus Christ. The force of this appeal to St Peter must have been irresistible. He had himself expressed precisely this conviction in the presence of St Paul (Acts xv. 8–11). For by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified] He adds the same quotation from the hundred and forty-third Psalm as in Rom. iii. 20, and in the same form and with the same freedom. This passage was doubtless often thus used by St Paul in his argumentative preaching of the Gospel. No fitter and more pointed sentence can be imagined for the termination of his direct address to St Peter.

One reason for closing the direct address here is this, that in the next verse St Paul rebuts a theoretical objection to the general doctrine of justification, which St Peter had not impugned at all. His error had simply been a weakness and inconsistency in conduct, which tended to compromise the firm maintenance of that doctrine. St Paul at this point enters upon wider ground, as in the Epistle to the Romans, and in fact approaches that general doctrinal discussion which fills
17. But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18. For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.

19. For I through the law am

down, makes our transgression the more apparent. It is in this way above all others that we constitute ourselves "transgressors." (St. Paul here purposely uses this stronger word. See 1 John iii. 4.) We are reverting to the law for a purpose which the law itself taught us to be hopeless. We are dishonouring the free grace of God, through which an effectual remedy for sin is attainable, and through which we ourselves have acknowledged that it can be attained. All this seems to be comprised in this condensed and comprehensive verse; and the whole is made more emphatic and invested with much feeling by the fact that St. Paul personifies, as it were, the whole argument in his own experience. In support of this view we may quote the recent commentary of Prof. Sanday: "Instead of the Pauline Christian, who follows Christianity to its logical results, it is really the Judaizing Christian who stands self-condemned, and is the real sinner, in returning to what he has forsaken."

19—21. Bengel says of these three verses which follow that they are summa ac medulla Christianismi. The best help—in fact the essential help—for the understanding of these verses, in which the doctrine of Christian Justification is presented in a condensed form, is supplied by the seventh and eighth chapters of the Epistle to the Romans. See the notes there.

19. For I through the law am dead to the law] The personal pronoun is, beyond any doubt, intended here to be emphatic; and for the reason of this emphatic position we must look in the context. The explanation is, in all probability, to be found in the fact that in the preceding verse he has identified the whole question with his own personal experience. Meyer gives the spirit of the emphatic "I" (ἐγώ) thus: "I for my own part, letting my own experience speak, to say nothing of the experience of others." Thus too we have the explanation of the intense personal feeling which characterises these verses. He writes eagerly from the heart, without waiting to unfold his argument at length.

As to the meaning of the phrase before us, he says that the law itself had taught him that he must utterly discard the law as the ground of justification. He had tried the experiment of being justified by the law; and the experiment had failed at every point. With every new effort the result was a deeper consciousness of sin and of helplessness. Thus he had learnt that, as to any hope of salvation from
v. 20, 21.

**GALATIANS. II.**

dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

this source, he must become dead to the law and the law to him. The force of the metaphor is seen from his use of it in other places, as when he says (Rom. vi. 2), "We are dead to sin, that we should not live any longer therein;" and again (Gal. vi. 14), "I am crucified unto the world, and the world unto me." In Rom. vii. 4, 6, we have precisely the same application of the metaphor which we find here. See the notes on these passages of the Romans.

An important question arises at this point as to whether we should understand by "law" the ceremonial law of the Jews, or law in general. Both the absence of the article and the whole stress of the argument seem decisive for the latter view. See Introd. to the Romans.

*That I might live unto God* "That I may live unto God" is the correct translation. The result of the death unto the law is the new life unto God, which is to be continuous even after the discovery of the true mode of justification is reached. The thought of life out of death, under various aspects, appears constantly in St Paul's writings. See especially Rom. vi. 11, "Reckon ye yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God, through Jesus Christ our Lord." With which we should compare 1 P. ii. 24, "who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead unto sin, should live unto righteousness." May we not see in this coincidence of language part of the result of that early meeting of the two Apostles (i. 18)?

Here the antithesis is between living unto the law and living unto God; and it is well put by Luther thus: "The false apostles taught this doctrine: Except thou live to the law, thou art dead to God;" but Paul saith quite contrary: Except thou be dead to the law, thou canst not live to God,....to live to the law is, in truth, nothing else than to die to God; and to die to the law is nothing else than to live to God.

20. *I am crucified with Christ* Here St Paul uses stronger language and enters upon new ground. He has said that he is dead to the law, that it is reduced to nothingness as to any hope which it affords of salvation, and that through this death he has passed into a new life. But he could not use such language without thinking of the death and resurrection of Christ. The Lord Jesus Christ also died unto the law, but in a sense which involved our deliverance from its condemning power. In His crucifixion He exhausted the curse of the law. (See iii. 13.) He "bore our sins in His own body on the tree." In Him and with Him we are crucified. By faith we are partakers of His death. Such language is copiously used in the Epistles of St Paul. See for instance Rom. vi. 6; Col. ii. 20.

*yet not I, but Christ liveth in me* Yet this crucifixion with Christ involves life in the highest and most glorious sense. It is, however, not his old self that lives, but his new self; or rather it is Christ that lives in him. The old man in Paul is dead, and the new man draws life direct from Christ. This short paraphrase both satisfies the conditions of the grammar and gives the general meaning.

*and the life which I now live in the flesh* Rather, "so far as I have a present life to live in the flesh." The construction is the same as in Rom. vi. 10. He is obliged to feel and confess that even this high spiritual life is spent for the present under earthly conditions—with human infirmity within, and amid trials and temptations without. Still, as he proceeds to say, the sustaining principle which gives him his real life, is faith in Christ. See 2 Cor. v. 4. It is difficult to decide absolutely whether the now in this passage points to the past or the future. It is allowable to include both, but with special reference to the latter.

*by the faith* More correctly, in faith. As Dean Alford says, *ευ πίστεϊ* corresponds to *ευ αρετί*. Faith, and not the flesh, is the real element in which I live.

*who loved me, and gave himself for me* This sudden outburst of earnest gratitude and devotion is very characteristic. See the notes on i. 1, 4. This expression of feeling too has as much weight in his argument as any part of his reasoning has. For the use of "for" (*ὑπὲρ*) see iii. 13; and cp. note on i Cor. xv. 23.

21. *I do not frustrate the grace of God* This abrupt sentence says in the strongest way that to seek to be justified otherwise than simply through faith in Christ, would be to nullify the gracious gift of God, and therefore a heinous sin. Again we may quote Luther, with whom both the Apostle's sequence of thought and his sudden emotion are made alive again with extraordinary freshness. "Now he prepares a way to the second argument of this Epistle. And here ye must diligently
consider, that to seek to be justified by works of the law, is to reject the grace of God. But, I pray you, what sin can be more execrable and horrible than to reject the grace of God, and to refuse that righteousness which cometh by Christ? It is enough and too much already that we are wicked sinners and transgressors of the commandments of God; and yet we commit moreover the most execrable of all sins, in that we do so contemptuously refuse the grace of God and remission of sins offered to us by Christ.....There is no sin which Paul and the other Apostles did so much detest as the contempt of grace and denial of Christ; and yet there is no sin more common."

"then is Christ dead in vain?" Nothing could more strongly express the powerlessness of the law, and the necessity of Christ's death, for salvation. The word "\(\text{vapar}\)" translated "in vain" is not the same (\(\text{vain}\)) which is so rendered in 1 Cor. xv. 2. The meaning is not that Christ could, under any hypothesis, have died to no purpose; but that, under this hypothesis, His death would have been unnecessary.

**ADDITIONAL NOTE ON CHAP. II.**

**St Paul's Journeys to Jerusalem.**

In consequence of the impossibility of assigning the place of this Epistle, in connection with St Paul's recorded life, by evidence of the same kind as that which gives the dates of the First and Second Epistles to the Corinthians and that to the Romans, in relation to the Acts of the Apostles, it becomes the more important to mark carefully all the lines of intersection between this letter and the history. The chief lines of intersection of this kind are found in the mention which St Paul makes, in writing to the Galatians, of his journeys to Jerusalem.

Concerning the first journey there is no real difficulty. What St Luke says directly (Acts ix. 23—18), and what he quotes St Paul as saying in his apologetic speech at Jerusalem (Acts xxii. 17—21), corresponds with what we read in the Epistle (Gal. i. 18—20). For the purpose of comparison we naturally take, as our starting-points, what St Paul himself says in this letter and in the speech. In the letter he says that "three years" (which may be three full years or only one year with parts of two others) passed between his conversion and his going to Jerusalem—that his motive was to make acquaintance with Peter—that he spent a fortnight with that Apostle—that the only other Apostle he saw on this occasion was James, and that on leaving Jerusalem he went into the regions of Syria and Cilicia, without becoming personally known to the Christians of Judea. In the speech he says that during this visit he was once in a trance within the precincts of the Temple, and that in this trance he received a peremptory order to quit the Holy City and to go "far hence" to the Gentiles. If now we turn to St Luke's direct account, we find that St Paul went from Damascus to Jerusalem in consequence of persecution, and under the pressure of imminent danger—that on arriving in the Holy City he was suspected—that Barnabas removed this suspicion, introduced him to the Apostles and gave them confidence—that he was with them "coming in and going out"—that in his bold mission-work he came into collision with the Hellenists—and that, in consequence of his life being in danger, he was sent away by his fellow-Christians to Cæsarea, whence he proceeded to Tarsus. In these different accounts there is no real contradiction, though they are given by different persons and under very different aspects, which circumstance results in furnishing us with much information which we should not otherwise possess. The only point on which it is reasonable to hesitate at all is the fact that St Luke, writing generally, represents St Paul as being in friendly intercourse with the Apostles and Christian brethren at Jerusalem, whereas St Paul, writing precisely and in self-defence, says that at this time he saw only two of the Apostles.

Our difficulties, if there are difficulties, arise when we come to the later visits. The Acts of the Apostles (xi. 30, xii. 13) tell us of a visit with Barnabas, on a charitable errand from Antioch; but no incidents of importance are recorded as having taken place at Jerusalem on this occasion. At first sight we might be disposed to identify with this visit that which is recorded in the second chapter of the Galatians, because of the mention of Barnabas in both instances. But the journey seems simply to have had reference to the taking of alms for the poor Christians of Judea. Moreover it was a time of active persecution. James the brother of John was murdered at this time, and Peter was in prison. It is impossible that a free and public discussion could have taken place then on a question of theology. And, once more, the "fourteen years" of Gal. ii. 1 constitutes an insuperable objection to this identification.

It is assumed in the notes that the visit to Jerusalem recorded in Acts xv. 1—19 is identical with that on which the Apostle lays so much stress in the letter before us (Gal. ii. 1—10). It will be proper first to point out the reasons for the identification, and then to answer some objections.

As to the identification of the journey described in these passages of the two docu-
ments, considerable stress is to be laid, in the first place, on the fact that the general colour and complexion of the occasion is in both instances the same. In each case the necessity of Jewish observances had been preached, and there was danger lest the freedom of Christianity should fall back into the bondage of Judaism; certain mischief-makers too had been at work, endeavouring to spread this corruption through the Church. The "false brethren unmasked" brought in, of Gal. ii. 4, correspond with those described as "certain which went out from us, subverting your souls," in Acts xv. 24. Again in each case the occasion is described as one of great moment, involving the risk of very serious consequences. In each case there is grave debate and anxiety. And to turn from the general features of the subject to points of circumstantial resemblance, the persons on each occasion are the same. In both instances Barnabas is conspicuous side by side with St Paul; and over against them, giving to them the "right hands of fellowship" (Gal. ii. 9), and recognising them as men that had "hazarded their lives for the name of the Lord Jesus Christ" (Acts xv. 26), are Peter and James. Again, those two elements of evidence, chronology and geography, which are reckoned to be the eyes of history, may be appealed to in this comparison. The "fourteen years," reckoned from St Paul's conversion, can be shown by very easy calculation to fit the requirements of the case exactly; and as to topographical coincidences, let any one observe how in the two documents Jerusalem, Antioch, and the "regions of Syria and Cilicia" are named, and he will easily see that there is some force in this part of the argument. It is very difficult to believe that there can have been, in early Apostolic history, two occasions so nearly resembling one another.

It must not however be concealed that there are some apparent difficulties in the matter. Thus it might be urged that St John is conspicuous in the description given by St Paul, whereas he is entirely absent from the narrative of St Luke. But the fact that he is not mentioned by the latter does not prove that he was not there. We need not be at all surprised if St John took no active part in the debate. But on the other hand it was of the utmost importance to St Paul's argument to state that he had the full approval and sympathy of one who was justly counted in the Church as "a pillar." Another apparent discrepancy is that Titus is not mentioned at all in the Acts, whereas circumstances connected with him are made very prominent in the Epistle. But those circumstances had a very close personal connection with St Paul and with the false accusations which were brought against him. Moreover we may very fairly say that Titus was among the "certain other," who, according to St. Luke (Acts xv. 5), went up with Paul and Barnabas to Jerusalem on this business. What has been said in the Introduction regarding the presence of Titus, as forming an important evidential link between this Epistle and the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, need not here be repeated. Another objection of a different kind has weighed forcibly with some writers. It is asked, if the two occasions were the same, why St Paul made no reference to the decree of the Council, which was decisive against the necessity of circumcision? To this question the answer is that St Paul, in writing to the Galatians, appealed to general principles and to his own independent apostolic authority. Moreover the decrees of the Council were in certain aspects provisional. And, again, there are passages in other Epistles of St Paul, where it is still more remarkable at first sight that he did not quote these decrees. Three other objections may be named, which can be dismissed very briefly. In Acts xv. it is said that St Paul was sent by the Church from Antioch to Jerusalem; in Gal. ii. 1 he says himself that he went "by revelation." But there is no discrepancy here. The two documents give us, each according to its own spirit and intention, two aspects of the matter. Again it may be urged that the private communications with "them which were of reputation," so pointedly named by St Paul (Gal. ii. 2), find no place in the narrative of the Acts. But such private communications would be the natural and necessary preparation for a successful public conference; and it was very important for St Paul to shew how friendly his relations were throughout with the other Apostles. Moreover in Acts xv. 4—7 there are clear indications of manifold discussion. Finally, a difficulty has been felt by some, because the second journey named in the Acts is not mentioned at all in the Galatians, and because St Paul seems to say there that he never went to Jerusalem at all between the first visit and the third. But he does not really say so.
CHAPTER III.

1 He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and hang upon the law? 6 They that believe are justified, and blessed with Abraham. 10 And this he sheweth by many reasons.

O FOOLISH Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

1—6. INDIGNANT EXPOSTULATION WITH THE GALATIANS ON THEIR FALLING AWAY FROM THEIR HIGH PRIVILEGE.

O foolish Galatians] There is no reference here, as Jerome supposes, to any national or natural stupidity of the Galatians, but rather the contrary. They had abundant intelligence, but they had not made proper use of it. Such a view too would be quite out of harmony with St Paul's customary courtesy. abo bath bewitched you] The "you" is emphatic; and the reason for the emphasis is given in what follows. The translation of the verb (βλέπωμαι) is very exact. Good illustrations of the use of the word are supplied by the Septuagint: Wis. iv. 13; Ecclus. xiv. 8. It was as if some one with an "evil eye" had exerted a disastrous charm upon them and withdrawn their gaze from that which they ought to have contemplated with unceasing satisfaction and joy.

that ye should not obey the truth] These words should not be here. On this point the authority of the MSS. is decisive. Perhaps the words have crept into the Received Text from ch. v. 7.

before whose eyes] Whatever might be the case with others, in the Galatians this sudden change was utterly irrational. The Crucified Christ had been so distinctly and forcibly set before them, as to have been almost visible.

set forth, crucified among you] The clear preaching and revelation of Christ had been among the Galatians like a placard on the walls. This term exactly expresses the meaning of ἐπεραίος. The Crucified Saviour had been so displayed among them, as to be visible, so to speak, at every turn. See in illustration of this meaning 1 Macc. x. 36 and Jude 4. Bishop Ellicott gives the sense of the appeal thus: "Who could have bewitched you with his gaze, when you had only to fix your eyes on Christ to escape the fascination!" and he compares Num. xxi. 9. "The phrase "among you," if it is genuine, repeats in another form the words "before whose eyes," and must be connected with "set forth," not with "crucified." It ought
2. This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?  
3. Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?  
4. Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain.  
5. He therefore that ministereth to

2—5. THEIR OWN PAST EXPERIENCE PROVED THAT THEY WERE WRONG NOW.  
First he appeals to them on the ground of their religious experience. They were themselves well aware that the spiritual power which came to them was acquired not through any observance of Law, but simply through reception of the Gospel orally delivered. The third and fourth verses are of the nature of a parenthesis; but the whole paragraph hangs together as one forcible argument.  
2. This only] For the moment, he says, I will leave on one side all other arguments and will appeal to you on this ground only. It may also be implied that what he now refers to is the strongest ground of all. Their own experience ought to have been decisive of the whole question. It is the same reasoning as that of St Peter in the case of Cornelius. See Acts xi. 15—17, xv. 8, 9.  
Received ye the Spirit] “Such mighty strength,” says Chrysostom. See v. 2. A question arises here as to whether “the Spirit” here denotes miraculous power or moral power or both. It seems best to understand the phrase as quite comprehensive. The word δωρικτος in the fifth verse turns our thoughts distinctly towards that which is miraculous: and again we may refer to the analogy of the case of Cornelius.  
by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?] The “works of the law and the hearing of faith” are contrasted as sharply as possible; and the contrast appears identically in this verse and the fifth. Unless we understand the reference to be to law in general, the contrast is attenuated. It is essential that we refer here to the Epistle to the Romans, especially Rom. i. 5 and xvi. 26. The phrase before us comprises in its meaning (objectively) the preaching which addresses itself to faith, and (subjectively) that hearing of the heart which is the result of faith in that which is preached.  
3. Are ye so senseless as to act thus? The same word is repeated with which he began at the opening of the section.

New Test.—Vol. III.
you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

6 Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.

7 Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, "In thee shall all the nations be blessed."

9 So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

The parallel between Abraham's faith and Christian faith stated at length.

7. Know ye therefore It is difficult to decide whether the verb (ἤμωνοντος) in this place is indicative or imperative. Perhaps the imperative accords best with the didactic character of this part of the Epistle; and it is certainly most in harmony with grammatical usage. It is a question of no great moment: for the practical sense of the passage is the same on either view.

they which are of faith They to whom Faith, and not Law, is the primordial principle and ruling power of their religious life. We find in Rom. iv. 10, ol άξιον as the direct antithesis to ol άξιον as the direct antithesis to ol άξιον.

the same They and no others (οἱ οὗτοι).

children of Abraham See Rom. iv. 11, 16.

8. the scripture, foreseeing This is the strongest and most vivid personification of the Old Testament which is to be found in the New. The Scripture is here spoken of as a living thing, instinct with prophetic power. It means far more than it appears to mean at first sight. "Quid vidi Scriptura?" is a form of expression found in the Rabbinical writings. A question indeed arises as to whether the "Scripture" (γραφή) here means the Old Testament as a whole, or only the particular passage cited. It seems to be true that the plural (γραφαί) is commonly used when the whole volume is intended. But here and in v. 23, though the word is in the singular, the wider view appears more suitable: and with us the "Scriptures" and the "Scriptures" are interchangeable, and τα βιβλία become "the Bible."

that God would justify the heathen through faith This is not accurately translated. More correctly it would be "that God justified the nations through faith," a special stress being laid on the word "faith." See v. 11, where the rendering is correct. A broad general principle, of universal and perpetual application, is laid down. The phrase (ρα άξιον), though elsewhere it is narrowed in meaning, so as to denote the Heathen as opposed to the Jews, has here no such restriction, but is quite comprehensive. Immediately below πάντα ρα άξιον is used collectively of the whole human race, as the equivalent of "all families of the earth" in Gen. xii. 3,

preached before the gospel unto Abraham Communicated to him by anticipation the great principle of the universal Gospel. Bishop Lightfoot says: "The promise to Abraham was an anticipation of the Gospel, not only as announcing the Messiah, but also as involving the doctrine of righteousness by faith."

In thee shall all nations be blessed Abraham was, in a spiritual sense, the father of all believers. The quotation is from Gen. xii. 3. But with this must be combined xviii. 18, xxii. 18, xxvi. 4; and indeed in the Apostle's thought all these passages are blended together. If we compare them in the LXX, we find πάντα ρα άξιον used as synonymous with πάντα ρα άξιον.

See the first paragraph of this note.

9. blessed with faithful Abraham Here "blessed" is viewed as coincident in meaning with "justified." In this place we have "with" instead of "in." All the faithful are bound up with Abraham "in one communion and fellowship."


10. as many as are of the works of the law The emphatic comprehensiveness of this should be marked. For the meaning see note above on ol άξιον, v. 7.

under the curse They not only fall of
one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, "The just shall live by faith."  

12 And the law is not of faith: but, "The man that doeth them shall live in them."  

Reaching the blessing, but are involved in a curse. The confirmatory passage quoted below is from Deut. xxvii. 26. See Rom. iii. 19, 20. It is implied that no one can keep the law. In the very nature of the case the curse is inevitable to him who seeks justification through mere obedience to Law. For the form of expression see "under sin" (ἐν ὑπαγίᾳ), Rom. iii. 9. We should observe that here too "curse" (καρδαπά) is in the abstract and without the article.  

for it is written This frequent and pointed quoting of Scripture is to be connected with the fact that the Judaizers were in the habit of quoting it. The Apostle brings forward passages which contain great cardinal principles; and it is to be added that this quotation, like the former, is connected with a memorable passage of Hebrew history, viz. with the delivery of the curses and blessings on Mounts Ebal and Gerizim. It is to be observed that the Apostle, in quoting, intensifies the original. Justin (Trypho, § 95), addsuces the passage in exactly the same form.

11. by the law Literally in law within the sphere of law.  

evident A new reason is now given. Such a mode of seeking righteousness is manifestly contrary to what is said in another memorable and cardinal passage of Scripture. Then follows the famous quotation from Habak. ii. 4, which we find likewise in Rom. i. 17 (where see note) and Heb. x. 38.

12. the law is not of faith There is an absolute contrariety between the principles represented respectively by Law and Faith. The same antithesis is expressed in Rom. xi. 6 thus: "If by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work."  

The man that doeth them shall live in them This quotation is from Lev. xviii. 5, and is found likewise in Rom. x. 5 in a similar argument. The very principle of justification by Law is not believing, but doing. The word "them" means "my statutes and my judgments." St Paul assumes that his readers, who are familiar with the Old Testament, will supply these words. The phrase "in them" is well paraphrased by Winer, "Ut in legibus vitæ fons quasi insit."  

13. Christ hath redeemed us A joyful contrast. The "us" is emphatic. In this pronoun St Paul includes both the Galatians and himself. He says, not "hath redeemed," but redeemed, the tense referring to a definite time, i.e. the time of the crucifixion. In that crucifixion Christ bought us out of the condition of "curse." The other passages where this verb occurs in the N. T. are iv. 5; Eph. v. 15; Col. iv. 5.  

being made a curse for us] This expresses the mode by which the great change was effected. He took the curse on Himself on our behalf and in our place. It is to be observed, on the one hand, that "curse" (καρδαπά) is without the article, thus covering the whole ground of the disadvantage and condemnation under which we lay, and on the other hand that St Paul does not say, in the words of the original quotation, that Christ was "cursed and separated by God" (κατακραπάτου ἐν Θεῷ).  

Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree] Deut. xxi. 23.  

14. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles] Here perhaps "Gentiles" (ἔθνος) is used in the more restricted sense. See note on vi. 8. And yet this is not quite certain. See how large the statement is in the following clause.  

that we might receive] This is certainly comprehensive of all. In the construction of this sentence it is not easy to determine whether the second clause is subordinate to the first, or co-ordinate with it. Nor is the question of much moment. "The Apostle advances with his subject," till in these closing words of the paragraph he expresses in the largest terms the blessing accorded to faith.  

the promise of the Spirit through faith] It is doubly important to note this language carefully. The words refer us back to γὰρ 2 and 3, and thus give cohesion to the whole passage. Doctrinally too we observe that the blessing accorded to faith is summed up in the receiving of the Holy Spirit.
15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of
God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18. For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19. Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

20. Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one.
21. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law.

22. But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

23. But before faith came, we were parts of the sentence as merely numerical. But in fact we are not bound to take the meaning of the word in the second part in precisely the same sense as in the first. As the contrast is being drawn between the mediation of Moses on the one hand, and the absolute giving of the Gospel promise on the other, the thought passes into a higher region. We are reminded that not merely in the latter case is there no division, no separation, but there is no change in God’s method of dealing with man, as regards the matter of salvation. It is not so much the unity of God, as His immutability which we now contemplate. The first meaning of the word “one” has shaded off into the other. God is ever one and the same. With Him is “no variableness, neither shadow of turning.” We might take the Hebrew sentence “the Lord our God is one Lord,” as an illustration of what is before us. But this merely contrasts the unity of God with polytheism; whereas the point to which we are brought in this verse is rather unity, as opposed to variation, in God’s character and purpose; and the best Scriptural illustration of the meaning is to be found in the New Testament, where St Paul says (Rom. iii. 29), “Is God of the Jews only? Is He not of the Gentiles also? yea, of the Gentiles also; for God is one, who will justify the circumcision by faith and the uncircumcision by faith.”

In confirmation of this general view, permission is given to quote from an independent and earlier comment in an unpublished sermon by the Rev. Canon Evans of Durham: “Some two or three hundred interpretations go upon the misconception that the meaning is, A mediator is a mediator, not of one party, but of two parties, and God is one of those two parties. This is, I strongly think, quite erroneous. The structure of the Greek excludes it. The word one clearly points not to number, but to quality: and so the sense will be: A mediator has nothing to do with what is one, whatsoever be the number of individuals constituting that unit, but God is pre-eminently one,—one with Himself, as in essence, so in will,—one in His one method of dealing with all.”

21.-24. Objection answered that the Law contradicts the Promise.

An obvious objection arises here that the Law, though Divinely given, is antagonistic to and contradictory of the Divinely given promise. After repelling the supposition as profane, the Apostle argues the point on principle. The Law is not contradictory to the Gospel, but different in its nature and purpose. This he illustrates by two metaphors, one from a prison which keeps men in ward and safety, one from the slave-tutor, who takes care of the child till the time of his free sonship is come.

21. God forbid] Any thought of inconsistency in God’s dispensations towards mankind is indignantly repelled by St Paul in the use of the formula customary with him in such cases. See ii. 17, vi. 14; Rom. ix. 14; 1 Cor. vi. 15.

if there had been a law given which could have given life] Alford says well here that “give life” (ζωοκοινωνία) “takes for granted that we by nature are dead in trespasses and sins.” The point of the argument is that salvation through Law is an absolute impossibility. Not that God’s law is in fault, but man’s sin. The Law in itself, as is said in the Epistle to the Romans, “holy, and just, and good.”

verbatim] Indeed and in truth: not as some foolishly fancied and falsely taught, but in reality. See Matt. xix. 17.

22. Every word of this verse, one by one, falls with clear and telling force. It is perfect, as a statement of the reality of human sin, and of the doctrine of free salvation.

the scripture] The personification is similar to that in v. 8. Bengel has an interesting remark here on the fact that it is “the Scripture” not “the Law” which is said to have this effect in regard to sin. It was not when the Promise was given, but when the Law was given, that the writing of Scripture began. “Deus etiam sine scripto stat promissi, sed peccatoris perdidam per literam redargui opus fuit.”

concluded all under sin] The same language is used in Rom. xi. 32; and the similarity of language is an illustration of the fact that these two Epistles were nearly contemporaneous. The word (συνιστάω) denotes shut up together, and it introduces the metaphor of the prison which follows. It also prepares the way for the declaration of freedom which at the close of the chapter comes in contrast. The neuter (αὐτὸν) enhances, if possible, the comprehensiveness of the statement. It is not only coextensive with the human race, but excludes every kind of human motive and attempt.
kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

23. *kept under the law, shut up*] The expression "shut up" is used here to render the same word as "concluded" above. The word (*ἰδρυμωμένος*) translated "kept" is very strong, and implies two particular cases: (1) bondage, (2) reservation for a time of coming freedom.

*which should afterwards be revealed* This expresses strongly the certainty of the ultimate fulfilment of the promise.

24. *the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ*] This image is distinct from the former, though it arises out of it. The word "schoolmaster" in this passage conveys a wrong impression to the English reader. The person so designated (παιδαγωγός) was a slave, whose office it was to take care of the boy and to keep him from moral and physical harm in his earlier years. One of his express duties was to take the boy to the house of the schoolmaster (see Plato 'Lysis' § 12 and Hor. 'Sat.' i. vi. 81, where he says that his father himself took care of him during his attendance at school, on which Orelli says: "Nec servus pedagogus: oderat enim patre triste illud pedagogorum genus"); and it is difficult to believe that this was altogether absent from the mind of the Apostle, as he wrote this sentence. Christ is our great Teacher (ὁ διδάσκαλος), and the Law takes us to Him that we may be taught. Still this is not the main point in the present instance. The chief thought is that of full freedom and sonship as connected with Christ.

25—29. THE GLORIOUS FREEDOM OF THE GOSPEL CONTRASTED WITH THE PRECEDING DESCRIPTION OF BONDAGE UNDER THE LAW.

25. *we are*] In the next verse he says "ye are." There is a similar interchange in 1 Thess. v. 5. Perhaps the Apostle wishes, by this sudden change of person, to assure the Galatians of the privileges they already possess to the full, and to shew them the folly of seeking to improve their spiritual position by a recurrence to the Law. At all events they had "in Christ Jesus" all that he had.

26. *all*] This absolutely comprehensive language, which continues the same thought,
And if ye be Christ’s, then are ye Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.

CHAPTER IV.

1 We were under the law until Christ came, as the heir is under his guardian till he be of age. But Christ freed us from the law:

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world:

harmony with the correct mode of commenting on this passage not to raise the question at all. The analogy rests entirely on general principles.

differeth nothing from a servant] Nay, says Erasmus, referring to the ἀναθηματικῶν of the preceding chapter, he is actually subject to a slave.

lord of all]. Potentially he is in this position (see the ‘Lay of the Last Minstrel’, III. 20, ‘If thou art the son of such a man, and ever comest to thy command’). We touch here another question which has been raised in reference to this parable, viz. whether the father is supposed to be living or dead. In the very nature of the case he is presumed to be dead; and if we meet a difficulty in some part of the comparison, we must remember that no Scriptural analogy of this kind is to be pressed too closely.

2. under tutors and governors] The former having reference to his person, the latter to his property. The former might be expressed by the word ‘guardians,” the latter by the word “stewards.’

3. we] Including both St Paul and those who had been Jews, on the one hand, and such as the Galatians, on the other. This is evident from what follows.

were in bondage] In the Greek the verbal connection is as close as possible between this and the word “servant” above; and indeed it is difficult to believe that a faint thought of the ἀναθηματικῶν is not lingering in this place.

under the elements of the world] See Col. ii. 8 and 20, where precisely the same phrase is used. It seems to denote ‘the elementary lessons of outward things’ (Conybeare and Epistles of St Paul), the mere rudimentary alphabet of religion. The Jewish religion, and, in a certain sense, all heathen religions too, had this relation to the full revelation of
4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,
5. To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.
6. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

8. Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods.
9. But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to stubb-bornness.

The Gospel. It is obvious that there is a mixture of metaphors in the passage. Many of the Fathers referred this phrase to the physical elements, especially the heavenly bodies as regulating religious seasons. But the word “we” limits it to something applicable to the Jews.

4. the fulness of the time] Equivalent to “the time appointed of the father” above—the time ordained in the counsels of God, the Law meanwhile having done its work.

sent forth] More accurately sent forth from Himself. The phrase is very exact and full. It is of high theological importance to note that precisely the same verb is used below (v. 6) of the sending of the Spirit.

made of a woman, made under the law] In the fullest sense Christ shared our humanity and came under our legal conditions. In the Greek there is no article in either clause.

5. To redeem] How this redemption was effected is not here explained: but it was explained above iii. 13.

item that were under the law] Again in the Greek there is no article.

sent unto] Once more in the word “we” the utmost comprehensiveness is expressed. See note above on v. 3. The word “receive” denotes that this great privilege came to us without any work or deserving of our own.


crying, Abba, Father] In a nearly contemporary epistle we have a parallel passage (Rom. viii. 15) which should be examined with the utmost care in close connection with that before us. In the first place we have in both the remarkable word “crying,” which denotes intense earnestness in prayer. Next the Spirit, through which the Christian thus prays, is called in the Romans “the Spirit of adoption,” But above all we have there also the remarkable phrase “Abba Father” (found likewise in Mark xiv. 36). This combination of Semitic and Greek elements (which may be compared with the combination of “grace” and “peace” in the Apostolic salutation) illustrates with great beauty the Christian sense of the universal fatherhood of God. As to the actual use of the phrase, it was probably part of some customary liturgical prayer.

7. Wherefore thou] He has already turned from “we” to “ye;” and now by using “thou” he gives a closer point still to his argument and exhortation.

if a son, then an heir] See Rom. viii. 17, “If children, then heirs, heirs of God and joint-heirs with Christ.” This minute similarity of language, in a nearly contemporary epistle, should be very carefully observed.

[beir of God through Christ] There seems no doubt that the correct reading here is simply heir through God, i.e. in virtue of His goodness and free promise only; and this form is in harmony with what immediately follows, where the word “God” is three times repeated.

8–11. This Change in the Galatian Mind was a Relapse into an Obsolete System.

In disregard of these high privileges, the Galatians were reverting to a rudimentary state of things, which could do them no spiritual good, and were turning into nought the Apostle’s mission.

8. did service] The verbal connection in the original is as close as possible between this and “servant” and “bondage.”

which by nature are no gods] The Authorised Version here is better than the Received Text. A certain stress is laid on the words “by nature.” These gods in the very nature of things are non-existent: and this is St. Paul’s language in 1 Cor. viii. 4, x. 19, 20.

9. after that ye have known God] The Authorised Version, in using the same English word “know,” conceals the fact that here and in the preceding verse a different Greek verb is used. In the latter instance the knowledge denoted is of a more intimate and perfect kind, “having attained to a recognition of Him.”

or rather are known of God] “Having received the privilege of His recognition,” Cp. 1 Cor. viii. 3. Dean Alford says very justly, “This made their fall from Him the more matter of indignant appeal, as being a resistance of His will respecting them.”

again...again] This is not merely repetition, but repetition with a new and additional emphasis. In Bishop Ellicott’s language, it
whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

10 Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are: ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh I preached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor re-

was not simply a relapse into bondage, but a recommencement of its principles. Having given up external formalism in one shape, they were now ready to renew it in another. It startled us to see Hebraism and Judaism thus classed together; but St Paul by no means says that Hebraism is as good as Judaism. Viewed simply as external rudimentary religions, they were alike in character; and in no way could the Apostle have more severely condemned the Judaic system of justification than by this co-ordination.

Weak and beggary] These elements were "weak," because they had no spiritual power to raise the devotee to a high level; and they were "beggary," because they were altogether destitute of that richness of spiritual blessing which resides in the system of the true Gospel.

10. Ye observe] The word denotes close, slavish, Pharisaic observance.

days, and months, and times, and years] See Col. ii. 16. The "days" are the Sabbaths, the "months" the new moons, the "times" are the Jewish festal seasons, and the "years" the sabbatical year and years of Jubilee. The questions of the perpetuity of the Sabbath, which rests on principles laid down before the Mosaic Law, and of Christian seasons, which are within the jurisdiction of the Church, are hardly raised here. What is here in question is legal bondage to an obsolete system. As to the verb, it is not of much moment whether we regard it as interrogative or indicative. In either case it involves an exostulation.

11. In vain] See above on ii. 2.

12-16. Here the Apostle interpolates an appeal to his converts on the ground of sympathy.

He suddenly implores them, for the sake of sympathy, that they may be at one with him in these important questions. Once there had been the utmost unity of feeling between them and him. Why should it now be disturbed?

12. Brethren] This word at once diffuses a tender feeling over the whole paragraph.

be as I am] Literally and correctly, "become as I am." Come and stand on my ground: for, he adds, I once left my old ground that I might stand on yours.

for I am as ye are] I became what you are now. I gave up far more than I ask you to give up. I gave up all my hereditary religious maxims, all my cherished Hebrew treasures. Cp. i Cor. ix. 21, and especially Phil. iii. 4-9.

ye have not injured me at all] We must observe that for the moment he is appealing, more on the ground of sympathetic unity than on that of dogmatic truth. He deeply feels their present separation of sentiment. Still he has no personal complaint to make. He carefully guards against so unworthy a misinterpretation of his meaning. When they were together in Galatia, so far from "injuring him in any way," they showed to him the greatest and most enthusiastic kindness. The remembrance of this kindness and enthusiasm, indeed, forms part of the ground of his present appeal. The tenor of all the verbs "injured," "preached," "despised," "received," is the same; and the reference in all seems evidently to be to the same period of time.

13. Through infirmity of the flesh] On account of an attack of bodily illness. There is no doubt that this is the accurate translation. It seems that on his first visit to Galatia, he was hindered and detained by this cause; and this led to a full reception of the blessing of the Gospel by the Galatians. He recalls a most touching passage in his experience and theirs. Detained among them by illness, he doubtless won the more upon their affections: and they could not easily forget all the circumstances of that time. The phrase "ye know" appeals to their vivid recollection of the time;—which, it may be observed, corresponds with Acts xvi. 6. And if we combine this circumstance with what we read in Acts xvi. 10, which implies that St Luke was now with St Paul, we are led to conjecture that this illness may have had something to do with this companionship of "the beloved physician" (Col. iv. 14). As to the probable nature of this illness see note on the next verse, where St Paul speaks of it in language of remarkable force.

at the first] He had been twice in Galatia (Acts xvi. 6 and xx. 2). There appears to be no doubt that he refers to the earlier of these occasions; and this is an element of some importance in the determination of the date of the Epistle. See the Introduction.

14. My temptation which was in my flesh] We must first fix, if we can, on the right
jected; but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.

15 Where is then the blessedness ye spake of? for I bear you record, that, if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but...
not well; yea, they would exclude
you, that ye might affect them.
18 But it is good to be zealously
affected always in a good thing, and
not only when I am present with you.
19 My little children, of whom I
travail in birth again until Christ be
formed in you,
20 I desire to be present with you
now, and to change my voice; for I
stand in doubt of you.

They manifest the utmost interest in you, the
utmost regard for you; but their motive is a
bad one; they make themselves your partizans,
that you may attach yourselves to their party.
This is the force of what concludes the verse
—"that ye might affect them."
they would exclude you] Their wish is to
isolate you from the general body of sound
Christian believers, that they may glory in
having you identified with their clique.

18. it is good to be zealously affected always
in a good thing] All this manifestation of
warm feeling is good. It is by no means to
be blamed or despised. It is good too to be
the object of such feeling, if only the cause is
good, and if only there is consistency. This
seems to carry us on correctly along the
Apostle's line of thought to what he says at
the end of the verse, "not only when I am
present with you." Once he had been the
object of such manifestation of warm feeling,
when he was among them. Now all is
changed. Others are become the object of this
feeling, and the cause is no longer a good one.
As to the grammar, it is to be observed that
it is passive, and denotes "to be
zealously courted."

19. My little children] It seems for a
moment as if St. John were speaking. See his
first Epistle. The language is quite unique in
St Paul; but it precisely fits the metaphor in
the sentence, and it presents to them an argument
of immense force. He was, spiritually,
in a parental relation to them, which could be
shared by no one else. Cp. 1 Cor. iv. 15,
"Though ye have ten thousand instructors in
Christ, yet have ye not many fathers; for
in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through
the Gospel."

of whom I travail in birth again] The
parental relation is expressed under the tender-
est form. He writes not as their father,
but as their mother. The same imagery is
found in 1 Thess. ii. 7, "Even as a nurse
cheriseth her own children."

until Christ be formed in you] Until ye
come to the full maturity of Christian birth.

20. I desire to be present with you] I wish
we were once more face to face. This is to
be carefully set side by side with what we find
at the end of v. 18.

to change my voice] He longs to find it
unnecessary to speak with this severity; and
he is sanguine enough to hope that it would
not be necessary if he could be with them
once more.

for I stand in doubt of you] This is full of
feeling. He is absent from them; and he is
perplexed as to what he ought to think of them
and what he ought to say to them.

21—31. THE HISTORY OF ABRAHAM IS LIKewise AN ALLEGORY STRICTLY APPLICABLE TO THE CASE IN HAND.

The Apostle's thought reverts to Abraham,
but in a new form. He sees in the incidents
of the Patriarch's tent anticipations of Gospel
principles, and a rehearsal of the unkindness
to which they thoroughly accept the
Gospel are exposed.

21. ye that desire to be under the law] Ye
that are so eager to take Law for the principle
of your religious life. There is no article in
the original.

do ye not hear the law?] Will ye not
listen to what the Law itself says? Here the
original has the article. The Hebrew law is,
of course, in such an argument, the great
embodiment of the principle of Law. More-
over it had a Divine sanction which belongs
to none other. It is immutable whether in
this clause we restrict the word "law" to the
Pentateuch, or regard it as synonymous with the
Old Testament generally.

22. it is written] He takes the Judaizers
on their own ground, and boldly refers to the
Hebrew Scriptures allegorically interpreted.

a bondmaid...a freewoman] Strictly, "the
bondmaid—the freewoman"—the well-known
bondmaid (Hagar) —the well-known freewoman (Sarah). In the next verse the translation in the Authorized Version is exact.

23. after the flesh] According to the
usual course of nature.

by promise] Through the instrumentality of the Promise, which was given when birth
24. Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

25. For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

26. But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

27. For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband.

28. Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

According to the course of nature was impossible. The emphasis involved in this word "promise" is powerfully unfolded in Rom. iv. 17—21. See also Rom. ix. 7—9. Isaac and Ishmael had one father; but they were children of Abraham in two very different senses.

24. Which things are an allegory] It does not seem that the Authorised Version here could be improved. "Which things" denotes the whole range of the subject (see Col. ii. 23). St Paul, of course, accepts the Patriarchal narrative as literally and historically true. But he says that it is capable also of an allegorical interpretation. A mystical meaning lies hid under this literal history; and the spiritually-instructed mind can see in it an expression of principles deeper than that which lies on the surface. What Calvin says very well here is, in substance, as follows: "Just as the house of Abraham was then the true Church, so there is no doubt that the principal and most memorable events that happened therein were types for us; just as there was allegory in circumcision, in the sacrifices, in the whole Levitical priesthood, so likewise was there allegory in the house of Abraham."

These are the two covenants] When the subject is treated allegorically, these two covenants, the former being the mother of slaves, the latter the mother of freemen. Bishop Lightfoot illustrates the form of language by referring to Matt. xii. 39, xxvi. 26—28; 1 Cor. x. 4.

The one from the mount Sinai.] It was there that the Mosaic covenant was given.

Which gendereth to bondage.] The children of this covenant, like the children of Agar, can be only slaves.

Which is Agar.] For this is the covenant which corresponds with Agar—which in the allegory is represented by Agar.

25. For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia] This is one of the cases in which modern criticism has removed a great amount of the difficulty felt by commentators. The discovery of the Sinaitic Manuscript has settled a point which was previously doubtful, and it appears that the true reading is simply this, "for Mount Sinai is in Arabia"—in the very region which was the home of Agar and Ishmael. The very geographical circumstances of the case enhance the significance of the allegory. Thus we are not at all entangled with the very questionable opinion that Agar was a recognised name of Mount Sinai. Such a verbal connection would have complicated, and by no means simplified, the analogy. For further illustration of the passage see the longer note at the end of this chapter. Reference may also be permitted to a Cambridge sermon by the present writer, entitled 'Hagar and Arabia.' (1864.)

And answereth to Jerusalem which now is] i.e. the covenant of Mount Sinai, represented by Agar, corresponds with the earthly temporary Jerusalem. The first clause of v. 25 is parenthetic, and the full stop ought to be removed from the end of v. 24.

26. Jerusalem which is above is free.] The heavenly Jerusalem finds its counterpart in the condition of Sara, just as the earthly Jerusalem finds its counterpart in that of Agar. The phrase "Jerusalem which is above" can be illustrated copiously from other parts of the New Testament. See Phil. iii. 20; Heb. xii. 2; Rev. iii. 12, xxii. 2. Which is the mother of us all.] The true reading is simply "which is our mother," the words "of us all" having probably come, through the carelessness of copyists, from Rom. iv. 16.

27. For it is written] The quotation is from Isai. liv. 1. In order to see the force of this quotation, the whole range of the contiguous prophecies of Isaiah should be carefully examined, and especially li. 2, where there is a distinct reference to Abraham and Sara. Many more children than.] Literally, many children, many more than. Each woman has many children, but the barren woman has more than the other.

The which hath an husband.] She to whom for the time the husband of the two women was given. Sarah was barren when Agar after the order of nature became the mother of Ishmael.

28. Now we, brethren] The true reading
CHAPTER V.

1. He moveth them to stand in their liberty, and not to observe circumcision: 13 but rather love, which is the sum of the law. 19 He reckoneth up the works of the flesh, and the fruits of the Spirit, and exhorteth to walk in the Spirit.

STAND fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage. 2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3. For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

4. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5. For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.

6. For in Jesus Christ neither cir-

CHAP. V. 1. There is no doubt that this verse should be joined with the preceding context. It is not the beginning of the concluding section, but the end of the middle section, of the Epistle. As to the precise reading, however, of the verse there is great doubt. The state of the MSS. is very curious and perplexing. See Bishop Lightfoot's full and careful note on the subject. Adopting his conclusion, we shall read the whole passage thus: "Wherefore, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free-woman, in the freedom wherein Christ set us free. Stand firm therefore, and suffer not yourselves to be again involved in a yoke of bondage."

Stand fast! See Eph. vi. 14; 2 Thess. ii. 15. Again! The Jewish yoke of bondage was not identical with their old Heathen yoke; still they were recurring to the same false principle.

2—6. TO ADOPT JUDAISM IS ALIENATION FROM CHRIST.

St Paul solemnly warns the Galatians that the adoption of the legal principle of justification involves complete alienation from Christ.

2. Behold, I Paul! This is made doubly emphatic, first by the exclamation which calls attention to what he is about to say, and secondly by the use of his own personal name, which asserts his Apostolic authority, reminds them of what they owed to him, and thus appeals alike to their affection and to their loyalty.

If ye be circumcised! If you submit to this rite under the circumstances in which you are now placed. That circumcision in itself was "nothing" St Paul himself says, v. 6. Moreover he himself had caused Timothy to be circumcised (Acts xvi. 3); and on this ground perhaps the Apostle was accused of inconsistency. All depended on the circumstances of the time. He had refused to allow Titus to be circumcised at Antioch (ii. 3—5); and the ground which he took then he maintains in writing to the Galatians now.

Christ shall profit you nothing! See ii. 21.

3. I testify again! I protest would be a more accurate translation. As to the word "again," he is here virtually repeating what he had said before in this Epistle; and probably he had said the same thing when he was among the Galatians.

Every man! The rule is peremptory and absolute, admitting of no possible exceptions. See "whosoever" in the next verse.

That is circumcised! Strictly, who causes himself to be circumcised, or, who allows himself to be circumcised.

A debtor to do the whole law! He here gives the reason for what he had said in the preceding verse. He who adopts the legal method of justification, binds himself to the necessity of perfect obedience in order to procure salvation. "Law" here must mean the moral law. No enlightened man could suppose that obedience to a mere ceremonial law, even if perfect, could suffice.

4. Is become of no effect! In adopting this course ye separated yourselves from Christ: all your relation to Christ was absolutely neutralised. The verb ἀπαράπτωσις is frequently used by St Paul, and there is no doubt as to its meaning.

Sorcerer of you! See note on the preceding verse.

Are fallen! Ye fell, ipso facto, in the very act of adopting the legal principle.

5. Our! We, who have adopted the opposite principle. The position of the word makes it emphatic.

Through the Spirit...by faith! The Holy Spirit is meant. There is here a double antithesis to describe the attitude of the Judaisers. "Spirit" is opposed to "flesh," and "by faith" to "in law."

The hope of righteousness i.e., the fulfilment of the hope which justification involves. It is not merely a past blessing, but a blessing which reaches into the far future. The full fruition of it is yet to come. Hence this subject falls within the province of hope. See Acts xxiv. 15; Titus ii. 13.

6. In Jesus Christ! Wherever a true living union with Jesus Christ subsists by faith, neither circumcision...nor uncircumcision! We should not fail to note the perfect fair-
cumcision availeth any thing, nor uncumcision; but faith which worketh by love.
7 Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth?
8 This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you.
9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be none otherwise minded: but he that troublmeth you shall bear his judgment, whosoever he be.
11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased.

One of those proverbs of the New Testament which may be termed condensed parables. We find it also in the (nearly contemporary) First Epistle to the Corinthians (v. 6); and in each case the reference seems to be, not so much to the spreading effect of incipient sin, as to gradual and growing mischief done to a whole community by a corrupt minority.

10. confidence in you] Literally, in reference to you. This is an instance of St Paul's conciliatory manner in the midst of severity. He always "hopes better things," though he "thus speaks." Through the Lord] Literally, "in the Lord." This gives the ground of his confidence.

none otherwise minded] He hopes that they will adopt views in accordance with what he says, or in accordance with what he had previously taught them. There is no real difference between these two standards of truth.

be that troublmeth you] In i. 7 it is "some that trouble you." Perhaps there is here an understood reference to some definite ruler, whom he does not name. The same Greek word (ratione) is used in the two cases, and contains a political metaphor, like dēwterōnēs below in v. 12.

Whoever be he] Whatever be his dignity, or learning, or supposed religious advantages. See ii. 6.

11. And I, brethren] He speaks with great severity: but not against the Galatians themselves; this is shown by the tender word, "brethren." He refers to some who had falsely accused him. It had been said that he himself really preached the Judaic and legal doctrine. This imputation he indignantly repels.

if I yet preach circumcision] The ground of the accusation may have been the fact of his circumcising Timothy. The word "yet" denotes "up to the present moment." Or it may refer to the time before his conversion, when, of course, his whole life was a preaching of circumcisions.

why do I yet suffer persecution?] Why does my persecution by the Jews continue up to this moment? For the fact of this unceasing persecution by Jews during the Third Missionary Journey, see, for instance, Acts xx. 3. Then is the offence of the cross ceased.

New Test.—Vol. III.
12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this; ‘Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.’

15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

16 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

A similar turn of language is found in 1 Pet. ii. 16. There however the opposition is not between freedom and mutual service, one among another: but the “service of God” is presented to us as the “perfect freedom.”

14. *all the law is fulfilled in one word*] This whole law is thoroughly obeyed in the observance of this one precept. We have an exact parallel in Rom. xiii. 8.

15. *if ye bite and devour one another*] We should note the threefold repetition of “one another.” See note on vi. 2. Chrysostom has a good comment here. “He says not simply *bite*, which indicates sudden anger, but *devour*, which implies continuance in an evil mind.”

16. *Walk in* the Spirit] This is in and through the Holy Spirit that guidance is given for the Christian life. The word “walk,” which is of such frequent use in the Scriptures for this subject, denotes activity, alacrity, perseverance, progress, and, above all, direction. The same metaphor is resumed below in the use of a different verb, v. 25, vi. 16.

ye shall not fulfil] Commentators have
17. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18. But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

19. Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,

20. Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variances, emulation, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21. Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

22. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

debated whether this is a promise or a command. It seems quite justifiable to say that it is both.

17. the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh] The "desire" of each is hostile to the other. The verbal link with the preceding verse is lost in the A.V. The essential commentary on these words is the seventeenth chapter of the Epistle to the Romans. In the second clause of the sentence a different verb instead of ἐνεχύρασθαι must be supplied.

so that ye cannot do the things that ye would] It is better to adhere to the exact translation in order that ye may not do. The meaning is given well by Winer, "quò minus perficatis." It is not the final victory of the Christian which is here described, but the conflict that precedes it. Whichever way the struggle inclines, the will is hindered, because, in fact, there are two wills. The flesh is here personified, as it were, in its warfare with the Spirit.

18. if ye be led of the Spirit] If ye are led. In this case the victory has been practically obtained on the right side. Compare Rom. viii. 14, "as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."

not under the law] In proportion as the Spirit rules, the law finds nothing to condemn, it is disarmed. We should observe how, in describing this conflict, the Apostle passes from the use of the word "flesh" to the use of the word "law." In this argument the two terms seem almost interchangeable. At all events they have, in his view, an essential affinity with one another. See note on iii. 3.

19. the works of the flesh...which are these] Rather, such as these. The catalogue is not exhaustive. On the contrast between "works" and "fruit" see below. The enumeration of the "works of the flesh," without being very precise, falls into four general sections, sensuality, idolatry, contention, and excess. Bengel expresses the same thing by saying that the sins are enumerated as "commonly,..."
23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

24. And they that are Christ’s have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

25. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

26. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

but needs God’s fostering care. It may be added that “fruit” is always used by St Paul in a good sense. See e.g. Tit. iii. 14.

22, 23. We cannot very precisely classify the enumeration of the Christian graces in these two verses: but, on the whole, they fall most naturally into three groups of three each. We should carefully observe that “love” has the first place in the list.

22. gentleness.] Archbishop Trench says that the Greek word denotes “a long holding out of the mind before it gives room to action or passion.” A man has this grace, “who, having to do with injurious persons, does not suffer himself easily to be provoked by them.” ‘N. T. Synonym.’ pp. 187, 189.

23. Meekness, temperance] The former denotes the retaining of our equanimity and composure under provocations, because we are conscious of our own sin and assured of God’s justice, the latter denotes in general the restraining of our natural evil propensities.

24. have crucified the flesh] This was done once for all, when they became Christians. It is implied in our baptism. To live in any other way is a contradiction to our Christian profession. How far we have been consistent in our lives since our baptism is a question not raised here. See Rom. vi. 2–6.

25. in the Spirit.] Or rather, “by the Spirit.” In the second clause of the sentence it seems almost certain that this must be the meaning. In the first clause possibly “to the Spirit” would be the correct translation. See v. 16 and vi. 16.

26. desirous of vain glory] We can probably say with truth this was a Gaulish fault. provoking one another, envying one another]

To the former fault the strong would be liable, to the latter the weak. By “provoking” is meant the challenging to combat in disputation.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on Chap. V.

Connection of v. 1 with the conclusion of the preceding chapter.

The reasons for preferring the arrangement adopted for the connection between these two chapters are briefly these. Some good MSS. omit “wherewith” (ἡ) after “in the liberty” (τῇ ἕλευσθε). If we were to adopt this reading, we should then be obliged to begin ch. v. with such a sentence as this: “Christ liberated us in liberty” (or “for liberty”). This, however, would be very abrupt; and, on the whole, the authority for the retention of “wherewith” preponderates. Hence we must connect these words either with the preceding or the following: and the decision of this question depends on the position of “therefore” (οὖν) in the context. The Authorized Version gives a sense which, as to its moral and religious force, cannot be improved. It proceeds, however, on the assumption that οὖν comes immediately after τῇ ἑλευσθείᾳ, whereas the preponderance of manuscript authority places it after στίγματε. A Greek scholar will at once perceive the force of the argument, if the words are simply written down in order:—τῇ ἑλευσθείᾳ ἡμᾶς Χριστὸς ἑλευσθείας στίγματε οὖν.
CHAPTER VI.

1. He moveth them to deal mildly with a brother that hath slipped, and to bear one another’s burden: 6 to be liberal to their teachers, and not weary of well doing. 12 He knoweth what they intend that preach circumcision. 14 He glorifieth in nothing; save in the cross of Christ.

BRETHREN, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.

2. Bear ye one another’s burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.

3. For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.

4. But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another.

5. For every man shall bear his own burden.

6. Let him that is taught in the very forcibly the lesson of mutual regard, sympathy, and help; and perhaps the Galatians were much in need of this lesson. See note on v. 15. For the word “burden” see below on v. 5.

so fulfill] Or “so ye shall fulfill,” as in v. 16. It is not very material which reading we adopt; and each is well supported.

the law of Christ] This use of the word “law” comes upon us very unexpectedly, and with great beauty and force. Compare 1 Cor. ix. 21, where it is said that the Christian, though he does not seek to be justified through the law, is still “under law to Christ.” The law of Christ is His “new commandment that we love one another;” and it is precisely in such mutual consideration and regard that this law is fulfilled.

3. be deceived himself] The Greek verb (φθειρόμενος) denotes an inward state of self-deceit. Hence the contrast with ἐπιστρέφω in the next verse. It is this liability to “think ourselves to be somewhat” (ii. 6) which causes us to break the law of love. The noun φθειρόμενος is found in Tit. i. 10. Compare James i. 26.

4. work] as opposed to feelings and fancies.

then shall be borne rejoicing in himself alone] with reference to himself alone, not (by comparison) with reference to others. He shall have his own ground for self-congratulation, whether it be little or much. The language is very similar to that which we find in 1 Cor. iv. 5.

5. every man shall bear his own burden] It is very instructive to compare this with what precedes. “Bear ye one another’s burdens,” especially when the two sentences are in such close juxtaposition. The meaning of the whole is: “Bear ye one another’s burden of trial and suffering: for every man must bear his own burden of duty and responsibility.” The words used for “burden” in the two cases are different. Augustine puts the point of contrast well: “The burden of sharing human infirmity is one thing, the
word communicate unto him that
7 Be not deceived; God is not
mocked: for whatsoever a man sow-
eth, that shall he also reap.
8 For he that soweth to his flesh
shall of the flesh reap corruption;
but he that soweth to the Spirit shall
of the Spirit reap life everlasting.
9 And let us not be weary in well
doing: for in due season we shall
reap, if we faint not.
10 As we have therefore oppor-
tunity, let us do good unto all men,
burden of giving an account of our actions to
God is quite another thing: the former is
distributed among our brethren to be mutually
borne, the latter rests on each one separately
and apart."

6—10. THE DUTY AND THE REWARD
OF BENEFICIENCY.

6. Let him that is taught] The verb used
in this phrase and in the phrase "him that
teacheth" below is familiar to us elsewhere,
as primarily denoting oral instruction. It is
the word from which our term "catechism"
is derived. The passage shews us clearly
that careful religious teaching was already
part of the system of the Christian Church.

communicate…in all good things.] The duty
of the sustentation of Christian ministers, in
all respects, is everywhere urged strongly by
St Paul. Compare especially 1 Tim. v. 17,
"Let the elders that rule well be counted
worthy of double honour, especially they who
labour in the word and doctrine," where the
word "honour" (τιμή) may well be regarded
as including not only money, but sympathy,
respect, promotion of comfort, alleviation of
care.

7. Be not deceived] In two other places
(1 Cor. vi. 9 and xv. 33) St Paul uses this
form of warning, and in both cases with refer-
ence to immoral life. Hence there is peculiar
solemnity in the expression. Why this tone
should be adopted here, we do not know.
Probably there was some glaring neglect of
duty among the Galatians, either as to the
support of their ministers, or in regard to
that general liberality to which he now pro-
ceeds. It may be, however, that this tone of
solemnity is due to what is about to follow.
In v. 8 he touches other parts of the conduct
of life, besides that which pertains to generous
giving.

God is not mocked] There may be an
attempt to treat God with contempt by false
appearances: but this attempt cannot be suc-
cessful. We may refer in illustration to the
case of Ananias and Sapphira.

substitute a man soweth, that shall be also
reap.] That, and nothing else. We have
other instances of the same form of language
in this Epistle. See, for instance, iii. 7. Chry-
sophanius says: "That which is sown and that
which is reaped must be of the same kind." St
Paul’s proverbial language in this verse is

found also in 2 Cor. ix. 6, where the reference
is to the collection in progress for the poor
Christians in Judea. We should remember
that the Galatian Church had been asked to
contribute, as well as the Macedonian and
Achaian.

8. to his flesh…to the Spirit] At first
sight the metaphor seems to be now slightly
changed. Above the reference was to the
quality and identity of the seed: here it ap-
ppears to be to the nature of the soil in which
the seed is sown. Probably however
"unto" denotes simply direction or tendency.
If carnal indulgence is the end for which a
man lives, moral ruin must be the result. If
he aims at the higher life which comes through
the operation of the Holy Spirit, the higher
life will be his sure reward. In any case we
ought carefully to mark the "his own" (ἐαυτοῦ) which is connected with "flesh" (φlesh)
(φράξας). Aquinas, quoted by the Roman
Catholic commentator, Windischmann, points
out the significance of this addition: "When
he speaks of sowing to the flesh, he says bis
own flesh, because the flesh is of our very
nature; but when he speaks of sowing to the
Spirit, he says not bis own, because the Spirit
is not ours from ourselves, but from God."

corruption] The metaphor may be pushed
even into the use of this word, in the sense of
blighted decaying ears of grain, in contrast
to healthy fruitful ears. But it seems best to
give simply an ethical sense to the word
(φθοράς). So it is employed in 1 Cor. xv.
42; Col. ii. 22.

9. let us not be weary in well doing] We
find the same precept in nearly identical words
in 2 Thess. i. 13. The verb (ἰκανοποιοῦμεν) is to
be closely connected with "if we faint not"
(ἰκανοποιοῦμεν) below, and denotes the giving up
of all vigorous effort because of faint-hearted-
ness.

in due season] In its proper appointed
time, as in 1 Tim. ii. 6, vi. 13. The Apostle
still proceeds with the analogy of the harvest:
We must wait, as the husbandman waits:
but the time of reaping will come. See James
v. 7.

if we faint not] The same Greek word is
used in Mark viii. 3.

10. As we have therefore opportunity
Our business is to do all the good we can
to all, using every opportunity. The sowing
especially unto them who are of the household of faith.
11 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.
12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; only lest they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ.
13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

has its καίπας, as well as the reaping; and this καίπας may come at any moment of our lives.

them sube are of the household of faith] It has been pointed out by commentators that ὀλεθίος is often used of close acquaintance and connection, without any thought of a metaphor, by classical writers, and even in the LXX. (Isai. lvi. 7). But the image of a household is so customary a Scriptural representation of the Church, that it is well to adhere to it in this place. Compare Eph. ii. 19.

11—14. Once more the Jews are sternly condemned.

In approaching his conclusion, the Apostle turns again with severity upon those who were the enemies of truth, and the causes of mischief in the Churches of Galatia.

11. Ye see] This is more probably imperative. He suddenly calls attention to the very aspect of the letter, as exhibiting proofs of his vehement earnestness of spirit, as well as of his authoritative teaching and commands. bow large a letter We may say with confidence that this rendering in the Authorized Version is wrong. The letter is not a long one. But moreover, if this were the meaning, we should have γράμματα not γράμ- ματα. The reference is to the large size of the characters in which he is writing. Several commentators have supposed also that these characters were ugly and mis-shapen; and some have connected this thought with a supposed weakness in St Paul’s eyesight. See note (iv. 14) on “his temptation in the flesh” The argument has been nowhere drawn out so well as in Dr Brown’s ‘Horae Subsecivae’; and an essay on this subject by an accomplished physician is necessarily interesting. The argument, however, cannot be accepted as conclusive. The word “how great” (πώς άρας) denotes, not shape, but size. Probably St Paul’s customary handwriting was large: but moreover in the present instance the forcible characters in which he wrote were to be taken as an emphatic expression of his feeling.

I have written unto you with mine own hand] We should say, “I am writing.” “I wrote” (γράφων) is the epistolary aorist, in the use of which the writer places himself in the position of the reader. An interesting question arises here, as to whether this autographic writing extended to the whole Epistle, or comprised merely this conclusion. We cannot answer this question with absolute confidence. It has been urged that this strong expression would hardly be adapted to the mere conclusion of a letter: but it is to be observed that this part of the present Epistle is much longer than the autograph conclusion which we find elsewhere, as in Col. iv. 18. That St Paul was in the habit of dictating his letters is undoubted. See Rom. xvi. 22.

12. To make a fair shew in the flesh] To wear a specious appearance in mere outward things. See Matt. xxiii. 27.

they constrain you to be circumcised] These are the men—this is the true character of the men—who do their best to force you to adopt circumcision.

only] This is their only motive. We find a similar displacement of the word (μόνος) in ii. 10 and in 1 Thess. ii. 7.

lest they should suffer persecution] In this way they managed to avoid every approach to martyrdom. Their motive was utterly selfish. See v. 21.

13. neither they themselves...keep the law] Both here and in Rom. ii. 25 “law” (λόγος) is without the article: and probably St Paul in both passages has regard to the broad general truth that the moral law cannot be kept by any man, and that therefore any attempt to seek for salvation through legal justification must be a mistake. It is probable, however, also that these Judaisers in Galatia were palpably inconsistent even as respected the outward observance of the Jewish law.

they...sube are circumcised] The circumcision party. Some manuscripts and editors have περιτομήνυμαι instead of περιτομήνυμα. But both external evidence and the general sense of the passage are strongly in favour of the latter reading.

that they may glory in your flesh] Your bodily mutilation is to be made subservient to their credit. The word “your,” like the word “you,” is emphatic. This clause exhibits the selfishness of the Judaisers in another aspect. “In this way,” says Alford, “they escaped the scandal of the Cross at the hands of the Jews, by making in fact their Christian converts into Jewish proselytes.”
14 But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me: for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

14—18. THE GLORY, POWER AND BLESSING OF THE CROSS.

Having finished his condemnation of the Judaizers, St. Paul now asserts, positively, the true principles of the Gospel, and extends his beneficence to all who maintain those principles.

14. glory] Having mentioned the "boast," which was the selfish aim of the Judaizers, he passes along the line of this word to the noble "boast" of the Christian. The best commentary on this passage is Phil. v. 1—12.

13 [the cross] The boast is not simply in Jesus Christ, but in Jesus Christ crucified. See note on iii. 1, and compare 1 Cor. i. 13, 23, ii. 1, 8.

14 [the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world] So that the one is absolutely separated from the other. "Alter pro altero habet mortuum." But not only is the image of death applied to describe this separation: the reference to the crucifixion of Christ supplies a still stronger image to intensify the meaning.

15. a new creature] Compare 2 Cor. v. 17 and Eph. iv. 24. The earlier part of this sentence is verbally a repetition of what we find in v. 6; and in substance it is a repetition of 1 Cor. vii. 19. It is most interesting and instructive to put together the three phrases which are used in these three passages to point the contrast between Christianity and formalism.

16. as many] We should mark the large all-embracing confidence of this phrase. No narrow ecclesiasticism dwarfs St. Paul's beneficence. It is like the close of the Epistle to the Ephesians: "Grace be with all them that love the Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity,"—with which we should compare and contrast the close of the First Epistle to the Corinthians: "If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema." as walk according to this rule] shall walk is the true reading, which carries the comprehensiveness of the beneficence over all the future history of the Church. The Apostle reverts here to the language used in v. 35. The word ἀπορία, literally a measuring line, is used here to denote a line of direction. See 2 Cor. x. 13. mercy] There is a touch of tenderness in the introduction of this word. Among the opening salutations of St. Paul's Epistles it is only found in those addressed to Timothy, and upon the Israel of God More correctly, "even upon the Israel of God." Those who have been mentioned above constitute the Christian Israel. The application of the word "Israel" in this way is frequent in the New Testament. See John i. 47; Rom. ix. 6; Eph. ii. 12, and especially 1 Cor. x. 18, where "Israel after the flesh" is used to mark the antithesis between the old Hebrew nation and its spiritual Christian counterpart. The remark of Bishop Lightfoot must not be overlooked, that perhaps there is here a "reference to the beneficence, which closes Psalms cxv., cxxvii., and which must have been a familiar sound in the ears of all devout Israelites."

17. CONCLUSION.

Once more St. Paul makes a peremptory assertion of his Apostolic authority.

17. I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus] The literal reference is to the marks which his body bore of suffering and ill-usage in the cause of Christ. These marks he designates by the name of brands, such as were borne by slaves. The Master, to whom he belongs, and whose ownership is indicated by these brands, is Christ. See Acts xxvii. 23. In the word "bear" there is almost a triumphant expression. He is proud of these marks of indignity, because they are proofs of his belonging to Christ. "He says," remarks Chrysostom, "not simply I have these marks, but I bear them about, like one exulting in a trophy."

18. Brethren] See vi. 1. In the original Greek this word is the last word of all: and, as Bengel says, "this alleviates the severe tone of the whole Epistle."

the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit] It is the higher part of man—the "potior pars" of the old Theologians—on which Divine grace operates.
EPHESIANS.

INTRODUCTION.

§ I. St Paul at Ephesus . . . . 537
§ II. St Paul's Epistles from Rome . . . . 538
§ III. To whom the Epistle to the Ephesians was addressed . . . . 538
  1. External Evidence . . . . 538
  2. Internal Evidence . . . . 538

I. St Paul at Ephesus.

EPHESUS, the capital of Procon- sular Asia, and the head-quarters of the worship of Artemis, was the centre of a magnificent but corrupt provincial civilisation when St Paul paid it his first visit. The Apostle had felt a strong desire to proceed thither early in his Second Missionary Journey (Acts xvi. 6), but being overruled by a divine impulse, he had passed over into Europe for the evangelisation of Macedonia and Achaia; and he was unable to carry out his original design of establishing Christianity in Asia, or even to visit its capital, until on his return journey from Corinth to Jerusalem the vessel in which he was voyaging stopped for a few days, probably for lodging purposes, in the harbour of Ephesus. The time during which he was thus detained comprised within it a Sabbath-day, which gave him the desired opportunity of preaching in the Synagogue to the Jews, of whom a considerable number had settled in Ephesus, probably at the time of the conquest of Judæa by Pompey. They besought him to continue his address on the following Sabbath, but being unable to comply, he promised to return, if it were God's will, and he left behind him Aquila and Priscilla to carry on the work which his one day's preaching had begun (Acts xviii. 19—21, 26).

In his Third Missionary Journey St Paul fulfilled this promise, and carried out his original purpose. Having travelled from Antioch through Galatia and Phrygia (Acts xviii. 22, 23), he arrived at Ephesus (Jb. xix. 1), and made it his head-quarters for three years (Jb. xx. 31), during which time he devoted himself to the evangelization of the city and the district of which it was the metropolis. For the first three months he addressed himself to the Jewish Synagogue in Ephesus, but after that time, in consequence of the opposition that he there met with, he formed in Tyrannus' lecture-room a separate congregation of Ephesian Christians, composed of Jewish and Gentile converts, whom he constituted into an organised Church under regularly ordained pastors and teachers (Jb. xx. 28). But his purpose from the beginning had been not to confine himself to Ephesus, but to "preach the word in Asia" (Jb. xvi. 6), and accordingly he made excursions from the metropolis to all parts of the province, forming Churches in the chief towns and cities, "so that all they which dwelt in Asia" (that is, speaking broadly, the western part of Asia Minor), "heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks" (Jb. xix. 10); and Demetrius was led to say that "not alone in Ephe-
sus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath persuaded and turned away much people” (Ib. xix. 26). At the end of the three years St Paul proceeded to Greece, and on his return once more towards the East, after holding an interview with the Ephesian Presbyters at Miletus, he travelled on to Jerusalem, whence he was carried as a prisoner to Caesarea and Rome.

II. *St Paul's Epistles from Rome.*

During the first part of his imprisonment at Rome, St Paul was probably occupied so fully by the religious needs of the capital of the world, that he left the various Churches, which he had founded, to the care of those to whom he had entrusted them on the spot. But towards the close of his two years' captivity he wrote four Epistles—to the Philippians, to Philemon, to the Colossians, to the Ephesians. Of these the three latter were written at almost the same time: whether the Epistle to the Philippians preceded or followed them is uncertain (see ‘Introduction to the Epistle to the Philippians’). The three contemporaneous Epistles were conveyed to Asia by Tychicus and Onesimus, Onesimus carrying the letter to his master Philemon, and Tychicus being entrusted with the Epistle addressed specially to the Colossians, and with a circular or encyclical letter, which he was to take first to Ephesus, and then to the various cities of Asia in which St Paul had formed Churches during his three years' residence at Ephesus. One copy of this Epistle was headed “To the saints that are at Ephesus;” the others, “To the saints that are...” the lacuna having to be filled up by Tychicus, either by word of mouth or with the pen, in each city wherein he read or delivered up the Epistle.

III. *To whom the Epistle was addressed.*

We are justified in stating the above to have been the destination of the “Epistle to the Ephesians,” no longer as a doubtful conjecture, but as a probability amounting almost to a certainty, for it is the only hypothesis which accounts in a satisfactory manner for the facts which have to be taken into consideration. The facts are the following:—

1. The vast majority of the MSS. and all the versions contain the words “in Ephesus,” and the general Church tradition in the earliest ages was to the effect that the Epistle was addressed to the Ephesians. See Irenæus, ‘Adv. Haer.’ v. 2, 3; Clemens Alex. ‘Strom.’ iv. 8, ‘Paedag.’ i. 5; Tertull. ‘De Monog.’ c. v. On the other hand (a) two of the best MSS. (the Vatican and the Sinaitic Codex) have not the words “in Ephesus” in the text. (b) Origen’s copies appear to have wanted them, though he regarded the Epistle as addressed to the Ephesians (see Cramer’s ‘Catena,’ Ox. p. 102): Basil testifies that “the old copies” in his day were without them (‘Contra Eunom.’ ii. 19): Jerome’s words probably, but by no means certainly, imply that there was the same diversity of reading in the MSS. which he employed (‘Ad Eph.’ i. 1): Tertullian states that the Church witnessed truly to the Epistle having been addressed to the Ephesians, and that it was inscribed accordingly; but that Marcion had at one time a desire (aliquando gestit) to alter the title into “The Epistle to the Laodicæans,” in order to shew what a diligent investigator he had been; and that the heretics had it so inscribed (‘Adv. Marc.’ v. 11, 17). These variations in the MSS. and this hesitancy in ecclesiastical tradition would be only natural upon the hypothesis of a circular letter having several different addresses, one of which was “To the Laodicæans;” they are not explicable on the theory of an Epistle addressed solely either to the Ephesians or to the Laodicæans.

2. (a) St Paul, though he had lived for three years at Ephesus (a longer time than that which he spent in any other city except Antioch), sends no greetings or messages to individual Christians from himself or others. This is contrary to his general though not to his universal custom (cf. the Epistles to the Corinthians and the Galatians, which are without them); nor is this lack of special salutations accounted for either by the curious argument of Lardner (Vol. vi. p. 144), that as he addressed many persons in Rome where he had not been,
he might address none at Ephesus where he had been; or by Eadie's suggestion that he knew too many to address by name; or by the supposition that the private messages were to be given by Tychicus, for Tychicus was enjoined to give information about St Paul at Colossæ as at Ephesus (Col. iv. 7), and yet there are individual salutations in the Epistle to the Colossians. The encyclical character of the Epistle would at once explain their absence. (b) The following passages occur in the Epistle: "Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, cease not to give thanks for you" (i. 15). "If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to youward" (iii. 2). "As I wrote afore in few words, whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ" (iii. 4). "Remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles" (ii. 11). None of these texts are incompatible with the theory of the Epistle being addressed exclusively to the Ephesians (see notes on each of them); but their wording appears more natural if we understand St Paul to be writing to some at least whom he did not know, and who did not know him as the Ephesians did (Acts xx. 38), and to a body which on the whole consisted of more Gentiles than we have reason to believe was the case in the city of Ephesus.

3. We may further note, (a) St Paul desires the Colossians, after they have read the Epistle addressed to themselves, to send it to Laodicea and to fetch thence the Epistle that was there ("the Epistle from Laodicea"). Tychicus in carrying the two letters would naturally have landed at Ephesus, and taking the copies of the Ephesian or circular Epistle with him, would have left a copy with the Laodiceans just before reaching Colossæ with the Epistle to the Colossians. It is a reasonable conclusion that St Paul's injunction refers to this circular letter, which he wished the Colossians to read after they had profited by their own more controversial Epistle. The copy then left at Laodicea may have been the very copy addressed to the Laodiceans which Marcion saw or heard of in the course of his ecclesiastical researches.

(6) Writing from Ephesus to the Corinthians, St Paul sends the salutations not of the Ephesian Church, but of "the Churches of Asia." This incidentally shews that the Church of the metropolis and the Churches of the province of Asia were closely connected together in his mind, so that he might well have addressed an epistle to them in common. And this identification was not peculiar to him: the Temple of Artemis was considered to be the Temple of Asia, the Ephesians being only its wardens in behalf of the province.

(c) St Paul addresses the Second Epistle to the Corinthians "unto the Church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia." Thus we see that it was not contrary to his custom in addressing the Church of the metropolis to address also the Churches of the province.

(d) In Eph. vi. 21, St Paul writes, "But that ye also may know my affairs and how I do, Tychicus," &c. This "ye also" will bear other interpretations (see note ad loc.), but it may refer to the inhabitants of the several cities to which Tychicus went after he had left Ephesus.

(e) There is an encyclical character about the Epistle which is not shared by other Epistles. It consists of a dogmatic statement of the Christian Faith (and consequently of Christian practice) with special reference to the difficulties not of any one Church, but of all Churches composed of Jews and Gentiles—that is, of all the Pauline Churches.

The conclusion to be drawn from the above evidence, external, internal, and corroborative, is that the Epistle was not addressed to the Laodiceans, as has been held among others by Grotius, Mill, Dupin, Wake, Paley, Greswell, Holzhausen; nor to the Ephesians alone, as held by most of the older commentators, and in later times by Lardner, Davidson, Alford, Wordsworth, Meyer; but to the Ephesians and to the other Christians of Asia, according to the idea first suggested by Archbishop Usher, and followed by the majority of succeeding critics, such as Michaelis, Eichhorn, Schneckenburger, Neander.
Bengel, Harless, Olshausen, Howson, Ellicott, Barry, Lightfoot.

IV. Whence written and when.

That the Epistle was written from Rome during St Paul's first imprisonment may be taken as proved. The only ground for questioning it is the authority of Meyer, who with a few other German critics defends the conjecture of Schulz, that it was written from Caesarea. But the utmost that the argument in favour of this hypothesis substantiates, is a possibility of the Epistle having been written during the imprisonment at Caesarea, in face of a far greater probability in favour of Rome. The order in which the four Epistles of the Captivity were written cannot be determined. Bishop Lightfoot (Introduct. to the Epistle to the Philippians) has changed the current opinion as to the date of the Epistle to the Philippians relatively to the other three. It is probable that the Epistles to the Ephesians, Colossians, and Philemon were written within the same fortnight, the special dangers to which the Colossians were exposed leading the Apostle to write a special letter to them, while at the same time he desired them to procure from Laodicea the general Epistle for the Churches of Asia, which he had just written, or was just about to write.

V. Its purpose and subject.

More important than the question of its exact date is the determination of the full object and purpose of the Apostle in writing the Epistle. And this is the more necessary as many commentators of great merit have failed to grasp the leading thought of the Apostle, and represent the Epistle to be a treatise on the unity of the Catholic Church. It does treat of the unity of the Church, but only as a corollary to the greater question which it has discussed and solved.

The battle for the doctrine of Justification by Faith had been fought and won in the impassioned attack upon the bewitched Galatians, and the majestic argument addressed to the Romans, and in the other Epistles forming the earlier group of St Paul's writings. Now this great doctrine had fallen into the background, not because it was less regarded by St Paul, but because his converts, as a rule, had accepted it, and therefore there was not the same need of his still enforcing it with the Apostolic vehemence which was at first required. In writing to the Philippians indeed he again falls back upon the earlier theme with revived earnestness, but this was either because there were some among the Philippians, for whom he knew that such teaching was still needed, or, as Bishop Lightfoot has argued, because that Epistle was an earlier composition than the three other Epistles of the Captivity. In the Epistle to the Ephesians we hear nothing of Justification by Faith: the doctrine takes the shape of Salvation by Grace, and it is introduced as an axiom to which the writer contemplated no opposition, first parenthetically in three words (ii. 5) and then by an expansion of the parenthesis in two verses (ii. 8, 9).

But another question had now grown up, which called for the Apostle's treatment—a question which could not but arise in all the Churches founded by St Paul, and through them in the mother Church of Jerusalem likewise. The Pauline Churches consisted of Jews and Gentiles; and though St Paul's turning to the Gentiles, when the Gospel message was scorned by the Jews, would have appeared at the moment only natural to enthusiastic disciples, yet there were involved in such a step intellectual difficulties to both old and new converts, which in calmer times would have to be faced and solved. These difficulties would take different forms to the Jew and to the Gentile, but they would be felt by the more thoughtful of both classes. "Is it possible," would be the question of the Jewish Christian, "that the privilege of being the peculiar people of God, which has belonged to us since the days of Abraham, is to be no longer ours? that it is to be shared by all comers, or—still more difficult to be believed—by those whom Paul chooses to address? Has our vaunted privilege been untrue all along—a mere piece of national vanity? If so, Judaism, and with it the very idea of a kingdom of the Messiah disappears; if not, how can I be assured that God has changed

Digitized by Google
THE EPISTLE TO THE EPHESIANS.

His plan? Nay further, if He has changed it, does not that very change argue that the previous dispensation was a mistake and therefore not divine; and then again how can its testimony be used as evidence of Christ's claims? The Gentile on the other hand would ask: "Is it possible that for two thousand years God's kingdom should have been confined to one insignificant nation? Where was the wisdom or the goodness of God there? or if it was wise and good, how is it wise and good now to make so radical a change? What evidence have I that it has been made? And besides, how can it be just that a few dwellers in Cyprus, in Philippi, in Athens, in Corinth, in Ephesus should have the offer of this great salvation now offered to them, while the rest of the world remains as before in its darkness, if it be darkness? Can such a stupendous fact as the reconciliation of man to God by the Incarnation and Death of his Son be true, and none have had an insight into such a scheme of salvation beforehand except Jews, and none be sharers in it now except those to whom Paul and his associates preach?"

We can hardly realize the stumbling block which the long concealment of the Gospel from the world in general, and now the apparently haphazard communication of it to such as might seemingly chance to come in contact with it, must have caused to the early Gentile Christians. St Paul in the quietude of his Roman imprisonment had opportunity to meet these intellectual difficulties of his converts. To do so, he propounds no new theory, but he systematizes the scattered arguments of his previous Epistles, and having embodied them in a general Epistle, sends Tychicus with it to Ephesus and the other cities of Proconsular Asia—the district in which above all others the thoughts of East and West were jostling and clashing against each other, and striking out strange systems of Gnostic Theosophy.

The first perplexity, common to the Jew and Gentile, which he deals with in it, is that of a change of mind on the part of God. There was none. Before the foundation of the world, in the depths of Eternity, God had purposed and ordained all. Then He had determined the nationality of the Jewish, the Catho-

clicity of the Christian, Kingdom. Then He had foreordained the moment of time at which that Adoption in Christ should take place, which was now for the first time being realized in fact (i. 4, 5). The charge of want of wisdom, proved by a change of purpose, fell to the ground when it appeared that no change of purpose had occurred. But God's wisdom was not like man's—a wisdom easily apprehended by man's faculties: the depth of His wisdom and knowledge was unsearchable, His ways past finding out (Rom. xi. 33); He used all wisdom and prudence (see note on Eph. i. 8), but His wisdom was manifold, multiform, πολυτυπωμενος (iii. 10); it took one shape from the time of Adam to Abraham, another from Abraham to Moses, another from Moses to Christ, and yet another in the period which was now beginning. Unwise it might seem when looked upon in any one of its parts, but regard it as a whole and its majestic wisdom became apparent, calling forth the admiration and adoring love of angels and men.

For assurance of the truth of the Predestination in Eternity and the Adoption in time, St Paul falls back on his own veracity and authority. He solemnly declares that it had been revealed directly from God to him, and that it was his great glory to be the instrument in God's hands of making known this mystery, which had been till now concealed, and of carrying out the divine purpose by offering the free gift of salvation to the Gentiles equally with the Jews. They knew him—the unwearied missionary who "by the space of three years ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears" (Acts xx. 31), and when those years were over had claimed to be "pure from the blood of all men," on the ground that he had "not shunned to declare unto them all the counsel of God" (Acts 26, 27); and he boldly challenged their belief in his assertion, because he made it, that "God had by revelation made known unto him the mystery, that the Gentiles are fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of the promise in Christ by the Gospel" (Eph. iii. 3—6); and that the Apostolate of the Gentiles was conferred on him by God, "to make all men see what is the dispensation of the mystery, which from the beginning of
the world had been hid in God” (iii. 9). St Paul's claim of inspiration might be rejected, as the claim of any other prophet or expositor of the divine counsels might be rejected, but those who accepted his testimony found in it an explanation of the difficulties which were painfully pressing upon them. If they could feel confident that God had willed that the Jews alone should at first be His covenant people, and that now (the unbelieving Jews being rejected) the Gentiles should be taken into covenant with Him, they would acquiesce in that will; and this confidence they derived from St Paul's testimony. This point once settled, minor difficulties would settle themselves. That a few Greeks, Romans and Asiatics should be selected as the recipients of the call, would comparatively cease to be perplexing, if they were looked upon as the first fruits of the whole Gentile world, to which the same call was to be made, if not by St Paul, by St Paul's successors; and the plea that thus God willed it, as testified by His Apostle, was valid here too, and would at least silence objections raised by “the forward faculty” of imagination, even if it could not remove them.

The great subject then of the Epistle is the Adoption in Christ, as predetermined by God from all eternity, and now revealed by God to St Paul, and by him made known to mankind. Whatever intellectual difficulties there are, and always must be, in reconciling the Predestination of God with the Liberty of Man's Will, the conditions under which the grace of Adoption becomes available for each individual are declared to be, for Jews and Greeks without distinction, repentance towards God, and faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ (Acts xx. 21), sealed by the sacrament of baptism, in which was given, not indeed the full fruition, but the earnest, of the Holy Spirit (Eph. i. 13, 14). Thus were those who accepted God's call gathered together in one in Christ (i. 10, 22); instead of aliens they were made nigh, instead of strangers and lodgers they became citizens of God's city and members of His household, and were built up into a living temple in the Lord (ii. 12—22). This doctrinal exposition naturally leads to a fervent prayer that they may be all strengthened by the Spirit, and an earnest exhortation to preserve the harmony of the building, the unity of the body, which they in common and equally constituted, whether they had been Jews or Gentiles. But the lesson of the Unity of the Church is not so much the aim of the Epistle as that of its Catholicity—and even that is not its direct aim. From the great doctrine of the Adoption follows immediately the doctrine of the Catholicity of the Church; and from the Catholicity of the Church follows the duty of striving to maintain its Unity, seeing that the peril of disruption, which had rent even the Hebrew Church, was a thousandfold increased by a change of constitution which potentially admitted to full membership men infinite in number, diverse in disposition, and opposed to each other in prejudices. In view of this peril the Apostle urges upon his converts lowliness, meekness, long-suffering, forbearance, love, unity, peace (iv. 2, 3), and enumerates those common possessions—one body, one Spirit, one hope, one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one Father, one ministry of the Spirit—which shew that all Christians, as such, are one, and which ought to serve as motives to them to continue at one together (iv. 4—16).

VI. Analysis of contents.

I. 1, 2. Salutation.

3—14. Thanksgiving for the Adoption in Christ, and the consequent gift of the earnest of the Holy Spirit to those who by faith accepted the offer of salvation, and were thereupon admitted into covenant.

15—23. II. 1—10. Thanksgiving for their faith and love (without which the dispensation of the Adoption in Christ would have been of no avail to them individually), and prayer for their further enlightenment as to their hope, their inheritance, and God's power in raising them from the death of sin, as He had raised Christ from the dead.

11—22. Reminder of the privileges to which Gentiles had attained by the Adoption in Christ, and by the Reconciliation wrought by Him between man and man and between man and God.

III. 1—13. Solemn Declaration that the mystery of the extension of God's
THE EPHESIANS.

It has indeed been maintained that both of the Epistles are proved to be non-Pauline in doctrine and in date by being tainted with the errors of Gnosticism. That there are in both of them words which became technical terms in Gnostic Theosophy is undoubted, but that those words are used in such a way as to teach the doctrines of Gnostic Theosophy is untrue; and putting all other evidence of the genuineness of the Epistles aside, it is much more credible that some of these technical words were adopted by the Gnostics from St Paul, while others were deliberately employed by St Paul, in order to correct and guard against the nascent errors which afterwards developed themselves, than that they were borrowed, as they stand, from the full-blown system of Valentinus.

Internal evidence is generally of a nature which admits of different conclusions according to the different prepossession of the person to whom it is submitted or by whom it is constructed. External evidence is of a tougher character, and in the present case the force of this evidence is overwhelming. There is an allusion to iv. 4—5 in Clement of Rome, ‘Epist. ad Corinth.’ c. xlvi.; a plain reference to the whole Epistle in Ignatius, ‘Epist. ad Ephes.’ c. xiii. (a passage whose interpretation is not in all points free from uncertainty); a citation of iv. 26 (unless it be of Ps. iv. 4, where the same words occur) in Polycarp, ‘Epist. ad Philipp.’ c. xii.; a recognition of the Epistle in the Muratorian Canon; in Irenæus, ‘Adv. Hær.’ v. 2, 3; in Clement of Alexandria, ‘Paedag.’ i. 5; ‘Strom.’ iv. 8; in Tertullian, ‘Adv. Marc.’ v. 11, 17; and by so unanimous a consent of later but still ancient ecclesiastical authorities that it ceases to be worth while to enumerate them.

1 De Wette, on grounds mainly subjective, regards this Epistle as a wordy paraphrase of the Epistle to the Colossians, written by a disciple of St Paul, whose mind was of a calibre altogether inferior to that of the Apostle. It is enough to say that De Wette is singular in this opinion of the inferiority of the Epistle to the acknowledged compositions of St Paul, and that on such a point singularity is fatal to his theory; for if there had really been such a difference of quality between the two Epistles as he imagines, others would have been struck by it as well as himself.
THE EPISCLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

EPHESIANS.

CHAPTER I.

1 After the salutation, 3 and thanksgiving for the Ephesians, 4 he treateth of our election, 6 and adoption by grace, 11 which is the true and proper fountain of man’s salvation. 13 And because the height of this mystery cannot easily be attained unto, 16 he prayeth that they may come 18 to the full knowledge and to possession thereof in Christ.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus:

2 Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

CHAP. I. 1, 2. SALUTATION.

Cf. Col. i. 1, 2.

1. by the will of God] St Paul affirms the divine origin of his Apostleship at the commencement of every Epistle except those addressed to the Thessalonians, to Philemon and to the Philippians. The phrase here used occurs in 1 Cor. i. 1; 2 Cor. i. 1; Col. i. 1; 2 Tim. i. 1. to the saints] St Paul addresses “the saints” in all his Epistles except 1 and 2 Thess. and Gal., and those written to individuals. The word is first found as an appellation equivalent to “Christians” in Acts ix. 13. at Ephes. See Introduction, § 3. and to the faithful... and faithful in Christ Jesus, the same persons being meant as those already designated by the title of “saints.” This form of address is used only in the Epistles to the Ephesians and Colossians, written about the same time.

3—14. THANKSGIVING FOR THE ADOPTION IN CHRIST AND THE CONSEQUENT GIFT OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

Cf. Col. i. 3, 6, 12, 13, 20, 22, 26, 27.

3. who hath blessed us] who blessed us. A definite act of choice in eternity, preceding that of blessing in time, is pointed to; and the choice was even then made “in Him,” that is, those chosen for adoption were so chosen for the sake of Christ, with whom they would in the future be united as their Head.

before the foundation of the world] Not only when Christ came, or even when man fell, but before man or man’s residence was created, or time existed. God resolved that admission to covenant with Himself, having been for a period confined to one nation, should on Christ’s coming in the flesh be offered, potentially to all other nations, actually to those persons whether Jews or Gentiles to whom it was in fact offered by the preaching of the Apostles.

that we should be holy and without blame before him in love] To “be holy and without blame,” or rather, like a sacrifice, “without
5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,
6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.
7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;
8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself:
10 That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him:
11 In whom also we have obtained

blemish (which is the more exact rendering) before God," are the results which are in
tence, to follow upon the choice made in eternity being realized by adoption in Christ, and which do follow upon it unless men fall away from grace given. The words "in love" are joined by some with the succeeding clause, "in love having predestinated us."

5. the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself] This is the keynote of the Epistle. See Introduction, § 5.

the good pleasure of his will] The word employed in the original (like its English equivalent) sometimes contains within it the idea of benignity, sometimes not. Here the context determines that it is His will alone which is signified by it. God's will is the ultimate cause to which we can penetrate.

6. To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted, that is, to the end that praise may accrue to Him from the manifestation of the glorious nature of this grace of adoption which He freely bestowed upon us. The words translated "wherein he hath made us accepted," should rather be rendered which He graciously bestowed upon us.

in the beloved] See Matt. iii. 17; Col. i. 13.

7. through his blood] This verse teaches dogmatically that man's deliverance and the forgiveness of sins are wrought by the means of redemption, and that the price paid to effect the redemption is Christ's blood. Cf. Matt. xx. 28, xxvi. 28; Acts xx. 28; Gal. iii. 13; Heb. ix. 22; 1 Pet. i. 19.

8. Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence] Rather, "which he caused to abound toward us in all wisdom and prudence." These two words express the highest intellectual and moral wisdom. Both are elsewhere in Holy Scripture predicated of God with reference to the creation (Prov. iii. 19; Jer. x. 13), and here they refer to God, not man. (See De Wette and Alford in loc.) It is the Apostle's purpose to vindicate God's wisdom in its intellectual and moral aspects.
an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

12 That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.

13 In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth,

the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard

hitherto been regarded as the exclusive possession of the Jews. This interpretation is preferable to the alternative rendering "we became God's inheritance," which would connect the phrase with Ex. xix. 5, 6; 1 Pet. ii. 9. See below on verses 14 and 18.

12. That we should be to the praise of his glory. This is the final purpose with which believers in Christ are admitted to the hope, and receive the earnest, of the sacred inheritance.

who first trusted in Christ. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word]. The construction is involved in a manner very characteristic of St. Paul's style. Had he kept back the utterance of his thought sufficiently long to express it with grammatical precision, it would have run as follows—"that we should be to the praise of his glory, both we who have long since had this hope in Christ before our eyes, and you who became believers as soon as you heard the word of truth, the good news of your salvation, preached to you, and were thereupon sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance.

The translation should be—we who have hoped in Christ before you—in whom ye also, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation—in whom ye also (I say) having believed, were sealed, &c. St. Paul is not contrasting the Jewish and the Gentile believers; he speaks in the first place of Christians in general—"that we should be"—and then, for the sake of amplification, he divides this "we" into the two parts which constitute it—the "we, who have long since had hope in Christ," and the "you who were afterwards sealed," that is, the old and the new believers. The adverb "first" in the expression "first trusted (or rather, hoped) in Christ" does not mean "before Christ came," but "before the later converts." The word "trusted" should not be supplied in verse 13; the verb is found a little lower down in "were sealed." ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise. After they had been converted to the faith by the preaching of the Gospel, they were sealed in baptism with the promised gift of the Holy Ghost. The Holy Ghost is referred to as "the promise of the Father" in Acts i. 4 and seems to have been spoken of by the first Christians under the name of "the promise." He had been promised by the ancient prophets (see Joel ii. 28—33) and still more emphatically by Christ (see John xiv., xv., xvi.). Baptism is "the seal," because to the adult it is the final act proving and confirming conversion to Christianity, and because it impresses a spiritual mark upon the recipients, notifying that they are "the servants of God" (Rev. vii. 3).

14. Which is the earnest of our inheritance. The gift of the Holy Spirit bestowed on earth is not the full outpouring of Himself, but a partial gift (like the part purchase-money given as an earnest of the rest), implying however (unless lost) the full inheritance or possession of Him hereafter, which constitutes the final bliss of the Christian. Cf. 2 Cor. i. 21, where "the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts" is connected, as here, with our being "sealed," and also with our being "anointed," both of which latter phrases point to baptism and its immediate complete, confirmation. See Smith's Dictionary of the Bible, Vol. iii. s.v. Baptism and Confirmation.

untill the redemption. Rather, "unto," that is, "with a view to the redemption." The words being construed with "ye were sealed." If the rendering "untill" be adopted, they must be construed with "the earnest," as in the A. V.

the redemption of the purchased possession. The partial gift of the Spirit on earth is preparatory to the greater gift of a future perfect redemption or deliverance, which is only attained in its fulness when God's purchased creature, redeemed man, has passed from this life to the next. The "purchased possession" is the same thing as the "peculiar or purchased people" of 1 Pet. ii. 9.

15—23, ii. 1—10. Thanksgiving for their Faith and Love: Prayer for their Further Enlightenment respecting (i) their Hope, (ii) their Inheritance, (iii) God's Power in Raising them from the Death of Sin. Cf. Col. i. 3, 4, 5, 9, ii. 13.

15. Wherefore. This refers back to verse 13, and specially to the words "ye believed."
of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,
16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;
17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:
18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

19 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,
20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,
21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and

I also] That is, “I, and not only I.” Perhaps he refers specially to his informant.

after I heard of your faith] St Paul must either mean by their “faith” their steadfastness in the faith, or the Epistle could not have been addressed (solely) to the Ephesians, whom he had himself evangelized. Cf. Philen. 5. See Introduction, § 3.

17. the God of our Lord Jesus Christ] An unusual expression, probably employed in place of the more common form, “the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ”—because the word Father immediately follows in the Hebrewism “the Father of glory.” Our Lord speaks of the Father as His God in John xx. 17, and St Paul uses the expression “God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ” in this Epistle (i. 3).

the Father of glory] From whom all glory proceeds, and in whom it resides in perfect form. Cf. the phrase “Father of mercies” (2 Cor. i. 3), “Father of lights” (James i. 17).

the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him] that spirit of illumination and insight which looks through the outward coverings that conceal God from the earthly mind, and gives full knowledge of Him by revealing His glory lying beneath them. The spirit of wisdom (1 Cor. xii. 8) and of revelation (1 Cor. xiv. 26) and of knowledge (1 Cor. xii. 8) are imparted by the Spirit of God (1 Cor. xii. 11).

18. The eyes of your understanding] The eyes of your heart, according to the reading of all the best MSS. and versions. Light is represented as pervading the whole body, Matt. vii. 22; and as emanating from Christ, John i. 9, viii. 12. The expression “eyes of the heart” is used by Clemens Romanus, ‘Epist.’ i. 36.

what is the hope of his calling] the hope of eternal life, conveyed to them when they received and listened to God’s call (verse 13). In the parallel passage in the Epistle to the Colossians it is called “the hope that is laid up for you in heaven.” Col. i. 5.

his inheritance in the saints] By “his inheritance” must be understood “the (heavenly) inheritance given by Him,” and “in the saints” means, as in Acts xx. 32, xxvi. 18, “among them that are sanctified.” See verse 11.

19. his power] This is the third thing about which St Paul prays that they may have greater knowledge; 1. Eternal life. 2. Future inheritance. 3. God’s power in raising them from the death of sin to the Christian life.

according to the working of his mighty power] The power that God manifested in raising Christ from the dead, the same or a similar power He exerts upon us, raising us up who were dead in trespasses and sins. Cf. Ignatius ‘Ad Trall.’ c. 9, and Pearson, ‘Exp. of the Creed,’ Art. v. sub fin.

The thought begun in i. 19 is completed in ii. 1, 4—6, verses 20—23 being a parenthetical enlargement on the glories of Christ, and verses 2, 3 of chap. ii. on the sinfulness of man, by both of which parentheses the flow of the sentence is suspended.

20—23 (parenthetical). THE GLORIES OF CHRIST’S EXALTATION. Cf. Col. i. 16—19, ii. 9, 10.

20. at his own right hand] Holy Scripture represents Christ in heaven as sitting at the right hand of God (Mark xvi. 19; Heb. viii. 1, x. 12, xii. 2; Col. iii. 1), and this representation not only indicates His majesty, but teaches us that His work of Reconciliation has been fully accomplished by His one sacrifice offered once for all and for ever upon the Cross, after which He took His seat” (Heb. x. 12). “He hath taken His seat” (Ib. xii. 2), on God’s Right Hand.

21. principality, and power, and might, and dominion] the angelic hierarchy, as in iii. 10; Rom. viii. 38; 1 Pet. iii. 22. In vi. 12 the same titles are given to the evil spirits. They are adopted by Milton for the fallen angels in ‘Paradise Lost,’ II. 11, 310, and for the unfallen in v. 611, 772. Classifications of the angels are to be found in Origen, Basil of Seleucia, Ephrem Syrus, and Pseudo-Dionysius. St Augustine refrains from entering on
every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: 22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, 23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

the task of explaining titles the full force of which he allows that he does not know ('Enchiridion,' c. liii.).

whether real or imaginary which is revered' (Lightfoot).

in this world...in that which is to come' that is, in the present period up to the second coming of Christ, and in the period that will succeed it.

bath put all things under his feet] A quotation from Ps. viii. 6, shewing incidentally St Paul's apprehension of the Mesianic application of that Psalm. Cf. 1 Cor. xv. 27; Heb. ii. 8. Read, and put all things under his feet, omitting 'hath.'

gave] See iv. 11. Christ is the gift of God to the Church, for the Church's head, as the ministry of the Spirit is the gift of Christ to it, for its edification.

the head over all things to the church] He is exalted above every created thing, but to the Church He is the head, not merely in the sense of ruler or chief, but the mystical head of a mystical body, which derives its life and energy from union with its head. See Bp Beveridge 'Serm.' xxxii. This now familiar representation of the head and the body is here first made in both its parts. See the difference in the earlier epistles, Rom. xii. 5; 1 Cor. x. 17, xii. 27.

the fulness] This word is to be referred not, as is usually done, to the Church, but to Christ. The object of these four parenthetical verses is to declare the glories which God wrought in Christ. They are His Resurrection, His Session, His supreme Dominion over all things, His Headship of the Church. Having enumerated these, the Apostle proceeds to name the greatest of all—urged also in the contemporary Epistle to the Colossians—He is the fulness of (i.e. He is filled to the full with) that Godhead which filleth all in all; in other words, 'in Him dwelleth the fulness of the Godhead bodily' (Col. ii. 9). Translate, 'And Him He gave to be the Head over all things to His body the Church—Him who is the fulness of that which filleth all in all.' See Note at the end of the Chapter.

of him that filleth all] Or, 'of that which filleth all,' i.e. all things. It is exclusively a Divine quality to fill all things by an ubiquitous presence. This quality is here asserted of the Godhead, of which Christ is the fulness, because He possesses the whole sum of Its powers, qualities and attributes. The same claim is made for Christ in iv. 10, 'that He might fill all things.'

in all] Either 'in all respects' or 'in all places,' that is, either 'altogether' or 'everywhere.' The meaning of the whole verse is that He, who is given to be the Head of the Church, is none other than He that has in Himself the totality of the properties of the Godhead, whose quality it is to fill all things everywhere with blessings and with everything that can be required or possessed by them.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on CHAP. I. 22, 23.

Kal panta ὄψισε δὺς τῶν σώσκειν αὐτοῦ, καὶ αὐτὸν ἔκτοιχεν ἐκαλαθή ὑπὲρ πάντα τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ὡς ἐστίν τὸ σῶμα αὐτοῦ, τὸ πλήρωμα τοῦ πάντα ἐν σάριν πληρωμένου.

1. The key to the theological sense in which the word πλήρωμα is used in the New Testament is found in John i. 14, 16, 'Ὁ λόγος ἐκείνου ἐν ἡμῖν...πλήρης χάριτος καὶ ἁλίττας...καὶ ἐκ τοῦ πλήρωματος αὐτοῦ ἤμει πάντας ἀληθέσεως.' It is plain that what is meant here by πλήρωμα is the perfectly full and complete supply of grace and of truth possessed by Christ—the divine fulness of spiritual gifts and of spiritual truth which resided in Him.

2. Meyer holds that the word is used in the same sense in Col. i. 19, 'Ἐν αὐτῷ εὐλογίας τών τῶν πληρωμάτων τοῦ Χριστοῦ.' What is meant is the whole charismatic riches of God, His whole gracious fulness of εὐλογία πνευμα-
seen that in every case it is used in connexion with Christ or with God, and if we were compelled to translate it everywhere by one word, putting aside "fulness," as conveying no sufficiently definite idea to the mind, we should have to choose "completeness" or "perfection." Does it stand in the same relation to God, and does it bear the same meaning here, or is it, according to the opinion of the majority of commentators and critics, a description and synonym not of Christ but of the Church?

6. There is no grammatical objection to either application. If the words ἐστιν ἐστὶν τὸ σῶμα αὐτοῦ are used parenthetically, πλήρωμα refers back to αὐτοῦ, if not, it is in apposition with τὸ σῶμα. There is nothing whatever in the passage, taken alone, to show whether St Paul was using the clause parenthetically or not.

7. There is no theological impossibility in regarding πλήρωμα as a synonym or description of the Church. If individual Christians can receive the πλήρωμα (John i. 16), and if they can be πληρωμοῖοι by being in Him who is the πληρώμα τῆς θεϊκτος (Col. ii. 10), there is no impossibility in the collective body, the Church, being called the πλήρωμα of Christ, as being filled by Him with the graces of which He was full. (That the Church could be called the πλήρωμα as being the complement of Christ the Head—the view held by most of the older commentators and revived by Dr Barry—is theologically doubtful if not inadmissible, because it implies ἀντίθεσις τῶν υπόστασεως in Christ when He is without the Church, which seems incompatible with His divine and self-sufficient nature which "fillet all things," Eph. iv. 10.)

8. But though the construction of πλήρωμα with σῶμα is neither grammatically nor theologically impossible, there are preponderating reasons for constructing it with αὐτοῦ.

(1) Give due weight to the fact that the word, when used as a theological term, is, in every other passage, confined in its application to the Divine Being. This raises a presumption that it is so applied here, if grammar allow it.

(2) Take into consideration and note word by word the construction of the parallel passage, Col. i. 17, 18. Καὶ αὐτὸς ἐστιν (ἵνα αὐτὸς ἐστιν) πρὸ πάντων, καὶ τὰ πάντα ἐν αὐτῷ συν- ἐστιν καὶ αὐτὸς ἐστιν ἢ καθια τοῦ σώματος, τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ἢ ἢ ἐστὶν ἄρ- χη, προτόσκοι ἐκ νεκρῶν, ἵνα γίνεται ἐν πᾶσιν αὐτῶν πρωτεύον ὅτι εἰ ἐν αὐτῷ ἐνδείκτησαν πᾶν τὸ πλήρωμα κατοικήσα. Here we have the idea (introduced in the same connexion) that Christ is the Head and the Church is the body, expressed very much as in the passage before us. The sentence in the Colossian Epistle then refers back not to the body but to Christ—ἵνα ἐστιν ἄρχη—and declares that in Him resides the divine πλήρωμα. Confessly St Paul was writing these two passages in the course of the same fortnight or so. Would he have used such identical expressions as to Christ the Head and as to the body the Church in one clause, and then in the next clause have applied the remarkable and singular word πλήρωμα in one case to Christ, in the other to the Church?

(3) Take a wide view of St Paul's argument in this and the previous verses. Has he been magnifying the Church? No; he has merely spoken of it as the body of which Christ was the Head. But he is magnifying Christ: he has commemorated His Resurrection, His Session, His Universal Dominion, His Headship of the Church; and then, as in the Epistle to the Colossians, he applies to Him the sacred term πλήρωμα. Is it not the same as though he had written, in the Colossian form, καὶ αὐτῶν πάντα ὑπέρ πάντα τῷ σώματι αὐτοῦ, τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ ἢ ἢ ἐστιν τὸ πλήρωμα τοῦ τὰ πάντα ἐν πᾶσιν πληρομοίητο; (4) Remember that the Gnostics of Asia Minor were already using τὸ πλήρωμα in the sense in which St Paul uses it in the Epistle to the Ephesians, and that it plays a great part in their various subsequently developed systems. Does it with them ever mean the Church, or anything that with them answered to the Church? Never, but always the Divine Nature in some form or other, whether it was the Divinity into which Christ in whom he had performed His mission on earth (Cerinthians), or the aggregate of the Εἰκόνες which emanated from the Primal Deity (Valentinians), or any modification of either theory.

9. The first of the above considerations creates a presumption in favour of πλήρωμα being in apposition with αὐτῶν (Χριστοῦ), not with σῶμα. The second and third raise this presumption to a high and yet higher probability, and the fourth confirms it.

10. Objection is taken that thus God the Father is said "to give" the fullness of the Godhead to the Son, whereas He holds it of His own nature. But the Father, in virtue of the μορφία, does "give" to the Son that Deity which He has in common with His Father (as is explained with great clearness and precision by Hooker, 'Eccl. Pol.', v. liv. 2). And not only is the criticism founded on a theological error, but it is inapplicable to the present passage; for St Paul does not say that God gives the πλήρωμα to Christ, but that He gives to the Church, as Head of the body, Him who is the πλήρωμα τοῦ τὰ πάντα ἐν πᾶσιν πληρομοίητο.

11. The deference that we should naturally pay to the authority of the large body of commentators who regard πλήρωμα as in apposition with σῶμα ceases, when we find that all the moderns who hold that view (with the exception of Dr Barry and possibly Bishop
Wordsworth) agree in rejecting the idea of all the earlier commentators (Chrysostom, Theodore, Theodoret, Theophylact, &c.) that the Church is Christ's πάρθενος as constituting His body and so filling up His mystical person. There is therefore no unanimity, or even essential agreement, amongst those who at first sight appear to form a formidable phalanx.

Chapter II.

1 By comparing what we were by 3 nature, with what we are 5 by grace: so he declareth, that we are made for good works; and 13 being brought near by Christ, should not live as 11 Gentiles, and 12 foreigners in time past, but as 19 citizens with the saints, and the family of God.

And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins;

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:

3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling 'the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

12. The verse may be paraphrased thus: "And He put all things under His feet and He gave Him as Head over all things to the Church, which is indeed His body—Him the fulness (i.e. who possesses in Himself the sum total of the properties) of the Godhead, which fills all things with everything."
4. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5. Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

6. And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

were sealed (i. 13), were thereby spiritually quickened.

as others] as the rest, that is, all the rest of mankind. No exemption from the universal condition is derived by St Paul from his Judaism, or by the Ephesians from their intellectual cultivation.

4. But God...quickened us] These words refer back to i. 1, as that verse to i. 20.

who is rich in mercy] being rich in mercy, for his great love] on account of His great love. "Mercy delivers from misery; love bestows salvation." (Bengel.)

5. hath quickened us... hath raised us] The "hath" must in both cases be omitted; a definite act of God, which took place at the time of their adoption, is referred to. St Paul teaches that spiritual Life is in this world imparted to us on our being sealed as Christians.

by grace ye are saved] by grace ye have been and are saved. Lest there should be even a momentary doubt on this vital point, on which he had dwelt at length in all his earlier epistles, but now found it less necessary to insist, St Paul parenthetically interjects these words which he expands in v. 8.

6. made us sit together] The words "with Christ" must be supplied from the previous verse. As there is a spiritual resurrection on earth, anticipatory of the resurrection of body, soul and spirit hereafter, so there is a spiritual session with Christ here—a dignity and glory enjoyed by Christians through their union with Christ—anticipatory of their future session with Christ in heaven. "The inner heavenly consciousness of the faithful is to be understood, not a local raising into heaven" (Olschausen).

in heavenly places] the spiritual world to which the kingdom of heaven here and hereafter belongs (see note on i. 3).

in Christ Jesus] through our union with Him as Christians.

7. in the ages to come] This is a different expression from that used in i. 21, and means no more than, "in the times coming;" but it implies that those times would be of long duration, consisting of several periods, as St Paul had dogmatically taught the Thessalonians many years before (1 Thess. ii. 3).

God exhibits the richness of His grace by His kind and gracious dealing with His Church on earth, generation after generation, as well as by glorifying it hereafter.

8. For by grace are ye saved through faith] For by grace ye have been and are saved by faith. St Paul here recurs to the cardinal doctrine of the Gospel that he preached, which he had paused in his argument to state parenthetically in v. 5—salvation by grace, brought home to each individual and realized by faith. He has been speaking of the privileges enjoyed by God's people, which if given as of desert might well engender spiritual pride, and therefore warns them that if they have been placed in a state of salvation, it is not for their own merits, but by the will and of the free mercy of God. It was God that predestined them for adoption from all eternity (i. 4); it was Christ through whom they had redemption and forgiveness (i. 7); it was God that formed the Christian family (i. 10); it was Christ through whom they obtained the Christian inheritance (i. 11); it was the Holy Spirit by whom they were sealed as Christians after their conversion (i. 13); it was God that gave them spiritual life when they were dead (i. 19, ii. 8); it was God that gave them a spiritual resurrection and glory because they were in Christ (ii. 6); it was God that gave them salvation in such a way that they were already in possession of it (ii. 5, 8). All was of God, nothing of themselves, except faith. Faith is the instrument by which man sees, realizes, accepts, grasps the gift freely given by God. Even good works, necessary as a condition of Christian life and as a consequence of a living faith, are prepared by God for the Christian man to walk in, not performed by him as a means of obtaining future salvation or laying up merit (ii. 10).

and that not of yourselves] By "that" is meant the fact of their being saved. They could not have earned this: "the gift is God's." Salvation is the result of Justification, and Justification is the act, not of man, but of God, whereby He regards us as accepted for the merits not of ourselves but of Christ. The construction of the sentence, as well as the flow of the argument, is adverse to referring the clause to the word "faith," as is done by some commentators.

9. lest any man should boast] God's pur-
10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

11 Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands;

12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:

10. For] Salvation is not of works, for we are his workmanship.

[workmanship] The word (οἰκουμένη) means the product of an artist's labour; the chair is the workmanship of the carpenter, the jar of the potter. There is here a glance at the truth enlarged upon in the Epistle to the Romans, that man is the mere creature of God, whence it follows that any good thing which emanates from man really flows from God as its author; but it is rather the re-creation in Christ than the original creation that is now used as a ground of argument. In the new life to which Christians are born when "after they have believed they have been sealed with the Holy Spirit" (i. 13), they are "created unto good works." Just as the lungs are made to breathe and the eye to see, so the Christian man is constituted by God's grace "unto (or for) good works." His good works do not create for him his Christian standing-ground either in this world or the next. It is no merit in the lung to breathe or in the eye to see; breathing and seeing are the virtues of the lung and of the eye, but they deserve no reward. So good works are the virtues of the Christian man without which he fails of his proper excellence; and their performance is required of him, as the performance of the task of breathing is required of the lung and seeing of the eye, but they merit nothing, and are not causes of salvation here or hereafter. To himself and to others they serve as tests by which to know whether he is in a state of salvation and is therefore likely to be in the same state hereafter; their absence (when circumstances admit of their being performed) proves that salvation is absent, but their seeming presence is not an equally trustworthy test, as men are so liable to deceive themselves as to the true character of the acts which they or others perform. Cf. Articles xxi. xii. xiii. and Abp Laurence's 'Bampton Lectures.'

11. Wherefore] Seeing that this is so.

[remember] He seeks to instil humility and thankfulness by reminding them of what they had been and what they had become: they had been aliens and Gentiles, but had now become God's own people. The majority of the Asiatic Christians, if not of the Ephesian converts, would have been Gentiles. See Introduction, § 3. 2.

[in the flesh] These words, applied to the Gentiles, are not put in contrast with the same words applied to the circumcision at the end of the verse. nor do they refer to the token of circumcision being in the flesh, but they mean "by physical descent," or, as we say, "by blood."

[Uncircumcision] A word of reproach and contempt in the mouth of the Jews (1 S. xvii. 26, xxxi. 4, 2 S. i. 20), erected by them into a proper name.

[by which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands] A compressed sentence for "by those who are called the Circumcision, whose circumcision however is only in the flesh, made by hands." Cf. Rom. ii. 28, 29, "Neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh...circumcision is that of the heart."

12. without Christ] St Paul enumerates the losses of the Gentiles as compared with the Jews. They were without the expectation of Messiah, they did not belong to God's people, they were not in covenant with God, they had no hope of the life to come, and no real grasp of God to support them in their trials in this life.

[covenants of promise] the various covenants of God with Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses—all of which contained explicitly or by implication the promise of the Messiah and of the Inheritance. Cf. Wisd. xviii. 22; 2 Macc. viii. 15.

[in the world] The heathen are represented as living outside of the sacred kingdom, in the
13 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us;

15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace;

16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby. 

wicked and weary world (kosmos); and as though that were not enough, even there having no full assurance of God's providence. "Being Christless, they are described in regular gradation as being churchless, hopeless, godless, and homeless" (Eadie).

13. But now in Christ Jesus] "now that you are Christians," a contrast to their previous estate, brought about by union with Christ Jesus. The latter name is added to shew that they had more than the Jewish expectation of an indefinite Messiah: they knew that Messiah was Jesus, and that they were His.

far off] Cf. Acts ii. 39, "The promise is to you and to your children and all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call."

made nigh were made nigh. by the blood of Christ] A result of Christ's death was the abolition of Jewish exclusiveness and monopoly.


14. our...bath...us] Jew and Gentile. bath made...bath broken] made...broke. the middle wall of partition] that which separated Jew and Gentile as much as if it were a wall running between them and fencing off one from the other. It has been thought that half unconsciously St Paul may have had the expression suggested to him by the partition wall in the Court of the Temple, on which was fixed the tablet forbidding Gentiles to advance further on pain of death, which is described by Josephus (Antiq. xv. 11. 5; Bell. Jud. v. 3. 4), and has been lately discovered under the ruins of the Temple (see Quarterly Statement of the Palestine Exploration Fund for August, 1871).

15. Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances] The construction and meaning are as follows: "Who made both (Jew and Gentile) one, and broke down the middle wall of partition, that is, the mutual hatred existing between them, and abolished by his flesh (that is, by his life and death on earth) the law of commandments in ordinances (that is, the ceremonial law of positive precepts)."

The Greek commentators understand the words rendered in the A. V. by "contained in ordinances" (év ἐκκομία, lit. "in, or by dogmas") as not referring to the ordinances of Moses but to the precepts of the Gospel, and translate "abolished the Mosaic commandments by his teaching." Similarly, Bengel, referring to Acts xvi. 4, renders "abolished (or swallowed up) the law of commandments proper to the Israelites in the universal ordinances of grace." Modern critics too peremptorily deny that the Greek words will bear this meaning. A dogma may be a Mosaic rule (Joseph. Ant. xv. 5. 3), or an Imperial order (Luke ii. 1), or an Apostolic ordinance (Acts xvi. 4), or a Christian precept (Ignat. Epist. ad Magn. xiii)—any command in short which rests for its sanction on authority, whatever that authority may be. It is not the use of the word "dogma" so much as the context, which here and in the parallel passage of the Epistle to the Colossians (ii. 14) points to the Mosaic ordinances, and to the rendering of the A. V. rather than to that of S. Chrysostom, Theodoret, and Theophylact.
of twain of the twain. one new man] The Jewish and the Gentile elements of the human race are fused into one new substance or being, transformed in character (kauós) as well as beginning afresh (wios), Col. iii. 10.

making peace] between the two.

16. And that be might reconcile both unto God] This is the second part of Christ's work as Peacemaker. First He unites Jew and Gentile, and then He reconciles both, that is, all mankind, to God in one body. the one body formed by the combination of Jew and Gentile. Cf. Col. iii. 15; Rom. xii. 5; 1 Cor. xii. 13. The words have no reference to the person of Christ, though the parallel passage of Col. i. 22 is in favour of such a reference, which Bengel and others advocate.

by the cross] As it is the cross which is the instrument by which mankind is reconciled to God, it must be by propitiation and expiation that the reconciliation is effected. This shews that God had to be reconciled to man as well as man to God, as has been already implied in the expression "children of wrath" in ii. 3.

having slain the enmity thereby] that is, after
17 And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God;

20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

21 In whom all the building fitly

having first put an end to the enmity between Jew and Gentile thereby, i.e. by the Cross. Cf. Col. ii. 15.

17. And came and preached peace] Rather, "And he came and published the good tidings of peace." He not only effected peace between Jew and Gentile and between man and God, but He also came and brought the good news of the peace having been made. He "came" for this purpose in His own person, and by His Apostles whom He commissioned.

to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh] to you Gentiles and to the Jews. The better MSS. insert the word "peace" a second time—peace to you that were far off, and peace to them that were nigh. The words are quoted from Isa. lvi. 19.

18. For] Namely that. This was the Gospel of Peace that he delivered—that through Him and by the indwelling Spirit all mankind (not only Jews) are brought nigh to the Father. So in Gal. iv. 5 the object of the redemption is declared to be "that we might receive the adoption of sons; and because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father." Cf. Rom. viii. 15. The three Persons of the Holy Trinity are indicated in this verse as in vv. 19, 20, 22.

19. Now therefore] He returns to v. 13, where the argument had been partially interrupted by his enlargement on the theme of Christ the Peacemaker.

strangers and foreigners] strangers and sojourners. The two words are used in conjunction in Lev. xxv. 23. In Lev. xxii. 10 the latter word is used in the sense of a lodger, "a sojourner of the priest, or a hired servant, shall not eat of the holy thing." It designates the man who has not the privileges of the household, as "stranger" designated those who had not the rights of citizenship.

18. A solid stone of double size lying at the angle where the two chief walls of a building meet, and on which they both rest. This stone represents Christ, both as the foundation stone on which the Church rests, and as the binding power which held together the two elements of Jew and Gentile. See Isa. xxviii. 16. A similar but not identical metaphor is used in Ps. cxviii. 22, quoted in several places of the New Testament. There He is described as the Head of the corner, that is, the most projecting or prominent stone in the corner. See Matt. xxii. 42; Acts iv. 11; 1 Pet. ii. 7.

bafcel.] This word may be rendered "of it"—"Jesus Christ being the chief cornerstone of it," and this translation is adopted by Bengel and Holzhausen, but the A. V. rendering is to be preferred.

21. In whom] that is in Christ, on whom the building rests and in whom it is framed together. It is a mistake to render "on which" with Theophylact, Luther, Beza.

all the building.] The absence of the Greek article from the majority of the MSS. has induced Wickliffe and Tyndale to translate
framed together growth unto an holy temple in the Lord:
22 In whom ye also are built together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

CHAPTER III.

5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should be saved; 3 was made known to Paul by revelation: 8 and to him was that grace given, that 9 he should preach it. 13 He de-athreth them not to faint for his tribulation, 14 and prayeth 19 that they may perceive the great love of Christ toward them.

FOR this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to youward:

"each building," "every building;" and several commentators, including even Meyer, consider that it is necessary so to translate; but in Hellenistic Greek the article is not in all cases required. See Luke iv. 13; Acts ii. 36, vii. 22; Eph. iii. 15 (where see note); Joseph. 'Antiq.' iv. 5. 1. Nay its absence is not unknown in both early and later classical Greek. See Hom. 'Il.' xxiv. 107; Hes. 'Op. et Dies,' 510; Thucyd. ii. 43; and Bp. Jacobson's note to Ignatius' 'Epist. ad Ephes.' c. xii. 

fifty-framed together] each stone fitting into that next to it, for the strength and for the comeliness of the building—a description of the ideal Church: the actual Church may be "rent at the top asunder" and yet remain Christ's Church, provided that "it continues built upon the main foundation" at the bottom (Hooker 'Eccl. Pol.' v. 68. 6).

growth] constantly rising in height by the continual addition of layers of new stones. The stones are men, laid one after the other, as generation passes after generation, on the foundation once for all established by the Apostles. The idea of growth of doctrine is alien from the passage. Cf. 1 Pet. ii. 5.

an holy temple in the Lord] a holy Christian temple. The Church is declared to be the temple of God in 1 Cor. iii. 16; 2 Cor. vi. 16, and it is called Christ's house in Heb. iii. 6. St Paul's Ephesian readers would naturally contrast the spiritual Christian temple here portrayed with the material heathen temple which was so familiar a sight to them, but it is not likely that St Paul, here or elsewhere, refers or alludes to the famous temple of Artemis.

29. In esomem] Possibly "in which," sc. the temple.

ye also are built together] Ye that were Gentiles (ii. 11) and strangers (i. 19) and dead in trespasses and sins (ii. 1) are now built in as living stones with the others.

an habitation of God through the Spirit] "where God dwells by His Spirit." The Church is the abode of the Spirit, as the heart of each believer is (4 Cor. vi. 16). In both cases the habitation is often defiled, and the indwelling Spirit is grieved and provoked to depart, but He abides there still, as long as the temple continues to be the Lord's, or the man has not ceased to belong to Christ.

CHAP. III. i. COMMENCEMENT OF PRAYER, COMPLETED IN VER. 14—21.

1. For this cause] St Paul having finished his portraiture of the Church, consisting of Jew and Gentile, founded upon Christ, built up harmoniously on Him, and constituting the habitation of the indwelling Holy Ghost, offers a prayer that his converts may rise to a full apprehension of the blessed privileges of which they have been made partakers. Accordingly he begins: "For this cause I Paul"—but having got so far, he enters on a digression (which though introduced in the form of a digression bears immediately on the main object of the Epistle) relating to himself and his office, which lasts for thirteen verses, at the conclusion of which he resumes (v. 14) with the same words. "For this cause 1"—and completes the sentence with "bow my knees unto the Father...that he would grant you, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles] For the common term, "the Apostle of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles," he substitutes the word "prisoner," descriptive of his present estate in Rome.


2. If ye have heard] This phrase does not express doubt. Rather it expresses, in a gentle form, an assurance on St Paul's part that they had heard—"if ye heard, as indeed ye did hear" (cf. Col. i. 23). It would, however, have been more natural for St Paul to have written, "since ye know" (rather than "heard of"). If the Epistle had been addressed solely to that Church to which he had personally "declared the whole counsel of God," and whose Presbyters had "fallen upon his neck and kissed him" as their Father in God (Acts xx. 37) See Introduction, § 3. 2. the dispensation of the grace of God] the divine dispensation whereby the grace of God was freely bestowed on St Paul for the benefit of the Gentiles.
3. How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words,
4. Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ
5. Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy
apostles and prophets by the Spirit;
6. That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by
the gospel:

3. How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; namely that by revelation
there was made known unto me, on the authority of the best MSS.

by revelation] See Gal. i. 16; Acts xxii.
the mystery] the adoption of the Gentiles,
as explained in v. 6.
as I wrote afore in few words] i.e. "as I have shortly written above," viz. in i. 9 and
also in ii. 11—13.

4. Whereby] In regard to which, that is, the previous passage referred to by him.
when ye read] The Epistles were to be read aloud in the Churches (see Col. iv. 16).
If St Paul had been addressing the Ephesians alone, it is unlikely that he would have appealed
to a previous passage in this Epistle rather than to their personal knowledge of him for
proof of his insight into the mystery of the adoption of the Gentiles into the covenant.
ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ] ye can perceive my
intelligence of the mystery of Christ; from whence they might infer that he was
directly enlightened upon it by Christ having revealed it to him (v. 3). It is called "the
mystery of Christ" because the subject of the mystery was the Gentile adoption in Christ.
 Cf. Col. i. 27.

5. in other ages] Meyer translates "to other generations"—unnecessarily.
sons of men] contrasted with the apostles
and prophets of the next clause. Men, as such,
were ignorant: it was revealed to some of
them who were apostles and prophets. St
Paul does not say that previous generations of
mankind had no knowledge of the mystery,
but that they had no such knowledge as had
been given to the apostles and prophets by
direct revelation of the Spirit. Some know-
ledge on the subject was granted to the Jewish
prophets of old. See Rom. ix. 25; Acts xv.
17.

unto his holy apostles and prophets] the
This is the only passage in Scripture where the now
familiar conjunction of words "holy apostles"
is found. The epithet here emphasizes the
distinction between the apostles and prophets
on the one hand, to whom the mystery was
revealed, and the sons of men on the other,
who were kept in comparative darkness about
it. If all Christians were holy (the word
"saints" is in the original the same as "holy"),
à fortiori the apostles.

6. That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs,
and of the same body, and partakers of his promise.
That the Gentiles are fellow-heirs,
and of the same body, and partakers of the promise." The A.V. loses a point of similarity
in the three Gentile privileges by not ex-
pressing the force of the Greek compounds
by the same English word, lit. "heirs together,
corporate together, sharers together." They
are not heirs after the Jews, but together
with them; not attached to the Hebrew body,
but incorporated into it together with the
element that previously constituted it; not
receivers of the promise after others had been
satisfied, but partakers of it together with them.

fellow-heirs] At St Paul's conversion he
was commissioned to go to the Gentiles, "that
they might receive forgiveness of sins and in-
heritance among them which are sanctified by
faith that is in me" (Acts xxvi. 18). See also
Col. i. 12. This inheritance, the spiritual
counterpart of the earthly Canaan, is in its
ultimate analysis the possession and enjoyment
of the Spirit of God, the earnest of which is
given to His people here as a pledge of full
fruition hereafter. See note on i. 18.

partakers of his promise] "of the promise."
The three assurances made to Abraham in Gen.
xxii. 4—8, (1) that he should be the father of
many nations, (2) that the covenant between
God and his seed should be of perpetual
duration, (3) that his seed should inherit Canaan
and hold it as an everlasting possession, seem
to have gone under the name of "the promise."
The promise, hitherto confined to Abraham's
children in the flesh, was now extended, in its
spiritual signification, to those who, being
adopted in Christ, (1) had become his spiritual
children, (2) were admitted into the new cov-
enant with God, (3) had obtained the promised
inheritance. See i. 11, 13, 14, 18.

in Christ] In Christ Jesus, i.e. as
Christians.

by the gospel] The preaching of the Gos-
pel to the Gentiles was the instrumental cause
of their obtaining those privileges which the
Jews claimed exclusively for themselves.
7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power.

8 Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;

9 And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,
11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:
12 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.
13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.
14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,
15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

14—21. Resumption and continuation of prayer that forming as they do one family—that of God the Father—they may be strengthened by the Holy Spirit and by the indwelling of Christ. Cf. Col. i. 9—11.
14. For this cause] St Paul resumes with the same words with which he had broken off in v. 1, all that intervenes being, in form, parenthetical. The occasion of his prayer is the fact of the Ephesians being built up with the other Christians into the spiritual temple depicted in ch. ii. unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ] The words “of our Lord Jesus Christ” must be omitted. St Jerome says, “We must read simply ‘to the Father,’ not ‘to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,’ which is an addition of the Latin Codices.”
15. Of whom [i.e. the Father. the whole family in heaven and earth] Lit. “every family in heaven and on earth,” but in spite of the absence of the Greek article the first words may be correctly translated “the whole family” (see note on ii. 21), and there is a special force and signification in the expression here which makes such a translation necessary. The word rendered “family” is found in Luke i. 27, “of the house of David.” where it means all that are derived from a common progenitor, and so belong to a common stock. It is used in the same sense in the present passage. St Paul has been unfolding the mystery that Jew and Gentile are made one in Christ, are incorporated into one body, are spiritually descended from one ancestor, and have become joint heirs of the latter and recipients in common of the promises made to his descendants: they are now one house; one family,” the Father’s “house,” the Father’s “family,” deriving even its name of “family” (μαρτυρία) from Him the Father (μαρτυρία); but this wide-spreading family contains more than the hitherto warring sections of mankind; it embraces angelic beings also in its wide sweep, as indicated in i. 10. Thus God gives the name of “family”—a name derived from His own name of Father—to angels and men united in Christ Jesus. To the Father St Paul addresses his prayer for the newly admitted members of the family, that they may be strengthened by the Spirit and by Christ indwelling in them.
16. That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; 17. That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,

18. May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; 19. And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

16. in the inner man] unto the inward man. This expression is used three times in the New Testament. In Rom. vii. 16. it means the spiritualized conscience which condemns the impulses of sensuality. In 2 Cor. iv. 16 it means the religious as opposed to the physical life. Here it means the spiritual life into which St Paul prays that the Ephesians may grow by the power of God's Spirit. In the parallel passage of the Epistle to the Colossians, after praying in like manner "that they might be strengthened with all might according to his glorious power," he substitudes for "unto the inward man," "unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness," thus shadowing what especial qualities he contemplated when using the general phrase "the inward man" (see Col. i. 11). A similar expression, "the hidden man of the heart," is found in 1 Pet. iii. 4., signifying the interior spiritual life which exhibits itself in "a meek and quiet spirit," a frame of mind not differing greatly from "patience and long-suffering with joyfulness." The more commonly used phrase, "the new man," designates the regenerate life.

17. That] The clause "that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith" is a separate and second petition, depending upon "that he would grant you" in v. 16. Cf. John xiv. 23. "And we will come unto him, and make our abode with him." The heart of the Christian and the Church at large are both the Divine dwelling-place. There is a glance backwards to ii. 12.

by faith] Faith is a condition without which neither the spiritual life nor the indwelling of Christ can exist, for He can do no mighty works where He is met by unbelief (Mark vi. 5). Faith does not merely apprehend the Divine working in the soul, but it brings the Divine Worker into it.

that ye, being rooted and grounded in love; being rooted and grounded in love; that ye may. There is no authority for transposing the conjunction as is done in the A. V. It is true that the participles are in the nominative case, but this anomalous construction is not very unusual. The words must be closely connected with those that precede them in sense as well as grammar. Whosoever is made strong by God's Spirit must necessarily be rooted and grounded in love, for love is another name for the ordinary working of the Holy Spirit in the heart of man, and where God's Spirit is, there is love.

18. May be able] This is the prayer to which the two previous petitions have led up, and it is in close connexion with the subject of the Epistle. St Paul has been expounding the redeeming and reconciling work of Christ, whereby the blessings of the covenant had been extended to the Gentiles. In Him they had been adopted (i. 5.), in Him they had been redeemed (i. 7.), in Him they had been forgiven (ib.), in Him they had obtained the inheritance (i. 11.), in Him they had been sealed (i. 13.), in Him they had been raised up and enthroned (ii. 6.), in Him they had been saved (ii. 8.), in Him they were created unto good works (ii. 10.), in Him they that were afar off had been made nigh (ii. 13.), in Him peace was made between man and man (ii. 15.), in Him reconciliation was effected between man and God (ii. 16.), in Him access was opened to the Father by the Spirit (ii. 18.), in Him they were built together into a holy temple for an habitation of God by the Spirit (ii. 22.): "for this cause therefore (iii. 1., 14.) he prays God that they may be so strengthened by the Spirit (iii. 16.) and filled with Christ's indwelling presence (iii. 17.) that they may be able (lit. "quite able") to comprehend the breadth and length and height and the love of Christ in shedding His blood (i. 7., 13.) and enduring the cross (ii. 16.), to effect these so great benefits; and comprehending this, may be filled with all the fulness of God.

with all saints] He prays that knowledge may be not only enjoyed by the Ephesians, but shared with them by all the members of the Church who are united under the headship of Christ (i. 10.).

the breadth, and length, and depth, and height That is, "of the love of Christ," omitted here because expressed (with a slightly different construction) in the next clause. Of the many other suggestions that have been made as to the subject of "St Paul's mensuration," none are worth mentioning except (1) that of Bengel, who refers it to "the fulness of God;" (2) that of Dean Alford and Dr Barry, who suggest that, if anything is to be supplied, it should be "of the mystery."

19. And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge] One of St Paul's paradoxes. Cf. 1 Tim. v. 6. "She is dead while she liveth." These paradoxes are not, even
20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAPTER IV.

1 He exhorteth to unity, and declareth that God therefore giveth divers 11 gifts unto men, that his church might be 13 edified, and 16 grown up in Christ. 18 He calleth them from the impurity of the Gentiles, to put on the new man, 21 to cast off lying, and 29 corrupt communication.

I THEREFORE, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye

literally taken, untrue. All the love of Christ—what He did for love's sake and why He did it—passes human understanding, but we may know something of it, and shall know more and more according as we are more strengthened by His Spirit, and enlightened by faith, rooted and grounded in love.

that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God unto all the fulness of God. This is the climax of the prayer, as it might be of every intercessory prayer, that they might be filled with grace so as to approach more and more towards (unto) the perfection with which God alone is full. Olshausen renders, "that ye may be filled with all Christian gifts and virtues unto the complete fulness of God, i.e. that ye may be so filled as God is filled." With these words St. Paul ends his prayer, which is followed by a doxology.

20. according to the power that worketh in us] We know something of the power of God which works within us, and arguing from what we do know to that which we do not know, we gather some idea of His Omnipotence, which is able to do for man more than man is able to ask or to imagine.

21. be glory in the church by Christ Jesus] In the Church and in Christ Jesus. In that Church whose splendours have been now first brought to light by the admission of Gentiles within its bounds. He adds, "and in Christ Jesus," for no glory can be derived to God from the Church, except it be a glory coming immediately from Christ the Head, or mediatly from Him through His members, in so far as they are in Him. (The conjunction "and" is found in all the oldest MSS.)

throughout all ages, world without end] Lit. "unto all the generations of the age of the ages." This expression does not denote eternity in the philosophic sense of an ever-adding now, but it does denote what to us is the same thing, everlasting duration. "The ages" are the various periods, which commencing when time commenced, have run their course and been succeeded, and will be succeeded, by other periods as long as human consciousness (of which time is a condition) shall exist in its present estate. The period comprising all these periods is "the age of the ages." The expression is borrowed from the LXX. version of Dan. vii. 18. Slightly altered in form it occurs in Gal. i. 5; 1 Pet. i. 23; Heb. vi. 20. A "generation," also a LXX. phrase, signifies a division of time equal in length to the duration of the life of man. Glory is to go up to God in the Church through all subdivisions of that age which is the sum of all the ages. The formula "world without end" has grown so familiar to us that it seems hopeless to change it, but it is inexact and very misleading (as will be seen by an attempt to translate it into a foreign language). If it were possible, it would be better to substitute for the words in the text, through the duration of all time.

CHAP. IV. 1-16. EXHORTATION TO UNITY IN THAT CHURCH IN WHICH GENTILE AND JEW ARE EQUALLY CONSTITUENT ELEMENTS, WITH THE SAME DOCTRINES, THE SAME RITES, AND THE SAME MINISTRY. Cf. Col. i. 10, ii. 19, iii. 12, 14.

1. therefore] St. Paul has expounded the mystery of the Gentile adoption in Christ (i., ii.), which had been revealed to him and which he had made known to the Ephesians (iii. 1-13). He has followed up his exposition with a prayer that they may realize the love of Christ which had wrought so great things for them (iii. 14-21); and in close connexion with what has preceded he now adds an exhortation to mutual forbearance and love among those who have been made equal members of the one body of Christ. He is pursuing the same theme which has occupied him throughout the Epistle, not taking up a new question after finishing his main subject, nor, on the other hand, beginning now his main subject to which the previous chapters have been subsidiary.

the prisoner of the Lord] In the Lord.

A form of expression essentially the same as that employed in iii. 1 is used in order to mark that the exhortation of iv. is a consequence on the dogmatic teaching of i., ii. as much as the prayer of iii. The idea that St. Paul uses the term "prisoner" as triumphing in his chains (Meyer) is foreign to
walk worthy of the vocation where-with ye are called,
2 With all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love;
3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

the occasion. It means rather "the prisoner—and a prisoner because I am a Christian."
the vocation wherewith ye are called] wherewith ye were called. God had predestined the adoption of the Gentile nations in Christ before the foundation of the world (i. 4); He had called them by the instrumentality of St Paul's preaching (i. 13—ii. 8) when the time came at which it was His will that they should be invited within the precincts of the Church.

2. forbearing one another] The jealousy between Jewish and Gentile converts to Christianity was the greatest cause of strife and heartburning in the early Church. The Apostle addresses both. If it were the Gentiles, who for the first time had been called into the kingdom of God, it was the first time too that the Jews had been called into the kingdom of Christ. Both had received a common blessing, and each was bound to be forbearing towards the other. The Jew must not look down upon the Gentile who had so long been an alien, the Gentile must not retort upon the Jew who had slain the Lord of glory; and to prevent this party-bickering and quarrelling, they must both alike be "lowly," that is, holding a humble estimate of themselves as sinful men; "meek," that is, giving no offence to others and of unresentful on provocation; "long-suffering," that is, patient and self-possessed under injustice.
in love] Christian forbearance is not to have for its motive the moral superiority felt by the man who does not yield to the temptation of a sharp or angry retort, but kindly feeling and regard for the other person, on account of his being a member of the same body, and that body, Christ's. (Lachmann is wrong in uniting the words with the clause following.)

3. to keep the unity of the Spirit] The Spirit dwelling within the Church (ii. 21) creates a oneness of feeling among all true members of the Church, because He animates each and all of them and is Himself one. St Paul desires them earnestly to endeavour not to mar this unity by internal strife, its bond of preservation being "peace." "The peace here spoken of differs not much from the virtue of meekness: only it adds, above meekness towards others, quietness with them" (Laud, 'Sermon' vi., preached on this text before Parliament, 1648). The three following verses contain reasons why they should be at one together, sharing as they did in one body and one Spirit, and having one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God.

4. There is] No verb is expressed in the original. This is not unusual when the saying is a sort of catchword. Cf. 1 Tim. ii. 5; 2 Tim. ii. 11; Heb. xii. 4.

one body] The mystical body of Christ, the Christian Church; but one, though consisting of such diverse elements. There is a reference to ii. 16 "that he might reconcile both unto God in one body."

one Spirit] The indwelling Spirit (see Laud, as above) animating the whole body and each member of it without respect of persons. There is a reference to ii. 18, 22. Cf. 1 Cor. xii. 13, "for by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles."
as ye were called] When they received their calling, they all alike, whatever was their nationality, were called unto one and the same hope of Eternal life. The preposition "in" is joined with "called" in three other passages in St Paul's Epistles, where it is translated in the A.V. by "unto" or "into." 1 Cor. vii. 15; Gal. i. 6; 1 Thess. iv. 7.

5. One Lord] The Lord and Head of the Church, in whom all things are gathered together in one (i. 10).
one faith] The faith that realized the adoption in Christ, which was the same in Jew and Gentile.
one baptism] The same rite with the same formula admitted each and all into the Church, being the seal of the faith possessed in common by all.

6. One God] Not Jehovah for the Jews, and other gods for the various Gentile nations, but one God for all, who is "Father of all," whatever their race or ancestry. He had been the Father even when men were alienated from Him; much more now that they are reconciled and brought into His house.

And above all] The supreme King of one section as much as of the other. And through all, and in you all] The "you" must be omitted, not being found in the old MSS. St Paul having spoken of God as "above" them all, adds the two further propositions "through" and "in" lest he should
7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, “When he ascended up on high, he led captive multitudes of captives, and gave gifts unto men.”

grace to individuals according as, and in what measure, He pleases. See 1 Cor. xii. 4-11.

8—10 (parenthetical). APPLICATION OF Ps. lxviii. 18 TO CHRIST’S GIFT OF THE SPIRIT AND JUSTIFICATION OF THE APPLICATION.

8. [Wherefore] Christ had indissolubly connected the gift of the Holy Ghost with His own Ascension to the Father in heaven. “If I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you” (John xvi. 7, 16); and whereas Ps. lxviii. 18 speaks of an Ascension and of gifts in connexion with it, St. Paul quotes the passage and applies it to Christ, justifying his citation in the two following verses. The course of thought and argument proceeds immediately from v. 7 to v. 11.

be said] Or “it saith,” viz. the Scripture.

Cf. Rom. x. 11; Gal. iv. 30.

When be ascended, &c. The Psalm describes a triumphant procession of God after He has won a victory for His people. He is described as leading captive His prisoners, and receiving gifts betokening submission from the vanquished for the good of all mankind, and so returning in glory to heaven. St Paul reveals the spiritual bearing of the passage. Now it means that the Messiah, after having won His victory and taken captive His enemies, returned to heaven and there received gifts, not from the subjected nations but from His Father, which He then gave to men for their spiritual good and edification. So St Peter says (Acts ii. 33), “Being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, He hath shed forth this (the Pentecostal gift) which ye now see and hear.” In St Peter’s address, as here, the gifts “received from the Father” by the Son, and “given unto men” by Him, are those of the Holy Spirit, dispensed to the Church by those on whom the Spiritual gifts and ministerial offices were bestowed.

When be ascended up on high] Paraphrased from “Thou hast ascended up on high,” Ps. lxviii. 18.

be led captivity captive] “Thou hast led captivity (that is, captives) captive” (ib.). See Judges v. 13.

The captives that Christ made were “the devil, and death, and the curse, and sin” (Chrys.); “sin, death and Satan” (Calvin); “Satan and all Adam’s progeny” (Bp. Andrews). “For all the world as when an English ship takes a Turkish galley, wherein are held many Christian captives at the oars. Both are taken, Turks and Christians, both
9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? 10 He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)

And gave gifts unto men] In Ps. lxxviii. 15, Ps. xcviii. 34, "Whatsoever heaven is higher than all the rest which is called heavens, whatsoever place is of greatest dignity in all those courts above, into that place did he ascend, where He was before He took upon Him our humanity." Pearson, 'Expos. of the Creed,' Art. vi.

that be might fill all things] “Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord” (Jer. xxxiii. 14). Christ’s ascension to the highest heaven shows that He has this divine prerogative. He fills the whole universe by His presence, mightiness and glory, and in an especial manner He, the fulness of perfection (i. 23), filled the Church with the gifts of the Spirit which on His ascension He received from His Father and gave to men.

11. And be gave] Resumed from v. 7. The pronoun is emphatic, “And it was He that gave.” What He gave was that grace of the Holy Spirit which was administered, when given, by apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers. All of these “ministered the Spirit” (Gal. ii. 4), each in his own way and degree, according to his function (1 Cor. xi. 29).

apostles] The grace ministered by Apostles, as such, was that of Government. They were sent forth by the Holy Ghost as the ambassadors of God, first to found Churches (ii. 20), and next to govern them. Others might convert, feed, and teach; Apostles organised and governed. To qualify them for this task, they received a direct commission from Christ (John xxi. 22; Gal. i. 2), whose witnesses they were (Acts i. 23), and a special inspiration by the Holy Ghost (1 Cor. ii. 20; Eph. iii. 4, 5), as had been promised them (John xvi. 13): they were endowed with a supreme authority which none might gainsay (1 Cor. xiv. 37; 2 Cor. x. 8), and a power of working miracles to prove their claims (2 Cor. xi. 14). Thus qualified, there was laid upon them “the care of all the Churches” (2 Cor. xi. 23). In the exercise of this care, they had to organize Churches by the appointment of proper officers, as deacons (Acts vii. 5), presbyters (Acts xiv. 23), and Apostolic Delegates, afterwards called Bishops (Tit. i. 5); to maintain the true doctrine (Gal. i. 9); to enforce discipline in respect to morals (1 Cor. v. 3), ceremonies (1 Cor. xi. 2), religious practices (1 Cor. xvi. 1), and general conduct (1 Cor. xii. 10); and to set forward love (1 John ii. 10; 1 John 5). As the Apostolic band died out, the gift of Government was continued to their delegates and successors.
EPHESIANS. IV. [v. 12—14.

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

(1 Tim. i. 18, iv. 6, 11, 14; 2 Tim. ii. 2; Tit. i. 5, ii. 15; Rev. ii. 1, 2), while the extraordinary qualifications with which they were endowed died out with themselves.

prophets] The grace ministered by prophets, as such, was that of Exposition. They shared with Apostles the revelation of mysteries made by the Holy Ghost (iii. 3), and it was their special task to expound those mysteries to such as had been wholly or partially converted by Apostolic preaching, the result being that they "edified, exhorted and comforted" believers (1 Cor. xiv. 3) and convinced unbelievers of the truth of Christianity by impassioned appeals to their consciences (ib. 27). Their utterances were ordinarily argumentative and oratorical, not expository (ib. 35). Their grace was generally exercised at the public meetings of the brethren. Like the Old Testament Prophets, they may have made use of the instrumental music of sacred song (1 S. x. 4), and occasionally, like them, they had the gift of prediction (Acts xi. 28). See Art. "Prophet" in Smith's 'Dictionary of the Bible.'

evangelists] The grace ministered by evangelists, as such, was that of Conversion. They were what modern missionaries are, except that their work was only to preach. They left the organization of congregations to the Apostles, whose function it was to govern. They had simply to tell the good news—to preach Christ crucified and to carry from city to city the good tidings of salvation. One part of Timothy's functions was to be an evangelist (2 Tim. iv. 4), and we read of Philip the evangelist (Acts xxi. 8). Otherwise the title of evangelist is not found in the New Testament. Evangelists are not mentioned among Church officers in the parallel passage of 1 Cor. xii. 18, probably because they are not there distinguished from pastors and teachers, but regarded as one division of the latter.

pastors and teachers] The grace ministered by pastors and teachers was that of Spiritual Edification. The same class of persons is designated by the two titles, and by it is meant the clergy inferior in rank to the Apostles, whose double office it was "to feed the church of God" (Acts xx. 28) and "to teach" (1 Tim. iii. 2), "to exhort and convince" (Tit. i. 9), at once pastors and teachers. This ministry, unlike that of the prophets, was to be perpetually exercised in the Church. The grace of Government is continued to bishops, that of Edification to presbyters. No mention of the Diaconate is made here, probably on account of its inferior character, or possibly because the two gifts which qualified for the diaconate and for evangelism were always bestowed together, as they undoubtedly were in the case of Stephen and Philip (see Introduction and Notes to the Acts).

The fourfold grace of the Holy Ghost, given to men by Christ, and ministered by apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers, though bestowed, not on all Christians, but on those only on whom God willed to bestow it, may yet be regarded as a single treasure, held in common for, if not by all alike, no less than the body, the Spirit, the hope, the Lord, the faith, the baptism, the Father already enumerated.

12. For the perfecting of the saints] With a view to the perfecting of the saints. This is the final object of the ministry of the Spirit, introduced in the original by a different preposition from that which begins the next two clauses. The three clauses are not coordinate, as they appear to be in the A.V. The grace is given for the work of the ministry and for the edification of the body of Christ, in order that the saints may be perfected.

13. Till we all come] By "we all" is meant the collective body of believers. The Spirit's grace is ministered in order that the Church may come, and it will be ministered until the Church comes, to the state of perfect maturity described in the following words, but the individual members of the body may any of them stumble and fall; Apostles did not count themselves to have attained (Phil. iii. 12).

in the unity unto the unity. There are three things to which the grace ministered in the Church is to lead it: 1. "Unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God," that is, one and the same belief and confession of his Divine nature; 2. "A perfect man," that is, full manhood, characterized by the steadfastness and firmness of one who has ceased to be a child and has reached mid-age; 3. "The measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ," that is, the matured growth of full development, which is completely possessed by Christ, who is the fulness of all divine perfection, and to which His disciples may aspire and in their degree approach. The expression "measure of the stature" is found in Lucian ("I' imag' in").

14. That] In order that.
children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

15. But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:

16. From whom the whole body, fittingly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

17. This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord: according to the effectual working in the measure of every part] That is, "according to the effective working of each part in due proportion." Of the body] The sentence runs "The whole body...worketh increase of the body," that is, "of itself." The noun is repeated in substitution for the pronoun, because the nominative case is so far off.

in love] The physical image is dropped, or rather it passes into the thing represented by it. Without harmony of its parts, the natural body cannot grow to its perfection, nor can the spiritual body unless there be love among its members. Its organization may be perfect; "every joint" may be there, "every part" in its place; but unless the vital energy descend from the Head and the Spirit of love pervade the members, there is no spiritual growth or edification.

With this verse ends the specially doctrinal portion of the Epistle. The subject of it has been one throughout, whether presented in the form of thanksgiving (i. 3—16), or prayers (i. 17—ii. 10, iii. 14—21), or warning (ii. 11—22), or protestation (iii. 1—13), or exhortation (iv. 1—16); and that subject has been the Adoption in Christ and the consequences flowing from it, ending, as the last word, in the growth and edification of the Church in love. Nor is the pervading thought of the Adoption lost sight of in the hortative section which now follows, for the ground on which the Ephesians are bidden to lead religious lives is that they have already put off the old man and put on the new man (see note on iv. 22, 24), and have been already sealed by the Holy Spirit as God's children in Christ (v. 30).

17—35, v. 1—21. EXHORTATION TO MORAL LIFE AND PIETY ON THE GROUND OF HAVING BEEN ADOPTED IN CHRIST AND REGENERATED. Cf. Col. iii. 5—16, iv. 5, 6.

17. This I say therefore] St Paul glances back to iv. 1 and resumes the exhortation there begun, that they should walk worthy of their Christian vocation. How were they to do this? First by love and unity among themselves (iv. 2—16), next by holiness (iv. 17—24) and general moral and religious behaviour (iv. 25—31, v. 1—21).
tify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the blindness of their heart:

19 Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ;

21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus:

22 That ye put off concerning the

charge you as a Christian addressing Christians.

other Gentiles] the Gentiles. St Paul is addressing, among others, the Gentile members of the Church in Asia, but they had ceased to be Gentiles in the sense of aliens, since the blessing of adoption in Christ had been vouchsafed to them, and they had been brought into the house of God. The word “other” is omitted in all the MSS. of highest authority.

in the vanity of their mind] The vanity spoken of does not mean here or elsewhere in the A. V. self-conceit, but the “vanity” of which the Preacher and the Psalmist speak (Eccl. i. 2; Ps. xxxix. 5; Psaliv. 4), to which all were given up who had not the reality of a Revelation from God to rest on. The quick-witted Greeks of Asia speculated upon the Good, the True, the Beautiful, the First Cause, and such topics; but what they arrived at was no more than a vain Atheism, or an equally vain Pantheism, or a vain Superstition, leading them, in despair and apathy, to throw themselves back upon the life according to the passions which at least seemed real.

Cf. Rom. i. 21.

18. alienated from the life of God] That is, from the life as it was when imparted to unfallen man by God, its author, which continues to animate man as long as he is in communion with God. Cf. Ps. xxxvi. 9, “For with thee is the well of life.”

because of the blindness of their heart] because of the callousness of their heart.

Two reasons are given for the alienation of the heathen from God: 1. ignorance, that is, inability to apprehend God’s nature and dealings; 2. callousness, which did not try to please Him. See notes on Rom. i. 21–23.

19. being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness] A description of those who have had high and warm feelings of piety, and, as they say of themselves, have gone through them, and have become apathetic. The natural result of this sceptical apathy is that men abandon themselves, after a pause, to wantonness, or if they do not themselves sink so far, their disciples do; and thus it is that an age of scepticism is usually followed by an age of licence.

with greediness] in greediness. The word here happily rendered by “greediness,” and generally translated “covetousness,” is very frequently associated with words bearing the meaning of uncleanness (1 Cor. vi. 19; Eph. v. 3; Col. iii. 5; 1 Thess. iv. 6). Etymologically it signifies “getting more than a due share,” and it was originally applied to those who sought to satisfy their avaricious desires, but soon it came to be applied also to those who sought to satisfy their fleshly desires. The word concupiscence has had a somewhat similar history. “Greediness” is the best rendering, as that word is applicable to excessive indulgence both of appetite and of the love of money.

20. learned Christ] That is, “become Christ’s disciples.” The word translated “learned” is the verb from which is derived the substantive “disciple.”

21. If so be] This formula does not express a doubt of its being so. See note on iii. 2. Translate “If ye have heard Him, as I know ye did.”

22. concerning the former conversation] That is, in regard to the conduct and habits
former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;
23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;
24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.
26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath:
27 Neither give place to the devil.

St Paul proceeds to draw practical conclusions.

putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour having put away lying, i.e. since you put away lying. The same precept is given in the same apparently arbitrary connexion in Col. iii. 9, 10 (a coincidence which Paley has not failed to note and argue from with ingenuity and effect in his 'Horæ Paulinæ'). Truth-telling is an essential and fundamental quality of Christian morality, and one cause of the binding nature of the duty is given in the next few words: "We are members one of another," as belonging to the family of man, and forming the Christian household, and as such, we have a right to truth, not only to words true in the speaker's acceptance of them while they mislead the hearer, but to truth, from our neighbour, and our neighbour from us. On this axiom rests all social trust, and therefore society. Without it there can be no true union civil or ecclesiastical. The words in the text are quoted from Zech. viii. 16.

26. Be ye angry, and sin not.] This is a quotation from the LXX. version of Ps. iv. 4, where the A.V. has "Stand in awe, and sin not." See note ad loc. That there is an indignation which is righteous is the teaching of all systems of sound morality. The conditions under which this righteous anger becomes sinful are laid down in Bishop Butler's 'Sermon on Resentment.' They are (1) "when from partiality to ourselves we imagine an injury done us, when there is none;" (2) "when this partiality represents it to us greater than it really is;" (3) "when we feel resentment on account of pain or inconvenience without injury;" (4) "when indignation rises too high;" (5) "when pain or harm is inflicted to gratify that resentment though naturally raised" ('Sermon' viii.).

wrath] This word is used here to designate anger run into excess.

27. Neither give place to the devil.] That is, "And do not, thus or otherwise, give room to the devil and his working." Anger, fostered and nursed, opens an inlet into the heart for the evil spirit, whose working there changes what was at first innocent into the malice which is the characteristic of himself.
On the expression “give place” see Wetstein on Rom. xii. 19.

28. Let him that stole.] Let the pilferer.
This is a warning against the pilfering usual among slaves. Converts from this class might not yet have unlearned all their old habits in deference to their new principles that be may have to give to him that needeth so as to deliver others from the temptation which he has found too strong in his own case. The hope of saving others is to some minds a stronger motive than the mere duty of restitution or of self-maintenance.

29. to the use of edifying] for building up as may be needed “To edify the hearers according as place, time, and person require” (Jerome). On the effect of words, for good and evil, see Four Sermons by Bishop Jeremy Taylor (xxii...xxvi), and Bishop Butler’s Sermon “On the government of the tongue: minister grace confer a blessing upon.”

30. grieve not the holy Spirit of God.] The juncture shows that it will be by lying, wrath, dishonesty, and corrupt conversation that He will be grieved, and these are the vices which have a tendency to dissolve the spiritual society, the Church, within which He dwells. There is no more difficulty in conceiving the thought of the indwelling Spirit being grieved by such sins on the part of the members of the body, than of the sins and miseries of men raising the feelings of anger and compassion in the Father. The Personality of the Holy Ghost may be proved from the expression in the text (see Pearson, ‘Expos. of the Creed,’ Art. VIII.).

30a. whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption] by whom ye were sealed for the day of redemption. At the time of their adoption they were sealed in the sacrament of baptism (see i. 13, 14), and they then received the earnest of the Spirit, which it was God’s purpose that they should retain and receive in ever-increasing abundance up to the day of final redemption or deliverance. Yet though it be God’s purpose that th-re should be this advance in the Christian life from the day of baptism to the day of redemption, we are warned that the Spirit, though once given, may be resisted (Acts vii. 51), vexed (Isai. lxiii. 10), grieved (Eph. iv. 30), quenched (1 Thess. v. 19), so as to depart from us. There is no security of final salvation to any individual from his having been adopted in Christ and sealed by the Spirit. “See that you break not the seal,” says Theophylact.

31. Let all bitterness, &c.] “Bitterness” is the frame of mind which wilfully retains angry feelings (Arist. ‘Eth. Nic.’ IV. 5). Ephesus, we may note, was the birthplace of the poet, Hipponax, called from the character of his writings “the bitter.” “Wrath” is that excitement of feeling which often arises from an imagination of an insult offered to us. “Anger”—that is, all that anger which is not righteous (see iv. 26). “Clamour,” the loud tone and furious retribution of passionate men and women. “Evil-speaking,” the baser result of passion which leads men to revile or attack the reputation of those with whom they are angry. “Malice,” the bad-heartedness or malignity from which all evil-doing proceeds. Sometimes this word is used in a restricted sense (Rom. i. 19; Col. iii. 8).

32. And be ye] But become ye, that is, in contrast to the vices above-mentioned continue to make progress towards the opposite graces. They have already been adopted, regenerated, sealed; they have already put off the old man and put on the new man, but still “the lust of the flesh, called in the Greek phronema sarkos...doth remain, yea in them that are regenerated” (Art. IX.), and is to be overcome.

forgiving one another] lit. “giving freely to each other,” whether pardon for wrongs, or anything else that it becomes brothers to give to brothers.

even as God for Christ’s sake bath forgiven you] even as God in Christ gave freely unto you. God’s free gift to them had been that of adoption, including in itself forgiveness of sins. He gave it them “in Christ,” that is, as Christians, and because they belonged to Christ’s body (see ii. 13). “Even as” shews that we are to take God’s dealings with us as a model for our dealing with our neighbour. The lesson here inculcated is the same as that in the parable of the
CHAPTER V.

2 After general exhortations, to love, 3 to fly from fornication, 4 and all uncleanness, 7 not to converse with the wicked, 15 to walk warily, and to be 18 filled with the Spirit, 23 he descendeth to the particular duties, how wives ought to obey their husbands, 25 and husbands ought to love their wives, 32 even as Christ doth his church.

B E ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;
And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.

3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints;
4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.
5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

Unmerciful Servant, There the King has pity first, and the servant is bound to have compassion in imitation of his Master's mercy, not in hope that mercy will in the future be extended to him. So now, we are to forgive, not because we hope for God's forgiveness hereafter, but because as Christians we have been forgiven by Him. (The reading "you" is right, but "us" has some MS. authority.)

CHAP. V. 1. Be ye therefore followers of God. Lit. "Become then imitators of God," in respect to freely giving and forgiving, and loving one another; and this they do to show that "as they are themselves "dear or beloved children," not from the slavish fear of punishment if they do not, or the equally slavish hope of earning benefit to themselves if they do, but in the spirit of filial love, which copies the beloved father's acts and principles, and cannot but give love for love.

2. bath loved us, and bath given himself for us] loved us and gave Himself for us.

an offering and a sacrifice] The antitype of all the sacrificial offerings of the old dispensation; the true sacrifice for sin by which expiation was wrought; the foreshadowed burnt-offering, whose self-surrender was "an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice, acceptable, well-pleasing to God." (Phil. iv. 18); the effective Peace-offering, exhibiting restored communion between God and man. The phrase "a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour" belongs to the burnt-offering, the meat-offering and the peace-offering. (Lev. i. 9, ii. 2, iii. 5.) Ignatius adopts the expression, "Epist. ad Ephes" 1. The love of Christ exhibiting itself in the sacrifice of Himself is set before Christians as the model and the motive of their love to each other. Cf. John xv. 12, 13.

3. or covetousness] Rather, greediness. See note on iv. 19. The use of "or" instead of "and" may be noted, but too much stress must not be laid upon it, as in the very next verse "jesting" is in an exactly parallel manner coupled to "foolish talking" by the disjunctive conjunction.

4. Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting] And filthiness, and foolish talking, or jesting. "Filthiness" is indecency; "foolish talking," the coarse talk of fools; "jesting," the more refined half-suggestion of vice or profanity in the conversation or writing of a witty man of the world, but rather giving of thanks.] The Greek word is rendered by some as "agreement," in the sense of Shakespeare's "gracious fooling," having in it no coarseness or equivoke like the "jesting" just reprobated; but there is no sufficient authority for such use of the word, nor is such a signification in accordance with the Apostle's mind. See below, v. 19, and Phil. iv. 6.

5. For this ye know] For this ye know and understand.

nor covetous man, who is an idolater] nor greedy man. See note on iv. 19, and cf. Col. iii. 5, "covetousness, which is idolatry." As avaricious men make gold their god, so there are others whose god is their belly. Thus the "greedy" man is in both senses of the word an idolater, whether he indulge his miserly or his fleshly desires.

bath any inheritance] hath inheritance. St Paul has told the Ephesians that they "had obtained an inheritance" (i. 11) and received its earnest (i. 14), and yet he now tells them that they have no inheritance if they are guilty of uncleanness or greed, shewing that "after we have received the Holy Ghost we may depart from grace given" (Art. xvi.), and lose the inheritance which was ours. At the time that the A.V. was made there was no distinction in the meaning of the English words "inheritance" and "possession," as may be seen from Shakespeare's habitual use of the words "inheritance" and "inherit." in the kingdom of Christ and of God] The signification of these words is not to be confined either to the Church on earth or to the future
6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light:

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth ;)

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done in secret.

13 But all things that are reprobate are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light.

14 Wherefore he saith, "Awake, O Lord, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light."

kingdom of heaven. In the former of these we receive the earnest of our inheritance, given to us in baptism but liable to be forfeited; in the latter we receive the whole inheritance, that inheritance being in fact the full possession of the Holy Spirit of God. Each of these kingdoms is Christ’s kingdom, as He is the Head and King of it, and at the same time God’s kingdom, as it is He that has committed the government of the Church, militant and triumphant, to His Son.

6. Let no man deceive you with vain words.] St Paul’s words contain a warning against the Gnostic justification of vice as an indifferent thing, as well as against the foolish bravo of the profligate man. "comets] in this world (Rom. i. 27), and "is coming" in the next world (Rev. xxi. 8). "children of disobedience." See ii. 2. The marginal reading "unbelief" is not so good a rendering.

7. Be not ye.] Lit. "Become not ye." If they did so, it would be a falling away from the state in which they had been placed.


9. the fruit of the Spirit] the fruit of light, according to all the better MSS. The reading in the text is probably derived from Gal. v. 12.

10. Proving, &c.] The test of a thing being right or wrong is its being acceptable or unacceptable to the Lord, and the proof of a thing being acceptable to the Lord would be the approval given to it by the divinely enlightened conscience of the regenerate man.

11. unfruitful works of darkness.] Works which contrast in character with the good, righteous and true works which are the works of light (v. 9). Cf. Gal. v. 19–22.

12. For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done in secret.

13. But all things that are reprobate are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light. The Apostle has desired that the works of darkness be reprobated (v. 11), and he adds that reprobation will make the true character of all of them to be seen, as though a flood of light were thrown upon them, it being the function of light to cause things on which it falls to be clearly discerned, and, St Paul adds, to be transformed themselves into light. The word "manifested" must be taken passively in both clauses, in the sense of "lit up."

14. be saith.] Either "it saith," in the indefinite form in which citations are sometimes made from a source well known to the person addressed, or possibly "the Holy Spirit saith." Probably it is a quotation from an early Christian hymn (an opinion dating as early as the time of Theodoret). This Epistle having been written about A.D. 62, sufficient time had elapsed for some "psalm" (1 Cor. xiv. 26) to have become of general use. It might have been the morning hymn used each day by the Christians in Rome when they assembled for prayer at St Paul’s lodging, or it might have been a baptismal hymn used liturgically in all the churches founded by St Paul. The words quoted run as follows:

"Ενεισπέ ο καθεύδων,
Καὶ ἀνέστα ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν
Καὶ ἐπισκυπνεῖ σοι ὁ Χριστός,
15 *See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,*
16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.
17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.
18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit;
19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord;
20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father

which may be translated:

SLEEPER, awake! Rise from the dead!
And Christ on thee His light shall shed.

The somewhat unusual form of two of the Greek words may perhaps be accounted for on rhythmical grounds. The hymn is naturally founded on Scriptural words and texts, as "Arise, shine, for thy light has come and the glory of the Lord has risen upon thee" (Isa. ix. 1); "Awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast forth her dead" (Isa. xxvi. 19); "The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light; they that dwelt in the land of the shadow of death upon them hath the light shined" (Isa. ix. 2). But none of these passages can be said to be cited by St Paul.

18. *excess* That is, riotous excess and prodigality or profligacy. See Arist. ‘Eth. Nic.’ iv. 1, where it stands as the vice on one side of liberality, answering to illiberality on the other. The use of wine in moderation is formally approved in 1 Tim. v. 23, and implied here.

filled with the Spirit] The source of true religious enthusiasm is not bodily or mental excitement but a Divine spiritual impulse. It is contrasted here, as in Acts ii. 13, with the exhilaration caused by wine, but it exhibits itself in an orderly manner—in "psalms," that is, utterances such as those of David, "hymns," that is, addresses made directly to God, such as the Gloria in excelsis, and "spiritual songs," that is, compositions generally classed if not confounded with hymns, though not directly addressed to God, such as that which has been already quoted (verse 14), or Ken's "Morning Hymn." Others explain the difference between the three words otherwise. "Psalms," they say, are songs with musical accompaniment; "hymns" are without accompaniment, and "spiritual songs" are lyrical effusions. For the early Christian habit of singing antiphonally, see Pliny, ‘Ep.’ x. 97.

19. *singing and making melody in your heart* "Singing" is the word from which "song" is derived; "making melody" (in the original) that from which "psalm" is derived. Spiritual enthusiasm creates an inner music in the heart as well as the external sound of psalm, hymn, and song. See ‘Christian Year,’ S. Matthew’s Day.

20. *Giving thanks...submitting yourselves* Two more effects of the presence of God’s Spirit are noted—constant thankfulness welling up from a full heart, and a meek and quiet spirit which abhors the egotism that makes a man give and take offence for fear of not seeming to be on an equality with another. The thankfulness is to be not only for those things which we at once acknowledge as blessings, but for "all things," including chastisement and disappointment. The submission is not to be from slavishness of disposition or unlively meaning, but "in the fear of Christ," that is, from a religious motive, nay more, from a thought which flies back at once to the precept of Christ, "Whosoever shall
in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;
21 Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.
22 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.
23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.

24. Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.
25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;
26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also; (Matt. v. 39).
in the fear of God; in the fear of Christ, by the authority of all the best MSS.
23. submit yourselves] These words should be printed in italics. They are borrowed in sense from the "submitting yourselves" of the previous verse, but are not expressed except according to the reading of a few MSS. The general precept of submission to one another, in v. 21, leads to the particular instructions for its application contained in this section of the Epistle.
as unto the Lord] This comparison is explained in the next verse. As the Church looks up to and obeys Christ, so in the ideal Christian family each Christian wife reverences and yields to her husband's will. Where the ideal cannot be attained through the husband's defects, it is still the aim of the wife to realize it so far as those defects admit of it. The headship of the husband implies not only that he holds authority, but also that the common life, which should animate both husband and wife, ought to have its source in the former.
23. and be is the saviour of the body] The two words "and" and "is" should be in italics. Christ, being the Head, is the preserver (saviour) of the body, the Church, which would necessarily perish, were it not for the life communicated to it from the head; and so the wife who separates herself from her husband by living in antagonism instead of submission to him is dead while she liveth, losing the life which through him might be hers. This passage is alluded to by Clement of Rome, 'Epist.' i. c. 38.
24. Therefore] But. The form of the argument is slightly confused. It should run thus—"The husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the Church, but the Church is subject unto Christ, therefore the wives also to their husbands in everything."

"But" is expressed by a strong adversative conjunction, because it answers a tacit objection on the part of the wife. Another explanation of the use of the adversative conjunction is to suppose that it marks the difference between the husband and Christ in respect to the last statement. Although the husband is not the saviour of his wife, as Christ is of the Church, yet as the Church is subject to Christ, so also the wives to their husbands." The word "own" must be omitted from want of MS. authority.
in every thing] The duty of submission on the part of children and of slaves is laid down in equally broad terms in Col. iii. 20; Tit. ii. 9. The exceptions depend on the intervention of the higher principle or rule of obedience to God and His precepts.
25. and gave himself for it] Cf. Acts xx. 8. Man's love for woman, modelled on that of Christ for the Church, leads him if need be to sacrifice his life for the protection of his weaker partner, and to nourish and cherish her (v. 29). Woman's love for man, modelled on that of the Church for Christ, shews itself in the one duty of submission—a single duty, but of manifold application.
26. That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water] that He might sanctify it, having cleansed it by the laver of the water. First He cleansed it, then He made it holy. First comes justification, then sanctification; first baptism, then renewal by the Holy Ghost; and yet so closely are these acts of God in our behalf connected together, that no one can be justified without at the same time receiving the germ of sanctification, or baptized (right) without receiving an earnest of the Spirit. "The laver of the water" is baptism, which as it is administered to each member of the Church is regarded and represented as administered to the Church in its corporate capacity. There is no reference to the ceremonial washings preceding an Eastern marriage, as some have thought. Cf. Acts xxi. 16; Heb. x. 22; Tit. iii. 5; 1 Cor. vi. 11.

by the word] It cannot be certainly determined whether these words should be joined with the verb "that He might sanctify it," or
27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

28 So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.

29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mystery: but

with the participle having cleansed it. If the former, the lesson would be that Christ cleanses first by baptism and then sanctifies by the effect of the Word of the Gospel on the heart. If the latter, their intent would be to shew that it is not a mere material washing with water that cleanses but a mystical washing with water combined with belief in the Gospel. Cf. the parenthetical addition in 1 Pet. iii. 21. "The like figure whereunto, even baptism, doth even now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but an interrogatory of a good conscience towards God)." (See note ad loc.) The older commentators consider the form of words used in baptism to be meant.

27. That he might present it to himself a glorious church] That he might himself present to himself the Church glorious. Christ is not only bridegroom, but He bestows on Himself the bride, His purpose in giving Himself for His future Church being (1) to cleanse it, (2) to sanctify it, (3) to present it to Himself, thus glorious and holy, as a spotless bride (Cant. iv. 7). Viewed according to the Divine intention, the Church is even in this world glorious, without spot or wrinkle, holy and without blemish; but that divine intention will not be perfectly realized as long as man's will conflicts with God's will, that is, not in the Church Militant but only in the Church Triumphant.

28. So] That is, as Christ loves the Church which is the body of which He is the head, so husbands should love their wives as being the bodies of which they are the heads. The subject of comparison is the love of Christ not the love of a man's self, as would appear from the A.V. A comma should be inserted after "wives."

29. no man ever yet hated his own flesh] This seems to have been a proverbial saying. "I confess that love of our own body is natural to us." Seneca, 'Ep. Mor.' xiv. 1.

30. of his flesh, and of his bones] These words must be retained in spite of their absence from some of the best MSS. They have immediate reference to Gen. ii. 23, "This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh." The expression indicates that Christians, forming at once the mystical body and the spouse of Christ, are as closely identified with Christ, their Head and Lord, as was Eve with Adam from whose side she issued and whose wife she became.

31. For this cause, &c.] St Paul having alluded to Gen. ii. 23 in the words "of his flesh and of his bones," proceeds to quote the next verse, Gen. ii. 24, which confirms his doctrine of the affection which ought to exist between man and wife. Part of the same verse of Genesis is quoted in 1 Cor. vi. 16.

32. This is a great mystery] This mystery is great. The mystery is the analogy between the marriage-state and the spiritual union between Christ and the Church. This had hitherto been a secret unrevealed thing, which was now first made clear (that is, it was "a mystery") and therefore the holiness of marriage was up to this time comparatively unknown, and the full force of the statement in Genesis, "they two shall be one flesh," had been unperceived. "But," continues the Apostle, "1" (the pronoun is emphatic) "refer this statement in its ultimate application to Christ and to the Church," and he thus explains what was before mysterious in Moses' words.

In consequence of the Vulgate using the word "sacramentum" here for "mystery," this passage is referred to by modern writers in the Latin Church as proving Marriage to be one of the supposed Seven Sacraments (see Conc. Trident. sess. xxiv. c. 1). The argument rests upon a mere equivoke. The term Sacrament in its restricted sense was not applied to marriage until the days of the Schoolmen, though St Augustine applies it freely to marriage and many other rites in its wider acceptance. But though no support can be derived from the passage for the theory that marriage was instituted by Christ as one of the sacraments of His Church (a theory which history plainly contradicts) yet the holiness of the estate is evidenced by it. Marriage is no mere contract, but a religious rite: it is no mere remedy to prevent incontinence, but a mystical representation of the union of God
I speak concerning Christ and the church.

33 Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

CHAPTER VI.

1 The duty of children towards their parents.
5 of servants towards their masters. 10 Our life is a warfare, 11 not only against flesh and blood, but also spiritual enemies. 12 The complete armour of a Christian, 13 and how it ought to be used. 21 Tychicus is commended.

CHILDREN, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother; which is the first commandment with promise;

with the soul of Christ with the Church: it is not a thing to be tolerated as a concession to human weakness, or to be regarded as inferior to the estate of celibacy. For any present distress celibacy may be superior to marriage, but not as the normal condition of the Christian, though he were the highest Christian saint. (See Bishop Taylor's Sermons on 'The Marriage Ring,' Serm. XVII., XVIII.)

33. Nevertheless] "Apart from the mystical analogy that I have indicated,"

let every one of you in particular "See that you all in your individual capacities (whatever may be your corporate duties as forming the body of Christ)—see that each man of you, I say, love his wife as himself, and the woman that she fear her husband." Fear or reverence is a necessary condition of the submission already intimated.


for this is right] St Paul here appeals to the principles of natural morality, as (in the next verse) to positive injunction.

2. which is the first commandment with promise] "which is the first of the Ten Commandments that has a promise attached to it." St Paul does not pause to consider or state whether or no there be any subsequent Commandment with promise; that the fifth is the first that occurs with it is sufficient for his purpose. Cf. the use of the word "Firstborn" in Matt. i. 15. The Second Commandment contains a declaration, not a promise: the Third, a threat.

3. That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth] upon the

land. St Paul quotes so much of Exod. xx. 12 as is sufficient for his purpose, and omits the last clause, "which the Lord thy God giveth thee." His purpose is simply to recall to his hearers' memory the promise originally attached to the Fifth Commandment, not to suggest that the same temporal blessing there promised or any analogous spiritual blessing is now attached to filial obedience. That good promise shewed the great importance of the Fifth Commandment in God's eyes; and this is all that St Paul cites it for.

4. the nurture and admonition of the Lord] the nurture, or rather discipline (see Trench, 'Synonyms of the N. T.'), and admonition which the Lord (i.e. Christ) directs should be used. Disciplining or training comes first, and it passes as the boy grows to manhood, into admonition, consisting of encouragement, reproof, and sharp reproof, as each is needed. Eli did not "admonish" ('restrain' A. V.) his sons (1 Sam. iii. 13), though he remonstrated with them (ii. 24). Their case required sharper reproof.

5. Servants] slaves, such as Onesimus, who was at this time being sent back to his master Philemon by St Paul.

masters according to the flesh] Earthly masters, whose dominion does not extend beyond the things of this world, with fear and trembling] the tender timidity of love which fears to mistake in any way the will of the beloved one (Olshausen).

6. eyerservice, as menpleasers] This was the principle of the Greek and Roman slaves, and is naturally the motive on which subordinates act who have been brought up in the fear of man or of the law instead of God.

servants of Christ] His slaves.

7. With good will] The Christian slave
8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And, ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your Master also is in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

The same terms being employed to distinguish different classes of fallen angels as had been previously applied to the angelic hosts (iii. 10), suggests that the same ranks and gradations exist among them as had existed before their fall. Cf. Col. ii. 15.

against the rulers of the darkness of this world] against the world-wide rulers of this darkness. Two statements are made or implied here; the first that evil spirits have a dominion co-extensive with the world or universe, whence the designation of their chief as "the ruler of this world" (John xii. 31, xiv. 30, xvi. 11) and "the god of this world" (2 Cor. iv. 4); the second, that their dominion is over "this darkness." This expression has probably the same signification as "the air" in ii. 2, where Satan is called "the prince of the power of the air." "The air" seems there to be contrasted with the higher, brighter, and serene heaven, and the "darkness" to be used here in contrasdistinction to light. Milton's idea that the evil spirits derive their name of "the power of the air" from their having passed from the darkness of hell to the light of the sun (Par. Reg. i. 119), has no scriptural warrant.

spiritual wickedness] Lit. spiritual things of wickedness, i.e. the hosts of wickedness, or, as given in the margin, wicked spirits. In high places] This expression must be translated, as in the four other verses where it occurs, in heavenly places; and it probably means, as there, the spiritual world. By some it is taken to bear the same meaning as "the air" in ii. 2, and "this darkness" in the verse above. St Jerome says, "Not that the evil spirits reside in heaven, but the air above our heads has received this appellation."

13. take unto you] This was the technical word of command for arming, which St Paul must have been in the constant habit of hearing in its Latin form at the time that he wrote.

in the evil day] In the day of peril.

having done all] This rendering is preferable to that of the margin, "having overcome all."
14. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness;

15. And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

16. Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

17. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

18. Praying always with all prayer.
and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints.

And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel,

For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

But that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, Tychicus, a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things:

Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.

Peace be to the brethren,


That ye also] The word "also" admits of four explanations. 1. St Paul may mean by the "ye also" each several church to which Tychicus came in his journey as he carried the circular letter—not only Ephesians and Laodiceans, but "ye also" as well as they. 2. The "also" may have slipped from his pen in tacit reference to what he had just written in the Epistle to the Colossians. In Col. iv. 7 he tells the Colossians that Tychicus should make known to them the state that he was in: if he wrote the Epistle to the Ephesians immediately afterwards, he might very naturally have told them and the other Asiatic christians that Tychicus should "also inform them as he would inform the Colossians.

3. St Paul may mean that as he had been anxious to know of their welfare, so they "also" must be informed of his. 4. He may refer to the Roman christians—"that ye, as well as those here, may know my affairs."

Tychicus, a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord] We first hear of Tychicus in Acts xx. 4 as accompanying St Paul as he returned from his third missionary journey, possibly in the character of a delegate of the Church of Ephesus (1 Cor. xvi. 3, 4) to carry alms to Jerusalem. He was with St Paul in his first imprisonment in Rome until sent by him with the Epistles to the Ephesians and Colossians (Col. iv. 7), and again he is with him when he wrote the Epistle to Titus (Tit. iii. 12) and during the early part of his second imprisonment (2 Tim. iv. 12). For about ten years therefore he appears to have "faithfully ministered in the Lord" to St Paul as "a beloved brother." The word "minister" is used generally not technically (cf. Acts xix. 22).

Whom I have sent] Probably, "Whom I send."

Encourage and strengthen your hearts."

Note the absence of
and love with faith, from God
the Father and the Lord Jesus
Christ.

24. Grace be with all them that
love our Lord Jesus Christ in sinceri
ty. Amen.

† Written from Rome unto the Ephesians by
Tychicus.

individual salutations. He speaks indefinitely,
in the third person, so as to include in his
general farewell those whom he had not
visited.

24. Grace] In all the earlier Epistles and
in the Epistle to the Philippians St Paul spe-
cifies whose grace it is that he invokes, viz.
that of our Lord Jesus Christ. In the later
Epistles the expression has become so familiar
that it can be used absolutely without fear of
misunderstanding. See Col. iv. 18; 1 Tim.
vi. 21; 2 Tim. iv. 22; Tit. iii. 15. Cf. also
Heb. xiii. 25.

in sincerity] Lit. “in incorruption.” Prob-
ably it means “with an eternal and unchang-
ing love”—a love that does not partake of the
frailty or capriciousness of human love, but
never fails in this life or in that which is to
come. This idea is expressed in the popular
hymn:

“And our love is love for ever,
For it is for Jesus’ sake.”

Cf. with this final prayer the warning con-
tained in 1 Cor. xvi. 22.

Amen] This word should be omitted, not
having the authority of the best MSS.
PHILIPPIANS.

INTRODUCTION.

§ I. Occasion; General Character.

This Epistle, alone among the extant Epistles of St. Paul to the Churches, appears to have arisen out of a personal occasion. The Philippians have sent a contribution towards his support in his imprisonment. Their messenger, after a delay caused first by his zealous ministrations to the Apostle, and afterwards by a dangerous illness, is about to return to them. The Apostle takes the opportunity of sending by his hand this letter of thanks for their gift.

It bears, accordingly, a peculiarly personal character. It is the letter of a friend to his friends, rather than the Epistle of the Apostle to his disciples. The circumstances which thus led to the writing of it, though the place they occupy in it is small and inconspicuous, make themselves felt throughout it:—negatively, in the absence of definite didactic object or methodical arrangement, of all tone of authority or formal teaching; positively, in the glow of personal feeling and tender warmth of expression which pervade the whole.

Everywhere, moreover, it is implied that the terms on which the writer stands with those he addresses, are of singular and reciprocal confidence and affection. We learn that, on their part, this recent gift is but the renewal after an interval, to their father in Christ, of their earlier cares for his welfare. We perceive that, on his part, the feelings elsewhere so sensitively averse to the semblance of dependence, vibrate with keen pleasure in response to the offering of his beloved Philippians. Written from a heart so moved, the Epistle naturally opens with words of thankful love,—with the acknowledgment of their helpful sympathy, and the assurance of his prayers for them. He proceeds to tell of his personal condition, and of the progress of the Gospel in the City whence he writes,—as to friends of whose concern in his welfare and his work he is fully assured. He debates the question whether of the two to prefer, life or death, as in presence of friends privileged to overhear the secret self-communings of his inmost spirit. Words of exhortation follow,—of admonition, of doctrine; but all uttered in loving solicitude, and out of his fulness of heart, with hardly anywhere a touch of blame as though aught were amiss in their life or faith. He pauses in the middle, to speak of his hope of revisiting them, of sending Timothy, of the return of Epaphroditus. The thought occurs of possible peril to their spiritual well-being from such evil influences as are ripe around him as he writes (see below, § III., B, iii.), and he digresses into a stern denunciation of false teachers and corrupting examples. It is not till he draws near the close, that their bounty, though apparently present to his mind in writing the opening verses, and distinctly referred to where he speaks of Epaphroditus, is directly mentioned and duly acknowledged with thanks.

We turn to the narrative of St. Paul's earlier relations with the Philippians, to trace the origin of the mutual attachment, binding him with them more
INTRODUCTION.

intimately than with any of his other children in Christ, of which this Epistle is the abiding record.

§ II. PHILIPPI AND ITS CHURCH.

His first visit to Philippi was a memorable one, as marking a starting point of capital importance in his apostolic course. In it he first entered on that work in Europe, which signalized his Second Missionary Journey (A.D. 50-51). Divine intimations, restraining or inviting, had shaped his course from central Asia Minor to Macedonia.1 Neapolis,2 by reason of its secure roadstead, was naturally the point where he first touched European soil; but Philippi, of which Neapolis may be called the port, was the place chosen to receive the first opening of his divine commission for Europe.

A. The city was well suited to be the scene of an action so momentous. It recalls the memory of the great king, Philip of Macedon, who, attracted by the commanding position of Crenidze (then a Thracian town), and the wealth of its gold mines, seized it (B.C. 358), made it a frontier city of his kingdom, and a base for the farseeing plans of conquest afterwards carried out by his greater son, and called it by his own name. Three centuries later, that position,—a pass in the great mountain barrier which guards Macedonia, and behind it Greece, on the north and east, dominating the highway between Asia and Europe,3 marked it out to be the field of the decisive battle (B.C. 42), in which Brutus and Cassius, moving westward for the final struggle, encountered the eastward advance of Antony and Octavius; and by their defeat and death left Rome prostrate at the feet of the Triumvirs.

Except, however, in its associations with the beginning of the Macedonian Empire, and with the fall of the Roman Republic, Philippi was not, when the Apostle first entered it, a great city. It was "first,"1 not in rank, but merely in topographical order, to one entering Macedonia from the east. But what it lacked of individual importance was more than compensated by its representative character. It stood on Grecian soil; the language, usages, and religion of its population were Greek;3 its origin and its rise belong to the history of Greece. Again, it was a Roman Colony,—raised to that rank by Augustus, to be at once an outpost of the Roman province and a monument of the victory that made him lord of the Roman world; planted with a Roman settlement, of the remnant of the Antonian party;3 strategically, a Roman garrison; in political constitution, a "miniature Rome." Though not itself a centre of commerce or of manufacture, it was a station on the Great Egnatian Way, and through it passed, eastward and westward, traders from all parts of the empire. Combining thus the two main constituents of European life, giving entrance to every element that Europe drew to itself from the wider life without, it was in all points a typical city of Europe,1 it

1 Acts xvi. 6-10.
2 ib. ii. 6,—and notes. Now Cavallo; not Eski Cavallo, as Cousinby thought. (Lewin, "St. Paul," l. xl.). "It was the invariable landingplace for travellers bound for the Via Egnatia." (ib.). As a port it still retains something of its old importance. "[Bulgaria], which under the treaty [of S.Stefano] extends to the Egean ... requires very material reduction. It is essential that Salonica and Canalia should be kept at a distance from the jurisdiction of any state likely to fall under the influence of Russia." (Marquis of Salisbury, ‘Blue Book,’ Turkey, No. 39 (1878), Correspondence relating to the Congress of Berlin, No. 3). It was the birthplace of Mehmet Ali, first hereditary Pasha of Egypt. (Tozer, 'The Highlands of Turkey,' III.)
3 το θε μεσον ... των λαφων Βιδος ή την Αλταν τε και Eφωτην καθαερ τουλα. (Appian, B.C., IV. 650.)

4 See first note on Acts xvi. 12.—‘‘Cette ville grecque repeuple de Romains, est comme le symbole de l'état social de l'Occident à cette époque ... La société paisible en Europe est représentée dans Philippi d'une manière plus à fait générale." (Riliet, Intro. to 'Philippians.')—"A Roman colony in Greece an epitome of the Gentile world." (Bp. W. risworth, Intro. to Philippians, IV.)—"That
INTRODUCTION.

offered itself as a fit station for the planting of the Standard,—first raised in the East, but destined to have in the West its greatest and abiding triumphs,—of Him Whose Kingdom was to rise in the ruins of the kingdoms of this world, itself to stand for ever.1

B. 1. The circumstances, however, which attended the event, were, in the commencement, of the simplest. On the first Sabbath2 of his sojourn the Apostle, with Timothy, Silas, and Luke, "sat down and spake unto the women,"—representing the Jewish community of the city,—whom they found congregated at a Proseucha (or place of prayer), outside the gates, by the river-side,—too few, it seems, to have a Synagogue. One of these, Lydia, Asian by birth, and no doubt a proselytess, with ready faith believed, was baptized with her family, and opened her house to the bearers of the glad tidings. A space, we are not told how long, of quiet progress ensued; brought to a sudden and violent close by circumstances of singular and supernatural import. By casting out the "spirit of Python" from the soothsaying damsel,3 who recognized in the apostolic band "the servants of the Most High God," St. Paul drew down on himself and Silas an angry outcry from her owners, enraged at the loss of their slave's gift on which they traded; followed by a burst of popular frenzy, and an illegal and cruel outrage on the part of the Duumvirs of the city, who scourged them and flung them into prison. The same night an earthquake opened the prison doors, and moved their jailor to seek of them the knowledge of salvation, and to receive baptism for himself and all his. Next day, at the request of the alarmed magistrates, they left the city.

The work was thus ended abruptly, yet not in failure. The Church of Philippi, firstborn of the Churches of Europe, has come into being. In the house of Lydia, where the Apostle took his leave of "the brethren,"4 that Church has found a local habitation. Distinct nationalities, widely different ranks and callings, are represented in the first recorded converts;—the purple-dealer from Asia,—the divining slave-girl, apparently a Greek,—the Roman jailor. The soldiers of the Cross have for the first time come into collision with the frenzy of Greek superstition, for the first time encountered the rigour of the persecuting Roman; but have lived to give thanks for victory. Christian hospitality,—the Christian household,—the equal rights of woman with man in Christian faith and work,—the reception of the slave into the Christian covenant,—all these characteristics, destined to be developed in the future Church of Christ, and to renew the social state of mankind, show themselves definitely in the brief yet full record of the beginnings of the Philippian Church given by St. Luke.2 As the city was a representative of European cities, so in the narrative of the foundation of its Church do we seem to discern by anticipation and in germ, the history of the fortunes, the influences, and the achievements, of the after ages of the Universal Church in the Empire which had its centre in Europe, but in its compass included the world.3

1 Several years elapsed before St. Paul returned to Philippi. But our Epistle testifies (iv. 15, 16) that before he was many months, or even weeks, gone from among them, they pursued

1 Acts xvi. 40. 
2 See these points brought out with much power by Bp. Lightfoot, Introd., III., 2, pp. 52—57.
3 "Thus the city vindicated its original name (Crenides = Fountains) in a higher sense, for the entire West." (Meyer, Introd. to Philipp., § 1.)

1 Acts xvi. 13 and sqq.; see notes there.
2 Acts xvi. 16.—She may have belonged to some local oracle of Apollo [Pythius], whose worship, prevalent in Macedonia from early times, was probably introduced from Pythium on Mt. Olympia. (See Müller, ' Dorians,' II., i., § 2, and App. L., § 33.)—Or perhaps (as some suppose) of Dionysus, whose oracle among the Sattrae, with its prophetess (Bessi), and chief prophetess, appears to have been situated on a hill (Αποτο δωμίνος) close to Philippi. (Cp. Herodot., VII., 111, 112, with Appian, as above.)
INTRODUCTION.

him, "once and again," with the tokens of their attachment, while he was yet "in Thessalonica" (the next city he visited),—and yet again "when he departed from Macedonia." And when we compare his assertion in the passage referred to,—that from no other Church did he in those early days of the Gospel accept sustenance save only from the Philippians,—with the fact stated in another Epistle, that "brethren coming from Macedonia supplied" his wants in Corinth during his first sojourn there, we are led to infer that by these brethren's hands his Philippian friends once more renewed to him, after he had passed from Macedonia to Achaia, the kindness that had followed him to Thessalonica. 1

3. When in the course of his Third Missionary Journey the Apostle travelled (57) through the cities of Macedonia, 2 we may be sure that he visited Philippi with the rest,—probably, as in his previous journey, before the rest. With the rest, Philippi was then passing through the "affliction," 3—persecution apparently,—which at that time lay heavy on the Macedonian Churches, as recorded in his Second Epistle to the Corinthians, written during this visit to Macedonia. 4 And with the rest no doubt,—nay, we may well conjecture, beyond the rest, the Philippians, in answer to his appeal on behalf of the poor brethren of Jerusalem, abounded with the same ready bounty as had prompted their gifts to himself.

4. Early in the next year (58), on his return from Achaia to Judea, he passed through Macedonia to Philippi. There, letting his other companions "go before," he spent the Paschal season 5 along with St. Luke—who now reappears as his companion for the first time since he (as it seems) remained behind at the close of the first visit to Philippi: 6 left there, it may be, in charge of the newly founded Macedonian Churches. Thus of these two Missionary Journeys in Europe, the latter ends where the former began—at Philippi.

5. From this point Philippi disappears from the narrative of the Acts, and we know its Church only by the glimpses of its interior disclosed in our Epistle. We see it as an organized community, with a regular Ministry (i. 1). We are informed that the care of its members for its founder, interrupted for a while by lack of means, had been renewed in the mission of Epaphroditus (ii. 25; iv. 10–18). We gather that they were suffering persecution for Christ's sake (i. 27–30). We learn that discord existed between two of their chief women (iv. 2, 3). In the earnest and repeated inculcation of the duty of unity (i. 27; ii. 2, &c.), we seem to have evidence that among them there was a tendency to division. Otherwise, there is no trace of moral fault to be rebuked; nor is there anywhere a hint of doctrinal error. There is nothing in them to mar the thankful joy with which their father in Christ dwells on the contemplation of their faith and love.

6. How or when he again revisited them, according to his purpose declared in this Epistle (i. 25–27; ii. 24), we are not directly informed. But that he fulfilled that purpose, we infer from the mention of his journey "into Macedonia," in the First Epistle to Timothy (i. 3).

C. The subsequent history of Philippi is wellnigh a blank. We know that the Philippians of a later day, early in the second century, extended to St. Ignatius when he passed through their city on his way to his martyrdom at Rome, the same sympathizing care as St. Paul had received from their fathers. 1 We gain some little insight into their condition from the Epistle addressed to them soon after by St. Polycarp of Smyrna. Except in the matter of one erring presbyter, all indicates that they were, as those to whom St. Paul writes, full of faith and the fruits of

1 Cp. Acts xvii. 1, 14, and xviii. 1–18, and 2 Cor. xi. 9, with Philipp. iv. 15, 16,—on which latter verses see below notes and reference to Paley, "H.P."
2 Acts xx. 1, 2.
3 Acts xvii. 1, 2.
4 See Introd. to 2 Cor., II.
5 Acts xx. 3–6.
6 Acts xx. 5 ("there," "and"); 6 ("we," "they"). See note there, and on xvi. 10 ("we"), 40 ("they").

"Martyr. S. Ign.," V.; Polyc. "Ad Philipp.," L, IX., XIII.
INTRODUCTION 583

faith. — In after ages the city long continued to be the seat of a Bishop, and even ranked as a Metropolis. But now it survives only in the title of the “Bishop of Drama and Philippi,” and in the ruins known as Felibah. Nothing of it is left but a fragment of its walls, an echo of its name. And when from these scanty notices, so obscure and brief, ending in the total disappearance of this Church from the pages of history, we turn back to St. Luke’s vivid narrative of its origin, with all its signal and miraculous circumstances, and to the Epistle which records the joyful promise of its early days, we are confirmed in the conclusion that the conspicuous place given to it in the annals of the rise and progress of the Kingdom of Christ, is due rather to the surpassing importance of that which Philippi typically embodied, as representing imperial Europe, than to what in itself it was,—or was to be.

§ III. Place and Time of Writing.

A. That our Epistle was written from Rome, is plain on its surface. The writer speaks of himself as one in “bonds”; tells how the knowledge of his case has pervaded “the Praetorium”; conveys the salutations of them “that of Caesar’s household” (i. 13; 16; iv. 22). The internal indications all agree with the received account,—that it was written in the course of the imprisonment recorded in the last chapter of the Acts, beginning in 61.

B. Assuming that St. Paul was released in 63, we have the date of the Epistle fixed within narrow limits.

Whether it was written in the earlier or in the later days of his captivity,—whether before or after the three other Epistles (Ephes., Coloss., and Philem.) which belong to the same period,—are questions which we have not materials for answering with certainty.

i. On the side of the later date the following considerations have weight:—

(1). To the Ephesians he writes of himself as being still free to preach the Gospel, as we see him in the closing verses of the Acts: while our Epistle, in which he speaks of the Gospel as preached by others, or by the silent witness of his bonds (i. 12–14), indicates an increase of the rigor of his prison. He even writes as one in face of an impending crisis, threatened with death, undergoing a “conflict” (i. 20–30; ii. 17, 23).

It has been conjectured that the death, in the second year of his imprisonment (62), of the upright Burrus, to whose custody as Praetorian Prefect he had been committed,—and the appointment to that office of the infamous Tigellinus, may have been the cause of this change for the worse in his condition.

(2). The prospect, however, of a favourable issue of this crisis,—that his appeal will soon be heard and will result in his release, seems more definitely present to his mind when he writes to the Philippians (i. 25; ii. 24), “I know I shall continue with you; “I trust I shall come shortly”—than when to Philemon, “I hope I shall be given to you.”

(3). When he wrote to the Colossians and to Philemon, Luke and Aristarchus, who had accompanied him to Rome, were still with him. Neither is named in our Epistle. The absence of their names does not, of course, of itself prove that they had left him before it was written. But as regards St. Luke at least, if he had been with St. Paul as he wrote, it is highly improbable that he would have omitted to send a greeting to a Church with which he had been so intimately associated (see above; § II. B, 1 Eph. vi. 19, 20; Acts xxviii. 30, 31.

2 “Captain of the Guard,” Acts xxviii. 16.


4 Philem. 22(LXXv);—not, as A.V., “I trust.”

5 Acts xxvii. 2; Col. iv. 10; Philem. 24.
1, 4): and it is impossible to suppose that the Apostle would have failed to except him when he complained that of his companions none was "like-minded" with Timothy, that "all sought their own, not the things of Jesus Christ" (ii. 20, 21).

These are comparative tokens of a later date: the following are positive.

(4). The progress made by the Gospel in Rome as shown in our Epistle, and the notoriety which he and his case had attained (i. 12-18), require us to allow a considerable time for his sojourn in the city before he wrote.

(5). A long time is likewise implied in what we read of Epaphroditus. Tidings of St. Paul's imprisonment have passed from Rome to Philippi: a sum of money has been collected by the Philippians: Epaphroditus has conveyed it from Philippi to Rome: he has sojourned there as the Apostle's companion and helper: he has had, and recovered from, a dangerous illness: the account of that illness has been carried to Philippi from Rome: and the expression of their concern has reached him at Rome from Philippi 1 (iv. 10, 14, 18; ii. 25-27).

On these and like grounds the Epistle has usually, and as it appears rightly, been reckoned as latest in order of the "Epistles of the [first Roman] Captivity," written probably early 2 in 63.—his "farewell Epistle to the Gentile Churches." 3

ii. The contrary opinion, however, has never been without supports, and has recently been maintained by Bp. Lightfoot. 4 He observes that our Epistle, "in style and tone, as well as in its prominent ideas, bears a much greater resemblance to the earlier letters than do the Epistles to the Colossians and Ephesians." He dwells especially on its close affinity to the Epistle to the Romans (which on this theory it immediately follows in order of time), evidenced by a copious 1-2 c: parallels and verbal coincidences.

1 See Paley, "H. P.," VII, i, v.
2 Some see a trace of spring in the expression "ye flourished again," iv. 10,—where see note.
3 The previous autumn ("autumnus, gravis, Libitinæ quæstus aceris,"—Hor., Sat., ii. vi. 19) may have caused the illness of Epaphroditus.

And he concludes that, while our Epistle is to be assigned to "as early a date as circumstances will allow," the other two, as "exhibiting an advanced stage in the development of the Church," are to be "placed as late as possible."

iii. That the affinity thus indicated exists,—that the thoughts, and (still more) the diction of our Epistle connect it rather with that to the Romans than with those to the Ephesians and Colossians,—is unquestionable. But this fact is hardly a secure basis for a chronological argument. The Epistle to the Romans was written early in 58, not less than three years before it;—the other two cannot be placed more than two years after it. The resemblance, therefore, borne by it to the former rather than to the latter can hardly be due to proximity of date. Besides, it is not to be assumed that the Apostle, in the later developments of his teaching, had finally parted from its earlier themes. Though we find that in addressing those Asian Churches, he adopted a manner and matter (due no doubt to their special circumstances) different from what we meet with in his previous Epistles, to Rome or Corinth, we have in that fact absolutely nothing to make it improbable that, in writing at the same or a later time to the Philippians, he would revert, on occasion, to the topics—or even, if circumstances suggested them, to the phrases, of those earlier writings. 1 The style and tone of a letter are not more likely to be determined by the period of the writer's life to which it belongs, than by his sense of the requirements of those whom he addresses, or by the circumstances which surround him as he writes. Bp. Lightfoot himself regards it as probable that the warning against Judaizing error, so abruptly introduced in the middle of our Epistle (iii. 12 and sqq.) was prompted by "some fresh attempt of the Judaizers in the Metropolis." 2 And it is observable that most of the verbal, and all the

1 At the same time it is to be observed that the great truths of the Resurrection and Exaltation of Christ are in our Epistle treated in a manner fully harmonizing with what we read in Eph. and Col.—Cp. ii. 6-11, and iii. 20, 21, with Eph. i. 10, 19-22, and Col. iii. 1-4.
2 Intro., I, p. 68; also note on iii. 2.
doctrinal, points of contact between it and the Epistle to the Romans, occur in the digression which begins with the warning in question, and occupies the third chapter. The state of things at Rome, of which the Apostle’s mind was full when he wrote the early part of our Epistle (i. 12–18—see § IV. A), is naturally reflected in the tenour of its doctrinal contents. And hence it comes to pass that the Epistle which, a few years before, he had addressed to the Roman Christians, containing in its fullest form the teaching which their condition required, reproduces itself, here and there, in the theology,—in the very language,—of an Epistle written from Rome, out of a heart to which the circumstances of the Roman Church are vivly present.

§ IV. CONTENTS.

A. Of the contents of the Epistle, so far as they are personal, a brief outline has been given above, in § I. Some parts of them have been stated in more detail,—such as disclose the circumstances of the Philippians, in § II., B, 5,—such as relate to the Apostle and his surroundings, in § III., B, i. It is to be observed that in no other Epistle does he speak so fully of the condition of the Church in the place where he writes, or of the persons who are about him (i. 12–18; ii. 20–30).

B. That its didactic contents occupy a secondary place, follows from the fact that its character is mainly personal,—the writer’s purpose being to thank benefactors rather than to exhort disciples.

1. The doctrinal element in it is limited in extent and incidental in the manner of its introduction. Thus it has been called, and in this respect justly, “the least dogmatic of the Apostle’s letters.” 1 But its assertions of doctrine, though brief and neither many nor direct, are in a true and highly important sense eminently dogmatic. In it the fundamental positions of the Gospel are not expounded as lessons, nor maintained by argument or evidence: they are simply declared as known truths, or implied as the received bases of the Christian faith and life.

The truths so assumed comprise the main articles of the Christian creed. In one famous passage (ii. 6–11), we have the Godhead of Christ and His Manhood,—His Pre-existence and His Incarnation,—His Passion and His Exaltation: elsewhere (iii. 10, 20, 21; iv. 5; i. 19; ii. 1), the quickening power of His Resurrection-Life, its ultimate triumph over Death, His Second Advent,—the Church as the City of God; the gift of the Spirit. The special teachings of the Epistles to the Romans and Galatians—the passing away of the Law, Justification by Faith—are distinctly and fully, if not prominently, affirmed (iii. 7–9).

2. In its hortatory aspect, the graces in which it most dwells are, unity among brethren (i. 27; ii. 2, &c.), and inward joy (ii. 18; iii. 1; iv. 4). Humility and unselfishness are commended,—forbearance, resignation, thankfulness, and prayer (i. 3, 4; iv. 5, 6). To this specially Christian realm, a single verse (iv. 8) annexes wellnigh the whole domain of truths contained in Gentile philosophy and religion. 1

3. One negative fact is worthy of notice. The Old Testament is nowhere expressly appealed to in our Epistle; and while references to it more or less distinct, appear in a few places (i. 19; ii. 10, 11; ib. 15; iv. 18), actual citations of it are absolutely wanting. 2

4. Viewed as a whole, the Epistle possesses a breadth and comprehensiveness of teaching, moral and doctrinal, which are peculiar to it. As has been well said, it “exhibits the normal type of the Apostle’s teaching” 3 This is


See below, notes on this verse.—To its ethical completeness, Macaulay has paid tribute in a singular form. After depicting the character of an all-evil man, he sums up thus,—“Whatsoever things are false, whatsoever things are dishonest, whatsoever things are unjust, whatsoever things are impure, whatsoever things are hateful, whatsoever things are of evil report, if there be any vice, and if there be any infamy, all these things were blended in Barre.” (’Edinb. Rev.,’ Apr. 1844.)

2 The same is true of the Epp. to two other mainly Gentile Churches,—the Colossian, and Thessalonian;—also of that to Philemon.

3 Bp. Lightfoot, as above.
INTRODUCTION.

due to the fact that, writing here not to rebuke special existing errors,—moral (as at Corinth) or doctrinal (as among the Galatians)—but to exhort and edify the faithful, he is not led to dwell mainly on any one aspect of the Gospel; but presents it in its fulness, and “according to the proportion of faith.”

C. How closely its contents correspond with what we gather from other documents, of the circumstances of the writer and of the receivers, will appear from consideration of the following points.

He speaks of the rights and duties of citizens (i. 27; iii. 20),—suitably, in addressing men who enjoyed the Roman citizenship. The whole conception of their position towards their “adversaries,” which he illustrates by that of men united in defence of a beleaguered fortress (i. 27, 28; iv. 1 and sqq.), seems suggested by the military character of a Roman Colony. They were in the main a Gentile community, with no considerable infusion of Jewish element; and accordingly the Epistle contains no express citation of the Jewish Scriptures, no reference to the actual presence among them of Judaising error:—but we find the language of ethnic thought, philosophic, moral, and religious, employed in it with unusual freedom.

That he reminds them of “the beginning [the early days] of the Gospel” (iv. 15), accords well with the fact that theirs was the first city of Europe in which he preached. That Timothy was with him when he came among them, is implied in the words (ii. 22), “Ye know the proof of him that . . . he served with me towards the Gospel.” Their knowledge as eyewitnesses of the suffering and peril in which that first visit ended, is directly appealed to in the mention of “the conflict which ye saw in me” (i. 30), and perhaps also in what he says of the women who “strove along with” him (iv. 2, 3). This reminiscence of the past borne by these women, and the importance attached to their position in the Church, reminds us how at Philippi women were the first hearers of the Word, and under a woman’s roof the Church found its first home. In her generous hospitality was opened, as it seems, that “account of giving and receiving” which, as our Epistle attests (iv. 15, 16), from first to last subsisted between the Apostle and this Church alone of all his Churches. Above (§ II., B, 2) it has been shewn how his acknowledgment of their gifts, sent to him while he was still at Thessalonica, and on his departure from Macedonia, corresponds both with the narrative in the Acts of the course of his first European journey, and with what we learn from the Second Epistle to the Corinthians of his means of subsistence in their city. It is to be added, that the “deep poverty” which in that Epistle he attributes to the Macedonian Christians, explains the “lack of means” by which, in writing to the Philippians (iv. 10), he accounts for the delay of their bounty. His acceptance of that bounty,—at first sight inconsistent with the self-relying spirit of him who reminded the Thessalonian and Ephesian Churches of the labours of his hands for his own livelihood—who repelled the thought of being “burden-some to the Corinthians,” is distinctly stated to be an exceptional mark, granted to no other Church, of his affectionate relations with the Philippians; and thus (the exception proving the rule) confirms by implication what he elsewhere declares of his habitual independence, and shews his apostolic dignity maintained in integrity no less full here in receiving

1 “Live as citizens;” “our city,” or “citizenship.”—(see notes).
2 See notes. The words συμμαθητής, συμπαντιστής, φρονιστή (i. 27; ii. 25; iv. 7) are military.
3 See notes on i. 18, 28; iii. 2.
4 Besides the ethical and sacred words of iv. 8, observe the following (all in N. T. rare, some unique),—εὐθυμία, μορφή and derivatives, εὐσκνητή, αὐτάρκης, ἐνκρατεῖα, σπέρμα, μακαρίς.

2 Ημερίδες, —see note on the word.—When St. Paul wrote to them, they were undergoing persecution (i. 27–30); and so in the passage of 2 Cor. above referred to (viii. 1, 2), written five or six years before, he speaks of the “trial of affliction” of the “churches of Macedonia.”
3 This is so alleged by Baur, “Paulus, Apost. Jesu Chr.”
4 i Thess. ii. 9; Acts xx. 34; 2 Cor. xi. 9; xii. 13, 14;—cp. 1 Cor. ix. 12–18.
INTRODUCTION.

than there in rejecting a benefit. Similarly, the spirit of joy that shines out everywhere throughout our Epistle (i. 4, &c.), though it may seem alien from the state of one in prison and peril, is truly characteristic of him who, as he lay in the Philippian dungeon, bleeding from the licitors’ rods, could “sing praises unto God,” 1 who elsewhere describes himself as “sorrowful yet alway rejoicing.” 2—it is the elastic reaction of a spirit rising in enthusiastic faith against pain and fear. Another marked feature of the Epistle is the strong mutual attachment implied throughout. It is expressed in endearing words,—he “has them in his heart,” he “longs after them in the bowels of Jesus Christ.” (i. 7, 8),—they are his “dearly beloved,” “longed for,” his “joy and crown.” (iv. 1); it utters itself in the confidential tone of the outpourings of his inmost desires and feelings, his most sacred aspirations,—a confidence possible only within the bonds of a tender and hallowed friendship (i. 18–24); it is proved by his readiness for their sakes to part with Epaphroditus, even with Timothy (ii. 19–23, 25–30); it inspires his eager yearning for tidings of them, his undoubting assurance that they pray for him, that they long for his return to them,—that they sympathize in his welfare and his mission, in his sorrows and his joy (ii. 18–20; i. 12–19; 25, 26).

All this is obviously in full harmony with the accompanying and antecedent circumstances. He received their gifts gladly, he poured out his soul to them freely, because he felt that they were at one with him in faith and holiness, because he knew and reciprocated their love. It was natural that he should love those who were to him the firstfruits of Europe,—who had shared his dangers, who were so prompt and so persevering in following the open-hearted example of Lydia,—who were after his own heart in unreproved soundness of doctrine and purity of life. Their remote frontier city, aloof from the great centres of imperial profusion and heathen philosophy—fit seed-plots of vice and heresy,—offered a happy soil for the growth of manly virtue and of simple faith. The Macedonian character, strong, upright and generous, here as at Thessalonica and elsewhere, 3 commended itself to the Apostle’s sympathies. 4 “Lo,” exclaims St. Chrysostom, “what a yearning he has after Macedonia?” 5 Of such material, strengthened by the healthy and congenial infusion of a Roman military element, free from the hostile influences of the Synagogue, renewed by the Gospel of Christ, was the Church formed that held the highest place in St. Paul’s affection. A circumstance, inferred from an incidental notice in the Acts, is worth pointing out as singularly and touchingly characteristic of an attachment so grounded. When at the end of his Third Journey, he sent the rest of his company on before, and tarried in Macedonia with St. Luke to keep the Passover, Philippi was the place of sojourn that he chose for that holy season (§ II., B, 4). We may safely conclude that there, in a Gentile city, he kept it not as a Jewish festival, but as the Christian Easter,—kept it along with the “beloved physician,” in the congenial atmosphere of the faith and love of his “beloved” Philippians.

Finally it is to be observed that, in a general way, a certain correspondence exists between the Epistle and the city which received it. As we have seen (§ II., A) how the circumstances of the city make it a typical city of the Empire, so has it been shown (§ IV., B, 4) that the contents of the Epistle are those of a typical Epistle to a Church representative of the Church Universal. The City embodies the general aspect of European life in its complex conditions: the Epistle, with equal generality, sets forth the teaching of the Gospel in its fullest comprehension, as applied to renew and sanctify that life. 6

D. In comparing our Epistle with the

1 Thess. i. 1–8; ii. 19, 20; iii. 6; iv. 9, 10;

2 Cor. vii. 1–5.


5 On Philipp. ii. 19,—Hom. IX. 1.

6 “Les Macédoniens furent le peuple de l’antiquité qui ressembla le plus aux Romains.” (Renan, as above, p. 137.)

7 See Bp. Wordsworth, Introd., IV.
INTRODUCTION.

others left to us by the same hand, we find in many of them points of contact and resemblance. Its doctrinal relations with the group of Epistles written about the years 57, 58, and especially its verbal coincidences with that to the Romans, have been already discussed (§ III., B, ii., iii.). In the same portion of our Epistle (iii. 2—iv. 1) to which these belong, we are reminded of that to the Galatians by the harsh terms he applies to his Jewish adversaries; the summary of his own privileges as a Jew has its parallel in the Second Epistle to the Corinthians; while the First exhibits the great prototype of the passage in which he rises from the protest against Antinomian abuses into the sublime thought of the Resurrection-Body, and returns from it to the practical duty of Christian steadfastness. In another point of view, the Second to the Corinthians, strongly as its outpouring of wounded feeling contrasts with the enduring language of love and confidence which mark this, is more closely than any of the rest akin to it, as being a revelation of the inner self of the writer. In its general outline, however,—its irregular structure, its informality, its warmth of tenderness,—the nearest likeness to our Epistle is to be found in the Epistle which of all is farthest from it in order of time,—the First of the two addressed to the sister Macedonian Church of Thessalonica, only second to that of Philippi in his love.—On the other hand its contemporaneous Epistles, those to the Ephesians and to the Colossians, resemble it not at all in general character, in inner detail only here and there. But in one of the subsequent Epistles (no doubt the last of them), the Second to Timothy, occurs a passage not merely parallel to certain sentences of this, but apparently written with express retrospective reference to them.—With Timothy at his side, in the days of his first imprisonment, he has written from Rome to the Philippians old—his desire "to depart," his "fight," his willingness to be "poured out" (i. 23; 2 Cor. 30; vi. 17);—of himself as one "pressing on" in a race, for a "prize" (iii. 14). To Timothy, after the lapse of years, he writes as his second and final imprisonment in Rome draws towards its close, reminding him (as it seems) of that early anticipation of the end now imminent, and reverts to the same words,—"I am now being poured out, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race... There is laid up for me the crown of righteousness."

E. As regards literary form, it is of all the Epistles of St. Paul, excepting only that to Philemon, the most epistolary in its style and substance. Though it does not vie with the dialectic force, or the sustained majesty of rhetoric, displayed in others of more formal construction, it has its own proper beauties, of the rarest order,—a touching eloquence of the full heart, a delicacy of feeling and of expression, nowhere surpassed. Nor when it rises to the highest of divine themes, does it fall short of giving them worthy utterance. Our Church in Advent can find no more heart-stirring voice to herald the approach of the Nativity, than its "Rejoice in the Lord alway."

1 ἀναλύομαι, ἐγνομαι, σπειραμομαι.
2 2 Tim. iv. 6-8 (σπειραμομαι, καλλονομαι, ἐγνομαι). Of these three words, the first occurs in N. T. only in these two places; the second only here, and its cognate verb (in this sense of departing) only above; the third is an infrequent and exclusively Pauline word.
3 Baar speaks of it as "dull and uninteresting," "without motif" (unmotivirt), "a feeble and lifeless copy" (Nachbildung),—of its "monotonous repetitions," and "poverty of thought" (Gedankenarmuth). (Paulus, Apost. J. C.).—So complete is the power of arrogant prejudice in an irreverent mind, to blunt the literary discernment of the critic!—A worthier estimate is that of Meyer. "A letter of the heart (des Gemütes), an outflow of the moment, from the inmost need of loving fellowship under outward abandonment and tribulation,—a model of the union of tender love and the impress, at times almost elegiac, of resignation in view of death, with high apostolic dignity, unbroken holy joy, hope, and victory over the world!" (Introd., § 2.)
INTRODUCTION.

With its sublime exposition of "the mind that was in Christ Jesus," of the infinite Self-sacrifice and the supreme Exaltation, she opens the week that commemorates His Passion.1 In proclaiming over her dead the "sure and certain hope," she draws from it the words that testify of the glorious "change" and the almighty "working." And from it come, in the power of their calm beauty, the accents of solemn blessing in which, at the close of her most sacred Ordinance, she invokes "the peace of God" on the "hearts and minds" of her faithful children.

§ V. Genuineness and Integrity.

A. Of the Genuineness of the Epistle, there is no room for doubt.

1. That St. Paul is the author, the internal evidence of its contents, diction, and general character, proves conclusively.

2. As regards its contents, it is to be observed that it enters more fully into personal particulars touching the writer and his readers, than any other of the Epistles that bear his name. Yet in these particulars there is to be traced (as shewn in detail above, § IV., C), a correspondence with the facts of the history, as we collect them from other sources, full and deep,—if not always obvious, all the more certainly, therefore, undesigned.3

2. As regards diction, the evidence yielded by it is abundant and valuable. It is full of words and expressions characteristically, many of them exclusively, Pauline—most of them serving to connect it with the "unquestioned"2 Epistles; all employed so naturally as to preclude all surmise that in them we have the workmanship of a forger, cunning in literary mosaic. That the relation thus established is not the artificially produced similarity of a counterfeit, appears again in the fact that it has, moreover,

1 See below, Suppl. Note, where the relation of the diction of this Ep. to that of the other Pauline documents, is shewn in detail.


3 Schwengler, "Nachapost. Zeitalt." (quoted by Wiesinger, Introd., § 4, 1) adopts Baur's view, pushing it so far as to regard Euodia and Syntyche (iv. 2) as the names not of persons but of parties, the Jewish-Christian and the Gentile-Christian, in the Church !— Holsten ("Jahrbuch f. prot. Theol.," 1875-6) has renewed the attack; to whom P. W. Schmidt has recently replied in his "Neuest. Hyperkritik."

4 Of it, and 1 and 2 Thess., he writes, "Ces trois épîtres ont un caractère d'authenticité qui l'emporte sur toute autre considération." ('St. Paul,' Introd., p. vi.)

5 He represents iii. 2-21 as a mere cento of

---

1 Read Paley 'H.P.', VII. Some of the coincidences developed by him are noted above; but the whole chapter deserves careful study.

2 Rom. 1 and 2 Cor., and Galat.
they are set down as marks of an alien hand.\(^1\) He finds a trace of post-Pauline times in its opening salutation to the hierarchy (i. 1). By arbitrarily identifying St. Clement of Rome, whom (no doubt rightly) he holds to be the Clement mentioned in it (iv. 3),\(^2\) with a later Clement, the Flavius Clemens who was, a generation later, the kins- man and the victim of Domitian,\(^3\) he strives to force a definite anachronism on the writer. And in its chief doctrinal passage (ii. 6–11), he bewilders himself in the vain attempt to dissolve that clear and definite presentation of the Person and Work of the God-Man, into the cloudy phantasms of Gnosticism,—the *Sophia* of Valentinus, Marcion's doctrine of the Descent into Hades, and the Docetism of the same school;—all of them indications, to his perverted eye, of the thoughts of the Second Century!\(^4\)

A criticism so fantastic is perhaps rather to be regarded as a display of misdirected ingenuity than a serious attack. The notoriety of its author has, however, drawn forth more than one thorough refutation.\(^4\)

The *external* testimonies to our Epistle are ample. Its language meets us repeatedly in the pages of the earliest Christian literature,—of Clement of Rome, of Ignatius, of the Epistle to Diognetus, and of Polycarp.\(^5\) The phrases from 1 and 2 Cor.; iii. 2–6, especially, as an echo of 2 Cor. xi. 18–22; iv. 10–15, as a mistake founded on 2 Cor. xi. 8, 9.

\(^1\) E.g. the expressions *δρακοντάς*, κόλπος, καταργήσω, διασώσω εἰς ἡμᾶς, ἀφύγως (ii. 6; iii. 2; iv. 6; iv. 3).

\(^2\) Baur misconstrues this passage to mean that Clement was at Rome, not at Philippi.

\(^3\) *Sueton., 'Domitian,'* 15.

\(^4\) *Wiesinger as above; Lüdemann, 'Pauli ad Philipp. Ep.;' Brückner, 'Ep. ad Philipp. Paulo auct. vind.'; also Neander, 'Planting and Tr.,' II., p. 148 n. (Ryland's Transl.). For other authorities on the same side, see Hilgenfeld, 'Einleitung,' pp. 333, 334.

\(^5\) See the passages collected by Bp. Lightfoot, *Introduct.* ("The Genuineness"), pp. 74, 75. To those from 1 Clem. R. add:—*πασάρεσθαι τῶν... ποιμ. in IXXXII.;—εἰς ποιμ. in XIX.;—ἐν τῆ... σκοτ. in LXIII.;—ἀπ. Philosoph. iii. 11, 14 (σκωτ. occurring nowhere else in N. T.; nor, in this sense of "noct."

\(^6\) *Pols., 'Ad Philipp.'*, XIII. 11, 12.

\(^7\) *Hist. Eccl.,* V. 2.

\(^8\) 'Adv. Marcion.,* V. 20.—See also *Epiphanius*, *Hæreres*, XII. 11, 12.

\(^9\) *Harnack, Paula.,* &c. (e.g. Olshausen and Wiesinger, *Introduct.* § 4, 2.2)

\(^10\) *Cp. i. 3 with i. 20; 8–11 with i. 21; 11–14 with i. 16; 19 with i. 28; 20 with i. 27; 21 with ii. 6–11: again, 20 with iv. 5.*

---

B. Its *Integrity* has been questioned by a few critics,\(^4\) who have mistaken the digression of the Third Chapter for an interpolated portion of another Epistle by the same hand. But a careful examination shows that chapter to be in close and strong (though not conspicuous) connection with the two preceding. Many of their topics recur in it; some of them—such as the Christian's gain, the Christian race,—in a developed form. The thoughts, the very words, of the great dogmatic passage of the Second chapter, reappear in a new aspect in the closing verses of the Third. Those verses, again, are linked with the beginning of the Fourth, by its opening "Therefore."\(^5\) Thus the Epistle is one,—not indeed in the unity of an artificial structure, but rather that of an organic and living growth. The threads,—frequently of suggestion rather than of
INTRODUCTION.

§ VI. ANALYSIS.

The following Analysis of the Epistle will serve to shew the order and inner connection of its parts.

I., Ch. i. 1–11. Introductory.—Greeting;—The Apostle's thankful joy, affection, and prayers, for the Philippians.

II., i. 12–26. Account of the progress of the Gospel in Rome;—of his position, feelings, and anticipations.

III., Exhortation:—
(a) i. 27—ii. 4.—To stedfastness, and to unity and the virtues tending thereto;
(b) ii. 5–11.—Christ the Exemplar of such virtues;
(c) ii. 12–16.—To the further following out of the Christian life;
(d) ii. 17, 18.—To joyful looking for its end.

IV., ii. 19–30. Personal matters:—His purpose of sending Timothy to them; his hope of revisiting them; the return to them of Epaphroditus.

V., iii. 1. Final injunctions begun, ([but broken off by])

Digression into warning:—against
(a) iii. 2–16,—Judaic error (enforced by the facts of his own past, and example of his present);
(b) iii. 17–21,—Antinomian error (enforced by same example, and by the hope of the heavenly future).

VI., Resumption of final injunctions:—
(a) iv. 1. Stedfastness;
(b) iv. 2, 3. Mediation in a case of discord;
(c) iv. 4–9. Parting exhortations summed up.

VII., iv. 10–19. Acknowledgment of their bounty, past and present.

VIII., iv. 20–23. Conclusion:—Salutations and Benediction.

SUPPLEMENTARY NOTE: On the Pauline Diction of this Epistle.

The following Lists exhibit the evidence furnished by the language of the Epistle, on its authorship, and relations with the other Pauline documents.

List I.—Words and expressions in Philippians which are, in N. T., exclusively Pauline.

(1) General List.—The following occur in the Pauline documents more or less generally:

Philipp. i. 1, εὐσεβῶς [official].—ib., δικαιος [official].—L 3, ματις. —L 3, μάρτυς, μεθά. —L 10, ἀναπάντωσον.—L 15, εἰμί. —L 16, 18, καταγγελλών [with a person as object].—i. 24, ii. 25, ἀναγκαῖον [= necessary].—L 26, ii. 16, κατάχρηση.—L 30, ἀγρόν.—ii. 1, ἀθετοῦμαι.—ii. 10, εἰσερχομένος.—ii. 12, φίλος καὶ φίλος.—ii. 16 (bis), εἰς κενόν.—ii. 23, λογοτροπία.—ii. 30, ἀνρητικὸν [= to fill up].—iii. 4, κοινωνία.—iii. 20, || ἡμεῖς, ἡμεῖς [?].—iii. 21, ἐνορμία.—iv. 3, γράφων.—iv. 9, δὲ ὁ Θεὸς τῆς εἰρήνης.—iv. 19, σομῆ [metath.].—ib., εὐδοκία.—ib., εὐδοκιμεῖν. —(To these add) iv. 13, αὐθαίρετος (cf. αὐθαίρετος, 2 Cor. ix. 5; 1 Tim. vi. 6).

(2) Particular Lists.—The following occur else only in some one group of them; viz.

In (a) Rom. and 2 Corinthians, Galat.:—
Philipp. i. 6, ἀνεξηκαστα.—ib., ἐντελεῖν [opp. to ἐνδρ.].—L 7, συγκοινωνία [with gen. of thing].—L 10, τὰ διαφωτίζοντα.—L 15, εὐδοκία [lunat].

—i. 20, ἀνεκκακέων.—i. 22, γινὺν εἰς αἰεὶ.—i. 23, ἔκκαμψις.—i. 2, ἢ καὶ κατὰ προσεκρ. —ii. 4, || iii. 17, σκοτεῖν [trans].—ii. 7, καὶ φῦν.—ii. 8, σκότωσι.—ii. 11, τὰ ἐντούτοις ἡταίρ. —ii. 12, δοκιμικός.—iii. 10, ἀκοῦς [== μετεξεργαστεῖ].—iii. 20, λειτουργία [of service to man].—iii. 11, δικαιοσύνη εἰς τὸν ἀνθ. —ib., Θεοῦ. —ib., ἀπόστολοι. —iii. 16, φθάνειν εἰς.—iii. 19, κοιλᾶν [= greed].—iii. 21, μετασχηματίζων.—εἰς, σύμμορφος.—iv. 7, νόμομα.—iv. 15, κοινωνία [of giving].—(Add) ii. 1, παραμόρφωσις, (παραμόρφωσις, 1 Cor. xiv. 3) —ü. 3, κοινωνία (κοινωνία, Gal. v. 23).—iii. 6, δικαιοσύνη εἰς τὸν ἀνθ. (ἐν τῷ δικαιοσύνη, Gal. iii. 11; v. 4).—iv. 5, εἴδομα (εἴδομα, 2 Cor. vi. 8).

In (b) Eph., Coloss., Philem.
Philipp. i. 11, παρουσίαζαι [with acc.].—i. 13, τὰ κατ' ἐμ. —i. 19, ἐν χρηστ. —i. 25, συναρπασμ. —iv. 18, σκλαβὸς [law.].—(Add) iv. 7, εἰρήνη τοῦ Θεοῦ (εἰρ. τοῦ Χριστοῦ, Col. iii. 15).

In (c) and 2 Timoth., Titus:
Philipp. i. 12, 25, προκειμ. —i. 21, iii. 7, καθέναν.—ii. 17, στέφθηκαν.—iv. 8, σημάτως. —(Add) i. 23, ἀναλώσις [= to depart;—else only Luc. xii. 36, = to return], (ἀπόλοσις, 2 Tim. iv. 6).

In (d) Hebrews:
Philipp. i. 7, βεβαιωθήσομαι.—(Add) i. 9, ἀδοκίμασιν, (ἀδοκίμασιν, Hebr. v. 14).—ii. 27, παρακληθοῦν (παρακληθοῦν, Hebr. ii. 14).
INTRODUCTION.

In (c) Pauline Speeches in Acts:

Philep. i. 10, ἀκομαίαν [passive].—i. 25, ὅθεν [of strong belief].—i. 27, ποιμένευσαι.—
ii. 29, τῇ τιμῇ [= to esteem].—iii. 7, ὡς.—

List II.—Specially, though not exclusively, Paulines.

(1) General List:

Philep. i. 7, 17, ἀκολούθια.—i. 8, ii. 26, ἀποκαθιστάν.—i. 8, ii. 1, συνάρτια.—i. 9, ἐνεργειας (2 Pet., quater).—i. 14, παραστάσεις (Mark xv. 14).—i. 27, ἔλεος (3 John 6).—i. 27, iv. 1, στήνει (Mark xi. 25).—i. 28, ἀντιστρατιωτικος (Luk., bks.).—ii. 1, παραδοξία.—ii. 3, τακτοφόροι (1 Pet. v. 5).—ii. 13, καταργούσαι.—ii. 13, ἀπεργεία.—
iii. 6, ἀμετρητὸς (Luk. i. 6).—
iv. 25, 3, συνεργαζόμενος (3 John 8).—ii. 28, σπουδαίος [*] (Luk. vii. 40).—iii. 30, ὑπομηνύμα (Luk. xxii. 44).—iii. 5, λατρευον [absolutely] (Luk. ii. 37).—iv. 5, καταργεία (James, bks.).—iii. 5, ὅψ. 
(Rev. vii. 8).—iii. 10, πόλεμος (1 Pet., quater).—
iv. 14, ἐλλειπον (2 Pet. i. 10).—
iv. 17, κῦρος [of a person] (1 Pet. v. 3).—iv. 9, παραλαμβάνω [= traditum accipere] (Mark vii. 4).—
iv. 18, ἐνυπανων (Acts ix. 22).—iv. 17, 
πλεονεύω (2 Pet. i. 8).

(2) Particular List.

(Add) Rom. i, 2 Cor. Gal.):

Philep. i. 16, ii. 3, ἔφηβος (James, bks.).—
ii. 7, διωμεία (Rev. ix. 7).—iii. 16, στρατηγοὶ (Acts xxii. 4).—iv. 7, φρουρεῖ (1 Pet. i. 5).—(Add)
ii. 10, ἐλευθερία (2 Pet. iii. i, =ἐλευθερία, i. 2, 2 Cor., ter.).

List III.—Familiar to this Epistle.

(1) Not elsewhere in N. T.:

Philep. i. 8, ἀλλόθρων (but see i. (2), a).—
ii. 16, ἀγωνιζομαι [of Pauline, but not exclusively].—i. 23, ἀναλήψις (see i. (2), c).—i. 27, iv. 8, συναφείς.—i. 28, πυρπόλωσι.—ii. 1, παρακλήσιν (see i. (2), a).—ii. 3, συναφεις—ib. το ἐφερον.—ii. 5, κατεδαφίζει (see i. (2), a).—
ii. 6, μορφ [in philosophic sense;—cp. Mark xvi. 12].—i. 19, ἀρχαγγελος.—ib. το [adv.: = is (= elsewhere in N. T., but not in Pauli).—ii. 9, ἀνεπαφήμοι.—ii. 10, κατασχέσαι.—ii. 13, ἀνοιχτα.
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE

PHILIPPIANS.

CHAPTER I.

3 He testifieth his thankfulness to God, and his love toward them, for the fruits of their faith, and fellowship in his sufferings, 9 daily praying for him for their increase in grace: 12 he sheweth what good the faith of Christ had received by his troubles at Rome, 21 and how ready he is to glorify Christ either by his life or death, 27 exhorting them to unity, 28 and to fortitude in persecution.

PAUL and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at

and Timotheus] Timothy was with him when he wrote—was about to be sent shortly by him to the Philippians (below, ii. 19)—had previously been well known to them as being one of his company when he first visited their city (Acts xvi. 1-12 sqq.; see below, ii. 22), and apparently in two subsequent visits (Acts xix. 22 and xx. 1; ib. 3-6). Thus he is naturally joined in this salutation to them. But it is not to be hence inferred that he was joint author of the Ep., which is written (v. 3, and sqq.) in the first person singular, and speaks of Timothy (ii. 19-23) in the third person: nor even that he was the scribe (see note on 2 Cor. i. 1). The name of Timothy appears in like manner at the head of two other Ep. written about the same time as this, those to the Colossians and Philemon; also of three earlier Ep., 2 Cor., and (with “Silvanus” preceding it) 1 and 2 Thess.—Cp. also 1 Cor. i. 1; Gal. i. 2. In 2 Cor., Coloss., and 1 and 2 Thess, he proceeds in the plural number; in 1 Cor., Gal., and Philem., as here, in the singular.

the servants of Jesus Christ] Better, “slaves of Christ Jesus” (see Rom. i. 7, and note; and omit “the”). He is their “Lord.” They are His property (Rom. vii. 22, 23). But such servitude is true freedom (Rom. vi. 18-22; 2 Cor. iii. 17).—J. to all the saints] It seems that no special emphasis here rests on “all” (cp. Rom. i. 7; 2 Cor. i. 1): but see note on v. 4.

The term “saints” (ἅγιοι), used as here absolutely, as a common designation of all Christians, appears in the opening salutations of all St. Paul’s Epp. to Churches, except those to the Thessalonians (the earliest written), and to the Galatians (the most severe in tone of them all). In most of his Epp. it is frequent in this sense. In Hebr. it is so used twice (v. 10; xiii. 24); in Jude once (3); frequently in Revelation; in Acts rarely (only in ix. 13, 32, 41,—and in xxvi. 10, where St. Paul is the speaker); in the Gospels nowhere (as applied to followers of Christ); nor in the Epp. of St. James, St. Peter, or St. John. It was drawn from the language of the O. T., the corresponding term (הפר, ἁγιοι, LXX.) being used of the people of Israel (e.g., Ps. xxxiii.; xxxiv. 9). In the N. T. it denotes not so much internal holiness (though that is the direct effect of Christianity) as the new relation in which Christians stand to God through Christ. So, 1 Cor. vii. 14, the “children” of Christians are said to be “holy.”—J.

The connection of “in Christ Jesus” is as in A. V., with “saints.” They are “saints”
PHILIPPIANS. I.

3 I thank my God upon every remembrance of you,
4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy,
5. For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now;
6. Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a
good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:

_or, you have me in your heart._

(making request with joy) Lit., “making the prayer.” The words are parenthetical, describing the nature of the “prayer” just spoken of. “In every prayer of mine (and with joy I make such prayer)” Thus the force of the article is brought out; and the awkward and unlikely construction is avoided, “in every prayer of mine making the prayer” (aor. + προς αὐτόν), which A. V. disguises by substituting “request” for the second “prayer.”

swięt hāθa bethi begun a good work . . . . will perform] Translate, “He Whose began (aor.) . . . . will finish” (as marg.) or “complete” —sail, by their salvation. The verbs (ἐναρπάζω, and ἑπιταλείπω) being both sacrificial (Bp. Lightfoot, in loc.), suggest the metaphor which appears distinctly below ii. 17. The “good work” is God’s work of making them “saints” (v. 1)—consecrating them to His service. Yet it is, in its progress, their work also (cp. ii. 12, 13): the service of “fellowship” in doing and suffering (next v.). But its first and last are His alone Who is the Beginning and the End.

until the day of Jesus Christ] As he looked back thankfully to the “first day” (v. 5) of the origin of their faith, so does he look forward confidently to “the day” of its consummation—the Last Day. On his expectation of the Second Coming, see Introd. to i Thess., ii. B. 2. Cp. iii. 21; iv. 5, below.

7. as it is meet] Lit., “right.” This confidence is accorded as their just due; not in mere general charity, but in the love that springs from his experience of them.

because I have you in my heart] “The depth of his love warrants the fullness of his confidence.” (Bp. Kilroot, in loc.) The other rendering “because you have me in your heart,” agrees ill with the position of the pronouns in the Greek, and obscures the course of thought, indicated above. The following v. (“For . . . . I long after you all”) is conclusive on this point.

both in my bonds, and in the defence . . . .] These words are rightly connected in A. V. with the following, “are partakers;” not, as by some, with the preceding “I have you in my heart.” They describe the extent and nature of the “fellowship” of v. 5; as being one not of feeling merely, but actually realized by them: actively, by promoting the Gospel and aiding its promoters, and passively, in suffering, as he does, for Christ (vv. 29, 30).
8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment; the feelings and emotions of the Human Nature of the Lord Himself (see Note at end of ch.), the love with which He loves His brethren, appropriated as his own by the Apostle, in intense realization of that incorporation with Him, which elsewhere he expresses in the words, "I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me" (Gal. ii. 20). Accordingly, this holy yearning is not merely (as iii. 24) for a meeting in the flesh, but for the final and inseparable reunion in Christ.

9-11. WHAT HE PRAYS FOR THEM.

9. And this I pray, that . . .] Hitherto (vv. 3-8) he has spoken of his thanksgiving on their behalf, its occasion, object, and grounds: here, with the copula. "and," he resumes the mention of prayer (from v. 4, above), and tells them what it is that he asks for them in the habitual intercession there implied. He has given thanks for their "fellowship;" he now prays that the "love" which inspires it may be (1) increased, (2) regulated. (For "that," see Note at end of ch.)

It is in keeping with the tone of approval which marks this Ep. that, instead of chiding them for shortcomings, he thus tenderly reminds them to seek spiritual progress.

Your love may abound yet more and more] Not merely their love for him, nor love for any limited object, but the spirit of Love in its widest Christian sense. Their "fellowship" (v. 5) implies that such "love" is in them: his prayer is, that they may have more of it. Chrys. (though unduly limiting the word to their personal love) says well on this, "The measure of love is, nowhere to stand still." Similarly Bengel, "The fire that saith not, It is enough [Prov. xxx. 16] is in the Apostle." Cp. Bacon's saying, "Sola charitas non admissit excessum" ('De Augm. Sc.,' VII. 3).

in knowledge and in all judgment] But mere increase of love will not do, for Love may mislead or mistake; it must be an increase within the sphere where love's workings are ruled by "full knowledge" (εγνωσία), and "every [other form of] perception" (απόφθεγμα,—marg., "sense"). Such "knowledge" and "perception" belong to, and regulate, the instinct of Love.

The Christian acquires by grace a spiritual "sense," similar to the "moral sense" of ethical philosophy (Hutcheson), and, like it, so called as being analogous in its nature to bodily sense. Here "sense" is the genus.
10 That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence till the day of Christ;
11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which

[spiritual perception in general]. “knowledge is the species,—and the noblest, as sight among the bodily senses” (Bengel). See Note at end of ch.

10. That ye may approve things that are excellent. The verb means, (1) to test or prove (as marg., “try”), (2) to approve. Here it has the latter sense; as Rom. ii. 18, where see note. Their “knowledge and perception” are to be so directed as to “approve” what is truly “excellent” and worthy to be loved; and thus to guide their “love” aright. This coheres better with the preceding ὑστερος than the other rendering,—“distinguish things that differ,” for ripeness of knowledge and subtlety of perception have their proper exercise less in recognizing the broad distinctions of good and evil, than in discriminating the finer shades of good and better;—so as to choose “non modo prae malis bona, sed in bonis optima” (Bengel).

that ye may be . . . This is usually understood to declare the ultimate purpose of the “knowledge and perception” prayed for, their immediate aim being declared in the words “that ye may approve.” “God grant you such judgment that you may prefer the best; to the end that (ἰσος) ye may be pure,” &c. But it seems better to regard this as a second and independent head of prayer, understanding “that,” as in last v. (where see Add. Note), as merely introductory of the verb which expresses the object prayed for. Thus he prays (1) that (ἰσος) their love may be increased and ordered aright (v. 9), (2) that (ἰσος) their life may be blameless and fruitful (v. 10, 11). (The intervening “that” of A.V., stands for εἰς with infinit., not for ἵνα with conj.)

sincere] Pure (ἀικενωσις) as the corn purged by the winnowing fan (as we derive the word ἁυάν τοι ἀλευαν)—or as the gem proved by the sunbeam (if from ἀληθινος). Bp. Lightfoot however regards the word as originally a “strategic term,” applied to the ordering of troops (from ἀληθινος or ἀληθις, a squadron), “distinct,” thence “unsullied.”

without offence] That is, “without stumbling” (ἀναπαύεσθαι). The word is capable of the transitive sense, “not causing any to stumble,” as 1 Cor. x. 32. But the intransitive sense “not caused to stumble,” “without falling,” as Acts xxiv. 16 (spoken by St. Paul), agrees best with the context here, to which their conduct to others is not pertinent.

 Cp. 1 Clem. R., XX., where the derived adverb is used. “The winds perform their courses without bindrance” (ἀναπαυεσθαι,—intrans.). (Beausobre, in loc.—J.) See also ib. LXI.

Thus his prayer is that they may be pure (inwardly); and blameless (outwardly). till the day] Rather “against the day.” The prep. (ἐν) distinctly brings out the idea of preparation for the judgment, faintly above indicated by “until” (ἀγκαθις), of v. 6.

11. filled with the fruits of righteousness . . . Not “fruits” but “fruit” (so all best MSS.). As of their “love” (v. 9), so here he assumes the existence of their “righteousness,” and prays for its increase, in the shape of “fruit.” Its origin is in the “good work begun in them” (v. 3); its progress in fruitfulness is to be “that which is through Jesus Christ.” It works to an end transcending all, “unto the glory and praise of God.” Thus it is, in the fullest sense, from first to last and throughout, the “Righteousness of God” of the Ep. to the Romans (i. 17)—“begun, continued, and [to be] ended,” in Him. And thus the doctrine of that Ep. touching the source and nature of righteousness, is here distinctly implied; its express statement following below (iii. 9).

glory and praise of God] “Glory” in the shewing forth of God’s work;—“praise,” in the ascription of that work to Him.

12–14. REASSURING ACCOUNT OF HIS IMPRISONMENT AND ITS RESULTS.

12. But I would . . . From his thankful and prayerful joy in them, he now passes, “but” (ἀλλ’) marking the transition, to the task of dispelling the sorrowful apprehensions which he has heard, or assumes, that they feel concerning him. He writes as one well assured of their care for his welfare.

the things which happened unto me] Lit., “the things concerning me” (τα καθαρείας μου). He will not call them his sufferings, or dangers, but uses this general phrase. It is found also Eph. vi. 21; Col. iv. 7.—A.V., “my affairs,” “my state.”

rather unto the furtherance] That is, “so as to further rather [than, as might be feared, to hinder].” He advis. replies to their fears without directly mentioning them.

This “furtherance” is twofold: as follows:
happened unto me have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel;

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places;

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will:

16 The one preach Christ of concealment; the other, of boldness.

13. First result (introduced by “so that”) of his bonds; the effect on the minds of those who came in contact with him, and through them on others.

“my bonds in Christ are manifest” Rather, “are become manifest [as being] in Christ”; undergone in His cause, not for any misdeed. His discourses, and conduct, would leave on his guards and visitors the impression that his imprisonment was for no crime, but for his devotion to Christ (Cp. Eph. iii. 1; iv. 1; Col iv. 3; Phil. 1, 9).—J.

in all the palace Lit. “in the whole Praetorium” (Παρατρόπιο). That is, “The cause of my bonds, and thereby the Name of Christ, have become known even in the Imperial Residence.”—Of his visitors (Acts xxviii. 30), some would have acquaintances among the numerous members of the Emperor’s Household, some might themselves belong to it. The Praetorian soldiers, likewise, who in turn “kept him” (ib. 16), would in regular course be ordered to the Palatium, there to guard the Emperor’s person. Thus, carried by those who came into contact with him in his prison, his case and his message would be heard of in the “Palace.” “Praetorium” accordingly is here rightly taken by A.V. as meaning Palatium,—following Chrys., &c., (ῥὰ Boriches), and supported by iv. 22, “Caesar’s household.” The context excludes the marginal rendering, “Cesar’s Court” (i.e., judgment ball); for what he here tells of is not the result of any public hearing of his appeal, but an indirect effect of his bonds,—namely, that the Gospel has penetrated into the Imperial Household.

Most moderns, however, following Perizonius (“De Praetorio”), explain, “My imprisonment for Christ’s sake has become known throughout the Imperial Body-guard.”—Of these, some take the “Praetorium” to be (1) the great fortified Camp of the “Praetorian Cohorts,” outside the walls (Tacit., ‘Annal.,’ iv. 2, where see Orelli’s note). Others (2) the Barrack attached to the Palatium as quarters for the companies of the Guard actually on duty there. Others, (3) the “Praetorian Cohorts” themselves. (See Note at end of ch.)

and in all other places] More probably (as marg.) “to all others,” or “all the rest”; not only to those about the Emperor (whether his household or his body-guard), but generally among the inhabitants of the city.

14. Second result of his bonds; brethren encouraged to preach boldly.

many of the brethren in the Lord . . .] Correctly, “most of the brethren,” “the greater part,”—leaving room for the exceptions to be introduced in next v. The words “in the Lord,” naturally though they attach themselves to “the brethren,” are better joined with the following (see next note). There is no true parallel in N. T. for the expression “brethren in the Lord,” which would in fact be tautological; “the brethren” (without “in the Lord”) sufficiently denoting Christians.

in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds” Rather, “having in the Lord confidence in my bonds” (ἐν Κυρίῳ πεπιστεφθάνας). His imprisonment, borne as he bears it and used as he uses it, serves but to confirm their faith. Accordingly his “bonds” are to them the object of a confidence, not human, but resting “in the Lord,”—for these bonds are “in Christ” (last v.). Who is with His imprisoned Apostle. And it manifests itself in increasing courage “to speak the word.” (Read, with best MSS., “the word of God.”)—For the connection here preferred, cp. ii. 24, “I trust in the Lord” (πιστεύω εἰς Κ.).

15—18. SUCH RESULTS, HOWEVER ATTAINED, ARE TO HIM JOY.

15. Some indeed preach . . .] Yet not all who preach are actuated by such spirit.

There are some who preach from inferior, nay, from evil motives; “even because of (διὰ with accus.) envy and strife.” These of course are not included in the faithful preachers of last v., but are the exceptions there tacitly pointed to.

Those who “are confident in his bonds” are now reintroduced as the “some also” who preach “because of goodwill;” the two classes being thus sharply contrasted. The conj. (εἰς) in the former instance (“even”), belongs to “because of envy”;—in the latter (“also”), to the second “some.”

good will] That is, towards the writer himself (as the personal nature of the passage
tention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

18 What then? notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

shews); not towards the Gospel, or the salvation of men (as some explain). The word is elsewhere mostly used of the Divine "good pleasure" (as ii. 13); but of human "good will," Rom. x. 1 (possibly also Luke ii. 14), which latter sense the context here requires.

16, 17. These verses must be transposed (the μην and δὲ changing places); the weight of authority being against the arrangement of A. V. (likewise of Rec.,—for convenience retained in the following notes);—which is evidently a correction, made to avoid the inversion (by ciasmus) of the order of the members of last v. ("some of envy ... some of goodwill"). See Note at end of ch.

16. preach] The verb here used (καταγγέλλω—καίνω) differs from that in the preceding v. (κηρύσσω) only as to announce (as a messenger) differs from to proclaim (as a herald). So Vulg. well renders them here "predicant," here "annuntiant." Of the two verbs, that is used of all preachers, even the Lord Himself: tibi (peculiar to Acts and Pauline Epp.) only of those sent by Him.

of contention] Translate, "of factiousness" (ἐπιθυμίας), as Rom. ii. 8, where see note. The rendering of A.V. (Vulg., "contentions"), apparently suggested by a mistaken etymology (as if from εἰμι, strifes), can only be retained as an imperfect approximation to the true meaning. Old Lat. gives "dissensione;" Tertullian better, "emulatione" (Adv. Marcion., V. 20).

We are not however to think of the Church in Rome as divided, in these early days, into organized parties. The evil here pointed at, is that of a spirit of personal enmity, shewing itself in factious antagonism to St. Paul's teaching and influence.

not sincerely] "Not with pure motives" (θυρότος), but with a leave of ill feeling.

supposing] "Imagining (but erroneously) that they can hurt me,"—opposed to "knowing" in v. 17.

to add affliction] Read "to stir up" (συγκαταγγέλλω, Vulg., &c.), as the weight of authority requires.—(A. V. represents ευθείαις,—so Rec.) These persons, he says, preaching not for the Gospel's sake but in a spirit of envious opposition to him, endeavour to take advantage of his confinement in advancing their rival claims as teachers of the Gospel (see below on v. 18), and thus to make him feel his bonds more grievous in the sense of his forced inaction contrasted with their hostile activity.

The meaning cannot be (as many suppose) that they sought by their preaching to draw down the displeasure of the authorities on him as the leader of the sect, and thus increase the rigour of his imprisonment. This they could not do without danger, in the first instance, to themselves (Neander).

17. of love, knowing that I am set ...] As those, in their "factiousness" would emmiber his bonds by their rival teaching; so these, in their "love" for him, seek by working for and with him to relieve the heaviness of his prison; because they honour his chains as the insignia of the champion "set for the defence of the Gospel." This is the true force of the verb;—the idea of ιησοῦν in suffering, or ιησοῦν inactive, attached to it by some, is alien from the spirit of the Ep. In 1 Thess. iii. 3 (not written in prison) it is similarly used ("we are appointed," A.V.).

18. The motive of their preaching is to give him pain: its result is overruled to the spread of the Gospel, and therefore he "rejoices." In pretence] This word raises the questions: How can the Apostle "rejoice" in such men's preaching? What was their teaching, and who were they? We are not told what their doctrine was; nor does St. Paul imply that it was erroneous: their motives only are censured. Had it been essentially unsound, we cannot suppose that he would have "rejoiced." Thus "the passage holds out no sanction for heretical preaching, as it is often made to do" (Blunt, 'On the Early Fathers,' p. 290).—J. (See Note at end of ch.)

That they were of the Judaizing faction, with its "other Gospel," seems hardly possible. His reprobation of such teachers is nowhere more energetically expressed than in this Ep.,—see iii. 2. It is not sufficient to explain (as some do) that here he rejoices because the Gospel facts are being proclaimed to the heathens, while there he denounces those that would pervert Christians. For this v., if taken as applying to Judaizers, is not merely inconsistent with that, but would utterly break the force of the latter as a warning to the Philippians.

We are to understand, accordingly, that he rejoices because (as Theodt. says), "even unwillingly the enemies of the truth work
For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

According to my earnest expectation and hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.

For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.
22. But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what shall I choose I wot not.

23. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: 24. Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.

and for ever. While therefore he is willing to live, he desires to die. See note on iii. 11.

Besa’s ingenious rendering “To me, both in life and in death, Christ is gain,” adopted in some modern Versions, is untenable.

Pagan philosophers, too, could describe death as “gain,” but on utterly different grounds from St. Paul’s. With them, death was gain, as the close of troubles—not as the opening of joy. Cp. Aelian, ’V. Hist., IV. 7; Sophocles, ’Antig., 463, 464.—J.

Socrates, however (Plato, ’Apolog., XXXI.), comes nearer to the Christian hope, when in arguing to prove that “death is gain” (ἐωθαλος, as here), he puts forward, not only the negative alternative—that it may be a sleep, but the positive one—that it may open a world of happy communing with the departed great.

22. But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what shall I choose I wot not.

23. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.

for” (genit. of opposition), beautiful as it is, seems improbable.

what I shall choose I wot not Better, “I declare not” (γεννηκος), “I make not known.” The intransit. use of this verb (for “I know”), though classical, and found sometimes in LXX. (Job xxxiv. 25; Prov. iii. 6), is unknown to St. Paul (cp. iv. 6), and to N. T. universally.—J.

This meaning better suits the dependent verb “shall choose,” in fut. indic; for which, after “I know,” we should expect conj.

23. For I am in a strait betwixt two Translate (reading δε with best authorities for γενηκος) “Which I shall choose, I say not; but rather I am straitened (urged by considerations pressing on me) from both sides” (lit., “from the two”); scil., the above alternatives, life and death.

Cp. 2 Cor. v. 8; and see Paley, ’H. P.’ VII., vii.

having a desire to . . . ]; Lit., “the desire,” i.e., “my desire.” The συμβεβήσθη he cherishes on his own account (as opposed to the consideration in next v. on theirs), tends “towards” (εις) the place where Christ is.

to depart] Lit., “to unloose” (ἀφλεπων); of a σκην (weighing anchor), as Homer, ’Odys., XV., 548; of a camp (breaking up), as 2 Macc. ix. 11; so the Latin sovere. Being active here, it cannot mean “to be released from bonds;” nor (as the Lat. Verss.), “dissoled.”

Cp. 2 Tim. iv. 6; and see Intro., § IV., D. See also Note at end of ch.

and to be with Christ] For similar language concerning the state of the soul immediately after death, cp. 2 Cor. v. 6, 8. But this state, being “partial,” relatively to its final or “perfectional” state (Pears. ’On the Creed,’ Art. XII., 6), is elsewhere represented by him as a sleep (1 Cor. xv. 51; 1 Thess. iv. 15).

which is far better Translate (with the best authorities inserting γενηκος), “for it is by much more preferable.” As if the language were too weak to express the superiority, he multiplies comparatives. The Lat. Verss. well render, “muito magis melius.”—J.

24. to abide in the flesh] Properly, “to abide further,” “to stay on.” Rather, “in my flesh” (ἐν τη ψυχή). Above, cp. 22, where “flesh” is bodily life in general, it has not the art.; here, it is his own individual life. If, with some, we omit the prep., we
25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all for your furtherance and joy of faith;

must translate "to abide by the flesh," to hold on to the bodily life.

more needful for you] As opposed to "better" of last v. — "To be with Christ is more desirable [for my own sake]; my continuance in this body is more necessary for your sakes."

Though their welfare is the consideration expressed, yet Christ's glory (v. 20) is in his mind all the while. "Can he hesitate" (Chrys. asks) "to prefer to be with Christ?" "Nay" (he supposes the Apostle to reply), "this too is for Christ's sake; that the servants I have made for Him, I may attach more strongly to Him; that the field I have planted, I may cause to yield Him fruit."

25, 26. HE EXPECTS TO LIVE, AND FOR THEM.

25, having this confidence, I know] "Being persuaded of (πεπεπώκας) this (that my life is for your welfare), I am sure I shall live."

Some, following Theophyl., render, "This I confidently know." But such adverbial use of the particip. is not elsewhere found, and would express merely the degree of his assurance. The rendering of A. V., expressing its grounds, is better; and agrees with the use of the word in its full participial sense, v. 6, and elsewhere.

"I know" (οἴδα), does not imply infallible assurance; St. Paul has shown (v. 20—22) that in this matter he has "only a well-grounded probability." So in Acts xx. 25, where he uses the same verb (Wall, 'Crit. Notes,' in loc.—J.).

The foreboding in the latter passage, that he should never return to Asia, and the anticipation in the text, "viewed as infallible presentiments, are hardly reconcilable; for the one assumes, the other negates, his release. The assurance here recorded was fulfilled (1 Tim. i. 3); while the presentiment there expressed was overruled by events (ib., and 2 Tim. i. 15; iv. 20)" (Bp. Lightfoot). See ii. 24, below; and cp. Philem. 22, where the prospect of release is more faintly expressed by "I hope" (ἐλπίζω, --not "I trust," as A. V.) (Wiesinger).—See Introd., § III., B, i. (4).

shall abide and continue with you all] A. V. (with Rec.) here follows a reading (συμπασχεῖν) which is well supported. It is better, however, to render (reading πασχεῖν, with best MSS), "shall abide and abide here, for you." He expects to live, and to help them, not only as now, by his letters, but (next v.) by his presence.

The compound verb (πασχείν), is distinguished from the simple as adding to the idea of abiding, that of abiding in some place or with some persons.

Observe again "you all," as above, v. 4, &c.

for your furtherance and joy of faith] Rather, "of the faith." The meaning is, "in order that you may make progress in the faith, and find joy in it." This is the "fruit" (v. 22), in prospect of which he is, for their sakes, willing to live. "For" points to the end for which he is to abide.—The genitives "your" and "of the faith" relate to both the nouns, which are joined under a common article (εἰς,—see Winer, as on v. 7).

joy] Such as he has in them (v. 4, and note), and desires to impart to them.

26. That your rejoicing . . . ] Rather, "That your glorying (more accurately, "matter of glorying") may, in Christ Jesus, abound in me," &c. Observe the repeated prep., "in Christ," "in me." The "in Christ Jesus," connected immediately with "may abound," yet having relation to the whole thought of the passage, shews Him as the sphere in which their "glorying" exists and is to "abound." The "in me," placed last, belongs to the whole of what precedes (but more especially to "glorying"), indicating that this joyful confidence, placed in the Apostle as its object (cp. a Cor. i. 14; v. 12), is to have occasion of increase in his return to them.

This noun (καθήχωμαι), and its cognate words, are variously rendered in A. V. by "glorying," "boasting," "rejoicing." The last is unsatisfactory as an equivalent, failing to express the confidence and the outward expression of it, which are in the word.

by my coming to you] "By means of my presence with you." These words declare expressly what the last v. implies,—that he expects not merely to live, and to be released, but also to revisit them; to the increase of their "glorying" (above).

27—30. EXHORTATION TO UNITY IN STRENGTHNESS UNDER PERSECUTION.

27. Only let your . . . ] "Whether I come or not, in my presence or in my absence
as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel;

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them

(ii. 12), let it be your care to live worthily of your Christian calling.

Similar admonitions, qualified by the same adverb "worthily" (δικαιῶς), occur in two other Epp. written during this imprisonment (Eph. iv. 1.; Col. i. 10), and in one to the sister Macedonian Church (1 Thess. ii. 12). But in those the verb is "walk."—J.

let your conversation be] Lit., "live as citizens" (πόλεμονόθε). Writing from Rome, whither he has been brought in assertion of his right of appeal as a citizen,—to a Roman city, where he had (Acts xvi. 37–39) asserted his citizenship, he uses this word with manifold fitness. The verb admits of the wider sense of having habits of life, conduct, "conversation." So it is used by him in his speech, Acts xxi. 1 ("I have lived," A. V.), of his conduct as a member of the Jewish community. It fits引入 the ensuing lesson of unity, based upon the sense of spiritual fellowcitizenship. Cp. iii. 20 (πολιτευμα) and note.

that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for . . .] This is what he hopes to see or hear of them; that they are stedfast in the strength of (εκ) one spirit, in the unity of spirits that are one in the One Spirit (Eph. iv. 4); and that they strive as the energies of one soul, acting harmoniously as of one man (Chrys. well compares Acts iv. 32, "of one soul"). In this united "standing" and "striving," they are regarded as citizens joined as fellowsoldiers to repel an attack on their city. So below, the second allusion (iii. 20) to citizenship is followed by the same verbs, "stand fast," "strive together," iv. i, 3 (στ boisiv, συνεκαθίζων), neither occurring in this Ep. in any other connection. The military allusion reappears below in "fellowsoldier" (ii. 25). He writes to a city which, as a "colony," was a Roman garrison.

For "spirit," "soul" cp. 1 Thess. v. 23. The former is the higher faculty, akin to and receptive of the Divine Spirit; the latter, the vital and active powers.

striving together] That is, "together with one another," the stress being on the lesson of unity. If "together with me" were meant, the pron. would be expressed in the Greek, —as iv. 3. "Together with the faith," is an improbable personification: A. V. rightly renders, "for the faith" (the dat. being commodi not object).

This "striving" is to be against persecutors (next v. ; also v. 30, and last note on it).

28. in nothing terrified by your adversaries] Lit., "scared," as a startled horse. Who these opponents may have been—Judaizing Christians, hostile Jews, or Gentile oppressors—is not stated. But the hostility here implied is compared, v. 30, to that which the Apostle encountered when he first visited Philippi; and was therefore probably an outbreak, as that was, of beaten violence.

A different account is advanced by Locke.

"There was no party at that time who were in opposition to the Gospel which St. Paul preached . . . but those who were for keeping up circumcision . . . . under the Gospel. These were they whom St. Paul apprehended alone as likely to 'affright' the convert Gentiles and make them start out of the way from the Gospel." (Quoted by Peirce.—J.)

(But this note overlooks the presence of the hostile Gentile elements which broke out on the occasion referred to).

which is to them an evident token. . . .] More accurately, "seeing that it (scil., such fearlessness on your part) is a token to them of [their] perdition, but of your salvation," (with best authorities placing αὐτῶν after ἰσχύω, not before; omitting αὐτά; and reading ἰσχύω for ἰσχύω of Rec.). The intrepidity of the Philippians will be a presage addressed to their adversaries ("them," αὐτῶν) of the twofold issue; ruin of the one party [supply αὐτῶν], triumph of the other (ὑπατίω). "Be not scared (for to scare is all that they can do). Thus shall you manifest their perdition and your salvation. For when they see that they cannot even scare you, they will perceive a token of their own perdition. For when the persecutors cannot prevail over the persecuted, the vanquishers over the vanquished, shall it not thence be manifest to them that they must perish?" (Chrys.).

Or we may understand the sentence thus:

"Be not dismayed by your persecutors, seeing that their boast is of itself the sure presage of their ruin and (thus) of your triumph." So Dean Vaughan (Philipp., Lect. V.), "To fight against Christ, quite apart from the question of its present apparent success or failure, is a sign of ruin to him who is guilty of it. . . . "Opposition to Christ's servants, whatever its immediate result, [is] a mark in itself of perdition on the part of the agent, and of salvation on the part of the sufferer."
PHILIPPIANS. I.

an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe

on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

30 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

"Perdition," in the utmost and final sense; as also "salvation" (cp. v. 19).

and of God). To be connected with "token" (not, as A. V. suggests, with "salva-
tion.") Their courage will be not a mere human assurance of coming victory,—it may, on the contrary, suffer present defeat,—but an "omen" sent by God, of the triumph beyond. Cp. 2 Thess. i. 4-10, where patience under trials is by a co:mate word designated as a "token" of their issue.

29. For unto you it is given. . . . ] Better, "Because to you grace was given," (ékabáth, aor.): scii., when they were first called to be Christians—to believe and to suffer. The words are confirmatory of last v. There, their fearlessness under suffering is interpreted as a presage of salvation; here, another is found in the fact that they suffer for Christ. Not only the power to endure, but the trial itself, is a sure token from God of fellowship with Christ now (see iii. 10), of His Glory hereafter (ib. 11; Rom. viii. 17).

To suffer for Christ is a gift of grace (χάρισμα), more marvellous than to work miracles, or to raise the dead. For therein I am a debtor: but herein I have Christ for my debtor." (Chrys.)

in the behalf of Christ. . . . ] Better, "for the sake of" (as the same prep. is translated at end of v.). The "to suffer for His sake" is resumptive of "for the sake of Christ," which is cut short by the interposed "not only to believe in Him, but also." A. V. here accurately reflects the irregularity of the original.

30. Having the same conflict.] He adds force to his exhortations in vv. 27, 28, by reminding them that he has experienced, is experiencing, trials like theirs. The words are thus best construed, as part of the main sentence, with "striving," "terrified,"—the intervening words, "which is to them . . . to suffer for His sake," being a parenthesis. Some connect this v. with v. 29, "Unto you it is given," "having the same . . ." (δύνατός, εἰκονίζει). But this is to be rejected, not on account of the imperfect agreeability such irregularity being far from uncommon—but because the "conflict" naturally belongs to the "standing" and "striving" (v. 28) as soldiers,—rather than to the subordinate sentence (v. 29), which asserts merely the privilege of "suffering.

ye saw in me. Scii., on the occasion recorded in Acts xvi. 19, 20. This incidental appeal to them as eyewitnesses confirms the narrative there (see Intro. § IV, C; and cp. Paley, 'H. P.' VII. viii.). To the shame and suffering of that "conflict" he refers more and expressly, 1 Thess. ii. 2, where he describes his Gospel warfare by the same word (δύνατός)—there translated "contention," A. V.). Cp. 2 Tim. iv. 7; and see above, Intro. § IV, D. It is here implied that the Philippians are now enduring such persecution as that which began in their city in his person (Acts as above); in which probably some of them then shared (see below on iv. 3); and which no doubt had recurred when he wrote (A.D. 57) to the Corinthian Church (2 Cor. viii. 1, 2) of the "affliction" of the "churches of Macedonia."

ADDITIONAL NOTES ON CHAP. I.

1. bishop.] In N. T., the use of εἰποκόμος as designating an officer of the Church, is peculiar to St. Paul (see the texts above cited); and the word occurs else only in 1 Pet. ii. 25 (of Christ). St. Peter indeed expresses the duty of presbyters by εἰποκό-

ποιμένα (1 Pet. v. 2); but this use of the verb (for which cp. Hebr. xii. 15), is far short of being equivalent to the application to them of the title εἰποκόμος. 'Εκποιομένη however expresses the Apostleship in Acts i. 20 (from Ps. civiii. [cix.] 8, LXX. Common as the term is in post-apostolic authors, none of them seems to employ it, as St. Paul in every instance does, as synonymous with ἑρεμία-

pos, with the single exception of Clement R., who (writing not long before A.D. 100) relates how the Apostles appointed ἑρεμίακοι καὶ διάκόνοι (1 Clem. R., XLII.; cp. ἱερεῖς, εὐαγγελίσται, ib. XLIV.). Polycarp (writing probably some twenty years later) enjoins the duty of obedience τοῖς ἑρεμίακοι καὶ διάκονοις ('Ad Philipp., V.). The Peshito, alone among the Versa, renders εἰποκόμοις (in loc.), "elders," ἀρχονταί.

The word is used in LXX. for the Hebrew שֵׂעָר, ἱεραπότητος, &c.; see, e.g., Numb. xxxi. 14; Isa. lx. 17 (on which latter text it is to be observed that Clem. R., XLII. as above, in citing it gives for שֵׂעָר, ἱεραπότητος, ἐν-
PHILIPPANS. I.

The bishop and deacons] This separate mention of the Ministry in saluting the Church, is peculiar to this Ep. Some have accounted for it by supposing them to have been the movers of the Church towards him (Chrys., followed by many later writers). Others suggest that he points to their office as a check on self-assertion and consequent divisions, such as he deprecates, ii. 3, &c. (Wiesinger). Some again see in it a mark of the late date of the Ep. But if this implies that in the Churches addressed in earlier Epp. no regular Ministry existed, it is clearly wrong; for in the earliest of them all he writes of "them which ... are over you" (1 Thes. v. 12), who are undoubtedly presbyters. His mention of the Second Order (Acts xx. 17), and that of the Third (Rom. xvi. 1), are also earlier than this.—It seems sufficient to say that the presence with him of Epaphroditus,—by whose hand this Ep. was apparently sent, whom he speaks of as a fellow-minister (ii. 23), a member, therefore, of their own body, perhaps their head,—naturally suggested this special greeting to the clergy of the Church. Further, if the view of iv. 3 taken below (see note there) be correct, he has a charge to send to these "bishops and deacons" such as is nowhere else found in his writings, and is thus led to address them in the opening of his Ep.

It is not recorded in Acts xvi. that St. Paul appointed ministers of any order at Philippi. In so short a sojourn, so abruptly terminated, it may not have been possible so to do. Lightfoot ('Harmony of N. T.' on Acts xvi.) conjectures that when he revisited Philippi (Acts xx. 1-6) he may have thus organized the Church, "which was the course he had used in other Churches, Acts xiv. 21-23." Yet when he wrote his first Ep. to the Church of Thessalonica (but a few months after its foundation), there were already presiding elders (as above pointed out) in that Church engaged in their "work," who must therefore have been appointed at the time of his first visit.

8. σωσέως αἰτῶν, δικαίωμα αἰτῶν, instead of ἄγνωσία σου, ἐνζώσιμος σου of LXX.). Profane writers from Homer downwards, also employ it freely. But no light is cast from either of these quarters on its ecclesiastical usage. Lightfoot, 'Harmony of Evang.,' Pt. III., on Luke iv. 15, s. IV., regards it as οἴη, a title denoting an officer of the Synagogue;—identified by him with the second officer, ἰησσος (οἴης), but regarded by others as an inferior official. (See Bp. Lightfoot, 'Philipp.,' Dissert. I., p. 197.)

I pray, that ...] "Iva is properly="in order that," (implying purpose aimed at). But frequently in St. Paul (and elsewhere in N. T., e.g.,Matt. xivv. 10; John xv. 8) it tends to pass into the mere "in," introductory (as in English) of the following verb in the conj. mood:—here, of the verb that conveys the matter of the prayer (as Vulg. "e ro ut abundet"); the conj. and verb expressing only what in many cases might be conveyed by an infinit. So, in modern Greek, iva (reduced to vi) is merely the sign of the conj. mood, with which it is used for an infinitive (as, e.g.,ιδα ανοια=ενοια). See Winer, 'Gr.' Pt. III., § 44, 8; and cp. § 53, 10 (6).

judgment] ἱδονης (nowhere else in N. T.), properly="perception by sense," "sensation," — also of the mind, "judgment." The LXX. uses it for ἱδια ("knowledge," A.V.);—e.g., Prov. i. 22 (of man's knowledge); iii. 20 (of God's). We find ἱδονης, Hebr. n. 14, = "organs of spiritual sense" (Neander). — J.

13. palace] This rendering is not only supported by the consent of Greek commentators, and by the parallel expression, iv. 22,—but farther by the fact that everywhere else in N. T., παλατίον denotes a ruler's residence (Matt. xxvii. 27; Mark xvi. 16; John xviii. 28, 33; xix. 9 [Pilate's house]; Acts xxii. 35 [Herod's Palace]).

Against it lies the objection, that the Imperial "Palatum" in Rome was not,—nor without shaking Roman feeling could be,—called "Pretorium."

To this it is answered that the word, being (as above) freely applied to a provincial Governor's residence, is here used, by a provincial writing to provincials, in its familiar provincial sense (Beausobre.—J).

Of the modern interpretations of the word;—(1), the extramural Camp, and (2),
the Palatine Barreke,—both alike labour under the
difficulty that it is never so used by any
writer, either in its Latin or in its Greek
form. Moreover, the expression, "the wobble
Praetorium," excludes (2),—being inapplicable
to a place of small extent. But "Praetorium"
is commonly employed in Latin to denote
(3) the Praetorian Cohorts. As among these in-
terpretations, therefore, (3) is to be preferred.
It is adopted by Bp. Lightfoot;—see his in-
teresting "Detached Note" on the word.
Grimm, 'Lexic. N. T.,' prefers (1).

Yet, the fact that Josephus denotes the
Praetorian Cohorts by τὸ στρατηγικὸν, not
τὸ πρατορίου, tends to prove that the latter
word was not known in the sense of "the
Bodyguard" to Greek writers (Dean Meri-
vale; see his discussion of the question, "St.
Paul at Rome," VII., p. 110).

16. 17. Some recent commentators follow-
ing Grotius, take οἱ εἰς ἡμείς, οἱ εἰς ὑμῖν,
as the subjects of these two τοῦ,—"they that
are of factiousness," "they that are of love."
(Cp. Rom. ii. 8.) But the ellipse left by this
construction after οἱ εἰς ὑμῖν is very clumsy,—as
appears especially when τοῦ 16, 17 are restored
to their proper order. The usual rendering is
therefore to be preferred.

18. Christ is preached ... J. See on the
argument in favour of heretics from this
verse, Cyprian, 'Epipt.' LXXV., 12 (Adjubia-
num):—also the note in English Translation
(Parker's "Library") of same, on the ren-
dering "annunicietur" (Vulg., but not Old
Lat.), as if from a reading καταγγέ-
λισθενο, which Ecumenius (in loc.) alleges
to be a heretical corruption of the text.—J.

But it is doubtful whether Ecumenius's mean-
ing is as above stated. And the Vulg.
"annuniciatur" is not meant as imperat. "Let
Christ be preached,"—but subj., "Provided
Christ be preached."

22. If I live ... J. If the construction is
to be completed, it may be (as A. V.—so
Pelagius in loc., &c.) by supplying "be my
lot," after "in the flesh:"—scil., "If I am
to live, life will yield me work and its fruit;
and thus (or, 'yet') I doubt whether to
choose life or death." This sense is satis-
factory, but the ellipse is harsh.

Or, with the great majority of authorities,
we may regard "if" as repeated before "this,"
—the protasis being thus extended so as to
end with "labour."—"If to live in the flesh,
—if this is to me the condition of fruit of
my labour, then (cai) I hesitate, &c." ("if"
being taken as = "since"). Thus the apo-
dosis is introduced by the conj. (cai), the
unusual sense of "tben" being assigned to it,
—of which the instance alleged (2 Cor. ii. 2)
is hardly sufficient. To help out this difficulty
thus,—"Since life is to me the condition of
fruit (I desire not to die), and, &c." (Rilliet,
ap. Meyer,—cp. Wiesinger)—is very arbi-
trary. The modification of this interpreta-
tion suggested by Bp. Lightfoot is better,
in which a break in the sense is made after
"labour."—"What if my living in the flesh
will bear fruit ...?—In fact, what to choose,
&c." But, in any shape, this method of
completing the protasis,—reinforcing the sub-
ject "this" by the pronoun "this" with a
second "if" inserted before it,—seems too
artificial.

Beza's rendering, adopted by many of the
Reformed Verss., also by Scholefield, and (in
part) by Conybeare, "An vero vivere in carne
mihi operas pretium sit, et quid eligam ignora,
makes the sentence regular. But "I know not
whether" (οὐ γνωρις οἱ εἰς), is (1) ungram-
matical, and (2) awkwardly linked with "I
know not what to choose;" moreover, (3) the
sense yielded ill accords with the certainty
expressed, τοῦ 24, of benefit to result. Further,
this interpretation of κῶρος εἰρέω, as a
Latinism, = operas pretium (Grotius), repre-
sent the Apostle as thinking of his own
profit, not (as the context requires) of that of
others.—Vulg., &c., give rightly, "fructus
operis."

23. to depart] Origen, according to Jerome
('Apolog. adv. Ruf., I. 21), explained διηλογι
here, "to return" ("recerti"); regarding the
soul as being of celestial origin, and death
its return home. Tertullian may have meant
the same by rendering ('De Patient.,' IX.)
"recerti." Cp. Wisd. ii. 1, Tobit ii. 9. C. Bos
(ap. Elsner), is in favour of this rendering
here; but says διηλογι is properly "to return
from a feast," as Luke xii. 36. See Gataker,
' De N. Instrum. St.,' VII., where four
meanings of the verb are distinguished.—J.

In the Latin Versa of Origen ('In Ep. ad
Romano.,' VII. (Jerome), we find the διηλογι
of this v. rendered "recerti"; in that of his
'De Principiis,' I. 7 (Rufinus), "directo."
CHAPTER II.

1 He exhorteth them to unity, and to all humbleness of mind, by the example of Christ's humility and exaltation: 13 to a careful proceeding in the way of salvation, that they be as lights to the wicked world, 16 and comforts to their apostle, who is now ready to be offered up to God. 19 He hopeth to send Timothy to them, whom he greatly commendeth, 25 as Epaphroditus also, whom he presently sendeth to them.

CHAPTER II. 1-4. Unity further urged: through what graces to be attained.

1. The Apostle proceeds to conjure the Philippians with earnest vehemence, by every Christian motive, to rise into a fuller realization of that unity which (i. 27) he hopes to find among them.

If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love.] Rather "exhortation in Christ," "persuasion of love": i.e., "If then mutual exhortation in Christ's name, if the persuasions of mutual love, are realities among you."—Cp. 1 Thess. ii. 11, where the verbs cognate to these nouns are used.

[If any fellowship of the Spirit ...] Scil., of the Holy Spirit;—corresponding to "exhortation in Christ;" as "bowels and mercies" to "persuasion of love." Thus of the four motives urged, the first and third are external and Divine—(1) "in Christ," (2) "of the Spirit," each succeeded by one internal and human,—(3) mutual "love," and (4) the impulses of the heart ("bowels"). These are the bonds to join Christian soldiers in unity;—that the Name of Christ is a cheering password among them, while love hearten them;—that fellowship in the One Spirit, as well as the sympathies of nature, draw them together. Assuming these to exist among Christians, he grounds on them this appeal.—"If any" (cp. iv. 8), conveys no doubt, but rather means, "whatever such motive is among you, act up to it."

Thus they are regarded as exhorting and persuading one another. Some understand him as reminding them (as 1 Thess. ii. 11), how he had exhorted and persuaded them. But the former interpretation, following "Stand fast in one spirit" (i. 27), and leading on to "Be like minded" (next vs.), seems best to fall in with the train of thought, before and after.

Chrys. understands him to entreat them to give him "comfort," by cherishing love and unity among themselves.

2. Fulfil ye my joy!] He expects (i. 25) to abide with them "for their joy:" his joy they are here in turn bidden to enhance. That joy he has expressed (i. 4) in prayer for their Christian progress, suggesting (i. 27) the spirit of unity as especially needed. And this point he now directly presses on them. His joy will be full, when he sees them one in heart.

[that ye be likeminded ...] "That so ye be of the same mind." (On the conj. see Note at end of ch. i., on v. 9.) This precept he proceeds to set forth under three heads:—(1) "Having the same love," (united in love not hate); (2) "Being joined in soul," (A. V., "of one accord," cp. "with one soul," i. 27), by sympathy each with all in all feelings; (3) "Being of one mind," (so as not only to think and feel about the same things, but alike about them).

3. Let nothing be done] Better, "[Being minded in nothing;—for this and the next vs. relate to thought and motive, rather than to acts (cp. "esteem," "look to," &c.).

through strife or vainglory.] Lit., "according to." Translate, "In the spirit of factivity, nor in the spirit of vainglory" (reading, with best authorities, μνήμα παραδοσιών, for ἑν τῆς ῥήτορας. Thus are brought out in distinct articulation the two main heads under which he is about to urge unity,—viz., (i) humility (in this vs.), and (ii) regard for others (next vs.). To these (in inverse order) he here opposes the two main hindrances to unity,—(i), "factiousness" (see i. 16, note), (ii) "vainglory"—The spirit that sets (i) party before charity, or (ii) oneself above one's equals, is the very negation of the spirit of unity.

in lowliness of mind] Lit., "in the lowliness ..." scil., due lowliness. The noun here used (τάπητος), is a N. T. word, nowhere found in LXX., nor in profane writers. See Abp. Trench, 'Synon. of N. T.,' s. v.—The "lowly mind," here implied, is the opposite of the "vainglorious" mind, above condemned.

esteem other better than themselves] "Accounting one another ..." (ἀνθρώποι). Thus the humility here commended is between equals (Theodore Mops.—cp. his note cited below on v. 6).—The verb is the same as "thought" (A. V.) in v. 6.—Each is in turn to admit the superiority of others.
of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

4. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.

Yet no unreal self-depreciation, no over-estimate of one’s neighbours, is contemplated. Humility is not to be based on falsehood. But everyone ought to know his own better than others’ faults, and to judge them more severely. And no one can fairly view himself and his neighbours without seeing in them some gifts which he is conscious of being without. (Neander.)

4. Look not . . . on his own . . . “Looking to”—“having regard to” (partic., not imperat. as Rec.),—connected with “accounting” (last v.). Here is the precept of regard for all men, opposed to the “factfulness,” (so sure to narrow into the selfishness of “looking to one’s own things” only), which is condemned along with “vainglory” in v. 3. But a due regard for one’s own concerns is not forbidden,—only an exclusive regard; as appears from “also the things of others.”

5-8. The Supreme Example of these Graces.

5. These graces (unselfishness and humility) which are to cast out the evils that mar Christian unity, are best learnt by contemplating Him, the Centre of that Unity, Who “emptied Himself” in His Incarnation, and “humbled Himself” in His Passion.

Cp. His own words, “Learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart” (Matt. xi. 29; see also xx. 28). “St. Paul himself looked to the things of others rather than to his own, (as i. 23, 24); yet here he offers not himself as an example, but Christ.” (Bengel.)

6. Who, being . . . The Subject of v. 6–8, is “Christ Jesus” (v. 5, anteced. to “Who”): spoken of, in this v., in His pre-incarnate Being:—but afterwards, v. 7–11, in the total of His Divine-human Personality,—suitably denoted by this twofold designation, Divine Title and human name.

being] The verb used (ἐνεπάνεψεν), implies prior being, and is equivalent to “to be in the beginning” (John i. 1). Thus Suidas explains it,—“to be before” or “of old.” Its tense (imperf.), contrasted with the following aors., points to indefinite continuance of being. Translate “subsisting”;—i. e., “though He subsisted,” as required by the interpretation below adopted of the closing words of the v. [With A. V., the partic. here is to be resolved into “inasmuch as He subsisted.”]

5 Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6 Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:

in the form of God] The word (ὑποδόθη), here translated “form,” though not absolutely equivalent to “essence” or “nature,” expresses that which outwardly manifests the essence or nature; the essential attributes of being, not its accidents. Hence, like other words originally denoting outward and sensible semblance (as ἔδωκα, ἐδόθη, by which Hesychius explains it), it comes to convey the inward reality. Thus, as “image” (εἰκών), Col. i. 15,—and “express image” (χαρακτήρ), Heb. i. 3—(terms like it drawn from the language of sense), it here denotes a real existence cognizable by thought. Of Him Who “subsists in the form of God,” the essence is GODHEAD; as surely as one who subsists in the form of man, must needs have the essence of manhood. For “it is not possible to be of one essence and to have the form of another” (Chrys., Hom. VI., 3). Cp. “the form of a servant” (next v.), words which admittedly convey a real manhood. So Chrys. (ib. 2), “The form of a servant, means by nature man; therefore the form of God, by nature God.” The form of a man we perceive chiefly by sense: the form of God solely by the mind. The percipient faculties in the two cases differ; in both alike the being whose attributes are perceived, is real.

“in the form” then,—i. e., the nature—“of God. Christ Jesus subsisted” before He became man (γενεσθαι, next v.). His Pre-existence is thus affirmed, against the Socinian; and His Godhead, against both Socinian and Arian.

thought it not robbery to be equal with God] It will be most convenient to begin with the latter words, “to be equal,”—rather “to be on equality with God.” They relate not so much to the essential Godhead (already declared in the words “the form of God”), as rather to Its State or Mode. Equality is accordingly here expressed not by the adjective masc. sing. (ἰσοτρία), but in an adverbial form (συγγνώμη), indicating the equal manner of His Being rather than the equal Being itself; with the same propriety as is observable in the use of “form” rather than “nature”:—inasmuch as what is here affirmed applies directly only to that outward manifestation of the Divine which He could, and in His condescension did, lay aside, and but indirectly to that which He could not relinquish—His actual Godhead. Yet in the words as they stand, the assertion of that Godhead is none
PHILOMELON.

7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of man:

the less distinct because indirect. "Neither the form of God, not to be on equality with God, is the Divine Nature; yet He Who subsisted in the form of God, and could be on equality with God, is God" (Bengel). The words moreover fully sustain the argument which Chrys. grounds on them against the Sabellian heresy of the unity of Person in the Godhead; for "equal implies more than one person." (Hom. VI., 2.)

thought it not robbery ...] For this rendering (a) not as follows, (B) "accounted it not a prize...; i.e. "Although He subsisted in the form of God, He did not tenaciously cling to, or eagerly grasp, the being on equality with God." The sentence shows Him in the act of forming the Divine Resolve to lay aside His rightful Attributes of Godhead,—"measuring in calm presage the infinite descent";—and accordingly belongs (as the tense (aor.) of the verb requires) to the narrative of His Condescension, opened in these words, and continued in the "emptied Himself," "humbled Himself" (also aor.), of v. 7, 8.

With the rendering A (of A.V.), on the contrary, the words represent Him as upholding His Title to those Attributes; and form part of the declaration of His preincarnate State. "Immanuel as He was pre-existent as God, He held it His Right to claim equality of Godhead." This interpretation, in itself most true, and which the words (taken in themselves) fairly convey, when viewed with the context, proves untenable. For (1) in the preceding vv. (3, 4), lowliness of mind and regard for others rather than self, are the graces to be exemplified; whereas this rendering shews the Lord, in this prominent and emphatic sentence, as asserting His Godhead—an assertion supremely rightful, yet not fitly adducible as an instance of self-abnegation or humility. And (2) the following v. (7), describing the act by which He "emptied Himself," brings it into the sharpest contrast by the introductory "But" (ἀλλά, i.e., "but on the contrary," as in vv. 3, 4), with that which is conveyed by the verb (ἐγκαταστάσας) of this sentence. But "to think it robbery to be equal with God," stands in no such contrast with "to empty Himself." To say "He did not count it a wrongful act to assert Divine Attributes, but on the contrary laid them aside," is unmeaning. This defect (disguised to readers of A.V. by the ambiguous "but,"—as by "sed" to the readers of Vulg.) is admitted by the ablest supporters of the above interpretation, and only remedied by forcing on "but" the meaning "but nevertheless."

On the other hand the rendering B, above preferred, fully meets the requirements of (1) the preceding, and (2) the ensuing context, as above indicated. For (1) it furnishes the required example of self-abnegation and humility; He was not eager to hold, or ambitious to display, the attributes of Godhead that were His: and (2) it supplies the due contrast with the following history of His Self-sacrifice; He did not cling to His Rights, but of the contras stripped Himself of them. The emphatic position of the noun (in the Greek, before the verb), for which A shows no reason, is in B fully accounted for, as serving to point this contrast.

Of these two rival interpretations, it may be broadly stated (but see Note at end of ch., IV.), that A is that of [apparently] the Ancient Versions, and of the post-Nicene Latin Fathers, as well as of popular acceptance,—B, of the Greek Fathers, and of modern critics. A has been currently preferred, partly as being more obvious on the surface; but mainly, no doubt, because it directly declares the Godhead of the Lord Jesus, which B has been supposed to represent Him as declining to assert. But B yields no ground for such misconstruction. On the contrary, by explaining, "He is an Example of self-abnegation, for He did not grasp at or cling to the Attributes of Godhead," B conveys as fully by implication, as A by express affirmation, that they were rightfully His. For if they were not His,—that is, if He were less than God, to shrink from grasping them would be, as Chrys. (Hom. VI., 2) irresistibly argues, no instance of such self-abnegation,—it would merely be to refrain from impious and mad presumption. He is here represented as abstaining from the outward assertion of Godhead, not because it was not His Right, but of His infinite Condescension. In like manner Theod. Mops., who adopts B, with singular acuteness points out that, the "humility" to be illustrated (v. 3, where see his note cited) being between equals, Christ's Humility would have here no application as an Example, were it not assumed that He is Equal with the Father. (To somewhat similar effect Chrys. also: Hom. VI. 3.) The implied affirmation of Deity herein contained, is all that is to be expected in a passage like this, where the declaration of What He is, comes in but incidentally to heighten His Example, the immediate matter in hand;—though indirect, not therefore less weighty.

New Test.—VOL. III.
8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

Thus the whole υ. yields its full meaning as follows:—"Though He was from Eternity God equal with the Father, yet He did not account His Divine State a thing to be tenaciously grasped; but on the contrary stripped Himself of its glories;" a sentence closely parallel with "Though He was rich, yet for your sakes He became poor" (2 Cor. viii. 9). (See farther, Note at end of ch.)

7. First aspect of the Lord’s Example.
   But made himself of . . .] Lit. (see above), "But [on the contrary]." This conjn. contrasts the verb ("emptied Himself") of this υ., with "accounted" of υ. 6;—just as the same conjn. contrasts to be lowly with to be vainglorious (υ. 3), and to regard the things of others with to regard one’s own (υ. 4). made himself of no reputation Lit. "emptied Himself," scil. of the outward tokens of Godhead, in the Incarnation (as the occasion marked by the aor.). A.V. fairly expresses the sense; which is, that He laid aside—not the Essence, which is inalienable, of His Godhead, but—that which is relative to finite perceptions, Its outward manifestation. To affirm that He laid that aside, implies that He had it previously—for "exianon supposeth a precedent plentitude" (Pearson 'On the Creed,' iii., 25). And to advance this as an example of self-surrender, implies that He had it rightfully. In the Greek, the pron. "himself" (iavrov) is placed emphatically before the verb; marking His Example as of negation of self, and corresponding to "his own things" (rav iavrov) of υ. 4. and took upon him the form of a servant] "In taking upon Him . . ." (aor. particip.)—"The form" (as in υ. 6) implies "the nature." —"The form" is rather "slave" correlative to "Lord."—one whose will is not his own but his lord’s. That in taking our flesh, He became in this sense a "slave," was taught prophetically in O. T. (Isai. passim, especially xliv. 5, "formed Me from the womb to be His servant" [slave,—LXX., ὤνικος, as here]; Ps. xl. 7, 8, "I come, to do Thy Will": and is affirmed by Himself, "I came to do the Will of Him That sent Me" (John vi. 38). This His surrender of the Will shews the fullest Example of self-surrender in its highest form.

Comparing "the form of a slave" here, with "the form of God," υ. 6, we can say to heretics on the one hand, "The Godhead is as real as the Manhood;" on the other, "The Manhood is as real as the Godhead." Marcionists (Chrys., Hom. VII., 2), on Docetic grounds, explained away these words as of washing the disciples’ feet and suchlike acts of humility. (Pelag. likewise;—but also gives the true sense, "naturam hominis inducendo.") So (with an opposite view) modern Socinians explain,—"He took a lowly station among men." This evasion of the natural meaning hardly needs the refutation,—"To do the work of a slave is one thing, to take the form of a slave is another" (Chrys., as above). The following words unmistakably show that the mere fact of becoming man made Him a slave who is Lord of all (see next note).

and was made in the likeness of men] "In becoming," "in being made" (again aor. partic.)—"He put aside His Glory of Godhead in taking the form of a slave; that form He took in becoming man." In the likeness;" not that He was not very man; rather that He was not mere as other men, but more; "not only soul and body, but God and soul and body" (Chrys. as before).—"Of men," not "of man;" it is not that He resembled a man, but that He represented mankind. Thus the expression lends no countenance to Docetic error.

8. Second Aspect of His Example.
   And being found in fashion as a man] As the first stage of His Example was introduced by the declaration of His antecedent State as God, so the words introduce (by the conjn. "and") its second stage, with the description of His State as man when He entered on that stage. To "subsisting" (υ. 6), the verb and tense that fitly convey what He eternally was, is here opposed "being found," a verb and tense (aor., as the preceding participp.) that suggest what, in men’s eyes, He became. Similarly, to "in the form," is opposed "in fashion" (οὐξυματικαί, "bakin" "outward bearing");—a word used not to derogate from the fulness of the manhood which He took (already implied in "the form of a slave"), but because the matter in hand relates only to what He was by men discerned to be. For the like reason we read "found as a man" (not "a man" merely).

be humbled himself Scil. in His Passion (aor., as "emptied Himself"). In it, He shewed the Example of the humility enioined in υ. 3 ("wulner of mind"). The verb here used refers us back to the cognate noun there.

Here, the stress is on the verb, which is accordingly placed after (not as the verb in υ. 7 before) its subject pronoun.

and became obedient unto death.] "In becoming (as above, υ. 7) obedient even unto death." The manner of His Humilia-
9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:
10 That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;
11 And that every tongue should

tion is here expressed, as consisting in His Obedience; its degree, as measured by the extent to which He obeyed, to the utmost and final point, Death. To live as man was self-surrender; to die as man was self-sacrifice,—the deepest of humility, the highest of obedience.

even the death of the cross] "Yea, the death..." His obedience is enhanced by the fact, that He yielded Himself not to mere death, but (κατὰ) to death in its utmost of horror and ignominy: in Roman eyes, the death of the slave; to the Jew, the death of the "cursed" (Deut. xxi. 23; Gal. iii. 13).

9-11. His Reward; Universal Homage.

9. As God, His Humility has been shewn; as man, His Reward is now to be declared. If He were man merely, there would be no lesson of humility in His Death; if God merely, there would be no room for reward in His Exaltation. (Theod. Mops. on v. 8.)

Wherefore God also bath...] Rather, "Wherefore also God hath..." "Also" (i.e. "accordingly") introduces the result of His Obedience, its Reward. Hitherto the narrative has been of the Son's acts: at this point the Father intervenes. The glories Christ will hereafter bear are His, to higher fulness of manifestation than ever; not grasped by Him, but bestowed on Him by the Father.

Here is encouragement (according to His saying, "He that humbleth himself shall be exalted") to strengthen the lessons of His Self-sacrifice. But on these lessons the Apostle does not dwell. His thoughts have mounted into a higher sphere; and that unity, to inculcate which he introduced Christ's Example (v. 5), he leaves to be learned from the contemplateation of Him as enthroned for universal worship.

bath highly exalted] "Highly exalted" (aor. omit "bath"), scil., in the Ascension. This compound verb is one of singular force; cp. "Highly glorified above all height" (Milton, "Par. L.," 111. 58). Here is the antithesis to "bumbled Himself" (v. 8).

and given him a name which is above...] Here is the antithesis to "emptied Himself" (v. 7). Translate "gave Him the Name, that which is above."... (aor. as last verb; —and art. inserted, with best MSS.)—What "Name": Not, as many explain, Jesus (for that was given Him "before He was conceived in the womb," Luke i. 31; ii. 21;—note that it is not "the Name Jesus," dat., but "the Name of Jesus," genit., in next v.). Not Jehovah (for that was His from Eternity;—cp. Isai. vi. 1-10, with John xii. 39-41; Joel ii. 32, with Rom. x. 9-13; and see Pearson "On the Creed," II., iv., 4-8). Not its equivalent "Lord" (for the like reason). Not any appellation or title, but (as "Name" so often means) a manifestation in a certain character or station. Here, it is the Heirship of all things, the Headship over all to the Church (Hebr. i. 2; Eph. i. 22). So 1 Pet. i. 21, "[God] raised Him up from the dead, and gave Him glory."
confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh

underworld:—probably (as Theod. M. and Theodot.) the angels, the quick, the dead. So Rom. xiv. 9, “Lord of the dead and living.”

11. And that every tongue should confess that . . .] Thus the homage divides itself into (1) prayer to Him (last v.), and (2) praise of Him, in the confession of His Title as Lord. Translate “And every tongue shall confess” (reading with the best authorities, fut. indic., for aor. conj. of Rec.). Thus from the purpose (last v.) of this manifestation, the writer passes to its fulfillment. On the verb, and the corresponding “shall swear” (παραλαμβάνει, LXX.—Isa. as above), see note on Rom. xiv. 11.

“Every tongue,” i.e., every creature capable of utterance. A strange misapprehension of these words, as if signifying “every language,” once led to a happy result. On the strength of them Pope John VIII. sanctioned the reform introduced by Methodius, Archbishop of Moravia (Cent. ix.), of using the vernacular Slavonic in the offices of the Church (Neeander, ‘Hist. of Ch., Period IV., 1).

He is Lord] He is condescended to be a slave.

Is Lord] He is owned by the universe as Lord.

to the glory of God the Father] Scil., as the supreme end and issue of all. And thus even the Reward of His Course is not for Himself ultimately. His Condescension was for the salvation of men His brethren; His Exaltation is for the glory of God His Father.


12. From the contemplation of His Lord in Glory, the Apostle’s thoughts descend to the lessons needed by the Philippian Church. But they do not settle back precisely on the same point whence they arose towards Him. The topic of unity is completed; and he now turns to that of encouragement, opening with the endeavor “beloved.”

You are encouraged. The advb. refers back to the “obedience” of Christ (v. 8). “Accordingly, as He obeyed and was exalted, so persevere ye in obeying unto salvation.” Not as in my presence . . . absence] Above (i. 27), they are to “stand fast” in unity, whether he visits them or not: here, to work towards their salvation irrespectively of him; to obey not only in his presence; nay, farther, not merely in his absence as well as in his presence, but “much more.” (The “as” of Rec, though not in Cod. B, is amply supported.) —Thus the lack of his personal influence is to quicken at once their efforts on their own behalf, and their sense of immediate dependence on God. Moreover (as Chrys. adds), it will test whether their past obedience was for his sake or for God’s.

Work out] “Continue to its completion” (implying that the work has been already commenced). “Began in them” by God, it is to be by Him “performed” unto the end (i. 6); yet, as we have seen, by them,—for He “works in them” (next v.).

Your own salvation] I.e., for yourselves; (1) as not depending on me, (2) as enabled by God (next v).

With fear and trembling] Words significant of obedience eager not to fail. They occur but thrice in N.T.—here, 2 Cor. vi. 15, and Eph. vi. 5,—always in relation to obedience; as the like expression in O.T., “Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling” (Ps. ii. 11; —in φόβῳ, in τρόμῳ, LXX.).

13. For it is God which worketh in you] Here is (1) encouragement for the “working out” (of last v.). “Though I am absent, He is in you (not merely ‘among you,’ but ‘in’ each), to enable you,—yet so as to quicken rather than supersede your own efforts.” —Here is also (2) the ground of the “fear and trembling” (ib.). The consciousness of the Divine Worker infuses the element of religious awe into every movement of the Christian life.

In the Apostle’s view, there is no opposition between the duty of “working out one’s own salvation” and the truth of God’s in-working; between the fact of freewill and the doctrine of Grace. There is no need to reconcile them; on the contrary, he assigns the latter as the ground of the former (“Work out . . . for it is God Which worketh in you”). The assurance of grace working in him is to be the Christian’s incentive to exercise his freewill in working.

Both to will and to work] “To will and to work”; same verb (ἐπιθυμεῖν) as used earlier in the sentence of God’s “working,” — it means “to work effectually” (not “to work in”). The change from “work” to “do” in A.V. obscures the meaning; and Vulg., “perferre” actually misleads; as Corn. a Lap. (in loc.) points out (substituting Old Lat. “operari”). “God works in” us alike in inspiring our will, and in enabling us to work. In the
words of our Article X., closely following Augustine ('De Grat. et Lib. Arb.', 17), "We have no power to do good works . . . without the Grace of God by Christ preventing us that we may have a good will, and working with us when we have that good will"; according to the familiar distinction between preventing and assisting grace. The explanation of Chrys., "Whenever we have willed, He thereafter increases in us such will," does not reach back far enough to touch the source of the "good will." That of Pelag., as might be expected, falls utterly wide of it: "He works [in us] to will, by persuading and promising rewards." Far otherwise Theophyl., "God will do the whole work; for He it is Who both gives the impulse to will what is good, and brings to pass the doing of it."

of his good pleasure Lit., "for the sake of." As the end of Christ's Exaltation is the Father's Glory, so the end of the Christian's salvation is, to fulfil the gracious purpose of His Will.

14. without murmurings and disputings I.e., against God's Will. Of the two nouns, the former means "outward complaining," the latter, "inward questioning." The "obedience" required (v. 12) must be cheerful, not merely formal. Some interpret the words of dissensions among men (a reversion to the topic of unity). But this misses the reference to the example of Israel in the wilderness contained in the words, cp. with "murmurings" (γγγγγμαο), Exod. xvii. 3, "the people murmured" (δευγγμαο); see also next v. and note. No such express mention, as in the parallel passage, 1 Cor. x. 5-11, is here made of the sin and punishment of Israel; because, whereas the Corinthians needed rebuke for actual offences, the Philippians are but to be exhorted, as "children" (next v.) against offending (Chrys.).

15. That ye may be blameless and harmless Rather, "So as to become" (implying progress towards holier life). The reading of Rec. (γνωσθε) is here to be preferred, as better supported, and as more significant than "be" (γε) of A.V. "Blameless" (in men's eyes): "harmless," rather "sinere" (as marg.), lit., "unmixed," thence "pure" (inwardly); same word as Matt. x. 16 ("harmless as doves").

the sons of God, without rebuke] "Children of God" (omit "the"). The Son of God "obeyed," becoming a "slave" (v. 7, 8). We who are "slaves," if we learn of Him to "obey" willingly (v. 12, 14), become "children of God." "The slave murmurs (v. 14): but what son will murmur, who, when about his father's work, works also for himself?" (Chrys.)—"Without rebuke," better "unblamable," slightly differing from "blameless," above. (See next note.)

in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation] Read "generation." The reference, to O.T. is continued. Cp. the same words applied to Israel, Deut. xxxii. 5; still closer in LXX. (οοαο τεκνα, μωμοι, γηαο αολοκα διαστραμμοια),—"not His children, blamable, a crooked and perverse generation.

ye shine as lights in the world] "Ye appear" (φαινεσθε, not φαινεται): not "shine," as of their own light or for their own glory; but "appear," are seen by giving forth God's Light in them. "Lights," properly "luminaries," the same word as used for the heavenly bodies, Gen. i. 16 (LXX.). The added words "in the world," suggest that St. Paul may here mean these; so most commentators. But such comparison is surely too high for saints on earth,—meet only for the glorified (Dan. xii. 3; Matt. xii. 43). He seems rather to have in view earthly lights. Cp. the "light of the world," and the lights, "candle," of our Lord's words, Matt. v. 14. 15 (where see Stier); also John v. 35. "He [the Baptist] was the burning and shining light," i.e., lamp. So Beza here renders "face." See Abp. Trench, 'Syn. N.T.,' s. v.

16. Holding forth the word of life] This verb (κειματω) signifies "extending to others" (food, drink, or the like, so e.g., Homer, 'Il.,' IX., 489); and may here, in connection with last v., mean "displaying the word of life" (to give to others the "light of life," cp. John i. 4; viii. 12). Yet the rendering "holding fast" (Hesych., s. v., κατατελε) seems more suitable to what follows, meaning "perservering until the day of the end."

Either of these is better than the interpretation of Chrys., &c., "possessing," i.e., "seeing that ye possess.

that I may rejoice in the day of Christ] Lit., "For matter of glorying to me against the day . . . ." Above, their "glorying" is to be in him (i. 26); here, his "glorying" is to be finally in them. For both, cp. 2 Cor. l.
PHILIPPIANS. II.

19 'But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.'

20 For I have no man likeminded, who will naturally care for your state.

14—"The Day of Christ," as i. 6, 10. 

17 Yea, and if I be offered upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoice with you all.

18 For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoice with me.

19 'But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.'

20 For I have no man likeminded, who will naturally care for your state.

14. 'That I have not run in vain,' Cp. Gal. ii. 3; also Polycarp, 'Ad Philipp,' XII. Here, and below, iii. 12—14, we have his familiar metaphor of the footrace, as 1 Cor. ix. 24, 25; 2 Tim. iv. 7. Translate, 'did not run.' (aor.). He conceives himself as at the end of his course, looking back on it.

17. 'Yea, and if I be offered,' Transl. "May, if even I am poured forth" (as marg.; so Old Lat., "libari"), i.e., as a drink offering. In last v., looking forward to a prolonged life of service, he anticipates the future "glorying" of the retrospect at its close. Here, he faces the other alternative, of speedy martyrdom; and is filled with present "joy" in the hope of glorifying God by the libation of his lifeblood. The tense and mood (pres. indic.) of the verb, express a vividly realized and proximate contingency;—not (as some explain) a continuous dying daily (as if, "though I am being poured forth." Cp. 2 Tim. iv. 6, where the sacrifice, here foreseen as possible, is (by the same verb) announced as imminent: and see Introld., § IV., D.

upon the sacrifice and service of your faith. The "sacrifice" consists in their faith (genit. of apposition), and consequent self-devotion. The "service"—or "ministration"—is the act of offering that sacrifice. (For the common art. (Greek) note on i. 7.) Some, led by the analogy of Rom. xii. 1, where Christians are besought to "present their bodies a living sacrifice," understand that here the Philippians are themselves the sacrificers. It is better, however, to regard the Apostle as performing the "ministration" (λειτουργία)—cp. Rom. xv. 16, where he speaks of himself as "a minister," "a ministering" (λειτουργώντα, λειτουργία) . The words thus convey the image of a priest slain while sacrificing. Accordingly, "on the sacrifice of their faith," while he is offering it, his blood is poured forth,—a drink offering, to be the complement of the other. "On,"—not merely "in addition to" (as drink offerings under the Law were not made alone, but together with offering of food,—Numb. xv. 5—10); but literally "upon the sacrifice," according to the heathen custom, of course familiar to the Philippians, of making libation of wine upon the slain victim. (Hom. 'II., 1. 462; XI., 775.)

Not only the fact of his martyrdom, but the manner of it—not by stoning, or fire, or the cross, but (as a Roman) by beheading—is here foreshadowed. (Bp. Wordsworth.)

I joy, and rejoice with you all.' "I have joy in offering my blood, and I share in the joy of the offering of your faith" (see next v.). Again "you all," as i. 4, &c.

18. For the same cause also do ye.]

And in the same manner do ye also... "And (as above), "Rejoice in your offering, and share my joy in mine." They are to have not only (as i. 25) future joy in his presence, but present joy like his own, even in view of death. As their sacrifice and his libation are conceived as mingling on the altar, so are his joy and theirs to meet over the joint offering. —Some translate the second verb in both sentences (συγχαίρετε) "congratulate." But this is less suitable to the earnestness of the passage than A.V., for which cp. i. Cor. xii. 26.

19—24. He hopes to send Timothy, and himself to follow shortly.

Turning now to the more ordinary topics of a letter, he informs them of the intended mission of Timothy, and return of Ephaphroditus.

19. But I trust... The connection is "[How it may be with me, or with you, I know not], but [meanwhile] I trust (accurately, "I hope") the Lord will grant me soon to hear of you through Timothy." For "in the Lord," see v. 24 and note. For the mention of Timothy, see note on i. 1.

that I also may be of good comfort] "I hope to send Timothy, in order that [as you will be cheered by the tidings of me given in this letter, and by his report of my welfare, so] I too may be cheered, when I learn your state [from him on his return]."

20. For I have no man likeminded. Scil. "none [else] likeminded [with me];" lit., "of equal soul" (ἰσοψυχου;—cp. Ps. liv.[br.]. 14 [13]);—also Deut. xiii. 6, LXX.; i.e., "of congenial soul," "of kindred nature" (as child with parent see next v.); stronger than
21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's.
22 But ye know the proof of him, that, as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.
24 But I trust in the Lord that I also myself shall come shortly.
Yet I supposed it necessary to send you Epaphroditus, my brother, and companion in labour, and fellow-soldier, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants.

For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick. For indeed he was sick unto death: but God had mercy on

Theodot., followed by some writers of authority, interprets the former noun (ἀντιπόλοιücken) "Apostle," i.e., presiding Bishop. But the true meaning is evidently as above given. Cp. "the messengers (ἀντιπολοί) of the Churches," 2 Cor. viii. 23. At the same time, on other grounds (for which see note on "yokefellow," iv. 3), it seems highly probable that Epaphroditus was Chief over the "bishops" (i. 1) of Philippi.

The latter noun (λειτουργία), and also its cognate "service" or "ministry" (λειτουργία, below, v. 30), both of sacrificial import (cp. v. 17), perhaps indicate that their benefits are regarded by him as offerings to God;—as below, iv. 18.

For he longed... was full of heaviness] Lit., "he was longing," i.e., in our idiom "he is longing"; the tense modified for same reason as "I account," in v. 25,—but here impf. instead of aor., as denoting a continued state.

Of these two verbs, the former (cp. i. 8) here conveys the craving desire to see again absent friends. The latter (same as used, Matt. xxvi. 37, to express the distress of the soul of Jesus,—A. V., "to be very heavy"), whether derived from an adj. (ἄνευσμος) meaning "away from home," or from an adv. (ἀνευρ.), "uneasily,"—conveys the yearning of heartsickness, such as absence from home, especially when aggravated by illness, engenders. This feeling would be intense in one who knew his sickness and absence to be matter of anxiety to friends at home. How truly is all this indicated in these few words!

On the intercommunication here implied between Rome and Philippi, see Intro., § III., B, i. (4).

God had mercy on him] Though for himself he counts that "death is gain" (i. 21), he acknowledges the spared life of his friend as of "mercy": and enters into the natural feeling of thankfulness for restored health.

on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow] "I too have a share in the mercy shown him; for, had he died, that would have been a sorrow added to the sorrows that fill my life." Note, that there is no hint of exerting miraculous power to heal his friend, a power not given for personal ends. (Paley, 'H. P.,' VII. ii.)
him; and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that, when ye see him again, ye may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness; and hold such in reputation:

30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life, to supply your lack of service toward me.

29, 30. Commendation of Epaphroditus.

29. Receive him therefore in the Lord]
"Welcome him, not merely with human joy; but as one who has done Christ's work, and is restored to you by His Grace."

30. Because for the work of Christ he was nigh . . .] Rather, "he came nigh." The words, "of Christ," are very doubtful, the authorities giving various readings ("of Christ," "of the Lord," &c.). Probably they all are insertions to explain "the work." It is therefore best to omit them, with Tischendorf (following Cod. C.), and to render "for the work's sake." So "the work" is used, Acts xv. 38, "where we seem to have St. Paul's very words" (Bp. Lightfoot). "The work" is, of course, the furtherance of the Gospel (cp. Acts xiii. 2);—in this case, by ministrations to its chief Minister. This is more probable than to suppose Epaphroditus to have "worked" in preaching it in Rome.

He says "for the work's sake," not "for my sake;" regarding the service as rendered less through personal attachment, than for the cause of Christ. (See last note on v. 25.)

not regarding his life] Lit., "consulting amiss for his life" (παραβουλονταίμονας, so Rec.).—The more probable and better supported reading (παραβουλονταίμονας,—neither verb occurs in any other author) means "hazarding;"—as an appellant staking a pledge (παραδοθὼν), to be forfeited in case he lost his cause. "In the Apostle's appeal, Epaphroditus put as it were his own life in pawn for him" (Bp. Wordsworth). Hence the title of the "Parabolan" of later times; a fraternity, not unlike the Frati della Picta of the modern Roman Church, who undertook the hazardous office of visiting the sick and burying the dead in time of pestilence (Bingham, 'Antiquities,' III. ix.). (See Note at end of ch.)—The danger incurred by Epaphroditus was his sickness, brought on or aggravated by his assiduous personal attendance on the Apostle: of persecution we have no hint, to supply your lack of service . . .] Rather, "that which was lacking on your part of the service." Cp. i Cor. xvi. 17. He does not reproach them as having neglected him in the past; he but refers to that part of the required "service" (scil., personal ministrations), which they did not—because, being absent, they could not—render directly, but indirectly through Epaphroditus. "Your city was not present with me; yet it rendered me every service, by sending him." (Chrys.)
(2) It is to be observed that "to be equal with God" (a state), cannot properly be spoken of as a "robbery" (an act).

(3) For the objection that the true force of ἀλλὰ (in v. 7) is reversed by Α, see above. Waterland combats it (Sermons, V.), by alleging sundry instances of ἀλλὰ for ἀλλά in N. T. But in all these the conj. proves on examination to retain its proper adversative force.

(B). Objection against Α.

On the meaning given by this interpretation to ἀρπαγμὸς, a serious question arises. The analogy of like verbal nouns in μῶς would impose on it an active meaning—an "act of seizing," a "robbery," as in Α; not a "thing seized," a "prize," as B requires. The latter would properly be ἀρπαγμὸς, and the phrase ἄρπασεν (ποιεῖται, and the like), = "to regard as a prize," to hold or grasp eagerly, is not uncommon in Greek authors;—see the examples given by Bp. Lightfoot and other commentators, in loc.—The word ἀρπαγμὸς is rare;—once only in a profane writer, Platarch, 'De Libero. Educat.,' 15, where it has its proper active sense. It also occurs once in Eusebius, 'Comment. in Luc.,' VI.,—once in Cyril Alex, 'De Adorat.,' I. 25; and once in a passage in the 'Catena Posini,' on Mark x. 42;—in all of which cases it is used as ἀρπαγμὸς, in the two former with ποιεῖται (Bp. Lightfoot; cp. Meyer, who mainly attempts to give his quasi-active sense—below, III., (1)—to ἀρπαγμὸς in these passages). These three, however, can hardly be relied on as independent instances, being from Christian writers who probably adopted this use of the word from the text in question,—which is interpreted (as in Α) with ἀρπαγμὸς in the concrete sense, by Euseb. ('Ecl. Pr.,' III. 8; 'Ecl. Th.,' I. 11), and by Cyril A. ('Contra Jul.,' VI.; 'In Esaï,' IV. 4). We have not therefore sufficient grounds of usage, on which to decide whether the word admits of this sense. But we have the analogy of many similar verbal nouns, which, though properly denoting an action, have come to mean the result of such action,—the abstract meaning readily passing into the concrete;—e.g., θερμός, χειμών. Of this the N.T. affords a striking instance in θερμαῖος,—properly, the act of (or season for) reaping (so, e.g., Matt. xiii. 30)—thence the cora to be reaped (Matt. ix. 38, ὁ μὲν θερμαῖος πολὺς; Rev. xiv. 15, ἐξηράνθη ὁ θερμαῖος). Other languages show a like tendency to a decline in precision as to the use of such words. So in English, a "capture," a "seizure,"—properly the act of taking, or seizing, are used for the thing taken or seized. So too the Latin "rapina," below, IV. (i.).

On the whole therefore we conclude that the difficulty as to the use of ἀρπαγμὸς is not so grave as to hinder our deciding in favour of interpretation Α.

II. MISCONSTRUCTION OF Α TO BE GUARDED AGAINST.

The phrase οὐ τὸ ἄρπαγμὸν ἄγγελον is however by no means equivalent to οὐ τὸ ἄρπαγμός. The Apostle speaks not of the Lord forbearing to do an act, but of the estimation in which He regarded a thing, as the preceding νν. require (with ἀγάπην cp. ἄρπαγμόν, v. 3). It is not "He did not seize equality with God,"—as Arians (cp. Chrys., Hom. VI., 3), and many moderns, misconstrue it;—as though He forbore to grasp what, as not being His own, He had no right to. It has been already shown that the context excludes such meaning (see above, Chrys.'s argument on this point).—For a like reason the explanation of ἀρπαγμὸς as "res rapienda" is hardly admissible, unless so modified as to mean,—not a "thing to be seized" (as if it were not already His), but a "thing to be clung to." The word is rather="res rapita," a "prize;" a thing either (as above) to be (1) tenaciously held (as plunder by a robber), or to be (2) boastfully displayed (as spoils by a victor). The full significance of the context as developed above, seems to require both shades of meaning. But of the two, the former (1) stands first, and is the more prominent.

III. INTERMEDIATE INTERPRETATIONS.

Between the rival interpretations Α and Β, though (as above shewn) not merely distinct but opposite, some have attempted to find a compromise which shall avoid the difficulties of both.

(1) Of such attempts one only seems to give a truly intermediate result; that of Meyer, whom Alford follows. He regards the sentence οὐ τὸ ἄρπαγμὸν ἄγγελον, as in Β, as introductory to the narrative of Christ's Course, referring it to the point of time when He was about to come into the world; but retains an active meaning in ἀρπαγμός, by rendering, "He did not consider it under the point of view of making booty,"—"regarded it not as self-enrichment" (Alford);—and explains, "Had he then thought, When I shall have come into the world I will seize to Myself, by means of My equality with God, power and dominion, &c.,—then He would have acted the part of ἀρπαγμὸς ἁγιορροῦ." The meaning then is, that He did not think fit so to use that equality, but on the contrary chose the part of self-renunciation.

This explanation certainly satisfies (as Α fails to do) the requirements of the context, while it in some measure avoids the difficulty as to ἀρπαγμός (which attaches to Β). Yet the meaning assigned by Meyer to that word
is at best but quasi-active, and differs considerably from its proper meaning—an "act of seizing." Nor does his rendering bring out the required contrast to the subsequent "emptied Himself," by any means so simply or forcibly as the more obvious "He counted it not a prize." Further, he takes no account of the probability that the sense of expression is the same as that of the closely similar ἄρπαγμα γεγιστον.

(i) The interpretation of Chrys. (Hom. VII., i.; 'Contr. Anom.,' X.) followed by Theophyl. and Isag., has been regarded as of an intermediate character. It is briefly thus:—What one has of right, one does not so greedily grasp, as one has taken by usurration. A slave elevated to dignity, a tyrant who has seized a kingdom,—is more tenacious of it than a son born to an inheritance, a king seated on an ancestral throne. The Son of God, accordingly, did not cling to His Prerogatives of Godhead as one would do who had wrongfully usurped them, but on the contrary stripped Himself of them all.

But that Chrys. (as above) here takes ἄρπαγμον in the concrete sense, appears from his words,—Ἡρατεί τις τε, τοῦτο κατ' ἑαυτόν διασαντός,—ὁ ἄρπασας τε, κατ' ἑαυτόν διασαντός.—Isidor. Pelus., who gives ἐρμων and ἄρπαγμα as equivalents for ἄρπαγμον here (Epist. IV., 23), explains exactly as Chrys. does, using his illustration of the slave raised to rank. Cp. also Theodt.'s similar comment. Thus the interpretation of Chrys., which would stand equally well if ἄρπαγμα were read in the text for ἄρπαγμον, is not really intermediate, but merely a form of B; its peculiarity lying mainly in the explanation it suggests of the origin of the idiom ἄρπαγμον [ἄρπαγμα] ἧγεσισαν.

IV. AUTHORITIES ON EITHER SIDE.

(i) The Versions. Stress has been laid on the alleged fact that all the Ancient Versions (except the Arabic) adopt A. But the evidence yielded by some of them proves when examined to be inconclusive. As to the Vulg., the word "rapina" by which it (after Old Lat.) renders ἄρπαγμον, is ambiguous, —being in it frequently used as "praeda." [Similarly in Martian,—e.g., "mollem frangere . . . rapinam,"—Epigr. I., cxxix. 19.] So we find "rapina," Isai. iii. 14 (LXX., ἄρπαγμα); ib. ixi. 8 (LXX., ἄρπαγμα): where the corresponding Hebrew words 'al, נַֽעַל have likewise the double meaning of (1) the act, (2) the thing seized. The same is true of the Syriac rendering, [אכ'א (here,]

---

1 Grotius puts forward the singular idea that we have here a Syriac idiom, which he finds in the words [אכ'א] in the Liturgy and in both the above texts of Isai.). Moreover it appears that some Latin writers, e.g., Jerome (see below ii. (2)), with this rendering "rapinam" before their eyes, yet adopted B; and must therefore have understood "rapina" as "praeda." Neither from the Latin nor from the Syriac Versions therefore can any sure inference be drawn. The remaining Vers. may perhaps be found to be similarly indecisive. Probably the translators, finding before them an idiom that was strange to them, were content to render it verbatim, and to leave the interpretation of it to others.

(ii) The Fathers. Waterland, in the Sermon above cited, in defending rendering A, asserts that it has the countenance of "the Greek and Latin Fathers from the fourth century downwards."—or (he adds) "after the Nicene Council." Bp. Lightfoot, on the contrary, writes, "While this interpretation is most common (though not universal) among Latin writers, it is unsupported by a single Greek Father, unless possibly at a very late date." (1) As regards Greek authorities, the former of these statements is certainly erroneous; to the latter, there is at least one signal exception. Athanasius, 'Contr. Arian,' Orat. III., 6, writes as follows: Ο λος Θεος ἤτοι τον διὸ οὐκ οὑς ἀρπαγμὸν θεοῦ τὸ εἶναι θεοῦ,—where the words are indubitably taken, as in A, as part of the statement of Christ's antecedent greatness. The words of Βασιλ also, from which Bp. Lightfoot says (p. 113, note), "nothing can be inferred," seem to be unmistakably on the same side. Ο οὑς Θεος, οὑς ἀρπαγμὸν ἠγούμενος τὸ εἶναι θεοῦ, πός ἁμαρτωλος καὶ ἄνωθεν θεος; (‘Adv. Eun., IV.)

Even after these deductions, however, the mass of Greek authority against the rendering A is very great; and in a matter which turns on a question of Greek language, ought to be weighed a unanimous concord of Latin writers, were such forthcoming. First of Severus, rendered by Fabricius "non assumam rapinam." Against this, it is to be observed (1) that assumere rapinam is far from being equivalent to ἄρπαγμα γεγιστον (however interpreted); (2) that this rendering of [אכ'א] (as if = ב) is wrong—its proper meaning being flame; and the above words from the Ritual being correctly translated (Assemani, II., p. 270), "non apprehendam flamman;" (3) that the Syriac Translators fail to recognize any such idiom, but render ἄρπαγμον θεοῦ, ματάρα [אכ'א].

---

1 The like ambiguity appears to attach to the Coptic, [אכ'א] (Bp. Ellicott).

2 The modern Versions, with the signal exception of Luther's ("hielt er es nicht für einen Raub") adopt A.
in order of time is the oft-cited passage (ap. Euseb., 'H. E.,' V. 2), in the Epistle of the Churches of Lyons and Vienne (A.D. 177), where the martyrs are said to be imitators of Him Who ἄρπασαν γῆς τὸ ἐγώ Θεός, these words being undoubtedly used as in expressing His self-surrender. We find the same interpretation in Origen (e.g., 'In Joh.,' VI., 37); and (as above shown) in Euseb., Chrys., Theod. Mops., Theodt., Isidor Pelus., and Cyril A.—also (of later writers) in ÒEcumen. and Theophyl. (Other references will be found in Bp. Lightfoot, p. 132.) Thus the chain of authorities, contrary to Waterland's assertion, reaches from the second century to the eleventh; and is as strong after the Nicene Council as before it.

(2) As regards Latin writers, Waterland's statement is substantially correct. After the date A.D. 400, there seems to be absolute unanimity in favour of the interpretation apparently required by the Vulg. rendering of the text, and previously adopted by Iervalt (see the citations in Waterland).

Opposed to A, however, a few Latin authorities are to be found:—of the third century, Novatian; of the fourth, Hilary of Poitiers, and Jerome (see the passages cited by Waterland, and by Bp. Lightfoot, p. 134).

(3) A survey of the names of Greek and Latin Fathers on both sides, as given above, may satisfy the theologian that, doctrinally, either interpretation (as Waterland says) "will suit very well with Catholic principles," though "the latter [B] only can be any way drawn to favour the Arians." Anglican authority is divided on the question. Against the name of Waterland on the side of A, may be set that of Bp. Bull, who, adopting B, affirms of this text, that it alone is sufficient to confute all heresies against the Person of our Lord ('Def. Fid. Nic.,' II. c. 2, § 2).

For confirmation of this assertion, read the masterly series of arguments, drawn from the text so interpreted, with which Chrys. overwhelms, one by one, the manifold forms of heresy by which the Truth of that Divine Human Person had, up to his time, been assailed ('Homn., VI...VIII.); and cp. the brief summaries of the same, given by Theodt., ÒEcumen., and Theophyl.

[For a very full and able monograph on this passage, see J. J. Gurney's 'Notes and D. ser.:', No. 7.—J.]

80. not regarding his life] The Vulg. rendering, "tradens animam suam," is not very intelligible. That of the Latin translator of Theod. Mops. is better, "in incertum tradens,"—apparently representing παραβολοντικον; as does the Old Lat., "parabolus de anima."

CHAPTER III.

1 He warneth them to beware of the false teachers of the circumcision, shewing that himself hath greater cause than they to trust in the righteousness of the law; 7 which notwithstanding he counteth as dung and loss, to gain Christ and his righteousness, 12 therein acknowledging his own imperfection.

15 He exhorteth them to be thus minded, and to imitate him, and to decline the ways of carnal Christians.

FINALLY, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

To write the same things. ...] "To repeat this exhortation, Rejoice in the Lord, is to seditious (lit., "slothful," or "causing weariness").—"For you it is safe," is as imparting certainty, precluding mistake. This sense of the adj. (ἀπελπισία), in which it is used wherever found in Acts (xxii. 34; xxii. 30; xxvi. 26), best suits the context here. Thus the connection is with the sentence just before—"the same things" being the reiterated calls to "rejoice." This explanation, (a) (Bengel, &c.), seems more natural than any of the others proposed: such as, (b) "to repeat the same [exhortations to unity]," referring to ii. 2 (Bp. Lightfoot); or, (c) "to write the same things [as I have written to others]" (Bp. Wordsworth); or, (d) "the same things [as I have spoken personally]"
v. 2—3.] PHILIPPIANS. III.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision. 

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit,

(Theod. Mops., &c; or, (c) "the same things [as I have written in former Epistles]"—not extant (Meyer). Of these the last miss the plain meaning of "the same," as expressing "the same things as I have written in this letter"; and (d) moreover forces the verb, "to write," into undue emphasis. Against (e) lies the special objection that, merely to explain this passage, it assumes the existence of letters of which there is no proof; for though Polycarp mentions "epistles" of Paul to the Philippians, the word is shown to be frequently used in the plur. of a single letter (Polyc., 'Ad Philipp., III., on which see Coteler; see also Bp. Lightfoot, pp. 138–40, Last Epistles). And the fact that the topic of unity does not reappear until we reach iv. 2, is hard to reconcile with (d). Bp. Lightfoot (Introd., IV.), after Ewald, explains that the Apostle, being about to introduce that topic here, is interrupted in writing; resumes (at v. 2) with a different topic; and only finds again at iv. 2 the thread he had here dropped. But this is surely an arbitrary, even violent, hypothesis. The interpretation (a) adopted above is simple and natural. The objection to it, that the precept "rejoice" has no bearing on safety, is avoided by explaining "safe" as above.

3. Beware of [Literally, "Look to," Vulg., "videte"]—("Beware of" would be φθενετίν ἄμιο, with gen.), implying, "be on your guard against." It is a warning against probable, not actual, danger. (Rilleit.—J.)

The warning comes in abruptly after v. 1 (however interpreted). The connection seems to be: "I have repeatedly invited you to glory, and to rejoice, and in the Lord. There are those who, not like me, would hinder this Christian joy, by substituting false ground of trust and of glorying—even the flesh (w. 3). Against such, be your guard." Similarly, Gal. vi. 13, 14, he contrasts the Judaizers who would "glory in the flesh" of their disciples, with himself, who will not glory "save in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ." And accordingly the warning here is—for the first time in this Ep.—against such Judaizing teachers. See above, i. 18, 28, and notes.

Why he should introduce the topic, and so strongly enforce it, does not plainly appear. In Philippi, where there were but few Jews (see note on Acts xvi. 13), the Judaizing element cannot have been considerable. The fact that Jews were numerous and hostile in the sister city of Thessalonica (Acts xvi. 6–7) hardly accounts for his vehemence here. Probably the topic was suggested, and the vehemence prompted, rather by his own present experience of Judaizers at Rome, than by any special apprehension of danger to the Philippians from the influence of such. (See Introd., § III., B, iii.)

Beware of dogs] Rather, "the dogs," the warning being definitely pointed against a class by the art. prefixed. The Jews called the Gentiles dogs, as Mohammedans call Christians to this day; but "this ignominious name, like a stone cast at the Heathen, fell upon their own heads." (Lightfoot, 'Hor. Hebr. et Talm.,' on Matt. xvi. 26.—J.) See Note at end of ch.

of evil workers] "The evil workers" (art. again); not "the workers of evil," but such as, though they do a work, and profess to do "the work" (ii. 30, note), do it in a wrong spirit, on false principles, with evil results; thus "doing a work far worse than none; for they tear up the foundations that have been well laid" (Chrys.)—and (we may add) they wrongly "build again" that which in Christ has been done away (Gal. ii. 18). Cp. "crafty workmen" (same noun), 2 Cor. xi. 13.

of the concision] A contemptuous name for the circumcision (καρπάρχα) for περιπότης,—cp. ἀροπόβαρα, Gal. v. 12). This noun is not found in N.T., or LXX.; but in the latter its cognate verb expresses the act of inflicting on oneself wounds or "cuttings," such as were practised in heathen worship (3 [1] Kings xviii. 28). Circumcision is now (he implies) but a "cutting in the flesh" such as the Law forbids (περιποτης, Lev. xxi. 5; cp. xix. 28). See Note at end of ch.

This play on words is characteristic of St. Paul. Bp. Lightfoot compares Rom. xii. 3, "to think highly, to think soberly" (περιποτης, σωφρονοις). See Winer, III. § 68, 2. "The concision," "the circumcision," are used (abstract for concrete) for "the concised," "the circumcised."

3. For we are the circumcision] To St. Paul, though a circumcised Jew, his "circumcision is nothing"—even as he assures the Gentiles that their "uncircumcision is nothing,"—"in Christ Jesus" (1 Cor. vii. 19; Gal. v. 6; vi. 15). Here he identifies himself with them ("we are"), as "the [true] circumcision," the marks of which he proceeds to state.

As (v. 2) the opprobrious name of "dog" recoils on the Jew from the Gentile at whom he flung it; so here the boasted title of the "circumcision," forfeited by the Jews, lapses in Christ to the Gentile.

which worship God in the spirit] Here...
and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.
4. Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereabouts he might trust in the flesh, I more:

5. Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee;
6. Concerning zeal, persecuting the

A. V. follows the usual reading (Θεϊκαί—so Rec.). Translate (reading Θεϊκαί with best authorities), "who worship by the Spirit of God" (πνεύματι, without art., being treated as a proper name)—i.e., "with worship inspired by His Spirit"—opposed to "confidence in the flesh," as described in what follows. Thus, "to worship" (αὐτροπία) is used absolutely; as of the Jewish worship, Luke ii. 37; Acts xxvi. 7. By here appropriating the verb, he claims for Christians that they have not only the true circumcision, but the true worship.

rejoice in Christ Jesus] "Glory in;" see i. 26, and cp. 1 Cor. i. 31; 2 Cor. x. 17; also Jer. ix. 23, 24. For connection, see on v. 1.

have no confidence in the flesh] "As we repudiate trust in circumcision, so in all else that is outward." The negat. (οὐ, not μή) here used, shews that he is not merely defining the character of the true Christian, but is asserting that "we" are such. See Winer, III. § 55; 5.

4-6. He can surpass the Jews on their own Grounds.

4. Though I might also have confidence. . .] Lit., "Although myself having confidence in the flesh also."—"I am content to class myself with you Gentiles, though I might boast my privileges as a Jew as well as my calling in Christ."—"I" (emphatic), "I can (though you cannot) claim more than they, if it comes to asserting fleshly claims." With this and the next v. cp. 2 Cor. xi. 18, 21, 22.

If any other man thinketh that he hath. . .] So A. V. rightly. Lit., "seems to have." The verb is here used, as elsewhere (e.g., 1 Cor. vii. 40), in the sense of "seems to himself." He is going to state, not what he appears to others, but what he may justly "think" himself to be. For the moment he resumes his old Jewish standpoint, and asserts himself in such terms as, till he became a Christian, he might have used; as next v.

5. "Circumcised the eighth day" (therefore not an alien proselyte, who would be circumcised as an adult,—nor an Ishmaelite, at fourteen)—"of the stock of Israel" (therefore not a descendant of proselytes)—"of the tribe of Benjamin" (not of any of the Ten apostate Tribes)—"an Hebrew of the Hebrews"—rather "of Hebrews" (born of and bred by parents who had not dropped their ancestral speech and usages,—"ex Hebræo," Vulg.).

Circumcised the eighth day] Lit., "in circumcision, an eighth-day-man" (read περιτομήν, dat., instead of the hardly-translatable nom. of Rec.).

Benjamin] One of the tribes sprung from the beloved Rachel; the only tribe besides Levi, that (notwithstanding its original closer consanguinity with Ephraim, and the rivalry between its royal house and that of Judah) remained faithful to the sceptre of Judah, the throne of David, and the Temple Worship, when the Ten Tribes forsook them; the tribe whose glory it was that on its soil stood the Holy and royal City.

Hebrew] I.e., in language, and customs; not as many Jews of the dispersion who had lost both, and were "uninitiated in the tongue of Israel" (Chrys.). "Hebrew" is opposed to "Hebæan" (A. V., "Grecian," Acts vi. 1,—see note there), both words denoting Israelites, the one "Hebrew-speaking," the other "Greek-speaking." See Ap. Trench, "Syn. N. T.," i. v.; where the distinction between Hebrew, Jew, and Israelite, is thus briefly summed up: "In the first is noted language; in the second, nationality; in the third, religious privileges and vocation.

Though born at Tarsus, St. Paul was, as he tells us (Acts xxii. 3), trained in Jerusalem in Hebrew learning. Accordingly, he usually cites the O. T., not as a "Hebæan" Jew would do, from LXX., but as translated by himself from the original.

as touching the law, a Pharisee] Cp. Acts xxxii. 6; xxvii. 5. So far he has declared what, by right of birth, he is: this sentence and the two following tell what, of his own free-will, he became. By profession, of the "straitest sect" of the followers of the Law; in zeal, active in putting down opposition to it; in morals, irreproachably true to it. Such he was: and such (no doubt) he boasted himself to be, up to the moment when that journey to Damascus (Acts ix. 1-9) was arrested by the Light and the Voice that transformed him into what he is.

6. Concerning zeal, persecuting the church] With what feelings he looked back on his career as a persecutor, he tells us, 1 Tim. i. 13-16. Here, he speaks of it as it was regarded by his former self,—as a proof of
church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ.

8 Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of


[1] touching the righteousness which is in the law I.e., "which lies within the letter of the Law, and consists in following that." Lit., "in law," the word "law" (without art.) being used, here and in last v., as if a proper name (so "in Law," gal. iii. 11); not Law in general, but "the Law" of Moses.


7, 8. He now despises such, and seeks better grounds.

7. But what things were gain to me, those I counted ...] More exactly, "But such things as used to be gains to me, these I have accounted loss for Christ's sake"

(perf. tense, "have come to account"). "These things, which belong to me as a Jew, I no longer reckon over one by one, as I used to do, as gains—items on the side of profit in my life-account; but, on the contrary, I have learned to sum them up under the one head of loss.

This contrasted force of "gains," (plur.), "loss" (sing.), is thus brought out by Bp. Lightfoot.—The tense of the verb "were" (impr., i.e. "used to be") shews that in the foregoing summary of what, as a Jew, he was, he speaks from his former point of view (as in v. 4, where see note). Now, even his moral blamelessness is regarded by him as less than unavailing toward salvation,—as tending to hinder it, in so far as it may withdraw him from Christ. "For Christ's sake," therefore, he has come to view it too as "loss." Yet he is not to be understood as disparaging observance of the Moral Law; it is loss only (as next v. explains) as compared with Christ; "as to sit in candle-light is loss, when the sun has risen." (Chrys.)

8. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss] "May more, I also account..."

He has learned to account (perf.) his Jewish advantages as "loss" (last v.),—nay farther, he also continues to account (pres.) "all things to be loss" (as well as those). "All things," i.e., all that are apart from Christ. See Note at end of ch.

[1] for the excellency of the knowledge of ...] "I despise all, for the sake of the surpassing worth of the knowledge of Him."—"For the sake of,"—same prep. (δια with accusat.) as last v., "for Christ's sake"); so below, "for Whose sake.

my Lord] As "my God," i. 3, and iv. 19, where see notes. To know Him as mine is (he implies) what makes the knowledge so precious above all. "My" is thus far more expressive than the other reading "our.

For Whose sake I suffered loss of"

(aor.—scil., when he turned to Christ).—"All things," here with art., "my all,"—the total of the things above recounted, and of all that he had or could have. His "all," which he then lost, his present judgment pronounces worse than worthless; he still "accounts" (again, pres. tense, as last v.) all that is not of Christ as "loss"; yea, not merely so, but "dung,"—rather "refuse," "garbage," unclean and loathsome:—or perhaps, "dogs' meat" (ανιβάλον, as if κυνιβάλον, or ἢ κύνος βαλλόμενον),—fit but for those "dogs" (v. 2), not for "children" (ii. 15);—cp. Matt. xxv. 26, 27. Chrys. explains the word to mean "husks" or "chaff," adding (again to guard against depreciation of moral obedience, as in v. 7) that the husk, though cast away when the fruit is ripe, is valuable in protecting its earlier growth. Cp. Ecclus. xxvii. 4 (same word).

that I may win Christ] "That so I may gain..."

The conj. has here its strict final force. The verb refers back to the "gains," last v.—His aim in rejecting those many false gains, is, that instead he may realize the one true and paramount gain—Christ. It is to replace all his cancelled gains, by one single item . . . . to write the word CHRIST on the side of his receipts; to enter there the brief summary of inexhaustible treasures, enough to counterbalance the loss of all things." (Dean Vaughan, Lect. XIIII.)

The passage seems to be a reminiscence of that other contrast drawn by the Lord, between "losing" and "gaining" (same verbs), Matt. xvi. 26. There, the world is the "gain," at the cost of the "loss" of the soul; here, St. Paul is willing to lose the universe for the sake of gaining Christ.

9-14. His present aims, and course.

9. And be found in him] "My aim is, that I may have Christ for mine now (last v.); and that, when the Day of testing comes, I may be proved to be His, living in Him."
the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

not having mine own righteousness . . . but that which is through . . . ] He defines, (1) negatively, (2) positively, what it is to be “found in Christ.”

(1) Not shewing such righteousness as that in which he has asserted himself (v. 6) to be “blameless,” scil., “righteousness in the Law,”—or, as here expressed, “mine own righteousness, that which is of the Law.” (It is in the Law, defined by its precepts; of the Law, actuated by its spirit; his own, being the sum total of his voluntary obedience to the Law.)

(2) But that righteousness which elsewhere (Rom. iii. 21, 22; &c.) he so fully sets forth, “that which is through faith in Christ” (omit art., and observe ἡμεῖς gen. objecti).—He says not “Righteousness of Faith,”—though the verbal contrast to “Righteousness of Law” seems to require that expression (which elsewhere he uses, as Rom. ix. 30),—lest it should seem as if Righteousness was or could be “of Faith,” in a sense parallel to that in which the supposed righteousness of the Jew was “of the Law.” Thus the prepositions of the passage are in antithesis, as well as the nouns. Righteousness is through (not of) Faith (not Law).

which is of God) A farther definition of the “Righteousness” spoken of. Though “through Faith,” it is “of God.” His therefore, not man’s; the words “of God” being opposed to “mine own,” as well as to “of Law.”

Thus we have, in theological language, God’s Grace as the moving Cause, Christ’s Work as the meritorious Cause, and Faith as the instrument, in Justification. It comes “through Faith,” to him whose faith is “in Christ,” “of God.”

by faith) Lit., “on the faith” (art.). These words farther describe Righteousness as bestowed “on the ground of such faith” (as above defined).—scil., “in Christ.”—“On,” represents Faith as its basis; “through,” as its instrument. For both, cp. Acts iii. 16.

To sum up:—The Righteousness spoken of is a present reality which the Christian is to “have” (not merely as imputed to him); it is his, so far as he has “faith in Christ”; it thus comes “through Faith,” as its channel; but is “of God” as its Origin; and is the fulfilment He sets “upon that faith.” Thus the great doctrine of Righteousness by Faith, incidentally introduced to point his reprobation of the Judaizers’ self-trust, is briefly yet fully given in these few pregnant words.

10. That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings,

and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings] “Knowing Him” is here shown in two aspects,—(1) in His Exaltation, (2) in His Humiliation. It is experience (1) of the quickening virtue of His Resurrection, (2) of assimilation to Him by partaking of His Sufferings (Wiesinger).

the power of his resurrection] Scil., the Power (δύναμις,—cp. δύναμα, v. 21), whereby He raised Himself from the dead, thus “declared to be the Son of God with power” (Rom. i. 4),—and will raise all that are His, first from sin and finally from Death;—the Power, namely, of His Spirit (Rom. viii. 9-11). To the Christian, conscious experience of the present victory in him of the Spirit over sin, is the earnest of the ultimate triumph for him of that Spirit over Death.

and the fellowship of his sufferings] Omit art., with best MSS., and see Winer as cited on i. 7. The words, “the power and fellowship,” thus joined under one art., express the knowledge of Christ under its twofold aspect, as above,—inward and outward. This “fellowship” consists not merely in the fact of suffering as He did, but in a spirit drawn near to Him by sufferings borne in His strength. See this beautifully drawn out in the Exhortation in our Visitation of the Sick.

being made conformable] “In being con-
formed” (pres.), i.e., by a progressive working. The verb is derived from “form” (ii. 6, where see note). Cp. “conformed,” v. 21, and note,—also Addl. Note.

These words relate to both the aspects (shewn above) of “knowing” Christ. He regards “Death” as being to him the consummation of “sufferings,” and the necessary antecedent of the “Resurrection.” Gradually, through sufferings and death, he is “being conformed” into the likeness of Christ’s Death;—in the Resurrection (next v.) the conformation is to be complete (v. 21). Cp. for
being made conformable unto his death;

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained a realized fact, but for both he is hoping and striving.

"May attain" (aor. conj., as "may apprehend," next v.). "If by any means" expresses not doubt, but rather the eagerness that strives by all ways to reach its end. "Attain unto," implies a goal in view (expressed below, v. 14); the verb (with its usual local meaning, "to reach one's destination") serving to introduce the idea of the race (next v.; cp. ii. 16). See 1 Clem. R., LXIII., cited above, Introd., § V., A, ii., note 5, where the same verb has "goal" as its object. "The Resurrection from the dead," accordingly is the goal; the prize is with Him. Whom it is the Apostle's single aim to gain.—Christ.

From these two vss. we learn how to him (i. 21), "life is Christ,"—because in life he is being conformed, outwardly by suffering with Him, inwardly by his quickening Power, into Christ's Likeness: "death is gain," as the passage to the Resurrection-Life, in which he shall be Christ's and Christ his.

"the resurrection of the dead." Translate, "the resurrection from the dead," according to the true reading. The reading of A.V. (also of Rec.) has little evidence, and yields a defective sense;—for in "the resurrection of the dead"—the General Resurrection, all must have part. "The resurrection from the dead" means (cp. Luke xx. 35) "the Resurrection of the Just" (Luke xiv. 14). Here the meaning is farther pointed by the reappearance of the prep. (ἐν) in the word for "resurrection" (σάρκος τῆς—nowhere else in N.T.). So Hooker explains it, "E. P.; V. lxviii. 12.

13 Not as though I had already attained;" Not that I had already obtained," scil., the prize, expressed below (v. 14), of the race, implied in last v. So, "one receiveth the prize" (same verb and noun, 1 Cor. ix. 24). The words guard against the suppose that on, the moment of his conversion, when he was "laid hold on by Christ" (see below), he secured that which is true he but hopes to win at the end of a lifelong struggle. The tense of the verb (aor.) relates to that moment (as I suffered loss," v. 8,—cp. next note). A.V. here misleads, by employing the same word "attain" to render the different verbs in this and last v.—thus suggesting "the resurrection" as the object of this verb; which would be unmeaning, for his readers needed not to be told that he "had not already attained the resurrection." —To "attain" the goal, to "obtain" the prize,—neither is yet to New Test.—Vol. III.
attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

14 I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in anything ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

16 Nevertheless, whereby we have already attained, let us walk by the "I press on;"—the latter verb conveying the strain of strenuous undivided effort in the pursuit. (Chrys.)

His conversion marks the date, not of his "obtaining," but of Christ's "laying hold on" him and setting him on the course in which he seeks finally to "lay hold on" Christ.

13. Brethren. From his direct address to them in the opening of this ch., he has been carried on into the thought of his own course,—its struggles, its hopes, and its end. Now, resuming from v. 1 the word "brethren," he bespeaks their attention to the lessons contained in that course.

I count not myself . . .] Both pronouns are emphatic:—"Others may regard me as secure;—or may blind themselves in false security. I know my state as it truly is,—one of expectant striving."—(For "not," A and Ν give "not yet.")—"Count," better "reckon" (Κοινωνον.—not ἑγών οὖν, as v. 7, 8).

but this one thing I do] "I mind" (cp. "be minded," v. 15, where see note).

forgetting those things which are behind] Not his Jewish privileges and attainments (those are not forgotten, but remembered to be renounced); but rather, the completed portion of his Christian course. He sufferers himself not to think of that, but only of the "things which are before;" i.e., the portion of that course which is still in the future.

reaching forth] A graphic word (ἐναρμόνει), descriptive of the attitude of the runner,—the body thrown forward, the hand outstretched, in eager straining for the prize.

14. I press toward the mark for the prize] The former prep. and noun give the direction of his pursuit, the "goal;"—the latter its object, the "pri". See note on v. 11.

of the high calling . . .] Not the special miraculous call of the Apostle; but the "heavenward calling" (ἀνω θλήμα), whereby every Christian is called to enter on the race for the prize. The prize is thus "the prize of the calling," as being its end. The calling is "of God in Christ Jesus," as addressed by God to men in the Mission of His Son.

"He will have thee run the race below; He gives the crown above. Even on earth the most honoured among athletes are crowned not on the racecourse below; but the King calls them up (ἀνω κληρον) to his presence and crowns them there." (Chrys.)

15, 16. He invites them to persevere in the like course.

16. Let us therefore] Here, in the plural pron., he directly applies to them the teaching of his own course, including them with himself in this exhortation.

perfect] Not of course in the absolute sense,—nor as "perfected" (as v. 12),—nor as Matt. v. 48 (where see note); but as "full-aged," opposed to "children" ("men,"—A.V., 1 Cor. xiv. 20), to "babes" ( Eph. iv. 13, 14; Hebr. v. 13, 14) ;—such as have done with the rudimentary righteousness of the Law, which belongs to "babes" (Gal. iv. 3). See Abp. Trench, 'Syn. N. T.,' i. v. —"The perfect and the perfected are different; the former is equipped for the race, the latter is close on the prize" (Bengel).

See Jer. Taylor, 'Unum Necess.,' I. 2, on the various meanings of Christian perfection. "Evangelical perfection supposes a beginning, infant grace, progression, watchfulness, trembling fear."—See also Horsley, 'Sermons,' XXVIII.—J.

Let us . . . be thus minded] Lit. "Let us mind this,"—scil., the "one thing" of v. 13:—"Let us persevere, without dwelling on the past, in the course that lies before us." In "this," accordingly, is included all that he has told us above of the spirit of his life (v. 7-14),—his disclaimer of "righteousness of his own;" his seeking "to have the righteousness of God,—through faith in Christ," "to gain Christ," "to know Christ," "to attain" the goal, "to obtain" the prize.

and if in anything ye be otherwise minded] "If in any point (not included in the "one thing" needful for all to think) ye be otherwise (i.e., wrongly)minded, in such point also God will shew you the right way" (as He has already done in that one thing).—He speaks of errors in the conduct of the
same rule, let us mind the same thing.
17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample.
18 (For many walk, of whom

Christian life, springing from wrong views whether of duty or of doctrine,—alike in either case to be corrected by God's revelation of the truth. "God shall reveal even this," rather "this too,"—this as to which you are in error, as well as that to the knowledge of which all who are "perfect" have attained.—The limited sense in which perfect is used in this 
, (see above), is well illustrated by these words, in which possible error is attributed to some of the "perfect."

Bengel however explains, "otherwise than [the perfect are minded]";—arguing from the change of person from "us" to "ye." But the pronouns are not expressed in the Greek, as this would require.

This 
 bears on the lessons of humility and charity which pervaded the Ep. It teaches us to distinguish the non-essentials from the essentials of the Christian life; to attribute the latter to all who are Christians indeed; but, as to the former, to recognize that all are apt to err, all must look to God for correction.

16. Nevertheless] A limitation of the promise in the close of last 
. "We who have entered on the race, may trust God to set us right if we err in aught, provided only we are persevering in the course." The assurance of light from Him does not supersede the duty of perpetual and watchful effort.

epobeto we have already attained, let us walk by the same] Omit all the words that follow "by the same," from "rule" to end of 
, (inclusive),—a certainly spurious addition. Translate, "what we have arrived at, [it is needful] to walk according to the same." The former verb (ephthave) properly means "to come first;" in later Greek it passes into the meaning of "to arrive" simply (which is its regular meaning in modern Greek). Here, it expresses the act of reaching a point in the course. Each at any given moment has his own point of attainment; but all the points lie on the line of that one course; and by that line each is to walk, to the end. "To walk" (epoiein), i.e., to walk in a line (epoiesin), to "walk by rule" (Gal. vi. 16), to "walk orderly" (Acts xxi. 24, A.V.).—Some limit the attainment spoken of, to knowledge; others to things moral and spiritual. But the knowledge proper to the Christian includes all, for it is to know Christ (v. 8, 10).

17-19. SUCH EXAMPLE TO BE FOLLOWED: WARNING AGAINST COUNTER-EXAMPLES.
17. be followers together of me] Lit., "joint-imitators"—well rendered by Old Lat., "coimitators."—His example, as above set forth, will be a farther bond of unity among them.—The limit within which he offers himself as an example, is expressed, 1 Cor. xi. 1.

mark them which ... ] "Observe (that you may imitate) them." The same verb is used of observing in order to avoid, Rom. xvi. 17. "Follow, in my absence, such among yourselves (e.g. those commended, iv. 3) as most closely follow me and mine."

Dropping the metaphor of the course, and with it the verbs "to press on," to "walk by rule," he introduces a new verb (epeswairos), to "take one's way," to "pursue one's daily walk," good or bad,—expressing by it (here) his own walk which they are to follow, and (next 
,) that of whom they are to be shun.

ye have us for an ensample ... ] In the plu. pron. he associates with his own example that of others; those, probably, who had been with him at Philippi,—Timothy, Silas, Luke. He does not assume to himself to be their sole pattern.

18. (For many walk, of whom ... ] Is., "It is needful to offer you our example, for contrary examples are before you."

The construction would regularly be, "many walk, as I have told you, as enemies of," &c. But it is broken by the vehement grief that bursts from the Apostle at the thought of Christian truth perverted and Christian liberty abused.

I have told you] "Use to tell" (impf.) scil., in his personal teaching.

and now tell you even weeping] Tears were drawn from the Apostle by the knowledge of moral defection in one Church (2 Cor. ii. 4); and by the prospect of false guides misleading another (Acts xx. 31). Here, both causes concur; and with twofold bitterness he weeps to think that there are those who would show the Philippians the example of perverting that Christian liberty which he preached, into licence for sensual excess.—The words imply that such evil influences are increasing in the Church.

The enemies of the cross of Christ] Those, namely, who make His Atonement a plea for continuing in sin, refusing to "take up the cross" (Matth. xvi. 24), to be "crucified with Christ," to "crucify the flesh" (Gal. ii. 20; v. 24), to be "partakers of His suffering," and "conformed unto His Death" (above, v. 10).—They are not the same as the Judaizing
teachers of v. 3; but rather, nominal Christians living in, and (by example rather than precept) incalculating, such heathen license as he warns the Romans against (Rom. vi. 1, 15), such as seems to have existed among the Corinthians (1 Cor. v. 1-11). The history of modern missions painfully testifies to the fact that the moral pollutions of heathenism too often survive among those who have not only outwardly but to all appearance intellectually embraced the Gospel.

19. Observe the points of the contrast between this v. and 14. For the goal of "the Resurrection," they have "perdition;" as their end; for the glorious "prize," their "glory is in their shame;" for the "heavenward calling," they "mind earthly things;" for "God in Christ Jesus," their "God is their belly."

[destruction] This rendering (as well as Vulg., "interitus") falls utterly short of the force of the original word, which here (as i. 28) can mean nothing short of final "perdition."

whose God is their belly,] I.e., such as (Rom. xvi. 18) "serve not our Lord, but their own belly;"—such as say (1 Cor. xv. 32), "Let us eat and drink; for to-morrow we die."

whose glory is in their shame] These men in their delusion boast of as glory that which is in truth their shame;—sell, their licence and the sensual indulgence it permits; like those of whom we read, 2 Pet. ii. 10-19.

who mind earthly things] Lit., "And their glory [is] in their shame, they who mind earthly things." This irregularity of construction, so expressive of indignant emotion, disappears in A. V.

See Col. iii. 2, for the same contrast between the "earthly" object, and the "things above" (the verb being same as here, φυσικο ν).
that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

The thought of his Lord in Heaven causes him to revert to the thoughts, even the words ("fashion," "form"), of the passage (ii. 6-11) in which he had traced His Course through abasement to the 'Throne. There, He puts off His Glory, taking the form of man with its servile fashion, and its consequent humiliation in Death. Here, the progression is reversed;—and by a gradual conforming (v. 10), which through the change of fashion of the raised body is to issue in entire and final conformity, the Christian passes with Christ from the humiliation of this mortal state into the glory of the Resurrection-Life. See Note at end of ch. on "shall change." Our vile body.... his glorious body

The body of our humiliation. The "vile body" of A.V. is an unhappy rendering, conveying a contempt for the corporeal state which is alien from the Apostle's teaching here and elsewhere. The words rather convey that "humiliation" was not the state for which the body was created, but one that has superened. Similarly, "the body of His Glory,"—that in which His Glory dwells, and whence it shines forth. See Note at end of ch. on "vile body,"

That it may be... That it may become. The words so translated are not found in the best MSS. They, however, supply the sense correctly.

according to the working whereby he is able] Lit., "the working of His being able," that is "of His Power";—the Power, namely, of His Resurrection (v. 10).

even to subdue all things] "Also to subdue all things;" not merely to transfigure man's body from "dishonour" into "glory" (1 Cor. xv. 43); but moreover to put down all opposing power (cp. 1 Cor. xv. 24-26; Eph. i. 22; also Hebr. ii. 8).

With this sublime thought he closes and enforces his warning;—"Follow not those whose walk is of the earth; but be of us whose walk is heavenward; for we are safe in the strong City of that Power Which prevails over all enemies,—over sin, and death, and hell."

ADDITIONAL NOTES on CHAP. III.

2. Beware of dogs... See Theodt. on Ps. lviii. [lix.];—in which Messianic Psalm it is remarkable that the persecuting Jews are compared to dogs (vv. 7 [6] and 15 [14]); and farther that they are described (v. 3 [2]) as οἱ ἐρρημωμένοι τῷ ἄρομα [cp. κακῶς ἐρρημωμένος]. "Dog," as a term of reproach, is used in classical writers to express shameless (e.g., Hom., 'Il,' VI. 356). In Eastern countries, where dogs are scavengers, it conveys unclean. In O. T. it is applied to persecutors (as above,—see also Ps. xxi. [xxii. 21 [20.]) to false teachers, Isai. liv. 10, 11. In N. T. see Matt. vi. 6; xv. 21, 27; Rev. xxii. 15 (cp. Deut. xxiii. 18). (See Gataker, 'Advers. Misc. Posth.,' XXXVII. [J.)

the conversion] Another interpretation, "the reading [of the Church]," "schism," is to be mentioned only because adopted by Theodt. and noticed by Chrys. (who, however, prefers the ordinary rendering). Donne adopts this interpretation, 'Sermons,' CXXX. —See Suicer, s. v.; Gataker, ut supr.—J.

8. Ten doubtless, and... The reading ἄλλα μιν οὖν is better supported than μενούργε τοῦ Ρεκ. It means "nay indeed, then," —οὖν continuing the previous statement, which μιν confirms, while ἄλλα corrects it by contrasting and extending;—introducing for ἐγγυμα (perf.), ἐγνώμαι (pres.); and for τάνημα, πάνηα.—See Winer, 'Gr.' III. § 53, 7, a. The καί before ἐγνώμαι likewise points the change of tense, but is doubtful (not in Cod. B).

20. Our conversation] This meaning (a) appears to be erroneously attributed to the word πολιτεία in the only passage that has been added in support of it. 'Ο δὲ γε περι τού καθ' ἡμάς πολιτείας δυναμικός ἡμών λόγος (Euseb., 'H. E.', V. ('Proem'). Here it rather means "commonwealth."

The passages of Aristotle, 'Pol.' (III., iv., v.), which are alleged in favour of (b), do not prove the point required. For though Aristotle says the word is πολιτεία (πολειτεία καὶ πολιτείας σημαίνει ταυτῶν—ν.), he means πολιτεία in the sense of mode of government, constitution (τὰς τῶν ἀρχῶν—ν.), —not of citizenship or municipality.

The classical use of the word appears to be,—(1) an act done by one as a citizen, an act of policy, or of government (as Demost., 'Cherson.,' 711; (2) a form of government (as Aristotle, above). Hence follows readily, (3) the meaning above preferred, a "state" or "commonwealth;"—which is found in a
CHAPTER IV.

1 From particular admonitions & he procedeth to general exhortations, to shewing how he rejoiced at their liberality towards him lying in prison, not so much for the supply of his own wants, as for the grace of God in them. And so he concludes with prayer and salutations.

CHAP. IV. 1. THE DUTY OF STEDFASTNESS.

The Apostle here resumes the thread of his Epistle. In the close of the digression of ch. iii., he has pointed to the hope of the Resurrection (iii. 20, 21); and from that high theme he now passes, with "therefore" as at the conclusion of his great Resurrection chapter (1 Cor. xv. 58), to the duty of stedfastness. Here, as there, the rapture of anticipation of the glory that shall be, serves but to strengthen his grasp on the earthly present of the Christian life.

1. my brethren . . . ] He multiplies expressions of endearment. Partly (perhaps) to soften the coming words of admonition,—partly because of the thought of their kindness which he has still to thank them for,—he overflows with loving words. From the denunciation of heresy (iii. 2) and corruption (ib. 18, 19), he turns in love and joy to these faithful and blameless "brethren." dearly beloved beloved. With this word he begins and ends his loving exhortation, dwelling on it with tender pleasure.

THEREFORE, my brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.
PHILIPPIANS. IV. 631

3 And I intreat thee also, true yokefellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellowlabourers, whose names are in the book of life.

(διάσχισμα). — But apparently the "crows" (αἰτιάμα) of the Elders (Rev. iv. 4), and assuredly of that of the Son of Man (ib. xiv. 14), are of royalty. The LXX. use the same word for the king's [יִצָּר] crown (יוֹדֶקֶם) 2 Kin. [2 Sam.] xii. 30; Esth. viii. 15; Ps. xx. [xxi.] 4 [3]. — The correct statement seems to be, that the former noun means a circlet of any sort, while the latter is restricted to the official crown symbolizing sovereignty.

so stand fast in the Lord] "So," i.e., as becomes citizens of such a city; cp. iii. 20. Cp. also i. 27 (where see note), in which v. as here, steadfastness is urged as a duty resulting from the fact of citizenship. There it is, "Stand fast, undismayed by your adversaries"; here, "Stand fast, sustained by the assurance of glory,—finding in the Lord strength so to stand." (1 Thess. iii. 8.)

2, 3. ADMONITION IN A CASE OF Discord.

2. I beseech Euodia . . . . . This name is wrongly given thus in A. V. with masc. termination. The fem. pron. "these" [women] in next v. (where see note) proves it to be the name of a woman, "Euodia." She and Syntyche appear to have stood high in the Church, whether because of their services (next v.), or their social rank (cp. Acts xvii. 4, 12), or (possibly) their calling as Deaconesses. Misunderstanding between such is an injury to the Body; and he therefore thus publicly urges them to be reconciled. The repetition of the verb, "I beseech Euodia, I beseech Syntyche," while pointing the words as a personal appeal to each, divides the expression of regard, and of blame, equally between both.

For the large part played by women in the first days of the gospel at Philippi, see Acts xvi. 13; 14, 15; 16–18; 40. These two may have been among the "women," "by the river side,"—the first audience to whom the Apostle preached Christ in Europe (Acts xvi. 13). See Introd., § II., B, 1; § IV., C.—Also § V., A, i. 4, note 3.

that they be of the same mind in the Lord] Not merely to be reconciled, but in a Christian spirit,—in Him according to Whose "mind" all His servants are to be "minded" (ii. 5).

3. And I intreat] Read "Yes, I ask" (κειμ., for κειτ of Rec., with most authorities). The verb (ἐπωτα) means "I request" (as of an equal); to which sense it is extended in N. T., Greek; its classical meaning being "I inquire." (Abp. Trench, 'Syn. N. T., i. v.)

true yokefellow] The position of the person here addressed cannot have been less than that of Chief Pastor of the Church of Philippi. (So Luther, &c., and some recent commentators.) For (1) he is distinguished by this term "yok.f.lov" (expressing a certain parity with the Apostle himself), as superior to the ordinary "fellowlabourers" mentioned after. (2) In so addressing him the Apostle, without fear of mistake, can omit to name him. (3) The duty of reconciling two important persons is here laid on him primarily, as a man in authority. These words therefore go far to prove the existence in this Church of a Chief Bishop, distinguished in office though not by title from the "bishops" (presbyters) of i. 1 (where see note), among whom we may regard him as included in that v. But farther, if we adopt the opinion (Grotius, Hammond, &c., and recently Bp. Lightfoot), which seems in itself highly probable, that Epaphroditus, though the bearer of the letter, is the person here addressed and charged with the task of reconciliation, then we must conclude (with Theod.—see on ii. 25)—though on different grounds, that Epaphroditus was the Presiding Bishop of Philippi: and we find a complete explanation of the absence of all notice of such Bishop from the opening of the Ep., in the fact that he was with St. Paul when he wrote it. — That he, though present, is here addressed as if among the Philippians, belongs to the epistolary usage (see first note on ii. 25), by which the writer mentally projects himself into the time present to his readers.

The supposition (mentioned by Chrys. and supported by many) that in the latter of these words (ἐνίσχυς αὐτῶν) we have a proper name "Synicus" (or even, as others conjecture, in the former, "Gnesius"), may be set aside as improbable. See Note at end of ch., on "yokfeleia."

"True," i.e., "genuine"; "thou who art in deed, by nature as well as by office, a partner with me in the yoke of Christ's service."

help those women which laboured with me] A. V. here misses the application of the first pronoun, and the force of the relative. Translate, "help these (scil., Euodia and Syntyche) seeing that they strove together with me." The verb is the same as that used i. 27, of the unanimous struggle of the Church for the faith. There, and probably
4. Rejoice in the Lord always: and again I say, Rejoice.

5. Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

This passage is from the New Testament, specifically from the Epistle of Paul to the Philippians (Phil. 4:4-5). It speaks to the importance of joy and moderation in the life of a Christian. Paul encourages his readers to rejoice always and to let their温和 be known. He emphasizes that the Lord is near, urging them to live in anticipation of His return.

The passage highlights the themes of joy and moderation, which are central to Christian living. Paul's exhortations are not just to be heard, but to be acted upon, as they are closely tied to the expectation of the second coming of Christ.
6 Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

&c. The derived noun (ἐμπαίρον) in N. T. peculiar to St. Paul, is found only in Acts xxiv. 4 (spoken by him), and 2 Cor. x. 1 ("clemency," "gentleness," A.V.). All these ideas are secondarily attached to this word; but its etymological and proper meaning is "that yieldingness which urges not its own rights to the uttermost"; hence equitas, as corrective of mere justice (Aristot., "Eth. N.", V. x. 6). The word as compared with "meekness" (μακάριος) belongs rather to outward conduct (Estius),—towards others (Bengel),—especially inferiors (Aquinas) (Abp. Trench, "Syn. N. T.," s. ν.)

unto all men] They had perhaps in some degree incurred before the world the reproach of factiousness, of which the difference between Euodias and Syntyche was an instance. He bids them rather she that forth in the eyes of all men a spirit such as (2 Cor. x. 1, as above) he attributes to Christ Himself, of "yielding gentleness," willing to suffer wrong,—that all men may see and glorify God in them.

Or he may mean that this spirit is to be exercised towards all men impartially,—even (Chrys.) towards the enemies of the Cross.

The Lord is at hand] This sentence connects itself directly with the foregoing precept; but has relation also to that of the following ν. (where see note.)—The nearness of Christ's Coming (anticipating above, iii. 20) ought to silence strife, and engender a spirit of forbearance. So James v. 8, "Be patient . . . for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh (ἐγγίζει)."

Chrys., &c., understand the words to promise speedy judgment on the "enemies of the Cross" (iii. 18);—"Be forbearing towards such, but be not anxious because of them; Christ is coming to avenge you." But the reference back to those "enemies" seems too remote.

Some (as Neander) interpret "at hand" of the "perpetual nearness" of the Lord, as a motive to "gentleness." For this sense of "at hand" see Ps. xxxiii. [xxxiv.] 19 [18]; cxliv. [cxliv.] 18, "The Lord is nigh" (ἐγγίζει in LXX., as here).

(For this latter interpretation, cp. 1 Clem. R., XXI., and Bp. Jacobson's note.—J.)

But if the word be so interpreted, on the strength of these passages, "the Lord" is the Father, contrary to St. Paul's usage (that title, with him, always denoting the Son). Farther, it is to be observed that in the above texts from the Ps., the persons to whom the Lord is nigh are expressed. They are not therefore truly parallel to this, when "at hand" is used absolutely.—"The Lord is nigh," as an absolute statement, cannot be understood but of the Second Advent. The Church accordingly uses this passage (v. 4-7) as an Advent Epist. The "Maranatha" ("the Lord cometh") of 1 Cor. xvi. 22, shows how the expression had become a Christian saying, —the "watchword" (Bp. Wordsworth) of the garrison of the City of God.

See, for this use of the advb. "nigh" (ἐγγίζει), Joel ii. 1 (LXX.); Matt. xxiv. 33; Rom. xiii. 11; Rev. i. 3; xxii. 10; and cp. Barnab., "Epist.," XXI.—J.

6. Be careful for nothing] If "careful" retained its proper meaning "full of care," this rendering would admirably convey St. Paul's meaning. But as the word is now employed, merely as the opposite of careless, its use in this place tends to mislead. "Be anxious," "soliloquous," represents the verb more truly. So 1 Cor. vii. 32, "I would have you without carefulness" (derived adj.).

Careful for nothing] The care which the Christian ought to be without, is the care that distracts prayer: what he ought to have, is the care which, leading to prayer and relieved by prayer, will free him from the anxious care here deprecated.—J.

The same temper of mind, the same sense of the near approach of the Lord [or, of His present nearness,—if we so interpret], which produces "forbearance" in our relations with men, will produce also the resigned trust in God, which "casts all our cares on Him."

In everything by prayer and supplication] Of these two nouns, the latter is simply supplication for express benefits, whether to God or to man; the former is prayer,—to God only, but extending to the whole range through which the seeking soul addresses itself to Him, even without definite request. See Abp. Trench, "Syn. N. T.," s. ν. Each noun here has the art., implying, "with such spirit of prayer, and such act of supplication [as each occasion as it arises shall require or suggest]."

With thanksgiving] Here, on the other hand, the noun has no art.; the reason apparently being that—whereas prayer is to spring out of the occasion as it comes—thanksgiving is to accompany prayer, not merely when express matter of thankfulness presents itself, but in all cases. Cp. 1 Thess. v. 18.

"Even for things that seem adverse we are to give thanks: for this is the mark of true Christian thankfulness. Other thanks-giving is of nature; this is of grace, and springs in a soul devoutly disposed towards God."
7 And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

Such is the comment of Chrys. here, and such was the spirit of his dying words, "Glory to God for all things!" (Pallad., 'Vita S. Chrys.,' XI.)—The Apostle himself abounds in this form of devotion, so that it stands first in this and in most of his Epp. See above, i. 4-9, for thanksgiving joined with prayer, and cp. Rom. i. 8, 9; &c.—It was at Philippi that he, with Silas, in prison, "prayed and sang praises unto God" (Acts xvi. 25).

Let your requests be made known. "Petitions" (see Ahp. Trench, as above) for particular boons wherever we have need. Every longing of the soul is to be laid before God. Herein is at once the relief for hearts laden with care, and a check on hearts drawn by evil or wandering desires.

be made known] True, He knows them already; but that is no reason why we should not be required to lay them before Him.—J.

toe God] Lit., "towards," i.e., "before God." Our petitions are in every case to be addressed to Him: for, even when we ask favour of men, we are in so doing to have respect to Him as the true Giver, in Whose Hand it is to move men's hearts.—To men our Christian temper is to "be known" (v. 5) by our conduct: to God our petitions are to "be made known" in prayer (Bengel).

7. And the peace] This "and" expresses consequence, "and so." Here is the result promised to prayer: not by any means always its specific fulfilment; but, in every case, the holy calm that comes of cares laid on God,—desires resigned to His Will,—a spirit thankfully conscious of His Love, and in communion with His Spirit.

the peace of God] No one of the meanings assigned to this expression,—peace among brethren,—peace of conscience,—peace of reconciliation with God,—is fully adequate. It includes each, but it is more than all, of these. It is "God's peace": that which is His element; into which they that are His are privileged to enter, and in which He "will keep the mind that is stayed" in trust on Him (Isai. xxvi. 3). Dwelling in it, they are at peace with all men, in themselves, and with Him. Cp. Col. iii. 15, where His "peace" is joined, as here, with thankfulness.

...passeth all understanding] I.e., "surpasseth." It transcends the mind of man,—too limited in capacity to take it in, too perturbed by sin to mirror it truly. Only in acquiring the spirit of prayer and thank-

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure,
whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.

what modern moralists describe as the "Beauty of Virtue," by which "good actions excite agreeable feelings in the mind of the spectator" (Dugald Stewart).

**of good report** Lit., "well speaking" (ἦσθεμα, here only in N. T., nowhere in LXX.). It is a word of peculiarly religious meaning, — "well-omened," "auspicious." Here it seems to denote things in their nature so excellent that to name them is a goodly and sacred thing. A.V. however (after Vulg., &c., "bone fame") makes it "well spoken of"; — cp. the cognate noun (ἦσθεμα) "good report," a Cor. vi. 8.

(See on the subject of regard for good report among men, Jer. Taylor, 'Holy Living,' II. 5, "Public fame...is the measure of good and evil in things indifferent." — J.)

Thus, under these six heads, he sets before them all that commends itself — (1, 2) as matter of contempt, to reason and faith, as "true" and "reverend;" — (3, 4) for the conduct of life, to the moral and religious sense, as "righteous" and "pure;" — (5, 6) in the sight of men, to affection and admiration, as "lovable" and "of good name." And it is to be noted that the six topics fall naturally into these pairs, — the former member of each pair being a word of merely human application [(1) ἀληθίνος, (3) δικαιοσύνη, (5) προσφιλής], while the latter (as above shewn) touches on the Divine [(2) σεβασμός, (4) ὕπατος, (6) ἔσθεμα], pertaining primarily to the ideas and forms of the old religion. Herein we recognize an adaptation of his language to the associations of his Gentile readers; — analogous to his appeals to the principles of natural religion, Acts xiv. 17; xviii. 22—29; Rom. i. 19—21; — and of natural morality, Rom. ii. 14, 15. — In like manner, when he passes to the remaining two heads, he takes up the familiar terms of the old philosophy, virtus, and approbation (σέβαςμα, ἡσθεμα); — "virtue" including the first and second of the above pairs, "praise" the third.

if there be any...] Rather (as Alford), "whatsoever virtue there is..." By this expression (cp. ii. 1) he casts no doubt on the reality of virtus and approbation: on the contrary, he treats it as certain. He refers to these as accepted topics of Gentile wisdom, and adoptions them into the Gospel. "The virtue you have been taught to aim at, the approbation of good men that has been set up as your standard, these still keep in mind."

**virtue** This word (σέβαςμα) is nowhere else used by St. Paul; elsewhere in N. T. only by
9 Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.
10 But I rejoiced in the Lord

St. Peter,—1 Pet. ii. 9; 2 Pet. i. 3; ib. 5 (twice): but of human excellence, only in the last of these vv. In the LXX. it is found in its human application, only in Apocrypha (e.g., Wisd. iv. 1). This infrequency is in marked contrast to its preeminent place (see e.g. Aristot. 'Eth. N.,' II. v., vi.) in the language of heathen ethics.

praise] Human approval is similarly held up by the Apostle as an aim, Rom. xii. 17; 2 Cor. viii. 21.

"We are not to think it enough to satisfy our own consciences; but we are to endeavour... to manifest our uprightness to the consciences of others."... "God hath ingrained in our nature, as a spur to virtuous and laudable actions, an apprety of praise and glory; and expecteth that we should make use of it accordingly so far as it may be servient to those ends for which He gave it; and as it be withal servient to His Glory that gave it." (Sanderson, 'Sermons,' I. Ad Aulam, 31, 32.—J.)

Yet the "praise," which Christian morality owns as its supreme motive, is of a higher sphere,—that which "is not of men but of God." (Rom. ii. 29;—see also 1 Cor. iv. 5.)

On praise and its relation to virtue, see Aristotle, 'Eth. N.,' I. xii. 6; xiii. 20.

think on these things] This precept implies that we can, and therefore are bound to, control our thoughts. But to "think on" is not to contemplate merely,—not such speculation apart from action, such "going over the theory of virtue in one's thoughts and drawing fine pictures of it," as Bp. Butler warns us against ('Analogy,' I. v.). Translate rather "consider" (λογισμός, lit., "take account of"),—as principles for the guidance of life. Thus we have in the word not an antithesis to "those things do" (next v.) but the antecedent to it,—the thought which precedes, suggests, and directs action.—"To restore a commonplace truth to its first uncommon lustre, you need only translate it into action. But to do this, you must have reflected on its truth." (S. T. Coleridge, 'Aids to Reflection,' Introd. Aphi. III.)

9. Those things, which ye have both learned... in me] "What things also ye learned and received from me... and saw in me (sci., when I was with you,—aor.) these things do." Of the four copulative words (eait) in this sentence, the first is not "both" (as A. V.),

but also, continuing the sense from last v., by adding "these things do" to "think on these things." The second and the fourth couple the verbs into two pairs, the former relating to his teaching, the latter to his example. The third connects the two pairs. learned, and received] Of these verbs, the former represents the Gospel as a lesson taught; the latter, as a charge conveyed.

heard, and seen in me] That is "learned by the example of my words and acts." "Heard" relates not to his ministerial teaching, but to his ordinary speech as he went among them. See, on the subject of his example, note on ii. 17.

do] See last note on v. 8. and the God of peace] So Rom. xv. 33; &c.—Cp. the opening words of vs. 7. The "and" here, as elsewhere, expresses consequence "and为之." There, resignation, prayer, and thankfulness, lead to "the peace of God." Here, a life of Christian thought issuing in action, ensures the Presence of "the God of peace,"—Who gives that peace which is His.

10-19. ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF THEIR GIFT.

10. He now passes to that which, though it was the occasion of the writing of this Ep., he has hitherto but indirectly touched on (ii. 25;—see also i. 5)—the matter of the gifts sent to him by the Philippians. And the expression of his thanks for these,—dignified and delicate, tender towards the givers, and devout towards Him Who inspired and will reward their bounty,—and of his feelings in respect of temporal wants and their supply, occupies this and the succeeding vs.—See Intro., § IV., C.

But I rejoiced] "But" expresses the transition to a new subject. "I rejoiced" (scil., when they received their bounty,—aor.).

rejoiced in the Lord] According to his own reiterated precept (iii. 1; iv. 4), His joy was moved by their act, but rises from the human sphere into the Divine. He "rejoices," and "greatly;" not merely in the sense of personal relief,—not even in the proof of their affection;—but in their bounty as a vehicle of his Lord's goodness, and as an evidence of their Christian faith and love.

that now at the last your care of me bath flourished again] Lit., "that now at last ye flourished again as concerning caring
want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.

for me" (siel, when they sent their gifts—
aor., ἀνεβάλλεις, "ye put forth fresh growth"). They are like a tree reviving from its winter, to put forth shoots (kind purposes), and to yield fruit (kind deeds—below, v. 17). He implies that such proofs of life have been for some time dormant; but guards against all semblance of reproach by ascribing their shortcoming to their circumstances, not to their will.—The verb is best taken thus intransitively. To translate it," ye revived your care for me" (transit, with τοί... φρονεῖν as accus. after it) is grammatically admissible; but would denote revived goodwill, and not (as the delicacy of the passage requires) merely renewed ability, to aid. The interpretation first given seems more in keeping with the spirit of what follows, and with the gentle courtesy of the writer in avoiding even to hint blame in acknowledging a benefit. [This verb (ἀνεβάλλειν) occurs in LXX, sometimes intrasns., as Ps. xxvii. [xxviii.] 7; Wisd. iv. 4;—sometimes trans., as Ezek. xvii. 24; Ecclus. i. 18; l. 10.—J.]

wherein] "On behalf of which" (ἐπὶ φίλον, scil., my welfare (anteed. implied in the foregoing). "Your bounty was a renewed token of your care for my welfare; and you were, I am sure, caring for it all along." See Note at end of ch.

ye lacked opportunity] Rather, "ye lacked means" (ἐνακούοις). So Chrys.,—explaining that such was the colloquial use of this very rare verb. Probably the proper and primary meaning is "ye lacked due season," scil., for buds or fruit (so Bp. Wordsworth). This preserves in the verb the natural sense of the word (κακός) whence it is derived, and maintains the metaphor of the reviving tree (above).—"I welcomed the renewal of your friendly care as one welcomes new leaves and fruit after the winter: and I doubt not that such care was present with you all the time, though the ability to shew it in deeds was wanting;—that the buds were ready to put forth, had the season permittted, had outward conditions been propitious."

This "lack of means" is explained by what we read of their present "conflict" (persecution) (i. 30),—and of the "great trial of affliction" (also persecution), and "deep poverty," of the Macedonian Churches, a few years before (2 Cor. viii. 1, 2): while the commendation of their "liberality" then, in the midst of their troubles, to the poor brethren (ib. 2, 3), refutes the idea (which is inconsistent with all that we know of them) that the Philippians can have been lacking in goodwill. See Introd., § IV., C.

11. Not that I speak] A farther guarding against misconception. "Do not suppose me to complain of privations,—or to imply that care for my needs has been lacking on your part. I am satisfied with my lot (cf. v. 11—13), and with your kindness (14-18)."

for I have learned] Our idiom requires this rendering, rather than the verbally accurate, "I learned" (ἐμαθὼν, aor.),—scil., when he became a disciple of Christ (μαθητής, Acts ix. 26; cp. Matt. x. 24). Contentment was part of the great lesson of renunciation which he then "learned". The "I" is emphatic,—"I, whatever others may desire, have learned to be satisfied."

in whatsoever state I am] Again a rendering hardly accurate, yet substantially conveying the meaning. Lit., "in what state I am." (indic., ἐν ὑπόστασις so Vulg., &c., "in qualibus sum:"—A. V. would require conj. with ἀπό.) But though speaking thus of his present state he but uses it as an instance to exemplify his habitual temper. Thus the sense is nearly as in A. V.; with this shade of difference, that the original better conveys the idea of daily trials met, each as it comes, by the supply of strength sufficient for the day.

content] In earthly things he is satisfied to be as he is; in spiritual things, he presses ever onward for higher attainment (iii. 13, 14).

Content" (ποιμέν), again a familiar term of the Greek philosophy, for which see Aristot. 'Eth. N.,' i. vii. 6,—here only in N. T.,—properly "self-sufficing," thence "independent," "satisfied with one's condition." When he asserts for himself such self-sufficingness, it is to be understood as absolute towards men only,—not towards Him Who said to him "My grace is sufficient" (ἀρέσκω) for thee" (2 Cor. xii. 9). Similarly, 2 Cor. ix. 8, he uses the derived noun (ποιμένα, A.V., "sufficiency") of such relative independence, bestowed by God.

12. I know both bow to... .] He knows not merely what it is to meet such circumstances, but bow to comport himself under them. This knowledge is the sequel of the lesson which (last v.) he claims to "have learned,"—to use abundance with moderation, to bear want with patience, in both to be thankful.

bow:] Rather "also,"—ascending from "I learned" of last v. to "I know," of this.

to be abused... . to abound] The former
structured both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me

verb (as appears from the opposition in which it is placed to the latter) is here used in the limited meaning "to be cast down [by poverty]." In the next sentence we have "to abound" again, coupled with its proper opposite, "to suffer need."

everywhere and in all things" Lit., "in every thing and in all things," (as we say) "in each and all." His experience is both special in kind and universal in extent.

I am instructed] Lit., "I have been initiated"—so Old Lat., "imbutus sum" (μετακινήσεις,—here only in N. T., nowhere in LXX.)—another word of the old religion, belonging to the Mysteries: i.e., "I have attained full experience;"—scil., as follows, in plenty and in want. Note the progression He "learned" the lesson; "knows" how to act on it; "has been initiated" by full experience in what it implies.

to be full and...] Lit., "to be foddered;"—thence generally "to be full-fed"—This verb, and "to be hungry," are special instances of the more general "to abound and to suffer need" following.

Christians are not to be like the Israelites; who knew not how "to be hungry," for they "said, Can God furnish a table in the wilderness?" (Ps. lxxviii. 19);—nor yet how "to be full," for they "waxed fat and kicked" (Deut. xxxv. 15). (Theophyl.)

13. I can do...] "I have strength for all things, in Him that enables me" (the weight of authority requiring the omission of "Christ.") Observe (1) the passive strength to bear, (2) that strength subsisting in Christ, (3) the spiritual power imparted by Him,—here conveyed;—but lost in "I can do..." through Christ," "strength-eneth"—of A. V.—For latter verb, cp. Acts ix. 22.

Along with the lesson, the knowledge, the initiation (vv. 11, 12),—the power to live by them is in him. For it, he is content to depend on Christ; independent though he has declared himself to be of all else.

14. Notwithstanding ye have well done] Though thus content in himself, and in his Lord, yet this his strength, he will not be supposed insensible to their benefits. "Yet [though I am satisfied to forego human relief] ye did well" (in sending me the tokens of your sympathy).

15. Now ye Philippians know] Indicat. (not imperat., as A. V. seems to suggest). Partly to emphasize his thanks, partly to reassure them of his loving willingness to receive bounty at their hands, he reminds them of former gifts given by them and accepted by him.—"[Not now only have you relieved me] but (ϱείς) besides, as you remember, from the very first you supplied my wants, when no other Church was ready, or was admitted, so to do."

in the beginning of the gospel] It, "in the earliest days of my preaching to you" (Acts xvi. 12, sqq.), about ten years before; a long time, in the then infant life of the Church. For this phrase, cp. 1 Clem. R., XLVII. (where see Coteler's note); also i. 5, above.

when I departed from Macedonia] As related, Acts xvii. 14. The verb (aor.) seems naturally to relate to the occasion of that departure; and to fix it as the time when contributions were sent to him by them. This agrees with the words just before, which imply an early date; and falls in equally well with the following vs., where we read of a still earlier act of their bounty, done while he was still in Macedonia.—Others however translate, "I bad departed," and understand that they sent gifts to him, after he had left Macedonia, while he was in Achaia (Acts xviii. 1-18);—scil., by the hands of the "brethren which came from Macedonia," who "supplied that which was lacking to him" at Corinth (2 Cor. xi. 9). So Paley, H.P., VII. iii. His admirable statement of the coincidences among these documents, holds good in the main under either of the above interpretations.—See above, Introd., § II., B, 2; § IV., C.
as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.

16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But I have all, and abound:

I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God.

19 But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

Theod. Mops., "They gave, he received." This figure does not imply (as some imagine) a regular book with debtor and creditor sides;—still less (as Meyer) two books, one kept by each party. Nor does it suggest (as Chrys., &c.) a rendering of carnal things in return for spiritual;—an idea imported here from 1 Cor. ix. 11, but plainly foreign to the context, which relates exclusively to temporal gifts.

16. For even in Thessalonica] Confirmatory of the early date to which he traces back their kindness. "You alone have been liberal from the first; for even (before I left your province, and while I was still) in Thessalonica, you sent more than once to relieve my need." It was the first city in which he sojourned (Acts xviii. 1, 2—see notes there) after leaving Philippi. Their bounty was therefore very prompt. (This is better than to explain, as Chrys., &c.—"Even in the metropolis he received sustenance from the smaller city.")—Cp. 1 Thess. ii. 9; 2 Thess. iii. 8; where he affirms that during the sojourn here referred to, he avoided to be "chargeable" to the Thessalonians. Paley (as above), instead of "for even," renders "and that";—i.e., "You remember that you sent gifts at my departure . . . and that you had done so before." But the position of the conj. is against this; and the inverted order of the incidents, intelligible with the former rendering, is thus unaccounted for.

17. Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit] Translate, "Not that (as v. 11) I seek after the gift, but I seek after the fruit."—"It is not the gift I desire, for the gift's sake;—what I do desire is, the fruit that shall redound to the givers' good, for their sake."—His sensitive spirit shows itself (as v. 11, where see note) in this clearing of himself from all surmise of sordid motive.

18. But I have all, and . . .] Lit., "I have to the full" (ἀμπελώνας). The verb belongs to the idea of the "account" (v. 15), and implies the receipt of a full amount. So Matt. vi. 21; Gen. xxxiii. 21 [22] (LXX.);—see Hammond on Mark xiv. 44:—"I am sufficed; nay more, I overflow, I have been filled.

of Epaphroditus] See ii. 25, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable . . .] Another aspect of their gift, apart from its temporal value. He has already welcomed it,—(1) as a token of sympathetic "communion" (v. 14), (2) as "fruit" sure of heavenly recompense (v. 17); bere (higher still), it is accepted by God as "a sacrifice."—"Lo, how high does he uplift their gift! It is not I (he says) that have received it, but God through me." (Chrys.)—"As ye gave to Epaphroditus, and he to me; so through me did God receive your gift as an oblation." (Theodt.)

The "odour of sweet smell" is the "savour of a sacrifice,"—as Gen. viii. 21 (LXX.); cp. Eph. v. 2; also 2 Cor. ii. 14—16. For the "sacrifice well-pleasing," cp. Rom. xii. 1 (where A. V. renders same adj. "acceptable"); Hebr. xiii. 16 (where the derived verb is used)—in the former place the "sacrifice" being of self,—in the latter (nearly as here) of good works.

19. But my God shall supply . . .] "My God,"—see i. 3, and note. There it is "I thank my God for you;" here, "my God will require you."—"He Who is my God, Who therefore accepts your gifts to me as oblations to Himself (last v.),—will take upon Himself to recompense you, and that in superabundant measure. You out of your deep poverty (2 Cor. viii. 2), have filled my
20 Now unto God and our Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen.  
21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you.

22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Caesar's household.  
23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

The brethren which are with me] Scil., Timothy and his other immediate companions and colleagues. He owns them all as "brethren";—yet see ii. 20, 21.

22. All the saints] All the Christians of Rome,—as well as the personal associates spoken of in preceding v. 

chiefly they that are of Caesar's household] Not members of the Imperial family (as we use the word) or kindred, nor of the Praetorian guard; but persons belonging, as slaves or freedmen, to the Palace of Nero. The term "household" is well chosen to render the Greek (Lat., "familia"); as including all such, from officials of high place down to the lowest menials. We here learn that the Gospel, at the time of the writing of this Ep., had reached to those who were, in higher or lower capacity, about the Emperor's person; and, in the words of Calvin (quoted by Meyer), had "penetrated into that abyss of all crime and infamy."—History has few stranger contrasts than when it shows us Paul preaching Christ under the walls of Nero's Palace. (Dean Howson, 'Life of St. Paul,' XXVI.)

Why these persons especially ("chiefly") should salute the Philippians, does not appear. But the Apostle's motive in transmitting their greeting, is readily explained. It would cheer the Philippians, as shewing, (1) that the Gospel had made its way to the Imperial centre, (2) that even in the Court the example was set of risking all for Christ, (3) that his report of them had interested even distant strangers in their welfare. (Chrys.)

See Bp. Lightfoot's interesting discussion (Note, Caesar's Household, p. 169), in which, by comparing certain septuagintal inscriptions, found in Columbaria near Rome, with the salutations in Rom. xvi., he shews it to be probable that of the "brethren" in that chapter, some at least belonged to the Imperial "familia." who therefore, being known to the Apostle as Christians when he wrote the Ep. to the Romans, A.D. 58 (three years before his arrival in Rome), may well have been known by name, at the date of this Ep. (62, 63), to the Philippians.

23. The grace of our Lord] The "grace
which He bestows, is in this, as in all St. Paul's Epistles,—in all his thoughts,—the beginning and the end (cp. i. 2).—J.

*with you all!* Read, "with your spirit," as the weight of evidence requires. So

Gal. vi. 18; Philerm. 25;—cp. 2 Tim. iv. 22.

Most of the other Epp. end with words similar to the reading of A. V. (as above,—also of Rec.), which no doubt was adopted from a desire for assimilation.

**ADDITIONAL NOTES ON CHAP. IV.**

3. *yokefellow*] Of the many theories that have been advanced as to the person so addressed, one, first stated by Clem. Alex. (*Strom,* III. 6) is to be noted for its strangeness,—that St. Paul's wife is meant;—which is inconsistent with what he says of himself, 1 Cor. vii. 8, 9,—and with the masc. adj. *virgins.* Renan however ("St. Paul," VI., p. 148) adopts this, adding the conjecture that this wife was Lydia! (Acts xvi. 14, 15, 40.) Others have suggested the *husband,* or the *brother,* of one of the women;—but neither theory is tenable in the absence of any note of his relation to one of them more than the other. Others again St. Peter, or St. Barnabas, or St. Luke, or Silas (Acts xvi. 19-40). Theophyl., *the jailer* (ib. 23-34).

Clement] Origen's statement is supported by Eusebius ("H. E.," III. 4, 15), Epiphanius ("Hærès.," XXVII. 6), Jerome, "De Viris Illi," 15), and other ancient writers. Against these positive authorities is to be set the silence of Irenæus, who, in writing of Clement R. ("Adv. Hærès.," III. 3—see Eusebi, "H. E.," V. 6) does not refer to this v.; though he has just before cited 2 Tim. iv. 21, for the mention of Linus (Bp. Jacobson, "Patres Apost.," Introd., p. xi, note).—In the same passage, however, he distinctly connects Clement R. with St. Paul, by stating that he "had seen and conversed with (ἐρώτας βραχύς) the Apostles" (scil., St. Peter and St. Paul);


*the book . . . ]* Cowper ("Sonnets to Mary Unwin"), perhaps unconsciously, adopts this thought,—

"—There is a Book,
On which the eyes of God not rarely look,
A chronicle of actions just and bright;
There all thy deeds, my faithful Mary, shine;
And since thou own'st that praise, I spare thee mine."

10. *wherein ye were also*] The construction above given, though irregular, is simple and clear; and is better than (with some) to make "me" the anteced, translating ἐφ' ἑαυτῷ, "for our own;"—or (with others) to take ἐφ' ἑαυτῷ adverbially, "even as." The relat. ἑαυτῷ would regularly have for its anteced. the sentence ὅτι ἐπηγάζεται ἐπων ψευδοτι—which would yield the unmeaning result, "ye were caring on behalf caring for me." But this is avoided by supplying "my welfare" (as above).

Meyer makes ὅτι ἐπήγαγεν ἐπων accusat. of object after ψευδοτι, and anteced. to ἑαυτῇ.—"ye prospered anew, [so as] to consider that which concerns me;" thus obtaining a regular construction,—but a forced one, considering the position of ψευδοτι.
INTRODUCTION.

I.
1. Colosse
2. St. Paul's relation to it was, probably, not directly personal
3. Circumstances which caused him to write
   (a) The "Phrygian beress"
   (b) The case of Onesimus
4. St. Paul's captivity not inconsistent with freedom of external communication

II.
1. Description of Colosse and its scenery
2. Probable local and temporary allusions in the Epistle

III.
1. The Epistle itself
2. Its main features determined by those of the "Phrygian beress"
3. Its style largely influenced by the character of its principal subject
   Hence three objections to the authenticity of the Epistle are refuted
3. Analysis of the Epistle to the Colossians

IV.
External Testimony

Hebræo-Graec., P. 177.) These towns, once of importance, were so close to each other that a traveller could without much difficulty have visited them in the course of a single day, and all three are mentioned in this Epistle—viz. Laodicea, Colosse, and Hierapolis (iv. 13, 15, 16).

2. Phrygia was largely evangelized by intermediaries. St. Paul had made converts from these three cities of the Lycus, one of whom—himslelf a native of Colosse (ὁ ἔτων, Coloss. iv. 12), Epaphras—had preached the Gospel to his fellow-citizens. He had an oversight of, or at least ministered laboriously for, the three cities of Colosse, Laodicea, and Hierapolis (iv. 13). He was a disciple of St. Paul, and must have felt to St. Paul,—like another Colossian, Philemon (ver. 2)—that he owed his very being to Christ's minister (Philemon v. 19). The passage in Coloss. ii. 1 (see note) seems to many critics almost decisive against St. Paul's personal connexion with the Colossian Church. 1 This inference is,
INTRODUCTION.

perhaps, strengthened by observing the different tone perceptible in his addresses to churches which he himself had seen and founded (e.g. Galat. iv. 13; Philipp. ii. 12). It is quite true that individuals are mentioned at the close of the Colossian letter. But, it will be observed that several of these are touched upon in the sort of tone in which we write to friends about individuals presumably unknown to them (Aristarchus, Marcus, Jesus Justus, Luke iv. 10, 11, 14). Onesimus and Epaphras, however, were well known to them (iv. 7, 12). It has been supposed that Timothy (simply spoken of as Τιμόθεος ὁ ἀδελφὸς ἡμῶν i. 1) may have had an active share in laying the foundations of their church.

3. The Church of the Colossians, then, if we adopt the conclusion of modern critics generally, was not directly and personally founded by St. Paul. But two circumstances at this time caused him to look, with spiritual gaze, wistfully and affectionately to a Church whose members he had not seen with the eye of the flesh (ii. 1, 5). (1.) A visit from Epaphras had filled him with distress. The Church of the Colossians was indeed free from disorder. It stood in a fair organization, which gave the Apostle pleasure. There was not wanting a solid core of objective belief (see on τὴν τάξιν καὶ τὸ στέρεωμα, Coloss. ii. 5, inf.). Still, the very air which blew over the Lyceus—the old traditions of the place—the intermixture of Jewish and Gentile elements, alarmed him. For he heard of the formidable growth of a peculiarly compounded Gnostic heresy—partly philosophical, partly Judaizing, partly angelolatrous or demonolatrous—which had arisen among them, and was terrifying some by its ardent proselytizers (ii. 8), and its demands for an austere asceticism (ii. 23); attracting others by its claims to depth and mystic insight (ii. 8, 18. See on this subject, Notes infra on ii. 8, seqq.).

commentators—was advocated by many ancient expositors. E.g. the author of the 'Synops. Script. S.' attributed to Athanasius writes of this Epistle, τυφλὴν ἀνεμιστήκει ἀνὴρ Ρώμης, οὐχ ἐπισκόπεος μὴ ἀναστῇ, ἀνακάμψῃ δὲ περὶ αὐτὸν. (Athanas. Opp. iv. 430, edit. Migne. So Pelag. (apud S. Hieron.) 'This he shews i. 4, and again ii. 1.'—Theodore of Mopsuestia, 'Minor Ep. of St. Paul,' by H. B. Swete, i. 253.

(2.) Another circumstance which directed St. Paul's thoughts towards Colosse was of a different character. A slave, Onesimus, had fled as a runaway to Rome, either to hide himself in the solitude of the great city, or to see St. Paul. Three Epistles were written and despatched, one to Colosse, one to Laodicea, one to an individual Colossian, the master of Onesimus—Philemon. The churches of the two cities were to exchange their Epistles for the purpose of public reading in the assembly (iv. 16). It seems in the highest degree probable that the letter of which a copy was sent to Laodicea was a sort of circular to the Asiatic Churches, and the same which, from the metropolitan Church, passed into the Canon as the Epistle to the Ephesians. The Colossians enjoyed the blessing and privilege of an Epistle of their own. They might well be content with the Laodicean copy of the Apostle's circular.1

4. It has often appeared somewhat perplexing that the Apostle, while in captivity, should have been in a position to send messages and letters to distant Churches. But several passages from the Epistles of the Captivity confirm the emphatic closing words of the Acts of the Apostles, and show that for a considerable part of it at least, St. Paul could teach the things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ with all confidence and without hindrance (καὶ εἰς ἡκκλησίαν, καὶ ἐκκλησίας, Acts xxvii. 31). While waiting for the definite judgment of the Emperor's tribunal, to which he had appealed, he enjoyed a measure of indulgence, which approached to liberty in some respects. A knot of friends gathered round him. New acquaintances and disciples were found. Delegates came to consult or to sympathize from distant churches. It was a circle, whose members were continually changing and in motion. It was renewed by the coming and going of...

1 See note infra on iv. 16. It may be added that the form of the Apostle's expression about this letter—not τὴν πρὸς Ἀδωνίας, but τὴν ἐκ Ἀδωνίας—led Chrysost., Theodore of Mopsuestia, the Peshito version, and others, to suppose that the Epistle in question was written by the Laodiceans to St. Paul. The first mention of the forged letter is probably in Theodore of Mopsuestia (edit. Swete, pp. 310-311). See also Jacobi (Proem. ad Col. ii. iv.).
INTRODUCTION.

Inquirers and messengers. It was a society at once for propagating the Gospel in foreign parts, and for deepening the spiritual life of its members—a school of Christian theology and Christian missions, whose greatest missionary was also its master theologian. The “lodging,” (κατοίκια, Acts xxviii. 23), the place where he was in “free custody,” became a church. In Philippians it is a source of joy to St. Paul that his imprisonment, all his present circumstances (τὰ καθ' ἡμᾶς), must tend rather than otherwise (μᾶλλον) to the progress of the Gospel. When a man so pure, tender, and noble, gives up everything for a cause, attention must be called to it. The impression of that high enthusiasm passed from heart to heart. The chains which he bore “became manifest in Christ.” The soldiers of the Emperor’s body-guard, who had to keep watch over him, saw them in their relation to Christ. Each relief, day by day told off, added to the number. Not only was this witness given to the Praetorian Guard—it was given in a sense, “to all the rest of the city” (καὶ τοῖς Λοιποῖς πάσιν, ver. 13), so that the great majority of believers (τοὺς πλείους τῶν ἀδελφῶν, ver. 14) actually acquired a stronger confidence from his very bonds. Nor was this all. Gifts and messages began to come to and fro. In one passage of Philippians he is full of a joy which he knows is above nature (ἐκαρπησάντες Κυρίῳ, Philipp. iv. 10) on account of presents sent to him from Philippi. To some it has seemed, from one beautiful word, as if the Philippian deputation had arrived with their gifts when the breath of the Italian spring was on the old man’s cheek—as if he thought of them as having had a spring-like burst of loving care after a winter of unwilling unfruitfulness. Not that they were without loving care. It was felt, ( καὶ ημονεῖτε, assuredly you did so think and feel, iv. 10) but the season of exuberance was not come. The “winter” of inaction from the chill of circumstances is made “glorious spring” to him. It would seem from this passage that, after a time, certain restrictions were removed. None of those who came from Asia Minor, or elsewhere, to visit the master, were implicated with him, or submitted to any minute police inspection, or obliged to appear with him. There may have been some caution observed about writing certain facts; but, on the whole, there was no restriction against sending letters. This free admission of friends—this circle of which we know several names —this sending of gifts and messages to and fro—would seem to show that the captivity, for a considerable period at least, was not very rigorous.

II.

1. Outward scenery leaves little impression upon the letters of St. Paul. The most vivid and accurate description of it hardly makes us understand him better.

1 ἀναθέτετε: ἀναθήματι in LXX. is used transitively with accusative of thing produced, cf. Eccles. xi. 18; Ezek. xi. 24. καλά.—In the construct. ἀναθέτετε τῷ οἴνῳ ἔργου φρονίμης the infinitive may be made grammatically equivalent to a substantive by means of the article (Winer, Pt. iii. §§ 54, 4, p. 346). For a different and, probably, truer explanation, see Notes on Philipp. iv. 10.

2 Timothy, Mark, Luke, Aristarchus, Tychochus, Jesus Justus, Demetrius (or Demas), Onesimus. (Phil. vi. 24; Coloss. i. 1; iv. 7, 10, 11, 12.)

3 See Aubé, Hist. des Persécutions de l'Église, Tom. i. pp. 64, 65.

4 Contrast Goethe’s saying: “He who wishes to understand the poet must go to the poet’s country.”
INTRODUCTION.

More especially is this the case with an Epistle which has so little that is purely local and personal as that to the Colossians. It seems, in some degree, to stand among the other writings of St. Paul, like the shape of the Apostle St. John in the vision of the great Italian poet, without distinguishable human features, from the blaze of the glory of Christ in which it is immersed. "The portion of the lot of the saints" of which he speaks is not described from any memory of the glorious landscape of the valley of the Meander and Lycus; it "lieth in the light" which is uncreated (i. 12). But the representation of the outward surroundings of those who are addressed in Scripture is a craving of the modern spirit. Such representations enable us to understand better, if not the writer directly, yet the writer through those whom he addresses, with their minds necessarily moulded and coloured by the context of their climate and history. And we may here, at least, borrow largely from a traveller and critic, who, if he seems to be influenced by an almost personal malignity against St. Paul, is, at least, a vivid interpreter of scenes which he has visited, and brings to his work large stores of reading, as well as much breadth of colouring.

"A rich canton of southern Phrygia,"—writes M. Renan,—"in particular, the small basin of the Lycus, a tributary of the Meander, saw some active Christian centres formed within it. Three towns very close to each other—Colosse or Colasse, Laodicea upon the Lycus, and Hierapolis—filled it with life. "Colosse, which in old days was the most important, appeared to decline; it was a town which remained faithful to ancient ways, and which did not renew itself. Laodicea and Hierapolis, on the contrary, became, in consequence of the Roman empire, very considerable cities."

1 Strabo, xii. 8. 16; xiii. 4. 14.
2 The Tchérak-Sou of the Turks.
3 For the ancient importance of Colosse, see Xenophon, Anabas, i. 2. 6 (eis Kolosseis, ἐν τοῖς ᾿Αλκμείνων διαδίασι καὶ μεγάλην) — ἐν τοῖς μεγάλην Herod. vii. 20; also Plin. Hist. Nat. v. 3. 41. A misapprehension of the last passage is obviated by Bp. Lightfoot, p. 16, note 1. Strabo also speaks of it as ἄλατομον (xii. 17). The ruins of Colosse are those of a very secondary place.

The very soul of all this beautiful country is Mount Cadmus (Baba-Dagh and Chonas-Dagh), the patriarch of all the mountains of Western Asia—a gigantic mass, full of dark precipices, and keeping its snows all the year round. The waters which flow down from it freshen, upon one of the slopes of the valley, orchards filled with fruit-trees, traversed by rivers full of fish, and enlivened by storks which are quite tame. The other side is quite given up to the strangest freaks of nature. The encrusting properties of the calcareous waters of one of the affluents of the Lycus, and the enormous mass of hot water which falls in a cascade from the mountains of Hierapolis, have struck the plain with sterility, and formed crevasses, quaint caverns, beds of subterranean streams, fantastic piles and layers like petrified snow, serving as a reservoir for waters which reflect all the colours of the rainbow; deep hollows, whence far-resounding waters rush on in a succession of cataracts. On this side the heat is extreme, the soil being nothing but one vast plain, paved with calcareous blocks. But, upon the heights of Hierapolis, the purity of the air, the splendid light, the view of Mount Cadmus, swimming like another Olympus in a lustrous atmosphere, the burn-up summits of Phrygia fading into the blue of heaven in a rosy tint, the opening of the valley of the Meander, the oblique outlines of Messogis, the far white summits of Tmolus, produce a truly dazzling effect. There lived St. Philip and Papias: there Epictetus was born. All the valley of the Lycus presents the same character of dreamy mysticism. The population was not Greek by origin; it was partly Phrygian. There was also, it would seem, round Mount Cadmus, an old Semitic settlement. "This peaceable valley, separated from the rest of the world, became a sort of asylum for Christianity. Christian thought was subjected there to serious trials. The evangelist of these regions was Epaphroditus, or Epaphras, of Co-
INTRODUCTION.

lostes, a very zealous Christian, the friend and fellow-labourer of St. Paul (Coloss. i. 6, 7; iv. 12, 13). The Apostle had done nothing more than merely pass by the valley of the Lycus; he never returned to it (ii. 1). But these Churches, mainly composed of converted Pagans, were, notwithstanding, completely dependent upon him (i. 9; ii. 1, 13). Epaphras exercised a sort of episcopate over the three cities (iv. 13). We read of Nym- phodorus, or Nymphas, who at Laodicea had a church meeting in his house; the rich and liberal Philemon, who presided at Colosse over an assemblage of the same kind; Apphia, a deaconess of that town, possibly Philemon's wife; Archippus, who also filled an important function, recognising Paul as his chief (Coloss. iv. 15; Philonem v. 1, 2, 5, 7). The last-named seems to have worked directly with St. Paul; the Apostle speaks of him as his 'companion in arms.'

"It is to be observed that Judaism preceded Christianity in these regions. Jewish colonies had been transplanted from Babylon two centuries and a half before, and had first brought with them some of those industries (carpet-weaving, for instance) which, under the Roman emperors, produced in the country such opulence, and such powerful guilds or companies.——Phrygia became from henceforth, and remained for three hundred years, a country which was essentially Christian. A great number of the Christians of Ephesus and of Rome came from Phrygia. The names most frequently found upon the Phrygian monuments are the old Christian names, the names of the Apostolic age, those which fill the martyrlogies. The country differs a good deal from the rest of Asia. It is sombre and melancholy, bearing a deep impress of old geological catastrophes, burnt up, or rather incinerated, and agitated by frequent earthquakes." 2

2. Allusions of a local and temporary character are not frequent in the Epistle to the Colossians, as we have already observed. Yet a few may be noted. (a) The μετατροπής ("translated") of chapter i. 13, may well be allusive to a fact of importance in the history of Phrygia. The gentle "translation" by God of redeemed souls into His kingdom may be a reference which would be peculiarly recognised by those who had so often heard of the rough and barbarous "translation" by Antiochus into Lydia and Phrygia. (See Additional Note on i. 13.) (b) The "not being moved away" (μη μετακινουμένον, i. 23) is probably in allusion to an innovating spirit, to change and turbulence in social or political life. Now Colosse, as distinguished from its neighbours of Laodicea and Hierapolis, evidently retained and suffered from its conservatism. Its remains lead modern travellers to observe that it did not throw itself into the new life offered to Phrygia by the Roman empire, and zealously accepted by Laodicea and Hierapolis. The very sepulture of the dead bore witness to the spell exercised over the Colossian mind by the ideas of antiquity, and to

1 Philemon 2.
2 St. Chrysost. and Theodoret so understand it.
3 εὐστρατιάτης. Philemon 2. Cf. 2 Tim. ii. 3. The country round Laodicea was covered with sheep, with a peculiar rich black fleece (καπάτης, raven-black). The water at Hiera- polis was much valued by dyers for some chemical qualities. Colosse gave its name to a purple dye ("a verlobus nasitcur cyclaminum—flos ejus Colossianus in coronas ad nicuitur," Plin. N. H. xxi. 9. § 27). "Is there," asks Bp. Lightfoot, "any allusion to this branch of trade in the message to the Church of Laodicea, Rev. iii. 17, 18?" (γαμοῦ τοῦ ἱδρώματος). He also suggests a possible allusion to the βλέφαρα ζαχαριασμοῦ and the φωστερίς ζαχαριασμοί in the message to the Church of Sardis, Apoc. iii. 5 (Bp. Lightfoot, Ep. to Coloss. p. 22, note 1).

1 Trophinus, Tychicus, Tryphena, Tele- phorus, Papias, Onesimus. These names are common to all Western Asia. Cf. Inscript. G. 2788, 3604, 3749, &c.; Wagen. Inscript. d'Asie Min. p. 19; Waddington, Voy. Num. pp. 55-134. See other authorities in Renan, Saint Paul, p. 364, note 1.)
3 For the political reference of the word, cf. Xenoph. de Rep. Laced. xx. 1; Esc. ix. 11, LXX. Breitsehneider (who says that the word is used "de perturbatione reipublicae") adds another instance from Josephus——μετα- κινηθήσοντο τοῦ κόσμου τῆς πολιτείας, Antig. v. 3. 2.
INTRODUCTION.

the immobility with which it lingered in a world that had passed away. Only one necropolis has been discovered by travellers. And M. Renan specially adverts to the antique and "almost Semitic" character of its monuments.

(c) Unless we have misapprehended the meaning of the passage in which St. Paul gives directions to the Colossian Church upon the subject of singing in worship (ἐν χαρίᾳ ἐνθυωματικῇ, iii. 16, see Notes), there is a special hint at the Phrygian music, quite of a piece with the references to citizenship in the Epistle to the Philippians, and the allusion to building in that to the Ephesians.

III.

1. But if other local and temporary topics occupy little space in the Epistle to the Colossians, it is not so with a philosophical and religious movement, which began to show itself at the time with a vigorous development. This movement has been called the "Phrygian heresy." The phrase has, probably, the same measure of truth as that once in fashion among theologians, who enumerated Mahomedanism or the Turkish heresy, among Christian heresies. The name of Christ was not discarded by these Phrygians, nor a certain Divine mission denied to Him with ceremonious expressions of honour; but that was all. In reference to this form of error in Phrygia, the Epistle to the Colossians is crossed and re-crossed with iron dogmatic girders. It is scarcely an exaggeration to say that almost every verse of the Epistle—except the very few which are of a personal character—is compacted into, and tells upon, the metallic density of this argumentative structure. For the two great characteristics of this singular Phrygian movement issued in two grand mistakes, which traversed the whole texture of thought and practice, speculation and action, principle and life. Speculatively, the reception of this vast network of angelic and subordinate mediations was a rejection of the Incarnation. It was said by an acute observer of men, who looked at all forms of Christianity with the impartiality of one who occupied an external position, that in the religion of France in the early part of the last century, "Christ indeed presided as King, but was a good deal hidden behind a crowd of courtiers" (saints and angels). But, in the Phrygian system, Christ was absolutely dethroned, and with many expressions of respect, relegated to a place among Thrones, dominations, principledoms, virtues, powers.

A shadowy phantastic transcendental idealism, and a mystical approach to God through angels and æons, were substituted for the very Man, the real Cross, the actual death, the true redemption which consists in forgiveness of sin. But this theoretical error was accompanied by, and at root was the cause of, a grave practical mistake—a mistake pervading the entire life of those who received it. A series of minute observances, of petty devotions, of fragmentary rules and little ascetic efforts—the small ritualisms and smaller practical code of Judaizing superstition—were exchanged for the breadth and strength of the Christian's supernatural life, begun in Baptism—for a real union with the Risen and Ascended Lord.

2. The style of St. Paul in the present letter is influenced through and through by this important subject. His want of personal acquaintance with the Colossian Christians, generally restrains the almost passionate flow of affectionate words so common with him elsewhere. The language is pressed and serried, strong and brief. For the reader who studies it with the true key in his possession, there is scarcely one superfluous word—one which does not tell upon the writer's main purpose.

With a perception of St. Paul's object, and a consideration of the peculiarity of style necessarily resulting from it,
nearly all objections to the genuineness of
the letter fall to the ground of themselves.
For the objections to the Pauline author-
ship of the Epistle to the Colossians may
be arranged under three heads:
I. Of Doctrine.
II. Of Style.
III. Of Imitation.

I. Of Doctrine.
A. An exaggerated Christology.
Language is said to be used about our
Lord as prototype and author of Creation
(i. 15), which is beyond any employed
in unquestionably Pauline Epistles, and
which is in the tone of writings attributed
to St. John.
B. A minimized view of Faith and
Justification.
C. A substitution of moral and meta-
physical formulæ ("love," "knowledge")
for "faith and works" which came so
prominently to the front in early times.
D. Angelology developed (i. 16, ii. 10).
E. A Gnostic tinge (i. 19, ii. 9).
F. Redemption exaggerated (i. 20).

II. Of Style and Language.
A. Peculiar use of πλάρεμα (i. 19, ii. 9).
B. The phrase το κυρίον Χριστὸν (iii. 24).
C. φανερωθη αὐτοί (i. 4) for "the Parousia."
D. Curiously compounded words
(πεπαλαιωσθείς, ii. 4; ἡγεσιορρογεία, ii. 23;
δοκελοδοντία, iii. 22).
E. Syntactical. — A sparing employ-
ment of particles—a taste for looping on
members of a phrase, interlaced by rela-
tive pronouns or participial nexus.
F. Rhetorical. — The style is pro-
nounced to be more emphatic and
rounded, with less of spring and natu-
ralness, declamatory and overloaded.

III. Of Imitations.
These are mainly of the Epistle to
the Ephesians.

Also
Coloss. ii. 5, 1 Cor. v. 3,
iii. 10. Galat. iii. 28.

It should be noted that several references to
the Epistles to Ephes. are also made by St. Peter:
I St. Peter. Ephesians.
I. i. 2, 3. I. 3, 4, 7.
II. 18. V. 5.
III. 1. V. 22, sqq.
III. 22. I. 20, sqq.
V. 5. V. 21.

COLOSSIANS. EPHESIANS.
I. 13, 22. II.
II. 12, 14. III. 1-12.
I. 25, 28. III. 18, 19.
II. 2, 3. III. 19; IV. 13.
II. 9, 10. IV. 2.
III. 12, 13. IV. 3, 16.

Without entering into all details, the
more important of their objections
almost refute themselves.
For the leading doctrinal objection—
an exaggerated Christology.
Surely the most energetic expressions
of the Epistle to the Colossians are not
really in advance of the glory attributed
to Christ in earlier Epistles, at once
"uncontested and incontestable." We
shall see that the most magnificent
Christological passages in Colossians are
not in substance beyond the titles in the
(so-called) "undogmatic Epistles" to the
Thessalonians.¹

The presence of words and phrases
with a "Gnostic tinge"² is accounted for
in two ways: (1) a portion of these
terms came into the common stock of
Christian language from the lips of
Christ Himself (see Note infra on Col.
i. 12, 13, and Intro. to i St. John);
(2) the Apostle loved, like all great
Christian teachers, to take up words and
ideas valued by opponents, and to use
them in their true and highest significa-
tion.

The absence of thoughts and of aspects
of truth prominently brought forward in
one Epistle, or class of Epistles, is no
objection to those who consider the
breadth of Christian Theology and the
different types of error, with which it
was confronted.

In the concise and energetic style of
Colossians lies the best refutation of its
supposed imitateness. No sustained
and pointedly expressed argumentative
composition can possibly be a cento of
quotations. But the Epistles to the

¹ Well may M. Renan exclaim that "in such
passages (1 Cor. ii. 8; viii. 6; 2 Cor. v. 18,
21; Romans ix. 5) the most exaggerated for-
formula of 'Consubstantiality' are felt by antici-
patation!" (Saint Paul, p. 274.)
² That there are no real vestiges of a Gnostic
bias in the writer of the Ep. to Coloss. has been
proved by H. G. Meyer, Comm. p. 160; Roetiger,
de Christolog. Paulini, ii. 42.
INTRODUCTION.

Ephesians and the Colossians were almost contemporaneous. A man like St Paul writing two long Epistles about the same time with certain leading ideas prominently before him, would be sure to fall into some favourite expressions.

While these, and several other general features, are utterly inconsistent with the notion of the Epistle to the Colossians being a forgery, great weight must always be laid upon its connexion with the Epistle to Philemon. If Colossians is a forgery, then most assuredly Philemon is a forgery also. But that leaflet is so sincere, so impressed with an intense and infallible reality, so much beyond the very level of the feelings of the Church itself for centuries, that it must have been written by St. Paul.

3. The Epistle to the Colossians may be analysed as follows:—

After the Salutation and Preface, it falls into two portions—of which the first is dogmatic; the last application, polemical, and practical.

i. The dogmatic portion of the Epistle—Salutation (i. 1, 2).

A. Transition to the dogmatic portion—

(a) prayer and thanks giving for them (vers. 2, 5);
(b) reminder of two great notes of the Gospel, as they originally received it—facticity and Catholicity (vers. 5, 8);
(c) Epaphras had brought good tidings of the condition of the Colossian Church—hence, increased prayer for increased gifts (vers. 9, 11).

1. Reminder what they had and have from God in Christ.

(a) deliverance.
(b) translation—with incorporation into the Kingdom.
(c) redemption (vers. 12, 15).

2. Reminder what Christ is in Himself—the dogmatic portion proper (i. 15—ii. 4).

(a) 'The Image (v. 15).

1 The terms dogmatic, doctrinal, polemical, are used confusedly, almost promiscuously, by many recent writers. A dogma is the formal statement, in precise and definite language, of a positive theological truth. But theology in the sense of the earlier church is peculiarly connected with the Person and Divinity of Christ. Hence dogmatic is just the attribute to be predicated of such precise and formal statements as occur in Colossians i. 14, 18. Doctrine is teaching fairly deducible from dogma, and is better applied to the more subjective aspects of religion. The Incarnation of Christ is a dogma; justification by faith is a doctrine. The term polemical indicates the application of a dogma or a doctrine in controversy.

(b) The First-born of Creation (v. 15)—what this involves (vers. 16, 17).
(c) The Head of the Church (v. 18).
(d) Beginning (ibid.).
(e) First-born from the dead (ibid.).

Therefore, First in all (v. 18); because it was God's pleasure that in Him all the pleroma should dwell in bodily wise (v. 19). Therefore, as result:

3. (a) universal ideal reconciliation (v. 20).
(b) their reconciliation by His very death, in His very Person, to be their Presenter to God (vers. 21, 22).

But these results are conditional upon their steadfastness—not allowing themselves to be isolated by local error into a partial and fragmentary schism from that which is the Gospel—Pauline and Apostolic (ob eyevhion eiv th Niskov —11c017c0c1v. 23).

[Transition from dogma to application.]

(a) Personal joy in suffering for the Church (v. 24).
(b) His charge of fully declaring the mystery (vers. 25—27), with its message to be brought home to every single heart (vers. 25—29).

This declaration is a strife and struggle, even for them and others whom he had never seen (v. 29; ii. 1).

But no price is too high to pay for his purpose, viz. that in their heart of hearts they may have the deep-felt knowledge of the mystery (v. 2); for that mystery is Christ. All that Gnostic mystics and theosophists boast is in Him (v. 3).]

II.

Application of the dogmatic portion of the Epistle.

i. Polemical application (ii. 4—iii. 1).

A. Preface—This dogmatic teaching is to guard them against sophistry (v. 4).

Far away as he is, he sees and rejoices in their order and fixed faith (v. 5).

Let them continue and advance (vers. 6, 7).

B. Direct polemical application.

Let them beware of those who would make them their spoil, by a philosophy which is also a hollow deception.

This philosophy has five deficiencies. It is (1) traditional; (2) human; (3) elementary; (4) material—therefore (5) unchristian (v. 8).

Dogma of the Incarnation stated (v. 9).

Christians complete in Him, who is the completedness (v. 10).

They need no circumcision, having in Baptism a circumcision, (1) internal; (2) universal; (3) of which Christ is the author (vers. 10, 11).

The sign of circumcision has passed into the sacrament of Baptism. We have the deadness of the spiritual uncircumcision quickened into life with Christ—forgiveness—emancipation from a yoke of ordinances—Christ's victory the pledge of ours (vers. 12—16).
INTRODUCTION.

Conclusion:
1. Do not let them submit even to be judged as to things ritual—Judaizing ceremonialism and the like (v. 16); because they are mere shadows (v. 17).
2. Still less let them submit to orientalizing Gnostic philosophy—with its cultus of angels (v. 18)—whose characteristics are (a) a humility tainted by self-will; (b) an inflated and carnal arrogance; (c) a profession of towering transcendentalism; (d) an affectionation of knowledge of the unknowable—culminating (e) in miserable self-isolation from the one true living Head, from Whom the whole body has its vital principle, structure, and growth (vers. 18, 19).

Why should they go on, as if their Baptism were not? holding a false principle of spiritual life—therefore miserably wrong in its details; mistaking shadowy ordinances for grace-giving realities, imaginary spiritual beings for the actual Christ, petty rules for the well-spring of the supernatural life (vers. 18–23).

ii.
Dogmatic portion of the Epistle applied practically.

A. General principle of the supernatural life (iii. 1–18).

Christ our Life—the great principle of a new human life is union with our Risen and Ascended Lord—to be manifested further (vers. 1–4); therefore, mortify each limb of the great body of sin—mainly, sins of lust (vers. 5–8).

Not only these, but others of another kind; for they have a new nature, a new creation, in a new world—where Christ's influence is felt from the centre round the whole circumference (vers. 8–11).

Cultivate tender human emotions, especially love (vers. 12–14); let Christ's peace rule in their hearts (v. 15); let the inward beauty of His word find sweet and graceful expression in varied Church-song (v. 16).

B. Details of duty.

Wives and husbands (vers. 18, 19).
Children and fathers (vers. 20–21).
Slaves and masters (vers. 22–iv. 2).

Prayer generally—for him (vers. 2–5).

Wisep speech—eager purchase by Christ's merchants of each golden opportunity (vers. 5–6).

Tychicus and Onesimus (vers. 7–9).

Salutations to the Colossian Church, (a) from his helpers of the Circumcision (vers. 10, 11); (b) from Epaphras, who had such a peculiar interest in them, in Laodicea, and in Hierapolis (vers. 12, 13); (c) from Luke and Demas (ver. 14).

Salutation to Laodicea (ver. 15).

Letters to Laodicea and Colosse to be mutually read (ver. 16).

Message of warning to Archippus (ver. 17).

Salutation and last words (ver. 18).

IV.

The external testimony to the Epistle to the Colossians is considerable.

The following verses are quoted or referred to in the Apostolic Fathers.

Coloss. i. 16. Barnab. Epist. xii.

18. i. Clem. ad Corinth. xiv.

(with i. Corinth. xv. 20.)

25. Ignat. ad Ephes. x.

iii. 4. Ibid. iii.

14. i. Clem. ad Corinth. xlix.

Marcion, the earliest herald of sceptical criticism, who rejected the Epistles to Timothy and Titus, admitted Colossians and Philemon into his collection. It is cited by Irenæus,4 Clement of Alexandria,5 Tertullian,6 and still earlier by Theophilus of Antioch7 and Justin Martyr.8

All candid criticism agrees with M. Renan's conclusion that the Epistle to the Colossians is "to be received unhistorically as the work of St. Paul" (Saint Paul, Introd. p. ix.).

1 Adv. Heret. V. xiv. 2 (quotes Coloss. i. 21); ibid. iii. xiv. 1 (quotes Coloss. iv. 14).


3 Tertull. c. Marc. v. 19.


5 Tertull. c. Marc. v. 19.


7 Quaest. II. Resp. ad Orthod. quest. 102.—Justin M. also, in his sketch of a Christian life, says of him who would guide his course aright in the communion of the Church (ἐν ἑτοίμων κολοσσάλλους) that he must take his part in praise (δώμας τε καὶ φαλάμματα καὶ ἄλλα καὶ ἀθανάτου) referring to Coloss. iii. 16 (Epist. ad Zenam et Serenum, 9). Colossians i. 16 is in his mind in Coloss. ii. 23 (see note in Otto, S. Justin. M. Opp. ii. 60). Cf. Epist. ad Diognet. vii. 8, 9. The words τοιούτης ἐν ἑτοίμων κολοσσάλλους, δώμας τε καὶ ἀθανάτου, κ.τ.λ. (Acta Mart. S. Justin. ii. 9, 10), point to the same passage.
THE EPISODE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE

COLOSSIANS.

CHAPTER I.

1 After salutation he thanketh God for their faith, 
7 confirmeth the doctrine of Epaphras, 9 prayeth further for their increase in grace, 14 describeth the true Christ, 21 encourageth them to receive Jesus Christ, and commendeth his own ministry.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother.
2 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you,
4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints,
5 For the hope which is laid up for all in all.—(On the mystical force of καθαρις, see on 1 St. John ii. 6). See additional note on v. 2.

1. Apostle.] This title is not used in all the Epistles—for instance, not in Philipp. i. 1. He writes now in virtue of an apostolic commission.

2. To the brethren in Colosse (see Note at end of Chapter), holy and faithful in Christ.] The force of the original might best be given, if we were able to say in English, "to the in Colosse consecrated and faithful brothers in Christ." The description refers to two different spheres (1) local, from the place in which their lot is cast; (2) moral and spiritual. They have union with each other as a fraternity having two conditions (a) union with God ("holy"), (b) union with the Church's creed ("faithful"), and all this in a world where Christ is

3. 4. We give thanks . . . while we pray. . . . since we heard. (See Winer, iii. § xiv. 3, P. 561.) Though he had not seen them, he bestows upon them the fulness of Apostolic love and Apostolic intercession (Chrysost.). St. Paul had not "direct personal knowledge of the Colossian Church." (Bp. Lightfoot, P. 133, cf. Introd. P. 27.) But this conclusion could not be drawn from these words alone, for St. Paul uses the same expression ("having heard of your faith") in writing to the Church of Ephesus, where he had laboured three years, Eph. i. 15.

4. 5. It is preferable not to join "for the hope" with "we give thanks"—"we give thanks for the hope" (as Beng.)—but to link faith and charity to hope. "Since we heard of the faith in Christ Jesus, and the love to all the saints which ye hold fast for the hope's sake." (On the pregnant sense of "have," in St. Paul and St. John, see on 1 St. John i. 8.)

5. laid up.] Reserved, set apart, (of the Mina laid up in the napkin, St. Luke xix. 20), with dat. of the person for whom. Used of a "crown" (a Tim. iv. 8), of death (Heb. ix. 27; cf. 4 Macc. viii. 19).

whereto ye heard before. [Which was part of your first Gospel-teaching, the first
you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel;

6 Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world; and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth:

pure lesson ye learned in better days, before teachers came with later refinements, which were rather corruptions." Or, with a different interpretation of ποιησις, a subtler rendering has been given——"The hope of which you, and all of us, hear in the Gospel before it comes and is turned into fruition—the salvation hoped for before its arrival" (Grimm, Lex. N. T. s. v.).

in the word of the truth of the gospel.] With implied opposition to a false Gospel, by which they were in danger of being deceived.

6. Which is some in presence unto you, as it is also in all the world; you, and it is continually bringing forth fruit and making increase unto itself, as it doth also in you (see Note at end of Chapter).

Which is some in presence.] Τοῦ παρόντος εἰς ὑμᾶς. "He speaks of the Gospel as of a living and animated thing. For it did not first come to you and leave you, but remained and is now present." (Chrysost., Theophyl.). παρόντος is almost universally used of persons (see Note at end of Chapter).

as it is (καθὼς καὶ, sub. ὕποστα) come in all the world.] Something is here to be allowed for the glow and elevation of language (as infra, v. 23). Yet, according to Christ’s command, the Gospel had already been widely preached (St. Matt. xxviii. 19). St. Paul feels intensely that the leaven from the stores of the Nazarene Householder is leavening the whole lump of humanity; that the seed of the word is being wafted everywhere. For indications that this feeling was habitual with him, see Rom. x. 15; xv. 23; 2 Cor. x. 14, &c. It is interesting to observe this early appreciation of the note of Catholicity.—The Catholicity of the Gospel was a topic of confirmation. "We are so constituted as to be confirmed by having many sharers in our faith" (Chrysost.). It would encourage the Colossians to reflect that they were labouring under no local delusion, and need suspect the contagion of no local fanaticism.

Bp. Lightfoot well remarks how the true Gospel proclaims its truth by its universality. False gospels are local and special. Heresies are provincial or national; truth is catholic. The same thought in another form underlies iii. 11, with a more special reference to the arrogance of Jews and Judaism.

It has been observed that the universality of the Gospel may also be contrasted here by implication with the secret doctrines of Gnostic speculation which were for the initiated few.

Tea, and it is continually bringing forth fruit for itself.] See note infra for the reading. St. Paul states that the Gospel is a fertile tree in the world, yielding fruit abundantly, of which the Colossians also gave abundant specimens. This thought is of special weight, and needs emphatic affirmation. Hence, he does not continue the sentence in the form which we might expect, but exchanges καρποφορεῖ, for καὶ ἔστιν καρποφοροῦμεν, as an assertion that it is a tree whose natural and necessary tendency is to create fruit to itself (Reiche). The Middle here "refers back the action to the agent mediately, in as far as the action is done to, or in any way for, the agent." Winer, iii. § xxviii. P. 568. "Semem spargi mihi," Bretsch. The verb καρποφορεῖ seems to be caught from the lips of Christ in the Parable of the Sower (St. Matt. xiii. 23; St. Mark iv. 20 (v. 28); St. Luke viii. 15. It is used outside the Gospels by St. Paul alone—and by him only in this Epistle—except in Rom. vii. 4-5.

and making increase unto itself.] External and internal reasons are alike in favour of retaining these words, omitted in A. V. "Making increase" seems, at first sight, out of place, after "bringing forth fruit." The tree must grow before it is fruitful. But while growth is, of course, specially predicated of trees and plants (St. Matt. xiii. 32), the Apostle probably drops the figure which he has employed, and simply goes on to speak of Gospel growth. (A pedantically accurate use of figurative language is not always aimed at by St. Paul; cf. Rom. xii. 23.) In Acts, the word is frequently, and almost technically, used, to express this. (Acts vi. 7; xv. 24, xix. 20). "Bringing forth fruit" would then denote the production of spiritual graces, dispositions, and virtues; while the "increase" would signify the external propagation of the Gospel, the addition of new converts and new churches. (The different shade of thought expressed by the same word in a different context, inf. v. 10, ("increasing in knowledge") is no objection to this view.)

These "notes" of secundity and expansion still characterise the Church. We turn, now to the one fruit of holiness, alike in every climate and under all conditions; now to the
work going on in the mission-field. No effete system ever won such various adherents. No dying tree ever produced such fruit.

7. To heard and thoroughly knew the grace of God.] The “of it” in the A.V. is to be carefully avoided. “Grace” is the accus. after the two verbs, “heard” and “knew.” (See Note at end of Chapter.) in truth.] Verē, truly. Heb. טוּנוּאָ. 7. Even as ye learned it from Epaphras. On Epaphras, see infra, IV. 12.] Philemon, v. 23. Cf. the terms applied to Tychicus: ins. iv. 7. for you.] Rather, on our behalf, “as representing us.”

8. Our delegate to you, yours also to us, who brought us the news of your love, as you feel and show it moving ever in the circle of the influence of the Spirit.

9. That ye might be filled with the perfect knowledge (τὴν ἐπίγνωσιν) of His will. All the four Epistles of the Captivity pray for this. (Eph. i. 17; Philipp. i. 9; Coloss. i. 9, 10; ii. 2; Philemon i. 6.) Possibly, when a thoroughly spiritual soul is turned in upon itself, and excluded from external activity, even the speculative beauty of truth is seen more fully, and the glory and importance of “knowledge” is more fully realised. Still, the ‘perfect knowledge’ of which St. Paul here speaks is chastened and restrained by a practical limit, which saves it from finding no end in wandering mazes lost.” That limit is supplied by the words “of His will.” (The 119th Psalm was not improbably written by a confessor in a dungeon, and is pervaded by a similar love of God’s law, and sense of its exceeding breadth and the blessedness of knowing it. See vv. 96, 97.) There may also, in this epignosis, be a reference to the false gnosis of the Gnostic teachers. Bishop Wordsworth cites 2 St. Peter i. 2; 3, 8; ii. 20.

In all wisdom and understanding spiritual.] The attribute spiritual extends to both. Wisdom (σοφία) is, according to Aristotle, not only to know the results of first principles (τὰ ἐκ τῶν ἀρχῶν), but to have a true grasp of the principles themselves (ἐπι τὰς ἀρχὰς ἀνθρωπών). While wisdom is thus primary, the mistress of all sciences (ἡ διερεύκησις τῶν εἰρημένων, Ethic. Nicom. vi. 7), understanding (σύνεσις) is particular and concerned with details. The first is creative, the second critical. Of the higher sense of σοφία, such as we find it in Wisdom and Proverbs, there is no question here. So far as there is a distinction between the two words, wisdom is generally the knowledge of spiritual mysteries, of great theological principles; understanding is the faculty of applying them to action. “Both in understanding the mysteries of Christianity, and in ordering your lives according thereto.” (Hammond, in loc.)

10. That ye might walk worthy of the Lord.] i.e. worthy of Christ, as becomes faithful Christians. For the expression, cf. “worthy of calling,” Ephes. iv. 4; of “saints,” Rom. viii. 29; of “gospel,” Phil. ii. 15; of “God,” 1 Thess. ii. 12; 3 St. John v. 6.

unto all pleasing.] Not exactly of God, but of Christ, who has just been spoken of in “worthy of the Lord.” The word “pleasing” (ἀπάτευσα) had originally a slightly unfavourable tinge about it, an implication of obsequious courtliness or flattery. The verb is once used by St. Paul in a good sense (1 Cor. x. 33; cf. compound in Titus ii. 9), but it is also used in a bad sense of unworthy flattery of men (1 Thess. ii. 4; also the compound ἀπαθυατυμακω, “manpleaser,” ins. ii. 22). In Philo it is rather frequently applied to studious desire to please God. (See passages in Bretsch. Lex. Man. s. v.) In the higher signification to which it is raised in religion, the idea of careful homage as to a king whom we wish to please is probably preserved. “That we should make our one life-walk worthy of Christ our King, to whom we pay a court, which can never be extravagant or degenerate into flattery, that we may please Him.”

growing up towards the perfect knowledge of God.] We adopt here the T. R. (ἀνασκομοῦντο εἰς τὴν ἐπίγνωσιν). The great authority of Bishop Lightfoot is for a different reading and interpretation, viz. τὴν ἐπίγνωσιν—the “simple instrumental dative”—growth by knowledge. (So also Huther; de Wette.) Would it not rather be ἐν this sense? (1 Peter ii. 2.) The verb is constricted with εἰς, Ephes. iv. 15, 21; 1 Peter ii. 2, and this gives the best meaning. At the same time, the greatest amount of external authority is for the reading which signifies “growing by the perfect knowledge of God.”
the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;

11. Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness;

12. Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:

13. Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:

14. In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:

15. Who is the image of the in-

(Well rendered by Dank, "Quo autore facti sunt participes sortis ianctorum quæ sita est in lumine." Hist. Rev. Div. ii. 445.) The lot of their inheritance lies in the glorious region of the light. Light is the perfect ideal of holiness, beauty, and joy (Apoc. xxii. 3). To be partakers in the lot of the saints in the light is to be partakers of their holiness and felicity.

13. Who delivered us from the power of the darkness, and translated us into the kingdom of the Son of His love. "Delivered us" by one great victorious act as a conqueror (on πουμα, see 1 Thessal. i. 10); "translated us" by a wholesale transplantation and incorporation into the kingdom of the Son of His love, the kingdom of Christ, the Church here and now (probably with a polemical undertone—the kingdom of His dear Son, not of angels). ("We are under the Heir, not under servants." Severian, quoted by Bp. Lightfoot; cf. Hebrews i. 2, ii. 5.) We are not simply delivered; our deliverance is also a transference. (See Note at end of Chapter.)

from the power of the darkness. "The power" (της ζωοσεως). The word often means authority, rightful power—yet frequently has an implicit notion of acting as one wills, irrespective of justice and mercy. St. Paul evidently signifies a transference from tyrannical sway to a gently ordered and constitutional kingdom. "Simply to be under Satan is hard. But with this power which is tyranny added, it is harder far." (Chrysost.)

the darkness. Our Lord's very words have here passed into the language of St. Paul (ἡ ζωοσεως του σκοτους, S. Luke xxii. 53). Satan, by sin, becomes darkness concentrated, and, as it were, personified—plunged in the region that lies outside God, who is the Light. In "darkness" we have a so-called "Johannic word," which is yet common to him with St. Luke and St. Paul—of which we have proof that Christ was the author—and which passed into the common stock of Christian speech.

14. In whom we have that redemption which is the remission of sins. "Quam totam redemptionem remissio peccatorum
visible God, the firstborn of every creature:
16 For by him were all things

created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions,

in ver. 19, the Apostle goes back to the counsel of God, and speaks of the reconciliation as the good pleasure of God, while Christ is the medium through which that good pleasure is carried out. "It pleased the Father" (A.V.) should rather be, "God was pleased," "It was God's good pleasure that—"

There is a quiet majesty in the abro's, fourteen times repeated by St. Paul between vers. 16–23, twelve times certainly referring to Christ, and twice in a way in which we can scarcely definitely distinguish. [The mode in which abro's is used, sometimes emphatically of Christ (cf. on 1 St. John i. 5), sometimes in a synthesis in which Christ and God are blended and cannot be separated by critical analysis, is one of the strongest proofs of St. Paul's entire possession by the thought of the true and proper Divinity of the Son of God.]

When we pass on to the mode of the reconciliation, the reference is to Christ, through whom God moulds His purpose and executes His beneficent will. The part of Christ in redemption is the new theme.

As to the use of one important word. "Image" (eikon), in the New Testament, comes to be employed in a sense which is exactly opposite to that of the Hebrew word of which it is a translation in the LXX. The Hebrew דָּבָר means a shade or phantom, and is applied to seeming existence, unreality of being (Ps. lxxxiii. 20); hence metaphorically to any image or likeness. But in the Ep. to the Hebrews eikon is used as the exact antithesis to that which is shadow,—"The law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things" (Hebrews xi. 1), and may be literally translated by the phrase of Cicero which opposes the 'solid and express image' (solida et expressa effigies) to the 'shadow.'

With the idea of embodiment and realization in the word image two others came to be blended: (a) the image and likeness of God, after which man was made, was applied to Christ Jesus ("Christ, who is the Image of God") 2 Cor. iv. 4; Coloss. iii. 10; (b) In the Platonizing speculations of Philo, the Image of God ran parallel with the Logos, of which it was an attribute. Thus, by the speculations of Hellenistic writers of various schools, and by the Chaldee paraphrases—by Oriental thought derived primarily from Solomon, and by Hellenistic thought prompted by the Book of Wisdom—Christ's way was as truly made ready in Theology as it was in a different sphere by the Jewish ritual.
or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:

17 "And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.

(15. "Of that God who is not seen, and cannot be seen" (τοῦ Θεοῦ τοῦ ἀπαρατοῦ). This attribute of God is placed in a form so emphatic, because it is explanatory of "the Image." Christ is the Image of that God who is not, and cannot be, seen otherwise. In that Image only can man see God. It is exactly St. John's thought: "No man hath seen God at any time. The only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He and no other (εἰκὼν, exclusive), interpreted Him to us once for all" (Ἐγεννησα, St. John 1. 18), by the language of His Incarnation. Compare the language of Hebrews, i. 3: "The offraying of the Father's glory, and the stamped copy of His substance." "In ver. 15 St. Paul is scattering seeds of thought, from which he may afterwards refuse the worshippers of angels." (Bengel.)

the first-born of every creature (πρωτότοκος πάντος κτισματος). On the history and interpretation of the word "First-born," see Additional Note. The meaning of the term has been best explained by the greatest of dogmatic theologians, who enjoyed the advantage of speaking and thinking in Greek. "When He is called 'First-born of creation,' it is not as One put quite on a level with things created, and antecedent to them only in time, that He is styled First-born—how could it be so, seeing that He is only Begotten?—but on account of the condescension of the Word to creation" (Athanas. Orat. ii. 62). "It is not said with any condition annexed, but absolutely, 'the only-Begotten Son who is in the bosom of the Father' (St. John i. 18). But the 'First-born' here has the condition of creation annexed by St. Paul (sc. for in Him were all things created, v. 16). But, if all things were created in Him, He is different from, and not one of the creatures, and He is not a created thing, but the Creator of things created. Therefore, He is called 'First-born' not on account of His coming from the Father, but on account of the Creation having been brought forth into existence in Him. And as before Creation He was the Son . . . so before being called 'First-born of every creature' He was the Word who was with God, and was God. It is clear that He is called 'First-born,' not on His own account as if He were a creature—nor as having any relation in His essence with the whole creation—but because the Word, when creating all things in the beginning, condescended to things created, that they might be able to come into existence." New Test.—VOL. III.

(16. all things were created in Him, by one creative act (ἐκείνης ἔργων).] That creative act, the first original relation of creation to the Creator, was brought about after a type whose lines were laid in the eternal Mind of the Firstborn (ἐν αὐτῷ). With the aor. at beginning of the verse contrast clearly the p.t. at its close. "All things contain in creation" (εν αὐτώ), have been called into creation and continue so by Him and for Him. The present abiding relation of creation to its God continues through Christ. "The conservation of things is nothing but a sort of continuous creation" (Estius). St. Paul's thought here is precisely that of St. John and of our Lord (St. John i. 3; 4; v. 17). We have in St. John the distinction between the original act of creation, and the continuance of all things in creation indicated similarly by a change of tense (ἐγένετο, ἐγένετον, St. John i. 3). This central coherence of Pauline and Johannic Christology upon the part assigned to the Son in Creation was brought out with much power by the Council of Antioch against Paul of Samosata, A.D. 269. After quoting St. John i. 3 and Colossians i. 16, the letter of the Bishops proceeds: "All things were made by Him and for Him. Even so, as by one truly existing and energizing—as by Him who is both Word and God; through whom the Father made all things, not as through a mere instrument or impersonal principle of knowledge (ὅστις ἐνεργεῖ ἰσότητα)—the Father having begotten the Son as a living, existing, Personal Energy, working all in all." (Routh, Relig. Sacr. iii. 393.)

This doctrine is one of great importance in an age of natural science and speculation. The Word of God is the centre of creation. The order of the universe is the reflection of His thought. He made and sustains all things. The life, coherence, development, system of the universe are from Him, in Him, to Him. (See Mr. L. Davies's excellent remarks, Epistle of St. Paul, &c., P. 9.) The Apostle in this verse seems to have Ps. xxxiii. 6 in his mind.

thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers.) Probably referring, in this exuberance of language, to the angelic hierarchy, as conceived by Gnostic Judaism. Not with-
For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell;

And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind through wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled

out reason has a Greek Father found in these glowing words a probable reminiscence of that which was actually beheld by him who was "caught up to the third heaven." "He might have seen so much"! (St. Greg. in Ezek. Hom. 8.)

All things collectively—the whole universe of things coalesces into system in Him.] The passage, Proverbs viii.–ix. 12, should be carefully studied with Notes (Volume IV. 553)—"Words uttered by Christ before He was in the Flesh. They are gospel before any gospel of them all; as good gospel as if recorded by any of the four" (Bp. Andrews' Works, iv. 277). The eternal wisdom (1) from everlasting (Proverbs viii. 22, 23), (2) in creation (ibid. vvo. 25, 29), (3) with man (vvo. 50, 31), answers to Christ in Colossians i. 15, 16, 18—(1) the Image of the Invisible God; (2) creating all things; (3) the Head of the Church.

For the thought of the new creation thus linked to the old, and both brought into connection with Christ, cf. the ancient Christian hymn.

"But even while the world came forth,
In all the beauty of its birth,
In Thy deep thought Thou didst behold
Another world of nobler mould;
For Thou didst will that Christ should frame
A new creation by His Name."

Hymn for Septuages. Sunday, in 'Hymns Ancient and Modern.'

who is Beginning] ἀρχή (cf. ἀρχαὶ supra. ver. 16. He is the Beginning of all beginnings). The Greek word (ἀρχή) blends the two notions of temporal and causative beginning. (That by which anything begins to be, its principle, and cause.) The philosopher Anaximander, is said to have first used the word in this sense seven centuries B.C. Cf. Simplic. in Arist. Physic. f. 6 and 32 (Grimm, Lex. N. T. p. 53). It is at once beginning and creative principle. So, "The Beginning of the creation of God" (Apoc. iii. 14). Note also that 'First-born from the dead' is another ἱδρυμα title of Christ (Apoc. i. 5); so that this verse supplies another point of contact between the Christology of St. Paul and that of St. John.

that in him should all the fulness] In all others—patriarchs, apostles, prophets, angels—the Spirit was given "by measure" (St. John iii. 34). The whole Fulness of the Divinity abode permanently in Him ("quasi si duas summator"). Pelag. ap. Hieron.). On the Fulness, see note on Ephes. i. 23.

dwell.] "abide permanently"—as distinct from and opposite to a transitory visit (cf. ποιμεν ναποκις, "art thou only a visitor?" St. Luke xxiv. 18). (Compare "the Spirit remaining on Him," St. John i. 33.)

It was God's good pleasure through Christ to reconcile all things in heaven and earth. The Apostle, no doubt, mainly (see Note at end of Chapter) thinks of angels and men, who are united as one body in Christ, their Head. And the pacification has been produced by His blood, shed upon the cross, by His actual death. (Upon the blood, see on i St. John i. 7.)

and having made peace through the blood of His cross] See Chrysostom's beautiful exposition: "It is great to 'reconcile;' greater 'through Himself;' greater again 'through His blood;' greatest of all 'through His cross.' Here are five things to be admired, reconciliation, to God, through Himself, by death, by the Cross."

things in the heavens] Cf. Ephes. i. 10. "How? Things in the heavens thus—He transferred man there; He restored to them their enemy. Not only did He cause things on earth to be at peace: He raised an army to the heavens. Hence deep peace. Angels are seen again on earth, since man has appeared in heaven." (Chrysost. in loc.) St. Paul's universalism is not literal and futuristic; it is at once historical and ideal.

through Him to reconcile all things unto Himself.] It will be noticed that the preps. "through" and "unto" are used, with unmistakable antithesis, here in the account of the new creation, and above, ver. 17, in that of the old creation. We are reconciled, as it were, into and towards Him, so as to be drawn near to Him—vitaly united, and absorbed into, His supernatural life, as members of that body of which He is the Head.

And you, once being in a state of estrangement and hostile in your mind, plunged as ye were in those wicked works of folly. In a state of estrangement from God, from Christ, from His Church, from hope—"hostile in your mind, which lay immersed, and had its very existence, in those evil works of yours." See notes on Ephes. ii. 16, iv. 18.
22. In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblamable and unreproveable in his sight:
23. If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;

22. In the Body of his flesh, through that death of his.] The exuberant fulness of language here is anti-idealistic—to distinguish broadly the natural, literal, historical body which hung upon the Cross in all the reality of human infirmity, from the mystical, ideal body, mentioned in ver. 18, not without reference probably to Docetic notions, always latent in Gnosticism. The Apostle speaks of the true Humanity, with its capacity of suffering and death.

23. If ye continue (i.e. as ye surely will) in the faith.] Such is the force of εἰς with the indicative.

grounded.] The idea as applied to the spiritual life seems to be directly derived from our Lord's words (St. Luke vi. 48) "having the foundation laid."

and settled.] Means the consequence of having the foundations laid. The first, having a foundation external to themselves upon the Rock, which is Christ; the second, a consequent stability within themselves.

and not being moved away.] The negative here (μὴ) is subjective—"moved away" is a word sometimes used of change and turbulence in political life. Not of such a character as is in a chronic state of rebellion and revolution against the gentle sway of the hope which the Gospel gives. On this meaning of the word, with a possible allusion to the conservative tone of the Colossian mind, see Introduction.

to every creature . . . under heaven.] See above on ver. 6, and cf. Rom. x. 18.

24. The mention of his having become a minister of the Gospel (βαικωνος) fires his soul, and sets it in motion. "Now" should stand prominently (not, as in A.V. with "who now," from a wrong reading) but in the sense of "as it is, I rejoice."

and fill up the which is behind of the afflictions of Christ, . . . for his body's sake, which is the church.]

fill up.] The word ἀναλήψις is not found in the LXX, and only here in the N. T. One or other of two meanings alone has any degree of probability.—(1) The ἀναλήψις may mean supply coming from an opposite quarter, to make up deficiency. The antithesis is of two personal agents—Christ, the sinless Lord, leaves something to be supplied by His servant. This view is powerfully supported by Bp. Lightfoot. (See Additional Note at end of chapter.) (2) But another shade of meaning may be assigned, which perhaps gives the whole passage a sense at once profounder, and more coherent. ἀναλήψις also means mutually, in turn. Thus the ἀναλήψις in ἀναλήψις of Christ's afflictions—the "filling up," in fact, historically, and, so to speak,
24. Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the church:

materially, of that which He "filled up" ideally, essentially, in principle. St. Paul does not speak of the sufferings of Christ recorded in the Gospels, endured upon the cross, or in the world for thirty-three years. He thinks of the sufferings, not in the Body of His Flesh, not in His person, but in His mystical body. The passion of St. Paul is an integral part of the Church's prolonged passion, and that of the Passions of Jesus Christ (1) from the real union of Christ with His members; (2) from His intense sympathy with them. For redemption Christ suffered enough, and left nothing lacking. No supplement of a martyr's passion was needed. What is "behind" or "lacking" in that which is infinite? That which underlies St. Paul's language here is the thought of His Lord who had said to Him from heaven, "Why persecutest thou Me? . . . Jesus whom thou persecutest" (Acts ix. 4, 5). He in his turn fills up that which is lacking of the afflictions, which are to be suffered by Christ in His members. A vacant place is left for him to fill up. St. Paul certainly knew that an important part was assigned to him. He might, without arrogance, speak of himself as adding an important "complement" to the total fore-ordained sum of the afflictions of Christ in His members. (See Additional Note on ver. 24.)

subref I am made a minister.] This shows that in the previous words the Apostle is speaking of edification of the Church, not of satisfaction for sin. He is a minister, not a Mediator. The afflictions of which he speaks are for the Church's discipline, not for her redemption. "He suffers for others, because Christ first suffered for him." (Pelog. ap. Hieron.)

25. Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, to fulfill the word of God; 26. Even the mystery which hath

26. The mystery.] Words from the ancient initiations are favourites with St. Paul. (Cf. "perfect," v. 28; Philipp. iv. 12; inf. "sealed," Ephes. i. 13.) Mystery in this place, and generally in Pauline Epistles, is accompanied by some words denoting revelation or manifestation, to signify a secret made known.

In two of the Epistles of the Captivity it seems to have two different aspects. In Ephesians (iii. 4-10) the mystery is the Church growing onward and upward, taking in the Gentiles in its advancing movement, shaping itself before men and angels in the increasing light. Here in Colossians the mystery is the inward and spiritual progress — the "growing up before the Lord" — the formation of the spiritual character (''Christ in you''); not "among you," v. 27. We declare in the Creed our belief in the Holy Catholic Church. The "mystery" in Ephesians is the catholicity; the "mystery" in Colossians is the holiness of the Church. The exposition of the Epistle to the Colossians by a great commentator of the School of Antioch has a sentence here worthy to be recorded: "He calls His grace concerning the Gentiles a mystery, as being unrevealed to those before the dispensation, but their participation in it (he calls) the full knowledge of the mystery" (Theodor. Mopsuest., P. 929, edit. Fritzsche). See notes on Ephes i. 9; iii. 1, 4, 9. It is significant of the deep impression made by this part of St. Paul's teaching, that Ignatius addresses the Ephesians as those who "were jointly initiated with Paul into the mystery" (Παύλου συμφωνεῖν — Epist. ad Ephes. xii.).

from ages and from generations.] "From ages" (ἀπὸ τῶν οἰκῶν) "unknown in remote periods of antiquity"; "from generations" (ἀπὸ τῶν γενεῶν) "unknown even in recent generations." (Bp. Lightfoot.) Or, it may signify "from the ages," the periods of time in which the world exists in chronic continuance, and "from the generations" who occupied those ages. The mystery, both here and in Ephes. iii. 9, is said to be hidden from "the ages." But there is a distinction in those to whom it is revealed. In the Ephesians there is an object of instruction to "the principalities and powers in heavenly places," here to "the saints." The "mystery" in Ephesians is one of Divine Wisdom, in Colossians one of Divine Grace. That secret initiation of which St. Paul speaks in
28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus:

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

The former concerns the history of the Church; that of which he speaks in the latter concerns the history of the individual—an indwelling of Christ in the heart. (inf. v. 27, "Christ in you"). The former is a prospect, the latter is a presence. (cf. Ephes. iii. 16, 17; St. John xiv. 23.) The "mystery" is taken in the two senses of (1) God's purpose for the Church at large (Ephes. i. 9, 10); (2) God's purpose for the individual believer's heart (Coloss. i. 27).

"St. Paul makes a distinction between "testimony" and "mystery"—the former is the object of faith, the latter of knowledge." (Remains of A. Knox, Esq., i. 438.)

The following is more probably "who is"—(ος των Χριστος). The mystery passes into the living Christ. For this absorption, as it were, into Christ or the Cross of that which is closely connected with Him, cf. a remarkable sentence in Ignat. Epist. ad Ephes. IX. For the grammatical explanation of the relative agreeing in gender and number with that which follow, see Winer, 'Gramm.,' P. 143, edit. 3.

27. Christ in you, the hope of glory.] The Glory. Sc. "As far as He is in them, so far they have the hope of glory" (Bp. Davenant). "He is the Hope of the glory who has freely given us the reason to expect these things" (Theodor. Mopsuest. in Epist. ad Coloss., P. 929, edit. Fritzsche).

28. Note the eager, impetuous, three-fold "every man" which here rushes to St. Paul's lips. There may be the implied reference which so many have supposed to the Gnostic initiations—in them, the "teaching" and "presentation" of a few bewildered neophytes, flattered by the hierophant as the "perfect," who possess all the most precious of secrets—in the Gospel, the initiation for all who will accept it, and its impartial blessings. Yet the passage is not merely polemical. The thought of Catholicity has become passionately dear to the Apostle. The shadows lengthen in the sunset. Yet he feels also that the glorious mystery (now manifested), which embraces a whole fallen race, is to take in this man and that. No individual is to be neglected in the pastoral work, but each is to be savingly initiated (cf. Ps. lxxxvii. 4, 5, 6). The flock is to be gathered in one by one, and each to be known by name. Compare the remarkable change and balance of the neuter by the masculine in our Lord's words.

"all that the Father giveth Me."
"him that cometh to Me."
"all which He hath given Me."
"I should raise it up again."
"that every one."
"I will raise him up."

St. John vi. 37, 39, 40. There is, in this passage of Colossians, the same conviction of a vast mass and collection to be brought to the eternal life of the Resurrection, of which no individual is to be forgotten in the work of the ministry here, or in the presentation to Christ hereafter.

29. I also labour, striving.] The first word here is probably abletic (cf. Philipp. ii. 16: "that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain"); the second is certainly so—"contending in the lists for the prize."

According to His inworking which inworketh (or, His energy which energiseth) in me mightily.] It is St. Paul's conviction that Christianity is a life and power. Cf. "For He who is continually inworking in you both the willing and the inworking on behalf of His good pleasure is God." (Philipp. ii. 13.)

ADDITIONAL NOTES.

ver. 2.

Bp. Lightfoot thinks that ἐν Κολουσαι̂ς is beyond doubt the reading here. But that the title is ἐπί Κολουσαι̂ς—a proof that the title is somewhat later in time; while the very fact of variation in orthography may well be an indication of the obscurity into which the city had fallen. (Pp. 16, 17.)

Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our
COLOSSIANS. I.

Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. The evidence of the uncial MSS. for and against the retention of "the Lord Jesus Christ" is almost equally balanced, with a slight preference for. Origen states that in Colossians the salutation is from the Father only ('Opp.' iv. p. 467). Chrysost. expressly says that in this passage St. Paul does not give the name of Christ ('Opp.' xi. 324; cf. Hom.' xxx. 2 Corinth. xiii. 13; 'Op.' x. 651).

Griesb., Tisch., Bp. Lightfoot reject the words; Lachm. places them in brackets; Huther, Beng., Meyer, approve the omission. But the words might have been omitted from a dogmatical scruple of the copyists, to whom it might easily have seemed that it was against the whole analogy of Pauline and Scriptural feeling to use a form of expression which, as it stands here, might be construed as "Father of us, and of the Lord Jesus Christ. "It is certainly more conceivable that the copyists should have omitted the words for this, or some other reason, than that this absolutely singular deviation from St. Paul's invariable practice should have occurred." (See the full discussion in Reiche, 'Comment. Crit.' II. Pp. 250-252.)

ver. 6.

We read with Tischend. and Reiche— τοῦ πατρὸς εἰς υἷς καθὼς καὶ εἰ πατή τῷ κόσμῳ, καὶ ἐστὶν καρποφόρωσιν καὶ δυναμικόν καθὼς καὶ εἰ υἷς.

πάπερη is often the translation of "the" in the LXX.

ἐπηγώνων. For the distinction between γενώσεως and ἐπηγώνως, as between partial and gradual knowledge, see especially I. Cor. xiii. 12. (ὅτι γενώσεως ἐκ μιροὺς τότε δὲ ἐπηγώνως εἰς τὰ λ.)

ver. 13.

"Translated," μετήπτωσις is the word used of the great deportation of Israel, 2 Kings xvii. 23 (cf. of Jehoahaz, ibid. xxiii. 31). See Bp. Davenant in loc. Antiochus the Great thus "translated" two thousand Jewish families from Babylon into Lydia and Phrygia (Joseph. 'Antiq.' xl. 3, 4). The chief cities of Phrygia must probably have been among the stations for these Jewish colonists (Bp. Lightfoot, p. 19). Is it possible that St. Paul is here alluding to a circumstance which might have been much thought of among the Jewish race in Phrygia?

ver. 15-19, seqq.

(a) On Col. i. 15, εἰκὼν τοῦ Θεοῦ, cf. Plato Timæus, x.

1 Cf. "Before Abraham was brought into being, I exist." πρὶν ἂ γενέσθαι, ἐγὼ εἰμι. St. John viii. 58.

2 See Grim. 'Clav. N. T.' p. 381. "πρωτό-τοκος (St. Matt. i. 25; St. Luke ii. 7) is the same as only. Here it means that the generation of Christ is before all creation of creaturely existences, and, therefore, before angels." (A Lap. xix. 76.)

3 'Paulin. Lehrbegriff,' P. 315.

4 'Das Christentum der drei ersten Jahrh.' P. 296.
CHAPTER II.

1 For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you,
and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh;

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love,
and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God,
and of the Father, and of Christ;

1. For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh.

2. That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ;

Bishop Lightfoot, while admiring this interpretation, considers that, critically, there is one fatal objection to it. It empties the ãρτος in ἄρτων ἕκαστον of its proper force, or rather, contradicts it. For the central point of this interpretation, he urges, is the identification of the afflicted Christian with his afflicted Lord, while the central point of the ãρτος is the distinction of the Christian from his Lord. The objection would, however, be removed if the interpretation of ãρτος given above be adopted. It is well known that on ver. 24, and mainly on ἄρτων ãρτος τοῦ άρτων άρτος, modern Roman Catholic theologians base the doctrine of the sufferings of saints being profitable to the faithful in the form of remission of sins, which is technically termed Indulgence. Yet the greatest Roman Catholic commentators have seen that any interpretation of this passage, which brings in the idea of satisfaction at all, brings in an idea which they themselves reject as impious. "As if," cries Estius, "Christ had not suffered enough for redemption, and therefore needed a supplemental satisfaction of martyrs! It is impious to believe this, and not less impious to attribute it to Catholics." The same writer admits that, while the doctrine of satisfaction of Saints is assuredly Catholic and Apostolic, it "cannot be solidly concluded from this passage.... Such a statement on St. Paul's part might possibly have some arrogance." See also his summary of the general interpretation of the Greek Father (ii. p. 666).
COLOSSIANS. II.

3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.
4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words,
5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ.

6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him:
7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.
8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit,
after the tradition of men, after the
rudiments of the world, and not after
Christ.
9 For in him dwell all the ful-
ness of the Godhead bodily.

his spoil.” This expression powerfully grasps
the essence of the proselytizing spirit; the
proselytizer’s spoil is the person prosely-
tyzed. “He aims at doing this through
that which is at once in its arrogant claims
a high philosophy, and in its miserable
reality an empty deceit (διὰ τῆς ψιλοσοφίας
καὶ κακῆς ἁμαρτίας); a philosophy artful, moulded
in accordance with an esoteric system, per-
vaded by five fatal deficiencies. (1) It is
merely traditional; and, therefore, of prec
arious truth. (2) It is human, and, there-
fore, deficient in authority. (3) It is ele-
mentary, belonging to “the outworn creed,”
to the rudiments of religion, and, therefore,
united for Christian manhood. (4) It is
material, not connected with the soul’s true
home and centre, but with the palpable and
external, (τοῦ κόσμου), and is, therefore,
deficient in spirituality. (5) And, being this,
assuredly, and as matter of fact, it is not
after Christ.

through philosophy and vain deceit.] The
two Greek words, “philosophy” and
“virtue,” are used by St. Paul only once:
8. There are words exalted by the world
which the Gospel deprecates, and words
despised by the world which the Gospel
exalts. See Additional Note at end of the
chapter for ‘rudiments of the world.’

9. For in him dwelleth (εἰς Θεόν) all the
fulness of the Godhead, in bodily wise.
Here is the proof of the last words of
ver. 8, “not after Christ; for in Him,” &c.
Three things are here: (1) the dwelling—“in
Him;” (2) the fulness of the
Godhead;” (3) the mode of dwelling—
bodily.”

bodily.] The two great doctrinal statements
of St. Paul here are once more the exact
counterpart of St. John. “All the fulness
of the Godhead” corresponds to “The Word
was God” (St. John i. 1). “Dwelleth
bodily” is the counterpart of The Word
was made flesh.” (S. John i. 14.) St. Paul’s
dogmatic language is as carefully guarded
as St. John’s. It is, perhaps, the only form
which could have avoided the idea of “limi-
tation of the Infinite, or unreality of the Body
assumed” (as Bp. Lightfoot translates “in
bodily wise,” “with a bodily manifestation.”)
The dogmatic force of this verse is power-
fully given by the Council of Antioch, A.D.
269. “We affirm that the Son... is God
and Lord of the total of things created; but
that having been sent from the heavens by
the Father, and having taken flesh, He was
made Man. Wherefore, even the Body
from the Virgin containing all the fulness of
the Godhead in bodily wise, [the Manhood] is
immutably united to the Godhead, and taken
into God. (ῥεθούναι.)” Routh, ‘Reliq.
Sacr.’ iii. 298. For Christological doctrines
common to St. Paul and St. John, see supra
i. 15, 16, 18.

of the Godhead.) Such abstract expres-
sions for God are very rare with St. Paul—
θεός only here; θεός only Rom. i. 20;
τὸ θεῖον only Acts xvii. 29—no doubt from
the feeling that they might tend to obscure
the Personality of God.

9, 10. ye are complete.] The fulness of
the Godhead is in Christ; and in a sense,
lower indeed, yet quite true, your fulness
is in Him. The perfection of the Divine
caller, and the perfection of humanity,
meet in Christ. “In Him man has a com-
plete Ideal” (Mr. L. Davies); “and ye
are by a vital union in Him, being filled with
His fulness, who is the living Source, the
Head of all principality and power. Ye are
filled, not by angels, but by their Lord.”

11.] Having been once for all circumcised
in union with Him with a circumcision
which has three characteristics—(1) Internal
and spiritual efficacy; an operation deeper
than human hand can work. (2) Univer-
sality, “having its sphere in the putting off
of the body of the flesh” (certainly not “the
body of the sins of the flesh,” as in A.V. See
note on this phrase at the end of the chap-
ter). It is not enough for the baptized Chris-
tian, who is true to the high ideal of the
supernatural life, to cut off one or other
member of the body which consists of a flesh
corrupted by sin, but the whole. (3) It is a
circumcision which is “of Christ,” Christian,
of which He is the Author. “Circumcision
is no longer in the knife, but in Christ Him-
self. Not a hand, but the Spirit, confers the
circumcision. It circumcises, not a part, but
the whole man” (Chrysost. in loc.). “He
calls it circumcision not made by a hand, to
show the difference of its inworking—in one
case a human hand, but here Divine Grace,
which inworks the removal of Mortality’s
corruption.” (Theod. Mops. i. 288, edit.
Swete.)
without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ:

12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

12.] "Having been once for all buried with Him in your Baptism, in which ye are co-risen with Him through your faith in the energy of God, who raised Him from the dead;" or, "through that faith which is the result of the energy of God, who raised Him from the dead." The statement in ver. 11 makes Christian circumcision an intensely spiritual process. But man's nature craves for an external and visible symbol, which we have in Holy Baptism; and under the Gospel, the sign passes into an efficacious sign or sacrament. (Bp. Davenant.)

Buried with Him.] See on Rom. vi. 4. It is with St. Paul a principle that the whole Christian life is a following of the blessed steps of one most holy Life, an imitation of Christ. We are conceived and born (Galat. iv. 19); crucified (Galat. ii. 20; Rom. vi. 5); dead (Rom. vi. 3, vii. 4; cf. 1 St. Peter iv. 1); buried (Rom. vi. 4); risen (Rom. vi. 5; Coloss. iii. 1); nay, ascended and reigning (Ephes. ii. 4, 5, 6) with Him. What is done or suffered by Him historically is done in us analogously and mystically now, and will be completed historically and actually hereafter. This is the underlying principle of the order of the Christian year.

13.] This may be paraphrased—"And you, being dead with a twofold death, in your miserably repeated transgressions, and in the whole unregenerate, spiritually uncircumcised condition of your flesh, with the weakness of its susceptibilities—ye, God, by one blessed act, co-quickened with Christ, having given to us." (note the subtle delicacy of the change from ὑπάκοα, standing so emphatically at the beginning of the verse—followed by ὑπάκοα, and another emphatic ὑπάκοα—to χαρακτηρίσμενος ἤσως) "(aye, to you and me!) once for all, of His free grace, the great gift of remission of those our transgressions." This "condonation" has two great features: it is gratuitous (χαρακτηρισμένος), and it is universal (πᾶν).

14, 15.] The general meaning seems to be this. "Having blotted out the bond against us, consisting in ordinances (or decrees), which were contrary to us—aye, and has taken it away" (note the perfect ἔφευ, after the repeated aorists), "so as to prevent it from intervening between us and God (ὑπέρ εἰκὼν τοῦ μετατομοῦ) (ver. 15); having stripped off the principalities and powers which, as it were, clung to Him, He made a show of them with a glorious boldness" (see Note at end of chapter), "having led them in triumph in it" (sc. the Cross). In the interpretation of this passage we must remember the figurative grandeur of the language, corresponding to the sublimity of the subject-matter—the stir and glow of the Apostle's soul as he brings out "the paradox of the Crucifixion," and shows us how "the convict's gibbet is the victor's car." (Bp. Lightfoot). "No conqueror, loftily seated in his triumphal chariot, did ever yield a spectacle so gallant or magnificent; no tree was ever adorned with trophies so pompous or precious as the Cross." (Barrow, Serm. xvi.; Pearson, Art. ii.). "Nowhere else has he spoken so magnificently!" (Chrysost.).

In the ordinances] (ῥήμα ὁμολογίας). There are two different streams of interpretation of this passage, as δόγμα is taken in (1) a good, or (2) a bad sense, as (1) a gracious rule, forming part of Christ's easy yoke, or as (2) a decree of the outworn obsolete law. The Latins generally take it as our A. V. in the latter sense, while the Greeks understand "dogmas" as precepts of the Gospel, as a means of abrogating mere legal ordinances. "Having by his doctrines blotted out." (Hammond.) (Hunc cautem omnem delineavit decretis ut dicta resurrectionem et immortalitatem. Theod. Mops. i. 290. Theodore, both here and Ephes. ii. 15, understands by δόγμα "the facts and hopes of the Gospel.") This is a forced interpretation.

blotting out . . . nailing.] There were two ways of cancelling a bill or bond: "by blotting, or crossing it with a pen [rather, by expunging the letters of a wax tablet—(Bp. Wordsworth),] or by striking a nail through it." (Hammond.)

the handwriting] What is the handwriting? Commentators have pointed to (a) Gen. ii. 17; (b) Exod. xix. 8; (c) "the condemnatory sentence which conscience murmurs over to itself again itself from the decrees of
And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days:

17 Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.

18 Let no man beguile you of your reward; in respect of which they say, "The holyday or of the new moon, or of the sabbath day."

We have here an exhaustive enumeration of the Jewish days of observance—annual (as Passover, Pentecost, Tabernacles); monthly (Numbers xxviii. 11); weekly, in the Sabbath day. They are thus classified in the T. (2 Kings iv. 23; 1 Chron. xxiii. 31; 2 Chron. ii. 4, xxx. 3; Ezek. xlv. 7; Hosea ii. 11; cf. Isaiah i. 13, 14). Hence the division was recognised in the rubrical language of ritualistic Judaism (cf. Galat. iv. 10).

or of the sabbath days, A. V.] This should rather be "a sabbath day"; σάββατα occurs only once in the N. T. in a plural sense, established by a numeral ("three sabbath days," Acts xvii. 2) (See Note at end of chapter.)

17. which are a shadow of things to come, but the substance belongs to Christ.] "A shadow," because unreal, and thrown before (prænunciative observations—Augustin.). The things thus shadowed are now exhibited and conveyed through Christ, therefore their "shadows" should be abolished.

18. Let no man beguile you of your reward] A. V., "rob you of the prize" (see general Note on the chapter), or rather perhaps "pronounce you unworthy of it."
And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

and that in the N.T. it always bears that favourable sense which the Gospel bestowed upon the world-despised adjective from which it is formed. (Acts xx. 19; Ephes. iv. 2; Philipp. ii. 3; Coloss. iii. 13.) In the LXX, ταυτοπραγμα is never found: but the adj. (ταυτοπράγμα) is the translation of πνεῦμα, soul of spirit (Prov. xxix. 23). The verb (ταυτοπράγμα) appears as the translation of ἵνα, to make level, to compose the soul into an attitude of humility. (Ps. cxxxi. 2.) The meaning of the word is essentially favourable, and expressive of that grace which the world inexorably condemns, but which Christ connects with His best promises. It is evident, therefore, that humility, in this place, is degraded and discoloured by the tinge which is given to it by its close connection with the words θελω ἵνα (in a voluntary humility). This is a rendering in the LXX of θελω, “taking delight in, having one’s own inclination gratified in.” θελω is used in pregn. sens. of that which a man does of his own motion (ultra), and passes over into the notion of sheer self-will and arbitrariness (cf. ταυτοπράγμα. Thucyd. iii. 76). Thus we learn the important lesson that virtues and graces are too delicate for the rough admeasurement of mere hard-and-fast moral lines. Their beauty and acceptability depart, and may even turn into their opposites.Wilful self-complacency in humility is censured by St. Paul as inconsistent with the sweet unconsciousness of true humility. It becomes the worst pride, or the most abject meanness—the pride or the meanness which ape humility. The word εὐθελοπραγμα (infra v. 23), shows that a strong sense of θελω as intense self-will was present to St. Paul’s mind. There, as here, self-will imparts a contamination to the virtue with which it is associated. Humility and worship themselves became pride and superstition. [Hence in St. Luke i. 48; ταυτοπραγμα should be rendered "low estate," not "humility." One who says, "I am humble," is not humble. Mary does not profess humility, she practises it.]

worshipping of angels] “a cultus, or religion of the angels” (θρωσεια, gen. in a bad sense of Judaizing, or even idolatrous, superstition. See, however, a more favourable shade of thought in St. James i. 26, 27. Coleridge, ‘Aids to Reflection,’ p. 14.) There was a self-willed “parade of humility” in having recurrence to these glorious but created beings, instead of boldly using our access to the Throne of Grace. “From the beginning of the Epistle he carefully keeps the angels in their place” (Bp. Davenant). On angels and angelolatry, cf. August. Confess. x. 67. "Whom should I find to reconcile me to Thee? Should I seek to Angels? (ambiemundo mihi fuit ad Angelos?) Many (as I hear) striving to return to Thee, and unable to do so by themselves, have tried these things, and have fallen into a desire for curious visions, and been considered worthy of illusions.” For a beautiful contrast between the “verus ille benignusque Mediator” and ‘maligni fallacесque meditatores,” cf. De Civ. Dei. x. 24. For a curious interpretation which makes the θρωσεια of angels simply a superstitious fear of their anger, in case the law was not strictly kept, see Theodore of Mopsuestia, vol. i. 294 (edit. Swete).

intruding into these things which be has not seen.] Reasons for holding with the A. V. and retaining the negative will be found in Note 2 at end of the chapter. “Profoundly exploring (Bretsch. Lex. Man. s. v. ευθελοπραγμα... e.g. ευθελοπραγμα for ευθελαιαι, ευθελαιαι, ingredi, pedem inferre—especially of places difficult of access, and peculiarly of gods entering their shrines or sacred precints. So of Dionysos in the celebrated chorus descriptive of Colonos in the ‘Edip. Colon.’ of Sophocles. Going deeply into things invisible and heavenly—things such as from his confident theories he might be supposed to have seen, but has not, and could not see.” (σιγασθαι, specially used of direct, intuitive knowledge of God; cf. 1 John iii. 6) (ὑπο, subjective negative after relative, Winer, Pt. III. § lxv. p. 503). With the negative omitted, it would be, “subly and curiously meditating upon, poring over, things which he has seen with gifted sight in vision” (so Lachm. Huther, Meyer).

vainly puffed up.] Vainly (ὑπο, “puffed up without reason.” This affected parade of humility was merely a cloak for a swollen (φυσιμοσυνος) and exorbitant pride.

his fleshly mind.] The mind of his flesh (cf. Rom. viii. 7). This, from which he proposes to give emancipation, is precisely the weak and impure source of all his system.
20. Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances,
21 (Touch not; taste not; handle not;
22 Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men?
23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

Of the various interpretations of this difficult passage two may be selected: (1) "Handle not, neither taste, neither touch." (sub. things), "which things (6) are all destined for corruption in the using." (Bp. Lightfoot). It gives additional interest to this interpretation that it would show our Lord's words in St. Mark vii. 18, 20, to have been present to St. Paul's mind; and the coincidence would be completed by the reference at the close of the verse to Isaiah xxix. 13. Cf. St. Mark vii. 6 seqq. (2) The other interpretation referred to accentuates the meaning of ἀνέχωρεν as abuse. It seems to agree alike with St. Paul's concise energy, and with the dramatic vividness of the saying ascribed to the Judaizing teachers in ver. 21. St. Paul, in these words, continues the ever-recurring cuckoo cry of these ascetic teachers: "Handle not, neither taste, neither touch things, which all tend to spiritual corruption and injury by the abuse of them." Abuse was the word which these men were constantly applying to wine, meats, and other things. They thought that abuse was involved in their very use. (see Grimm. 'Lex. N. T.' p. 46).

23. "All which class of things (ἵνα) are things having a reputation for wisdom in self-devised religion—voluntary, arbitrary religion, i.e. that which a man has thought out for and imposed upon himself. It is applied to the perverse observances of ascetics" (Grimm.)—"as also in affected humility, and hard unsparking treatment of the body, yet are not of any real worth in relation to indulgence of the flesh." Many of the Fathers translate differently "unsparking treatment of the body, not holding it in any honour for reasonable satisfaction of the just demands and cravings of the flesh." The fatal objection to this interpretation is that πληγομένη is always used for the too much, not for that which is enough, and must mean something more than legitimate satisfaction.

Other views of this passage are "Not of any real value; nay, rather, in the last analysis, to the undue gratification of the flesh." This would seem an unduly strong statement. Others again render "From their own point of view their doctrine is, hold not the body in any honour, so as to gratify the flesh to the full." Mr. Keble suggests:
"Which things have a show (not the substance) of wisdom in affected voluntary service and humility and unsparing use of the body, not in any real respect shown to it in the way of guarding against surfeit of the appetite." ('Studia Sacra,' p. 229.)

Additional Notes

Of nine other readings, modern critics seem divided between three—(1) τοῦ Θεοῦ παρόν τοῦ Χ., i.e. "of God, the Father of Christ." It is in accordance with St. Paul's strain of thought in this Epistle to denote the majesty of Christ by the Father's unique relation to Him. (2) The shortest reading (τοῦ μνημοσύνου τοῦ Θεοῦ) simply, without addition, has been received by Alf., Griesb. (3) The reading τοῦ μνημοσυνοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ Χριστοῦ has not the same external evidence as 1 (sup.). It is supported, however, by B. and S. Hilar de Trin. i. 9. Internally, the argument for it is strong. In the passage, St. Paul refers all to Christ. He is the Fountain of Divine knowledge. The relative (ἐν Θ., v. 3) must refer to Christ, according to the Apostle's intention—but for this the name of Christ must precede. Of this reading, Huther gives four possible interpretations: (a) a dependent genitive of μνημοσύνου, "God-mystery" (Divine mystery) of Christ. This seems very forced. (b) A dependent genitive of Θεοῦ, "the mystery of the God of Christ." (c) Χριστοῦ in app. to Θεοῦ, "the mystery of God, Christ."—sc. of Christ, who is God. (S. Hil. de Trin. ix. 62 at sup.). This is accepted by Bp. Wordsworth. Perhaps, however, we should rather expect another form of expression. (d) "Mystery of the God of Christ," sc. "God who is Christ's God." Huther quotes Ephes. i. 17, and argues that it is St. Paul's object to show subhat mystery he speaks of—viz. the counsel which God, in His special relation as Christ's God, formed for man's salvation. To these must be added a fifth interpretation, (e) which has the high authority of Bp. Lightfoot, "The mystery of God, even Christ." Christ being in apposition with mystery. The choice seems to lie between e and c.

Ver. 8.

Three forms of error—partly Gnostic, partly Judaistic—are referred to by the Apostle. (1) Philosophical speculation; but only so far as it is empty and deceitful. The Apostle loves to recognise all that is true in Greek speculation (Acts xvii. 23-28), while he combats all which an impure philo-

1 In agnitionem Sacramenti Dei Christi—Deus Christus Sacramentum est (quoted by Reiche).
2 Such as τοῦ Θεοῦ, or ὁ ἄνω Θεός.
3 οἱ οἰκετεῖς, from οἰκεῖος, "order—series;" properly, "any first point from which the various parts of a whole are reduced to order; hence, letters, as elements of speech (not, however, written, but spoken)—material elements of the world—axioms, or rudimental principles, of
observed, a profession of faith in a Messiah who was to come. There are some doctrines and rites so closely connected that to teach the doctrine is practically to enjoin the rite, and vice versa. It would be heresy and apostasy for a Christian to say in words, "Christ has not come; He is to come." It would be equally an act of apostasy to say so by signs and symbols in a language of things and facts. Therefore, to recur to the voluntary and habitual use of these things was simply the profession of a false faith (see August. c. Faust. xix. 16).

All rites and ceremonies of the Law were (according to the exhaustive division of the schoolmen) sacrificia, sacramenta, sacra, observantiae. After the Passion and the proclamation of the Gospel, they could not be kept, without unfaithfulness, as the first to propitiate, as the second to sanctify, as the third for access to God, but only as the last for public utility and avoidance of unnecessary scandal (cf. Acts xv. 20, xvi. 3; xxi. 26).

ver. 11.

"In putting off the body of the sins of the flesh" (A. V.), ἐν τῇ ἁπεικοδοτεί τῶν ἀμαρτιῶν τῆς σαρκός (Text. Recept.).

External and internal evidences are alike against τῶν ἀμαρτιῶν as a gloss for τοῦ σώματος.

What is the meaning of τὸ σῶμα τῆς σαρκός? How can ἁπεικοδοτεί be applied to it?

Many answer that "the body of the flesh" denotes "the body, which is composed of the flesh," that part of man in which the senses, desires, and emotions of the lower nature reside—and that the "putting off" of this means the renunciation of it, in as far as sin rises from the body, and mainly from the animal susceptibility (εὐρήκεια).

Yet the phrase σῶμα τῆς σαρκός can, surely, scarcely mean "the fleshly body, as the fountain and instrument of sin," with due regard to the Apostle's usage—any more than it can mean (what it might literally seem to signify), "the shuffling off this mortal coil," the laying aside this mortal and fleshly body. We must look for the explanation in another quarter. How can men "put off" what is natural and necessary like the body? It would seem that "flesh" here must be used in the ethical and symbolic sense of the lower nature with its tendency to forbidden lusts and deeds. "The body" is not here the literal physical body, nor looked upon as an instrument of sin. The expression is figurative, a Pauline prosopopeia. Just so a noia is attributed to the flesh (inf. v. 18). Single sins, in the same way, are called "members which are upon the earth" (iii. 5); where, by a figure, these sins are looked upon as so many earthly limbs of the hideous trunk of sin. St. Paul speaks thus fully in order to oppose in the strongest way partial moral circumcision to entire spiritual circumcision. (So in Rom. vi. 6, sin is represented as having a body.)

Thus the whole passage may be paraphrased—"In Christ, in communion with Him, we were once for all at baptism circumcised with a circumcision, not external, but made without human hand: not partial, of a minute portion of the human flesh, but total, as if (to use a figure) we had put off the whole body of that sin and evil which is connected with flesh, not merely with this or that special limb of it."

This may be a fitting place to notice an important distinction in St. Paul's language generally between the body and the flesh.

Body (σώμα) seems never to denote man's innate corruption. It is never that which at first as "fomes peccati," or afterwards as sin consummated by the will, is opposed to the law of God, and the leading of His Spirit. It is always (1) the complex totality of parts, and faculties which man possesses in virtue of his material organisation, or (2) man's nature, as connected with the play of the senses, the fountain of affections and emotions. But it is never used in a distinctly unfavourable sense, always in a sense which is good or indifferent. Man, indeed, may abuse his body (Rom. vi. 12, seqq.; 1 Cor. vi. 16; 2 Cor. v. 16*). But that body may, and ought to be, the instrument of the Spirit (Rom. vi. 13; 1 Cor. vi. 10; vii. 34; 2 Cor. v. 10; 1 Thess. v. 23; St. James iii. 2). But there is something, even in the regenerate man, contrary to the higher reason as well as to the Divine law. There is a blind propension to certain objects presented by sense or by imagination; a fatal insufficiency of appetite against reason and law. This is ever in St. Paul flesh, not body (Rom. vii. viii. xiii. 14; Galat. v. 13, seqq.; Coloss. ii. 18). When σώμα means the seat and any science. Such, in religion, were ritual precepts of the Judaizing schools, as expounded by philosophic theospliasts." See Grimm, Lex. N. T.' s. v. E. Schaubach has written a monograph on the subject, "Comment, quà exponitur quid στοιχ. τού x. in N. T. sibi valentem."

"The whole body which consists of the flesh." (Sp. Lightfoot.)

* Cf—

"And let us choose such limbs of noble council, That the great body of our state may go In equal rank with the best-govern'd nation."

King Hen. IV. (2nd Part), act. v. sc. 2.

"In Romans i. 24, the expression of 'their bodies being dishonoured' (ἀνομίωτα τῆς σώματος) points to their native glory.
COLOSSIANS. II.

instrument of σάββατος, there is some significant qualifying epithet. Rom. viii. 13 stands alone according to the common reading (D, E, F, G; add τῆς σαββάτου). But it is qualified by "mortify the deeds of." In 1 Cor. ix. 27, the body is not spoken of as a necessary enemy of the Spirit; the spiritual man so disciplines his corporeal nature, that, in the battle against sin it is an ἀνελθεν διακονίην (Rom. vi. 13).¹

vers. 14, 15.

ἐν παρθένιᾳ, ἱδακτίλερ (August.). "Openly" (A.V.) has, however, much to commend it. See ἐν παρθένιᾳ, as opposed to ἐν κρυπτῷ, St. John vii. 4, cf. παρθένιᾳ, ibid. xi. 44.

βραδύλεις ἐν αἰρεῖ (See note on 2 Cor. ii. 14). βραδύλεις ἡμᾶς, "leading us continually in His triumph." (διὰ τ. σταυροῦ, ἀποκτείνας τὴν ἐξισώσας ἐν αἰρεῖ) (Ephes. ii. 16).

τοῦ δόγματος according to the first of these interpretations means precept of the N. T., delivered by Christ in indissoluble connection with His promises, and substituted for the Mosaic Law. "Contrary to us" is spoken by the Apostle in the person of the Jews, for the law was "the minister of condemnation" (2 Cor. iii. 9), and involved men in a crushing debt (Gal. v. 3). This bond Christ cancelled by His decrees, like a king abolishing by edicts all debts due to the crown. This view is largely supported by Greek commentators (Estius). This is done by Christ's dogmata (doctrines—τοῦ τ. πιστῶν δόγματος, Theophyl.), Hammond. But while δόγματα is certainly used in bono sensu, Acts xvi. 4, Hammond's interpretation of ἐν δόγματι as signifying Christ's doctrines, Ephes. ii. 15, must be pronounced erroneous.

ver. 16.

As to the bearing of this verse (1) on the Lord's Day; (2) on Church festivals. (1)

GENERAL NOTE

On Coloss. ii. 8, seqq.

The apostle deals mainly here with a Judaizing theosophic system, built up on a form of oriental philosophy. This system was tinged with dualism and the pantheistic ideas of Parseeism. God was represented as the sun or light, of which the universe is an emanation. The myths of a cosmogony, which was at the root of Grecian polytheism, were intermingled with this, and it was full of fragments of Pythagorean and Platonic philosophy. Much was said by the hierophants of this system of a double reign of light and darkness, of angels and demons, their origin, hierarchies, power,

¹ In Philipp. iii. 21, our translation of τὸ σῶμα τῆς τακτικευόμενης ἡμῶν is to be regretted. When one, reading this verse to Archbishop Whately upon his deathbed, came to the words "vile body," the Archbishop exclaimed, "St. Paul never said, 'vile body.' He said, 'body of our humiliation.'"
COLOSSIANS. II.

673

worship, and mediation. Long before Apostolic times, Judaizing philosophy had worked up ideas from this school, and tried to bring them into the circle of Mos- sian thought, (as in the Apocrypha and Philo). Thus they employed two kinds of material—the oral conception of deliverance from the fatal, essentially evil reign of matter—and the ceremonial precepts of the Jewish Law. From these they constructed a narrow, illiberal, practical code, and enjoined an austere asceticism upon their followers. They encouraged those who shrank from a repulsive discipline, by promising them victory over the flesh, emancipation of the will, and union with God.

St. Paul is dealing with such teachers in this passage. (1) Orientalizing philosophy, or (2) Judaizing ceremonialism, are constantly in view. (1) For orientalizing philosophy, or theosophy—the cultus of genii or angels (II. 18), their hierarchies (v. 13), their power broken and themselves led in triumph by Christ (v. 15). Christ is contrasted with such spirits throughout. In Him dwells the πληρωμα of the Godhead (v. 9). He is the Head of the one kingdom, which comprises in its vast compass the whole universe of being. He is the bestower of a renovation of the soul, far beyond circumcision (v. 11), the forgiver of sins (v. 13), the life of the Church's life and growth (v. 19). (2) For Judaizing ceremonialism—see "ordinances" (v. 14) "meats and drinks," annual, monthly, weekly festivals (v. 16), human commandments and traditions (vv. 20-22).

Thus verse 18 warns the Colossians that there is no right in any man to trouble the peace of Christians by declaring that an austerely regulated life of ostentatious humility, and reverence for spiritual beings is necessary to salvation; no right to pronounce those who will not accept such teaching unworthy of the heavenly prize. He who did so was self-assuming and self-authorized, however plausibly he might pretend to abject humility and a worship of affected lowliness paid to angels. It is, of course, precarious to draw confident inferences from doctrines, ideas, and practices, current in the same locality some centuries later. The existence at Colosse of a beautiful and celebrated church, which bore the name of the Archangel Michael, is simply a circumstance which must have been common to Colosse with many other towns. The history of Mont St. Michel shows how far, and to what different soils the seeds of such devotions had been scattered. Still, it is quite worthy of note that in the very district where the first readers of this Epistle lived, the cultus of angels prevailed among nominally Catholic Christians in the fourth century, to such an extent as to draw down the condemnation of the Council of Laodicea.

In this strange eclecticism to which St. Paul refers, the angels of the Jews were mixed with the demons of Platonizing philosophy, and the hosts of evil were inextricably confused with the angels of light.

Thus, reading μὴ ὑπερακοῦν we find all coherent. "Beware of vain, deceitful teachers, passing unrighteous and unwarranted sentences of condemnation to saddened hearts which God has not made sad, by arbitrary ethical decrees, and unsupported dogmatic figments. They profess a profound mystical science, a soaring transcendentalism, a high power of ingress into things which they have not seen, and can never see. They make a haughty attempt to torment you with baseless scruples. Every such teacher is self-willed

1 μηδεν δ' ανα καταβραβευθηται, v. 18. This word only appears once in Greek, but it is in the golden Greek of Demosthenes (καὶ δὲ ταύτην τὴν αἰτίαν ενετάθεσε Στέρανων ὑπὸ Μειδίων καταβραβευθήσατα, καὶ πέτα τὰ ἑδεια ἀμείβοτα, a. Mid. (Bekker, 21, 93). (Eustathius, however, uses it, commenting upon IIiad, ν. 93, 33. (καταβραβευθεὶς ἀλήθειν, ἐν φαινέ οι καλοί) in a way which might imply that it occurred elsewhere. "Sallet nulliubi alias πρατερ απὸ δεμοσθενέμεν απὸ Παυλοὺν οινητερισμω." (Reiche, "Comm. Crit." ii. 279.)

2 "Colosse, now called Chone (Χώνο) where is a celebrated church of the Archangel Michael." (Porphyrogen. Thema, i. 3.)

3 "It is not lawful for Christians to leave the Church of God, and go forth and address angels by name (ἀγγέλους ὑμωμαίον) and make worshipping assemblies, which things are forbidden. If, therefore, any be found, giving himself up to this secret idolatry, let him be anathema." (Canon 35. Synod. Laod. A.D. 364.) On which Zonaras observes: "There was an ancient heresy of some who said that it is not meet to call upon Christ to help, or to give us access to God, but upon the angels." Theodoret writes: "Some said that the God of the universe is Invisible and Incomprehensible, and that it is suitable to work out our reconciliation with God (ἡθον οὐδὲν ἐνόησε καταβραβεύοντες) through the angels. This feeling continued long in Phrygia and Pisidia, on account of which a Synod at Laodicea in Phrygia forbade by canon the invocation of the angels" (Theod. ad Coloss. ii. 18).

4 Erasmus thinks that ἰδαντον means "sulimum incerdero," like gods and kings in tragedies. The Tragic cothurnus was called ἰδαντον, i.e. "A Brazilian shoe, or κάθορος, the well-known buskin of heroic tragedy, which became its emblem." (See Liddell and Scott, s. v.) Budaeus and Bp. Davenant suppose that the word signifies "setting forth and entering into things unknown and obscure, as if they were footing it confidently in their own homes."
CHAPTER III.

1. He strenueth where we should seek Christ. 5. He exhorteth to mortification, 10 to put off the old man, and to put on Christ, 12 exhorting to charity, humility, and other several duties.

If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

1. As is usual with St. Paul, the second, or practical, part of his epistle now follows. The ethical is founded upon the dogmatical. Upon a basis of doctrine rises the superstructure of practical Christianity.

If ye then. Cf. if in ii. 20. be risen. Were raised once for all (St. Paul's baptismal tense— see the aor.). Rising from death is expressed in Baptism, and wrought out in each individual life, which is true to its baptismal grace.

above Christ is—continually seated.

2. things above.] Repeated from last verse Seek the things which are above—nay, not merely seek them—think them, mind them (phiomev).

3. For ye died. The baptismal tense again. Your life is hid with Christ in God. Like the spring of that mystical river of the water of life which flows forth from the throne of God and of the Lamb (A. Knox, Remains, ii. 197.) The Christian's life is hid from unbelievers who do not share it; often to a great extent from his fellow-Christians; sometimes in measure from his very self. (See Canon Cook, 'Church Doctrines and Spiritual Life,' pp. 57, 64.)

4. When Christ shall appear, our life. Thought and language are again Johannic. 'I am the Resurrection and the Life, saith the Lord' (S. John xi. 25. Cfi. i. 4. xiv. 6), compared with 'Concerning the Word who is also in Life' (S. John i. 1—same construction as the Gospel ii. 21. xi. 13). 'In winter, the green tree is like the dry. Summer comes, and the living root produces leaves and fruits. So our winter is the concealment of Christ, our summer the manifestation of Christ. 'Ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.' Yes; dead full surely. But dead in appearance, alive at the roots. But think of the summer—burst which is to follow. 'When Christ, who is our Life, shall appear.—Lo! my covenant, dear God! I will die to myself, that Thou mayest live in me.' (August. Serm. xxii. in Temp.)

When Christ shall appear.] 1. John iii. 3. is scarcely an exact parallel. 'When He shall appear' (A. V.), should there probably be 'When it shall have appeared,'—scil. what we shall be. See note in loc. (Christ.) Four times over in these four verses.

5. Your members which are upon the earth; fornication, &c. The evil habits here specified are the members. Special habits of sin form limbs of a body, with which the inward evil life provides itself. The image of sin as a body underlies the mention of particular sins as members. (See above on ii. 11.)

Fornication, &c., and covetousness, which is idolatry. (Note after fornication and three other anathem words καὶ τὴν πλεονεξίαν ήσσον ἐκδολα.) 'Mortify by a decisive act your members which are upon the earth, fornication, &c., and further the covetousness which is one of the class of things (ἡσσον) that is practically just equivalent to idolatry.' Impurity and covetousness cover nearly the whole field of vice.

1 ἡσσον, in this sense, has generally some word added. cf. ἡπομενετα ἡπομενετα, St. Luke i. 22; ἄντασιν ἑπομενετα, ibid. xxiv. 23). One of the supporters of this reading (Junker—quoted by Reiche) understands it of the splendid sight of the consummate perfection of ritual which the Judeans had seen in the Temple at Jerusalem, and wished to introduce at Colosse and elsewhere.
tion, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry:

6 For which things’ sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience:

7 In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.

8 But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:

11 Where there is neither Greek here, and Ephes. iv. 25. The very infrequency of absolute prohibition shows that truth was an instinct of the new spiritual life. St. John seems to shudder when the word occurs to him. He sees a trace of it in every department of sin (1 S. John i. to; 2 iv. 21). How eloquent are those words—and all liars—in that terrible verse (Apop. xxi. 8).

the new man (rōv νιόν).] Cf. the notion of young life in Ephes. iv. 23 (ανάωσοβα), and the renovation following from it, in the renovated man (rōv καινόν ἀναθ.) of the next verse. The man who, in point of time and fact, is, so to speak, young,—called into being later in time than the infant born into the world—is perpetually being renewed through and through (rōv ἀνακαινομένου) in that nature which not only succeeds to, but succeeds, the nature with which he was born.

(“Paulatim vetus homo exuitur, novo proficiens.”) (Estius.)

There is a threefold oldness, and a corresponding threefold newness,—in the heart, our thoughts; in the mouth, our words; in the body, our works. (St. Bernard, Serm. xxx.)

in knowledge] “is ever being renovated up towards the standard of perfect knowledge.”

after the image of Him that created him.] Of Christ. Cf. Gen. i. 26, 28; Ephes. iv. 24; and see note on Christ as the image, supra, i. 15.

11. Where] i.e., in the world or society of the new creation implied in the preceding ver,

there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free.] Cf Rom. x. 12, and contrast with Galat. iii. 28. (Neither (1) Jew nor Greek, (2) bond nor free, (3) male nor female, (i.e. neither (1) religious prerogative, (2) nor social caste, (3) nor natural distinction.) The special circumstances here lead to a different arrangement: (1) “Greek and Jew”—a ref. to Judaizing teachers, who laid stress upon circumcision. Hence (2) “circumcision and uncircumcision.”

2 U 2
nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering;

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

14 And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfection.

(3) "Barbarian, Scythian." The Greeks did not consider Barbarians worthy of a community in their name. But among Barbarians the Scythians had a pre-eminence of degradation. The Apostle's thought is, that be men ever so much Barbarian—aye, such as the very Scythians—they are still capable of renovation. There is here a reference to Gnosticism, which was met by pointing out that the Gospel was offered not only to Barbarians generally, but to those of the lowest caste, who were regarded in the ancient world as Papuans or Andaman Islanders may be among ourselves. Some modern thinkers hold that habitual criminals are a peculiar race with atavistic inherited peculiarities. If they are such, they are yet in a world where this, like every other distinction of race, is done away. (4) "Bond, free"—master and slave was a relation of special importance at Colosse. "Not till that word Barbarian was struck out of the dictionary of mankind, and replaced by brother, can we look even for the first beginnings of our science. This change was effected by Christianity. . . . Humanity is a word which you look for in vain in Plato or Aristotle; the idea of mankind as one family, as the children of one God, is an idea of Christian growth. . . . When people had been taught to look upon all men as brethren, then, and then only, did the variety of human speech present itself as a problem that called for a solution in the eyes of thoughtful observers; and I therefore date the real beginning of the science of language from the day of Pentecost." (Prof. Max Müller, Lectures on the Science of Language, 1st series, p. 118, quoted by Bp. Lightfoot.) It will, however, be observed that the Apostle is speaking not directly of man's common capacity of intellectual culture, but of his common capacity of spiritual renovation. This is exactly the tone of the Psalmist in that wonderful miniature of the regeneration of the world, with its threefold assertion of the new birth of the individuals who make up nations into the city of God. ("This man was born there." "A man and a man were born in her." "This man was born there." Ps. lxxxvii. 4, 5, 6.)

But all and in all is Christ.] "Christ vivifies the whole sphere of human life, and permeates all its developments." (Bp. Lightfoot.) The word Christ stands with great emphasis last. In our less glowing language, we might say Christianity; but St. Paul, with his intense realization of Christ as a living person, says Christ—Everything in the renovated creation is Christ, and Christ is in all.

12-18. "Therefore, as a people ended with three great gifts of God—elect, consecrated, beloved—clothe and array yourself with tender and truly human emotions of compassion, with goodness to others, humility in your own mind, gentleness, long-suffering—forgiving one another, and forgiving each his fellow-partaker in the body of Christ, if any happen to have cause of complaint against any. Even as the Lord forgave you all by that one great redeeming act, so also do ye. And above and over all these clothe and array yourselves with that love, which, taken in all its glorious entirety," (such is the force of the neuter ὅ in v. 14,) "is the enclasping garment, which holds together the various parts that make up the fair completeness of the Christian life. And let the peace of Christ rule in your hearts, to which also every member of the body is called to one Body—and be ye thankful. Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly. In all wisdom teaching and admonishing each other mutually in psalms, hymns, spiritual songs, gracefully and sweetly singing with full heart to the Lord. And all universally, whatsoever ye may have in word or deed, all things do in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through Him."

12. elect, holy, beloved.] He appeals to them by three primary attributes of those who are called into the Christian Church.

13. put on bowels of mercies.] Cf. St. Luke i. 78. "Clothe yourselves with deep inwardly felt human emotions of kindness, humbleness of mind." The first manifest to others, the second in the recesses of our own soul.

14. Forbearing one another, and forgiving each the other. [1αλλαγων, ] The second reciprocal pronoun emphasizes corporate unity more than the first (Bp. Lightfoot).

15. above all these things put on charity.]
15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs,
COLOSSIANS. III.

And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

18 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in the Lord.

The whole passage shows that the apostle had Christ distinctly in view. From iii. 13 to iv. 1, Christ is all and everywhere—Christ's forgiveness, iii. 13; Christ's peace, v. 15; Christ's word, v. 16; Christ's name, v. 17 (cf. vv. 18, 20, 23); iv. 1, where the word "Lord" occurs eight times. We naturally think of Pliny's often quoted words ("stato die ante lucem convenientium, carmenque Christo quasi Dei dicere solent.") Cf. Tertull. 'Apolog.' 2. An anonymous writer (about A.D. 200) speaks of "such psalms and hymns, written by faithful brethren from the beginning, as hymn the word of God, the Christ, proclaiming Him God." (τοὺς λόγους τοῦ Θεοῦ τῶν Χριστοῦ γραμμ. ἔποιεσαν.) Apud Euseb. 'H. E.' v. 28.

17.] Another instance of St. Paul's way of rising from particular duties to general principles—as St. James, on the contrary, descends from general axioms to particular duties.

through Him.] This comes in, with much emphasis, at the close of this paragraph. Through Christ, not—as the Colossians were tempted to do—through angels (Bengel). It is only just to quote the explicit statement of the apostle. "In this place St. Paul peculiarly expresses the medium through which,—in the name of the Lord Jesus—through Him"—because to茨ysost. and Theoph. note, he is writing against those who introduce angels as mediators and saviours instead of Christ.

18. seqq.] All is to be done in the name of the Lord Jesus. (See the eloquent passage in Chrysost.) This forms a natural point of transition to the details of every-day life. It is part of St. Paul's practical teaching that the Divine order, introduced into the world by Christ, lays the strong grasp of its purity upon all the inter-relations of the family and the household. The apostle here might almost be supposed to have in his mind the "three great bonds of mutual relation, of which family life is constructed," as given by Arist.—husband and wife, parent and child, master and servant. These are the "three bonds out of which family life is organized." Arist. Polit. i. 3.

your own husbands.] Rather, "your husbands.

AS IT IS FIT IN THE LORD.] "It is fit, ἀνήκον. A peculiarly Gentile word for that which is morally becoming (ἀνήκον πράττον) (Suidas)."
all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but in singleness of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men;

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

The word occurs in the N. T. only in the Epistles of the captivity. Cf. Ephes. v. 4; Phil. v. 8. It may have been suggested by intercourse with Gentiles. The Ap. in adopting it places it within the Gospel circle by two words (ἐν κυρίῳ).

19. be not bitter against them.] "Work not yourselves up to bitterness in your feelings or relations towards them." St. Paul’s teaching is to suppress the bitterness in the very workings of the heart, and to change it into sweetness.

Children, obey your parents in all things.] St. Paul is not a casuist in the modern sense. He does not stop to reconcile those conflicts of apparently inconsistent duties, which occur everywhere from time to time, and must often be painfully felt in a community essentially heathen, which supplies the Church with converts out of isolated families. He would give no handle for such teaching as that which was so sternly condemned by our Lord (St. Matt. xv. 3-6).

21. provoke not your children to anger] The practical wisdom and keen observation of St. Paul are evinced by this verse. There is apt to be an element of sinfulness and self-pleasing in, perhaps, all human punishments, even in those of parents ("They chastened us after their own pleasure"—Heb. xii. 10). Fittful severity, or over-severity, on the part of parents, is apt to begin by arousing bursts of temper (ἰρατίζεται) which pass away, and end by utterly breaking the spirit, and leaving a mood of utter flaccidity and discouragement (ἀθημάτωμα). ("Fractus animus pestis juventutis."—Bengel.)

Ye slaves. There is here a larger development of the duties of slaves than of any other class. This prominence may well be accounted for by the incident of Onesimus, which must have been much in St. Paul’s thoughts just now: (Cf. Ephes. vi. 5-9.

not with eye-service.] Rather in plural, eye-services (ὑπηρεσίαν αὐτούς). The reading is much more difficult, and, therefore, more likely to be genuine. It very aptly de-

scribes a slave’s repeated acts, a long series of deceitful and imperfect services. The word is probably of St. Paul’s own coinage, being found only here and Ephes. vi. 6. It would signify that the Christian slaves should perform their tasks, not only when their masters were present and looking on, but when they were absent. (So Theophyl. ad Ephes. vi. 6.)

23, 24.] do it as to the Lord. . . . knowing that of a Lord . . . (ἐν τῷ ἱλαστρίῳ τοῦ θεοῦ).

25.] The Gospel, with all its message of hope and forgiveness, its invitation and promises to repentance, does not repeal the eternal law of right and wrong. Both master and slave are included in St. Paul’s solemn warning—the latter, no doubt, especially. St. Paul was made sensitive by the conduct of Onesimus.

there is no respect of persons.] "Justice has a double edge. There must be a reciprocity between the master and slave. The philosophers of Greece taught, and the laws of Rome assumed, that the slave was a chattel. But a chattel could have no rights. It would be absurd to talk of treating a chattel with justice. St. Paul places their relations in a totally different light. Justice and equity are the expression of the Divine mind; and with God there is no respect of persons. With Him the claims of the slave are as real as the claims of the master." προσωπολογία, respect of persons, might, in certain cases, be on the side of the poor and oppressed. (Levit. xix. 15, LXX.) There would be a tendency in the mind of the slave to assume that, because the προσωπολογία of men was on the side of the master, there must be a corresponding προσωπολογία of God on the side of the slave. This assumption is corrected by St. Paul." (Bp. Lightfoot, pp. 229, 230.) A striking instance of such a προσωπολογία even in a trained legal mind may be found in the manifest inclination of the Lord Chief Justice against Falstaff (King Henry IV., 2nd Part, Act II., Scene 1.)
COLOSSIANS. III.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 7, 13, 16, 19.

7. A. V. Several MSS. (A, B, C, D, E, N), followed by Lachm., Tisch., Bp. Lightfoot, read "in these things" (ἐν τούτοις). The Text. Rec. has, however, some external authority. "No reason appears why the apostle, speaking in both members of the verse of the same thing, should use in one the relative; and in the other (in which something similar is predicated of the same subject) should not use the personal pronoun (ἐν αὐτοῖς) but the demonstrative (ἐν τούτοις).

13. even as Christ.] Lachmann, Meyer, Bp. Lightfoot, read Lord (Κυρίος). But the readings of the uncial MSS. are nearly evenly balanced. There seems no sufficient reason for departing from the Text. Recept. So Tischendorf.

16. It is of considerable importance to establish this interpretation. The three conditions of Church singing and of sacred song are sweetness of vocal expression; fulness of inward devotion; direction to a divine object. These three conditions are compressed into this clause: (1) As to outward expression—"gracefully, sweetly, so as to give pleasure and be attractive." (ἐν χαρίας). (2) As to inward devotion—"heartfelt." (ἐν τῷ καρδίᾳ υἱοῦ). (3) As to the Being addressed—"to the Lord." (τῷ Κυρίῳ).

The clue to the real meaning of the passage, as well as to the subtle perplexity of readings here, is to be found in the importance of the apostle speaking, not at all of personal or domestic, but altogether of public and ecclesiastical singing, as a Church duty, a part of the Church's corporate life, a declaration of the peace among her children, and a means of edification. The words translated "singing with grace." (ἐν χαρίᾳ δοξολογίᾳ) really mean "gracefully." (χαριστήριον).

They refer, as they so often do, to beauty, gracefulness, acceptableness, as in the case of things or persons, especially words, sayings, verses, by which we are pleased. The word δοξολογία always denotes that which is vocal and audible, and ἐν χαρίᾳ most naturally means that which can win, touch, and please susceptible ears.

The chief argument against this view is that ἐν ταῖς καθοικίαις (if that be the right reading) probably must—ἐν τῷ καρδίᾳ (if that reading be accepted) possibly may mean songs of "worship mainly of the silent kind." (Huth. Meyer.) But it is surely reasonable to understand the phrase as meaning not only the lips, but with heart and soul. Cf. Ephes. v. 19, where καὶ πνεύματι ἐνοχοῖς is joined with δοξολογία, and cannot without violence be understood merely of the inward.

This recognition of sweetness and pleasableness, as an element to be aimed at in public worship, is very interesting and important. Such care for singing, again, is quite of a piece with St. Paul's high ideal of womanly grace and beauty in youth (1 Cor. xi. 15), priest-like dignity in age (Titus ii. 3); with his recognition of things "lovely" (Phil. iv. 3); with his appeal to primary aesthetic instincts (1 Cor. xi. 5); with his horror of "confusion" in public worship (1 Cor. xiv. 33); with the word for a grave and majestic beauty in public service, expressed in that great foundation—rubric, οὐχιχμονέα καὶ κατὰ τοῖς, εὐπλούς.

1 N has ὁ Θεός, God.

2 The first meaning of χαρίας is that which brings with it joy, pleasure, attractiveness; first and specially of words (Eccles. x. 12; Sirac. xxi. 16; St. Luke iv. 22; Ephes. iv. 29; Coloss. iv. 6); but also "id quod deflectet in homine vel re." (Prov. ii. 9; Ps. xliv. 3) (see Bretsch. Lex. Man. 444; Grimm, Clav. N. T. 455).

3 If the high authority of Bp. Lightfoot is against this view, it should be remembered (1) that he reads here ἐν τῷ χαρίᾳ; (2) that in iv. 5 he explains thus: "Let your speech be always ἐν χαρίᾳ, with grace, favour, i.e. acceptableness, pleasableness." It is, of course, plain that if the reading be ἐν τῷ χαρίᾳ, the words must mean "grace." The balance of uncial MSS. is against the anarthrous χαρίᾳ. Still, besides the bearing of the context, the Text. Rec. has for it A C N. Chrissost. Damasc. Theophylact. (Ecum. 4 ἐν ταῖς κ. has most MSS., but the Fathers generally cite the singular. Reiche here says, 

4 ἐν ταῖς κ. has most MSS., but the Fathers generally cite the singular. Reiche here says, "I rather believe that St. Paul wrote ἐν τῷ κ., as in Eph. v. 19. It suits his purpose better.

The formula ἐν τῷ κ. (Hellenist, from ἐν τῷ ἐκκλησίᾳ) has the only sense which is here appropriate, viz. εἰς ἄνθρωπον, with full ascet of heart. By this addition his readers are warned, in public Church singing, to join not only with sweet and tunable voice (ἐν χαρίᾳ), but with pure emotion of heart. But with the reading ἐν ταῖς κ. we are almost necessarily driven to think of silent, solitary singing, or mental recitation so to speak, unheard by human ears (so Bahr, Huth., Meyer). But δεξιον is never so used. The whole particip. prop. is so coherent as to point clearly to mutual adhesion, which could only be effected by audible chants or modulated recitation which others could hear. In the whole passage everything tends to show that St. Paul was not thinking of this private kind of singing, but altogether of that common sacred song by which they could naturally edify each other, so that the doctrine of Christ might fix its dwelling-place more and more among them (ἕνωσις ἐν ἑαυτοῖς)." See Reiche, Com. Crit. ii. 299, 311, for a full dissertation on the passage.
COLOSSIANS. IV.

631

CHAPTER IV.

1. *He exhorteth them to be fervent in prayer,* 5 to walk wisely toward them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ. 10 *He saluteth them,* and wisheth them all prosperity.

MASTERS, give unto your servants that which is just and equal; knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

2. Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving.

3. Withal praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds.

4. That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5. Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time.

from the fanatical excitement of the frenzied services of Cybele and Dionysus. It may be added that this interpretation has specially commended itself to many with whom it scarcely might have been expected to find favour.

10. *μὴ πικραινωσεν.* The middle is used like Niph. or Hithp. in Hebrew to describe the working of the inner affections (παθη).

1. *Give unto your slaves.* “Exhibit on your parts” (Bp. Lightfoot).

2. *Watch.* Prayer is a work, demanding thought, care, and preparation. “Words without thoughts never to heaven go.”

3. *A door of utterance.* “A door for the word to pass through;” cf. 1 Cor. xvi. 9; 2 Cor. ii. 13. In the rush and press of thought, the fettered Gospel seems to be almost unidentifiable with the fettered Apostle. (See διδασκαλια at the end of the verse.) “The word” is a captive with him. They are to pray that God would open before him a door, that the imprisoned word may pass through, and speed onward. (Cf. 2 Tim. ii. 9; 2 Thess. iii. 1.)

6. *Them that are without.* The technical term for persons outside the pale of the Church (1 Cor. v. 12, 13)—see Schöttgen on 1 Cor. v. 12.

redeeming the time.] “Buying up the opportunity.” A metaphor taken from mercantile life.” Eagerly purchasing, as it were.

each golden opportunity for helping forward the cause of Christ.” (καφνις, not χρυσον.)

6. *Let your speech be alway with grace.* ἐκ χαριτων (rather pleasing, acceptable, χαιρετων, as supra, iii. 16.)

seasoned with salt.] Neither insipid commonplace, nor corrupt pleasantry. The Apostle is not speaking of Attic, but of sacrificial salt; not of ἱερας, but of sanctit. He refers to the injunction of the law—“with all thine offerings thou shalt offer salt” (Lev. ii. 13). “Let all your conversation be, as it were, conformed to that injunction. Let it be an obligation to God, seasoned with the spiritual salt which He requires.” The first element in the idea is the percolation of speech by the holy, purifying, self-sacrificing influence of the Spirit. The interpretation given by our Lord to the symbol of salt had passed into the vocabulary of Christians. (Cf. St. Matt. v. 13; St. Mark ix. 49, 50; St. Luke xiv. 34.) The consequence of this will, no doubt, be that it will have those secondary qualities generally understood by

1. *Φρυγιας Φρυγων Φρυγλοις ημοις—* Μαθαιος ημους.


βαρθονεοι γραμναι αιαι

‘Αναδιο ρωθι,—Ibid. 1395.

2. *Πρόκειται για την μια δομον εχ ημενια εις παιδευμα της ζωης δω κατατημενια ρεπερατορ (temperate, restrained) της δι δορυμος εις ιεραι και τονιμω της εκκλησιας.* (“The Phrygian strain was adapted for sacred rites and fanatical excitements, being of almost frenzied wildness.”)—Scholia in Plat. Rep. iii. (1592, edit. Stalb.).

3. “Pro dexteritate qua grata sit, et sib utilize placet authoribus” (Calvin). “Mit geistlichen, lieblichen Lieden” (Luther). “Εκ-σχηματως, sine confusione” (Melanchth.). So Beza. The shade of meaning given by Estius is peculiar, “cum solutate spirituali, sc. eorum qui audient” (ii. 68). On the whole, it may be said that the aesthetic interpretation is mainly supported by critics of anti-aesthetic communions. Among ancient writers, its chief supporter seems to be Theophylact.
6 Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithful minister and fellow servant in the Lord:

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts;

9 With Onesimus, a faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus, sister’s son to Barnabas, (touching whom ye received commandments: if he come unto you, receive him;)

11 And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow workers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, always labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

Salt—that it will be wise and pungent, pure and pleasant. It was finely said by Mr. Robert Hall of a friend—'he was witty; but his sallies never cost a saint a sigh, or a virgin a blush.' For duties of speech, and their importance, cf. St. James i. 26.

How ye ought to answer every man.] Each single man (τι κακόν). Their speech is not to be vague and declamatory, but to be appropriate to the individuals to whom it is addressed, to their wants and feelings. "In one way to Pagans, in another to Jews, in another to heretics." (Pelag. ap. Hieron. XI. 901.) And with similar variety and fitness in every other relation. (See Chrysostom's admirably wise expansion of this text.)

7, 8, 9. Tychicus . . . whom I have sent (epistolarv aorist) unto you.] Tychicus, a native of pro-consular Asia, possibly of Ephesus (Acts xx. 4; 2 Tim. iv. 12). He is associated with St. Paul on three different occasions, (1) at close of 3rd missionary journey. A.D. 58 (Acts xx. 4); (2) at the time when this Epistle was written, A.D. 62, 63; (3) towards the close of St. Paul's life (about A.D. 67). (2 Tim. iv. 12; Titus iii. 13.) (From Bp. Lightfoot, PP. 233, 234.)

With regard to sending letters, it will be borne in mind that, under the Roman empire, there were no postal establishments for carrying private letters with regularity. (M. Renan refers to Cic. 'ad Fam.' iii. 9, xv. 17, xv. 5, 21; 'ad Att.' i. 5, iii. 7; Plin. 'Epist.'ii. 12, viii. 3, ix. 28; Senec. 'Epist.' L.; also to Forcellini, under the word tabellarius, and to Naudet, 'Mém. de l'Acad. des Inscrip.' T. xxii. part 2, pp. 166 seqq. Renan, 'St. Paul,' p. 228, note 5.) Everything of the kind was done, as an occasional opportunity presented itself, or by express. St. Paul was thus obliged, in his superintendence of the churches, to bring with him persons who discharged the duties of couriers. A system of correspondence existed, at the time, between the Jewish synagogues; they had a special official whose duty it was to superintend this correspondence.

9. Tychicus with Onesimus.] "The two names occur in proximity in some Phrygian inscriptions." (Bp. Lightfoot.)

The recommendation of Onesimus (v. 9) is very tender and thoughtful. It would be much needed in such a case.

10. 11. On Aristarchus, Marcus, Jesus Justus, see Introd.

Marcus the son of Barnabas.] Certainly not 'nephew' as in A. V. This was the later usage of Byzantine law. The notice here throws light upon Acts xxv. 37, and gives a natural explanation of Barnabas' partiality for Mark. There is something very pleasing in the strikingly kind tone towards Mark of this passage and of 2 Timothy iv. 11. "In the year 62 Mark, the near relative of Barnabas, and companion of his journey, was again in the society of Paul (Coloss. iv. 10); hence we may infer that at that date Barnabas was dead. The same inference may be drawn from 1 Peter v. 13, and 2 Tim. iv. 11. Alexander, a monk of Cyprus (of the 6th or 9th century), in a panegyric upon Barnabas, assigns his martyrdom to a date somewhere between the years 53-57." (Hefele, 'Proleg. Epist. St. Barn.' viii.; cf. 'Das Sendschreiben des Apost. Barnabas,' pp. 231 seqq., and 159.)

touching whom ye received commandments (to this effect, viz.): if he come unto you, receive him.] Theodoret maintains from this that St. Paul was personally known to the Coles-
14. Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, greet you.

15. Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is in his house.

16. And when this epistle is read among you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

17. And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.


15. The church which is in his house. Or "their house." (ἀπόλευχον.) There is no clear example of a separate building set apart for Christian worship within the limits of the Roman empire before the 3rd century—though apartments in private houses might be specially devoted to that purpose." (Bp. Lightfoot.) But see in opp. Bingham, 'Antiq.' viii. 13. Is there not a significant antithesis between a private "house" and "the Church" in 1 Cor. xii.?—cf. Rom. xvi. 5; 1 Cor. xvi. 19; Phil. v. 2; Acts xii. 12. "A domestic church. Every head of a family fills an ecclesiastical, and, in some sense, episcopal office." (Estius.)

16. And that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea. "Be sure that ye also read the letter which I have sent to Laodicea, and which ye will get from them." (Bp. Lightfoot. See his elaborate and masterly discussion of the controversy on the epistle from Laodicea. pp. 274-300.) "Churches very near to each other were advised to communicate their letters reciprocally, and to read them in the congregation by turns" (Renan, 'Saint Paul'). Marcion (c. A.D. 150) considered that the Epistle to the Ephesians of our canon was the Epistle to the Laodiceans here mentioned. (Tertull. 'c. Marcion.' v. 17, but see Epiph. 'Hær. xxii. 9, and Canon. Murator., lines 62-67.) That this view is probably to be accepted, see Introd. and Bishop Lightfoot, P. 37, and pp. 374 seqq. On the apocryphal epistle to the Laodiceans, a mere cento of Pauline phrases, see ibid. pp. 281 seqq., 299; with an ingenious attempt at the restoration of the original Greek, pp. 293, 294, and the eccentnc defences of it by the Lutheran Pretorius and the Jesuit Stapleton, in spite of the sweeping condemnation of St. Jerome, ab omnibus exploditur. ('De Vir. Illust.' 5.)

17. And say to Archippus. "Say ye," with an idea of immediate and downright saying (ἐναραίος). It was a more effective way to send the message through others than to address it in a direct form. It may have been also advanced age, or declining health, which hin-
COLOSSIANS. IV.

dered Archippus from ministerial activity, though we may be led to suspect some of that lukewarmness with which our Lord Himself charged the Laodicean church in the immediate vicinity of Colossae (Apoc. iii. 16).

which thou hast received.] The word "received," favours the inference that the ministry of Archippus—though having its sphere in Christ, "in the Lord"—was yet of regular succession, not of immediate inspiration (cf. παρακλησις with 1 Cor. xi. 23). The word signifies "traditum accipio" of office; "mente accipio" of oral teaching.

that thou fulfil it.] This has often been interpreted as a hint that his ministry was drawing to its close. It has reference probably to the "due and full performance of it"—"bene perfungi." (Grotius.)

19. The salutation by the hand of me Paul.] "The salutation of this letter is signed by my own hand," to which was added, in his own writing, in the genitive, Παῦλον, "of Paul." St. Paul, as is well known, did not write his Epistles with his own hand: he dictated (Rom. xvi. 22). The words in Phil. ("I have written it with mine own hand, I will repay," v. 19) surely need not imply that the whole Epistle, or any more than the eight Greek words (or possibly only two, εγω αποστολος) were in St. Paul's handwriting. The paragraph in Galat. vi. 11, leads to the same inference. The formal salutation only was his autograph. (2 Thess. iii. 17). The passionate religious controversies of the time, the decisive weight given in the Church to Apostolic authority, and the imperfect conditions of epistolary writing, easily gave occasion to forgeries. (2 Thess. ii. 2; Dion. Cor. apud Euseb. 'H. K.' iv. 23). It has been conjectured that St. Paul sent round a specimen of his hand-writing with his Epistles, easily recognised from its large, rough, impetuous formation of letters. (πρωτες γραμματεις, Galat. vi. 11, not "how long an Epistle," but "in what large letters.") It is certain that it was his habit (according to a very general usage) to write at the end of his letters his name, and probably some other words, as a guarantee of the authenticity of the letter. (2 Thess. iii. 17; 1 Cor. xvi. 21; Coloss. iv. 18. M. Renan refers to Cic. 'ad Att.' viii. 1; Suetonius, 'Tit.' 21, 32; Dion Cass. livii. 11; Cavedoni, "Le Salut. delle Epist. di S. Paolo" (Tom. xiv. series 3 of 'Mem. di relig.,' printed at Modena), pp. 12 seqq.; 'Saint Paul,' p. 333, note.)

Remember my bonds.] St. Paul, having dictated the letter and signed his name, added, with his own hand these four words—μημειωθείτε μου τοις διαμοι. He dwells upon his bonds with marked and touching iteration in this chapter. He is no Stoic; he has a sense of injustice and undeserved indignity, and a feeling that his sufferings give him a claim upon those to whom he writes. Three times in this chapter he appeals to his chains (iv. 3, 10, 18). Cf. Ephes. iii. 1, iv. 1, vi. 20; Phil. iv. 9. This may well imply, in a sort of under-tone, "Be willing, after my example, to suffer in like manner for the truth." (Theodore of Mopsuestia.)

Grace be with you.] Such forms of benediction have a tendency to be shortened by the friction of time and use. They are rounded off for the sake of convenience and portability. Cf. the longer form in the earlier Epistles (1 Thess. v. 28; 2 Thess. iii. 18; 1 Cor. xvi. 23; 2 Cor. xiii. 3; Galat. iii. 8; Rom. xvi. 20 (24); Philipp. iv. 23; and the form with παντως inserted (Titus iii. 15; Heb. xiii. 22) with this shortened form (Coloss. iv. 18; 1 Tim. vi. 21; 2 Tim. iv. 22).

ADDITIONAL NOTE on ver. 17.

Bp. Lightfoot, in a deeply interesting note, shows the possible connection of this warning against drawing back from the work of Christ with that other warning against lukewarmness in St. John to the angel of the Church of Laodicea. (Apoc. iii. 16). That Divine Epistle would appear to have four points of contact with the Epistle to the Colossians. (1) The special title by which Jesus speaks of Himself as "the Beginning of the Creation of God." (Apoc. iii. 14). St. Paul seems to write in the same atmosphere of thought when he says of Christ, "By Him were all things created; all things were created by Him and for Him . . . Who is the Beginning" (Coloss. i. 16-18). This great and singular title might well seem to point at the same line of heretical thought in the same locality, and to have a special suitability for those who were carried away by "a religion of angels." (2) The magnificent privilege of "sitting with Christ" (Apoc. iv. 21) has the same tone as Coloss. iii. 1. (3) The warning against lukewarmness (Coloss. iv. 17), compared with the burden to Laodicea (Apoc. iii. 19). If Archippus were the Bishop (Angel) of Laodicea, in whom the Church over which he presides is summed up and personalized, the connection would be
COLOSSIANS IV.

still more remarkable. (4) May we not suppose wealth, intellectual as well as literal, to be aimed at in the words, “Thou sayest that I am rich” (πλούσιος εἰμί, Apc. iii. 17). The passages in Coloss. i. 27, ii. 3 (cf. Ephes. i. 18) might seem to be addressed to persons who thought and spoke much of wealth, whether in this metaphorical or in a more literal sense. In this last sense Laodicea was wealthy. After its overthrow by an earthquake, it was rebuilt without help from Rome. See Bp. Lightfoot, pp. 41-44.1

18.] Thus the absolute ἡ χάρις in the final benediction may be taken as a chronological note. Bp. Lightfoot, who makes the remark, finds another note of the same kind in the exchange of τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις of the earlier Epistles (Thees., Corin.th., Galat.) for the αὐτοῖς of later Epistles (Rom., Philipp., Coloss., Ephes.).

Seems to apply with great force to selfish and godless study, and to include it as one of the forms of the character of the θ . . . μὴ ἅμα Θεών ἀνθρώπων (v. 21).

1 "Nullo à nobis remedio, propriis opibus revaluit." Tacit. Annal. xiv. 27.

ADDITIONAL NOTES to the Epistle to the Colossians.

CHAP. I.—15. The image of the invisible God.] The note upon this passage simply refers to the use of the word image. It would, however, be a grave deficiency to omit all mention of the grand dogmatic significance which has been justly found in it by the greatest theologians of the Church. By no writer, ancient or modern, has this truth been better expressed than by Melanchthon—"The Image of God." When John affirms that "The Word was made Flesh," the whole texture of his narrative proves that he speaks not of an evanescent sound, but of a Personal Substantial existence (ὑπομονημένης). Before the assumption of the Human Nature the Person exists who is called the Word and the Image of God; it is here declared that all things are made and sustained by Him. As the creative Nature is in the Man Christ, it necessarily follows that it cannot be an evanescent sound. But He is called Image of the invisible God, for these reasons:—(1) Had human nature retained its original excellence, it would have been a less dimmed and clouded mirror of the Divine Nature. Yet even in its present darkness some features can still be traced. In the act of thinking, the human mind forthwith paints an image of the thing thought. But we cannot transfuse and project our essence into those images. They are momentary thoughts, evanescent mental actions. But the Eternal God, in His self-intuition, begets His thought of Himself, which is His own very Image, and that not an evanescent image, but a Personal Existence to which His Essence is communicated. This Image, then, is the Second Person of the Holy Trinity, and to Him, as such, three great appellations are suitable from this point of view:—(a) He is termed Ἁγιός, because He is begotten by the Thought of God; (b) He is termed Θεός, because thought is the image of the thing thought; (c) He is termed Ἀπαύγασμα (Heb. i. 3), that is, splendour issuing or raying from light: "Light from Light, as it is in the Creed" (Loci Theol. De Filio), Melanchthon. Opp. i. 152. "More fully, then, He is called Image, because God, in the necessary personality of His perfect self-manifestation, thinking Himself so to speak, by that thought of Himself begets His Image. And, as this substantial Image appears gloriously in the Human Nature of Christ, who perfectly knows the Eternal Father, and is perfectly like God because of the substantial Image shining forth in Him—Christ as God and Man, is the Image of the Invisible God. (2) We are to consider that the term 'Image of the Invisible God' is to be understood not only of the transcendent relation of the Son, but of His manifestation to us. (3) Further, this title of Image warns us to distinguish the true God from all false gods and idols. The invisible God proposes to thee His visible Image, and bids thee worship Him as the true God. (4) This Image of God is sent to us, that we may become again, through Him, the image of God (2 Cor. iii. 18)." (Melanchthon. "Enarr. Epist. ad Coloss." Opp. iv. 136.)

CHAP. I.—17. The writer desires that the view given in the note upon the message to Archippus should be qualified by subsequent observations in the Introduction to the Epistle of Philemon, and in the note on Philemon (ver. 2).
THESSALONIANS.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

1. St. Paul's visit to Thessalonica . 687
2. Thessalonica—Contexture of circumstances to which the Epistle was addressed . 688

II.

Contents of the Epistle . 689
1. Dogmatic element . 689
   Importance of this in the first of St. Paul's Epistles . 689
   View which is taken in it . 689
   A. Of Christ.
   B. Of His work.
      A. View of Christ . 689
         (a) Jesus is Lord . 689
         Force of this . 689
         (b) Jesus is worshipped . 690
         Force of this . 690
      B. View of Christ's work in this earliest among St. Paul's Epistles . 691
2. Eschatological element in the Epistles to the Thessalonians . 693
   The supposed error of St. Paul, and of the New Testament generally, as to our Lord's coming . 693

III.

1. When St. Paul first landed upon the continent of Europe (Acts xvi. 11), and had preached at Philippi in Macedonia, he passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia to Thessalonica, immediately to the south of which lie the snow-clad slopes of Mount Olympus. This city, situated upon the Thermean Gulf, and once the capital of Macedonia, had formerly the name of Therme. Under that name we read of it as one of the camping-places of Xerxes.\(^1\) Cassander

\(^1\) Herod. Hist. vii. 21. Thucyd. de B. Pelop. i. 61.

IV.

1. Moral and Social elements . 696
   (a) Stress laid upon industry . 697
   (b) Importance of the early recognition of industrial virtues . 698

2. Ecclesiastical element in this Epistle . 698
   Existence, expressly recognized, or by implication, of—
      (a) A Church .
      (b) Baptism .
      (c) Holy Communion . 698-700
      (d) Public Reading .
      (e) Stated Ministry .

3. Local element . 700
   (a) Allusion to position of Thessalonica . 700
   (b) Character of Thessalonians . 701

4. Scriptural element . 701
   (a) References to the Old Testament . 701
   (b) References to our Lord's teaching . 702

5. Analysis of the First Epistle to the Thessalonians . 702

6. Authenticity of the Epistle . 703
   (a) Bauer's objection . 703
   (b) External evidence . 703

enlarged it, and bestowed upon it a new name, in honour of his wife Thessalonica, daughter of Philip, King of Macedonia. "As a commercial port," says a recent traveller, "Salonica must always hold a high place, and under a different government must become one of the most important centres of trade in the East, whether one regards its natural advantages as a harbour, or the richness and fertility of the back country, to which it forms the outlet." It was the largest and most populous city of Macedonia, and enjoyed considerable commercial relations.\(^1\) Under the Romans it was

\(^1\) Strabo, Geograph. l. 7.
INTRODUCTION.

placed in the division called Macedonia secunda, and became the residence of a praetor. 1

2. Thessalonica was much resorted to by Jews in St. Paul’s time. 2 The Apostle seems to have been guided to Thessalonica partly by the fact that it possessed a considerable synagogue, which was frequented from time to time by Hellenic pagans. An opportunity was thus given of proclaiming the Gospel publicly to Gentiles as well as Israelites. St. Paul preached for three weeks, and succeeded in making some converts from the Jews, though he gained many more from the Gentiles—a fact which is reflected in the whole tone and character of the First Epistle to the Thessalonians. Among the neophytes were some ladies of rank and position. Nowhere was the hatred of the Jews more savage and malevolent. They hired some of the lowest and most unprincipled of the mob who hung about the streets and markets, and succeeded in raising a furious commotion against St. Paul and his companions. The rioters stormed the house where they lodged. Not finding the missionaries, they dragged the master of the house before the magistrates, asseverating that the preachers of Christ were political conspi-

rators, plotting against the Emperor and the law. These Jews utterly failed in the immediate object which they had in view. But the position of St. Paul was felt by the Thessalian Christians to be one of extreme peril, and he and Silas left Thessalonica the following night. The Apostle proceeded to Berea. Immediately when the unbelieving Jews of Thessalonica heard of this, they flung themselves upon his track, and constrained him to take his departure. He embarked for Athens.

The whole Epistle leads us to the conclusion that the Gospel found a congenial soil in Thessalonica. Short as had been St. Paul’s stay, and broken as were his days by work, he had made an indelible impression. The converts were sorely tried by the restlessness of Jewish malignity. St. Paul yearned in his heart to see them, to console them, to fill up in detail the outlines of the Creed of creeds which they had so deeply understood. This might not be. But he sent his companions back to Berea, with an order for Timothy, who was still in that town, to proceed to Thessalonica for the purpose of comforting the afflicted Church; and then to go on to Athens, bearing with him a full report of the condition of the Church of Thessalonica. (Acts xvii. 15; 1 Thess. iii. 1–5). The tidings which Timothy brought back to St. Paul were to him a very evangel of good news (1 Thess. iii. 6). But St. Paul could not be without anxiety when a spiritual fabric, somewhat hastily reared and compacted, was so rudely assaulted. There were still gaps in the dogmatic teaching which he had been able to give (iii. 10). The moral and spiritual education of his converts was far from being consolidated. Ecclesiastical order was not entirely consolidated. Another difficulty weighed upon hearts, many of them doubtless tender and refined. The eschatology of the Gospel taught that the parousia of the Lord would be the time of rest and deliverance. The language in which the Advent was described was of a kind which might be misconceived by ardent minds, not yet in possession of the equilibrium of Christian doctrine. Death had been busy

---

1 Liv. Hist. xlv. 10, 45.
2 Thessalonica appears at a later period in connexion with the Emperor Theodosius (see note infra on iv. 18). It was the scene of a defeat of Constantius by the Saracens. Constantius had been led to make the attack by a dream, in which he seemed to himself to be at Thessalonica. There is a curious story that one of his lieutenants predicted success to the other side from the fanciful etymology, Θέσσαλον πόλις νίκης. The city was afterwards sold to the Venetians by Andronicus, but captured by the Turks (see Leusden, Phil. Hebrae-Graec. Dissertat. xxii. p. 180, who refers to a book upon Thessalonica by Lucius Tarрезus). Salonica is now looked upon as the third city of the Turkish Empire, Smyrna being the second. The population at present is estimated at 85,000, of whom about half are Jews. There is a singular community at Salonica, of Jewish origin, numbering about 6500—the descendants of those who, at the time of the conquest, nominally embraced Islamism, and who still externally conform to that religion, but who are, even at present, universally believed to hold the Jewish faith in their heart, and to practise its ceremonial in secret. See Letter of ‘Standard’ correspondent from Salonica, March 20, 1878.
since the departure of the Apostle. Converts had fallen asleep in Jesus. They had not seen the cloud of the Coming, nor heard the Archangel’s trump. What of those dear ones? Had they suffered some great loss, or been deprived of some precious gift?

Such was the general posture of mind and contexture of circumstances in the Church of Thessalonica. The Apostle would gladly have revisited a community for which he felt the tenderest affection. Insurmountable obstacles were in the way. He must be satisfied with writing an Epistle to the Thessalonians to comfort them under a storm of persecution; to acquaint them with his reasons for not visiting them; to give an answer to the afflicting doubts of gentle and susceptible spirits; to warn them of possible practical dangers, and to express a father’s love and gratitude for the large measure of good to be found among them.

The Epistles of St. Paul begin with his second missionary voyage, and of all his letters the two written to the Church of Thessalonica must be placed first.

It appears certain that the Epistle could not have been written after St. Paul’s abode at Corinth; for in the opening salutation we see the name of Silvanus, which after that and 2 Thess. ii. 1 disappears from the Apostle’s company. It could not have been written before; for those who had to bring St. Paul news from Macedonia found him not at Athens, but were allowed to join him at Corinth (Acts xvii. 15, seqq., to xviii. 5; 1 Thess. iii. 1). It was not then written at Athens, but at Corinth. Nor was it written at the beginning of St. Paul’s abode in that city. 1 Thess. i. 7, 8, proves that St. Paul must have remained at Corinth some time for the reputation of the Thessalonian Christians to have acquired such currency. 2

II.

The contents of this Epistle are of peculiar interest and importance, from the fact of its being the earliest among the Apostolic Epistles.

1. First in the order of importance stands the dogmatic element in the First Epistle to the Thessalonians. It has become too common to assume that each Epistle of St. Paul has, so to speak, a Christology of its own. This view has been pushed to its extremest logical consequences by those who conclude with M. Renan that “the excellent heroes of the apostolic age were perpetually changing and contradicting themselves, that they used three or four different theories in the course of their lives, and condescended to borrow from the very adversaries to whom they had been most severe.”—The most thorough and successful answer to this theory must consist in examining the very earliest of the Pauline letters, and convincing ourselves that the same Christology underlies it which finds such magnificent expression, e. g., in the Epistle to the Colossians. Such an examination may lead to a grave doubt of the accuracy or propriety of terming the Epistle before us the “least dogmatic of all the letters of St. Paul.” 1

A.

What view, then, is taken of the Person of Jesus in the First Epistle to the Thessalonians by St. Paul, as he looks up to the Heaven where his Master had ascended not much more than twenty years before?

(a) St. Paul speaks of Jesus as “the Lord,” “our Lord,” about twenty-five times in First Thessalonians. The full force of the title is scarcely realized by ordinary readers, or the concentration of dogma which it possessed for those who first used it.

Of the four great Names of God in the Old Testament, Jehovah is the most solemn. A believing Jew will not bring

---

1 So in the subscription of many MSS, misled by 1 Thess. iii. 1.

*New Test.*—*Vol. III.*
INTRODUCTION.

himself to pronounce it. It implies that eternal, necessary, changeless existence which is the peculiarity of the God of the Bible. In the classical mythologies we meet with gods who have adventures. But the God of the Bible has no adventures, no personal history. 1 This peculiar name of God is Lord (Kýrios) in the LXX; and passed on into the New Testament. 2 The New Testament writers take it up, and give it to Jesus. He is “our Lord Jesus Christ.” (1 Thess. i. 1-3; iii. 11, &c.)

It is impossible, then, for any subsequent declaration of the Divinity of Christ to rise beyond that afforded by St. Paul's frequent application of the attribute of “Lord” to Jesus in the First Epistle to the Thessalonians. 3 The Apostle has already exhausted human language and human thought. The plummet of dogma can drop no deeper; the wing of adoration can soar no higher.

(5) But not only is the recognition of Jesus as “the Lord” a speculative dogma in the mind of the writer of this Epistle; it is carried out fearlessly in practice. All worship is, upon Scriptural principles, confined to God alone. But worship is freely given to Christ in First Thessalonians. Therefore it was the dogmatic conviction of the writer of that letter that Christ is God.

The Jews were raised up to witness, not only the unity and spirituality of God, but the absolute exclusiveness of His worship. Much of the perplexity that has been felt as to the possibility of the Jews falling into idolatry has been occasioned by forgetfulness of this fact. They worshipped Jehovah, swore by Him, and kept His feasts; but they joined other gods with Him in a degrading syncretism. 4 All worship, without distinction, of any but God was constructively idolatry. 2

Religious errors have their root in a want. And idolatry is the expression of the want of a God who can come near to us. 3 This need was satisfied in Jesus. All the majesty, beauty, and love of God was brought near to us in Him. He was like us in form, feature, growth, function, language, affections, capacity of suffering. He was unlike us in all else—so like that He is our brother, so unlike that He is our God. Before that superhuman Humanity we may bow down without peril of idolatry. For our worship does not terminate in the Manhood; its object is the Divine Person who is God as well as Man.

It is, surely, most striking and most significant that in the earliest of St. Paul's Epistles Christ is explicitly worshipped by prayer. 5 “He our God and Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ,

1 Zephaniah i. 5.
2 It has been strangely maintained that the principle that any degree of worship short of the highest is not idolatry, is the final outcome of the Arian controversy. (Newman on Development, p. 405.) Rather, the greatest Catholic thinkers accused Arians of being Pagans in principle, because the Arians worshipped one whom they considered in the last analysis a creature. The Pagan worshipped one God and many subordinate deities; the Arian worshipped one supreme God and one inferior God. (εἰ δὲ οἱ άλλαι άρετες εἰς άγαθόν καὶ τολμῶν γενητοι λατρεύουν, εἰ δὲ άνεϕεσόν καὶ κατ' ευγενείαν, οὕτως διαφέρουσιν ἄλλοις... τοῖς δὲ ἄλλοις συγκυλλόνται. St. Athan., Oratio iii. c. Ariano. 448.) Their worship was, therefore, tainted with Paganism.

4 See Job xxiii. 8, 9, with St. John i. 18.
5 οἱ κήθεμα προσκυνήματα, μη γένοιτο, ἱθευόμεν το γάρ καὶ ἁρεμίαν ἡ τοιοῦτος πλῆρη... εἰ γὰρ καὶ ἡ σάρξ αὐτὴ καὶ ἡ πνευματικὸς ζωὴ εἰς τὴν τοιοῦτον ἐπιφανείαν, οὐκ ἐπὶ τούτῳ εἰς σάμαι καὶ ἐπὶ τούτῳ διώκοντες άπέχομεν τὸν δύναμιν προσκυνήματος, οὕτως τὴν πνευματικὴν θέλοντες μακροθυμοῦντες καὶ πασὶ ταῖς σαρκαῖς—Athan. Epist. ad Adhiphimum. 729.
6 καταβαίνομεν, I Thess. iii. 11.
INTRODUCTION.

direct our way unto you. But you the Lord make to increase and abound in love," cries St. Paul (iii, 11, 12). This is of surpassing strength and dogmatic precision. The two grammatical subjects are connected with a verb in the singular, indicating distinct Personality and unity of substance with united operation; yet a passage in the Second Epistle goes beyond even this. In a prayer so like that in the former letter in point of construction as to indicate the identity of the fixed dogmatic mould from which it issued, the name of the Lord Jesus Christ stands before that of the Father.

The strongest expression of the worship of Christ is thus found in the first written of the extant Epistles of St. Paul. It might seem as if the whole mind and thought, heart and intellect of the martyr at whose death he had assisted had passed into St. Paul. For St. Stephen's discourse, and the charge against him, together with his dying prayer, contain in germ all the Pauline theology. That Jesus shall "change the rites which Moses delivered unto us" is the root idea of the whole momentous controversy upon the Law developed by St. Paul in several Epistles. That a dying believer worshipped Christ with such prayer as could be rightly offered to God only was a fact which had behind it the dogma of the Divinity of Christ. As the echo of Stephen's teach-

ing about the law is prolonged in Galatians, so the echo of his prayer to Christ is prolonged and multiplied in the Epistles to the Thessalonians. ¹

The fact is of the weightiest import for those who believe that St. Paul was an inspired Apostle, and addressed a larger audience than those to whom he first wrote—even the Church of all ages.

B.

What view is taken by St. Paul of Christ's work in the first of his apostolic letters?

Our conclusion upon the whole is as follows—

It conveys a thoroughly false impression to say that none of the great doctrines, which are considered especially Pauline, are to be found in these memorable chapters. Those doctrines are, of course, not presented to us in precisely the same investiture of words with which they were afterwards clothed. Or, to change the figure, they are not fashioned exactly in the same shape in which they were afterwards fused by the fires of controversy. But they are there in principle and in essence. The raw material, so to speak, of dogma in the so-called "undogmatic" Ep. to the Thessalonians is the same as in the so-called "dogmatic" Ep. to the Colossians. Even believing criticism has, perhaps, sometimes gone too far in finding one set of dogmas, one exclusive Christological aspect, in one Epistle. The Person of Christ, whole and entire, was present to the mind of the Apostle, and he addressed himself to his task equipped, not with fragments of disconnected Christological fancies suggested by successive circumstances, but with one central and perfect conception, which he interpreted and presented to others. Thus it is often assumed that the conception of Christ in heaven is the one

¹ Unstudied expressions often throw great light upon the principles of the professors of any creed. The early Christians were instinctively designated by themselves and others as those who habitually "call upon the Name of the Lord." (Acts ix. 14, 21; xii. 16; Rom. x. 12, 13, 14; I Cor. i. 21; 2 Tim. ii. 22.)

² After διὸ Κ. ἡμῶν I. X. καὶ θεός καὶ πατὴρ ἡμῶν ... παρακαλῶμεν οὕτως—2 Thess. ii. 16, 17. For an instance of the same construction, cf. Παρακ. καὶ μοί πάσην πνεύμα καταργήσει (St. Joann. Chrysost. in Joann. Homil. xxv.), where Sir Henry Savile points out the dogmatic idea underlying the grammatical construction.

³ Bengel says, with singular beauty:—"Utraque Epistola ad Thessalonicenses ferè singula capita singulis suspiris obsignata habet." Most of these "suspiria" are addressed to Jesus.


⁵ Acts vii. 5-9.

¹ The N. T. passages for direct invocation and adoration of Christ, adduced by Melanchthon, are mainly from these Epistles. He adds, "These are testimonies to perpetual invocation of Christ, even when He is not visibly with men." (Opp. i. 153.) For worship of Christ, in the O. T., the writer may be allowed to refer to the Bampton Lecture, 1874, pp. 193-224, 2nd edit.
INTRODUCTION.

Christological idea of the Epistle to the Colossians, something peculiar to that Epistle, and constituting its difference from all others—a step on which St. Paul found himself at the close of a series of developments. But the ascended Christ, at the Right Hand of God, does not crowd out every other object in the picture drawn for the Colossians. Christ, in contradistinction to Angels, the Centre of the Universe,⁰ the Beginning,¹ is not so exclusively presented that the Incarnation is forgotten.² The very Body with its actual human capacities,³ the very Blood that flowed from human veins,⁴ are the porch through which we pass onward and upward. Thus, again, it is asserted that none of the peculiarly Pauline doctrines are in the First Epistle to the Thessalonians, the suppressed conclusion in some cases being that St. Paul had not yet developed or invented them. But the discourse of St. Paul at Antioch of Pisidia affords a complete historical contradiction to this. For that discourse was delivered some years before the Epistle to the Thessalonians was written, the earliest of all St. Paul's letters. If it be true that that Epistle contains “nothing of justification by faith, not by works of the law,” it is certain that the omission does not arise from ignorance, or from the fact that the idea had never been presented to the writer's mind. For, in the presence of the rulers of the synagogue at Antioch of Pisidia, he had said several years before: “Through this man is preached to you the forgiveness of sins, and by Him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.”⁵ Nor is it true that the Epistle to the Thessalonians is so entirely engrossed by the thought of Christ coming in the great Parousia that He occupies no other position. We have seen that in Colossians the preacher of the ascended Lord at the Right Hand of God is not so engaged with this aspect of the Saviour that He forgets Bethlehem and Calvary. It is easy to show that the author of the letters to the Thessalonians does not lose the balance of dogma in an absorbing and one-sided presentation of the Advent. The following dogmatic Christological principles are to be found in the First Epistle to the Thessalonians.

1. Christ is Divine.

Titles.

(a) The Lord Jesus, ii. 15.
   Our Lord Jesus Christ, ii. 19, v. 23.
   The Lord Himself, iv. 16. [There is an untranslatable dignity in the original Ἰησοῦς ὁ Κύrios—He, THE LORD. Cf. 2 Thess. ii. 16.]
   The Lord—passim.

(b) Divinely conjoined with the Father.
   The Church in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, i. 1.

(c) Prayed to with Him.
   “He, our God and Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ direct our way.” (1 Thess. iii. 11). The verb “direct” is here in the third person singular opt. κατευθύνειν, though with two subjects grammatically. Precisely in the same way “He, our Lord Jesus Christ, and our God and Father,” are followed by the third person singular optative παρακαλέω in 2 Thess. ii. 17. The inversion of the order, and the majestic ἱδρός applied in one place to the Father, in the other to Christ, are very significant. Underlying both passages would seem to be the equality of the Father with the Son indicated by this, and the identity of the operation proceeding from found in direct succession in St. Luke; the principle in the parable (v. 36), the application in the case of the Sabbath (vi. 1–9, common to the three synoptics). The same principle is placed by St. John in the forefront of his Gospel (i. 17.)

¹ Coloss. i. 15; 16.
² Coloss. i. 18. “Who is the Beginning.”
³ Coloss. ii. 6.
⁴ “In the body of His Flesh,” Coloss. i. 22.
⁵ Coloss. i. 20 (v. 14 cannot be quoted as proof).
⁶ Acts xiii. 38, 39. See Archdeacon Hannah's Bampton Lectures, pp. 216–217. It should carefully be noted that the conception of the abolition of the Law—or its absorption in a higher ideal—was not 'imported by Paul into Christianity'; but formed an integral part of the recorded teaching of our Lord. This principle, and one marked illustration of it, may be
INTRODUCTION.

both, indicated by the singular verbs. It is the nearest possible reflection of the Almighty cannot in "The Son can do nothing of Himself." (St. John v. 19). The distinct mention of the Father and the Son prevents any danger of the identity of working in the singular verb being misconstrued into a "confusion of the Persons."

2. Christ in Heaven.
   To wait for His Son from Heaven, i. 10. He, the Lord, shall descend from Heaven, iv. 16.
   4. Christ, the Redeemer, (a) ever delivering from the wrath, i. 11.
      (b) The medium of salvation, "to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ," v. 9.
      (c) Giving us life through His Death. "Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him," v. 10.

No "Christology" or "Soteriology" in the N. T. can go beyond this.

2. The eschatological element in the Epistles to the Thessalonians is peculiarly abundant.

As the supposed error of the early Church in reference to our Lord's Coming is mainly inferred from one passage in First Thessalonians (iv. 17); it may be well in this place to enter upon the examination of the so-called Apocalyptic elements in the conception of the kingdom of God, which is found in the record of our Lord's teaching. In this part of our survey, we may first consider and account for the apparent promise of an immediate Advent, of which some venture to speak so freely.

It is in reference to this so-called Apocalyptic element that M. Renan makes the most distinct and definite statements in his 'Life of Jesus.' Thus he states, in various passages, that "Christ's declaration upon the proximity of the world's catastrophe leaves no room for any equivocation:"—that "the world has not ended, as He announced;"—that "we must excuse His hope of a vain Apocalypse:"—that "He accepted the utopias of His time and race, though we must not despise His chimera."—that "the literal acceptance by the disciples, and at certain moments by the Master himself, of an immediate and outward Judgment, comes out in the writings of the time with absolute evidence;" that "the realistic conception of the Divine Advent has been a shadow of passing deception which that death has caused us to forget."

Every one who has listened carefully to the New Testament has heard in it the strokes of a grand and solemn knell over creation. This knell, indeed, is much older than the New Testament. The two first prophecies are of the first and second Advent. When man had only come from his Maker's hand about a thousand years, Enoch rung it first, "Behold, the Lord cometh!" The Church has been waiting five thousand years. But the aged Creation lingers on still. The priests of God stand waiting at the gate, and the bell tolls on, but the funeral train has not yet appeared.

We can account for these passages, and offer some proofs that the solution is true.

In the first place, then, many of these passages, especially the most striking of all in the twenty-fourth chapter of St. Matthew, are to be interpreted according to the analogy of all prophecy. Except in a few specified cases, time is not defined by the prophets. The future is projected like a timeless picture before the soul of the seer. "Objects which are near seem almost to touch those which are remote. This may be illustrated by the beautiful optical illusion which causes the broad disk of the setting sun to seem as if it crushed down upon the western hills, or the moon to appear as if its white fire were actually interwoven through the sombre mass of a grove. Our Lord, indeed, differs from other prophets. They needed a divine enthusiasm to make them receptive of the prophetic influence. The sound of a lyre awakened, or the lulling music of waters, calmed them. We feel that they were animated by an extraneous impulse, that they "spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." But the spirit of prophecy is not a suddenly infused light in
our Lord's mind, momentarily illuminating distant prospects like the lightning flash, and then dying away. The mysteries of futurity, the ages to come, are seen by a habitual light. Still, our Lord as prophet conformed to the very characteristics of prophecy. The prophets were not historians by anticipation. They were describers of pictures unseen by others. They saw in juxtaposition, not in succession. A lyrical ode, it has been said, is sometimes connected by threads more delicate, though not less real, than those which bind together the parts of a closely-written philosophical essay. Much more is this true of prophecy. There are various kinds of method. There is the method of logical order. There is the method of a sermon, a poem, and a history. Method, in the true sense, is the apt disposition of a number of topics which may be referred to a common centre. Let us allow the prophets to follow a deeper order of their own. Swiftly and noiselessly from the luminous centre of some divine principle, the prophetic spirit radiates to the furthest circumference of human events, with an order which is generally real, not chronological.

There is a second principle which we should bear in mind while we study those passages in Scripture which M. Renan calls Apocalyptic, and which may seem to speak of a visible and impending catastrophe. The Bible philosophy of history is not Mr. Buckle's. All history is a long judgment, a long coming of the Lord. It is much to be regretted that so many of us have ceased to speak, like our forefathers, of the Last Judgment. He shall come to be our Judge. Nay, 'verily He is a God that judgeth in the earth.' There has been a judgment, or a series of judgments, along the whole track of human history. It was so even in Paradise. The Jewish nation was chosen to be a palpable specimen of God's eternal Providence, an example of His moral government. In their history we have an unveiling of the principles of His judgment. Ever and anon there pierce through the tangled story strange foregleams of the judgment fires and of the heavenly light. Such is the argument of the Book of Judges, and of the Books of Kings. "Wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together." In hot climates, God has so overruled the instincts of the winged scavengers of the air and peak, that they swoop down upon the carrion, and remove it out of the way. There is such a thing as moral carrion. Wherever there is a body of moral and spiritual death, a dead church, a dead state, there "the carcass is." Such to a believing man is the aspect of history. Still the eagles are gathering together. Still the breath of spring ripples through the trees. Still He comes with clouds. Still the saints cry, "The great day of the Lord is near." So has it been through many cycles of history, the destruction of Jerusalem, the fall of Rome, the Reformation, the French Revolution, our own time. So shall it be until, after passing through all typical judgments, the Last Judgment shall darken over the human race.

There is a third thought which we may take with us, while we interpret the "Apocalyptic element" in our Redeemer's teaching. Suppose, then, that it was His intention to use language which should place His generation, and each successive generation, in the position of those who might be alive at His coming, at the same time so adjusting the perspective of His teaching that those who lived far away should be able to apprehend the precise point of view better than His own contemporaries. Does not this supposition meet the facts of the case? "Immediately after the tribulation of those days." "These and similar

1 "O Logician, God hath a method of His own, the prophetic method, which no rules of Aristotle will define."—Edward Irving.
declarations," says M. Renan, "leave no room for equivocation." "Those (observes Gibbon) who understood in a literal sense the discourses of Christ Himself, were obliged to expect the second and glorious coming of the Son of Man in the clouds, before that generation was totally extinguished, which had beheld His humbler condition upon earth, and which might still be witness of the calamities of the Jews under Vespasian or Hadrian. The revolution of seventeen centuries has instructed us not to press too closely the mysterious language of prophecy and revelation." Yet in the span of that same mysterious discourse, there occur repeated notices, which we must be blind, indeed, if we cannot read. "But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth His coming,"—a prophecy surely, of a time in the Church, not of unbelief, but of ambition and worldliness, like the middle ages. "While the bridegroom tarried," the word in the original almost means "spinning out the time."2 Again, "after a long time, the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them."3 Surely that space can have been no dream of the morning which seemed long to Him who said, "Before Abraham was, I am." We need not dwell upon the commission "to go into all lands," upon the institution by Christ of a church, and the inculcation of a morality, adapted to a world which was destined to last.

The application of these principles to our Lord's so called Apocalyptic declarations on the kingdom of God solves all difficulties. The vision of prophecy presents objects in juxtaposition, not succession, in space, so to speak, rather than time, mystically not chronologically; its objects are lifted into a relation beyond and out of time. All history is viewed, as it is viewed by God, as even we can view it when we see it in plan rather than in section. That is, it is a cycle of typical judgments, finished and completed in the Last Judgment, of which each successive crisis possesses some general characteristics. Add to this the moral and spiritual ends which are gained by keeping the Advent before each successive generation.

We shall adduce two arguments to show that, if not this interpretation, at least its results must necessarily be true. Consider, then, the opening verses of the second chapter of the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians. The view supposed to be Apostolical, supposed to be Christ's, does arise. How is it treated? Why as a fanaticism, a falsehood, and a delusion. St. Paul beseeches them, not exactly by, but (as Professor Jowett well translates it) "on behalf of, as though he were teaching in honour of that day, that the expectation of it might not be a source of disorder in the church."

But further. Admit not merely that the primitive Christians looked for and expected Christ (which they did, at that time, with an almost excessive tension) but, that they considered that "experience would belie Him cruelly, if the world was obstinate enough to last on after that generation," what would have been the result?—Why this, that when St. John, or the last survivor of Christ's immediate followers died, Christianity would have died with him. Perhaps as the storm darkened up the sky of Palestine, or as by the shores of the Aegean the sun went down in the dark cloud, or in the burning sky, a knot of poor fanatics might have looked for the sign of the Son of Man, the cross of fire, or the pierced form. But if the Gospel had been committed to that false hope, it must have been carried from its cradle to its grave. The Gospel has survived much. It has survived ten persecutions. It has survived the syllogism, the epigram, and the scaffold—Diocletian, Porphyry, and Voltaire. It has survived caricatures of its doctrines, and abuses of its holiness. It is strong enough to bear the burden of man's hopes, and the mightier burden of man's sorrows. But there is one thing which it will never survive, a refutation before the face of honest reason. There is one burden which it cannot bear, and that burden is a lie. If the Gospel had committed men to one vision-

1 St. Matt. xxiv. 47.
2 ξορίζωσι τι του γνωρίου, St. Matt. xxv. 5—the same word translated by "delayeth," xxiv. 48.
3 St. Matt. xxv. 19.
ary expectation, it must have expired though the destiny of humanity would have expired with it. But, just at the time when, according to M. Renan's interpretation of the great Teacher's words, their falsity was manifested, martyrs were preparing to bleed for them, and missionaries were starting with a lie in their right hand to announce it to the utmost ends of the earth. If the Gospel, if Christ and His apostles, had been committed to the doctrine that He must visibly appear in one generation, the Gospel must have died out with that generation. But the Gospel did not so die out. Therefore, the Gospel was committed to no such doctrine.

The view advocated on the interpretation of ἔμεινα (1 Thess. iv. 17) is confirmed by considerations derived from passages external to these Epistles. St. Paul was an extensive traveller, and knew the obstinacy of his countrymen. He did not expect the close of the present dispensation without a great ingathering of the Jews. Did he suppose that this would be the work of the few years which yet remained to him? (Rom. xi. 25, 26.) There are passages in which he speaks clearly of his own death and resurrection (1 Cor. vi. 14; 2 Cor. iv. 14, v. 2; Philipp. i. 23; 2 Tim. iv. 6). These expressions are logically inconsistent with a formulated belief on the part of St. Paul that Christ would come before he died. The following is St. Augustine's view of St. Paul's teaching in 1 Thess. v. 1, 2: "He showed that it was not necessary for them to know this—sufficient was it for them to be sure that, whilst men shall be slumbering and unprepared, the Lord will come as a thief. By believing this, they would be wakefully prepared after the lapse of any amount of time. St. Paul kept within his own limits, in that, apostle though he were, he did not presume to teach others, because he knew that the Apostle of our profession had said 'it is not yours to know.'"

The practical point to be perceived in regard to the eschatological element in these Epistles is this. One vision fills the souls of the Thessalonian converts—that of the great Coming. At first, it is in danger of assuming fanatical proportions, and shaking their lives to the very centre. A few calm words in the Second Epistle plead for the honour of the great Advent, and of the majestic gathering to the Redeemer. Then the perspective, for a while disturbed, was permanently re-adjusted, and remains at the same point even now, securing the perfect practical coincidence of the natural order of things with the supernatural expectation. When men seek to state the exact day, and that a near day, St. Paul, speaking through the ages, blames such fanaticism, and points us back to our Lord's words. He puts down the childish fingers that count the number of the days. "Of that day and hour knoweth no one." 3

3. The Moral and Social element in these Epistles next demands consideration.

The Epistles to the Thessalonians mark an era in the formation of Scripture. The letter claims its place beside the prophecy and the history. The first specimen of the new form of Scripture is before us, and it directly meets one of the deepest wants of the old society.

What ethical or social lesson, indicative

1 ἐκεῖ ὑπὲρ τὴν παρακλήσει τ. Κυρ., 2 Thess. ii. 1.
2 Ἡ ὁμολογίαν δημιουργεῖ στάθμην ηὑρι.
3 "Omnes calculantium digitos resolvit." (St. August.) St. Matt. xxiv. 36. Two anecdotes of two very different men will illustrate that practical combination of energetic discharge of duty with Advent expectation which these Epistles have mainly secured to the Church. When Francis of Sales was once, after intense labour, unbending himself at a game of chess, some morbid precisian who was near asked him what he would do, if he knew that the Lord's coming was even at hand. "Finish the game," said the Bishop, boldly. "For His glory I began it." General Lee wrote a striking story to his son, in a letter which has found its way into print. Last century, in New England, a day of sudden and unaccountable gloom, known yet by tradition as "the dark day," occurred while the senate of the state was sitting. The universal impression was that Doomsday had indeed come. Suddenly a well-known member stood up. "President," said he, "I propose that lights be brought in, and that we pass to the order of the day. If the Judge comes, He had best find us at our duty."
INTRODUCTION.

in a special way of Christian morality, may we derive from the study of the first written among the Epp. of St. Paul?

Much might be said of the new virtue, (as it might be called) of purity—of the new and awful line drawn round the citadel of the human soul by the gift of the Holy Spirit to those who believed and were baptized. But there is another vein of exhortation in the Ep. to the Thessalonians, pregnant with momentous social consequences.

Just before that glorious passage, which St. Paul’s unrivalled tenderness and majesty never exceeded—in which he tells of the descent of the Lord from heaven, and the gathering of the redeemed—he speaks with peculiar emphasis of a class of duties, in his mind evidently connected with true “brotherly love.” Their ambition should be to be quiet, to do their own business, to work with their own hands. The result of this will be twofold—a peculiar dignity of aspect in the eyes of those as yet external to the communion of the Church, and the honourable independence which can enable them to dispense with the contemptuous pity of any man’s alms. In the Second Epistle he assumes a severer and more sarcastic tone against those who are only busy with that which is no business of theirs; and commands and exhorts with impassioned earnestness, even “by our Lord Jesus Christ,” to work with quietness, and eat their own bread, not that of other people.

Few persons, perhaps, have remarked how significant this style of exhortation is of a new world, and a new order of ideas. For in spite of ultra-democratic appearances, there was in Greek society an ultra-aristocratic spirit in its most evil form—the ultra-aristocracy of culture as well as of social position. As regards the former, tradesmen and mechanics were held to be incapable of true philosophy or spiritual religion, or refined thought. As regards the latter, one of the worst influences of slavery was the discredit which it threw upon free labour, and all the smaller forms of commerce. Aristotle treats with cold cynicism everything of the sort. The tradesman or mechanic is but a higher kind of slave—differing from him in kind, not in degree—bearing the same relation to the public which the slave bears to the individual. To do any work which marks or curves the body; to live upon daily pay; to be connected with the detail of fabrications, or with sales in the public markets; this was to degrade a freeman, and to plebeianize his spirit as well as his body. Such were the ideas of Aristotle, who knew Macedonia so well, and had lived in it so long—such the ideas which were in the very air of Thessalonica when St. Paul wrote his Epistles. It is full of significance that the first Apostolic Epistle speaks out so boldly and earnestly upon the dignity and becomingness of industry, the nobility of working with our own contemptuous tone of the Pharisees in St. John viii. 49.

1 See the admirable pages in M. Wallon’s Histoire de l’Esclavage, i. 446, seqq.
2 The reader need but refer to any good index to the Politics of Aristotle, and examine the list of quotations under the heads of Bδανως, Bδανως. Men generally did not believe that he who lived the daily life of the Bδανως, could cultivate virtue with unbroken devotion. (Polit. iii. 5) The great author’s cynical dislike of the servile mechanism found its culminating point in the χειρόνευς. “These are,” as he says, "those who live, as their name denotes, and τῶν χειρών." (Polit. iii. iv. 2; cf. Rhetor. i. ix. 27.) What a contrast to St. Paul’s elevating ambition “to work with your own hands” (1 Thess. iv. 11)—to the touching allusion to his own stained and horny hands (Acts, xx. 34)! The perfect form of civilized polity will not have a mechanic citizen (διὰ βελτίωτης πόλις οὐ νοιτείας Βδανωνον πολιτείαν. Arist. Polit. iii. v. 7). But that “city which hath the foundations” opens its impartial gates widely for the reception of such.

2 Colonel Leake places Stagirus at the modern village of Stauros, near the shore of the Smyrmonic Gulf (Leake’s Northern Greece, chap. xxv.). Sir George Bowren shows strong reason for doubting this, by a reference to Herod. vii. 15. For a brilliant defence of the “universal tradition of the Macedonian peasants,” which assigns the honour of having given birth to Aristotle to Isboros (10Bep66t), within a day’s ride of Thessalonica, see Mount Athos, Thessaly, and Epirus, pp. 120, seqq.
INTRODUCTION.

hands, though they may be blackened by the work—the duty of preferring our own coarse bread, won by the sweat of our brow, to the precarious food of the beggar, or the ignominious luxury of the parasite. This was one great social and moral result of the message, which, if its origin was in God's eternal counsels, came from a carpenter's shop, and was published by a company of fishermen, among whom a tent-maker of Tarsus had obtained admission.

4. The First Epistle to the Thessalonians has often been pronounced to be as entirely unecclesiastical as it is supposed to be undogmatic.

It is hard for one writing at this time to examine such an allegation fairly, accurately, and without prepossession. By means of maps and descriptions we can form a picture to our mind of the Bay of Thessalonica, and see the semicircle of houses rising towards the hills with something of the air of an inferior Genoa. But it is much more difficult for us to see the earliest Thessalonian Christians exactly as they were. We instinctively think of something like churches. In Salonica, at the present day, three of these are still found which have been turned into mosques. One of these (S. Sophia) has a very ancient pulpit of beautiful marble, from which the local tradition reports that St. Paul preached while at Thessalonica. Yet the Christians of the place could, of course, have had no separate buildings, and must have been content to meet in the house of Jason, of Aristarchus, of Secundus, or of some other believer. Yet there are certain lines of church life and organization which we can fairly trace in the Epistles to the Thessalonians.

(a) St. Paul recognizes the Thessalonians, then, at this early period, as one organized body, as a church. At a period considerably later he does not always so address those to whom he writes.

1 Mount Athos, Thessaly, and Epirus, by Mr. (now Sir George F.) Bowen, P. 40.
2 Acts xvii. 5.
4 1 Thess. i. 1. 6 See Colossians i. 1, 2.

(b) That these believers were all baptized is necessarily implied in the very conception of a church. If it be thought that we look at the question too much through the afterthoughts of ecclesiastical and technical theology, let us consider a fact in St. Paul's own life, and a passage in this epistle.

1. St. Paul's own history and experience show that he was not likely to entertain the notion that a believer could be united to the Church without the baptismal initiation. The direction which he himself had received from our Lord after his conversion led him to baptism. If baptism was thus necessary for St. Paul, it must have been equally necessary for his converts.

2. But the Apostle recognizes baptism in this Epistle by most powerful practical teaching drawn from its very idea as a consecration of body, soul, and spirit, by the indwelling of the Holy Ghost. Were a preacher in a modern pulpit to warn his hearers against impurity, inward or outward, and to claim them for unsullied purity on the ground that they had received the Holy Spirit, and that their bodies were His temple, it would at once be understood, even if baptism were not mentioned, that the reference was baptismal—nay, that it must be, if the speaker viewed that sacrament as the initial act of the Christian life.

It is from this point of view that the awful passage upon impurity (1 Thess. iv. 3, 8) must be considered. Sin of this kind, according to the Apostle, is not merely vice, or crime, or even ordinary sin. It is direct personal insult to the Holy Spirit. Such is the force of the solemn words, “God who also gave His Holy Spirit once for all unto you.”

1 Acts ix. 18; xxii. 16.
2 The modern objection to this doctrine, on the ground that Christians collectively, not singly, form the Temple of the Holy Spirit, has been answered by anticipation with a felicity which scarcely admits of translation—“Hujus enim templum simul omnis, et singuli templi sumus.” St. Augustine. De Civ. Dei, x. 3. 2. 6 τον θεν τὸ καὶ τὸ πνεύμα τοῦ Πνεύμα εἰς οἴκημα, 1 Thess. iv. 8. The εἰς οἴκημα is very emphatic. (On εἰς, with verbs of giving, almost with the force of “giving over to,” see note infra 1 Thess. iv. 8.) The reading is certainly
is speaking of a great isolated act and gift once given, of that gift which is the Holy Ghost Himself. It is the same point of view from which St. Paul always surveys baptism—only that in the first of his Epistles it is more suitable to look at the gift in the hand and heart of the Giver; afterwards, in the hands and hearts of the receivers. It is the Divine baptismal aorist active of the Giver which is exactly echoed again and again by the human baptismal aorist passive of reception. 1

The Thessalonians were a church of baptized believers. (d) The Thessalonian Church also possessed a stated Ministry. It is impossible to evade the force of the passage (1 Thess. v. 12, 13). Here there is a class of men, marked off from the general body of believers, to be recognized, esteemed, beloved, and that for their work's sake—a class of men who laboured, presided, admonished.

St. Paul was at Thessalonica but a few weeks, if the narrative in Acts (xvii. 1, 2) is to be very strictly pressed 2 certainly not for any very lengthened period. He had now left them for a comparatively short interval; yet it is clear that he had provided, in some way, for ministerial order and succession. The Church was thus equipped and provided for a continued existence.

(e) There is evidence in the Epistle that the Church was gathered together at convenient opportunities—apparently for two purposes.

1. The "holy kiss" of affectionate greeting (v. 26) had evidently a character which was, so to speak, official and liturgical. To those who are, in any degree, conversant with Christian antiquity, the rite is integrally connected with the Holy Communion. In Justin Martyr's well-known passage describing early Christian worship it stands between the "Common Prayers" and the Eucharist, just before the Oblation. 1 The kiss of peace always accompanied the Holy Communion, both in the east and west ("Osculum pacis, Pax"). The only difference was in the time. In the East it was immediately before the oblation, in the West after the consecration and before the reception.

2. But the Church further met to be instructed by reading. 3 The verse (v. 27) must be taken with that which precedes, to give it full significance. St. Paul's letters were destined for the widest publicity; intended to take the place of the Law and Prophets in the Synagogue worship—to be a Christian Law promulgated by public reading. It is scarcely necessary to observe what a guarantee was thus afforded for the authenticity of these letters, and what authority they claimed. The command of the Epistle was the command of the Apostle. When the Epistles came to be collected they were, in a sense, "the Apostle."

The Christians of Thessalonica, then, were a Church, consisting of baptized believers, with an organized Ministry—a Church, with gathered assemblies, where the Holy Communion was administered and the Apostolic Epistles were read as inspired Scripture. 4

---

2 On the Church's right to dispense with this ancient ceremony, see Hooker, E. P., Preface iv. 4. Cf. also the authorities cited infra, note on 1 Thess. v. 26.
3 "I charge you by the Lord that this Epistle be read (ἀναγνωρισθῇ) unto all the holy brethren" (1 Thess. v. 27). The aor. infin. here cannot be restricted to the usual aoristic sense of a single and final act. On the peculiar timeless or eventual sense of the aor. after verbs of "commanding, hoping," &c., see the accurate note of Bishop Ellicott, Ep. to Thessalonians, p. 88.
4 The ecclesiastical element in the Epistles to the Thessalonians is brought out with great learning and clearness by Bishop Wordsworth in the second volume of his Commentary upon the New Testament.
At the early period in the history of Christianity when the Epistle was written the Christian society existed with well-defined outlines.

(a) No command to cohere into a Church—But, a Church exists. No command to be baptized—But, baptism exists.

"Paul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the Church of the Thessalonians," i. 1.

(b) No command to form a Ministry—But, an authorized Ministry exists.

"We beseech you to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you; and to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake," v. 12, 13.

(c) No command to united assemblages—But, united assemblages exist; for at them, or one of them, the Epistle was to be read.

"I charge you by the Lord that this Epistle be read unto all the holy brethren," v. 27.

(d) No command to celebrate the Holy Communion—But, the Holy Communion exists (pre-supposed in the kiss, which must have been public, and was from the earliest times associated with the Holy Communion).

5. The local element in St. Paul's Epistles has been alternately overlooked and exaggerated. It was often overlooked by those who held a rigid mechanical view of the inspiration of Scripture, and forgot its human characteristics. It is in modern times, perhaps, frequently exaggerated by those who forget that the Epistles of St. Paul were meant for all ages of the Church, and addressed to more than their present readers.

In the First Epistle to the Thessalonians there are two local references which are worthy of special mention.

(a) At the beginning of the Epistle, St. Paul writes:—"For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to Godward is spread abroad" (1 Thess. i. 8). The Greek commentators in the picturesque word translated "sounded out," observe a metaphor derived from the trumpet's brilliant tone and power of distant resonance. It can scarcely be doubted that St. Paul was thinking of the geographical position of Thessalonica which had been particularly noted by Cicero. It was, indeed, by land a chief station on the great Roman military road (via Egnatia). As Cicero also observes; while by sea it had a principal share in the commerce of the Levant, and was in constant communication with almost every shore of the known world. When we take into account St. Paul's subtle tact in dealing with men, there seems to be much reason for finding, with Chrysostom, an allusion also to a history of which every Thessalonian must have been proud— an historical blended with a geographical reference. The Apostle may have lightly touched upon a new fame in the Gospel, succeeding to and surpassing the ancient Macedonian glory.

1 Δηχεται—ἀμφηρον ἄνθρωποι, (Theophyl.) "The resonance of the trumpet," says Chrysostom upon this verse, "fills the whole vicinity. But the fame of your excellence fills the world, and reaches all and everywhere with equal sound. Great deeds are celebrated with the distinctest commemoration where they were performed. They are, indeed, often celebrated far away, but not so much. It is not so with you. But the glorious sound has gone through the earth."

2 "Thessalonicenses ... positi in gremio imperii nostri." (Orat. de Prov. Cons., ii.)

3 In the verse generally, and more especially in the vivid words ἡ ἔννοια τῶν ἡσύχων ("spoken as if of a living thing"), Chrysostom seems to trace a reminiscence of the elastic and bounding symbol of Alexander's Macedonian empire in Daniel viii. 5-8. Rarely, indeed, could such words have afterwards been applied to the Church of Thessalonica. Cyril and Methodius, however, belonging to the Slavobulgarian nationality, which extends from the banks of the Danube to the mountains of Tes saly—Hellenized Slaves—evangelized Moravia,
INTRODUCTION.

(b) The second **local** reference is more undeniable. It is also more important, because it illustrates that which is the chief social lesson in this Epistle.

In one of the most admirable passages of his writings Jerome adverts to St. Paul's power of laying his finger upon the distinguishing characteristics of every phase of human nature which he addressed in every region of the world. The simplicity, the facility, the haughtiness of the Roman character are reflected in his addresses to the Roman Christians. The intellectual pride of the Corinthians; the women boldly sitting in public assemblies with uncovered head, the men with long floating hair, used to heat themselves with wine in their temples, and carrying the same custom into a holier assembly and a more august rite, are observed by every careful reader of the letters to the Corinthians. The hysterical and passionate nature of the Celt is reflected from the mirror of the Epistle to the Galatians. One of the most notable instances of this feature in St. Paul's writings—Jerome proceeds to say—is to be found in the Epistles to the Thessalonians. The national type of character continued absolutely unchanged up to the time of the great commentator of the Western Church. We can often infer from a letter the character of him to whom it is addressed quite as clearly as the character of the writer. The same virtues of charity, hospitality, fraternal good-will; the same vices of indolence, aimless lounging, petty meanness in making oneself a parasite for the sake of daily food which the Epistles would lead us to attribute to one section of the people of Thessalonica, continued to mark the Macedonians of St. Jerome's day—it may be added, from the testimony of travellers, at the present moment. It is natural to ask how St. Paul handles **Scripture** in these Epistles.

It is certainly inaccurate to dismiss the question summarily, by replying that the Epistles to the Thessalonians contain no quotations from the Old Testament. The following list will show clearly that there are several such:

1 Thess. i. 5
   ... Psalm. xxix. 4.
   ii. 16
   ... Gen. xv. 16.
   ... 18
   ... Nehem. xiii. 20.
   ... 19
   ... Proverbs xvi. 31.
   ... 9
   ... Isaiah viii. 16; iv. 13.
   ... 14
   ... Psalm xlvii. 14.
   ... 15, 16
   ... Jerem. xxv. 30, 31.
   ... 3
   ... Ezekiel xiii. 10.
   ... 8
   ... Isaiah lix. 17.
   ... 14
   ... Isaiah xxxiv. 4.

2 Thess. i. 8
   ... Psalm xxix. 7.
   ... 9
   ... Psalm xlvii.
   ... 4
   ... Daniel xi. 36.
   ... 8
   ... Psalm xxxii. 6; Isaiah xi. 4.
   ... iii. 1
   ... Psalm cxlviii. 15.

What is certain is that (with the exception, perhaps, of 2 Thess. ii. 4, Daniel xi. 36) these references are, so to speak, half-conscious quotations—the reminiscences or allusions of a mind full of Scripture, not downright quotations for the purpose of discussion or authoritative settlement of questions. This

1 St. Jerome's words are well worth quoting: *Hunc ex parte sumpsit, hostem permanere, non potest dubitare qui Achaiaam viderit. Macedones in charitate laudantur, et hospitale ac susceptible fratrum. Unde ad eos scribitur (1 Thess. iv. 9) sed reprehenduntur (Ibid. xii. 11) —quod ne quis putet officio magis docentis quam visa gentis admonitum, ... in Secundii ad eodem incutac ac replicat.* (2 Thessal. iii. 10–12; S. Hieron., Comment in Epist. ad Galat. Lib. ii. cap. ii. opp. tom. vii. 381, 382, Edit. Migne.)
2 Prof. Jowett, Epistles of St. Paul, i. 6.
3 **τὸ δεικτέαν ἐν δαίμονεῖ, 1 Thess. i. 5.**
   "The voice of the Lord in strength" (ΠΝΔ),
   Psalm. xxix. 4.
4 Οὐκοφόρος occurs here only in the N.T. In the LXX. the kindred adj., verb and substant. are found several times, while in classical Greek the word appears to be nearly unknown. The exhortation of St. Paul (1 Thess. v. 14), has the air of a reminiscence of παρακλησίας τοί δαίμονει (Isaiah xxxiv. 4. LXX.).
5 Cf. the unusual collocation τὸν φλογὶ πυρός (2 Thess. i. 8) with φλάμα πυρός (Ps. xxix. 7. LXX.).
6 ἀνὰ τὴν ἄδηστη τὴν ἱερὸς ἀντίον is a sort of summary of the Psalm; see LXX.
INTRODUCTION.

feature in the Epistles is one proof of the predominatingly Gentile origin and training of the majority of the Thessalonian Church.

A more important question remains. How far have we evidence from these early pages that the words of Christ Himself, afterwards preserved in the Gospels, were known to St. Paul and presented by him in his teaching? Were words of the Johannic as well as of the synoptic type in his possession thus early? The following list may be presented as an answer:

1 Thess. iii. 3 ... St. John xvi. 33.  
  iv. 9 ... vi. 45; xiii. 35.  
  v. 2 ... St. Matt. xxi. 43; xxv. 6; St. Luke xvi. 34.  
  3 ... St. Matt. xxiv. 8; St. Mark xiii. 8.  
  11 ... St. Matt. vii. 24, 25; xiv. 18; St. Luke vi. 2.

2 Thess. ii. 1 ... St. Luke xvii. 37.  
  iv. 4 ... St. John v. 43.  
  10 ... St. John vii. 39; xvii. 10.

iii. 3 ... St. Matt. vi. 13. [Note also another name, of Satan (τὸ ἐπεδεικνύοντος), 1 Thess. iii. 5; St. Matt. iv. 3.]

It will be observed that these references are to be weighed rather than counted. Among the principles taught by St. Paul in the very words of Jesus, or allusively to them, are—(1) The great law of the moral necessity of tribulation. (2) The new commandment. (3) The coming of the Day of the Lord as a thief in the night. (4) The idea of "edification," which lies at the root of two parables, and of the conception of the Church. (5) The bidding to be at peace among ourselves. (6) The mysterious idea of the mutual glorification of Christ in His people, and of His people in Him.

III.

Analysis of the First Epistle to the Thessalonians.

i.

Personal.

Salutation (i. 1).  
Thanksgiving for their faith, love, hope (vers. 2, 3)—for the practical character of the Gospel in their case. (v. 5).

Their lives were imitations of his (v. 6).  
Each of them a mould of form for Grecian Christians (v. 7).  
Their true life (v. 8).  
Far and wide were known the characteristics of their spiritual life—(a) their conversion from the well-known idolatry to the true God (v. 9). (b) their life-long keeping of Advent, waiting for Jesus from Heaven (v. 10); based upon two great principles of the Divine Government—(a) abiding delivery by Jesus. (b) abiding wrath of God against sin (ibid.).

Reminder of his first coming to Thessalonica with its boldness in persecution (ii. 1, 2). Character of his teaching—frank, pure, honest, free from flattery (verses 4, 5, 6).  
Tender appeal (verses 7–12).  
Thanksgiving, because they received the word as God’s (v. 13).

Their patience was on the same line with that of the persecuted Churches of Judaea; incidental prophecy (v. 14–16).  
His intense desire to see them baffled more than once (verses 17–20).  
Sending of Timothy to comfort and confirm them—remind them that they had been promised tribulation (iii. 1–5).  
Sigh of prayer to Christ (v. 5).  
Timothy’s good news (v. 6); consequent joy of St. Paul, and desire to see them.  
Solemnly repeated sigh of twofold prayer to Christ; (1) for a temporal blessing; (2) for a spiritual and eternal blessing to them (verses 11–13).

festation will be contrary to that, with his tyrannical assumption of things which belong not to him, as also St. Paul saith (2 Thess. ii. 4). That is exactly “coming in one’s own name.” (In Joann. Homil. xii.) The reality of St. Paul’s reference to this part of our Lord’s teaching should not be involved in the questionable speculations and inferences which Chrysostom makes immediately after this passage.


2 St. Matt. xvi. 18.
INTRODUCTION.

II.

Transitional—passing on to the great question about the departed. Love is the unseen thread of connection, the "root below the stream." 1

1. The false love.

Impropriety against the Holy Ghost (iv. 1-8).

2. The true love to the living, taught by Christ, our God.

(Connected with this—

(a) Ambition to keep quiet.

(b) Honest labour, with resultant dignity and independence (verses 9-12).

3. The true love of those that are asleep, with its hope that tempers the despair of the heathen (v. 13, seqq.).

III.

A.


The "leading" of the dead with Jesus necessarily follows from His Death and Resurrection. Let affection learn that we,—i.e., those who may be alive—shall not have the advantage of the departed by one golden hour of His Presence (v. 15).

Three circumstances selected:

(a) Descent of the Lord to Judgment (v. 16).

(b) Resurrection of the holy dead (ibid.).

(c) The ascension of the dead in Christ and the living in Christ (v. 17). There is no mention here of the General Judgment.

This is comfort (v. 18).

B.

Time of the Advent:

The day—as they know—sudden (verses 2-3).

Practical lessons:

they are sons of light and sons of day (verses 5-9), appointed to salvation (v. 9).

Mention of salvation leads him to soteriology.

(a) Salvation is through Jesus (v. 9).

(b) He died for us (v. 10).

This, too, is a comfortable word (v. 11).

IV.

General maxims:

1. Affectionate respect for the Ministerial order as such (verses 12, 13).

2. Peacefulness (ibid.).

3. Special duties to special classes (v. 14).

4. Love (v. 15); joy (v. 16); prayer (v. 17); thanksgiving (v. 18); cherishing the fire of the Spirit (v. 19); respect for prophecies, but a discriminating respect (verses 21, 22); universal and impartial abstention from every form of evil (ibid.).

Solemn prayer and sweet promise (verses 23, 24).

Request for prayer.

The Eucharistic kiss of peace (v. 26).

Adjuration to read the Epistle publicly (v. 27).

Dominus vobiscum (v. 28).

IV.

The authenticity of this Epistle has scarcely been seriously impugned.

The outline of the First Epistle is soft and undulating in the earlier chapters—Gentle memories; tender recognitions of the fruitfulness of grace among them; affectionate expressions of desire to see them; sympathy in their tribulations; an account of his present position, fill (a) Baur, however, has advanced certain objections.

Baur's argument is mainly grounded upon the assumption that First Thessalonians is a cento made up from other Epistles. He quotes—

1 Thess. i. 5 ; 6 ; 1 Cor. ii. 4 ; xi. 1 ; Rom. i. 8 ; ii. 4, 10 ; 1 Cor. ii. 4 ; iv. 3, 4 ; ix. 15 ; 2 Cor. ii. 17 ; xi. 9.

But, as it is St. Paul's habit thus to repeat himself in undoubtedly genuine epistles, these repetitions are rather a proof than a disproof of genuineness. See Professor Jowett's masterly and convincing argument, St. Paul's Epistles, i. pp. 19-25.

(b) As to external authority, early Church history records no doubt. Its reception into the Canon has ample attestation. It appears in the "Canon Muratorianus." Tertullian cites it more than twenty times. Ireneus and Clement of Alexandria upon several occasions.

up these brief pages, which quiver with emotion (chapters i.-iii.). With chapter iv. begins a part of the letter more susceptible of regular analysis, and whose contents are sharply defined, and notched off by the preposition πρὸς (πρὸς δὲ τῆς φιλαδελφίας, iv. 9-12; πρὸς τῶν κοινωνίων, iv. 13-18: πρὸς δὲ τῶν χριστιανῶν τῶν καιρῶν, v. 1). It is interesting to note how many germ we have in the earliest Epistle afterwards expanded and matured (see especially 1 Thess. v. 8; Ephes. vi. 13-17; cf. also i. 9-11; 1 Cor. xii. 2, iv. 12; Coloss. iv. 5; 2 Cor. vi. 11; also the bare mention of "the triumph of God," 1 Thess. iv. 16, with 1 Cor. xv. 54). "A similar growth is observable in the allusion to the duty of the Church to support the preachers of the Gospel when placed side by side with the larger manner in which the same subject is treated, 1 Cor. ix.; 2 Cor. xx, 8, 9; xii. 13. In all these there is the kind of difference that we should expect to find between a thought or precept repeated, and the same thought expressed for the first time in a few words." (Professor Jowett, p. 24.)

"Epistole autem Pauli...ad Thessalonicenses sexta. Verum Corinthis et Thessalonicensibus licet pro correptione iteratur, una raman per omnem orbem terrae ecclesiae diffusa esse demonstatur" (apud Routh, Rel. Sacra, i. 395, 396).

See the express reference "cum Thessalonicensibus" and the full quotation of 1 Thess. v. 5 in Tert. De Resurr. Carnin, c. xxiv. and another equally explicit and lengthened quotation in the same chapter of 1 Thess. v. i.

INTRODUCTION.

SECOND EPISTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS.

INTRODUCTION.

I. Analysis

[Much of this Epistle has already been discussed in the Introduction to the First Epistle. The Man of Sin is treated of in the Notes to Chapter II. The Apostle specially meets the two evils of feverish fanatical excitement in relation to the Advent; and of disorderly mendicancy.

i.

The Great Day, and errors about its nearness in time.

Thanksgiving for their spiritual growth, and patience in persecution (i. 1-4).

He points them to a day of impartial judgment; of refreshment to them; of everlasting punishment to the enemies of God (vers. 5-9).

Twofold end of that coming for the Saints. Christ glorified in them; they glorified in Christ (vers. 10-12).

Before the Day must come the Apostasy and Apocalypse of the Man of Sin; before that a hindrance to his Apocalypse must be removed.

ANTICHRIST HAS, ANTICHRISTIANITY HAS, LIKE CHRIST—LIKE CHRISTIANITY—

(a) A coming (v. 3).
(b) An apocalypse (ib.).
(c) A designation (v. 4).
(d) A reason (v. 9).
(e) A parousia (v. 9).
(f) Power, signs, wonders (v. 22).
(c) A faith or creed (v. 11).

Hindrance to be removed before Antichrist's coming. St. Paul's teaching while with them made it unnecessary to go further (vers. 5, 6).

Cause of the reception of Antichrist by his adherents moral and spiritual—not intellectual.]

ii.

He has reason to thank God for them (vers. 13, 14).

1 Iv. 10.—"Whatever, therefore, the prophecy means, those who are truly well-meaning cannot be involved in its censure."—Keble, Stud. Sacra, p. 235.

Stand fast, therefore (v. 13).

Solemn prayer to Christ. Sigh of supplication to Him for a spiritual, as the prayer in 1 Thess. iii. 11 had been for a temporal, blessing (vers. 16, 17).

iii.

Let them pray for him, specially for the spread of the Gospel (iii. 1), and for his deliverance from wicked men (v. 3).

Confidence that this will be granted (v. 3), and that they will dutifully oblige him (v. 4).

Solemn prayer to Christ. [This, with ii. 16, 17, is the answering echo to the double sigh of Prayer to Christ in 1 Thess. iii. 11, 12.]

iv.

Second main subject of the Epistle. They are to discountenance all disorder (v. 6).

Appeal to his own conduct—not that he had not a right to maintenance—but for example (vers. 7, 8, 9).

Solemn exhortation to quiet work. Adjuration by Christ (on the same line with prayer to Him, vers. 10, 11, 12).

How they are to treat the disobedient, with the affectionate sternness of a loving disapprobation (v. 15).

Solemn prayer to Christ—double sigh of supplication.

(a) "The Lord of Peace give you peace"—Pax vobiscum.
(b) Dominus vobiscum.

Salutation (v. 17).

Last sigh of prayer to Christ (v. 17).

Grace answering to grace, as in last Epistle (1 Thess. v. 28).

II.

The Second Epistle to the Thessalonians will require little to be said upon its authenticity. It was written while Silvanus could still be named with Paul and Timothy, and while all three were at Corinth, A.D. 53. The subscriptions which place it at Athens (Theodoret. Cathol. A, B); at Rome (Synops. St.
INTRODUCTION.

Athanas.); at Laodicea (Pesch.) are in error. It is externally well attested (Irenæus, Adv. Haer. III. vii. 2, quotes 2 Thess. ii. 8. Clem. Al. Strom. v. 5, quotes 2 Thess. iii. 1, seqq. St. Justin M. speaks of "the man of sin" (Dial. c. 110; 2 Thess. ii. 3–8; St. Polycarp quotes 2 Thess. iii. 15; ad Philipp. c. xi.).

III.

If the view which is taken in the Introductions to these Epistles be correct, our estimate of their importance will be proportionately enhanced. We shall consider it worse than inaccurate to content ourselves with speaking in a somewhat patronizing way of their undogmatic tone, of their peculiar caressing tenderness, their engrossing sentiment, and unsystematic idealism. For we shall perceive in them a precise adaptation to the wants of the Church and to the crisis of human society.

The position of Christians and of Pagan civilization at the time when these letters were written is met at every point by these earliest lines of New Testament Scripture. (1) The Church still gazed after her Lord, who had ascended about twenty years before; in the times to come she wanted clear direction and authoritative example, that she might tell those who were to come after, whether the name which she bore was derived from the first of martyrs, or from the Lord of Glory; whether her prayers were to be directed to Him as the object of her worship; whether His Death was an illustrious example or the one true sacrifice. (2) He who ascended was so to come in like manner as He had gone up into Heaven. Was the Church to expect His return with the spurred pulse of a feverish expectation, with a wild excitement shaking humanity from its steadfastness? or was the honour of that Day concerned in the reverential calmness of a quiet expectation? (3) The Christian community, in the very freedom and spirituality of the new life, might be tempted to reject all ordinances as a burden, and all ecclesiastical organization as a useless or mischievous restraint. (4) The words of the Great Teacher were unwritten for a while; they lived in memories which were quickened by the Holy Spirit. What was the relation of those words to the doctrine which was being borne by every breeze, and along a hundred different roads, to the heart of Italy and Greece, to the cities of Africa and Asia Minor? (5) The old society was sick to death with diseases which it felt to be fatal, but for which it was unable to find a name, or to apply a remedy.

If the view presented in these pages be correct, the Epistles to the Thessalonians contain precisely the answer to these questions. (1) The first writings of the New Testament Canon call Jesus "the Lord." and breathe forth repeated prayers to Him. (2) While they maintain the attitude of Advent, they warn the faithful against Pseudo-Apocalyptic fever-fits. (3) They incidentally imply an ecclesiastical organization, already compacted and recognized, which, if simple and free from intricacy, was yet solid as iron—a sacramental life already in existence which is never to fail until the end of time. (4) These Epistles disclose to those who will search for them carefully, words of Jesus—afterwards recorded in the Gospels—and those words are not introduced by way of accidental ornament, like pieces of old stained glass, which obtain a place in some window solely for their colouring, and contribute nothing to the design. They are rather like the rafters which, concealed from those who do not look for them, support the weight of the roof. (5) Finally, these earliest of the Canonical letters proclaimed to a world which was degraded by lust, and vitiated by the system of slavery, that purity is the first of moral virtues, and industry the first of

---

1 This tenderness is, no doubt, peculiarly a feature of the First Epistle to the Thessalonians (1 Thess. ii. 7, 8, 17–19; iii. 1–8; iv. 13–18; v. 14). And this softness as of a woman’s heart manifested in St. Paul’s first extant letter is an indication of the total change of character which had passed over him who had devastated the Church, and who had flung into prison for their faith’s-sake even those whose weakness might well have been their protection. (‘And hailing men and women committed them to prison’—Acts viii. 3.)

New Test.—Vol. III.
social duties. Thus they served to prepare the way for the sanctities of Christian marriage, as well as for the recognition of the dignity of free labour and commercial pursuits. A revelation, which did not come into existence amidst the pomp of philosophical disputations, or the terrors which accompanied the elder dispensation—which was truly human as well as truly Divine—found suitable expression in a letter. The recognition of free labour—so natural an accompaniment of the message which, though it came from God Himself, issued upon earth from a carpenter’s shop in Nazareth, and whose most successful preacher was a tent-maker of Tarsus—has a peculiar fitness when it is found upon the earliest leaves which we possess of the New Testament—the Epistles to the Thessalonians.
THE FIRST EPISODE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE THESALONIANS.

CHAPTER I.

1 The Thessalonians are given to understand both how mindful of them Saint Paul was at all times in thanksgiving, and prayer: and also how well he was persuaded of the truth and sincerity of their faith, and conversion to God.

PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians which is in God the Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ:

Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers;

3 Remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our some MSS, can scarcely be sustained.] (See Reiche, ‘Comm. Crit.’ in L.). “Peace”—this is the first word which Christ spoke to His disciples after the Resurrection. Therefore, Paul everywhere says, “grace unto you and peace.”—(S. Joann. Chrysost. ‘in Joann. Homil.’ LXXXVI).

Cf., for general sentiment and feeling, Philipp. i. 3, 4.

at our prayers;) (τοις with gen. signifying “at the time of any event;” “at the point of time when it takes place.” Cf. Rom. i. 10; Ephes. i. 16; Philemon v. 4, for this.

3: work of faith, labor (τοιλ., Bp. Elliscott) of love, and patience of hope. (i) ἡμαν, (ii) κόσμος, (iii) ὑπομονή, are added to (i) faith, (ii) love, (iii) hope. He attributes the three great Christian graces to the Thessalonians, to each of which he thoughtfully assigns its specific property and attribute. (i) “work” in sing. signifies the perpetual central work which faith is and bas, translating itself into work from its very nature; so that he who works little has little faith. On this conception of faith, cf. our Lord’s words. When the Jews ask, “What shall we do that we may work the works of God?” Jesus answerers, with an emphatic transition from the plural to the singular, “This is the work of God, that ye believe on Him whom He hath sent” (St. John vi. 28, 29). (ii) “Labour of love,” laborious love. “Laboriosam charitatem” (Pagnini). “Love is much by itself, but much more if toilful labour (for such is the sense) be added to it.” (Grotius,

2 Y 2
Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every

is predicated of many, the word should be in the plural. (1 Cor. x. 6; 1 St. Peter v. 4). When it is predicated of one, the singular is used, even with the plural pronoun we, where we is evidently singular in meaning. (2 Thessal. iii. 9; Philippii. iii. 17; cf. Rom. v. 14; 1 Tim. iv. 12; Titus ii. 7.) Many, collectively called τό ρήμα, would involve the technical Biblical sense of type. Nor are the Thessalonians here looked upon as a sort of abstract collective body, to which this term might be properly applied. They are spoken of not exactly as a Church, but as individuals and in the concrete (‘ye,’ ver. 6; ‘ye,’ ver. 7; from you’... ‘your faith,’ ver. 8). Calvin has grasped the idea with great clearness. “The plural, in my judgment, is much more fully expressive than if St. Paul had said that the Church of the Thessalonians, as a body, was proposed for imitation. The sense really is that, there were in that Church as many examples (τό ρήμα) as individuals.” They became so many “moulds of form” for the Christian life. (See Reiche, ‘Comm. Crit. on N. T.’ ii. 324.)

6. And ye became followers of us.] St. Paul is able to speak of his example as one to be imitated by all his spiritual children, and to which they were bound to conform (cf. Philippii. iii. 17, iv. 9). The manner in which they became imitators of the Lord is brought out in what follows: “joy amid suffering and affliction is the tertium comparationis.”

(Bp. Ellicott.)

7. So that ye were ensamples.] So A. V. rightly. (1) There is considerable authority both for singular and plural (τό ρήμα and τό ρήματα), the balance is in favour of Text. Rec. (ξ A, C), so most Fathers. Bp. Ellicott admits that the singular has “less external authority.” (The versions, however, are rather for it,—e. g. “ita ut facti sitis forma omnibus.” Vulg.). As to the usage and meaning—Τό ρήμα is a person or thing by which is prefigured that which, under the moulding influence of the Divine purpose, some other thing or person will be or ought to be. But the usage of the N. T. is that when this

8. So that we need not to speak anything, for they themselves show concerning us.] Their conversion, and corresponding change of character was known far and near. Those who might have rather been expected to hear of it from the agent in so great a change, come on their own account, and tell us without being led to it. [For this use
place your faith to Godward is spread abroad; so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God;

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.

of αὐτὸς cf. "I say not unto you that I will pray the Father for you; for the Father Himself (αὐτὸς γὰρ ὁ Πατὴρ) loveth you." St. John xvi. 26, 27.

how ye turned once for all (ἐντευθενὼς) to Him who is God from the idols, i.e. of which ye know (ἀπὸ τῶν εἰδώλων), to make your life-long service to a God who is Living and Very God. On the distinction between αἰθίων, the true as opposed to the mendacious, and αἰθήσιος, the very as opposed to the shadowy—that in which the idea is realised, as opposed to that in which it is only partially exhibited, see infra on St. John. [On St. John i. 9, Mr. Keble observes, "True αἰθήσιος, opposed, not to the false, but to the shadowy and typical. A deep lesson attaches to the word in this application of it. Such phrases as "the True Light," "the True Bread," "the True Vine," in the Gospel, in St. Luke, "the True riches," and in the Epistle to the Hebrews, "the true Tabernacle," and "holy places, which are figures of the True," &c.—'Studia Sacra,' pp. 29, 30.] See also 2 Chron. xv. 3. (οὐ Θεῷ αἰθήσιον), LXX. Great words, as addressed at that date to men and women who might daily look upon Olympus! Cf. the antithesis with which S. John closes his First Epistle—'This is the Very God' (ὁ αἰθήσιος Θεὸς, v. 20). Then, with a sigh and a shudder, "Keep yourselves from the idols' (ἀπὸ τῶν εἰδώλων, v. 21). "There is nothing more to anything than the life thereof—and that in nothing so conspicuous as in the Godhead, where life and truth are so inseparable that there can be no living God but the true, no true God but the living. 'The Lord He is the true God, He is the living God.'" (Jerem. xi. 10; 1 Thessal. i. 9). Pearson on the Creed. Part I. 57. For Christ as the living God, see S. John v. 26, vi. 57.

10. And to wait for His Son from heaven.] ἀνευμένω—ἀνα in comp. signifies "tending to an end" (Bretsch. Lex. Man., p. 23); hence a notion of patience and confidence is implied in ἀνευμένω (Grimm, 'Lex. N. T.' p. 26). It has been said to be remarkable that St. Paul should here make "the essence of the Gospel consist, not in the belief in Christ, nor in taking up His life, but in his hope of His coming, again." But St. Paul does not give us the slightest ground for thinking that he is here defining "the essence of the Gospel." If he were so defining, surely the previous clause, "to continue doing service to a Living and Very God," would have a right to be included. With St. Paul, as with all great Christian thinkers, different aspects of the Gospel will acquire especial importance at different times. Lines and words will be more or less accentuated from time to time. The seasons of the Christian year are represented variously in St. Paul's writings. The breath of Advent-tide blows about the first Epistle to the Thessalonians. Bp. Ellicott beautifully says, "If joy be said to be the key-note of the Epistle to the Philippians (iii. 1), hope may truly be termed that of the present Epistle."—p. 14.

Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.] The translation of the A. V. is here doubtfully. There is no tinge either of the part participle (ἵνα ἐρμηκοῦν), or of the future in the second (ἐπιμένω). Both are present in the strictest sense. Each conveys a fixed principle of God's government. Each almost exactly corresponds to the heading of a chapter in Bishop Butler's 'Analogy'—"Jesus, who is ever delivering" expresses "the particular system of Christianity, the appointment of a Mediator." "The wrath which is ever coming," answers to the permanent "government of God by punishments"—"('Analogy,' Part II., chap. v.; Part I., chap. ii.). For "the wrath which is coming," cf. the terribly brief and emphatic words—"The wrath is coming." (Coloss. iii. 6).
I. THESSALONIANS. II. [v. 1–6.]

CHAPTER II.

1 In what manner the gospel was brought and preached to the Thessalonians, and in what sort they also received it. 2 A reason is rendered both why Saint Paul was so long absent from them, and also why he was so desirous to see them.

For yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain:

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allow of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloak of covetousness; God is witness:

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdened—1 Or, and authorised.

Chap. II.—2. we were bold in our God.] Compare this with “speaking boldly in the Name of the Lord.” (Acts ix. 29.)

with much contention.] Inward emotion and struggle, as well as outward, is included in ἀγωνία. Cf. Coloss. ii. 1.

3. For our exhortation.] (παρακλησία.) The whole Gospel preaching and message is so called, as permeated by, and living in, an atmosphere of gentle, soothing affection. Religion has been defined as “morality tinctured by emotion.” Much more truly is the whole Gospel a system “tinctured by emotion,” i.e. a παρακλησία. Hence two different shades of meaning are blended in the word. As addressed to the careless, slothful, tempted, fallen, it is exhortation; as addressed to the sad and seeking it is solace and comfort. It is the Gospel exhortation, which is never without a certain soothing, sympathetic sweetness.

was [is] not from deceit, nor from uncleanness, nor in guile.] The origin and source from which it was derived and uttered was not deception nor impurity (οὐκ ἐκ πλάσματι, οὐδὲ ἐκ ἀκαθαρσίας, “not from deceit, nor from uncleanness), nor was it conceived and cradled, living and moving, in a congenial atmosphere of guile” (ἐν δικαίωσι). A good illustration of “in guile” will be found in the complicated network of lying in which Jacob became entangled (Genesis xxvii. 19). “Many passages of the N. T. lead us to suppose that there existed in the age of the Apostles a connexion between the form of spirituality and licentiousness. Of this St. Paul declares his innocence, and with it he elsewhere upbraids the false teachers.” (Prof. Jowett, ‘St. Paul’s Epistles,’ I. 48.)

4. But according as we have been approved of God.] (δύνασθι δικαιομεθα.)

pleasing men.] On this word, and the notion of excessive obsequiousness which underlies it, see on Coloss. iii. 22.

Which approve.] The same word as that which occurs above at the beginning of the verse. The different translations of this word in the A. V. (“were allowed,” “tried”) are unfortunate.

5. “We did not use words such as flattery uses, or pretexts such as avarice uses” (Prof. Jowett). We did not allow ourselves to be drawn into an atmosphere of perpetual flattery in speech, nor into a long deception arising from self-seeking.

6. Nor were we seeking glory out of men as its source, nor from you, nor from others, as its particular occasion (εἰς ἀνθρώπων ... ἀγαθοδοσίας ... τέλος ... ἀγαθοδοσίας)—εἰ signifies “motion from within an object (intrinsic), ἀπό, motion from the surface of an object.” (Donaldson, ‘Gr. Gr.,’ 566.) It is true that the difference is often scarcely perceptible, but the prepositions are here used with an antithesis which is accentuated by the twice repeated ἀπό.—On vain-glory, with a direct quotation of this verse, see the powerful passage of St. Chrysost. ‘in Joann. Homil. iii., 5, 6.

a cloak of covetousness, God is witness.] Our habitual state, the condition under which we became, was not one of that perpetual pretext which covetousness is wont to use.” “A cloak of covetousness; for who shameth not to wear it outwardly? No man will profess himself covetous; but he will for very shame cast as hand- some a cloak over it as he can (frugality, some cloak or other), to hide the filthiness of it from sight of others. ‘God is witness.’ He called God to be his compurgator, which sure he would not do, nisi dignus
vindicem nadum." (Bp. Sanderson, Sermons, p. 410.)

7. But we were gentle among you. A. V., after Text. Rec. For ζητήσον many MSS. (8 B C D, κ.τ.λ.) read ζητήσον, "babes." The reading has so much external support that we would not venture to describe it, with Reiche, as "lectio absurda." But it might not be quite worthy of the Apostle's dignity so to speak of himself; nor, as it would appear, would such a use of the word 'babes' be at all in accordance with his practice. It would seem as if the spiritually infirm, the morally and intellectually weak, were thus described by St. Paul. (Cf. "teacher of babes," Rom. ii. 20; "babes in Christ," 1 Cor. iii. 14; "we, when we were babes," Galat. iv. 3; "that we be no more babes," Ephes. iv. 14; every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe," Hebrews vi. 13). "In malice be ye babes" (τῇ κατα παιδείᾳ, 1 Cor. xiv. 20), is indeed an exception; but the passage has a subtle play on the good and bad senses of childhood, on childishness and childlikeness. Besides the usage of the word, St. Paul, in the context, presents himself and the Thessalonians in an aspect which would precisely reverse, and by implication contradict (see Additional Note at end of chapter), the figure of babyhood applied to himself. They are the babes; he is the χαριστήρ, "mother, who is also a nurse." As a nurse cherisheth her children.]

8. being affectionately desirous of you. A. V. (See Additional Note at close of the chapter).

beacuse ye became dear to us.

9. For ye remember our toil and travail, working night and day. The narrative in the Acts, if very strictly pressed, might lead us to suppose that St. Paul had only spent at Thessalonica 27 days at the utmost, perhaps only 21 or 22 (Acts xvii. 1, 2, 10). To some the present passage has accordingly appeared to present considerable difficulties. The narrative in Acts, however, does not absolutely demand such narrow limits of time. And two circumstances seem to require its extension—the conversion of many idolaters (1 Thessal. i. 9), and his own express statement, that he remained long enough in Thessalonica to receive assistance, 'once and again' from Philip. (Philipp. iv. 16). (See Canon Cook, 'Acts of Apostles,' p. 205.) In any case, the spectacle of such an one as St. Paul so working, even for something less than a month, would be a memorable one—a thing to attract attention, and to be long remembered and discussed. This would especially be the case in the Church of Thessalonica. A shopkeeping and industrial community would instinctively know whether such an exhibition was a piece of charlatanism or a reality. Even if St. Paul's stay was cut short by a riot, they might be perfectly aware whether those few weeks were a fair representation of the frame and mould of his general life. It is certainly strange to think how far the idea which we instinctively form of the great Apostle, as one utterly absorbed in theological thought or seraphic devotion, when not employed in preaching or missionary work, must be modified by such a passage as this. The language here used about "working night and day" would show that in Thessalonica, at least, one unbroken day in the week only could be undividedly given to directly Apostolic labour. It is vain to conjecture how much time may have been at his disposal upon the other days of the week. It has been added to the list of St. Paul's difficulties that he thus worked manually "at an age when the bodily frame refuses to perform a new office." This is surely not so. Men of station and education among the Jews diligently learned trades. The same obligation has been imposed by custom upon persons even of royal birth in different nations and countries. Eginhard tells us that Charlemagne had his sons taught mechanic trades, his daughters spinning and weaving. Each member of the Prussian Royal Family, at the present time, is apprenticed, and enters into a guild of tradesmen. St. Paul's motives in continuing to work were three: (1) independence, the being able to take what has been ingeniously called "a lay position"; (2) example (2 Thess. iii. 8, 9); (3) charity, having something to give in alms (Acts xx. 34).
I. THESSALONIANS. II. [v. 11—15.

blameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe:
11 As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father doth his children,
12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.
13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.
14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God which in Judæa are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews:
15 Who both killed the Lord hearing (preached word) from us, which is yet a word of God (παρακλητοῦτες λόγος ἀπὸς παρ’ ἡμῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ) ("verbum auctoritatis Dei."—Vulg.), ye accepted, not a word of man, but, as it is truly, a word of God."

10. to you that believe] This is accused of being "without emphasis," "a pointless word." Is it not rather very pointed? 'For you that believe,'—although it may not always have seemed so to others.
11, 12. (1) exhorted; (2) comforted; (3) charged. (1) παρακλητοῦτες; (2) παραμυθομένους; (3) μαρτυρομένων. Exhorting, comforting, testifying. Cramer (quoted by Bp. Ellicott). This somewhat difficult passage is thus translated by Bp. Ellicott. "Even as you know how in regard of every one of you we did so, as a father towards his own children: exhorting you and encouraging you, and testifying that ye should walk worthy of God." (Bp. Ellicott, 'Epp. to Thess.' p. 145.)

b') kingdom and glory] (ἡ τοῦ βασιλείας καὶ κυρίου.) The article refers to both substantives, and the pronoun is most emphatic, "that which is at once the kingdom and glory of His own Self." "By so accepting it, they believed it ultimately upon the testimony of God, immediately upon the testimony of St. Paul (Peanon on Creed, Article 1, p. 19.), cf. 2 Thess. i. 10"—The gen. signifies whose subject, not whose author is God.

His kingdom.] The Christians, dragged from Jason's house, were charged before the politarchs of 'I Thessalonica, with "doing contrary to the decrees of Caesar, saying that there was a different King, Jesus" (Acts xvii. 2). It has been inferred that St. Paul gave peculiar prominence to this aspect of our Lord's offices—to His kingdom—in teaching at Thessalonica. This verse and 2 Thessalonians i. 5, have been appealed to in confirmation. But these Epistles give little support to the idea. The conception of the Kingdom is not so prominent in either of these letters, as, e.g., in 1 Corinthians or Galatians. It is scarcely warrantable then to find in these two verses any special illustration of the history (Acts xvii. 11), or of the prophecy of the Man of Sin (2 Thess. ii.).

13. That when ye received a word of

14. became followers.] Imitators.

of your own countrymen] συμφώνησαν. The unconverted Jews in Thessalonica, of whose envy and violence we are told so vividly by St. Luke (Acts xvii. 5, 11, 13)—the Jewish inhabitants of Macedonia, more especially of Thessalonica.

15. killed the Lord Jesus.] The title "the Lord" here is not simply one of usual reverence. There is an undertone of horror, indignation, and realization of their guilt in it. "They killed the Lord Jesus,"—Him, who as their Master, they were bound to serve. The title is an addition to their guilt; cf. 1 Cor. ii. 8.

and their own prophets.] Several uncial manuscripts (κ, Α, Β, Δ) and modern critics (Lachm., followed by Prof. Jowett, Tischendorf, Bp. Ellicott) omit the θεόν in τούς θεοὺς προφήτας of the Text. Rec. But the word is not without good external attestation, and it adds much force to the Apostle's argument here. (1) It shows, the reckless sanguinary unbelief of the Jews in murdering the prophets. Why, these prophets, the flower and glory of their race, were their very own! (2) It adds peculiar vividness to the parallel presented by the Thessalonian Christians, who were persecuted by their own brethren and fellow-countrymen. v. 14). Two reasons may have led to its omission. It might have seemed something derogatory to the prophets to be described as peculiarly and exclusively Jewish. It has also been suggested that a scruple
I. THESSALONIANS. II.

Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

might have occurred to the scribe as to the correctness in Greek of ἔσος thus used (Reiche). For expression cf. τις . . . ὡς αὐτοῦ προφήτης, Titus i. 12; for thought, cf. S. Matt. v. 12, xxiii. 31. [Tertullian accuses Marcion of having interpolated "their own" here, to suit his peculiar doctrine. Such charges were too often made without evidence. If Marcion, or some one else, who held that the Old Testament prophets had nothing to do with Christians, had interpolated the word, it would not have been received into so many orthodox books.]


*Note the *ἐχον*—they *obased* *us* by persecution.

*they please not God, and are contrary to all men.* ἔσος, the subjective negative; they are of a class of whom we may conceive that they are not pleasing to God. St. Paul had had but too many opportunities of seeing the bearing of his countrymen to the rest of the world, and the opinion entertained of them. Alternately fiercely credulous (credat Judeus apostles) and fiercely incredulous, wanting in flexibility, urbanity, refinement, kindness (ad fontes solos deducere vespas); their furious spirit of riot, their savage-repulsive nationality (adversus omnes alios hostile odium, Tacit. Hist. v. 3), their bitter and insolent contempt, presented itself to St. Paul almost as it did to Juvenal and Tacitus.

16. Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved.] This, in the Apostle’s thought, is a very special instance of their "adversus omnes alios hostile odium." to fill up their sins.] (εἰς τὸ ἀναπληρώσασθαι.) "Object and result seem to be blended together in the εἰς; a double necessity in themselves, and in the course of events meeting in one" (Prof. Jowett). For the thought, as well as the language cf. ὁμοίως ἀναπληρώσασθαι αἱ ἡμεῖς κ.λ. The sins of the Amorites are not yet filled up." (Gen. xv. 16, LXX.)

always.] "Before, at the time of, and after Christ" (Prof. Jowett.).

but the wrath is come upon them.] On "the wrath," cf. supra on 1 Thess. i. 10; Coloss. iii. 6.

to the uttermost.] εἰς τὸν ἅμα has three possible meanings: (1) Even to the end of anything, e.g. of sufferings (St. Matt. x. 22, 24; St. Mark xiii. 13). (2) At last (St. Luke xvii. 5; St. John xiii. 1). (3) So as to bring in the end, i.e. utter destruction, (ὅποιος "would not destroy bim altogether," 2 Chron. xii. 3; τῆς ἄργους "until they had utterly destroyed them all," 2 Chron. xxxii. 7), "as interrim, ita ut intereat; funibilis, prorsus." (Ἀπολλονισμὸς εἰς τὸν, Amos ix. 8.) See Grimm, 'Lex. N. T. Brettscbn. 'Lex. Man." s.v. τὸν. That bitter end! ("frustris exitus," Beng.). This Epistle was probably written at the close of A.D. 52, or the beginning of A.D. 53, in the early months of St. Paul’s stay of a year and a half at Corinth (Acts xviii. 11). About four years before, at the Paschal feast, a terrible riot occurred, in which, some historians say, 30,000 Jews were slain. This passage has been adduced as evidence that the Epistle was written after the siege of Jerusalem. But the language of "ex post facto" prophecy would have been more definite and more amplified. These brief words have the large generality, the indefinite horror and grandeur, of a true prophetic burden.

"The Jews, for stoning the prophet—but most of all for crucifying the Son of God—brought blood-guiltiness, not only upon themselves (St. Matthew xxvii. 25). The wrath of God, therefore, coming upon them to the uttermost, and abiding upon their posterity even to this day, wherever they still remain, scattered almost everywhere." (Bishop Sanderson, Sermon, p. 190.)

17. being taken from you.] ἀπομειληθεῖς ὑμῶν. Bp. Ellicott happily remarks, "In this expressive comparison the ἀπόλις (reiterated before the pronoun) serves to mark the idea of separation, and the term ὑμών, ὑμῶν, the feeling of desolation and bereavement which the separation involved." [No idea, either of orphanhood or of childlessness is necessarily implied.] Bp. Ellicott well suggests "having been torn from you," as the translation ("desolate a nobis ad tempus bora"), Vulg.).

18. There is an agent as personal as the will of man. "We willed to have come unto you, but Satan hindered us."
18 Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but Satan hindered us.
19 For what is our hope, or joy,
or crown of rejoicing? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming?
20 For ye are our glory and joy.

He is often the real factor in history, acting through wicked men, when his name is not mentioned (see e.g. Acts xvii. 13). The passage is dogmatically imported as a "dictum probans" for the personality of Satan.

19. or crown of rejoicing.] (See Additional Note at end of the chapter.)
at His coming.] "His hope extends even to that." (Bengel).

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 7, 8, 19.

7. Prof. Jowett here (as usual) follows Lachmann. He considers that the "confusion which it occasions in the image is rather in favour of its genuineness than otherwise, as such confusions occur elsewhere." It is, indeed, true that we do not always find a pedantic and elaborate accuracy in all the details of St. Paul's metaphor; but self-contradiction is something more than "confusion." The two instances given from the present Epistle are surely unhappy, to say the least. (1) Thess. v. 3-4, where he reads "the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief (κλεπτης) in the night," v. 2: "that that day shall overtake you as thieves." (κλεπτας, v. 4.) But the Text Rec. has, in all probability, the right reading in v. 4, "as a thief" (κλεπτης). (2) προσωπων and προσόψω (1 Thess. ii. 7). But here is no "confusion" of metaphor—only a very slightly varied shade of meaning in the two words, if, indeed, that. It may be added that προσωπον would seem to be a word peculiarly appropriate to parental tenderness; it is cognate to πνεος, εικων. [πνεος (cognate cum πνεος, εικων) patrum proprium est.

. . . πανω τις εις πνεος δεσ. Hom. Odys. ii. 47.

Herod. ii. 4. 1.—πνεος.—Reiche, 'Com. Crit.' ii. p. 325, note 4.)

It should be added that the Vulgate translates, "facti sumus parvuli in medio vestrum, tanquam si nutrix foetum filios suos" (Cod. Amiat.). If this reading is accepted after all, we may quote the words of the eloquent Bishop of Orleans. "The preacher, after the example of St. Paul, makes himself all to all, accommodates himself to them, sometimes even has something of the bright gaiety of an infant (j'étais même comme un enfant, tanquam parvulus), or of the tenderness of a nursing mother." (‘Entretiens sur la Précéd. Pop.’ p. 159.)

8. The word ἵμαρσμα of the Text. Rec. appears as ἵμαρσμα in a great number of MSS. (κ A, B, D, E, F, G.) No doubt ἵμαρσμα, with such a weight of attestation, must have been the reading. But it seems certain that ἵμαρσμα is never found in Greek. It is not quite to the point here to appeal to St. Paul's occasional habit of coining words. A critic has observed, in speaking of one of St. Paul's coinages, "Whichever of the two words (παραβολουσμα, or παραβολουσμα, Philipp. ii. 30) St. Paul may have written, there is no dispute among scholars that he first invented it; it is quite clear that he did the same thing in other cases also. But we may be sure that either word was formed fairly, according to the general rules of the Greek language, which St. Paul religiously observes, even when moulding new terms out of old." (Reiche, 'Comm. Crit.' ii. 223.) If the derivation given by some were correct (from ἵμαος and ετώ, to tawne or aetacie, "interweaving ourselves, as it were, with you," "connecting ourselves with your lives," the word should have a different form (ὁμηρισθαι, Winer, title ii. 4) and should govern a dativus, not, as here, a genitivus. Reiche concludes his able argument by the position that ἵμαρσμα need not be an exclusively poetical word, and that the other form must have been taken down wrongly from a peculiarity of pronunciation or by a slip of the pen.

19. (στέφανος.) Some eminent Biblical critics have drawn a distinction, invariable, as they consider, between στέφανος and διάδημα: the first being ever the "chaplet of victory," the latter "the diadem of royalty." It may, however, be seriously questioned, with the LXX before us, whether it is not used by St. Paul simply with the idea of ornament or dignity, without any notion of victory. It is so far from being the case that στέφανος is never used of "royal diadem," that in the LXX it constantly stands for βασιλικ, crown royal. The same mean-
CHAPTER III.

1. Saint Paul testifieth his great love to the Thessalonians, partly by sending Timothy unto them to strengthen and comfort them: partly by rejoicing in their well doing: 10 and partly by prayer for them, and desiring a safe coming unto them.

WHEREFORE when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone;
2 And sent Timotheus, our brother, and minister of God, and our fellowlabourer in the gospel of

is suffused with the sadness which abides after a farewell.

at Athens alone.] alone, standing forcibly last. Upon the departure of Timothy, Paul and Silvanus felt themselves to be indeed alone. "Alone in London" has become a proverb. But there was something more to one like St. Paul in a place like Athens, the city which was so beautiful, but so far from God. Note that it is a mistake to suppose (with the subscription, Theod. &c.) that St. Paul wrote this Epistle from Athens. The expressions in this verse neither prove that St. Paul wrote from thence, nor indicate in what circumstances he wrote. He only confirms what he had said of his anxious desire to visit them (1 Thess. ii. 18), by expressing to the Thessalonians that even during his stay at Athens he had supremely desired to see them again, and to hear tidings of them. (See Wieseler, 'Chron. de Apost.' pp. 241, 257; Reithmayer, 'Introduct. Sac. Canon.' (French transl. p. 200).

our brother, and minister of God (διάκονος), and our fellow-labourer in the gospel

1 When David takes the king's crown from the Ammonite monarch, ἐδέχθη τὸν στέφανον τοῦ βασιλέως. (2 Sam. xii. 30). In a great psalm of Messiah's royalty "Thou hast placed upon his head a crown, στέφανον ἐν λιθωτί τιμῶν" (Ps. xvi. 11). So of Mordecai's royal state, Esther viii. 15. Cf. Zech. vi. 11, 14.
2 στέφανον ἐπὶ ἀκανθῶν, St. Matt. xxvii. 29; δεδώσας στέφανον, St. Mark xv. 17; στέφανον ἐπὶ ἀκανθῶν, St. John xix. 2."
Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3. That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4. For verily, when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know.

5. For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

6. But now when Timotheus came of Christ.) A. V., Text. Rec., "our brother and fellow-worker with God (συνεργός) in the Gospel of Christ" Bp. Ellicot, Lachrm., and Fischendor. It is rather in favour of the Text. Rec. There is no useless redundancy about it, but a real point in each attribute of praise given to Timothy. "Our brother" indicates that they are his associates in a common faith, with an additional thought of fraternal affection. His being a "Minister of God" indicates his laborious office of preaching, and that with a special call and authority from God (cf. for junction of "brother" and "minister" what is said of Tychicus, Eph. vi. 21). To these two predicates is added yet another: "our fellow-labourer," our assistant in proclaiming the Gospel (cf. Philipp. ii. 25). This undistinguished praise is heaped upon Timothy, both to promote confidence in his messenger, and with a tender reference to the sacrifice which he was making in giving up the society of such a friend and helper.

2. 3. to comfort you concerning your faith; that no man should be moved.] A. V. Rather, "to exhort you on behalf of your faith, that no man," k.r.a. (Bp. Ellicot). The construction is as follows: "to exhort you on behalf of your faith," (παρακαλεσαι ὑπὲρ τῆς πίστεως ὑμῶν), to recommend you the following course, viz., the not yielding to the idea of any of you being shaken. (See Note at end of the chapter.)

3. That no man should be moved.] (μὴ διατηρησίαν.) This verb literally means "to wag the tail"—hence (1) to flatter, or fawn upon; (2) to have the mind moved, whether in the direction of pleasure or of terror, in a manner unworthy of the dignity of Christian manhood.

for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.] "Yourself" without being told by me or by others. On this accented use of αὐτός, see note supra on 1 Thess. i. 9. Why did they know this? Because St. Paul had told them of Christ's saying. (St. John xvi. 33.)

appointed thereunto.] Kρίμα with εἰς and accusative of the end designated, signifies destined and fixed by the counsel of God (cf. "This child is set for;" piously destined to bring about (St. Luke ii. 14). While it may be true that the Apostle was speaking with special reference to himself (Est.), it should yet be remembered that affection is, so to speak, the Christian's natural condition. ("Let all Christians hear this."—Theophyl. in loc.) "The Gospel is the covenant of the Cross" (Hamm.). It is the Saviour's promise (St. John xvi. 33). When He addressed St. Paul through Ananias, He told His servant not how great things he was to do, but how much to suffer (Acts ix. 16). It is, according to the Apostle, the perpetual law of His kingdom; it is put in the form of a maxim and a quotation that "through many tribulations it is morally necessary for us to enter into the kingdom of God." (Acts xiv. 22; cf. 2 Tim. iii. 12.) Temporal prosperity is the blessing of the old Covenant. Yet "the pencil of the Holy Ghost laboureth" in describing the sorrows rather than the joys of Job, and the Psalter is a manual for sorrowers (see Job xvi.; Lamentat. iii. 1-33, k.r.a.). Cornel. à Lap. quotes a noble passage from Seneca; ("Ecce, par Deo dignus vir fortis cum malā fortunā compositus; ecce, spectaculum Dei dignum. Dicant hi ergo, dignissimi sumus Deo in quibus experiretur quantum humana natura pati posset.") But, surely, with his self-consciousness and pride in the grandeur of human endurance, Seneca affords rather a contrast to, than an illustration of, St. Paul.

4. For... we told you before that we should suffer tribulation.] There is something prophetic in being in possession of a great general law, like that at the close of ver. 3. To this he probably refers in "for we told you before" rather than to particular troubles and persecutions. They did, however, come, and that speedily (Acts xvii. 4, 5-13).

5. For this cause, when I could no longer forbear.] The Apostle resumes with the opening words of ver. 1, "Wherefore when we could no longer forbear."

the tempter.] ὁ παράδεισος, Satan (supra, ii. 18). The same title is given to him by St. Matthew (iv. 3).

our labour be in vain.] "It is a sad thing to lose spiritual labour."
from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you:

7 Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith:
8 For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.
9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God;
10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you.
12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we do toward you:
13 To the end he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

and brought us the good tidings of your faith and love. (See εὐαγγελισμόν ἡμᾶς τῆς πίστεως καὶ τῆς ὀψίν μοι) εὐαγγελίζεται, is a "magnificent participle" (as Bengel says), not without a reference to the "good news." (See εὐαγγελισμόν δικαιοσύνην, Ps. xli. 9 (LXX.: ἡ ἄμνηστία).

"Thy righteousness aloud, Good tidings of great joy I tell."—(Keble.)

8. For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.] For now we live indeed, "nunc sentimus nos vivere," expressive of the highest pleasure. "We live," it is matter of infinite joy to us" (Hammond); cf. St. John xiv. 19, and "your heart shall live for ever," Ps. xxii. 26; Ps. cxix. 77, and St. Augustine, "Enarrat." Contrast "I die daily." 1 Cor. xvi. 31. "O what a tender heart he had, who yearned over his children with such affection that he could say, 'We live, if ye stand fast in the Lord'" (St. Anselm).

10. Night and day. This is not mere hyperbole (cf. 2 Tim. i. 3). In the Psalms, "night is a great chapter, to which David often recurs" (Joseph de Maistre); see Ps. iv. 4, xvii. 3, xlii. 3, 8, lxxvii. 2, 6, cxix. 52.

and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?] Supply the deficiencies (or "lacking measures," Bp. Eliott) of your faith; cf. on Coloss. i. 24. This is quite consistent with the account in the Acts of St. Paul's comparatively brief stay at Thessalonica, which would have prevented the full instruction of the young church (Acts xvii. 1-10).

11. God Himself.] He, our God, and Father (ἀδερφὸς δέ σε ὅθε ν καὶ πατήρ ἡμῶν). It is beautiful to note through these Epistles in how many chapters the strain of exhortation is gently stirred by the sigh of prayer (cf. 1 Thess. iii. 11, v. 23; 2 Thess. i. 11, ii. 16, iii. 5-16).

and our Lord Jesus Christ.] It is important to notice, in this earliest of the Apostolic Epistles, that prayer and aspiration are naturally and spontaneously directed to Jesus by St. Paul. There is no foundation for any such statement as that "truly primitive and Apostolic prayer is invariably to God through Christ." The "may He direct" belongs to "our Lord Jesus Christ," as well as to "our God and Father."

direct our way; σαεριθώνου, optative,—"make straight" (Hammond). The singular verb here is certainly remarkable, preceded by two subjects—"God Himself," and "our Lord Jesus Christ." Precisely the same feature recurs in "He our Lord Jesus Christ and God our Father comfort your hearts" 2 Thess. ii. 17. The Epistle which stands first in order of time, is a manual of prayer to Christ—see also 2 Thess. iii. 16. He prayer was abundantly granted (Acts xx. 1, 3; 1 Tim. i. 1). On the doxological bearing of this, see Introduction. In the word "direct" there is an underlying notion of taking obstacles out of the way—by sea (Grimm, s. v."

A favourable speed
Ruffle thy mirror'd mast, and lead
Through prosperous floods."

(Tennyson.)

—by land, "fair adventure" befalling them.

13. But you may the Lord make to increase and abound.] The word 'you' stands emphatically at the beginning of this sentence; more emphatically, when we remember the immediately previous words (καὶ πάντα ὑμῶν ἐπάθει ἡμᾶς. ὑπέρ ὑμῶν δὲ ἐν κ. πάνω καὶ προσεύχων.) I pray that He may smooth the way which we desire to take to You. But you—whatever
comes of us, whether our way be made straight to you, or not—may He make you increase and abound!

increase and abound.] "Nearly synonymous. The former signifies spiritual enlargement, the second spiritual abundance, and has more of a superlative meaning" (Bp. Ellicott, p. 47).

13. Before God, even our Father.] Before Him who is our God and Father.

with all His saints] More literally, "the saints of Him" (τῶν ἱεροτοῦ αὐτοῦ). They are looked upon as emphatically His (cf. the words of Ananias, τοῖς ἱεροτοῦ σου, Acts ix. 13). On this verse à Lap. well says, "The Apostle, full of the Spirit, here piles together much which was suggested by his affection, and is not solicitous about words, but leaves some to be understood or passes over them in silence."

ADDITIONAL NOTE on vv. 2, 3.

2, 3. παρακαλέσας ... τὸ μυθίω σωτηρία, where παρακάλεω governs τὸ with the infin. as an accusative objective. Παρακαλέω, in the sense of admonish, exhort, recommend, has a double accus. of person and thing in N. T. (cf. St. Luke iii. 18; St. Mark v. 23, 17; Acts viii. 31; 1 Tim. vi. 2; Titus ii. 13). The infin. with art., is often equivalent to a substantive, even when other words are added (so Schott, Winer, Reiche). The reading τὸ μυθίω σωτηρία of the Text. Recept. seems indefensible in every way. Lachm. ingeniously conjectures μυθίω σωτηρία, thus keeping exactly all the letters. The meaning of σωτηρία is given by the lexicographers as δεδομένως γελοῖον (connect. with δαίμονα, "to feel nauseated.")

CHAPTER IV.

1. He exhorteth them to go on forward in all manner of godliness, 5 to live holy and justly, 9 to love one another, 11 and quietly to follow their own business: 13 and last of all to sorrow moderately for the dead. 15 And unto this last exhortation is annexed a brief description of the resurrection, and second coming of Christ to judgment.

1 Or, re-quest. 1 Or, be-seech.

FURTHERMORE then we (be-seech you, brethren, and) ex-

hort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

2. For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus.

3. For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:

CHAP. IV.—1. We beseech you.] (ἐρωτόμενον in classical Greek signifies ask questions. The best reading of this verse is:"

"τα καθὼς παρακάλεσεν παρὰ ἠμῶν τὸ τῶν διὶ ἤμας πεπεπατῶν καὶ ἀρίστηκεν Θεῷ, καθὼς καὶ περιπατέας, ἵνα περιπατέηται 

(Tischendorf. So Bp. Ellicott.)

This seems to give the following meaning:

"We beseech you (even as ye have received from this letter, viz., how you are bound to keep walking and pleasing God), even as indeed ye do keep walking, that ye would abound more and more." With his gentle, inimitable tact, St. Paul assumes and implies that they were actually walking in the right way. "He does not simply exhort them to walk thus, but to abound more and more. When he presses progress upon them, he hints that they are on the road; for he only makes progress who has begun to walk. Summarily, this is to be their case: to make progress in the doctrine which they have received" (Calvin). The word περιποιήταται has a comparative significance.

2. what commandments.] The Apostle employs this word somewhat frequently to the Thessalonians (inf. v. ii. 2; Thess. iii. 4, 6, 10, 13). To Timothy he uses it himself (1 Tim. i. 18, vi. 13), and bids him freely use it to others (1 Tim. i. 5, iv. 11, v. 7, vi. 17). It would seem that when writing directly on affairs connected with the management of the Church he freely commands. His very tenderness is majestic.

It is strange to note M. Renan's perpetual vacillation and self-contradiction on this subject—constantly within a few pages—e.g., "Paul makes his authority felt with a tone of superiority which shocks us," p. 236; "He was the first to repel all which could have looked like mastery," St. Paul, p. 238. See notes on Philemon, v. 8 and v. 21.

by the Lord Jesus.] "He means this; the
4. That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour;

5. Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

6. That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter.

For sins of the flesh, as eating into the very heart of Gentile social life, see Acts xv. 19, 20.

*fornication.* More emphatic in original, *"the fornication,"* sc. that which you see all around you.

4. to possess his vessel.] "to get himself (στίγματος) his own vessel" (Sp. Elliot). It has been much debated whether the vessel here is (1) his own wife, or (2) his own body. In favour of (1) are, (a) the natural meaning of στίγματος; (b) the opposition of 'his own' to the fornication just spoken of; (c) the fraud and over-reaching done to another ('his brother'). [This, however, would apply equally to wrong done by seduction or the like.]; (d) "vessel" seems to have become a common and understood Jewish equivalent for wife (see Schoettgen on v. 6). [The idea is in Proverbs v. 15. The word is not used, however, by LXX.] (e) the language of St. Peter ("unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel") 1 St. Peter iii. 7. (2) Body, on the other hand, is the common interpretation, and that perhaps which suggests itself to most readers. It is a natural metaphor. Cicero speaks of the body as "vos et receptaculum animi." St. Barnabas calls the Body of Jesus "the vessel of the Spirit." Others refer to 2 Cor. iv. 7. Bengel and Estius point to 1 Sam. xxi. 5. (στίγματος) ("the vessels of the young men"). It may be doubted, however, whether εκείνη has the supposed meaning. There is perhaps some such metaphor in ἡ δύσσω, see Gesen. "Lex." 1400.] The great objections to the view which interprets "vessel" as "wife" are—(a) that the Apostle might seem to enjoin marriage upon all; (b) that the further words, "in sanctification," &c., "not in the lust," &c., would seem unsuitable [yet the fearful abuses of heathendom rather weaken this objection].

6. *which know not God.* Subjective negative "μὴ," of whom we conceive as not knowing God." Ignorance of God is the fountain of impurity, cf. Rom. i. 34. "Look at the purity of the sky, and let a loathing for impurity take hold upon thee," cries Bengel.

6. Another aspect of impurity is here given—"the wrong done to one's brother. The force is well expressed: "that no man should craftily compass and circumvent his brother to obtain his fleshly lusts." (*Necess.
because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.

8 He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly love

Doct. and Erudition for any Christian Man;' quoted by Hammond.)

defraud. [μετατηρέω.] The word in classical Greek is simply "to obtain more," and hence "to excel." In the LXX the ethical idea is added of "obtaining more than is just" (Ezekiel xxii. 27; Habakkuk ii. 9). This is invariable in the N. T. St. Jerome has pointed out strikingly the sort of avarice that there is in adultery. The A.V. is here unfortunate. Many readers substitute an illogical warning against dishonesty in general for a specific and powerful exhortation against sin of impurity. A less important inaccuracy in the translation of the words εἰ τῷ παραγινόμεθα, will be found in 2 Corinth. vii. 11.

in any matter.] Certainly not to be translated as in A. V.; but "in the matter," i.e. of which I am speaking; "getting out of him more than we should ever get."" The Lord is the avenger concerning all such.] The Lord—Christ—is specifically referred to as the Judge.

as we moreover forewarned you, see, and solemnly affirmed.] The last word seems to have the implied sense of "witness, with interposed invocation of God and man," which is frequently expressed. (1 Tim. v. 21; 2 Tim. ii. 14, iv. 1; see Grimm, 'Clav. N. T.' s.v.) The peculiar solemnity of the Apostle's language, and the implied adjuration arise, no doubt, from the plains view of moral impurity taken in a Gentile community.

unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.] Rather, "God did not call us" (1) for uncleanness, but (sub.)—so that we should be) in holiness." (1) For, εἰρ_block unto, of aim or end in view (as in Gal. v. 13. (2) "In holiness" the εἰ of medium, contexture, and surrounding conditions of life (Winer, 'Gr. Gr.' pt. iii. § xlvii. p. 412; cf. p. 436).

8. therefore.] Wherefore then (Bp. Ellicott) should stand at the beginning of the sentence. The inference is logical. If God has so called us, then to reject is to reject God.

be that despiseth.] What, or whom? Four answers have been given. (1) All that has been mentioned from ver. 1, "all which I have here taught" (sc. his exhortation to their continued abundance in good, ver. 1; his commands, given by the influence of Jesus Himself, ver. 2; God's will, their sanctification, in abstaining from fornication, ver. 5; the wedded relation, with the judgment of Christ, ver. 6; God's call, ver. 7). (2) "A man" understood—"he who despiseth me, a man thus teaching, really despises, not a man, but God." (3) St. Paul's "commands," ver. 3. (4) The "calling," with its purpose mentioned just above, ver. 8. The choice would seem to lie between (1) and (4). The last is probably the most obvious and the most logical, while (1) would seem best to answer to the solemn and sustained elevation of the whole passage ("Qui fecit spermis," Vulg.). See Note at end of chapter.

not man.] No doubt, with an undertone of implied reference to himself individually, but used generally.

despieth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.}

that God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.] It has been much discussed whether the participle here should be in the present or past (βιονωρ, or διωκα). It has been conjectured that the former reading may have had its origin in a dogmatic scruple about the latter. The past might seem to restrict the effusion of the Holy Spirit to the moment when it was poured upon the Apostles, or when the Thessalonians received it at their Baptism. But the truth of the continual work, the evergiving of the Blessed Spirit, is not touched in the slightest degree by the past participle, "who hath given," which is the true reading. The Apostle was only thinking of, and only appealed to, the first great act of God in the spiritual order, in the past gift of the Holy Ghost to those who believed and were baptized. The continuous bestowal of the Spirit in the souls of the faithful is not denied, but rather assumed. See the Introduction for the bearing of this text upon Baptism.

who hath also, in addition to His calling us in holiness.

his holy Spirit.] The intensely and unmistakably Personal use of "his Holy Spirit" here (τὸ Πνεῦμα αὐτοῦ τὸ ἅγιον) is a further confirmation of the reading "who gave." The Apostle thinks and speaks, not so much of the continual giving of the gifts of the Holy Ghost, as of that Gift which is the Holy Ghost Himself. The gift of Him who is not only the Sanctifier of men, but the very Living Sanctity of God, enhances the guilt of those who repudiate the Apostle's teaching upon purity. One passage not often, perhaps,
ye need not that I write unto you: for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another.

10 And indeed ye do it toward all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more;

11 And that ye study to be quiet,
and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you;

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing.

13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning the consistency of the verse with Our Lord's teaching, see Chrysost. on St. John vi. 27, Homil. XLIV.] St. Paul is addressing a population largely composed of laborious workmen and mechanics. He enters into their spirit completely. In this passage a series of ideas, which were foreign to the thought of the old Greek world, but which are the very life of modern progress, find their sanction in the New Test. (See Introduction to this Epistle.) Careful application to trade; judicious economy; honour and self-respect, founded upon the labour which makes the hands hard and horny; manly independence; are recognised in these two verses. There is an appeal to the sense of industrial honour in the lofty word "being" and in the half-proud freedom of "having need of no man" (rather than nothing, A.V.). It was so understood by St. Jerome. "They are sharply censured because they go round idly from house to house, expecting food from others, while they try to make themselves agreeable to this person and that (πρωτοδίκη), and lounge about reporting what is going on here and there." (Comm. in Galat. I. ii. Cap. 11.)

13. We would not have you to be ignorant.] A formula somewhat frequently used by St. Paul to call attention to a new subject just introduced. (Rom. i. 23, xi. 25; 1 Cor. x. 1, xii. 1; 2 Cor. i. 8.) The link of transition here, the "root below the stream," is very tender and beautiful. The paragraph just concluded (vv. 9, 12) treats of that brotherly love which was a part of the new spiritual life in Christ. The dead are not forgotten by Christian hearts. Christian "brotherly love" includes love for, and thought of, those who sleep in Jesus. This is indicated by the very order and sequence of this Epistle.

concerning them which are asleep.] "Them that are sleeping," Bp. Ellicott, who reads κοιμηθεμένων after A, B, &c., with Lachm., Jowett, &c.). It is probably better to translate "them that are fallen (or have fallen) asleep" and to read the perfect participle (κοιμηθεμένων) with the Text. Rec. (1) The verb, frequently used of the sleep of the faithful departed—some fourteen times in the New Test. (see Bruder's 'Concord.' p. 500)—is once only used in the present, and then historically (1 Cor. xi. 30). "The sacred writers, comparing by a beautiful euphemism the dead with those that sleep, constantly use the present, theor., or the pfr., excepting one rather obscure pas-
them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.

14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus wi... God bring with him.

15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming
of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep.

16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

which pervades another compound of λείμω (For καταλείμενος in the pathetic sense of “leaving behind, alone in the world,” see supra on iii. 1). This would be in subtle harmony with the object which St. Paul had in view. The fear which the Thessalonians had for their beloved ones was, lest they might have suffered some loss. They pitied them because they were taken. By this twice-repeated word, the pathetic refrain of this wonderful dirge (vv. 15, 17) St. Paul seems to say—Not they are to be pitied. Rather we who are left over, left without them in the world. If there is any leaving out in the case, it is we who are left out, not they. As to the present participle—the Lord’s Advent ever brings a present tense to the Apostle’s lips. (See St. Peter’s language, Acts x. 42.) “He is (αὐτὸς θεός ὁ ἀναμετέρος ... κρίνεται) the God-ordained judge.”

shall in no wise go before those that have been laid to sleep. In no wise (the double negative); go before (προχορεύειν). On the aor. conj. for future in time uncertain and indefinite, see Winer, ‘Gr. Gr.’ §1x. Hammond’s rendering, “shall have no advantage of,” seems too decidedly pronounced, though such a shade of thought probably underlies the word. “We shall not only not reign in glory without them who are laid to sleep, but we shall not even go before them to meet Christ.” (Est.) We shall not anticipate those who have fallen asleep; i.e. shall not arrive more quickly to communion with Christ, nor have an earlier enjoyment of beatitude; we shall not have the advantage of them by one golden hour of Christ’s Presence.

16. the Lord himself.] He, the Lord. There is great dignity in the words (αὐτὸς θεός Κύριος). Cf. 2 Thess. ii. 16.

shall descend from heaven.] Better to retain the order in the original: “With a shout, with Archangel’s voice, and with trump of God, shall descend from heaven.”

with.] in, of accompaniment, concomitance. a shout.] With a cry of command ringing forth, like that of the general of a great army.

I. THESAULONIANS. IV.

17 Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

with the trump of God.] Not Hebraistic, “God’s trumpet, therefore great;” (Bengel), but the trumpet pertaining to God, and used in God’s service. (Cf. “harps of God,” Apoc. xv. 2.) We may think of Exod. xix. 6; Ps. xlvii. 5 (“the great trumpet’”); Isai. xxvii. 13; Zechar. ix. 14. There is no reference to the Jewish festival use of trumpets (Numb. x. 1; xxxiv. 3; Josh. ii. 1). We can only point to St. Paul’s assertion, with its most emphatic repetition—“at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound (1 Cor. xv. 52). St. Matt. xxiv. 11, is perhaps not exactly parallel. (See Bishop Ellicott’s compressed and reverential note, p. 66.)

“Tuba mirum spargens sonum Per sepulchra regionum Coteg omnes ante Thronum.”

(See note at the end of the chapter.)

the dead in Christ shall rise first.] St. Paul only deals here with the resurrection of the just, as in 1 Cor. xv.—first, “the first act of the last great drama.”

17. we which are alive. Winer lays it down that the qualification annexed to the “dead” in the last clause—“in Christ”—is carried on by the contrast to this; so that “we which are living” (sub. “in Christ”) answers to “the dead in Christ” (v. 16). (Winer, ‘Gr. Gr.’ p. iii. ss. xx. p. 147.) On the words, “which are alive and remain,” see note supra, v. 15.

shall be caught up in clouds.] “By some inner power, innate in the regenerate”—(Estius).

catch away (same words in Acts viii. 3–9). “The Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip”—“The Apostle seems to declare that some at the Lord’s Advent will not die; but, being found alive, will suddenly be changed into the immortality which is given to the other saints, and caught away in clouds with them. Often as I have thought over these words, I could never form any other opinion of their meaning.” St. August. ‘Ad tertiam fest. Dulcitii.’ This may bear upon the translations of Enoch and Elijah. (St. Hieron. Epist. 61; Pearson on ‘Creed,’ Art. xi. p. 588.)

to meet the Lord in the air.] The Apostle does not speak of either earth or heaven as the first meeting-place of the living and dead.
with their Lord, but of the air. The air is not to be their abiding-place. Rather St. Paul elsewhere appears to sanction the Jewish idea of the air being an am¬
pe space tenanted by evil spirits. (See Meyer on Ephes. ii. 2.) There seems to be nothing in the pregnant brevity of this awful passage against our under-
standing that the godly, absolved, are rapt away above as assessors of the Judgment (Psalm cxix. 9; 2 Cor. vi. 3, 6)—they in many clouds, He pre-eminent in one. Cf the plural “clouds,” St. Matt. xxiv. 30; xxvi. 64; St. Mark xiii. 26; xiv. 61; 1 Thess. iv. 17; with the singular, St. Luke xxii. 27. See also Acts i. 9, “a cloud received Him,” and “shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen Him go into Heaven.”—Ibid. v. 11.

18. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.] A little more than 300 years after the Epistle arrived at its destination, seven thousand people were put to death in the circus at Thessalonica, within three hours, by order of the Emperor Theodosius (A.D. 389). Of this hideous massacre one

most touching anecdote is told (St. Ambros. Ep. 51). Is it fanciful to suppose that these words, addressed to those who had lived in the same spot by the great Apostle of the Gentiles, may have had peculiar power to comfort the bereaved people of Thessalonica? For these facts, and for the magnificent episode of the exclusion of Theodosius from the Church at Milan by St. Ambrose, see Sozomen. vii. 25, and the beautiful allusion in Chrysost. “In Matt. Homil. 8, 8, 6. One other historical association, in this in-
stance a contrast, may be noted. Cicero wrote one letter—tender and pathetic, in spite of the almost hysterical vehemence of passionate grief by which it is disfigured—to those who were dearest to him. Of his hopes of re-union on earth he can only say, with fatalistic resignation, “Hec non sunt in manu nostris.” The last word of that letter of de-
spair is the name of the city from which it was dated—Thessalonica. (C. Tullius, L. Sertvius. Tulliolae, et Ciceroi suis.” Cic. “Epist. ad Fam.” xiv. 2).

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 8, 16.

8. ἀπερατοπ—or to render anything ἀπερατο—
the negative of that which is fixed and ordered (ἀπερατοπ). As applied to a thing, it is best rendered by some word expressing frustration or repudiation (cf. St. Luke vii. 30; Galat. ii. 21); as applied to a person, it expresses desipidal, contempt (see Grimm. ‘Glav. N. T.’ p. 9).

10. Of all the solemn associations con-
ected the verse, few can surpass the follow-
ing, recorded in many of the foreign papers of the day. At the earthquake of Manilla (1863), the cathedral fell upon the clergy and congregation. The mass of ruin overhead and around the doomed assemblage was kept for a time from crushing down upon them by some peculiarity of construction. Those outside were able to hear what

was going on in the church, without the slightest possibility of clearing away the ruins, or of aiding those within, upon whom the building must evidently fall before long. A low deep bass voice, doubtless that of the priest officiating, was heard uttering the words, “Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord.” As this sentence came forth, the multitude burst into a passion of tears, which was soon choked. For some deep groans issued from within, apparently wrung from the speaker by intense pain, and then the same voice spoke in a calm and even tone, as if addressing a congregation, and all heard the words, “The Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God, and the dead in Christ shall rise first.”

CHAPTER V.

1 He proceedeth in the former description of Christ’s coming to judgment, and saith divers precepts, and to conclude the epistle.

2 For yourselves know perfectly

BUT of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you.

1. ἀπερατο—lit. to render anything ἀπερατο—
the negative of that which is fixed and ordered (ἀπερατοπ). As applied to a thing, it is best rendered by some word expressing frustration or repudiation (cf. St. Luke vii. 30; Galat. ii. 21); as applied to a person, it expresses desipidal, contempt (see Grimm. ‘Glav. N. T.’ p. 9).

1, 2. ye have no need to be written to. For

yourselves know perfectly.) On ἀπερατο ὑπο cf. sup. on i. 9. It is important to see that the Apostle uses the special image of the thief in reference to the Second Advent, and assumes an accurate knowledge of the matter on their part. Even at this early period, at the time when the first Epistle of St. Paul was written, it was
that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace
and safety; then sudden destruction
cometh upon them, as travail upon
a woman with child; and they shall
not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in
darkness, that that day should over-
take you as a thief.

5 Ye are all the children of
light, and the children of the day:
we are not of the night, nor of
darkness.

6 Therefore let us not sleep, as do
others; but let us watch and be
sober.

7 For they that sleep sleep in the
night; and they that be drunken are
drunken in the night.

8 But let us, who are of the day,
be sober, putting on the breastplate
of faith and love; and for an helmet,
the hope of salvation.

9 For God hath not appointed us
to wrath, but to obtain salvation
by our Lord Jesus Christ,

10 Who died for us, that, whether
we wake or sleep, we should live
together with him.

grooved into Christian consciousness from the
word of Jesus — "The Thief cometh" (St.
Matt. xxiv. 43). The popular parabolic form
gave currency to the word and to the idea
(cf. Joel ii. 9).

by night.] For the connection of the Great
Advent with night, see again our Lord’s
teaching (St. Matt. xxv. 6; St. Luke xvi. 34).

3. when they shall say, Peace and safety.]
Apparently a reference to Ezekiel xiii. 10,
LXX. as travail, rather "the birth-throe" (q
αἶσθα). On the suddenness of the parousia as
illustrated by the suddenness of the pangs of
labour, see some striking sentences of Chrys-
sost. (‘Homil. in Joann. xxxv. 3).

4. that the day.] "That" is ecstatic, not
telic. It does not express purpose, but simply
consequence—"for the day to surprise you."
as a thief.] For reasons for preferring this
reading to the plural, "should overtake you
as thieves," see sup. on i. 8 (note 2).

5. Ye are all sons of light.] Cf. Ephes. v.
8. "Our very Baptism entitleth us thereunto,
which is the sacrament of our initiation,
whereby we are made children of God.
Whence, in the Greek fathers Baptism is
usually called an enlightenment, and persons
newly baptized newly-illuminated, and ὁ ἐν τοῖς φως ὁ
an officer in the Greek Church,
with many other phrases and expressions
borrowed from the same metaphor of light,
and applied in like matter to Baptism." (Bp.
Sanderson’s Sermons, p. 570.)

6. as . . . others.] (as the rest.) See
sup. on iv. 13.

7. For they that sleep sleep by night,
and they that be drunken are drunken by night.] It
would seem that the literal meaning is here
preferable. The sleep is a literal sleep, the
drunkenness a literal drunkenness. These two
things are samples of the whole line of feeling
and conduct of thoroughly indolent and dissi-
pated men, whose pleasure is in the darkness
and covert of the night. (See Schott’s note.) A
distinction has been made between (1)
"they that be drunken," and (2) "are
drunken"—as if (1) denoted the act (2) the
state or habit of drunkenness. But this dis-
 distinction seems very doubtful in itself; and the
absolute identity of "they that sleep, sleep,"
rather leads us to expect a like identity in a
sentence so antithetically balanced.

8. Having put on a breast-plate of faith
and love.] Faith, hope, and love appear in this
verse. It is interesting to trace in the breast-
plate and helmet the germ of the image so
magnificently expanded in Ephes. vi. 11, 17.
See also Rom. xiii. 12, 2 Cor. x. 4. (Cf. Isai.
lxx. 17, of which there is certainly a remi-

9. For God did not appoint us to
wrath.] The "for" follows next after
the word salvation at the close of the pre-
vious verse. "The hope of salvation—I
say deliberately salvation—because God ap-
pointed us to acquisition (or possession) of
salvation."

10. Through our Lord Jesus Christ, who
died for us.] (οἵτινες ἔπαυσ.) on our behalf,
and in our place. It is idle, with these words
of St. Paul’s earliest Epistle before us, to
speak of his subsequent exaggerated develop-
ments of soteriology.

that whethet we watch or sleep.] In
order that (iva), "the holy purpose of the
Lord’s redeeming death." (Bishop Fili-
cott.) This word "watch" was so popular a
motto of early Christian life—caught, as it was,
from the lips of Christ (St.
Mark xiii. 34, 35, 37)—that it took the
form of a name—Gregory. It has been said
that there are three sleeps for man—those of
nature, sin, and death; and three correspon-
Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as also ye do.

And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you;

And to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. And be at peace among yourselves.

dent awakenings—those of nature, righteousness, and life eternal (Est.). It is of the second that St. Paul here speaks. "Salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, who died for us with this purpose, in order that whether we keep life's long toilful watch, or fall asleep in what is called death, we should have our true life, together with (ἀμα σοῦ) Him."

—and edify the one the other.] "Edifying" is one of the metaphorical words which have passed into the language of Christianity from the lips of our Lord Himself. The foundation and progress of the Christian life is likened by Him to the process of building a house (cf. "the wise man who built (ἀκολούθησεν) his house," &c.—St. Matt. vii. 24, seq.; cf. also ἐδεικνύει διμόλυνον, St. Luke vi. 1, 8; ἠθεματίκε, St. Matt. vii. 25, with τεθυμάζομεν, Coloss. i. 21; θεματικέ, 1 St. Pet. v. 10), and the parable of the improvident builder (St. Luke xiv. 28). Christ said of His Church, "I will edify my Church" (St. Matt. xiv. 18). Thus the Christian Church and the Christian soul are alike compared to a building or temple. That building will not be finished out (ἐσαρακτικά) until Christ comes. Those who by sympathy, word, or deed, assist the growth of Christian wisdom, feeling, or life, are conceived of as builders, helping others or themselves to supply some part for the construction of the spiritual edifice, and are said to edify. (Cf. 1 Cor. viii. 1, xiv. 3, 4; Coloss. ii. 7, &c.)

the one the other.] (eis τὸν εἶνα) Used in a markedly reciprocal statement (cf. 1 Cor. iv. 6). It is said to be an Aramaism (see Winer, Part III. § 27, p. 186). "Each one of you each other whom he meets."

even as also ye are doing.] Cf. the words 'as ye do indeed keep walking,' supra, iv. 1.

It is like the old English naval direction to the man at the helm to continue steering exactly in the same point—adopted as a motto by a great Admiral. "Thus"—

12. Introduces a marked ecclesiastical element—"to know them which are presiding over you in the Lord." It may be going too far to say, with some, that as the important city of Thessalonica would have churches connected with, and in a sense under it, these Epistles were practically in some degree addressed to all the Macedonian churches, and that these (ἐπισκόποι, prefects, presidents) may refer to, or include, Bishops. But, at all events, at this early period, St. Paul distinctly recognises a teaching ministry, an order of men separated from the rest of the congregation. St. Paul's exposition happily expresses the blended feelings of (1) respectful esteem, and (2) affectionate love. (See infra on Philemon, v. 8, and v. 21.) (1) "to esteem them very highly," literally the Vulgate's 'superabundanter,' abundantly and something more. (2) "in love." "Reverencing them abundantly" (Hammond), holding them at the same time in love for their work's sake—a conduct and feeling compounded of duty and affection. It is characteristic that St. Paul does not touch the question of bad and unfaithful ministers. And this circumstance may have some weight in leading us to question the view which finds a severe censure in the message to Archippus. (Coloss. iv. 17. See Philemon Introd. and note on v. 2.) Writing later to a ruler of the Church, he does not shrink from doing so (1 Tim. iii. 6, 10, v. 1, 19, 20–22; κ.τ.λ.). [See further remarks in the Introduction to this Epistle.]

It may not be without interest to mention that one of the principal writers of the Greek Church upon the Ministry came from Thessalonica in the 8th century. (See the treatise of Symeon, Archbishop of Thessalonica, περί τῶν χειροτονίων, in Morinus, 'De Sacris Ordinationibus,' pp. 127–191.) It should be observed that the position of the article (τοὺς κοιμητας καὶ πρώτομνους καὶ νοτοτούρους) shows that these three attributes belong to the Ministry as one class, and cannot be parcelled out between different forms or divisions of it.

13. be at peace among yourselves.] For the Text. Rec. (εἰς εἰς ἑαυτοὺς) some, not without a certain amount of external authority (M, D) read ἑαυτοῖς, ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, "esteem and love those who are over you—at the least, and lowest however, be at peace with them." But (1) there is a serious objection to a mode of expression which can only be justified as a Hebraism, but which is quite inconsistent with Hebrew usage. For ἰσίσις is joined with ἦς, and Ἑ, never with ὂ (ἐν), just as St. Paul says μετὰ πάντων εἰπον ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, Rom. xii. 18 (Pelt.). (2) The whole context supplies a stronger argument against this view. The Apostle is now passing on to duties, not of a special, but of a general kind ("toward all men"—"to all men," iv. 14, 15). He is easily led on here
14. Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.

15. See that none render evil for evil unto any man; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all men.

16. Rejoice evermore.

17. Pray without ceasing.

In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

from the special duty of respect and affection to spiritual pastors and masters to the general duty of mutual Christian peacefulness. It is a short step from contempt and dislike of pastors to all the bitter evils of party spirit.

be at peace.] Keep peace. The same exhortation is in many Epistles (Rom. xii. 18; 1 Cor. i. 10, sqq. &c.). The exhortation here is not carried out into detail; probably no special quarrels had yet arisen in the Thessalonian Church. It has not been sufficiently noted that here again (as supra, v. 3) we have a distinct reference to, and quotation of, one of the words of our Lord (εἰ προφητεύετε ἐν δύναμις, St. Mark ix. 50). It is something more than a reminiscence of that saying, and another of the many links which connect the language of St. Paul with the recorded teaching of our Lord.

14. (1) comfort (2) the feeble-minded (μακρυμνίσχετε τοὺς ὀλγοψέφους). (1.) "to offer words to any one, specially for the purpose of tranquillizing and soothing." "Have a word for," "speak them fair"—consolo or encourage (Bishop Elicott). (2) The feeble-minded. "Littleness" is implied. (See Isaiah xxxv. 4. LXX.) The word occurs here only in the N.T., and is almost unknown in classical Greek. The student of Aristotle will instinctively look upon it as implying the contradictory of the μεγάλοψιχος, with his high estimate of himself, "just contempt of others, and freedom from excessive elation or depression (Ethic. Nic." iv. cap. iii.). The opposite of the 'high-souled man' is called by Aristotle the μηκρόφυσιος. (ibid. 12.) The passage (iv. 13, sqq.) might well lead us to suppose that, as the Thessalonian Christians had a tenderer and almost feminine susceptibility about those whom they had loved and lost, so they would be likely also to have some of the rest of the characteristics which usually accompany that beautiful weakness. (We may perhaps refer to the "chief women not a few" among St. Paul's Thessalonian converts (Acts xvii. 4.).) The morbid conscientiousness, the form of self-torture, known to spiritual writers as scrupulosity, would be well expressed by the word "little-minded." It has been said (and this verse given as one of the references), "The assembled Church, at least the spiritual, reprimanded those in fault, and consolated those who were cast down, and performed the part of a skilful director versed in the mysteries of the human heart" (Renan, 'St. Paul,' p. 240). Surely St. Paul's language here does not lead us to think of what was to be done by the Church officially, but of private intercourse, pastoral or general.

15. Professor Jowett observes on this verse, that "it is not strictly true to say that Christianity alone, or first, forbade to return evil for evil." (Gibbon quotes from Isocrates with the same purpose. But Isocrates, after all, only takes the negative side. "Do not to others what would enrage yourself.") But Professor Jowett clearly and eloquently makes two claims for the Gospel: (1) That it brought into the practical principle the spirit of gentle good-will, until it embraced even enemies. (2) That it made a speculative philosophical refinement a rule of life for all.

16. Rejoice evermore.] Note (1) that Christianity unlocks the whole of man's nature, and makes a claim upon his affections and emotions as well as upon his external conduct. (2) Christian joy cannot merely be another word for high spirits. These we cannot command. A Christian is no Stoic, no hero cut out of marble. Nay, his Master's broken heart and bitter cry find a counterpart in him. Indeed, one peculiar source of sorrow belongs to a Christian as such—the painful sense of sin and disproportion between his standard and his attainments. A Christian is not a man who has no sin, but one in whom sin does not rule; and for this remaining sin he has special sorrow. Yet, by one of the antinomies which lie at the root of the Christian life, he has joy in sin forgiven, in the Spirit given, in the means of grace, in the hope of glory. Joy is the sun of the Epistle to the Philippians particularly; it sparkles like light on the crest of every wave of feeling in it (cf. Phil. i. 18; ii. 1, 19, 28; iii. 1, iv. 1-4). See Barrow's noble Sermon on this text beginning with the exclamation, "O good Apostle, how acceptable rules dost thou prescribe!" (Sermon XLIII.)

17. Pray without ceasing.] The ideal of prayer is the silent reference of all our actions to God. In two of his most admirable Ser-
19 Quench not the Spirit.
20 Despise not prophesyings.
21 Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.

22 Abstain from all appearance of evil.
23 And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray

mons Barrow shows what ἀδιάλειπτος implies: (1) habitual inclination, a spirit of supplication (Zechariah xii. 10); (2) vigilant attendance upon prayer as a main purpose of life; (3) embracing all fit opportunities for prayer; (4) not desisting until our prayers are answered; (5) interlacing devout ejaculations with all our occupations and all occurrences; (6) appointing certain times, and carefully keeping them—like “the continual sacrifice” cf. Dan. viii. 11; Nehem. x. 53; with Heb. xii. 15; (7) observation of times ordained by authority, or settled by custom (‘Sermons on Several Occasions,’ vi. vii.).

18. for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus toward you. For this—this, referring to the three preceding exhortations. This is your highest ideal; this is God's will in Christ—eon perpetual joy, unfailling prayer, unbroken and universal thanksgiving.

19. Quench not the Spirit.] A reference to the fire of Pentecost, and to that kindled in the Christian's spirit. “Not doing anything to damp the fire of the Holy Ghost” (Keble, ‘Studia Sacra,’ p. 233). Chrysostom interweaves this verse with a reference to the parable of the ten virgins (S. Matt. xx. 5-8): “That flame which we once receive by the grace of the Spirit, if we will, we shall make stronger, if we will we shall lose. It is extinguished when it has not oil; when it is blown upon by a rough blast; when it is compressed together. When we pour on water in addition, how can the light be kindled again? Then shall we depart with the much smoke witnessing against us that we had lamps and extinguished them; for where there was smoke there must have been flame, now quenched.” (In Joann. Homil. L.) “Wherever the Spirit is, He burns; therefore He is not to be quenched in ourselves or others.” (Bengel.) “The Spirit does excite, he does not compel. He incites and moves, but by soft calls and gentle whispers, such as may be resisted, and often are resisted; otherwise, how come we to hear of “grieving the Holy Spirit of God” (Ephes. iv. 30), and of “quenching the Spirit?” (Waterland, ‘Works,’ v. 641).

20. 21. Despise not prophesyings, but bring all things to the test.] Among the noble gifts of the Spirit in 1 Cor. xii. 10, the critical hold their place. It has been said on the verse before us that the true meaning is not “make a rational enquiry into all things. The organ of discernment was of another and of a spiritual kind.” (Prof. Jowett.) Surely we have no right to say so altogether. The spiritual teaching included the power of a sanctified common sense. The Apostolic seems to say, “Despise not prophesyings, yet do not give way to a pious, but feeble enthusiasm. Make a religious, but grave and thorough examination, by such tests as you possess.” (Cf. for similar advice, 1 Cor. xii. 10; xiv. 29; 1 John iv. 1; 1 Tim. iv. 1.) It has been conjectured that the pregnant particle—“but” —here so full of meaning, was omitted by many copyists because they thought it seemed strange and irreverent to subject prophecies to human criticism and examination.

22. bold fast that which is good.] “After due care in examining, naturally follow wisdom in choosing, and firmness in retaining.” (Waterland. See his Sermons upon this text, ‘Works,’ v. 655-666.)

23. But may He, the God of Peace, sanctify you wholly.] Again, the magnificent αὐτός, cf. supra, iii. 11.

and whole be your spirit and soul and body, kept without blame in the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.] Spirit, soul, and body. It is easy to say that St. Paul is “not writing a treatise upon the soul, but pouring forth a prayer from the very depths of his heart.” But that language like this should not be closely analysed, or even “that the age in which St. Paul lived would not admit of his writing with any great accuracy about the soul.” Those who believe that Scripture contains a revelation think otherwise, and have always studied this verse with peculiar care. Christian writers naturally compare Gen. ii. 7. St. Paul severs the entire man into three parts, spirit, soul, body. So Moses seems to give (1) dust, corresponding to body (םשה), (2) נפש, to soul, (3) נשמת הדגה, to spirit. It is a grave objection, however, that this word is never that used for spirit, which would be רוח. Of the three divisions of St. Paul, Bp. Bull and others have given this explanation. (1) Body, material organiza-
God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

24. Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.

25. Brethren, pray for us.

26. Greet all the brethren with an holy kiss.

27. I charge you by the Lord that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren.

28. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.
I. THESSALONIANS. V.

this Epistle. In the Jewish Church, Moses and the Prophets were constantly read (St. Luke iv. 16; Acts xii. 27, xv. 21). The injunction here reminds us of the blessing in Apoc. i. 3, and it is remarkable that it is given with such impressive solemnity ("I charge you by the Lord Jesus Christ"). Surely it suggests the duty of reading passages of the New Test. in Church, and ever the guilt of neglecting it, or of keeping it from the people. (Bp. Wordsworth in loc.) This is one of the passages which give us an idea of the great authority attributed to Apostolic Epistles from the earliest times. They were carried by the Apostle's delegates (like the 皮革retb of the synagogues); they were held to have equal dogmatic authority with the Apostle himself; they were read out, and finally deposited among the archives of the Church; they were taken out on solemn days and read as sacred documents, with a perpetual teaching (Dionys. Corinth. in Euseb. 'H. E.' iv. 23). Thus the epistolary form of literature was peculiarly the shape into which Apostolic thought was thrown—a form well adapted to the wants of the time and to the temperament and character of St. Paul. (See Renan, 'St. Paul,' p. 223 sqq.)

ADDITIONAL NOTE on v. 23.

23. According to Jewish views, the soul in this division might stand for will. Rabbis assigned this meaning to ἐνθεό in Gen. xxvii. 8; Deut. xxii. 14; 2 Chron. xxviii. 9; Ps. xxvii. 13; xlii. 2. It is also used for understanding, thinking faculty (Deut. iv. 9; 1 Sam. xx. 4; Prov. xix. 2; Ps. cxxxix. 14; Lamentat. iii. 20). If this be so we shall have (1) body, including flesh, for carnal and creature appetites; (2) soul, for will, faculty of choice; (3) spirit, or upper soul, with true reason, the gift of the Spirit. See the lengthened and interesting quotations in Hammond, 'N. T.' p. 674, and cf. St. Hieron. Quest. xl. ad Helvid.
THE SECOND EPISODE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE

THESSALONIANS.

CHAPTER I.

1 Saint Paul certified them of the good opinion
which he had of their faith, love, and patience: 11
and thereunto used divers reasons for the
comforting of them in persecution, whereof
the chiefest is taken from the righteous judg-
ment of God.

PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timo-
theus, unto the church of the
Thessalonians in God our Father
and the Lord Jesus Christ:

2 Grace unto you, and peace,
from God our Father and the Lord
Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thank God
always for you, brethren, as it is
meet, because that your faith growth
exceedingly, and the charity of every
one of you all toward each other
aboundeth;

4 So that we ourselves glory in
you in the churches of God for your
patience and faith in all your per-
secutions and tribulations that ye
endure:

5 Which is a manifest token of
the righteous judgment of God, that
ye may be counted worthy of the
kingdom of God, for which ye also
suffer:

6 Seeing it is a righteous thing
with God to recompense tribulation
to them that trouble you;

7 And to you who are troubled
rest with us, when the Lord Jesus
shall be revealed from heaven with
his mighty angels,

8 In flaming fire taking vengeance
on them that know not God, and
that obey not the gospel of our Lord
Jesus Christ:

9 Who shall be punished with

CHAP. I.—1, 2. See supra, i Thess. i. 1, 2.

We are bound.] ἤτοιδεῖτε, morally obliged;
a favourite word of St. John. See infra. ii. 13.
as it is meet] "Many pleonastic expres-
sions of St. Paul, it has been said, border on
tautology; but with him tautology is often
emphasis" (Prof. Jowett). There is, how-
ever, no tautology here. It is our bounden
duty, meet and right, because we have a
worthy cause.

we ourselves.] Spontaneously, on our own
account (cf. 1 Thess. i. 9).

5. a manifest token.] In apposition with
what precedes. Their faith and patience was
the token.

6. tribute to them that trouble you;
and to you who are troubled.] (τοῖς ἑδροτοις
ὑμῶν ἤδρον καὶ ὑμῖν τοῖς ἑδροτοις.) This
is a prominent instance of one of the main
faults of our A.V.—various renderings of
the same word or words in the same context.

and hence the introduction of unreal dis-
tinctions which have no foundation in the
original, with the manifold train of sophisms
of ignorance. To them that are afflicting
you affliction, and to you that are being
afflicted (or, who bear your afflictions),
rest.

rest.] Rest is appropriately opposed to
affliction as relaxation to pressure, the loosening
to the tightening grasp. The same anti-
thesis in 2 Cor. vii. 5, viii. 13. "Relaxati,
sc. a pressuāre hujus vitæ."—(Est.)

8. In flaming fire] (See note at close of
chapter.)

(1) that know not God, and (2) obey not the
Gospel] (1) refers to Gentiles; (2) to Jews.

obey not the gospel] In the Pauline Epistles
faith is frequently called obedience. Here,
faith in objective Revelation seems to be re-
cognised. No soul believes the super-
natural mysteries revealed by God, unless by a
everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

10. When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

11. Wherefore also we pray always

submission of his will be brings his intellectual faculties into captivity to the obedience of Christ (2 Cor. x. 5). Intellectual submission is a part of Christian trial and Christian obedience (St. August. ‘de G. et Lib. Arbit.’ c. 3).

9. What (οὖν) Quippe qui, “insasmuch as they.”

shall suffer as punishment eternal destruction.” “Eternal destruction;” Theophyl. not unnaturally asks, “How then do the Origenists make for themselves a myth of an end of the punishment?—Eternal is what Paul calls it.” On the whole question, see Bp. Ellicott’s references, ‘Destiny of Creature,’ Sermon iv. For the word ζωον, see note at the close of commentary upon this epistle.

10. (1) Saints. (2) All them that believe. Saints, in modern language, is generally used as equivalent to the exceptionally holy, those who enjoy an ecclesiastical patent of spiritual nobility. It has often been pointed out that it is not so in St. Paul’s Epistles generally; yet here, perhaps, there is a trace of the modern shade of thought. The “all,” coupled with “them that believed,” might seem to hint that the word “believed” has a more extensive, the word “saint” a more intensive, meaning. (See Bengel.)

because our testimony among you was believed.” These words are explanatory of “believed.” To be admired in all those who believed, made their act of faith. Yes, even so, “advised” for assuredly that witness of ours, stretching on even unto you in the far west, was believed.

11. fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodness. (παραδείγματος καθαρούτης.) Four different explanations of these words have been given: (1) “All gladness in goodness,” both being theirs; (2) “All gladness of goodness,” i.e. all God’s goodness wherein He delights—both being His; (3) “All His good pleasure in our goodness”—the first being His, the second theirs (“the loving will of God, that we should do all good.” (Theophyl.)); (4) “All the good pleasure of His goodness,” both being God’s. Whichever modification be adopted, the explanation (1) must be set aside, as εὐδοκία, according to Scripture usage, is always God’s “good pleasure.”

12. St. Paul states the final end of his prayer—(“that our God may count you worthy of the calling, and fulfill all good pleasure of Divine goodness, and faith’s work in power”—to be twofold: (1) That the graces of the Thessalonians should cause Christ’s name to be glorified, by its being seen that Christ was the author of them. (“When men see true Christians they will say—Christ is so good that His people can die for Him, so powerful that He can strengthen them with patience.”—Theophyl. We might say, so good that they can die for Him, so strong that they can live for Him.) (2) As a
II. Thessalonians II.

[734. v. 1—2.]

secondary end, that they in time should be glorified in Christ, through Christ, now or hereafter. As the holiness of His people brings glory to Christ, so the glory of Christ makes them glorious. Thus the twofold end is secured: (1) Christ is glorified in them; (2) they are glorified in Christ. And, in order to take away all merit from man, he adds, “according to the grace of our God and Lord Jesus Christ” (see note at end of chapter), of Him who as God is the river of all free and glorious largess, and as Lord Jesus Christ has won it. All this mighty faith-work— with its twofold effect— (1) Christ’s name, Christ as manifested being glorified in them, (2) them being glorified in Him—comes from the free gift of Jesus, our God and Lord, not from ourselves. Note in “the name of our Lord Jesus Christ” here another instance of the word as denoting true personality. It is never used of qualities, only of persons (cf. St. Matt. xxviii. 20).

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 8, 12.

9. There is much difficulty in deciding here the almost equally supported readings in πυευς φλαμάδα (Text. Rec. with N, B, D) and εν φλαμάδε πυρός (with D, E, F, G). The Text. Rec. is preferred by Tischendorf and Reicke: Φλοίς πυρός is, indeed, commonest in Old Test., Exod. iii. 2 (where, however, readings vary); Ps. xcviii. 7; Isaiah xxix. 6, lxvi. 15; Dan. vii. 9; Joel ii. 5. It is almost universal in New Test. (Heb. i. 7; Acts vii. 2; Acts vii. 50 is doubtful.) In secular writers φ. is invariable; it is, therefore, more probable that scribes would change the rarer into the more common phrase. It was not unknown to Hellenists (Exod. iii. 2, in some copies cf. Ps. civ. 3; Lamentat. ii. 3; see also Samuel viii. 10, xlv. 26; Ps. Salom. xii. 5.) This later Hellenistic usage St. Paul might be likely to follow.

πυρ φλαμάδα (“fire of flame, i.e. fire, driving and spreading flame”) is also more difficult and Hebraic than φλοίς πυρός; flame of fire, scamma ignea.

12. κατά τὴν καρα τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν καὶ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. The most probable and natural interpretation is given in the note above. According to Granville Sharp’s well-known canon, the τοῦ would indicate the identity of the anarthrous κυρίου with the previous Θεοῦ to which it is joined by the conj. καί. Κύριος, however, often occurs like Θεός without the article, particularly when in gen. or preceding 1 X. (Rom. i. 7; 1 Cor. i. 1; Gal. i. 3; Eph. vi. 23; Phil. ii. 11; iii. 20), so that no certain inference can be drawn. (Winer, ‘Gr. Gr.’ part iii. § xiv. p. 136.)

CHAPTER II.

1. He will then to continue steadfast in the truth received: 3 that there shall be a departure from the faith, 9 and a discovery of an antichrist, before the day of the Lord come. 15 And therefore he rebukes his former exhortation, and prayeth for them.

NOW we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

2. That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by our gathering together unto him.] That which is spoken of in 1 Thess. iv. 17. There is, no doubt, a reference to the expression of our Lord—“Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.” St. Luke xvii. 37. The word itself means, (1) the act of congregating together in one spot—“I beseech you on behalf of the great hope of our being gathered together unto the Lord.” But (2) it also signifies the multitude, the congregation itself thus gathered (cf. Heb. x. 25; and especially the remarkable verse 2 Macc. ii. 7)—in which sense we should understand, “And for the honour of that universal gathering of all God’s people to Christ, of which we shall form part.”

1. by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him.] St. Paul here, probably, does not use an adjuviation (“by” —A. V.), nor indicate a fresh subject of discussion (“touching”—this would be περί, as in 1 Thess. iv. 9—13, v. 1), but ἐνθαρ. “I ask you, as an advocate for the truth concerning the Coming”—on behalf of the Advent—“as if pleading for the honour of the Day, that it might not be a cause of confusion in the Church.” (Professor Jowett.) “As the protecting champion fought over as well as before his friend, we find ἐνθαρ with gen. in the sense “on behalf of” (Donaldson, ‘Gr. Gram.’ § 13.) Above all, that the Church should not be committed to a mistake—cf. Ps. xcvi. 13; xcix. 5.
II. THESSALONIANS. II.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first,

speaks of the Day coming "as a thief," and how "sudden destruction cometh upon them." "This," says Hammond, "was mistaken: and the suddenness and unobservableness of it when it should come, interpreted to denote immediate instant approach of it at that time wherein he spake." ('N. T.', p. 679.) Their error was changing the warning of true prophecy, caught from the lips of Christ Himself (1 Thess. v. 3), into the fanatical cry "The Day of the Lord is on us" (2 Thess. ii. 2). This error was grounded upon three plausible arguments: (1) revelation by the Spirit—the Spirit of Prophecy; (2) teaching, probably alleged teaching, discourses and affirmations said to have for a basis others uttered by St. Paul himself; (3) misinterpretation of 1 Thess. v. 3, explaining ἐπιταγματίζοντες erroneously by ἐπιτάγετος—as though he had thus taught, either by word of mouth, or through an epistle, or both. He distinctly appeals to their own recollection of the whole tenor of his teaching; "when I was yet with you" (inf. v. 5). Their embracing any such teaching was, according to St. Paul, a mischievous and contemptible fanaticism—a "being quickly shaken from their own sober judgment.

8. Let no man deceive you] "St. Paul often admonisheth us, as if it were in our power if we would but use requisite care thereunto to prevent our being deceived; and as if it were our fault most if we did not prevent it. (Ephes. v. 6; Coloss. ii. 4, 8, 11; 2 Thessal. ii. 3.)" Bp. Sanderson's Sermons, pp. 3 and 5.

Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first. The A. V. supplies the substantive meaning rightly by the words in Italics—that day shall not come. See Additional Note.

a falling away] The falling away (ἡ ἀποστασία — "la grande Apostasie," Renan). The word is often applied to desertion of the true religion and true God (cf. ἀποστασιάσθησαι διδάσκαλου ἀπὸ Μουσέως, Acts xxii. 21; and ἐν τῇ ἀποστασίᾳ ἀπὸ Θεοῦ [Zechar, Heb. iii. 12].

the Man of Sin.) On the Man of Sin, see note at close of the chapter.

of sin.] In whom the principle of sin is so completely inherent, that it seems to take concrete form in, and to be inseparable from, him (gen. of "predominating quality"). There appears to have been a tendency to personification in the scriptural conception of sin from the very beginning (Gen. iv. 7. See

spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

2. With a view to your being not quickly shaken from your sober mind, nor yet be troubled.] Bp. Ellicott. "De ne pas vous monter trop promptement la tête, et de ne vous laisser effrayer." (Renan, 'Saint Paul,' p. 251.) "Suddenly shaken from that sense, understanding nothing of the Parousia which he had impressed upon them" (Hammond). [νοῦς means definite conviction, deliberate opinion, settled judgment, Rom. xv. 5; 1 Cor. i. 10; so Bretsch. Grimm understands it to denote faculty of considering things quietly, justly, and gravely. Estius paraphrases: "Be not quickly moved away from that doctrine upon the subject which ye hold in your mind as ye have received it from us."]

neither by (1) spirit, nor by (2) word, nor by (3) epistle, as addressed to you through us. (1) Supernatural impulse; (2) ordinary instruction; (3) cf. infra, v. 15; iii. 14. These passages show the high authority of Apostolic Epistles in the primitive Church (cf. 1 Thess. v. 27), and bear upon their position in the Canon of the New Testament. The Epistle was held to have an authority equal to that of the Apostle himself. It was to be read publicly in Church worship. (See M. Renan's interesting remarks on Epistles, in 'Saint Paul,' pp. 228, 229.)

to the effect that "the Day of the Lord is on us."] (ὡς ὅρις—the ὅρις of quotation—ἵνα ἀποταγήσῃ ἡ ἡμέρα τ. κ. x.) (The perf. part. of this verb elsewhere used as a grammatically equivalent to the present—Heb. ix. 9: cf. Rom. viii. 38; Gal. l. 4.) The expression is here very vivid, and denotes close propinquity. Spiritual impulse, ministerial teaching, Epistle forged as if coming to the Church through St. Paul, or else genuine Epistle misunderstood, produced this effect, that men cried—"the day of the Lord is upon us." The great importance of this passage will be seen in relation to the current view that the Apostles are fatally committed to an actual mistake upon the immediate propinquity of the Second Advent. This importance is increased by the fact that these Epistles are the very earliest extant writings of St. Paul. The Apostle, therefore, did not labour under an illusion, which was only removed by a prolonged experience. It is surely startling that precisely the same mistake appears to be made by M. Renan and other writers of his school at the present time, which was committed by the Thessalonians more than eighteen hundred years ago. In 1 Thess. (v. 1) St. Paul
and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

Additional Note at end of the chapter). The same almost personal conception of sin appears in our Lord’s teaching (S. John viii. 34), and runs through the whole of the Epistle to the Romans (v. 21; vi. 6, 12, 14; vii. 17, 20; cf. “the strength of sin,” 1 Cor. xv. 56).

be revealed.] Part of his elaborate parody of Christ. A veil is to be lifted, and he is to be seen. He has, like Christ, his apocalypse. the son of perdition.] (See S. John xvii. 12.) One by his crimes fitted for death, and sure to be destroyed. David calls the man who shall surely die כְּ֣שָׁרָם, “a son of death” (2 Sam. xii. 5). The Man of Sin is a very incarnation of “self-destructing evil.”

4. Who opposeth and exalteth himself ex-ceedingly.] “He that opposeth and exalteth himself.” The whole language here leads us to a person, an individual man, not to some spiritual power contrary to the Gospel, or to a long line of adversaries of Christ. The characteristic of “opposition” is literally satanic; but Chrysost. well observes, “Is this Satan? Not so in fact, but some one man who receives the full energy of Satan’s power.”

Against (not above, A.V., ἐν πάντας) every one that is called God or object of worship.] Commentators have naturally turned to the words in Daniel,—“and the King shall do according to his will, and he shall exalt himself and magnify himself above every God.” (xi. 36). S. Jerome’s exposition of that passage is worth attentive study. He speaks of the reference in it to Antichrist as being the common interpretation of Christendom. He by no means denies, but rather asserts a certain fulfilment in Antichrist Epiphanes. But he points to a principle of concentration and enlargement in the two great opposing figures which tower above all others upon the prophetic canvas, Christ and Antichrist. The prophets start from the conception of a human type of Christ; as they proceed they paint with bolder strokes upon an amplier scale, until the original starting-point of historical reality is lost in the boundless magnificence of the ideal. Thus the shape of Solomon in the 72nd Psalm passes into the grander ideal King who shall have dominion from sea to sea, before whom all kings shall fall down. There is a partial shadowing forth, an imperfect beginning, in Solomon of that which is fulfilled in Christ. “As therefore our Saviour has both Solomon, and others of old time, as a type of His coming—so Antichrist also, it is to be believed, rightly had the wicked king, Antiochus, who persecuted the saints, and defiled the temple, as his type.” (S. Hieron. ‘Comment. in Daniel. Proph.,’ tom. v. 711-718).

so that be [as God—these two words should be omitted] taketh his seat in the temple of God, showing himself off that be is God. “Goeth and taketh his seat” (εἰς τὸν ναὸν καθίσαι). The prep. connected with the verb “to take his seat” implies entrance into God’s House. See ‘Is the Papacy predicted?’ Bp. Wordsworth, pp. 4, 5. May it not imply entrance by an external and hostile influence? In the Temple of God (εἰς τὸν ναὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ) as distinguished from the Holy of Holies within, and from the mere Templecourts or enclosure which surrounded it (ἱερός). [The distinction between the two words is very fully given by Josephus. The whole pile of buildings was the ἱερός, and consisted of three ranges. The first or outer led to the second ἱερός, which consisted of halls or courts, from which there was an entrance into the Temple itself, consisting of two parts, the Holy and the Holy of Holies. This third range was the ναός.] It should be noticed that it is this word, meaning the ‘inner shrine,’ which S. Paul applies to Christians, collectively and singly. (1 Corinthians iv. 16, 17, vi. 19; 2 Corinthians vi. 16; Ephes. ii. 21; Joseph. ‘Antiq.,’ xv. 11; ‘De Bell. J.‘ v. 5, 8, vi. 4.) Expositors here have taken two different views: (1) Some suppose that S. Paul speaks of the actual temple at Jerusalem—whither as then standing—or as restored in the future (Ezek. xxxvii. 26); (2) Others (with Chrys.) take it “for the Christian Churches everywhere” (cf. Ephes. ii. 21).

showing himself off.] (ἀποδεικνύει τινὸς.) The word seems to be specially used of those who, after being designated by themselves or others to office, appeared before the people to show themselves. (ibid. v. 9.) (See Bretsch. s. v.).

The ambitious self-designation of the Man of Sin is indicated. Contrast the designation by God of Jesus (Ἰησοῦς τὸν Ναζαρηνὸν ἄνδρα ἀποδεικνυόμενον ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ, Acts ii. 22). “He will consummate all idolatry, by causing the world to believe that all worship whatsoever is abolished. He will contradict the true God by contradicting all Deity whatsoever. He will rivet all worship to Himself as being the perfect specimen of the independence of man.” (Edward Irving, ‘Morning Watch,’ iv. 357.)

or that is worshipped.] (εἰσιαγωγοῦ, “object
II. THESSALONIANS. II.

5 Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:

of reverence, "what is reverenced or worshipped.") It seems plausible to remark that the title of the Roman Emperor comes very near to this word (τοῦ Κασαρίου, cf. Augustus, Acts xxii. 25), and to conjecture that the Cæsarianism, which was politically the most conspicuous feature of Rome, may have been by St. Paul himself the chief evil of the world. (Cf. Daniel xi. 36, 38.) But this is at variance with the use of the word, Acts xxii. 23.

5. Remember you not that . . . I was wont to tell you.] One of the traditions, which passed into the thought and memory of the Church. St. John speaks in the same tone of Antichrist: "Ye have heard of Antichrist's solemn predestined coming" (1 St. John ii. 18).

6. The greatest of the Christian fathers held that the Roman Empire was the withholding power, and that St. Paul's reserve here was the result of prudence and charity. Thus St. Jerome says (qu. xi. ad. Algasiam), "If St. Paul had written openly and boldly 'that the Man of Sin would not come' until the Roman Empire was destroyed, a just cause of persecution would then appear to have been afforded against the Church in her infancy." St. Chrysostom also here says, "If St. Paul had said that the Roman Empire will soon be dissolved, the heathen would have destroyed him as a rebel and all the faithful with him, as persons who took up arms against the State. "But (adds Chrysostom in his Exposition) St. Paul means the Roman Empire. And when that shall have been taken away, then the Man of Sin will come. For as the power of Babylon was dissolved by the Persian Dynasty, and the Persian was supplanted by the Greek, and the Greek by the Roman, so the Roman will be dissolved by Antichrist, and Antichrist by Christ." (Quoted by Bp. Wordsworth.)

subat withholdeth.] (τὸ καριγιον.) Cf. the same word in the next verse, in the masculine (ὁ καριγιον, 'he who letteth,' A. V.). It is generally said that a bindrance of Antichrist is here spoken of; and it is argued by some that the hindrance may be regarded indifferently as a thing or a person, from the change of gender. This, however, is altogether a deduction of modern logic. The first may be merely the second viewed collectively and generally (the generalising neuter). The meaning of bindrance is also somewhat precarious. It is maintained, not without force, that the verb does not properly mean "withhold, let, hinder," but "hold fast, possess." (See Bengel, "Sunt qui interpretantur de obstinente imperio") See the discussion in Döllinger, 'First Age of the Church,' ii. 91, note.)

in order that he may be revealed.] God's purpose in the restraint, that he may be revealed in his own season—not before.

7. For the mystery of the lawlessness (sc. which I am about to describe) is already in working.] See the opposite "mystery of godliness" (1 Tim. iii. 16). Cf. for the presence of Antichrist, even in the primitive church, 1 St. John ii. 17; iv. 3. "Hidden in the womb of the age, the power of life is waiting to be quickened—a mystery still—as the believer's hidden life is a mystery." (Professor Jowett.)

lawlessness.] In contrast to the moral restraint implied in "withhold." The essential idea of ἀνοικία is sin as violation of law. Bp. Wordsworth considers that the chief difficulties of the verse are removed by bearing in mind that there should be no commix in the Greek after (ἀνοικία) "lawlessness," but that "only" is to be connected with "worketh inwardly" ("works inwardly only"), and that "now" is antithetical to "and then" (v. 8), and "now working inwardly," to "being hereafter revealed outwardly" (v. 8). (Is the Papacy predicted?) &c., p. 6.

B. that Wicked.] (ὁ ἀνοικός.) The lawless One) Illex, used by Plautus. (Like the Heb. הושע, δισθήσις, LXX, Isaiah xi. 4.)

sub om the Lord.] There is very considerable external authority for adding after Lord, Jesus (so A, D). The sacred names of our Lord are used as follows in this Epistle: (1) The Lord J. C., 2 Thess. i. 1; 2, 8, 12; ii. 1, 14, 16; iii. 6, 12, 18. (2) The Lord, 2 Thess. i. 9; ii. 2, 13; iii. 1, 3, 4, 5, 16. (3) The Lord Jesus, 2 Thess. i. 7, added for the sake of perspicuity. (In 2 Thess. i. 8-12, some omit 'Christ.')

with the breath of His mouth.] Cf. Ps. xxxii. 16; Isaiah xi. 4.

New Text.—Vol. III.
II. THESSALONIANS. II.

9 Even him, whose coming is after
the working of Satan with all power
and signs and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceivableness of
unrighteousness in them that perish;
because they received not the love
of the truth, that they might be saved.

11 And for this cause God shall
send them strong delusion, that they
should believe a lie:

12 That they all might be damned
who believed not the truth, but had
pleasure in unrighteousness.

13 But we are bound to give

with the brightness of his coming:] Illus-
trationes adventus sui (Vulg.). "The bright
appearance of the Advent is prior to, or,
at least, the first radiation from the Advent
itself." (Beng.) With these words cf. the
half-line of Milton, which so deeply impressed
the imagination of Wordsworth:

"Far off His coming shone."

It may be taken, however, not exactly as a
vivid picture of the full reality, but as imply-
ing that the mere appearing of His Parousia
will destroy the lawless one. "Coming"
(Ἐρχόμενος) in N. T. signifies (1) the First
Advent, with its saving light (2 Tim. i. 10);
(2) the glorious return (1 Tim. vi. 14; 2
Tim. iv. 8).

with all.] The "all" refers to all
the substantives—all power, all signs, all wonders.
So "lying" signifies power of lying, signs of
lying, wonders of lying. Note how many
words in these verses bring out the hellish
caricature of our Saviour—(ἀποκαλυφθη, v.
3, v. 6, v. 8; ματησθην, v. 7, ψαροστια, v. 9; 
and with δυναμεις, σημειας, τερασις, cf. the
σημειας, τερασις, δυναμεις of Jesus in Acts
ii. 22. Heb. ii. 10. The most exhaustive
enumeration of our Lord's miracles is
parodied.

in all deed of unrighteousness for them
that are perishing:] "The dat. implies
that the falsehood has a natural and
congenial effect on them." See Additional Note
at the end of the chapter.

11. God shall send them.] So A. V.; prefer-
able to "doth send." The latter is con-
sidered to be a vivid prophetic present, and
the present tenses in vv. 7, 9 are appealed to.
But vv. 7, 9, 10, are in sense almost paren-
thetic; and verse 11 is not connected with
them, but with verses 8, 12. (See Reiche,
' Comm. Crit.' in loc.)

Strong delusion] This fine and vigorous
phrase expresses the interpretation of G. cum.
—rather, however, "an inner working of
error"—nothing external, but something
which they bring upon, and feel within,
themselves. (Bp. Wordsworth, i. c. p. 7.)

that they should believe the lie.] Referring
to verse 9.

12. That they might be judged, all
collectively, who have not believed the truth, but
have taken their pleasure in the unrighteous-
ness (sc. of the Man of Sin). The condem-
nation of those who belong to the Man of
Sin is not because they have been deceived
intellectually, but because the deception by
which they are entangled has its life and
power in a corrupted will, which is attracted
by and results in the unrighteousness of
the anti-Christian system. "He exposes the tem-
per which makes people unbelievers, because
they are sinners." (Keble, 'Stud. S.', p. 235).

The most marked features in this passage,
verses 3—12, are these—(a) A caricature of
Christ; (b) A caricature of Christianity.

(a) A caricature, an exact counterpart and
mockery of Christ in the Man of Sin.
The Man of Sin has, like Christ,
1. An Ἀποκάλυψις (ἀποκαλυφθη, v. 3), cf.
verses 6—8.
2. A solemn coming upon the stage of
human history (ὃς, v. 3).
3. An Advent (ὁ ὅπωρωρια—v. 9).
4. Power, signs, wonders (v. 9).
5. Designation (v. 4).
6. A definitely appointed season of his own
(vοῦ ἐν τον θεον καιρον—v. 6).

(b) A caricature, a mockery and counter-
part of Christianity in the anti-Christian-
ity of the Man of Sin. As some of the leading
glories of Christ are studiously travestied in
the "lawless one," and described in lan-
guage which forces us to think of Christ; so
several of the leading features of the Chris-
tian system are powerfully travestied by imitative
anti-Christianity.

1. Anti-Christianity is a mystery (v. 7)
imitative of the mystery of godliness.
2. Anti-Christianity has an energy, an
inworking (τοῦ ματησθην ὅθεν ἐνεργεῖται, v. 7; 
ἐνεργον ποιημα, v. 11; cf. Ephes. ii. 2),
imitative of the energy, the inworking, of
the word of God (1 Thess. ii. 12; Heb. iv.
12), of God (Phil. ii. 13; Galat. ii. 8), of
the indwelling Spirit (Coloss. i. 29). "He
shall work in them by such an energy as that
of the Holy Ghost, who witnesseth in us
concerning God; not a mere apprehension,
but an inworking of error, a regeneration
into the faith of the lie." (Edward Irving,
'Morning Watch,' iv. 256, 259).
3. Anti-Christianity has a faith—a solemn
making of an act of faith—imitative of the
faith of Christians (v. 11).
II. THESSALONIANS. II.

thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:

14. Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15. Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

16. Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace,

17. Comfort your hearts, and establish you in every good word and work.

4. The words εἰκόνεως, εἰκόνια, are used of God's good pleasure in His sinless Son, and of His good-will to men (St. Matt. iii. 17; xii. 18; xvii. 5; St. Luke xii. 32; 1 Cor. i. 21; Galat. i. 15), or of the good-will of Christians in holiness and acts of love (1 Thess. ii. 8, κ. τ. λ.). The imitative "good pleasure" of anti-Christianity is in unrighteousness, as God is well-pleased in Christ, or God's servants in good (εἰκόνεως et της εἰκόνος, v. 13).

13. "Hath from the beginning." So A. V. rightly, reading ἄν' ἄρξης (not ἄρχησις "chosen you as a first-fruit"). ἄν' ἄρξης has much external authority. (N. A. D. E., κ. τ. λ.) The "from the beginning" (ab initio rerum) is quite in place here. While to some copyists it might appear difficult, it is quite in accordance with our Lord's lofty words (St. Matt. xxv. 34). On ἄν' ἄρξης, see note on 1 St. John i. 1.

chosen you.] The verb here is remarkable. Not as elsewhere (εἰκόνεως, but here alone for this idea εἰκόνω from αἰπόγας (Midd.) "to Himself." Cf. Deut. xxvi. 18 (LXX).

through sanctification of the Spirit."

"In (εἰκόνεως) sanctification" is the criterion of God's "choosing to Himself."

14.  whereabouts (εἰς δ., unto all which (i.e. choice to Himself from the beginning; salvation in spiritual sanctification; and belief in truth.

the obtaining of the glory of our Lord J. C.] There are three possible shades of meaning to be found in these words. (1) God hath chosen you for the purpose of an acquisition of glory to our Lord J. C. (2) For a glorious possession of our Lord. (3) Most probably as in A. V. (παρακάτωσις, acquisition, with gen. of things acquired; 1 Thess. v. 9. Grimm, 'Lex. N. T.').

15. ("Unconscious of what we should call logical inconsistence, he immediately adds, stand fast" (Prof. Jowett.).) "Standing fast," because God hath chosen us to Himself for the purpose of acquiring salvation, is, at once, logical and spiritual consistency.

the traditions which ye were taught, whether by word, or by our Epistle."

"God stands down to us by the Ministers of the Gospel. Tradition of this kind is a great benefit" (Bengel).

16. our Lord Jesus Christ himself.] Again the majestic αἰών—(αἰών ὁκ, κ. τ. λ. I. X.). "Our Lord Jesus Christ," cf. 1 Thess. iii. 16. Chrysostom invites the special attention of those who deny the co-equal Divinity of the Son, because He is named after the Father in the baptismal formula. Here He stands first.

"Consolation everlasting."

"A consolation reaching to the life that now is, and to that which is to come" (Prof. Jowett.).

17. Comfort your hearts.] Comfort (παρακάτωσις), singular and opt. Cf. the similar junction of "our Lord Jesus Christ," and "God the Father," with a verb in the singular 1 Thess. iii. 11. For the dogmatic bearing of these words—in which the Persons of the Son and the Father are distinguished, while the identity of their operation ad extra is declared—see Introduction.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on v. 3.

3. οἰκήματι (Gen. iv. 7) "sin couches"—where the feminine substantive is construed with a masculine participle, because it is personified as the enemy in ambush, like a wild beast—"sin is he who couches."

that day shall not come, except there come."

["Relative particles give a precise expression to every sort of temporal sentence. The antecedent is sometimes expressed, sometimes contained in the tense of the verb. In the adverbial sentence after πώς we may use either indicative, subjunctive, optative, or infinitive—]
II. THESSALONIAN. II.

the subjunctive only after a negative sentence, of an act both probable and future, almost always with the particle ἀν. After a future, Sophoc. 'Ed. C.' 1040, Diphilius (apud Athen., p. 291, B.), whence we may explain the well-known ellipse in St. Paul, 2 Thess. ii. 3; ἦν, ἐπὶ μὴ ἔθνη ὁ Ἀποστόλος ἠρωτήθη ἰπότως: (οὐ δύναται ὅσιος ὁ Ἐρυθὸς). —Donaldson, 'Gr. Gram.' 583.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on the Man of Sin, ii. 3, seqq.

The object of a Commentary like the present is mainly to make the thoughts of the sacred writers more intelligible by means of a careful study of their language. It is not, therefore, our intention to attempt a full history of the interpretation of this very difficult passage. Such an attempt would almost require a volume, very largely filled with subtleties and eccentricities.

It may be said broadly that there have been four great schools of interpretation in reference to the Man of Sin.

1. By the Fathers generally it was conjectured that "that which withholdeth" was the Roman Empire—that the Man of Sin would be manifested after the fall of the Empire—that he would appear as a Jewish Messiah, in a rebuilt Temple—and by many that Nero was the "mystery of iniquity." —In the Greek Church, the discussion by John of Damascus has occupied the highest place. This writer keeps the Apocalyptic beast perfectly distinct from the "Man of Sin." From our Lord's words,—"if another shall come in his own name, him will ye receive?"—he infers, with Chrysostom (see Introduction, ii. 6 b) that the Jews would certainly accept the Man of Sin as their Messiah. The Temple where he receives adoration is the Jewish Temple. The offspring of shameless lust, yet gifted with extraordinary endowments, and possessing Satanic power, he will persecute the Church; but will only succeed in carrying away the feeble-minded and false by his lying wonders. 1

2. In the Middle Ages there were, from time to time, vague expectations of Antichrist, but almost uniformly from the East. The idea of the Man of Sin was called out by Eastern, not by Western, history. Wilcliffe (in the Last Age of the Church) assigned the date of A.D. 1400 for the coming of Antichrist. This great man, like many others, called the Pope Antichrist, or an Antichrist. But the intention was not to interpret the Pauline Man of Sin dogmatically of the Papacy. It was held that a Jew was to appear, in whom the prophecy was to be absolutely fulfilled.

3. With the older school of Protestant prophetic interpretations a great change came. The view, inherited from the Fathers, which concentrated the mystery of lawlessness in a single individual was set aside. The mystery was dispersed through a long succession, a regular dynasty, of Antichrists. This interpretation was supported by Melanchthon, 4 and received into Protestant Confessions. What acceptance it obtained in England may be inferred from two significant facts. The dedication of the translators of the Bible to King James assumes that the Pope, as such, is the Man of Sin. 5 One of the accusations against Archbishop Laud upon his trial was that he denied the Pope to be the Man of Sin. 6 Views of interpretation, held by able schools of writers, so pious and learned, must each possess some measure of truth. The best

1 The references to Ireneus, Lactantius, Jerome, Chrysostom, Ambrose, Augustine, will be found in D"ollinger, 'First Age of the Church,' ii. pp. 267-277.
2 St. John, v. 43.
4 'As Paul moulds the conception of Antiochus to the kingdom which dominates in the church, i.e., which retains the title of the Church, I, for my part, shall follow Paul, and accommodate this prophecy concerning Antiochus to the pontifical dominion."—Melanchthon, 'Opp.,' ii. 452.
5 'By writing in defence of the truth, which hath given such a blow unto that Man of Sin, as will not be healed.'—State Trials, vol. iv. pp. 524-5-6. "And charge of 18th day of hearing."—Out of a letter of mine (Laud's) to Bishop Hall, upon a letter which he had formerly sent me.' He asked Laud, and gave him power to alter or cancel anything which he disapproved of. Of this full power he did not avail himself, but submitted to the Bishop's better judgment the altering of some passages: one of which was, that the Pope was 'Antichrist,' which Archbishop disliked. (This was strongly dwelt upon in the charge.)
6 '19th day.—They went on with this charge regarding the Pope.'
7 '5th charge of 19th day.—Denial of Homilies which authorize the title of Pope to 'Antichrist,' and the 'Babylonical Beast.'
8 '19th day of my hearing.—Charge 4. Particular 6.—The 6th particular was the Article of Ireland, which calls the Pope the 'Man of Sin.' But the Articles of Ireland neither bind this Church nor me; and some learned Protestants do not understand that noted place of the Apostle (2 Thess. ii.) as meant of Antichrist or the Pope.' Laud's own 'History of his Trial,' quoted in 'State Trials,' vol. iv. p. 543.
II. THESSALONIANS. II. 741

Interpretation will probably be found in a combination of the strongest points presented by each school.

1. That Antichrist is an individual— the Man of Sin, the Lawless One—is, at least, the most natural view of St. Paul’s words. It was held, apparently without exception, when the first traditions of Christianity were fresh in the minds of Christians, and does not seem to have been contested for 1500 years.

2. In the Middle Ages it was brought into prominent notice that false teachers and usurping prelates were shadows and reflections of Antichrist, and that there were times in the history of the See of Rome when an Antichrist sat in that haughty chair.

It is impossible to read, e.g., Bishop Wordsworth’s exposition without being impressed by the formidable case which is made out against the Papacy. In the verses under consideration there are, at least, three distinct expressions which seem, at first, to point to a profoundly Christian power: (a) “The Apathy” (ἡ ἀστυπαθεία, v. 3) would appear to imply a departure from the Christian faith. (b) “The Son of Perdition” might be taken as a reference to one fallen from the apostolate, a second Judas (ὁ νόος τῆς ἀρχής, S. John, xvii. 12). (c) “The Temple of God might be construed as equivalent to the Christian Church (1 Cor. ii. 16, 17; 2 Cor. vi. 16). Yet there is much to weaken the impression.

(a) ἀστυπαθεία is used in the LXX of those who had never known God. (b) The “son of perdition” is applied to any one doomed and self-fitted to perdition. (See above, on v. 3.) (c) The “Temple of God” (τὸς τῶν μαθῶν τοῦ θεοῦ, v. 4) is the regular expression for the Jewish Temple (S. Matt. xxvi. 51. Josephus, passim).

Perhaps it may be safest, and most modest, to conclude that each great school of interpretation has something important to teach the church. The patristic expositors impress upon us the individuality of the lawless one. The medieval writers bring out the idea, not only that there are many Antichrists, each a type of the perfect incarnation of Lawlessness (which is a Scriptural and patristic idea), but that such types may be found in isolated Popes. The older Protestant interpreters, stimulated by the presence of abuses and tyranny, express strongly the existence of a permanently anti-Christian and lawless element in the system of the Papacy, which each Pope must, in a measure, represent.

But this view would be very deficient without some reference to a fourth school.

4. The school of early Protestant criticism, represented by Grotius, has done excellent service in recalling to us the thoughts which were actually in the mind of St. Paul. The reference to Antichus Epiphanes as delineated by Daniel xi. 36, is beyond doubt. (See above on v. 4.) The mad and impious attempts of Caligula also haunt his imagination. The profanation of the Temple in which our Lord had walked, and which apostles had frequented, was as shocking to Christians as to Jews. Caligula, from whom great things were anticipated, had deceived the expecta-


Few writers of the Church of England will venture to speak otherwise than with respect of a view which has been so widely received by our greatest divines. Bishop Wordsworth observes:—"In support of the statements made here and in my notes on the Apocalypse (Rev. xiii., xvii.), and of the conclusion now deduced from them, it may be well to remember that this conclusion is one which is sanctioned by the names of some of the holiest, wisest, most charitable, and judicious persons that have expounded the Word of Inspiration, particularly Bp. Jewel, Richard Hooker, Bp. Andrews, and Bp. Sanderson, and the framers of the Authorized English Version of the Holy Bible; see their Dedication prefixed to the English Bible, where they speak of the 'Man of Sin'; and Bp. Jewel’s Works, Portion ii. pp. 891-935, ed. Camb. 1847; Hooker, Sermon on June 17, pp. 841, 843; Bp. Andrews, ‘c. Bellarmin,’ c. ix. and x. p. 220; Bp. Sanderson, i. p. 338; iii. pp. 13, 146, 161, 283; and both Houses of our Convocation, in 1606 (see Cardwell, ‘Symodalia,’ i. 379), which were as follows:—"If any man shall affirm that the intolerable pride of the Bishop of Rome, for the time still being, through the advancement of himself by many sleights, stratagems, and false miracles, over the Catholic Church, the Temple of God, as if he were God Himself, doth not argue him plainly to be the Man of Sin, mentioned by the Apostle, he doth greatly err." 'Is the Papacy predicted,’ &c.? (pp. 24, 25). See also the very remarkable passages in Davison, 'Discourses on Prophecy' (p. 324).

2 θεωρομαι ἣν ἡμᾶς τὴν χείραν εὐθὺς καθαρὸν ἀκούσαν ἀκούσαν—Cantus Trium Pueroram. This is said of the Chaldæans who had never been worshippers of the true God. See the discussion in Grotius.—De Antichristo, Append. ad Comm. p. 23.

Grotius assures us that this was really the view of many great foreign Protestant Reformers and divines. Induced by these arguments Hieron. Zanchius felt that one individual was here delineated. I have often heard Casaubon and other eminent Protestants speaking to the same effect." De Antichristo, Append. ad Comment., p. 9.
II. THESALONIANS. III.

The mysterious, imageless, worship and golden splendour of the Temple fired the wild imagination of Caligula. He ordered his statue to be placed in that august sanctuary. He was, indeed, prevented from carrying these odious intentions into effect, but the general impression was one of abhorrence and terror.

Now, if we bear this prophetic and historical groundwork in mind, we have a key to much, at least, of St. Paul's language. And with this we are to remember a general principle of prophetic interpretation. The Apostle, as a prophet, saw objects as men see them by night, when shapes and outlines may be visible, but relative distances cannot be estimated. Some fuller development of evil awaits the Church and the world—the complete embodiment of Daniel's idea of Antiochus, the consummated realization of the intentions of Caligula. How this may take place we can only surmise. How it can be connected with the Jewish Temple, we cannot even guess. But a philosophical deification of humanity (v. 4); a general loosing of the bonds which unite society in Christendom; a re-assertion of the utmost rights of the flesh, and subversion upon principle of the moral law (ὁ ἀνδρός, ὁ ἀνδριάς τῆς ἀμαρτίας); and all this summed up in a great and variously gifted man—may complete the awful hints of Daniel (viii. 11, 12) and of St. Paul. The Church will know in time. The revolving light of prophecy will circle round in due season. The lines that now seem to waver and to tremble as in water will fix into a definite form.

3 If the view taken in this note is not that of the English divines who have been cited just above, it may at least claim a general agreement with one of the very highest name. Archbishop Bramhall discusses "in what sense the English Church believes the Pope to be an Antichrist, in what sense not." He observes, "The name of Antichrist is sometimes more largely, sometimes more strictly. Largely, for every one that is an oppressor of Christ (1 John ii. 18). In this sense we believe the Pope to be an Antichrist. Secondly, the name of Antichrist is sometimes used more strictly, and in a more eminent sense for the Antichrist; for "that Man of Sin, the Son of perdition" (2 Thess. ii. 3). And in the latter sense, it is disputed problematically among the Protestants, whether the Pope be that great Antichrist. Doubtless all the signs of Antichrist do agree to him, as to "sit in the Temple," or "upon the Temple of God," &c. So whether the one, or the other, or perhaps a third, the Protestants determine not; but leave private authors to their own opinions." (Bramhall's Works, vol. v. pp. 256, seqq.)

CHAPTER III.

1 If growth their prayers for himself, 3 testeth what confidence he hath in them, 5 maketh request to God in their behalf, 6 giveth them divers precepts, especially to shun idleness, and ill company, 16 and last of all concludes with prayer and salutation.

FINALLY, brethren, pray for us; that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you:

2 And that we may be delivered

that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified.] There is a delicate reference here to the Psalter. It is as if St. Paul said, "Pray, that to me the Psalmist's word, the word of the Lord, may run (Ps. cxvii. 15. τὸ τὰχον δρημεττὶ ὁ λόγος, L.XX. τὰς ἀνθ.)". The N. T. has other instances of this sense, almost running into distinct personality (Acts xiii. 48; 2 Tim. ii. 9, which much resembles this passage, Hebrews iv. 12, where the word is spoken of as living, and capable of living work, as the living are). That which is sent, and runs forth, and is not bound; which is glorified; which is heart-searching, and has life and has living energy; runs up into personality. It has been said that in St. Paul's language there is constantly but a "thin film" between the Holy Ghost, the Divine Personal Spirit, and the spirit in the believer's inmost being. And so, in St. Paul's conception, there is but a thin film between the word written, preached, concentrated in definite statements, and the living word of God who is God.
II. THESSALONIANS. III.

from unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithful, who shall establish you, and keep you from evil.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patience waiting for Christ.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, may have free course. It has been supposed that the expression so familiar in Latin Christendom, "cursus Evangelii," came from this.

be glorified.] Cf. for this expression, "They glorified the word of the Lord," Acts xiii. 48.

3. And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men: for it is not all that have faith.] (Bp. Ellicott.) St. Paul's words here do not apply to Thessalonica, but to the place from which he wrote. Probably, he may aim at the "false brethren" and "false apostles" of 2 Cor. xi. 13, 26. It would apparently have more point to refer "it is not all that have faith" to those from whom faith might have been expected; those, therefore, who were not separated by a definite line from the Church. "Pray that we may be delivered from the unreasonable and wicked men, of whom ye know, for not of all whom you see entered into the pale of the Church is that faith which makes men truly Christians."

from the unreasonable.] (ἀπὸ τῶν ὀρέσσων.) Hammond seems to give some ground for thinking that this adjective may refer to persons guilty of sins, which were a contradiction to the first dictates of natural feeling and instinctive morality (unariet, Luther). Several old commentators refer the word to quaking Jews, who had no fixed place of abode, but went about stirring up tumults against St. Paul and the Gospel. (Cf. "the vagabond Jews," Acts xix. 13.) But the usage of the LXX and of later Greek alike points to an ethical significance in the word—sinfulness, under the aspect of unaniint and absurdity. (οἱ παρὰς τὰ ὀρέσσα, those habitually doing sinful actions.) Polycarp. ad Philipp. v. See note at end of chapter.

3. And shall guard you from the Evil One.] (ἀπὸ τοῦ ὄρμου.) As far as the sense goes, evil may be taken either as (1) neuter, or (2) masculine. It may be understood (1) of evil looked upon in its entirety, as one collected mass; or (2) as exhibited in a personal being, whether (a) the Lawless One of 2 Thess. ii. 8, or, (b) much more probably, Satan. It has been said that "while the vision of Antichrist may be again for a moment rising before his eyes, it is simpler to take the words as a neuter." (Prof. Jowett.) But it is thoroughly Pauline and Scriptural to rise from "evil men" (ver. 2) to "the Evil One" (ὁ ὄρμως); and the Evil One is never predicated of Antichrist, but is the term tech. for Satan. "The world lieth wholly in the sphere of the Evil One." There may very probably be a reference to the petition in the Lord's Prayer. St. Matt. vi. 13. Cf. 1 St. John v. 18, 19.

4. we have confidence in the Lord touching you.] Christ was, so to say, the sphere in which it was felt; the Apostles felt confident as if in union with Christ, but, humanly speaking, his confidence was reposed and leant upon the Thessalonians.

5. But may the Lord direct your hearts.] Another instance of prayer to Christ. The occurrence of the word "Christ" at the close of the verse, has led Basil (De Spir. Sanct.) 211, and other Greek commentators to suppose that the Holy Spirit may here be invoked as "the Lord" (So Bp. Wordsworth). The analogy of 2 Cor. iii. 18 is, however, doubtful (see Meyer, in loc.). For καταδεικνοῦντι, cf. 1 Thess. iii. 11.

into the love of God and into the patience of Christ.] Not "love toward God, patience for Christ's sake" (Beng.); but rather, "endurance of the cross of Christ, patiently borne after the example and in the strength of Christ" (Vorstius): "that we may suffer, as He suffered" (Chrysost.)

6. we command you, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves.] "Not we say this, but Christ—such is the meaning of 'in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ'" (Chrysost.) This passage is important as bearing upon Apostolical authority. "That authority," it has been said, "was of a mixed kind, partly official, partly moral, yet also claimed by him as a right" (Prof. Jowett). But, surely, an authority claimed as a right may, indeed, be reinforced by moral considerations, but is eventually official. "The only method of enforcing it was by excommunication, the effect of which, in any state where ecclesiastics had not also a share in secular power, must have been dependent upon feeling and opinion." (Prof. Jowett.) But it should be remembered, that if St. Paul be a true and sober-minded witness, there was something
II. THESSALONIANS. III.

Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For yourselves know how ye ought to follow us: for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you;

8 Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought; but wrought with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you:

9 Not because we have not power,

10 But to make ourselves an ensample unto you to follow us.

Beyond this. The being sent out from the shelter of the Church into the desert of the world was not only mental horror and darkness, an inward remorse and hopelessness; it was something more, apparently visible and palpable, possibly branding and seizure of the very flesh by him into whose realm and power the transgressor passed for the time being, yet not without hope of restoration upon penitence (1 Cor. v. 3, 4, 5; 1 Tim. i. 20). Our estimate of the effect of excommunication, as purely subjective or objective in its results, depends, in the last analysis, upon our estimate of the credibility of St. Paul. "Nor," it is said, "must we be misled by the word excommunication to suppose that, in these times, the thing existed in any definite form." But a passage cited above (1 Cor. v. 5) would lead to an opposite conclusion. Besides, if the thing existed at all, it must have existed in a "definite form." To exclude a man from any society, is much more from a religious society, is an extreme act, which could only have been performed under defined and understood conditions. Any society acting otherwise would be a prey to caprice, and rent asunder by intestine disensions. It would bear within itself the germs of anarchy and dissolution. The same interesting writer again remarks that "there is no trace of exclusion from the Lord's Supper being the mode of exclusion from the Church. The object was purely a moral one, and the form of withdrawal different in different cases." "Exclusion from the Lord's Supper" could not be the mode of excluding from the Church in any case; it was the result of exclusion from the Church. But it was the most palpable form which the exclusion necessarily took. It has also been hinted that no amount of dogmatic heresy—not even the assertion that "the Resurrection was clearly past"—brought with it exclusion from the Church. But for the blasphemy of Hy- meneus (which was evidently that), and his excommunication, see 1 Tim. i. 20; 2 Tim. ii. 17, 18. For early opinions as to the bearing of the passage upon excommunication, see the large collection of quotations in Estius.

that ye withdraw yourselves] (σταλέθαι ὑμᾶς ἀπό.) Σταλέθαι (Midd.) with ἀπό, means "to abstain from habitual conversation with,"

"to keep at a distance from," "to treat with studied distance and coldness," "to be shy of." (Keble, 'Stud. Sacra') "s'éloigner." [It is said that it is peculiarly used of those on a voyage by sea, "to give a wide berth to." See Bengel.] Chrysost. points to the much stronger and more indignant tone of St. Paul here than in 1 Thess. iv. 11.

disorderly.] See supra on Coloss. ii. 5. Erasmus points out the nature of the metaphor, "from military usage, where it is not allowable to break and leave the ranks." not after the tradition.] The whole course and institution of the Christian life, which St. Paul had delivered to them (Mede). Cf. 1 Thess. iv. 12; 2 Thess. ii. 15; infra, v. 10.

7, 8.] On St. Paul's trade and work, see supra. 1 Thess. ii. 9, and Acts xx. 34, 35.
yourselves know bow.] It is better to teach by one's life than by one's sermons.

8. for nought.] (Bosport.) Gratia, i. e. gratis from a low, material point of view. Assuredly, the missionary or pastor does not get his bread without giving return, even when he pays no money for it. Cf. St. Luke x. 7; St. Matt. x. 10.

but wrought.] "But (ac. we eat it) with toil and travail, working night and day."

9. Cf. 1 Cor. ix. 4. On an "ensample" (růασι), see supra on 1 Thess. i. 7.

10. this we commanded you.] The A. V. "if any would not work, neither should be eat." This was a favourite proverb in the Jewish schools (see quotations from Bereith Rabba and Ohel Moed, e. gr.—"whoever doth not work, doth not eat,"—in Hammond in loc.). Another good saying was, "Let not him, who would not labour before the Sabbath, eat on the Sabbath." (In lib. Zeron.). "It is St. Paul's order, nay, the ordinance of the Holy Ghost—and we should all put to our helping hands to see it kept—be that will not labour, let him not eat." Relieve him not. But hath not Christ required us to feed the hungry? 'Honour widows,' but 'those that are widows indeed'; so relieve the poor,
you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies.

12 Now them that are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.

13 But ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing.

14 And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means. The Lord be with you all.

but those that are poor indeed.” (Bp. Sanderson’s Sermons, pp. 104, 214.)

11. working not at all, but are busybodies.] (μενε ἐργαζόμενους, ἀλλὰ περιεργαζόμενους.) “Busy only with what is not their own business” (Prof. Jowett); “working at no business, but being busybodies” (Bp. Ellicott). Gregory Nazianzus had this text in his memory when he cried—“I had rather be unduly idle than a busybody”—(ἄργος εἶναι μάλως τοῦ δίοικου ἢ περιεργὸς δίοικου). In this passage, gives it a bad sense, because that which encircles anything does not belong to the thing itself, but lies outside and beyond it: the thought in περιέργος is first circum, then ultra; perhaps also an idea of exceeding proper limits, or going round and round in a circle. “Neglecting their proper work (ver. 2, of getting honest, unbeggcd bread) and occupying themselves, with a mean and mischievous sedulity, in things which lie outside their own proper sphere” (cf. Latin “malé sedulii,” and the French “chevalier d’industrie”). On the way in which the features of the national characteristics of those whom he addresses are mirrored in St. Paul’s Epistles, see the interesting remarks of St. Hieron. in Galat. iii. 1, and the Introduction to the First Epistle.

12. exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ.] Many good MSS. have here εὐώ, “in our Lord Jesus Christ.” Both are well attested, both thoroughly Pauline. (For “in” cf. 1 Thess. iv. 1; for “by” cf. 1 Thess. iv. 2; Rom. xii. 1; xiv. 30; 1 Cor. i. 10; 2 Cor. x. 1.) The “by” is probably to be preferred, as more usual with St. Paul in the solemn attestation of hortatory passages. Chrysost. notes the softening tone of the Apostile here.

their own bread.] Their own is very emphatic, “not other people’s.” The “cibus alienus” of Latin comedy, the διλλορία μᾶζα of Greek, is one of the most degrading features of the parasite’s idle life. (Vorstius), “As if it were not their own bread, if not gotten with the work of their own hands, and in the sweat of their own brow.” (Bishop Sanderson’s Sermons, p. 208.)

13. Bishop Ellicott well translates—“lose not heart in well doing.”

14. If any man obey not our word by this epistle.] The A. V. probably gives the best connection of the words. Two other modifications have been proposed: (1) “If any man obey not our word—by the means of the Epistle, set a brand upon him,” as Leo XIII. at the commencement of his pontificate upon the beggars of Rome. This is probably far-fetched. But (2) another interpretation (“If any man obey not—by your letter to me brand him, mark him out for the purpose of his not being permitted to keep company with you”) is still more so.

15. And yet (kai μόνο) as often in St. John for kai ὡς (1 St. John i. 6, St. John’s Gospel i. 5, 10, iii. 11, 32, v. 40, vi. 58, 70- vii. 19, 23, 28, viii. 49, 55, ix. 10, 14, xi. 8, xiv. 9; Apoc. iii. 1: cf. Matt. iii. 14, vi. 26). It connects rhetorically a statement or statements, which might seem inconsistent with what goes before, and is equivalent to et tamen. It is found in St. Paul’s Epistles in 1 Cor. v. 2, 10; 2 Cor. vii. 9; Heb. iii. 9. “Count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.” Such admonitions were used among the Rabbis to one not formally excommunicated, nor excluded from the fold. The circumstances are different from the complete estrangement spoken of in St. Matt. xviii. 17. It has been well said that “excommunication is not like poison given to an enemy for destruction, but like medicine administered to a brother for restoration;” and that “the fact of a man’s having been a brother should work in our hearts a memory of the old fraternity.” (Grotius.)

16. Now He the Lord of the Peace give you His peace: a reference to the peace which Christ promised. (St. John xiv. 27.) Again the majestic aorós—again a prayer to Christ, give you peace always by all means.] So
II. THESSALONIANS. III.  

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.

A. V. Many read "everywhere." Are we to adopt (1) the former (in mavi ῥήσον) - so Tisch.; or (2) the latter? (ἐν χεὶρι ῥήσον)? For (1) are A, B, N; for (2) D, F, G - so Lachm., Prof. Jowett, Bishop Ellicott. (1) is strong in antiquity, in external authority, in sense. Peace from God is prayed for them, "omnia omni modo," "at every time, and in every kind of it," internally, peace in their own souls, peace in freedom from schism and dissension among themselves; externally, peace from persecution and the strife of tongues. Probably some thought "by all means," "in every manner," somewhat obscure; they scarcely saw whether it referred to the way in which peace was prayed from God, or to the different forms and aspects of peace; (2) occurs with obvious meaning in 1 Cor. i. 2; 2 Cor. ii. 14; 1 Tim. ii. 8. But would it have much significance here? The Thessalonians needed peace, no doubt, in their own Church, and with their fellow-countrymen, scarcely "everywhere." Chrysostom probably read ῥήσον, for he explains "The Apostle wishes them to be at peace everywhere, for everywhere peace is good." Yet, on the whole, the first reading seems preferable (cf. for expression 2 Thess. ii. 3; Philipp. i. 18, the last without ἐν) peace, in every conceivable form and mode, outward and inward.

The Lord be with you all.] The old liturgical form, Latin and Greek - ὅσιος μετ' ἰδίων - Dominus vobiscum - which took the place of Numbers vi. 24 in the old rite. It most probably refers to the great promise, "I am with you always," St. Matt. xxviii. 20, and implies, "may that promise be fulfilled!"

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

subch. (2) The neuter of generally, not referring so much to "salutation" (which is masculine) as to the fact of a salutation in his writing being "a sign" in every epistle. To avoid fraud, which had large facilities in the epistolography of his day, St. Paul was used to send round a specimen of his handwriting, which was easily recognised (1 Cor. xvi. 22, Coloss. iv. 18); probably the writing was so peculiar as to be a safeguard against forgery. (See Renan, "St. Paul," p. 233.)

in every epistle.] It is a precarious inference that St. Paul had then written many epistles. He may, at least, be giving a rule for the future. So I write.] The expression seems to meet any doubt which might arise in their minds. It may suggest a security against the possibility of forgery. This would coincide with the meaning assigned by some to 2 Thess. ii. 2.

18. With some slight variations in form, the "Grace" closes all the Pauline Epistles (and that to the Hebrews), and is peculiar to them. "Such a preacher of Divine Grace was Paul!" (Estius).

ADDITIONAL NOTES on vv. 2, 6, 11.

2. In the LXX ἀτόμος appears as the translation of 218 (vanity in thought, falsehood in heart, wickedness in action), Job iv. 8; xi. 11; xxx. 6; Prov. xxx. 20; in N. T. cf. St. Luke xxii. 41; Acts xxiv. 5 (Lachmann's text). In Acts xxvii. 6 it has a different sense - "out of the way," "inconvenient," "noxious," see Grimm, 'Clav. N. T.' Bretschtn. quotes some passages from classical Greek, especially the ἀτόμος πνεῦμα "strange noxious smell" of the plague (Thucyd. ii. 49).

6. The Text. Rec. (παρελαβή) is quite without uncial authority, and obviously accommodated to the preceding singular substantive, "every brother." Copyists fell into the mistake which Wolf made, who argues that "if the Apostle had referred to more than the brother walking disorderly, he must have written παρελαβή, and this has some good authority (B, F, G)." But the third person plural has (1) more authority, especially Greek Fathers; (2) it is recommended by the very difference which Wolf has stated. "Every brother" has a collective force, which passes into παρελαβω, and we should translate, "which they received of us."

11. The word is used by Josephus (περιθομένως τὰ θεῖα, 'Antiq.' xii. 2, 13) and in the 'Testam. xii. Patriarch,' as signifying curious, unprofitable investigation opposed to simple obedience (see in Bretsch. s. v.). Quintilian quotes a description of Maurius Suira's restless and aimless motion in speaking and society, "non agere eigit, sed sitiageret" [agii, qui suo officio, sitiagi, qui vehementer sed frustra moretur. - Erasmus]. συφροσύνη is described by Plato as 'τὰ εὐαγρά ἐστεγεῖν.' (Professor Jowett, after A Laipide in loc.)
II. THESSALONIANS.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on 2 Thess. I. 9.

such as shall suffer as penalty everlasting destruction) (δικαίωσαι διάστροφας αἰώνιαν). The first occurrence chronologically of the word αἰώνιος in the Epistles of St. Paul appears to be the proper place for an examination of its meaning.

(1) The etymology of the word αἰώνιος perhaps throws some light upon the question. Aristotle saw that αἰών was in some way connected with αἰών, and supposed that the connection was that of direct derivation. This is, at least, an indication of the meaning which αἰών had for him (ἀνά τοῦ αἰῶνα ἠλπίζομεν τὴν εἰσοδήμαρ.) De Cazo, I. 9). In Professor Max Müller's opinion, ' Aevum is from the same root as αἰὼν and the Sanskrit ajus; the root is, and means 'to go,' 'laire,' comes from the same source.' (Quoted by Rev. J. Riddell, Note A on Dr. Pusey's sermon, 'Everlasting Punishment,' p. 32. The curiously analogous derivation of the Hebrew 단 will be seen below.) (2) The meaning of the word αἰών in classical Greek, especially as used by Aristotle, and in proportion as speculation advanced in definiteness, is unlimited prospective duration, eternity at least à parte post. Aristotle's language is very remarkable. "There is neither place, nor space, nor time, external to the heaven; whence the things there being unchangeable, and having the best and most self-sufficing existence without passion, fulfill in their course the whole eternity (διαστήμα τοῦ αἰωνίου). And in fact this name was divinely uttered by them of old time. For the sum total (τὸ ἡκατέρον) which comprises the time of the life of each, out of which nothing can be conceived according to the regular order of nature, is called the αἰών of each thing. And analogously, the sum total also of the entire heaven, and the sum total comprising all time and infinitude, is absolutely eternity (αἰώνιος), a name derived from ever-existing." (De Cazo, I. 9; see Mr. Riddell's note ut supra, pp. 32-35, who also shows that in Plato, especially 'Legg.,' 904 A, αἰώνιος is used "unequivocally and intentionally of retrospective and prospective eternity.") A reference to Timaeus (x. 37 e) will show that he distinguishes αἰών as "abiding," from ἄριστος as its "mutable image," very much in the spirit of St. Augustine. ('Confess.' xi. 11-13.) (3) For Hebrew and LXX.—Man everywhere struggles with insuperable difficulties in finding words to enunciate his conception of eternity. This is, indeed, from the necessity of thought, an effort to express that which is inexpressible. Contradictory lines are thus inwoven into the very texture of language. So it was certainly with the Hebrews. Four words are chiefly employed in Hebrew for eternity. (a) Eternity is looked upon, in St. Augustine's way, as "semper stans," and therefore as something in which we may trust. The word εἰκόνα, confidence, also means eternity, as we may confide in those things which endure. (b) A second term (προσωπος) denotes locally "what is before," "the East," hence temporarily, "aftertime," indefinite antiquity. In Micah v. 2, it answers in thought-rhyme to "the eternal days" (καὶ ἡμέρα τοῦ αἰωνίου). In Lament. vi. 19 God's eternity is spoken of as "His being enthroned of old" (ἵνα ἐντάξιον τοῦ αἰωνίου), translated πρὸ τοῦ αἰωνίου by the LXX. (No less than twenty different Greek words are employed to render it by the LXX. See Fuerst. 'Concord.' p. 972.) (c) The term most frequently used, however, to designate eternity is בֵּית מִשְׁמַרְיָת (קַיִם). The word is derived from בֵּית, to hide or veil, and denotes that whose extremes are unknown and undefinable as regards the past or future. (d) St. Augustine has analysed the ideas of Time and Eternity with an acuteness and profundity which anticipate Kant. He shows that "nothing, properly speaking, passes in eternity, but that it is present wholly; that God's years neither come nor go, but all His years, as it were, stand simultaneously." 'Anni tui omnis simul stant.' ('Confess.' lib. xi. 11-13; cf. 'De Civ. D.' x. 12.) But, do what we will, the idea of lapse and motion clings to our conception of eternity as time infinitely prolonged. This conception of eternity as time prolonged is represented יבּ (from יבּ, to go forward.—Gesen.). These four words—implying eternity as infinite prolongation, perfect stability, antiquity and indefinability—are alike rendered occa-

1 Of these words יבּ gives eternity à parte post, דֵּלָה eternity à parte ante, דָּלָה, the indefinite expanded into the Infinite. The richness of Hebrew as regards this great conception is very significant in contrast with the poverty of Greek. The Hebrew mind arrives at it in four different ways, while one was sufficient for the Greek.

2 The inspired writers struggle to find an expression in other forms also. Very simply and grandly does the writer of the Psalms exclaim—

"Established is Thy Throne from then, From everlasting Thou."—(Ps. xcvii. 2.)

"From then" (IND). "This expression is.
sionally by ἀιων, ἀιώνος, κ. t. λ., in the LXX. (cf. for the first word καισαρικῶν τῶν αἰωνῶν, Isaiah lvi. 15; for the second ἄιων, Psalm xlix. 20 [xlvi. 18]; for the third, Psalm liv. [lv.] 19 [20]; for the fourth, passim—frequently of the Absolute Eternity of God, Ps. lxxvii. [lxxvi. ] 5; xc. [lxxxix. ] 3). One of the Hebrew words translated by ἀιων, ἀιώνος (בַּשָּׁב) is, indeed, occasionally used of temporary duration—as yet even in this modification prospectively of an unbroken continuity, co-extensive with the existence of that of which it is spoken. So ἀιώνος is predicated of a 'covenant' or 'statute' conterminous with the existence of the dispensation to which it belonged, of a servitude final so far as the earthly life of the slave is concerned. (Gen. xvii. 7, 13; Exod. xii. 14, 17; Levit. xvi. 29. Dr. Pusey, 'Everlasting Punishment,' p. 22.)

From the Hebrew and the LXX. we turn to the N. T. The word ἀιωνος occurs seventy-two times. The passages may be thus divided:

Eternal—
Life ............................................... 44
Glory .......................................................... 3
Fire, judgment, destruction .................. 6
Gospel ......................................................... 1
Covenant ....................................................... 1
Things unseen ............................................ 1
New and abiding relation of Onesimus .......... 1
Spirit .......................................................... 1
God ............................................................ 1

Consiolation ........................................... 1
Our inheritance ....................................... 1
Home in the heavens. ............................. 1
Christ's kingdom ....................................... 1
Redemption ................................................ 1
Salvation ..................................................... 1
Purpose ....................................................... 1
Sin, fixed and stereotyped in the soul 1
Times .......................................................... 3
Doxology ('To whom be power ever-
lasting,' 1 Tim. vi. 16) ............................... 1

It has been well said lately that the word eonian "no more denotes age-long, i.e., 'lasting for an age, and then ending with the end of the age,' than eternus means ending with the etas; but means age-long, i.e., going on during the eternitas a parte post—that is, from the moment (within the period since Time began) at which that to which the epithet is applied commenced, and onward without end." (Church Quarterly Review, Oct., 1880, p. 316.)

Thus the etymology of the word; the Hebrew term as rendered by the LXX.; and the subject to which it is applied admittedly in forty-four passages of the N. T. render it in the highest degree probable that the phrase "eternal ruin" or "destruction" means a "destruction" prospectively final—everlasting in the sense in which its subjects are everlasting.

1 Reading ἀμαρτήματος in St. Mark iii. 29.
2 Twice of God's pre-eonian design (τὸ πρὸ χρόνων αἰωνίου, 2 Tim. i. 9; Titus i. 2 'eternal time before') in the eternity a parte ante.
3 The paraphrase 'before the world began,' although inadequate, is so far correct—'before eternal times.' (Dr. Pusey, 'What is of Faith,' &c., p. 46.)
4 Note also the same word in Isaiah xlv. 21, answering in thought-rhyme to the previous דָּבָר.
5 The third passage (αὐτοτοκιον χρόνων αἰωνίων τοῦ θεού) is in Rom. xvi. 25. It is very noteworthy that the next verse (ver. 26) contains the only passage in the N. T. in which God is styled αἰώνων.
6 If the reference be to the well-known Jewish distinction between the two great eons—the ἅ τιν ἀιων' ὁ ἔαν αἰόνος (ἡ ζῶν ζών) and the ἀιων καὶ μπλοον, ζώοιν, ἡ ἀμαρτία (ἡ ζῶν ζών)—ἀιωνος would mean lasting during the future eon which has no end.

Eternal life."
TIMOTHY AND TITUS,
THE PASTORAL EPISTLES.

INTRODUCTION.

The two Epistles of St. Paul to Timothy with the Epistle to Titus form a clearly distinct group in the Apostolic writings. They have been designated The Pastoral Epistles; and though the expression, like that of The Synoptic Gospels, has the disadvantage of attributing to them in too great a degree a general design, and of thus diverting attention from their individual peculiarities, it marks with correctness the most important element which they have in common. The First Epistle to Timothy and the Epistle to Titus are, indeed, mainly concerned with instructions and exhortations to those disciples of the Apostle respecting their duties as overseers of the two Churches committed to their charge, and with advice and warning in view of the special dangers they would have to meet. But the Second Epistle to Timothy starts from more personal considerations, and is in a far greater degree occupied by them. The Apostle writes it while under imprisonment at Rome, and in expectation of imminent martyrdom. "I am now," he says, "ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought a good fight; I have finished my course; I have kept the faith" (2 Tim. iv. 6, 7). In a tone of deep emotion, natural in such circumstances, St. Paul writes to Timothy, entreat ing him, if possible, to come to him soon; and occasion is taken to address to him some earnest exhortations that he should be stedfast in the faith, and fulfil his course like the Apostle himself. But the duties which Timothy has to discharge in this course are those of a chief pastor; the Apostle is thus led to direct his advice in great measure to these special duties; and so far the Epistle resembles the other two.

It should, indeed, be borne in mind, since the fact has considerable weight in estimating some of the peculiarities of these Epistles, that they are personal as well as pastoral, differing in this respect from all the other Epistles of St. Paul except the brief one addressed to Philemon on a special occasion. But so far as they are concerned with the general interests of the Church, it is with the duties of pastors that they deal; and it is impossible to overrate their importance in this respect. The second Epistle to Timothy, indeed, must be regarded, as we shall see, as the last known writing of St. Paul before his martyrdom, and in that regard alone possesses an intense and unique interest. But for the general guidance of the Church there is something still more precious in instructions prompted by the matured wisdom of the Apostle, and addressed to his most trusted followers, respecting the manner in which they should "behave themselves" as pastors, "in the house of God" (1 Tim. iii. 15). It would, indeed, have been strange and unfortunate if we had been left without some such guidance. The other Epistles afford us all needful instruction respecting the great dogmatic truths of Christianity, and the chief points of Christian morals. But respecting the practical organisation and govern-
ment of the Church, they furnish only incidental hints. The deficiency is supplied by these three Epistles. They were written, as will be shown, near the close of the Apostle's career, when it was becoming necessary for him to provide for the due government, after he should have passed away, of the Churches he had founded. Brief as they are, they afford a clear insight into the principles by which he was guided, and they give advice which in all ages of the Church has been accepted as the Apostolic standard of pastoral duty.

The point which claims our first attention is the general and unhesitating acceptance of these Epistles by the Church, from the age of the Apostolic Fathers. In the Epistle of St. Clement of Rome, there are several expressions which it is natural to regard as at least allusions to the language of these Epistles, if not as actual quotations from them. Thus in Ch. 2 St. Clement says, "ye repented not of any well doing, but were ready unto every good work"—an expression which occurs in Tit. iii. 1. In Ch. 7 of St. Clement, the words "let us see what is good and what is pleasant and what is acceptable in the sight of him that made us" recall 1 Tim. v. 4. So the expression (Ch. xxix. 1), "Let us therefore approach him in holiness of soul, lifting up pure and undefiled hands unto him," recalls 1 Tim. ii. 8. A similar allusion perhaps is in the phrase "King of the ages" (Ch. lxi.), of which the only instance in the New Testament (a various reading in Rev. xvi. 3 excepted), is in 1 Tim. i. 17, though it also occurs in the LXX. (Tobit xiii. 6, 10.) It is observed by M. Renan¹ that St. Clement's use of the word ἀνασκόπουσις in the sense of death seems to be an allusion to 2 Tim. iv. 6. He thinks the Epistles forged, but quotes this phrase in support of a suggestion that the forger had in his hands some authentic letters of St. Paul. He admits that there are other resemblances of expression between the Epistle of St. Clement and our three, but he accounts for them on the supposition that the two authors borrowed from the same source—the favourite language of the Church of Rome.

These allusions deserve the more attention because St. Clement as a rule makes no formal quotation from the Books of the New Testament, and also on account of the personal character of the Epistles. It would be only natural that letters addressed, with a special and personal object, to two disciples of St. Paul should retain their more private character for some time, and should at any rate be longer in assuming the generally authoritative position of more public documents. It is striking, indeed, that one of the earliest and most distinct references we have to them is in the letter of an Apostolic Father, St. Polycarp, who was a Bishop of a Church contiguous to that of Ephesus, over which Timothy presided. In St. Polycarp's Epistle to the Philippians the allusions, certain or probable, to the Pastoral Epistles are more numerous than to any other Pauline writings, and there is one so unmistakable as to be acknowledged by even the most sceptical critics.¹ In the 4th chapter of that Epistle he says, "But the love of money is the beginning of all evils. Knowing therefore that we brought nothing into the world, and that neither can we carry anything out, let us arm ourselves with the arms of righteousness"—a distinct echo of 1 Tim. vi. 10, 7. The objections raised against the authenticity of St. Polycarp's letter are justly dismissed by Zahn² as too unreasonable to be discussed, in the face of the testimony borne to it by St. Polycarp's own disciple, St. Irenaeus. It is, moreover, observed by a hostile critic³ that the Epistle of Ignatius to St. Polycarp has the most striking points of connexion with the Second Epistle to Timothy. Passing to the writers immediately subsequent to the Apostolic age, we find further allusions. Such is Eusebius's quotation from Justin Martyr (Hist. Eccl. iii. 26) of the phrase, "the great mystery of godliness." The phrase, moreover, "knowledge falsely so called" (1 Tim. vi. 20) occurs in an abstract given by Eusebius, iii. 32, of a passage

¹ Cf. Davidson, Intro. to N. T. vol. ii. 159-60.
of Hegesippus. Many writers, including Baur, are of opinion that Eusebius found this phrase in Hegesippus; and Eusebius certainly writes as if, without formal quotation, he desired to reproduce the words of Hegesippus. But the point, though interesting, admits of dispute, and need not be pressed. There is a clear quotation by Theophilus of Antioch (ad. Autol. iii. 14), where he says that the divine word (ὁ θεὸς λόγος) bids us pray for rulers and authorities, that we may live a quiet and peaceable life. But the next authority to be quoted may well be deemed, on this, as on so many other of the cardinal questions of early church history, to be decisive. St. Irenæus, the disciple of St. Polycarp, quotes the three Epistles as the undisputed works of St. Paul. He says in one place that Linus is mentioned by Paul "in the letters to Timothy" — thus attesting both Epistles to Timothy (adv. Haer. III. 3, § 3); and he quotes from the Epistle to Titus, "Paul said: A man that is an heretic . . . reject" (ib. § 4). Here again we have the testimony of a man who was brought up under Polycarp, in the neighbourhood of the church to whose bishop these letters were addressed; and his testimony must be regarded as unanswerable evidence that they were accepted as St. Paul's in the very communities, and by the very men, whose knowledge of the circumstances to which they relate would be the most trustworthy. After this, the testimony of Ecclesiastical writers to them is frequent and unanimous. All three Epistles are included in the Muratorian Canon, and they are enumerated by Eusebius among the undisputed portions of the New Testament.

There is only one certain exception to this general acceptance. None of the three Epistles are admitted into Marcion's Canon, and it is doubtful whether the Epistles to Timothy were recognized by Tatian. St. Jerome says that although Tatian rejected some of St. Paul's Epistles, he considered the Epistle to Titus "vel maxime apostoli pronunciandam, partio pendens Marcionis et aliorum, qui cum eo in hac parte consentiunt, assertionem." 1

That among the Epistles thus rejected by Tatian were the two to Timothy, is probable enough; but his acceptance of the Epistle to Titus is the most certain, and the most important, point in his testimony. As Tatian died about 170 A.D., the fact of the Epistles being thus criticized by him would seem of itself evidence of their having acquired general authority before the middle of the second century. But these and other heretics, by whom, as Clement of Alexandria says, (Strom. ii. ch. 11) our Epistles were rejected in the second century, represented errors of the very same nature as those against which St. Paul's exhortations are directed, and their refusal to admit them stands on the same ground as their repudiation of the doctrine and authority of the Church. Marcion was restrained by no scruples from mutilating the Scriptures to bring them into accordence with his system 1 It was at one time imagined that there was some basis for the supposition of his having possessed an original gospel. Now, however, critics of all schools acknowledge that Marcion worked on St. Luke's Gospel, cutting out from it everything that discredited his system. We cannot suppose that so arbitrary a critic could have been debarred by any scruples from dealing in the same way with St. Paul's Epistles. There are passages in the Pastoral Epistles which, on his principles, he could not but cut out, and therefore his excisions prove nothing but his own views. If his silence could be taken as any indication that the Epistles were not known in his time, it might afford evidence which would deserve consideration. But in the face of the testimonies we have adduced, and of the fact that the Epistles were criticized by Tatian as authorities with which he had to deal, it is impossible to account in this way for Marcion's omission of them. It must therefore be ascribed to his peculiar views, and to the arbitrariness with which he cut and carved the Scriptures to his purpose. It ceases, at all events, to be impartial testimony.

The result is that we have a con-

1 Hieron., Comm. in Ep. ad Tit., prolog. opp. t. viii. p. 687, Vallars.  
1 Cf. Tertullian, De Carne Christi, cc. ii. iii.
INTRODUCTION.

In a continuous chain of testimony, from the time of St. Polycarp downwards, to the authenticity of these Epistles. During all the centuries which followed, they have commended themselves to the Christian conscience, and to the experience of Christian pastors—of bishops, priests anddeacons—as exhibiting a truly Apostolic model of pastoral duties, and as in thorough harmony with the spirit of St. Paul. There is, perhaps, a peculiar weight to be attached in the present instance to this consent of testimony. Argumentative Epistles, dealing with high points of doctrine, are in some measure beyond the judgment of ordinary Christian experience. As concerned mainly with matters of revelation, they must in a great degree be accepted on authority. But the Christian Church at large is not incompetent to appreciate the wisdom, and the apostolic tone and temper, of practical directions on public worship, on the qualifications requisite for holding office, respecting the conduct of pastors towards various classes in the Christian community, towards men and women, old and young, and on the respective duties of the various relations of life. In all these points the Epistles have rooted themselves in the reverent affection of all the successive generations of Christians; and it ought to be acknowledged that an immense presumption is thus established in their favour. It is an offence to common sense, as well as to all feeling of propriety, for a sceptical writer to speak of “the pointlessness” of the directions to Titus, as rendering them “all but worthless to an evangelist,” to say that “most of the exhortations” in the Second Epistle to Timothy “are commonplace,” or to describe “the pervading spirit” of all three Epistles as “flat, sober, sensible, without vigour, point, depth, or spiritual richness.” No weight can be attached to the criticism of a man who can speak in this way of documents which have produced so deep an impression on the Christian mind. On points like these the historic and literary tact of M. Renan secures him from such gross errors, and his judgment is perhaps the best antidote to such language as Dr. Davidson’s. In L’Église Chrétienne, p. 95, he says, “Quelques passages de ces trois épîtres sont d’ailleurs si beaux, qu’on peut se demander si le faussaire n’avait pas entre les mains quelques billets authentiques de Paul, qu’il aurait enchâssés dans sa composition apocryphe.” We may take it for granted in discussing the authenticity of these Epistles, that we have to deal with documents intensely penetrated with the Apostolic spirit, and commending their authority to the conscience of the Church by their inherent force.

Nevertheless, from the commencement of the present century, they have been the object of a vehement and persistent assault by a succession of German critics, and their authenticity is still vehemently contested by that school of writers whose attacks on so many of the other books of the New Testament it has been necessary to meet in this Commentary. In this instance, however, as in all others, the controversy has been attended with the advantage of elucidating the circumstances in question, and of promoting a more vivid comprehension of the character and position of the three Epistles. They certainly present, not merely peculiar characteristics, but peculiar difficulties; and there are historical points connected with them which are not yet cleared up, and which, with our present information, will probably remain obscure. But enough may be placed beyond the reach of reasonable doubt to justify a sure conviction that we possess in these Epistles some of the last words of St. Paul, and to enable us to interpret them with sufficient clearness for all practical purposes.

The difficulties in question are threefold. It is, in the first place, extremely difficult, not to say impossible, to find a place within the history of St. Paul, as recorded in the Acts of the Apostles, for the incidents mentioned in the course of these Epistles. The question therefore arises whether we are justified in referring them to a period of his life subsequent to that narrated by St. Luke, and whether on that supposition their statements are

INTRODUCTION.

harmonious and historically credible. In the next place they are marked by peculiarities of language and style, which they possess in common, but which distinguish them clearly from the other three groups of St. Paul's Epistles. The two Epistles to the Thessalonians, the four Epistles recognised as authentic even by Baur—to the Romans, to the Galatians, and the two to the Corinthians—and thirdly, the four Epistles of the Captivity—those to the Ephesians, to the Colossians, to the Philippians and to Philemon—each group has its characteristic tone of thought, and to some extent its characteristic turn of language; but the Pastoral Epistles stand apart from all three, new and striking words and phrases occurring in them. Lastly, all three Epistles contain denunciations of certain forms of false teaching; and it is alleged that the errors thus indicated are identical with some which appeared a generation or two after St. Paul, but had not been developed in his lifetime. A similar objection is based on the indications afforded in the Epistles of the organisation of the Church at the date they were written—an organisation, it is alleged, which marks a stage of development subsequent to the time of St. Paul. In a word, it is argued that the historical, the literary, and the controversial characteristics of the Epistles are alike incompatible with what is known of St. Paul and his times.

Our answers to these objections will be of two kinds. In respect to the first two, we admit the facts, but we dispute the inferences drawn from them. In respect to the latter, we dispute the facts themselves.

It will be convenient to begin by reviewing the general course of the controversy. It was opened by an attack upon the First Epistle to Timothy. This was commenced by Schmidt in his Introduction, published in 1804; but its first forcible development was due to Schleiermacher, in a letter published in 1807 "on the genuineness of the so-called First Epistle to Timothy." He recognised the authenticity of the second Epistle, and of the Epistle to Titus, but maintained that the first Epistle was an imitation of them by a later hand. But from the similarity of the three Epistles, objections such as we have mentioned against the first were at once felt to tell with similar weight against the other two; and it was not long before Eichhorn and De Wette pushed Schleiermacher's arguments to their natural conclusion, and pronounced against all three. After this, for a time, rationalistic criticism wavered in its results, sometimes going back to Schleiermacher's position; and Credner, to mention the name of most eminence, elaborated an ingenious theory that the Epistle to Titus was genuine, but that the Epistles to Timothy had grown around brief letters of the Apostle much in the same way as the longer letters of St. Ignatius are supposed by many writers to have grown out of the short Syriac recension. Up to this time criticism had been purely negative. But at length, in 1835, Baur, with his characteristic audacity, reviving Eichhorn's view that the three Epistles must stand or fall together, fixed their supposed date definitely to the middle of the second century, on the ground that the errors combated in them are the fully developed heresies of Marcion. Since then, it cannot be said that any new element of material importance has been introduced into the controversy. Reuss, indeed, has of late, in his edition of the Scriptures with Introductions and Commentaries, admitted the Second Epistle to Timothy as unquestionably genuine, while, though with some hesitation, he rejects the First, as well as the Epistle to Titus. Bleek, also, like Schleiermacher, rejects only the 1st Epistle to Timothy. But practically it may be said to be one result of the long controversy that the three Epistles stand or fall together; and if Reuss's conclusion as to the second Epistle to Timothy, or Bleek's respecting this and the Epistle to Titus be accepted, few will follow them in their negative conclusions in rejecting the others.

It will be found an advantage to reverse the course which criticism has thus pursued, and to consider in the first instance the Second Epistle to Timothy. That Epistle, as Reuss has

N. W. Test.—Vol. III.
INTRODUCTION.

forcibly urged, is characterised by the strongest internal marks of genuineness. In every line it expresses the deepest feeling and most intense earnestness; and corresponds with the utmost vividness to the circumstances of which it speaks. It purports to be addressed by St. Paul, while in captivity and in imminent prospect of martyrdom, to a beloved disciple, whom he has entrusted with the charge of carrying on his own work. He recalls, as is natural to men in such solemn moments, reminiscences of the past—his early acquaintance with Timothy, and the character of Timothy's early training. He reminds him of the unfeigned faith which he learned from his grandmother Lois and his mother Eunice, and which, as the Apostle is persuaded, still animates him. The letter proceeds to put him in remembrance to stir up the gift of God, which was given him by the imposition of the Apostle's hands; and bids him not be ashamed of the testimony with which he was entrusted, nor of the Apostle himself, then imprisoned for it. St. Paul then dwells briefly on the glorious character of the Gospel; and after a pathetic mention of the manner in which he had been deserted by some friends, but diligently sought out and refreshed by another, he passes on to exhort Timothy to be strong in the grace of Jesus Christ, to uphold the form of sound words which he had heard of St. Paul among many witnesses, and to follow the example which he had fully known in the Apostle's "doctrines, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience, persecutions, afflictions." The tone of suffering which runs throughout the Epistle is particularly noticeable and touching, and it would seem as if, when bidding Timothy to endure hardness, as a good soldier of "Jesus Christ," the Apostle were speaking from the depths of his own bitter experience at that moment, and were pointing to the endurance he was himself called upon to display. The Epistle bespeaks a vivid and oppressive sense of the dangers, the hardships, the persecutions which St. Paul was then suffering himself, and which he foresaw in the immediate future for Timothy. "Yea," he exclaims, "and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution." He looks forward, evidently, with some apprehension to the possibility of Timothy failing under this severe strain; and ends his exhortations by a solemn charge to him, "before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead, at his appearing and his kingdom. Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with all long suffering and doctrine. . . . Watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an Evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry." These reiterated, intense exhortations correspond with almost painful naturalness to the position of an Apostle like St. Paul addressing a disciple like Timothy, in view of approaching death, and of having to leave him behind in circumstances of such danger and difficulty. For himself, his work was done. He was ready to be offered, and the time of his departure was at hand. He had fought the good fight; he had finished his course; he had kept the faith; and he looked forward to the crown of righteousness which the Lord, the righteous judge, would give him "at that day." Then he passes for a while to give a number of personal details, interspersed with expressions which reflect the sufferings and disappointments of his imprisonment; and he twice begs Timothy to come to him quickly. "Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me." . . . "Do thy diligence to come before winter." There is one passing request which it may be confidently said that no forger would ever have dreamed of putting into a letter which he desired to palm off as written in the last hours of our Apostle. "The cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments." Alike in its general tone and in its details, the Epistle is one of those heartfelt natural utterances which bespeak their own genuineness.

Reuss says very well, in the passage above referred to, that "this Epistle, from one end to the other, in all its details and in numerous allusions, corresponds to the situation we have indicated. It may even be said that no other, among the Pauline Epistles, is comparable to it in this respect. The fact that the tone changes several times, according as the author is momentarily dominated by the idea of his approaching death, or as he disengages himself from this preoccupation to think only of the cause he is defending—this fact is but one proof the more that we have here natural outpourings of the heart, which ought to evoke sympathy and to disarm criticism."

But still, with all this overwhelming presumption from internal evidence in its favour, the Epistle must be tested by the inquiry whether the circumstances it mentions are in harmony with the recognised facts of the history of St. Paul. Now it is written by St. Paul as a prisoner, and a prisoner at Rome (ch. i. 17), and the circumstances in question appear irreconcilable with the incidents of the Roman captivity recorded in the Acts of the Apostles, and in the so-called Epistles of the Captivity. It is not, indeed, very easy to see why this difficulty should be seriously felt by critics who, in other connexion, disparage the historical trustworthiness of the Acts of the Apostles. But on the supposition of that trustworthiness, the difficulty is unquestionable. Thus in ch. iv. 20, St. Paul says "Erasus abode at Corinth, but Trophimus have I left at Miletus sick;" and no natural interpretation can be put upon these words but that, in the course of the journey by which St. Paul reached Rome, he had passed from Miletus to Corinth, leaving Trophimus sick at the former place, and parting from Erastus at the latter. Now Trophimus was certainly at Jerusalem with St. Paul, and if, therefore, he was left behind it must have been in going from Jerusalem to Rome. But in St. Paul's journey to Rome narrated in the Acts, he sails from Cæsarea past Crete and Malta, far away from either Corinth or Miletus. The request, moreover, that Timothy would bring him the articles he had left behind at Troas, implies a recent visit there—a visit which would perfectly fall in with a journey from Miletus to Corinth, such as that implied in ch. iv. 20, taking Macedonia in the way; but which is out of all relation to the events which preceded St. Paul's first captivity in Rome. If, therefore, the incidents mentioned in this Epistle are to be satisfactorily accounted for, we must infer that St. Paul was released from the captivity at Rome of which the Acts of the Apostles speak, must have undertaken further travels, must afterwards have been a second time imprisoned, and in this second imprisonment have suffered his martyrdom. Is there any reason why we should hesitate to believe that this was the case?

So far from there being any such objection, we have independent evidence to the same effect. It was the general tradition of the Church in the first centuries that St. Paul was released from his first imprisonment, and made further missionary journeys. Eusebius (Hist. Eccl. ii. 22) thus supplements the history of the Acts of the Apostles. He says that St. Paul, "after having defended himself, is said to have set forth again upon the ministry of preaching, and to have entered the same city a second time, and to have there ended his life by martyrdom." "Whilst then a prisoner," adds Eusebius, "he wrote the Second Epistle to Timothy, in which he both mentions his first defence and his impending death." In this reference to his "first defence," Eusebius follows what is no doubt an erroneous interpretation of the words 2 Tim. iv. 16: "At my first defence no man stood with me"—words which must be taken to refer (see note on the passage) not to his previous imprisonment, but to his first appearance before the Roman Court, in the imprisonment from which the Epistle was written. But there remains the fact that it was said—λόγος ἐξῆς—it was the current report in the time of Eusebius, that St. Luke's narrative in the Acts of the Apostles did not mark the close of St. Paul's life; but that he took other journeys, and was again imprisoned.
INTRODUCTION.

Of this current report we have two extant testimonies, one of which is perfectly explicit, the other carrying a high degree of probability. The latter is afforded by a passage in the epistle of Clement of Rome to the Corinthians (ch. v.): “By reason of jealousy and strife, Paul by his example pointed out the prize of patient endurance. After that he had been seven times in bonds, had been driven into exile, had been stoned, had preached in the East and in the West, he won the noble renown which was the reward of his faith, having taught righteousness unto the whole world, and having reached the boundary of the West; and when he had borne his testimony before the rulers, so he departed from the world and went unto the holy place, having been found a notable pattern of patient endurance.”

(St. Clement of Rome, An Appendix, Lightfoot, p. 348.) The phrase we have italicised, “the boundary of the West,” τὸ τέρμα τῆς δύναμις, is undoubtedly a difficult one; but Dr. Lightfoot in his note on the passage (Epistle of Clement, pp. 49-50) has shewn that its most natural interpretation is that it means “the western extremity of Spain, the pillars of Hercules.” Bishop Pearson (Minor Theol. Works, i. p. 302) quotes in illustration a passage from Philostratus (v. 4), in which Gades is said to lie κατὰ τὸ τῆς Ἑλλήνων τέρμα. Attempts have been made to explain it as meaning Rome; translating it “St. Paul’s extreme limit towards the West,” or “the sunset of his labours,” or “the boundary between East and West,” or “the goal or centre of the West,” or “before the supreme power of the West.” But all such interpretations, as Dr. Lightfoot observes, appear forced. St. Clement is writing at Rome, and as an inhabitant of Rome; and it is scarcely conceivable that he should speak of that city, which was the centre of East and West, as “the boundary of the West.” The argument in Dr. Lightfoot’s edition of St. Clement on this point seems conclusive; and he is supported by Gebhardt and Harnack in their recent valuable edition of the Apostolic Fathers, although, on other grounds, they consider the journey to Spain doubtful.

But the next testimony is open to no such question. The Muratorian fragment on the Canon, the date of which, according to the general consent of critics, is determined to be about A.D. 170, refers as to a well known fact to St. Paul’s journey from the City of Rome to Spain. It speaks of St. Luke as having written the Acts of the Apostles “because the events related were enacted in his presence, as he evidently declares by putting aside the passion of Peter, and moreover the departure of Paul from the city when setting out for Spain.”

Great stress may justly be laid on the independence of this evidence. It stands in no connexion, like the passage in Eusebius, with the Pastoral Epistles, and it is clear proof that a person well acquainted with Rome—since he mentions the recent publication there of the Pastor of Hermas—took for granted that St. Paul undertook a journey from that city to Spain; and no one will suppose that there is any room for such a journey within the period covered by the Acts of the Apostles. Now we know from the Epistle to the Romans (xxv, 24, 28) that it was St. Paul’s distinct intention to visit Spain. He speaks of it as a settled matter. “Whenever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you.” . . . “I will come by you into Spain.” We have therefore an unquestionable and matured intention on the part of the Apostle, very early tradition that this intention was fulfilled, and the general belief of the Fathers that the opportunity for fulfilling it was afforded him by release from his first imprisonment.

To this it must be added that there is no tradition and no evidence to the contrary. After Eusebius we have testimonies to the same effect from Epiphanius, St. Cyril of Jerusalem, St. Chrysostom, St. Jerome and Theodoret, and they all write as if the second imprisonment.

1 We translate from Hilgenfeld’s text given in his Einleitung, p. 43. The text is obscure; but there is no doubt of its speaking of Paul’s journey to Spain as a fact equally well recognised with St. Peter’s passion.
were generally believed. It would seem, in view of these considerations, that even if we did not possess the Second Epistle to Timothy, there would be a presumption, so strong as to be almost conclusive, that St. Paul was released from his first captivity and visited Spain. But it is further an uncontested fact that St. Paul suffered a martyr's death at Rome. Such being the case, it follows that the Second Epistle to Timothy, bearing witness to a second imprisonment, supplies the very link which is wanting to harmonise the facts and presumptions otherwise established.

It appears to us that these historical considerations alone, combined with the marks already noticed of the Epistle being a genuine Apostolic writing, are sufficient to remove all doubts respecting the authenticity of the second Epistle. But if anyone could entertain the supposition that some forger was ingenious enough to fit it, with consummate appearance of artlessness, into these scattered traditions, there remain other points in the Epistle which render such a notion inconceivable. We refer to the personal details mentioned. It has been forcibly observed¹ that there is no part of the New Testament so rich in such details. In the Second Epistle to Timothy no fewer than twenty-three members of the Apostolic Church are mentioned. "These, moreover, are neither exclusively names to be found elsewhere, in which case it might have been said that they had been derived from the genuine writings; nor all new names, in which case it might be said that the forger had guarded himself by avoiding the names of real persons, and only speaking of persons invented by himself;" but, just as might have been expected in a real letter, some ten persons are mentioned of whom we read in the other scanty records of the same time which have descended to us; while the others occur for the first time. In the case of the old names, new details are given, which could in no way have been expected. Thus we have in the Epistle to the Colossians (iv. 14), "Luke the beloved physician and Demas greet you;" in that to Philemon, "There salute thee . . . Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellowlabourers." Now note the treatment of these four names in the Second Epistle to Timothy. There we read, "Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world . . . Only Luke is with me." A forger must have had very extraordinary qualities to be able to realise the personality of St. Paul's attendants as to give their history subsequent to the time covered by the received records, and to put a note of disgrace on one who, so far as the genuine Epistles went, had been honourably recognised as Paul's fellow-labourer. Lastly, of Aristarchus the Pastoral Epistles have not a word to say, though his name might have been expected to occur in that enumeration of his attendants which the Apostle makes in accounting for being left alone. The sufficient explanation may be that Aristarchus was dead; but if the Epistle were a forgery, how is it that a writer who can so boldly give the history of Paul's other attendants should shrink from saying anything about Aristarchus? We may also comment on the sentence, "Titus to Dalmatia." If, as would be supposed, the forger were the same man who wrote the other Epistles, would he not have been consistent and sent Titus to Crete? Of the new names, again, one is certainly the name of a real person, Linus, who, according to early tradition and the positive authority of Irenæus, was the first bishop of the Church of Rome. Yet it is to be noted that the Epistle must have been earlier than the origin of that tradition, for he is put in no prominent place, but is mentioned after Eubulus and Pudens, personages of whom we know nothing else. This mention of Linus, indeed, might of itself be deemed enough to show that the Epistle was written in St. Paul's lifetime, for his headship of the Roman Church can with great probability be traced to the time immediately after the death of the Apostle. One more personal reference seems worth notice—the mention twice over of the household of Onesiphorus. The controversial use which has been made of

¹ By Dr. Salmon, in the Christian Observer for 1877, p. 501.
this reference is well known (see note upon 2 Tim. i. 18). But from the salutation being made to the house of Onesiphorus, not to Onesiphorus himself, we may reasonably conclude that he was either dead, or at least known to the Apostle not to be with his household at the time. There is no difficulty about the matter if all be real history. But that a forger should have invented such a refinement, yet in no way have called attention to it, is quite incredible.

Indeed, the impress of genuineness in these personal references is so strong as to have compelled some of the most hostile critics to allow that the verses containing them are fragments of genuine letters from St. Paul. Thus Pfeiderer, in his introduction to the Pastoral Epistles in the Protestanten-Bibel N. T. (p. 837, first ed.) says that "the Second Epistle to Timothy contains at least two sections which have of late—and not without good reason—been recognized as fragments of genuine letters of St. Paul, namely the passages in ch. i. 15-18 and iv. 9-21. . . . The second section in particular, by its numerous personal notices, produces the impression of genuineness." But this is an admission that those very portions of the Epistles which are most capable of being put to a definite test come out of the trial satisfactorily; and the arbitrariness of refusing to allow this fact to afford any testimony to the genuineness of the other portions is patent. What would be said if the case were the other way, and if those who contended for the genuineness of the Epistle as a whole were obliged to give up as spurious the verses containing personal details? That which would be said is what we have now a right to say to critics like Pfeiderer—that it is tantamount to a confession of defeat to surrender all that part of their case which admits of being tested, and to maintain that part only with respect to which prejudices and subjective fancies do not admit of being checked. It has been already mentioned that Renan finds in other passages, which are not thus marked by personal references, a beauty of thought and expression which bespeaks the hand of St. Paul. When hostile criticism of one school admits the genuineness of the personal passages, and hostile criticism of another school makes a similar admission respecting the didactic passages, we may safely conclude that the whole negative position is untenable.

In this connexion, moreover, one or two other striking points should be observed which recall the other Epistles of St. Paul. Dr. Salmon, for instance, in the paper we have already quoted, draws attention to the verse (2 Tim. i. 3) which forms the exordium of the second Epistle. St. Paul begins by thanking God for the unfeigned faith which is in Timothy, and tells him that without ceasing he has remembrance of him in his prayers night and day. Now of St. Paul's ten other letters eight commence with thanking God for what he has heard or knows of the religious progress of those whom he addresses. The Second Epistle to the Corinthians is scarcely an exception, for that, too, begins with thanksgiving. The only clear exception is the Epistle to the Galatians, which is a letter of sharp reproof. None of the other New Testament Epistles resemble St. Paul's in this peculiarity. Of the eight letters which begin with thanksgiving for the progress of his converts in the faith, six go on to speak of his continual prayer for them. It is characteristic of St. Paul that, even when writing to Churches with which he had occasion to find fault, he begins by fixing his thoughts on what there was in those Churches deserving of praise, and by calling to mind his constant prayer on their behalf. Indeed, the resemblance of the opening of this Epistle with that to the Romans has been actually made a ground for attributing it to a deliberate imitator. But criticism which at one moment uses differences to prove that an Epistle is not St. Paul's, and at another uses resemblances to show that it was the work of an imitator, is too hard to please to be worth much consideration. Another very re-
Markable and very touching coincidence has been noticed in the Introduction, in this Commentary, to the Epistle to the Philippians. In that Epistle, written during his first captivity, St. Paul speaks of his desire to depart (ἐἰς τὸ ἀναλίθου) (i. 23) of his conflict (ἅγων), (i. 30) of his willingness to be offered (στέφωμαι), (ii. 17), of his pressing on (iii. 14) in his contest for a prize. The same ideas recur to him after the lapse of several years, at the close of his second imprisonment, and are expressed in the same language. "I am now," he says to Timothy, "ready to be offered (ὁστέφωμαι), and the time of my departure (ἀναλίθους) is at hand. I have fought the good fight (ἀγωνία); I have finished my course." The words and the thoughts are alike unique, and what could be more natural than their recurrence when a second imprisonment brought into immediate prospect the fate apprehended in the first?

Such are the reasons, positive and negative, which establish beyond any reasonable doubt the authenticity of the Second Epistle to Timothy. It may be regarded, with the utmost confidence, as the last recorded utterance of the Apostle Paul, revealing to us his position and his feelings in the final crisis of his life. Next to the Gospels, there is no part of the New Testament which possesses a deeper interest for Christian hearts. It is the seal to St. Paul's long ministry, and is the most solemn expression of his convictions.

But we must now pass to the other two Pastoral Epistles, and it will be seen that we have gained a point of view which removes at once a great part of the difficulties from which we started. There are not so many definite circumstances of time and place furnished in the First Epistle to Timothy; but though great ingenuity has been expended by Wieseler and others in the endeavour to bring them within the narrative of the Acts of the Apostles, all such attempts are, to say the least, extremely forced. From ch. i. 3, "As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine," &c., it appears that the Epistle is addressed to Timothy at Ephesus, and that St. Paul, on starting from that city on a journey to Macedonia, had left Timothy behind him in charge of the Church there. It appears, moreover, from ch. iii. 14, that St. Paul hoped soon to return himself, but thought it possible he might be detained some time. Now, in the Acts of the Apostles St. Paul is described as having been twice at Ephesus. But the first occasion was the brief visit (Acts xviii. 19) on his way from Corinth to Jerusalem, so that he did not then leave for Macedonia. The other occasion was when he stayed from two to three years at Ephesus. At the end of this time he did leave for Macedonia (Acts xx. 1). But he could not then have left Timothy behind, for he had sent him and Erastus on before into Macedonia (Acts xix. 22); and Timothy could not have returned before Paul's departure, for when the Apostle reached Macedonia and wrote the Second Epistle to the Corinthians, Timothy was with him. It has been suggested that during St. Paul's long stay at Ephesus he might have made a journey to Macedonia which St. Luke has not recorded. But it seems extremely improbable that St. Luke should have omitted to mention a journey which must have occupied so considerable a time during that memorable period of three years' work at Ephesus. From an expression, indeed, in the Second Epistle to the Corinthians (xii. 14), it has been supposed that St. Paul paid during this period a visit to Corinth which is not mentioned in the Acts. But even if this were certain, it would be no sufficient parallel to the present case. Although the Apostle speaks (1 Tim. ch. iii. 14) of hoping to come back soon (ταχύν), the whole tone of the instructions in the Epistle implies that he was placing in Timothy's hands a general responsibility for the Church at Ephesus; the reference to his intended return and possible delay is only to explain his giving these instructions by letter instead of by word of mouth; and it is scarcely conceivable that St. Paul should have written in such a tone during the temporary absence which the supposition in question implies.
Similar difficulties arise with respect to the Epistle to Titus if we attempt to place it within the period of the Acts. The circumstances it states are (ch. i. 5) that St. Paul had recently left Titus in Crete, that he might "set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city"—or city by city. Again it has been supposed that, although St. Luke makes no mention of a journey to Crete, it may have occurred during St. Paul's stay at Ephesus. But the same general objections arising from St. Luke's omission to mention such a journey apply in this instance; and they are much enhanced by the circumstances presupposed in the Epistle. St. Paul must have been in Crete long enough to have evangelised several towns, and must have left behind him a Church in a somewhat advanced state of organisation. He could hardly have been absent from Ephesus long enough for this purpose. He proposes also to winter at Nicopolis, and desires Titus to come to him there. But again, as Lewin shews (ii. 291), his winters before his journey to Caesarea are all accounted for elsewhere, unless we again suppose an inexplicably long absence from Ephesus in the course of his three years' stay there. For all these reasons it seems impracticable to find any room for these two Epistles in the life of St. Paul if his journeys came to an end with his first imprisonment.

But on the supposition, which has been shewn to be well-founded on other grounds, that the Apostle's journeys were not so concluded, we have a space of time amply sufficient for the incidents mentioned in the three Pastoral Epistles, and all chronological difficulty disappears. From the comparatively scanty notes of time, indeed, which they afford us, it is scarcely to be expected that we should be able to construct an indisputable scheme of the Apostle's journeys and of his life during the period to which they relate. It is sufficient for all the purposes of the argument that such a scheme should be capable of construction; and in point of fact various arrangements have been proposed, any one of which would meet the facts of the case. Two points, however, as it seems to us, may be fairly assumed. The one is that St. Paul's first visit after his release was to Spain. The Muratorian fragment speaks of his setting out from Rome to Spain (ex urbe profiscicentis), and it would obviously be more natural and convenient for him to fulfil his intention of making that visit to the West before returning again to the East. Secondly, his last journey before his second imprisonment appears, as we have shewn, to have been through Miletus, Troas and Corinith. He would seem, therefore, first to have gone to Spain, then to have returned to the East to visit the Asiatic churches, taking, perhaps, Crete in his way. He leaves Titus there, and goes on to Ephesus, and from thence, in an order which it may be difficult to ascertain precisely, takes the final journeys which are recorded in the 2nd Epistle to Timothy.

Now this assignment of the three Epistles to the same period, and this the last period of St. Paul's life, at once accounts for the peculiarities which are common to them, and upon which adverse criticism has been based. The mere fact, indeed, of a wide difference in phraseology from other known works of St. Paul would of itself be no material evidence against these Epistles having been written by him. The style and language of a great writer naturally change with his subject, and the more so in proportion to his greatness; and St. Paul is the last man to have been restricted in his style and mode of expression. The extraordinary versatility of his mind and of his whole nature—to the Jews becoming a Jew, to the Greeks a Greek, to the Romans a Roman, able to be all things to all men—is one of his most conspicuous characteristics. It is in every way to be expected that the letters of such a man would vary, both in their phraseology and in their mode of expression, with the subject he was treating, his time of life, and the persons whom he addressed. On the supposition we have been explaining, these reasons all apply emphatically to the present Epistles. They are separated by an interval of several years from the rest; they are written, as none of the others are, to
INTRODUCTION.

disciples who have long been the Apostle’s intimate companions, and they treat of new topics and new circumstances. It has been shown, in fact, that there are as many ἀπαξ λέγομεν in other Epistles as in these. Thus the First Epistle to Timothy contains eighty-one, the Second sixty-three, and that to Titus forty-four; while the Epistle to the Philippians contains fifty-four, that to the Galatians fifty-seven, and those to the Ephesians and Colossians together no fewer than a hundred and forty-three.¹

Many such variations would, in the nature of things, be purely accidental. Thus some stress has been laid upon the fact that the Greek word used for the master of a slave is in the Pastoral Epistles δεσπότης, while in the other Epistles of St. Paul it is κύριος. But what argument would it be against the authenticity of a private letter that a man spoke in it of a slave and his owner, whereas in previous letters he had spoken of a slave and his master? As a matter of fact, however, δεσπότης, which is used in these Epistles, is the correct and usual phrase for a master of slaves. It would naturally be used by any one familiar with the customary language of that day; and if there be any question worth consideration on such a point, it is not why St. Paul should use δεσπότης, but why he should ever use κύριος elsewhere. The reason is perhaps discernible. In all cases where he calls the master of slaves κύριος, he is enforcing the duties of a Christian master by reminding him of his relation to his own Lord—whose gracious relation to his people is indicated by his being almost always described as their κύριος, not as their δεσπότης.

But a greater interest attaches to the character of some of these new expressions. In many instances they represent more than a merely varied vocabulary. They indicate the presence in the writer’s mind of a new class of ideas. We find, for instance, several times the expression “This is a faithful saying”—twice (1 Tim. i. 15, iv. 9), with the addition, “and worthy of all acceptation”—applied to striking Christian maxims. The word “godliness” or piety (σεβασμός) is frequently employed as though it were the customary expression for the character of Christian life (1 Tim. ii. 2; iii. 16; iv. 7, &c.); and it is similarly employed in the second Epistle of St. Peter (iii. 11): “what manner of persons ought we to be in all holy conversation and godliness.” Another very characteristic expression is the phrase “sound doctrine,” and similar applications of the word “sound” or wholesome; see 1 Tim. i. 10; vi. 3; 2 Tim. i. 13; iv. 3; Titus i. 9, 13, &c.; and akin to this is the more frequent use here than in other Epistles of the word (σωφρονία), sober-minded. It is evident that Christian truth has assumed, as in the “faithful sayings,” something of a fixed habitual form, and takes the mould of almost proverbial expressions. Christian doctrine is assuming the character of a definite rule of right judgment and wise action, and is present to men’s minds as a fixed and recognized standard, applicable as a test of thought and practice. In addition to this, peculiar stress is laid upon the outward expression of religion in piety, reverence, and sobriety of conduct. The Gospel, in a word, is contemplated not only in its central truths and primary elements, but in its practical working as a wholesome, controlling and directing influence in all the details of life.

Now, what can be more natural than that this aspect of the Gospel should have become more prominent in the Apostle’s mind as he contemplated, towards the close of his life, the Churches he had founded? It is the uniform characteristic of his other Epistles to commence with establishing some fundamental verities, and to conclude by an exhortation to a holy walk in the various relations of Christian life. In proportion as he had succeeded, in a Church like Ephesus, in securing the due recognition of those central truths, would they become, in the course of a few years, the received standard of truth, and

¹ Davidson (Intro. ii. p. 184) complains of this as a “mechanical objection.” But he had just printed (p. 182) a page of isolated words as “δεσπότης” in support of his own contention. A mechanical objection is a valid answer to a mechanical argument.
his attention would be concentrated on their development in practice. A very few years might make a great difference in this respect. The Church, moreover, would increase in numbers, and in proportion to this development, the necessity of exercising a supervision over its members would increase. The opportunities for error in conduct would be multiplied, and fresh practical problems would be continually arising. If these Epistles had been written in the same period as the others, within the limits of the history narrated in the Acts, so considerable a transfer of the Apostle's attention from one class of dangers to another, and the introduction of expressions betokening a new aspect of the bearings of Christian truth, would be difficult of explanation. But when once it is recognized that they were written later, they reveal to us a development in the history of the Church which is at once very natural and very instructive.

When this peculiarity of the Epistles is understood, there seems to remain no question as to their harmony in other respects with the general tone of St. Paul's thought. On this point the testimony of Hilgenfeld, one of the acutest opponents of the authenticity of the Epistles at the present day, is specially deserving of attention. St. Paul, he observes, describes himself as the former persecutor of Christians, who through God's mercy, has been made an example to all believers (1 Tim. i. 13-16), and it is with a natural reference to those who doubted his Apostolic authority, that he declares “Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an Apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not;) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity (1 Tim. ii. 7; cf. 2 Tim. i. 11.)” He appears still struggling in some measure against a legal Christianity (1 Tim. i. 7), against “them of the circumcision” (Titus i. 10, 14), deprecating “contentions and strivings” about the law (“Titus iii. 9). He still opposes to salvation by works salvation by the grace of God in Christ (2 Tim. i. 9), and to righteousness by works justification by God’s grace (“Titus iii. 5, 7). Nor is it, Hilgenfeld admits, any deviation from the genuine teaching of St. Paul that, in Tit. iii. 8, 14, Christians are exhorted to maintain good works, since this corresponds to the general purpose of the Epistles. In a word, the old characteristics of St. Paul are before us distinctly, and all that is new corresponds to a new situation.

Up to this point, in short, we cannot but conclude that every argument which has been adduced against the authenticity of the Epistles has, when more closely examined, told in their favour. There remains one other objection, to which a satisfactory answer can be made, but which is not quite capable of a similarly complete elucidation. This is the objection derived from the nature of the heresies and errors which are denounced in the Epistles. Baur, as we have mentioned, maintained that these heresies were those of definite Marcionism. This contention, however, may now be said to be practically without defenders. Even Hilgenfeld, who still believes that Baur was right in the main in holding that the Pastoral Epistles can only be conceived as a product of the time of Gnosticism, admits at the same time that he gave too wide an extension to Marcionism.

The description, in fact, of the strange teachers (1 Tim. i. 7) as “desiring to be teachers of the law” is in direct contradiction with Marcionism; for its most prominent feature was an absolute repudiation of the law, and of the God who gave it. It is true that some Marcionite practices correspond with those of the ascetic teachers mentioned in 1 Tim. iv. 3, 4, as “forbidding to marry and commanding to abstain from meats.” But the manner in which St. Paul refutes this error proves that it cannot in this instance have arisen from Marcionite principles. Marcion’s reason for abstinence was because creation was not the work of the good God, but of the God of the Old Testament. Any one, therefore, who desired to controvert Marcion on this point would assert that a good God had made all things. But the Apostle’s reply is (v. 4) “Every

1 Einleitung, p. 759.
INTRODUCTION.

creature of God is good." That is to
say, he takes for granted, as what was
not denied by his opponents, that the
God of the Gospel had made all things;
and he seems to be simply referring to
the statement in the book of Genesis that
God saw everything that He had made,
and beheld it was very good.

Such considerations tend to shew
decisively that the errors combated
in the Epistles have no relation what-
ever to Marcionism. It is, however,
evident that they have at all events an
affinity with the Gnostic errors which
subsequently grew to such a height; and
the question is whether this affinity
necessarily implies that they belonged to
a later date than that of the last years of
St. Paul's life. Now it should be borne
in mind in the first place that our know-
ledge of the details of Church his-
tory during the thirty years which
followed St. Paul's first imprisonment
at Rome is very imperfect and obscure.
These Epistles, on the assumption of
their date for which we are contending,
would afford our most definite informa-
tion respecting the state of the Churches
of Asia Minor in the first part of that
period, except what may be inferred
from the messages to the Seven Churches
in the Book of the Revelation. Whether,
indeed, we adopt or not the earlier date
now very frequently accepted for the
Book of the Revelation, there is certainly
nothing in those messages inconsistent
with the description of the false teachers
in the Pastoral Epistles. On the con-
trary, the mention in the message to the
Church of Ephesus of "them which say
they are Apostles, and are not," and in
the message to the Church of Smyrna,
"of them which say they are Jews, and
are not, but are the synagogue of Satan"
corresponds closely to the description
of the false teachers whom Timothy had to
resist. In particular, the fact that at
Ephesus there were those who said they
were Apostles, and were not, might throw
some light on St. Paul's strong reitera-
tion to Timothy of his Apostolic autho-
rity. However this may be, what we
are concerned to observe is that there
are no sufficient grounds for assuming
that such errors as St. Paul denounces
did not exist at Ephesus at the time
supposed. The utmost that can be
shewn is that errors akin to these, but,
as is on all hands acknowledged, by no
means identical, existed a generation
later. But this, so far as it goes, is rather
a reason for thinking it probable that the
germs of the same errors were previously
in existence, gradually changing their
form and becoming more developed.
At any rate, when we know so little
of the early growth of Gnosticism, it is
arbitrary in the extreme to pronounce
that the form of error described in the
Pastoral Epistles could not at the time
supposed have existed at Ephesus.

But it is further to be observed that
there are decided indications of the
errors in question belonging to an early
stage of that movement which at length
developed the distinct Gnostic sects.
One of the few things on which we can
rely respecting the early history of Gnosti-
cism is that it sprang out of Judaism.
We may refer on this point to Dr.
Salmon's article on Gnosticism in the
Dictionary of Christian Biography (vol.
ii. p. 681). Now side by side with the
partially Gnostic features of the
errors denounced in the Pastoral Epistles
are Jewish characteristics. The strange
teachers are "of the circumcision," they "desire to be teachers of the law," they profess "Jewish fables." Of the
two influences thus existing side by side
there can be no doubt; and the only
question is how to explain their combina-
tion. In a very recent investigation into
the subject, Holtzmann (Pastoralbriefe,
1880; pp. 126-153), who rejects the
authenticity of the Epistles, seeks an
explanation in the desire of the forger
to give a colouring of St. Paul's time to
his composition. It is argued that the
errors really in view were Gnostic errors
of a later date than St. Paul, but that the
writer clumsily drags in some remini-
sences of St. Paul's day to keep up
the illusion. Hilgenfeld, in the article
already quoted from his Zeitschrift
(p. 452, &c.), opposes to this supposi-
tion his own strange view that though
both Jewish and Gnostic errors are men-
tioned by the Apostle in almost the same
breath, they are to be regarded as en-
INTRODUCTION.

tirely apart from each other, and as having no organic connexion. Why should all this ingenuity be exerted to explain away the simple fact, apparent on the face of such admissions, that the errors in question were really in the Judaean-Gnostic stage? It is shewn in the Commentary on the Epistle to the Colossians in this work that this particular form of error was even then in existence, and what can be more natural than that a few years afterwards it should have reached a somewhat further development—a development, however, of which it is difficult, in the absence of other contemporary information, to fix the precise character? If, in short, the Epistles are on other grounds accepted as genuine, then the explanation of these errors which conforms to the most obvious and natural interpretation of St. Paul's language appears in harmony with the other circumstances of the case. They are early Gnostic heresies, precisely in that intermediate stage of development through which, on other grounds, we have every reason to believe they passed.

With respect to the remaining question—that of the stage of ecclesiastical organisation exhibited in the Epistles, similar considerations apply. We refer for more particular explanations to the notes which follow on the text of the Epistles, especially on i Tim. iii. It will be enough here to say that, on the one hand, the organization represents a distinct advance from the condition of the Church exhibited in St. Paul's other Epistles, and that, on the other hand, it is still short of the stage when episcopal government was clearly developed and established. We see the outlines of that form of government firmly drawn, but the very titles of the two superior offices—of Bishops and Presbyters—are still interchangeable. The conditions are neither those of the early apostolic age, nor those of the end of the first century, still less of the second. They exhibit an intermediate stage in a transition which must have occurred, but which may well have varied in its rapidity in different churches, and the details of which it is very difficult to follow in particular instances. The indications, therefore, of the date of the Epistles thus afforded suit precisely the period to which, on other grounds, we have assigned them.

We may now review the contents of the First Epistle to Timothy and of the Epistle to Titus, and we shall obtain a final corroboration of all that has hitherto been urged. The First Epistle to Timothy is distinguished from the second by being less personal in its motive and spirit, and by being more expressly directed to the public duties with which he had been entrusted by the Apostle. St. Paul commences by saying that Timothy had been left at Ephesus in order that he might charge some that they teach no strange doctrine, nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions rather than godly edifying—or a dispensation of God—which is in faith, and he declares that the end or purpose of the commandment is “love out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned.” To promote the attainment of this end should be Timothy’s main object; and after once more denouncing the errors by which men were being led away from it, St. Paul proceeds in the second chapter to describe the public life of the Church, and the duties and qualifications of its various members. He commences with the duty of common prayer for all men, “for kings and for all that are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.” This concern for the good order of the world in general, and for the due maintenance of temporal authority, is eminently characteristic of St. Paul, and, as he intimates (ii. 7), is connected with the special apprehension which was given to him of the relation of the church to the Gentiles and to the world at large. In this public worship, he directs that the men should pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting, the women being present in modest apparel, but in silence and not presuming to teach. Then the Apostle passes to the internal organization of the Church, and describes the qualifications, first of a bishop and then of a deacon. From the omission of an intermediate grade, the “bishops”
(ἐκκόμιον) are here evidently the presbyters subsequently referred to, and whom Titus is instructed (i. 5) to ordain in every city. Within the church thus organized, Timothy is to contend against the errors which the Apostle foresaw, himself being an example to the believers in all his conduct. He is to give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine, and not to neglect the special gift that is in him. The Apostle then proceeds to give a number of practical directions as to the manner in which Timothy should conduct himself in his relations to the various classes of his flock—to elder and younger men, the elder and the younger women, and particularly in reference to the widows, of whom the Church from the first (Acts vi. 1) took special care, but whose management also seems to have occasioned no little difficulty. There follow a few practical directions to Timothy himself. As the Apostle draws to a close, one additional suggestion after another occurs to him; out of the fulness of his heart he passes from fervent exhortation (ch. vi. 11) to simple precepts (v. 17); and at length concludes by entreating Timothy “to keep that which is committed to his trust (v. 20).”

It has been noted with some surprise that, contrary to St. Paul’s usual custom, the Epistle ends without salutations; and Bleek (Einleitung, p. 571, ed. 3) actually makes this omission the primary and even sufficient ground on which he rejects this Epistle, while acknowledging the authenticity of the other two. But, as we have observed, the Epistle bears the character of a formal charge to Timothy himself. It is written for that purpose and for that only, and would hardly therefore have afforded an appropriate opportunity for the mention of other persons and other interests. In the parallel Epistle to Titus, there are also no salutations at the close, but simply directions to Titus respecting matters of business in which he would have to act with others. The latter Epistle closely resembles the first to Timothy, in a briefer form. Its directions are substantially the same; but its independence is valuable, as shewing that St. Paul organized on the same principles the different churches which he founded. The particular points which we have thus summarized will be found fully explained in the Commentary on the text.

We may thus conclude with all confidence that we have in these three Epistles a picture of the Church of the first days as it emerged from the tutelary care of the Apostles. The picture is one which, amidst all its shadows, presents the ideal in the pursuit of which the Church of subsequent centuries has found its utmost energies exerted; and we may observe, in conclusion, that it bears in every line the impress of the combined enthusiasm and strong practical wisdom of St. Paul. “One feels,” says even Renan, “the influence of St. Paul, a sort of sobriety in mysticism, and across the strangest aberrations of faith in the supernatural, a great foundation of uprightness and sincerity.” It is by a similarly wonderful combination—to translate this admission into Christian language—of the loftiest faith in the mysteries of godliness with profound practical wisdom, that the sacred writings are throughout characterized; and it is a combination of which no instance can be shewn in those apocryphal and forged productions among which it has been attempted to range these Epistles.

1 L’Église chrétienne, p. 105.
THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHY.

CHAPTER I.

1 Timothy is put in mind of the charge which was given unto him by Paul at his going to Macedonia. 5 Of the right use and end of the law. 11 Of St. Paul's calling to be an apostle, 20 and of Hymenæus and Alexander.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope;

2 Unto Timothy, my own son in the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables and to a digression on the wrong and right use of the Law in its agreement with the Gospel, and thence to a further digression on the mercy of God in converting Paul and entrusting him with the ministry. The habit of digressing, or "going off at a word," as it has been called, is a well-known characteristic of St. Paul's writings.

3. The sentence is left incomplete, again in accordance with St. Paul's style, which is ever governed by sequence of thought, rather than by rules of rhetorical or even grammatical arrangement. "Even as I besought thee to remain at Ephesus when I was on my way to Macedonia, in order that," &c., "so I beseech you still."

When I went.] Rather, "when I was going." See Introduction. It cannot be certainly determined from these words whether St. Paul visited Ephesus at this time. He might have left Timothy in passing, or have sent him there; and thus his expectation, when he parted from the elders of that Church at Miletus, that they would see his face no more, Acts xx. 25, might be literally fulfilled.

that thou mightest, &c.] In order that thou mightest charge, authoritatively, some (not important, probably, either in numbers or influence) not to be teachers of other doctrine—other than that which I have taught, and you have learned. The word ἐπερισσοῖς ἀρχιτάξασθεῖν implies more than to teach other doctrine: it is to assume the office of a teacher. Its opposite is "teachers of good things," καλοδιδαικόνως, Tit. ii. 3.

CHAP. I, 1, 2.—ADDRESS AND SALUTATION.

1. an apostle... by the commandment of God.] "Not of men, neither by man," Gal. i. 1. The designation God our Saviour, not in the sense of Preserver, but of Redeemer in Jesus Christ, is almost peculiar to the Pastoral Epistles, 1 Tim. ii. 3, iv 10; Tit. i. 3, ii. 10, iii. 4. It occurs, however, in Jude 25, and in the hymn of the Virgin Mary in Luke i. 47. The idea is found in St. Paul's other Epistles, e.g. 2 Cor. v. 19. Cf. Isaiah xii. 3, xlv. 15.

and Lord Jesus Christ.] And of Christ Jesus. The reading preferred by most commentators with A., D., F., G., C., D., however, is sustained by N., D., T., J., K.

our hope.] The object, foundation, and substance of our hope. So Col. i. 27, "Christ in you, the hope of glory." In Eph. ii. 14, Christ is called "our peace."

2. my own son.] My own true son; not, however, in the flesh, but "in the faith," which constitutes the close spiritual relationship of a convert. Cf. Phil. xiii 10; Gal. iv. 19. Writing to the Corinthians (1 Cor. iv. 17), St Paul calls Timothy his "beloved son and faithful in the Lord."

mercy.] An addition to St. Paul's usual salutation, "grace and peace," peculiar to the Pastoral Epistles. "Teachers," says St. Chrysostom, "have the greatest need of mercy." Peace and mercy are joined in Gal. vi. 16.

3-18. The purpose for which Timothy was desired to continue at Ephesus, leading
endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:

6 From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling;

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for un-

For the character of the erroneous teaching, see note at the end of the chapter.

4. fables and endless genealogies.] Of these the fables, myths, are preserved in abundance in the Talmud; and it is more reasonable to look for the “genealogies” in the mystic interpretations of the Jewish schools than to assume them to be the anarchisms of a forger who had transplanted into an Epistle to be attributed to an Apostle the succession of sons, or personal emanations from the Deity, which were taught a century later by Marcion and Valentinus. Philo, the Jew, who was teaching at Alexandria during the time of our Lord’s ministry, dividing the writings of Moses into historical and genealogical, says of the genealogical that “part is concerning the punishment of the impious, part concerning the reward of the just,” which, as Pressensé observes, genealogies can only be when they are interpreted allegorically. And, indeed, it is well known that Philo found in the genealogies a whole system of psychology. The names with him represented the various conditions of the soul: τρόποι τῆς ψυχῆς. Something of this kind were, probably, the “endless genealogies” of the Episcopal teachers. So Ignatius (ad Magn. viii.), where this passage of the Apostle seems to have been in the writer’s mind. Μη πλανάσθη ταῖς ἐτεροδοξίαις μαθήμασι τῶν παλαιῶν ἄνωθεν ὄνων τι ἐν μέρει νῦν καθ’ ἑαυτόν ζωέων, ἐμπλουθομένων χρίσαν μὴ εἰπῃχέναι. “Do not be deceived by heterodox teachings nor by ancient fables, which are unprofitable: for if up to this time we live according to Judaism (or according to the law) “we confess that we have not received grace.”

which minister questions, &c.] Rather, inasmuch as they minister questions of controversy, rather than God’s dispensation, i.e. the Gospel, which stands in faith, not in idle questions nor in the law. The word which in A.V. (“which minister”) is more than the relative, and implies the reason.

Dispen sanit,” oikoumian, with ἐν and all the best MSS. (not “edifying,” oikoumian) is undoubtedly the right reading.

5. Now the end, &c.] But the aim of the commandment, or precept, not of the law only, nor of the Gospel merely, but of all practical teaching as opposed to fables, &c., is love out of a pure heart and out of a good conscience: a conscience which trusts that its guilt is removed and that it is reconciled to God (Heb. ix. 9, 14), and which is being trained to be void of offence towards God and towards men (Acts xxiv. 16); and out of faith unfeigned, which is the root of love (Gal. v. 6), and which purifies the conscience (Acts xv. 9). Unless faith is real, the guilt is not removed and the training of the conscience is not attempted.

6. From which some having swerved.] Rather, having missed their aim at which. Such, argues the Apostle, is the real object of all practical teaching; but “some,” the same, probably, who were alluded to in ver. 3, having missed their aim at all this, have turned away to vain talking.

7. Nor whereof they affirm.] Nor what it is concerning which they make such strong assertions.

8. But we know that the law is good.] As these men say it is. This is readily conceded, “provided that one” (in his teaching) “use it agreeably to the design of a law,” i.e. for the purpose of restraining evil-doing. This verse is irreconcilable with the theory that the writer was opposing the Marcionites, and must, therefore, have written in the 1st century. Marcion taught that the law was evil; those whom the writer of this Epistle had in view evidently asserted it to be good, which he conceded, provided that it is applied to its due purpose.

9. the law.] Better law: law in general, including of course the Mosaic law. It is doubtful whether “law” when anarthrous, is ever used by St. Paul for the law of Moses exclusively, though it may be, when that law is in his mind the most prominent. See Rom. ii 12, note: Cf Rom. ii. 14 and note, with the remarkable passage from Aristotle (Polit. III. xiii. 14).

9. a righteous man.] I.e. for a just and
holy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for
manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for
menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any
other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine;

11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was
committed to my trust.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that
he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry;

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious: but
I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith and
love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This is a faithful saying, and

virtuous man, the opposite of the character which follows: not here a justified man, true
though it is that justice and virtue and all Christian graces follow after justification and
are the fruits of faith. If all were righteous, there would be no need of law.

for the lawless and disobedient.] Who break the law; the ungodly and sinners, who
rebel against God; the ungodly and unprofitable in their own impure lives.

11. According to.] Referring not to
“sound doctrine,” which would require the
article in the Greek, nor to things “con-
trary to sound doctrine,” which would be
weak and tautological, but more probably to
all of the preceding sentence from ver. 9.
“All which teaching is in accordance with
the Gospel.”

the glorious gospel.] Rather, the Gospel,
the good tidings, of the glory of God, as
revealed especially in the incarnation and
death of Jesus Christ and the salvation of
man.

which was committed to my trust.] A form
iii. 2; 1 Cor. ix. 17; Gal. ii. 7; 1 Thess.
ii. 4. So Titus i. 3.

12. The mention of the great trust com-
mittcd to him awakens a train of grateful
memories in the Apostle’s mind, which he
pours out in one of his characteristic digres-
sions; a digression, however, which has in-
directly an important bearing on his subject,
showing how in his own case the Gospel did
what the law could not do—transformed a
blasphemer into a saint.

12. And I thank Christ Jesus, &c.] Rather, And
I give thanks to Him who empowered,
or put power into, me, Christ Jesus our
Lord. The word “empowered” is the
same which is used in Acts ix. 23 of Paul
(“and Saul increased the more in strength,”
A. V.), and is elsewhere in the N. T. em-
ployed only by the Apostle himself.

for that.] Rather, that: the object of his
thanksgiving was. “He accounted me faith-
ful”—faithfulness being the divinely-required
qualification for the work—“appointing me
to the ministry.” Cf. 1 Thess. ii. 4, “as we
were allowed”—rather, “approved”—of God
to be put in trust with the Gospel.”

13. Who was.] I.e. “Me who was,” or,
“although I was before a blasphemer” (in
words), “and a persecutor” (in deed), “and
an insulter” (in spirit).

in unbelief.] In my then state of unbelief.

14. And.] But, the grace, i.e. free mercy.
with.] I.e. bringing with it faith and love
to God and man, which have their root in
Christ Jesus; faith and love being, as Calvin
says, signs and testimonies of the grace of
God.

15. This is a faithful saying.] This ex-
pression is found only in the Pastoral Epistles,
in which it occurs in 1 Tim. iii. 1, iv. 9; 2
Tim. ii. 11; Titus iii. 8. A comparison of
these passages will hardly bear out the opinion
that these “faithful sayings” are always quo-
tations from hymns or liturgical formularies,
although the present passage, with iv. 9 and
2 Tim. ii. 11, may be Christian maxims or
sayings in use in the Churches. Their oc-
currence, therefore, may be another indica-
tion that these three Epistles were written
late in the Apostle’s ministry; and it certainly
leads towards the conclusion that they were
all written about the same time.

worthy of all acceptance.] By all men,
everywhere.

that Christ Jesus came into the world.] With a definite allusion to the pre-existence
before “the Word was made flesh, and dwelt
among us.”

of whom I am chief.] Literally, “first,”
not, however, in time, but in excess; not
“the first who sinned,” or “the first of
sinners who was saved,” but, as our Version,
“of sinners the chief.” “Not because he
sinned first, but because he sinned most,”
worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.

16 Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

17 Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare;

19 Holding faith, and a good conscience; which some having put away concerning faith have made shipwreck:

20 Of whom is Hymenæus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

says Augustine. The tense is instructive: of whom I am chief, not I was. A pardoned sinner is a sinner still.

16. *first.*] Probably *as chief*, with reference to the last verse, though to the Greek reader the other idea of priority would also be conveyed. *all long-suffering.*] Literally, "the all long-suffering." *i.e.* All that long-suffering of his.

*for a pattern.*] The first draught or sketch to serve as the outline for all future times. But what is the pattern? The usual, and perhaps the correct, explanation is that Paul himself is the typical instance of a notorious sinner saved by the forbearance and mercy of Christ; but it may be the long-suffering of Christ in St. Paul's case which is the pattern of all such unbounded long-suffering for those who should hereafter believe on Him.

17. On the recollection of these mercies the Apostle breaks forth in a doxology, as in Rom. xvi. 25-27; 1 Tim. vi. 16. *unto the King eternal.* Literally, King of the ages, *ἀιώνιος* suggested probably by *eternal,* *ἀιώνιος* at the end of the last sentence,—of all those successive epochs and dispensations which together made up in the Hebrew mind the idea of eternity.

18. *immortal.*] Incorruptible; who neither perishes nor changes *the only wise God.* Rather, *the only God.* The word "wise" is not in the best MSS.

19. *This charge.*] It has been doubted whether the reference is to what precedes in vv. 3-5, or 15, or to what follows. But ver. 15 is not a command, and the injunctions in the other two passages are complete. The injunction here is "to war the good warfare," in doing which, however, Timothy would, no doubt, be also obeying the foregoing commands.

*I commit.* Solemnly.

*according to.*] "In accordance with..." New Test.—Vol. III.
I. TIMOTHY. I.

the offender to Satan, in order to the infliction by Satan of some bodily disease or suffering, to be continued, it would appear, till on his repentance the penitent was restored by the Church. It was, therefore, different from, though probably accompanied by, excommunication, or exclusion from the communion of the faithful. That the infliction of bodily disease was permitted to Satan, we have the authority not only of the Jewish Scriptures and Jewish belief, as in the case of Job, but of St. Paul, who calls his "thorn in the flesh," "the messenger of Satan to buffet him" (2 Cor. xii. 7), and of our Lord Himself (Luke xiii. 16), "This woman, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years."

ADDITIONAL NOTE on verse 3.

THE ἐπερχομένων εἰς τὸν Ἐφεσιαν ΕΚΚΛΗΣΙΑ.

It is a groundless assumption that the errors prevalent at Ephesus and in Crete, which Timothy and Titus were to oppose, were identical with any of the developed forms of the Gnostic heresies, still less with the elaborate systems of Marcion and Valentinus; and with it falls the argument drawn from this assumed identity, which assigns these Epistles, or either of them, to the second century. We may, however, see in these errors the Gnostic heresies in an early process of formation; a process which, in accordance with the laws of the development of thought, must have taken place at some time, and which in order to produce the phenomena of the end of the first and the first half of the second centuries must have been going on, at least during the later period of St. Paul's life and ministry. The elements, indeed, were in existence, and were beginning to enter into various combinations, as early as Christianity itself. Jewish speculation, although confined within the limits of the Sacred Books, had found in them abundant matter for mystical interpretation, if it had not also imported some Magian tenets. The Dualism of the East, with its rival principles of good and evil, the latter of which either was itself, or was the origin of, matter, had been spreading westward, and had brought with it both of its opposite, but equally logical, results—a stern asceticism and an unblushing licentiousness. And Greek philosophy, as remodelled by the Neo-Platonians of Alexandria, was coalescing with both the other elements. Taking up into itself the not ungenial theories of the East, and leading to new and ingenious interpretations of the Scriptures of the Old Testament, by which the words of Moses and the Prophets were made the vehicles, if not claimed as the origin and prototypes, of the dogmas of the Academy. By degrees these elements, combined in different proportions and under various influences, began also to attach themselves to the doctrines of Christianity. What had been philosophies without the Church, became heresies within it; and St. John, probably at the close of the first century, and Irenæus, Tertullian, with many others, in the second, had to defend the Gospel itself against the fantastic, but seductive, errors of the various Gnostic sects. As yet, however, these errors were existing only in their rudiments, and the notions, which went to make them up, were held probably in different proportions in different places. At Ephesus, while Timothy was there, it would seem to have been the Jewish element which prevailed; not—as previously in Galatia, and partially, perhaps, at Rome—a dogmatic system which insisted on circumcision and the acceptance of the whole Mosaic Law as necessary to salvation; but rather, a tendency to exalt the Law, as expounded probably by mystic interpretations and Rabbinical traditions, to a counsel of perfection which would raise the Christian to higher degrees of holiness. These opinions, therefore, are treated by the Apostle not so much as heresies, in the later sense of the term, which cut off those who held them from the Church, but rather as mischievous errors which endangered the health of the spiritual life. Of the same general character as the unsound doctrines which infested the Church at Colosse, they do not appear to have run up so far into that mystic theosophy as, e.g., "the worshipping of angels," which was apparently the basis of the heresy of Cerinthus towards the close of the century and the link of these errors with Gnosticism, properly so called; but as regards deterioration of morals, both in principle and practice, their effect would seem to have been worse. (Cf. Bp. Lightfoot on the Colossian Heresies in his edition of St. Paul’s Epistles to the Colossians and Philemon.)
CHAPTER II.

1 That it is meet to pray and give thanks for all men, and the reason why. \(9\) How women should be attained. \(12\) They are not permitted to teach. \(15\) They shall be saved, notwithstanding the testimonies of God's wrath, in childbirth, if they continue in faith.

I EXHORT therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men;

2 For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour;

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

6 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father.

7 To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.
6 Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not;) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

8 I will therefore that men pray

I am ordained.] Was ordained; “was duly appointed a preacher,” or herald, “and an Apostle;” yes, an apostle whatever Judaizing teachers may say, although not of the twelve and born, as it were, out of due time: “I speak the truth, I lie not.” The words in Christ are not in the best MSS.

a teacher of the Gentiles.] Especially such, as the Apostle of the Gentiles.

in faith and verity.] Probably “a teacher of them in the right faith and the truth to which God would have all men, including the Gentiles, to come.” The words “in faith” may, however, refer subjectively to St. Paul, who taught in faith. A faithful teacher will teach the truth.

Some German commentators (as Schleiermacher and De Wette) have seen in the parenthetical affirmative, “I speak the truth, I lie not,” the evidence of a late forgery imitating the manner of St. Paul on an occasion where such vehemence was uncalled for: and others have imagined it an instance of the habitual use of a phrase even where it was hardly necessary or justifiable. But unless the “teachers of the law” at Ephesus differed from Judaizers in Galatia, at Corinth, and elsewhere, there can be no doubt that they denied or deprecated St. Paul’s Apostleship; and his strong asseveration, when asserting himself to be an Apostle, is therefore consistent as well with the circumstances of the case, as with St. Paul’s usual style and trains of thought. It is, of course, true that Timothy himself did not need such assurance; but it is also true that this Epistle is official, not private; and, though not addressed to the Church, bears marks of being intended, for the most part, to be communicated to the Church.

8. I will therefore.] Return from the digression occasioned by the direction to pray for all men (vv. 1, 2) to other directions for public worship.

that men.] That the men in anathema to the women (v. 9).

pray every where.] I.e. in every place where they pray, referring however to public prayer.

lifting up holy hands.] Unprofaned by violence or impurity. Cf. Ps. xxvi. 6: “I will wash my hands in innocency and so will I compass thine altar;” and Clement of Rome, who probably had St. Paul’s words in his
every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array;

10 But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.

mind—"Let us then approach him in holiness of soul, lifting up pure and undefiled hands to him." Ad Cor. xxix. The well-known attitude of prayer among the Jews and early Christians, as well as among the Greeks and Romans, was the palms uplifted towards heaven—"tends ad sidera palmas," indicative of the offering of the petition and perhaps of the readiness to receive the gifts sought.

Our posture of folded palms, said to be common to Indo-Germanic races, perhaps denotes subjection or submission; as when, in the act of feudal homage, the folded hands of the vassal are placed between the hands of the suzerain.

without wrath and doubting.] Or, possibly, "disputation" here and in Mark viii. 21; and Phil. ii. 14. It is in favour of the rendering of our version that the word διαλογισμός signifies "doubting" everywhere else in the N. T., that it was so understood by the early Greek expositors, as Chrysostom; and that it harmonizes with the teaching of our Lord (Mark xi. 24) and of St. James (i. 6, 7). Doubt, as well as wrath, hinders the efficacy of prayer. For the latter rendering it is urged that the verb διαλογίζω signifies to "dispute" in Mark ix. 33; and elsewhere; and that at this least possible sense agrees better with the context here and in Phil. ii. 14; for in both passages it is rather outward conflict of opinion, than the inward contest in the hesitating mind, which is deprecated; in the latter case as injurious to the Christian's blameless example; here, as obstructive of the unity of common prayer.

9. In like manner . . . that women.] The women: still continuing directions for public worship: "I will that the women," who as well as the men will be present; for there is no women's Court in the Christian temple.

adorn themselves in modest apparel.] The word may perhaps reach somewhat beyond dress and ornament to demeanour and deportment.

broided hair.] Cf. 1 Pet. iii. 3.

gold, or pearls, &c.] There would seem to have been in the Ephesian Church, as Moshew observes in opposition to the taunts of Celsus and Julian, women of property who could afford such ornaments.

11. Let the women learn in silence, &c.] In public worship the men only are to teach as well as to pray. The Apostle had given the same injunction to the Corinthians, and had intimated that it was the universal regulation "in all the churches of the saints," 1 Cor. xiv. 35-36.

nor to usurp authority.] "Exercise authority." The particular prohibition concerning teaching in public, is expanded into a general precept.

13. 14. The reason for the prohibition is twofold: 1. The man was first in creation; 2. The woman first in transgression. "It was not Adam who was deceived" by the serpent; "but the woman being seduced by deceit" (Alford) "fell into transgression," the effects of which continue still. The preferable reading έπιπλησθείσα is stronger than έπιπλησθείσα, "thoroughly deceived," so deceived that deceit's fatal effects followed. Cf. St. Paul's reference to the temptation of the woman, 2 Cor. xi. 3.
CHAPTER III.

2 How bishops, and deacons, and their wives should be qualified, 14 and to what end St. Paul wrote to Timothy of these things. 15 Of the church, and the blessed truth therein taught and professed.

II.—Qualifications of Bishops and Deacons.

In this and the two following chapters we trace the ecclesiastical organisation of a Christian Church in the transition period between the time when the Churches were under the immediate government of the Apostles (as Corinth, e.g. at the time when St. Paul wrote his Epistles to the Corinthians)—having now their own ministers, the superior grade of whom were called Episcopi, Bishops or Presbyters indifferently, and the inferior, Deacons; while the work of each was determined by the special gifts, caritas, bestowed by the Holy Spirit upon them,—and the form into which it had settled down, probably by the end of the first, certainly early in the second century, when each Church, or body of Christians in a city, had its one chief Pastor, then called specifically Episcopus, Bishop, together with its Presbyters and its Deacons. At Ephesus, where Timothy had been left by St. Paul to supply his place there as chief Pastor and Governor of the Church—(whether as a temporary arrangement or as a permanent appointment may be doubtful)—he had under him a body of episcopi or presbyters and a class of deacons, both of whom were to be chosen, ordained, directed, and, if necessary, admonished and punished by him. There seems, too, to have been an organised system of female helpers, widows, who were also under his superintendence, and a church fund for the relief of the poor, which he was to regulate. We have here, then, the fact of Episcopal government, differing little from the settled Episcopacy of the next age, excepting in the circumstances that the chief pastor held only an intermediary and perhaps temporary charge, as the locum tenens of the Apostles, and that the appellations of Bishop and Presbyter were applied indifferently to the higher order of ministers under him.

The title Episcopus, Overseer, which had been borne at Athens by political agents sent to overlook and regulate the affairs of their subject states, and had thus found a place in the Roman official nomenclature towards the close of the Republic, had been used by the Septuagint translators, somewhat indefinitely, as an official designation, and was applied, e.g. to Eleazar, the son of Aaron, in Num. iv. 16, to the officers of the host in Num. xxxi. 14, and to civil officers, judicial or fiscal, in Isaiah lx. 17. Hence it probably suggested itself to Hellenistic and Gentile converts as a suitable designation for those church officers who had the pastoral oversight of the people.

The term Presbyter (or, abbreviated, Priest), Elder, from an appellation of age and thence of honour, had come also to be employed as a title of office, and was used by the Jews, not only for one class of the members of the Sanhedrim, but also for those who presided over every synagogue. It thence passed readily into the Christian Churches. See Note at the end of the chapter.

1. This is a true saying.] See on i. 15. a good work.] For the bishopric, or pres-
lyterate, the overseeing of the Church, is, as St. Augustine remarks, the name of a work, not of a dignity.

It has been objected that at so early a time as that at which these Epistles profess to have been written, none would desire an office which brought only responsibility and peril. But the instance of Diotrephes (3 John 9), and the earlier warning of St. James, “be not many masters” (iii. 1), prove that even from unworthy motives such a desire was possible. But is there no such thing as a desire to devote oneself to the service of God and His Church, even at the risk of loss and suffering?

2-7. It has been objected that the qualifications here required for a bishop are too commonplace; only, for the most part, what should be found in every consistent Christian. The answer is, that it is precisely the consistency of his previous conduct and character, and his excellence in the relations of domestic and social life, which guarantee the fitness of one who desires the office, for the work of a bishop.

2. the husband of one wife.] I.e. if he be married. The precept does not require a bishop to be married, which, indeed, St. Paul himself, and probably Timothy, were not: but it is impossible to reconcile it with the prohibition of the marriage of the clergy. But what is to be understood by the husband of one wife? Do the words prohibit the polygamy of the clergy? or remarriage after divorce? or also remarriage in general after the death of the first wife? With respect to the first; polygamy, we learn from Josephus and Justin Martyr, was still held lawful among the Jews, and accordingly the Apostle is thought by most early commentators to have prohibited it in this passage. But though lawful, we have no evidence that it was a common practice; and it had probably gone out of use when brought into contact with Greek and Roman customs, in which it was unknown. There is no allusion to it elsewhere in the N. T.; although, being contrary to the spirit of Christianity, and to the original idea of marriage as laid down by our Lord (Matt. xix. 4, 6), it would seem to have required, had it existed, some notice for its regulation, if not for its prohibition. Nor is it probable that the Apostle would have forbidden to the clergy only a practice which, even in the laity, would have scandalised the heathen world. But it seems conclusive against this opinion that the same qualification is required of widows taken into the

not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

number" (in v. 9) that she should have been the wife of one man,” where polygamy is out of the question.

But though polygamy was rare, divorce was widely prevalent both among heathens and Jews. In the later period of the Roman Republic and under the Empire divorce had become very common, and was practised without scruple or disgrace for trivial causes. Even Cicero divorced two wives in succession, with the first of whom he had lived thirty years. Nor had the practice been materially checked by the enactments intended to restrain it in the reign of Augustus. Among the Jews the frequency of divorce had called forth the reproof of the Lord even in the time of Malachi (ii. 14—16). It was allowed by their doctors on the most frivolous pretexts; and so deep had the idea of its lawfulness and expediency sunk into the Jewish mind, that our Lord’s disciples, hearing him prohibit all divorce unless for the cause of adultery, exclaimed, “If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry” (Matt. xix. 10). There was reason then for requiring as a qualification for ministers of the Church, and indeed for widows holding office in it, that they should not have been divorced and married again.

But did the prohibition extend to a second marriage after the death of a first wife or husband? The question is difficult; but probably it did. In the first place, the words are general, and there is nothing to limit them to a second marriage after divorce; so that if they do not apply, or are not confined, to the case of polygamy, they appear to reach to second marriages of all kinds. Again: it is clear that St. Paul, although in the case of the laity he permitted the remarriage of widows and widowers (1 Cor. vii. 9) and even recommended it for prudential reasons in the case of the younger widows (1 Tim. v. 14), yet considered it better, at any rate with regard to the circumstances of the times, that they should remain unmarried (1 Cor. viii. 8). And one of these circumstances might be the dispute in which second marriages were held even among heathen writers. Certain, however, it is, that the view of the early Christian Church, as found in Hermas, Tertullian, Athenagoras, Clement Alex., Gregory Naz., and others, was that though a second marriage, after the first had been dissolved by death, was not unlawful, it was not expedient; that, as it was expressed afterwards by Chrysostom, although it is not prohibited by law, it is a thing against which much may be said. (In Tit. ii.
4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in sub-

jection with all gravity;

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he
take care of the church of God?)

6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the con-
demnation of the devil.

7 Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without;
lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double-tongued, not given to
much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre;

9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

hom. ii.) And if such was, in any degree, the estimation in which second marriages
were regarded by believers and unbelievers in the Apostle's time, it is not improbable
that they would be considered by him a disqualification for the offices in the Church
which those who bore, were to have a good report "both of those within and of them
which are without" (1 Tim. iii. 7). A precept, however, like this, grounded on
prudential reasons, cannot apply strictly, but only analogically—that is, when circumstances
are identical or similar in other ages of the Church. It would not hold where no pre-
judice against such marriages exists.

vigilant.] sober (as wepranton is translated in v. 11) in its literal, probably, as well as its
metaphorical sense.

sober.] Self-restrained and modest in inward habit.

of good behaviour.] So too in outward manifestation.

apt to teach.] I.e. both able and ready.

3. Given to wine.] Rather, violent over

wines, and hence violent in a similar manner from any other cause. To object to these
prohibitions as obvious in themselves and unnecessary in a Christian community is to
forget the low tone of morality in Greek society, in which such habits carried little or

no reproach.

4. His own house.] In antithesis to the house

of God, v. 5. The submission and
demeanour of his children will be a proof of his
capacity for government, just as the conduct of
Eli's sons marked the incapacity of an
otherwise pious and good man.

6. Not a novice.] I.e. a recent convert.
For the ordination of such there was no necessity, if, as is probable, the Gospel had
been preached at Ephesus for at least twelve or thirteen years.

lifted up with pride.] Perhaps, "obscured,
blinded by pride." Some render, "swollen,
puffed up." The word is of somewhat
doubtful meaning. In our version it is trans-

lated "proud" in 1 Tim. vi. 4, and "high-
minded" in 2 Tim. iii. 4.

the condemnation of the devil] Luther
explains "the devil" the slanderer, i.e. slan-
derous men; others, as Mosheim, calum-
niators. But this is against the analogy of Scripture, in which the διασκόρευς is the Spi-

ritual Power of evil. But is "the condemnation of the devil" that which the devil hopes or
causes? or that which he has incurred? The
former sense is supported by the grammatical
affinity of v. 7, where "the snare of the devil"
is "the snare which the devil lays;" but the
deal is never represented as judging or con-
demning, which is the office of God alone.

"Non enim judicat, sed judicatur," says
Bengel. Most probably "the condemnation of the devil" is that into which the devil fell.
The passage then would seem to make pride the
cause of the fall of Satan.

7. Moreover.] Not only ought he not to be a
recent convert, of whom little can be known
even within the Church, but also "he must
have a good report from them which are
without."

lest be fall into reproach.] Either from those
within or from those without the Church.

and the snare of the devil.] Especially
perhaps, the temptation to recklessness, or
even apostasy, when a minister, and particu-
larly a recent convert, in the first ardour of
his zeal, finds himself an object of suspicion
and reproach.

8. See note on Deacons at the end of chapter.

double-tongued.] Saying one thing to one

man, another to another. Theodoret.

not greedy of filthy lucre.] The administra-
tion of the alms of the Church, for which the
order of Deacons was originally instituted,
was still one of its principal duties: hence
the especial necessity of freedom from covet-
ousness and of honesty in money matters, as a
qualification.

9. Holding the mystery of the faith.] "Their
faith's mystery:" having their belief in the
revealed gospel contained, as it were, in a
"pure conscience," a heart of integrity and

purity. A mystery is that which, unknown
or incomprehensible previously, has now been
10 And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless.

11 Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.

13 For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.


15. For.] I.e., those qualifications are high, and ought to be so, "for those who have served the office of Deacons well," &c.

purchase to themselves, &c.] The interpretations of this controverted passage are in the main two, either of which may be drawn from the Greek word βασιλικός, meaning either a step, a stair by which to ascend, or a "degree" or step" attained.

1. A high place in God's favour, either in this world or in the world to come, together with the privilege of coming boldly to Him (Heb. ix. 19; Eph. iii. 12) in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

2. A high position in the Church in the estimation of its members, and, perhaps, by promotion to the superior orders, together with great boldness or freedom of speech, as a minister and preacher in the faith of Christ Jesus. This explanation may be illustrated by the position held by Philip the Deacon, as an honoured minister and a bold and successful preacher of the Gospel. (Acts vi. 5; vii. 5-40; xxii. 8, 9.) There are no traces indeed, in the times of the Apostles, or in the primitive Church, of its Ministers passing through the grade of Deacons to the order of Presbyters; though it would be difficult to prove that such a step was never taken, as it was undoubtedly not long afterwards. The prayer in the Constit. Apost. (lib. viii. c. xviii.; Labbe, vol. i. p. 450) seems to have been framed on St. Paul's words rather in the sense of promotion to a high office. So Chrysost. Theophylact. The word "degree," βασιλικός, came to signify an order in the Ministry. In our Ordinal we pray for the newly ordained Deacons that they "may so well behave themselves in this inferior office that they may be found worthy to be called unto the higher ministries in the Church." If it be objected that the Apostle would not have set before Deacons so low a motive to serve well, it may be replied, that he has already spoken of such a desire as laudable, v. 1: that the Priesthood brought with it, at the time, labour and peril still more than honour; and that even lower motives, so long as they are subordinate and kept in their due place, are ever recognised in the morality of the Gospel.

See Note at end of the chapter.
14. These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly:

15. But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

16. And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

The “mystery of godliness” being well known to be the revealed truth of the Incarnation of the Son of God, the Word made flesh, the Apostle, constructing his language from the thought in his mind, rather than from the actual words used, goes on with the personal pronoun. In a somewhat similar manner, in the Epistle to the Colossians, he uses “mystery” in apposition with Christ; “this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you” (i. 27); “the mystery of God, even Christ,” ii. 2, assuming, as is most probable, the correct reading to be τοῦ μυστηρίου τοῦ Θεοῦ, Χριστοῦ. The whole passage, which is rhythmical and falls into three pairs of antitheses, bears strong marks of being a quotation from a primitive hymn (as Eph. v. 14) or a confession of faith (Bp. Ellicott). If so, it was necessary to pass to the personal pronoun in order to bring in the quotation.

was manifest in the flesh.] Rather, as in the margin, manifested: was incarnate, and therefore had a previous existence, in which He was not incarnate. Cf. John i. 1, 14; 1 John i. 1, 2, “The Life was manifested, and we have seen it.”

justified.] But though thus made man, He was shown and proved to be just (cf. Matt. xi. 19, “wisdom is justified of her children”), to be perfectly righteous, as no other man since the Fall ever has been.

in the Spirit.] 1. By many of the early commentators, “spirit,” when opposed to “the flesh,” in the case of our Lord (as in Rom. i. 4; Heb. ix. 14; 1 Peter iii. 18), is explained to be His divine nature. But this explanation can hardly have place here; as it is in His human nature, because He was truly man, that it was needful for Him to be proved righteous. 2. Others take the spirit to be the Holy Spirit, which was given to Him without measure (John iii. 14), which came upon Him and manifested Him to be the Christ at His baptism, led Him to His temptation, and raised Him from the dead (Rom. i. 3, 4). 3. But “spirit,” as used by St. Paul in antithesis to flesh, means usually the higher or spiritual part of man’s being, which he has over and above the flesh, ψυχή, and the spirit of the soul, πνεῦμα, and in which, when aided by God’s Spirit—so that Spirit which
I. TIMOTHY. III.

It may be so. The angels are said by St. Peter to "desire to look into" the mysteries of the Gospel. They, however, did see Him while on earth, at least at His nativity, His temptation, His agony, His resurrection, and His ascension.

preached unto the Gentiles.] For this mystery, that the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, &c., see Eph. iii. 1-11.

received up into glory.] And there remains. And thus in this rhythmical formula is briefly but pregnantly comprised the revealed truth of the Incarnation, of which the Church is to be the pillar and basis, and which Timothy was to maintain in the face of all the heresies which were soon about to arise.

ADDITIONAL NOTES on verses 1, 8, 16.

Bishops and Presbyters.
1. The proofs of the identity of "bishop" and "presbyter," in the language of the Apostle and probably till towards the end of the first century, may be thus briefly summed up. I. St. Paul (Acts xx. 17) called to Miletus the "elders" or "presbyters" of the Church of Ephesus, but he addressed them as those whom the Holy Ghost had made "overseers," "bishops," ver. 28. Irenæus, however, says that the bishops were summoned. 2. In the opening of his Epistle to the Philipp. i. 1, he salutes the saints "with the bishops and deacons," and it is most improbable that this Church should have several bishops and no presbyters, or that, if there were presbyters, they should be omitted in the salutation. 3. In this chapter of the 1st Epistle to Timothy he enumerates the qualifications of bishops and of deacons, making no mention of presbyters; but in v. 17-12, when speaking of the maintenance, discipline, and ordination of the ministers of the Church, he calls them presbyters or "elders." 4. St. Peter (1 Peter i. 2), addressing the presbyters, exhorts them (if the reading is correct) to exercise the office of bishop over the flock, "taking the oversight." Even Clement of Rome uses the appellation interchangeably, Ep. i. s. 42, 44. After this, in the second century, the distinction had been already made, and Ignatius and Polycarp restricted the term bishop to the chief officers of the Church. See Prof. Lightfoot on Philippians, pp. 94-96.

8. It has been doubted whether the office of deacon is identical with, or can be traced back to, the appointment of the seven in Acts vi., which, it is maintained, was a temporary office to meet a special emergency. The seven are nowhere called deacons; and Philip, the only one of the number of whom we read after Stephen's death (unless Nicolas gave his name to the Nicolaitans, Rev. ii. 6, which is very doubtful) is designated "the evangelist," Acts xxii. 8. But the circumstances which gave rise to the appointment were not peculiar to Jerusalem. Wherever a Church was planted, there would be the poorer members to be cared for, and it would not be desirable for the preachers of the Gospel to be all occupied in "serving tables." The solemnity of the appointment of the seven with prayer and the laying on the hands of the Apostles, has more the character of the ordination of a ministry than the designation to a temporary function. The terms bishop and deacon occur not unfrequently in connexion both with the administration of temporal relief and the exercise of an office of the ministry requiring and receiving special spiritual charismata. We meet with deacons in the Church at Philippi (Phil. i. 1), and a deaconess in that at Cenchrea (Rom. xvi. 1), and, finally, in the Pastoral Epistles the Diaconate appears as a recognised Order. The primitive Church believed in the identity of the Order of Deacons with the institution of the seven. Not only does Irenæus speak of Stephen and the rest as deacons, but even as late as the fifth century the Church at Rome, although the presbyters were numerous, restricted the number of deacons to seven; and the Council of Neocesarea (A.D. 315) forbade the number of seven to be exceeded in any city, however great. It was, indeed, to remedy the inconvenience caused by this limitation that an Order of Subdeacons was instituted. See Bingham, iii. 1, 3; Prof. Lightfoot on Philippians, p. 187.
The three various readings on this controverted passage are: 1. ὶθῶς (or, as abbreviated in the MSS., ὶς) εὐφωνίας, God was manifested. 2. ὸ (Ὁ) (scilicet μωτηρίων), which (mystery) was manifested. 3. ὸ (Ὁ) ὦ (σι) was manifested. 1. The reading ὶθῶς is supported by D2 (Codex Claromontanus) of the 6th century, but only as altered by a later hand; by J and K of the 8th or 9th centuries; and by nearly all the cursive MSS. which begin from the 10th century. The 4th or 5th century reads Θεός; but careful inspection of the passage, especially that made by Bishop Killicott, shows that not only a coarse line over the θ, but also the faint line within it, are additions by later hands, and that the original reading was θ. The Vatican MS. cannot be appealed to, because the jealousy of Rome has prevented accurate collation, and the edition published by Cardinal Mai proves to be not so much a faithful reproduction of the MS. as an edition of the New Testament grounded on it. ὶθῶς is supported by the Arabic of the Polyglott and the Sclavonian versions. It does not seem to have been in the copies used by the early Fathers; but it is quoted by Chrysostom—unless, as seems probable, its text has been altered—and more certainly by Theodoret, Joannes Damascenus, Theophylact, and Gecumenius, and apparently also by Eustathius and Macedonius, who, indeed, was accused of altering the reading to Θεός. The allusions to the text in Ignatius, the Apostolic Constitutions, and Hippolytus, are consistent with the other readings; and the passages quoted in favour of Θεός from Athanasius and Gregory Naz. are spurious, altered, or inapplicable.

2. ὸ is the reading of D (Codex Claromontanus), as originally written. It was adopted by the old Latin and the Vulgate versions, and is consequently the reading of almost all the Latin Fathers, excepting Jerome.

3. ὸ is found in A (Codex Alex.), see above, in C (Codex Ephremi) of the 5th century, and in the recently-discovered Codex Sinaiticus θ. It is also read in F (Codex Augensis), and G (Codex Boermianarius), both of the 9th century. It is supported by the Gothic version, the Philoxenian (Syriac) in margin, and the Coptic. It was read by Ephremus and Jerome, probably by Cyril Alex., and perhaps by Chrysostom.

The reading ὸ, therefore, has the support of the majority of the oldest and best MSS., and of the oldest versions excepting the Latin, while the authority of the Greek Fathers preponderates on the same side. The Latin Fathers, excepting Jerome, quote the Latin as they found it in the translation they used; so that their authority resolves itself into that of the Vulgate.

In estimating the internal evidence, it must be admitted that there is much more probable that ὸ should be altered into ὸ, or into Θής, than the reverse. ὸ is by far the most difficult reading; and it would be obvious to a transcriber to write ὸ as the correct relative after μωτηρίων, or Θεός, as being both grammatically and theologically correct, while accident alone could account for the substitution of ὸ for ὸ or Θεός; and it is highly improbable that the same accident should occur in the majority of the oldest and independent MSS. Considering, too, the important bearing of the reading Θεός on the theological controversies of the first three centuries and a half, it is scarcely possible that the passage, if Θεός were in the text as they read it, should not be found used polemically in the authentic remains of the Greek Fathers. For the same reason it would have been difficult to alter Θεός into ὸ without exciting remark and remonstrance, although Θεός might be accepted for ὸ as a clearer exponent of the same meaning. It is, indeed, worthy of notice that Macedonius, who lived at the beginning of the 6th century, is charged by later writers, Liberatus, Victor, and Hincmar, with having altered ὸ into Θεός. On the whole, the evidence, external and internal, seems to require the admission of ὸ into the text instead of Θεός or ὸ. The doctrinal importance of this critical controversy has been much overrated. Whichever reading is adopted, it is the personal Christ which, however expressed, must be understood as the subject of the words "manifested." "justified," &c.;¹ and as His pre-existence is deducible from His manifestation in the flesh, His divinity is implied in the reading ὸ, or even ὸ, as conclusively as it is expressed in the reading Θεός. He who can accept the pre-existence of the Son without acknowledging His divinity, could explain away the full force of the reading "God." Arian would, perhaps, be satisfied with either reading: Socinus is confuted by the literal exposition of either.

¹ "De sensu inam aut nihil refert: cum personam circumlocutione significat Graeci, quam eitissime ad ipsum personam revertuntur. "Os non Θεός sed τὸ σημανθενον spectat." Kidd, note in Porson's Tracts.
CHAPTER IV.

1. He foretelleth that in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith. 6 And to the end that Timothy might not fail in doing his duty, he furnisheth him with divers precepts belonging thereto.

NOW the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;

2. Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;

3. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

4. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5. For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

CHAP. IV.—Digression to erroneous teaching already imminent, suggested by the above statement of the fundamental and comprehensive truth of the Incarnation.

1. New.] But: notwithstanding the revelation of this great truth.

the Spirit speaketh expressly.] Not merely in such prophecies as our Lord's in Matt. xxiv., or the Apostle's own in 2 Thess. ii. 3 seq., but also probably by unwritten revelations made to him or others. Cf. Acts xx. 30; 1 John ii. 18; 2 Peter iii. 2, 3; Jude 18.

in the latter times.] Rather, in later times, times subsequent to those at which St. Paul was writing. The words are not equivalent to "the last days," ἐσχάταις ἡμέραις, in 2 Tim. iii. 1; nor to "the last time," τελευταίον ἡμερών, 1 Peter i. 5 (cf. Jude 18), "the last days," ἐσχάτων τῶν ἡμερῶν, which all look onward to the close of the Christian dispensation; nor again to "these last days," εἰς ἐσχάτων τῶν ἡμερῶν τότας, Heb. i. 2; or to "the end of the world," συντελεῖν τῶν αἰώνων, Heb. ix. 26 (cf. 1 Cor. x. 11), which signify the last of God's dispensations to this world, i.e. the Christian dispensation itself. The errors St. Paul has in view, though germinating—some, indeed, being already held and taught, as by the Essenes—developed subsequently into such heresies as those of the Marcionites, Enarraties, and Manichæans.

seducing spirits.] Spirits who lead astray, as opposed to the Spirit of Truth, who leads into the whole truth (John xvi. 13). Cf. 1 John iv. 1.

doctrines of devils.] i.e. doctrines taught by demons, the spirits of the false prophets or teachers, "many of whom," when St. John wrote, were "already gone out into the world;" not "doctrines concerning demons," whether inculcating daemon worship, or speculating on their existence, origin, and relative rank, as, e.g., in the Valentinian system of æons.

2. Speaking lies in hypocrisy.] Rather, through the hypocrisy of liars: the instrument by which some would be led to depart from the faith.

having their conscience seared with a hot iron.] i.e. the liars. The translation may be, "men branded on their own consciences," as slaves were with their master's brand,—the self-convicted slaves of sin. Our English Version has taken the idea of the loss of sensibility produced by the burning, for which it has the authority of Theodoret. Perhaps the "branding" might convey both associations to a reader accustomed to see the effects of the practice.

3. These ascetic tenets, which were held among the Jews by the Essenes, early endeavoured to find a place in the Christian Church. See Col. ii. 16. Clement of Alexandria speaks of those in his time, the end of the 2nd century, who called marriage fornication and the invention of the devil (Strom. lib. iii. c. 6, s. 49).

know the truth.] "Fully know" it; with allusion, perhaps, to "knowledge," Gnosis, a word already becoming technical, and much in the mouths of heretics and false teachers, cf. 1 Cor. viii. 1, 2. In those who have really known the truth is the design of creation fulfilled.

The stress of the argument here is evidently—not that God is the Creator of all these things, as if in opposition to the doctrine afterwards taught by the Gnostics, that material things were not made by God, but by an inferior being,—but that God, who is the Creator, created them for the use of His servants. Marcion e.g. taught that creation was not the work of a good God, but of the God of the Old Testament. So far, then, from this passage proving that the Epistle was written in post-Apostolic times, the writer, had he lived in the days of developed Gnosticism, must have noticed the tenet on which asceticism was then based, that the origin of all material things and enjoyments is evil: which he does not.
6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse profane and old wives' fables, and exercise thyself rather unto godliness.

5. sanctified.] Set apart and made meet for the godly use of Christian men.

by the word of God and prayer.] Which they use before partaking of it and enjoying it. The phrase "the word of God" has been very variously interpreted. 1. The Divine blessing on all created things in Gen. i. 24, 28. 2. A general declaration of God's Word. 3. The Divine Word, or Logos, by whom all things were made. All which explanations seem inadmissible, because all refer to the past; while here, by the word of God, meats, &c., are to be sanctified as often as they are used. 4. The prophetic spirit by which the giver of thanks speaks, referring to 1 Cor. xiv. 17, which would narrow the application of an evidently universal proposition to those who had the gift of prophecy. 5. The word addressed to God and prayer, which is tautological and an unexampled use of the words λογος Θεου. 6. The most probable explanation is, the Word of God, or Holy Writ, in the language of which the prayer and thanksgiving would be usually couched, as it is, e.g., in a "Grace before meat," given in the Apostolic Constitutions, viii. 49. "Blessed be Thou, O Lord, Who hast fed me from my youth; Who givest food to all flesh. Fill our hearts with joy and gladness, that, having always all sufficiency, we may abound unto all good works in Christ Jesus our Lord, through Whom be unto Thee, honour, glory, and power for ever and ever. Amen."

There would seem to be an allusion to the Eucharist, "the Lord's Supper," the type of all Christian banquets, in which it is probable that from the earliest times the words of institution were recited together with prayer and thanksgiving. And it is plain, from Rom. xiv. 6 and 1 Cor. x. 30, that giving of thanks at meals was a Christian practice; by which, indeed, St. Paul infers in the latter passage, that even meats, which had been offered to idols might be sanctified to the use of the believer. Such supplication and thanksgiving, expressed for the most part in the language of the Word of God, hallow these gifts which were also good by virtue of their creation, and enables those who use them in moderation and thankful

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

9 This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptation.

10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust

promise of the life that now is.] Perhaps "the promise of life," i.e. of all that life can give and is; "both of the life that now is, and of that which is to come."

promise of the old covenant," observes Bishop Ellicott, "are thus incorporated in the new and enhanced." But the best promises even of the present life are spiritual.

9. This is a faithful saying.] Here referring to the foregoing maxim. See on i. 15. There is nothing in what follows which has any appearance of a well-known phrase.

10. For therefore.] With a view to this promise of life, and its realisation in ourselves and others.

see.] Paul, Timothy, and all ministers of the Gospel.
in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by pro-

12. Let no man despise thy youth. I. e. have reason to despise it. Timothy was probably at this time thirty-eight or forty, and therefore much younger than some of the presbyters or elders he had to govern. His youth had probably been before objected to. See 1 Cor. xvi. 11.

13. To reading, to exhortation, to doctrine. The article in the Greek before each of these words would seem to define them as belonging to the offices of his ministry. "To the (or your) public reading of the Old Test. (2 Cor. iii. 13, 14), and possibly some of the New: (see Col. iv. 16; 1 Thess. v. 27), to your exhortation to the duties of the Gospel, and to your teaching of its doctrines."

14. Neglect not. By not employing it diligently to the end for which it was given. (Cf. 2 Tim. i. 6.)

The gift. Charisma, used often by St. Paul, and once by St. Peter (1 Pet. iv. 10), a gift from the Holy Spirit, as proceeding from the grace, xipous, the free, unearned mercy of God. See especially 1 Cor. xii. Here it is the special gift conferred on Timothy at his ordination to qualify him for, and to give effect to, the work of the ministry; — a gift which is invoked in our service for the ordering of Priests, together with the laying on of hands of the Bishop and Presbytery, in the words, "Receive the Holy Ghost for the office and work of a Priest in the Church of God."

12. Which was given thee by prophecy. The revelation, probably, made to the Church or to some members of it, which designated Timothy as called to the ministerial office. See i. 8.

13. With the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. Or the body of the presbyters. So Acts xiii. 1-3, when the Holy Spirit, by the mouth of certain prophets, had designated Barnabas and Saul for separation for the work whereto He had called them, when they had fasted and prayed they "laid their hands on them."

The rite of imposition of hands, as at the same time designating for an office or duty and invoking a blessing or Divine gift for the due performance of it, is found in the Old Test. at the inauguration of Joshua, Num. xxvii. 18, 23; Deut. xxxiv. 9. Employed not only by the patriarchs, as in Gen. xviii. 14, but by our Lord in imparting blessing, Matt. xix. 13, and in healing, Luke xiii. 13, it was continued in the Christian Church as the outward sign of the oblation and imparting of spiritual gifts, whether of the miraculous powers which were granted to some believers in different degrees and kind, or of the strengthening grace which is needed by all who have been baptized, or of the special qualifications and powers bestowed for the discharge of any particular office or work in the Church. The "doctrine of laying on of hands" is enumerated in the Epistle to the Hebrews (vi. 1, 2) among the "principles" or rudimental tenets of the doctrine of Christ."

The Presbytery is here spoken of as an institution, a body united by brotherhood and discipline, not merely as a number of unconnected and independent Presbyters. In his second Epistle (2 Tim. i. 6), St. Paul reminds Timothy of "the gift of God which is in thee by the putting on of my hands." The inference is that Timothy was ordained by the Apostle in the exercise of that function which was afterwards committed and confined to the chief officer of each Church, in the second century called distinctively the Bishop, together with the Presbyters. So in our Ordinal,
I. TIMOTHY. IV. V.

15 Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear 1 to all.

16 Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.

"the Bishop with the Priests present shall lay their hands severally upon the head of every one that receiveth the office of Priesthood." It is worthy, however, of observation that the ordination of Timothy was by, ἀπό, the imposition of the hands of St. Paul (2 Tim. i. 6), and with, μετά, that of the Presbytery. The former was the instrument of Ordination; the latter an important and ordinary, but probably not an essential, concomitant.

It is not known where Timothy was ordained. Some suppose Ephesus; but it might be in any of the cities visited by St. Paul in which there were Presbyters enough to form a Presbytery.

CHAPTER V.

1 Rules to be observed in reproving. 3 Of widows. 17 Of elders. 23 A precept for Timothy's health. 24 Some men's sins go before unto judgment, and some men's do follow after.

15. Meditate upon these things.] Rather, Let these things be thy care.

give thyself wholly to them.] Literally, ἅπειρον αὐτῶν, "be in them." They make your life's employment. Compare the exhortation in the Form of Ordering Priests: "We have good hope that you have clearly determined to give yourselves wholly to this office . . . so that . . . . you will apply yourselves wholly to this one thing."

to all.] The reading, "in all things," given in the margin from the received Greek Text, is not borne out by the best MSS.

REBUKE not an elder, but in-treat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren;

2 The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity.

3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.

CHAP. V. I—VI. 19. Miscellaneous directions for discipline and government of the Church and of the different classes in it.

V. 1. an elder.] In age, not here a presbyter in office; though they would sometimes be coincident. Timothy was yet young (iv. 12).

3-16. Directions about Widows. This passage has caused, and probably will ever cause, much difference of opinion. One of the earliest cares of the Christian Church was the maintenance of widows out of its charitable funds; and the origin of the order of Deacons is assigned to a murmuring which arose among the Hellenistic believers against the Hebrew Christians, "because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration." Acts vi. 1. Similar provision would doubtless be made for these helpless members of the society wherever a church was founded; and directions might be needed to prevent any misapplication of charity in their case by admitting the claims of those who had children or relatives naturally responsible for their support. St. Paul therefore instructs Timothy (vv. 3-8) to honour with the alms of the Church only those who are "widows indeed," being destitute of relations on whom the duty of supporting them ought to rest, and themselves bearing a good character. At first sight it would seem, and indeed it is maintained by many, that the subject of the qualifications of these widows who are to be recipients of the alms of the Church is continued in vv. 9-16; but further consideration makes this view at least improbable. It would not be reasonable to exclude from the Church's alms destitute widows because they were not yet sixty years old, or had been twice married, or had never been in a condition of life to enable them to perform the acts of charity enumerated in v. 10. The abruptness, too, of the transition at v. 9, "Let not a woman be taken into the number," or list, without any particle to connect it with the preceding verse, rather looks like the passage to a new, however kindred, subject. At any rate it would seem that, besides the general body of widows who had a claim on the alms of the Church, and sometimes perhaps chosen out of them, was a list (catalogue) of widows having special qualifications and probably special duties. That there was an institution
But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God. 

Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day. 

But she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth. 

And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless. 

But if any provide not for his grandchildren," for which the English word "nephews" was formerly used.

Let them.] "Let her children and descendants first learn to show filial piety to their own family," which in this respect is nearer to them than the Church, "and to requite their progenitors, parents or grandparents, for the tender care bestowed upon themselves. Some early interpreters, as Chrysostom, the Vulgate, and a few modern commentators, make the subject of this clause "widows," implied in "any widow," "Let them first shew piety towards their own household, and requite their progenitors, now departed, by affection to their posterity." But besides that gratitude to progenitors is a far-fetched motive for obliging parents and grandparents to love and support their children and grandchildren—a duty which the law of nature and of God has already bound on them by far more powerful sanctions—the question here is the qualifications of widows to receive aid from the Church's alms; and she who is a widow indeed and desolate, is qualified, not because she has no children or grandchildren to support, but because she has none to support her.

For that.] I.e. the exercise of filial piety. The words "good and" are omitted in the best MSS.

Desolate.] Without husband, children, or descendants.

Supplications and prayers.] See on ii. 1. Night and day.] As did the widow Anna. Luke ii. 37.

In pleasure.] And extravagantly: the Greek word (σπαραξία) combines the notion of luxurious self-indulgence with that of profligacy. (Trench, Syn.) Such a life destroys the spiritual life.

But, &c.] "But," to revert to the obligation of children and grandchildren, which indeed has a wider application,—"if any one"—not merely those within these closer relationships—"does not provide for his own" relatives, "and especially for those of his own household," his own immediate family, "he has denied the faith," practically, "and is" in this respect, "worse than an unbeliever," who does, for the most part, perform these natural duties of domestic life.
I. TIMOTHY. V.

9-15. Qualifications of widows to be admitted into the class of Ecclesiastical Widows.

9. number.] "Catalogue" or list.
wife of one man.] "One husband"; neither having been divorced and married again, nor (probably) having remarried after the death of her first husband. (See on iii. 2.)

10. if.] "For example."

she have brought up children.] Those of others, especially orphans, besides her own.

washed the saints' feet.] Paid the kind offices of hospitality in an especial manner to Christians, as distinguished from "strangers."

refuse.] Decline, as disqualified to be placed on the roll of ecclesiastical widows; although doubtless, if poor, they would not be excluded from relief.


their first faith.] Or "promises"; the engagement they made, if not formally, at least virtually, when they were admitted on the roll of Widows, one of whose qualifications was, to have been the wife of one husband.

13. And withal.] Rather, And at the same time too.

from house to house.] Lit. "the houses" which it was their business to visit. As the duties of the Ecclesiastical Widows required them to visit the families of believers, it was necessary that they should be discreet, experienced and godly women, to prevent their visits from degenerating into idle gossip and tale-bearing.

The somewhat unusual construction, ἁπάντι ἀνδρόκοι, "they learn to be idle," is justified by Plato, Euthyd., οἱ ἁπάντι ἀνδρόκοι ἀνδροκωδάστεια.

14. the younger women.] Rather, widows —see v. 11. The Greek has no substantive. When they wish it, the Apostle wills it, even though in his own judgment it may be preferable for a widow to remain single. See 1 Cor. vii. 8, 9.

the adversary.] The opponent of Christianity. Cf. 1 Pet. ii. 11, 15.

15. turned away after Satan.] From sobriety and purity, and consequently perhaps from the faith. There was abundant time for the Apostle to have had experience of such melancholy declensions at Ephesus, or at any rate in other Churches; so that it is a feeble argument which infers from these words a date in the second century for this Epistle.

16. If any man or woman that believeth.] Some MSS. read only "if any woman:" but the received reading is preferable. Whichever is adopted, the sentence is an additional explanation referring to the whole subject of widows, and extends the duty of assisting them, instead of throwing their maintenance on the Church, from children and descendants (v. 4), to all relations and connexions, if believers, even if these be women and not themselves heads of families.

17. Let the elders who rule well be counted worthy of double honour.] Of greater regard than is paid to others, both in the reverence shown them and in the maintenance (honourarium) allotted to them. See on v. 3.
I. TIMOTHY. V.

18 For the scripture saith, *Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn.* And, *The labourer is worthy of his reward.*

19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but *before two or three witnesses.*

20 Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear.

21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.

especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.] There is no emphasis in this place on "labour," as if in contradistinction to presbyters who are remiss; nor is it probable that (as Mosheim thinks) labouring in word and doctrine applies to those who are engaged in strictly missionary work, preaching the Gospel where it is not known. But it may be inferred from the passage, first, that there were, at this early time, some presbyters who ruled but did not teach; and, secondly, that both these and, in a higher degree, those who also taught, received maintenance from the congregation even from the first foundation of at least the Pauline Churches.

18. the ox that treadeth out the corn.] Rather and more literally, an ox while threshing.] The precept in Deut. xxv. 4 is one of humanity to animals. The ox, while treading out the corn with his hoofs or dragging the threshing-wain over it, was not to be prevented from helping himself as the reward of his labour. St. Paul, in an earlier Epistle, 1 Cor. ix. 9, had argued from this text the right of a minister to be maintained by those to whom he ministered: he here refers to it as inferring the right.

And. The labourer is worthy of his reward.] Rather, hire, as in Luke x. 7, where these words are used by our Lord. It is highly probable that St. Paul was acquainted with the Gospel of St. Luke, which was written before the Acts of the Apostles, and therefore, in all likelihood before the termination of the Apostle’s first imprisonment at Rome. But he may have been acquainted with the words as one of our Saviour’s numerous sayings, which were repeated and taught by Evangelists before the “Gospels” were reduced to writing; or the quotation may possibly have been a national proverb used independently by our Lord and by St. Paul, the origin of which might be due to the precept in Deut. xxiv. 14, 15. In any case there is no weight in Baur’s argument, who assigns the Epistle to the second century because St. Luke’s Gospel is quoted as “Scripture.” In all probability the words “the Scripture saith” refer only to the first quotation; and even if the latter clause is included, our Lord’s words recorded by St. Luke may have been called Scripture by St. Paul, as St. Paul’s own Epistles are by St. Peter—2 Pet. iii. 16.

21. before two or three witnesses.] Rather, on the testimony of: i.e. on the same amount of testimony as was required in other cases. See Deut. xix. 15.

22. Them that sin.] Perhaps not Presbyters only, but all.


the Lord Jesus Christ.] The words “the Lord” are not in the best MSS.

the elect angels.] The words are variously explained. It is perhaps best to understand them generally, the Holy Angels, God’s special attendants. So nearly “elect” is used in 1 Pet. ii. 6, not so much to imply distinction as to express excellence. The elect saints are God’s Church on earth; the elect angels are His court in heaven. They are appealed to here, as Bishop Bull observes, “because they are in the future judgment shall be present as witnesses with their Lord.” Serm. XII. (i. 315). Other interpretations are: 2. Those who kept their first estate, in contradistinction to the fallen angels. 3. The guardian angels of Timothy or of the Church of Ephesus. 4. Angels specially selected by God as His messengers to men.

these things.] These directions as to the accusation of presbyters and the open rebuke of those who sin.

without preferring one before another.] Better, without prejudice, as in the margin.

22. Lay hands suddenly on no man.] Rather, in accord with modern usage, hastily. This injunction is referred by Hammond, De Wette, Bp. Ellicott, and others, to the imposition of hands at the restoration of penitents to the Church by absolution, which, they argue, is supported by the context of vv. 20, 21, 24, 25. If so, it stands alone in the New Test.; nor is there anything in these four verses which reaches so far as to the idea of exclusion from the Church or excommunication. All the old commentators, and the great majority of modern, understand it of Ordination in con-
23. Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach’s sake and thine often infirmities.

24. Some men’s sins are open beforehand, going to before judgment with iv. 14 and 2 Tim. i. 6; and it is so applied in our Ember-week prayer, “that they may lay hands suddenly on no man.” There is no real difficulty in the connexion of the injunction, thus explained, with the context. The same careful avoidance of prejudice or partiality on the one hand, the same observation of antecedents of reputation and character on the other, which are requisite in deciding on accusations, are still more essential in the approbation of candidates for the ministry; and in a very solemn sense does he who hastily ordains the unworthy make himself “partaker of other men’s sins.”

Keep thyself pure.] With an emphasis on the personal pronoun, as especially becomes one who is to discern the character and to watch over and reprove the faults of others. But this precept does not imply a scrupulous asceticism: on the contrary.

23. Drink no longer water.] Rather, Be no longer a water-drinker, which Timothy had, perhaps, become, either in compliance with the best features of an ascetic tendency now developing, or as an example to the luxurious Greeks.

24. 25. Concluding cautionary rule both for the exercise of discipline, vv. 19–21, and for discretion in laying on of hands, v. 22.

24. 24. going before.] Like heralds; “crying sins,” to judgment.] Or “decision;” so that in such cases there is little danger of mistake. they follow after.] And therefore require investigation and caution.

25. Likewise, &c.] “In like manner too” (to take the other case) “their good works are manifest;” “and they that are otherwise,” not manifest at first sight, “cannot be hid” on inquiry. The caution is directed against prejudice, ver. 21, and haste, ver. 22.

Some explain “judgment” of the judgment of God, when the secrets of all hearts will be disclosed; a sense in which the words are awfully true. But the thought is alien from the context, which consists of practical directions to Timothy.

---

CHAPTER VI.

1. Of the duty of servants. 5. Not to have fellowship with newfangled teachers. 6. Godliness is great gain, to and love of money, the root of all evil. 11. What Timothy is to do, and when and how. 17. And whereof to admonish the rich. 20. To keep the purity of true doctrine, and to avoid profane janglings.

Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2. And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

CHAP. VI. 1. Let as many servants as are under the yoke.] Rather, Let as many as are under the yoke, as bondmen or slaves. There is no stress on the words “under the yoke,” as if they referred to the slaves of unbelieving masters, whose service was a yoke indeed; they rather strengthen the force of the term bondslaves. Slaves are under the yoke, and must be content to be so, whether their masters are believers or unbelievers.

blasphemed.] Rather, evil spoken of.

2. but rather do them service &c.] Rather, but let them serve them the more, because they who are receivers of the benefit (i.e., of their service) are believers and beloved. It is objected to the rendering that the service of slaves to their masters could hardly be called a benefit (eispeoria); but Alford quotes a passage from Seneca (De Beneficiis, iii. 18), where he examines the question whether a slave can confer a benefit on his master, and answers it in the affirmative. And there is perhaps involved in the word “receivers” (oi ómouskaußavímenos) the notion of mutual benefit, suggesting the food, shelter, raiment, which
3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness;

4 He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings,

5 Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself.

6 But godliness with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after right-
I. TIMOTHY. VI.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession;

14 That thou keep this commandment without spot, unreproveable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ:

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;

16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.

sense all Christians should be men of God; but to Timothy, who from a child had known the Scriptures, the name would suggest the prophet who came to Bethel (1 Kings xiii. 1), Elijah and Ezekiel, and the lives and habits of these holy men, so opposed to covetousness and luxury.

see these things.] Avarice and all the sins which grow from that root.

12. the good fight of faith.] Against the world, the flesh, and the devil: “grasp eternal life,” the prize of the contest. Cf. 2 Tim. iv. 7, 8.

suberrunto ... also.] i.e. to eternal life; thou wast called, and didst confess that good confession (of faith in Christ) in the presence of many witnesses. The tense of the verbs points to some special occasion which, though well known of course to Timothy, it is impossible to determine with certainty now. It might be his Ordination, or some time of trial and dan, or: but probably his Baptism, when, as we know from Rufinus and others, from very early times, a public profession of faith was made. The Divine call and the confession of believers, observes Bengel, are correlatives: they imply each other.

13. “The Apostle having reminded Timothy of the confession of faith he made in the presence of many witnesses, now gives him charge, in the face of a more tremendous presence, not to disgrace it by failing to keep the commandment which the Gospel imposes on the Christian.” Bp. Ellicott.

quickeneth.] “Giveth life to.” Till the discovery of the Sinaitic MS. the weight of MSS. authority was decidedly in favour of another reading, “who keepeth alive” (κοινωνιωτας in A. D. F. G., as against κοινωνιωτας in K. L.); but external evidence being now nearly balanced by the addition of ΣΙ, the context would seem to sustain the received reading. The reference is to the universal quickening at the resurrection, at the appearing of the Lord Jesus Christ, when all fidelity and obedience will be tried, and the certainty of which, as held in God’s hand, should be before every minister and every Christian as a motive.

before Pontius Pilate.] Or, “under,” i.e. in the time of Pontius Pilate, as in the Creeds. Either translation is admissible. If the former is adopted, “his good confession” will be that narrated in John xviii. 33-37; if the latter, that witnessed by his life, teaching, and death.

14. this commandment.] Rather, the commandment; not to be referred probably to any one of the foregoing, but to the Gospel in general, as a precept of holy practice.

without spot, &c.] Some apply these adjectives to “thou”: i.e. that thou being without spot, &c.; but they are applicable to things as well as persons, and are almost necessary to complete the sense of “keep.”

15. in his times.] His own times: ordained by Him, and known only to Him.

the blessed, &c.] These titles are applied to God the Son in Rev. xvii. 14, xix. 16.

16. Who only hath immortality.] Essentially and underived, He being the essence and fount of all life. (John v. 26.)

dwelling in, &c.] More literally, dwelling in light unapproachable, whom no one of men has seen nor is able to see. Yet our Lord says of the pure in heart that “they shall see God,” Matt. v. 8, and holiness is a condition “without which no man shall see the Lord,” Heb. xii. 14. The word “see” must therefore be used in a different sense. Bishop Pearson distinguishes thus: God is invisible to the natural eye, both in man’s natural and supernatural states, and to the intellectual eye in his natural state; but the invisibility of the Divine Essence does not prevent our clear intellectual vision of Him in our supernatural state. (Opera Posth. Lec. xii.
17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate;

19 Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:

21 Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

The first to Timothy was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana.
THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO

TIMOTHY.

CHAPTER I.

1 Paul's love to Timothy, and the unfeigned faith which was in Timothy himself, his mother, and grandmother. 6 He is exhorted to stir up the gift of God which was in him, 8 to be steadfast, and patient in persecution, 13 and to persist in the form and truth of that doctrine which he had learned of him. 15 Phelyclus and Hermogenes, and such like, are noted, and Onesiphorus is highly commended.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus.

2 To Timothy, my dearly beloved son: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day;

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy;

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee,

CHAP. I. 1, 2. Address and Salutation.

1. according to the promise.] "I.e. an apostle in order to make known the promise."

2. dearly beloved son.] Some see in the change of expression from 1 Tim. i. 2, "my own true son," an alteration of the Apostle's feeling towards Timothy; less of confidence, more of affection. But a writer is not bound, nor likely, to use the same formula of sentiment in every letter. Timothy was St. Paul's own son in the faith, and he was also dearly beloved.

3–6. Thankful expression of affection, and of desire to see him.

The construction of these verses is a little doubtful. They may perhaps be best paraphrased thus: "I give thanks to God whom I worship from my forefathers in a pure conscience, as I have incessantly remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day, longing to see thee, when I remember thy tears at our parting, that I may be filled with joy when we meet again;—I give thanks to God, I say, when I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith which is in thee." The object of St. Paul's thanksgiving was Timothy's sincere faith, which was brought to his memory in his nightly and daily prayers. It has been supposed that it was in Asia, where St. Paul left Timothy, that he was arrested and sent a second time a prisoner to Rome. Hence especially Timothy's grief. See Bp. Wordsworth. But this, though not improbable, is but conjecture.

serve.] Rather, worship.

my forefathers.] Here "immediate progenitors" by whom the Apostle had been brought up in the worship of the one true God, as Timothy too had been by his mother and grandmother.

pure conscience.] See 1 Tim. iii. 9.

which dwelt first.] This may mean that Lois was the first of the family, and then Eunice, who embraced the Christian faith. But in Acts xvi. 1 Timothy is described as "the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewess and believed," or a "believing Jewess": and it would seem more probable that Timothy was converted to Christianity at least as early as his mother. The faith, then, which dwelt previously in his grandmother and mother would be the unfeigned faith in God and in all the promises of the Old Testament, which involved in germ and type the truths of the New. The Apostle is referring, not so much to the object of their faith, as to its quality: it was "unfeigned."

I am persuaded that in thee also.] I.e. that it dwells in thee also. This is the natural construction; and it is quite gratuitous to
which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the affections of the gospel according to the power of God;

9 Who hath saved us, and called

suppose the Apostle doubtful of Timothy's faith, and to translate, "that it will dwell." Timothy may have been discouraged possibly by the imprisonment of St. Paul, but his faith was unfeigned.

6-14. Exhortation to earnestness, boldness, and fidelity in the discharge of his office.

6. Wherefore.] I.e. because I know thy faith to be sincere, even though it may be tried at present.

that thou stir up.] Kindle into a flame, as a fire in danger of smouldering out.

the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.] The special gift, ἡ χάρισμα (as in 1 Tim. iv. 14), bestowed by God on Timothy at his ordination, to qualify him for, and to give effect to, the work of the ministry, the outward sign of obtinitation and imparting of which was the imposition of the hands of the Apostle, together with those of the body of the Presbyters. See on 1 Tim. iv. 14.

7. For God hath not given us the spirit of fear, &c.] For in the bestowal of this gift it is not the spirit of cowardice which God has given us, but "of power," opposed to the weakness involved in cowardice; "and of love," which is so far from implying timidity that true love makes even the timid brave; "and of a sound mind," rather self-control, which keeps "a constant rein on all the passions and desires" (Trench), and would thus keep in check timidity and undue despondency. Some take σωφρονισμόν ("sound mind") to signify here "correction" of others, Church discipline, a meaning which the word will bear, but which is out of harmony with the other two elements of the special gift here enumerated, both of which are personal graces, not official powers. It should be observed, however, that while the special bearing of the ministerial charisma on Timothy's immediate trial is thus indicated, it has, of course, a much deeper and far wider range, and should pervade, mould, and animate the whole character and conduct of every one ordained by the like imposition of hands to the work of the ministry.

8. Be not thou therefore.] Such being the character of the gift you have received.

anstained.] As you may be tempted to be.

of the testimony of our Lord.] I.e. of bearing testimony, as an Evangelist, to the incarnation, life, death, resurrection, doctrine and precepts of our Lord Jesus Christ. Cf. Acts i. 8: "Ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost has come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me."

nor of me his prisoner.] A prisoner indeed, but the Lord's prisoner, not only for His sake, but by His will.

but be thou partaker of the affections of the gospel.] Rather, suffer hardship with me for the Gospel, i.e. the Gospel's sake.

according to the power of God.] Either, "in accordance with the power of His grace working in us and enabling us:" or, "in accordance with the power which He has displayed in saving us, and which will, no doubt, deliver us." The latter meaning seems more agreeable to the context which follows.

9. Who hath saved us.] All believers, i.e. not merely Paul and Timothy.

and called us with a holy calling.] St. Peter (1 Pet. i. 15) gives the full force of this epithet: "as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation."

not according to our works.] Cf. Tit. iii. 5, "not by works of righteousness which we have done."

but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.] Rather, but according to his own purpose, and the grace which was given us in Christ Jesus before eternal times: before the times of ages back began to run their course (Calvin), i.e. from all eternity. So Rom. xvi. 25, which compare. To understand this as only "before the Jewish dispensation," or "before any of God's dispensations for fallen men," is to miss the great truth which so magnifies the love of God—His eternal purpose of the redemption of a race foreknown to be rebellious against His will. "Grace" here is that highest expression of God's free and undeserved mercy—His purpose to save us by Jesus Christ. It was given from all eternity, not merely promised; for what God purposes, is.
II. TIMOTHY. I.  

us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which he hath committed unto him against that day.

13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me,
in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me; of whom are Phygelus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain:

17 But, when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

14. That good thing which was committed unto thee keep.] Rather, Guard that good deposit, the deposit of a sound faith to be held by himself and taught to others. Here, as in 1 Tim. vi. 20, the true reading is παραστήσας, not παρασκαθήσας. "Paul," says Bengel, "when his departure was at hand, had two deposits; one to be committed to God, the other to Timothy."

by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.] Possibly the special charisma for the work of the ministry which was in Paul and Timothy by the laying on of hands. But the Holy Ghost dwells in all true Christians. Rom. viii. 9-11; 2 Cor. vi. 16.

16.—II. 26. Reference to some who had fallen away from the Apostle, or from the faith, and consequent exhortation and encouragement to Timothy to steadfastness, fidelity in teaching, and holiness of life.

This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me.] While St. Paul was encouraging Timothy, he was not himself without cause for depression. We know nothing of the circumstances alluded to nor of the persons named. The occurrences took place after the release of St. Paul from the imprisonment narrated in the Acts. St. Peter, who wrote to the Christians scattered in five provinces of Asia, alludes to persecutions to which they were exposed, and which might have caused the defection of which St. Paul complains. The words, "all they which are in Asia," may mean that all the converts now in Asia, who had lately been with him at Rome, had there deserted him in his day of trial; but they rather point to a large defection from the Apostle and his teaching on the part of the Christians in Asia, in the limited sense in which the name is used in Acts xvi. 6, xix. 10, for Proconsular Asia. That though large it was not universal, appears from the next verse.

Phygellus.] Phygelus in the best MSS.

16. All I said, yet not quite all; there are exceptions. There is the household of Onesiphorus: may God have mercy upon it and him!

ashamed of my chain.] A prisoner in free custody (libera custodia) was chained by one wrist to the soldier who kept him. See Acts xxviii. 16. This may be the explanation of the singular "chain," and a natural and undesignated coincidence between the epistle and the fact.

17. But.] On the contrary: "but" is here hardly strong enough.

very diligently.] Rather, the more diligently, i.e. from hearing that I was in bonds.

Bp. Pearson assuming that the greater diligence was rendered necessary by the greater severity of St. Paul's captivity, argues hence for the fact of a second captivity. Minor Works, ii. 383. See v. 9 and note. And see Introduction.

18. of the Lord in that day.] The day of the coming of the Lord.

"The Lord" thus repeated may be little more than the reciprocal pronoun "himself" a little emphasised (Bengel), especially if the expression "may the Lord" had become a formula of prayer and blessing. (Alford.) Or, 2, the sentence may be a prayer to God the Father that Onesiphorus may find mercy from the Son to whom is "committed all judgment" (John v. 22). Or, 3, a prayer to the Lord Jesus Christ that he may find mercy from God the Judge of all. The last is perhaps the most consonant with ver. 16.

unto me.] These words are not in the Greek, nor are they necessary. He had done many acts of good service to the saints there. The translation, "how fully he exercised the office of deacon there," is possible, but not probable.

very well.] Lit. "better," i.e. "than that I need tell thee."

It has been inferred from ver. 16 that Onesiphorus was now dead. It may be so; but the words only indicate that he was absent
CHAPTER II.

1 He is exhorted again to constancy and perseverance, and to do the duty of a faithful servant of the Lord in dividing the word aright and staying profane and vain babblings. 17 Of Hymenaeus and Philetus. 19 The foundation of the Lord is sure. 22 Let him therefore be strong, and what to follow after, and in what sort the servant of the Lord ought to behave himself.

THOU therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier.

5 And if a man also strive for masteries, yet is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully.

Chap. II.—1. Thou therefore.] Since all in Asia, with some few exceptions, such as Onesiphorus and his family, have turned away from me, do thou the more, &c.


In the grace that is in Christ Jesus.] "Grace" has here been taken for the grace of the ministerial office, the Charisma in i. 6, or specifically for that of preaching the Word; but it is more probably the gift of sanctification of the whole man in his personal, as well as his ministerial, character: a gift which is only received and enjoyed in, i.e. in union with, Christ Jesus. John xv. 4, 5.

2. Among many witnesses.] The witnesses have been explained to mean, 1. The congregations whom Timothy had heard St. Paul teach. 2. The other Apostles. 3. The martyrs. 4. (as by Mosheim) Timothy’s fellow-scholars, who with him received St. Paul’s instructions for the ministry. 5. But they are most probably the Presbyters and others present at Timothy’s ordination, who heard the charge which St. Paul delivered to him, and could bear testimony to his acceptance of it; "not merely spectators of Timothy’s instruction, but definite independent witnesses to the truth of the things taught." Dr. Vaughan.

The same commit thou to faithful men.] Not merely “believers” but “trustworthy.” Whether this deposit (παραδόθηκας i. 14) comprised in the verb παράδωσα, “commit thou”) had as yet taken the specific form of a creed or formulary, it is not easy to say. Such symbols were certainly in use in the 2nd century. But the substance, at least, of the truths taught was to be preserved carefully and handed down faithfully.

3. Thou therefore endure hardness.] Rather, suffer affliction with me: take thy share with me in suffering. The true reading is συγκακοπάθησαι, not συγκακοπάθησον, from which our version is made.

4. That warreth.] Rather, serving as a soldier.

This life.] Rather, “life. “This” is not in the Greek. Life’s business and cares.

Bath chosen him.] Enrolled him. The immediate application of the figure is to Timothy as serving in his ministerial capacity in the host of the Church militant; but it has an equally close significance to every one who has been signed with the sign of the Cross, in token that he shall not be ashamed manfully to fight under Christ’s banner against sin, the world, and the devil, and to continue his faithful soldier and servant unto his life’s end.

5. Strive for masteries.] Rather, strive as an athlete. And not only is this so with the soldier; if one strives in the games, too, he is not crowned except he strive "lawfully,” i.e. “in accordance with the rules,” in the training and the preparation as well as in the actual contest.
6 'The husbandman that laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say; and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead according to my gospel:

9 Wherein I suffer trouble, as an evil doer, even unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.

11 It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him:

12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us:

13 If we believe not, yet he evil doer.] Malefactor, as the word is translated in Luke xxiii. 32.

14 even unto bonds.] Paul was probably treated much more severely than in his former imprisonment. Acts xxviii. 16, 50, 51. but the word of God is not bound.] I.e. although they may bind me. Cf. Phil. i. 12-14. Here, however, the application is more general. While Paul is in prison at Rome, the Gospel is running its free course over the whole Roman world.

15 I endure.] Cheerfully, not merely passively, all things, bonds, sufferings, death. (Bp. Ellicott.)

16 the elect.] God's chosen ones, whether already in the Church, or to be called into it afterwards.

17 that they may also.] Rather, that they also may: they as well as we.

18 with eternal glory.] Far more, then, than a counterpoise to the sufferings of this present world. Cf. 2 Cor. iv. 17, 18.

19 It is a faithful saying.] See 1 Tim. i. 15. This passage has the appearance of a portion of a Church hymn, or at least of a well-known Christian maxim (originally, Dean Alford supposes the utterance of one speaking under the gift of "prophecy"). If it is so, the particle "for" in this verse, and probably the whole of the last clause of ver. 13, "for he cannot deny himself," are added by the Apostle in accommodating the "saying" to his argument.

20 if we be dead with him.] Rather, died with him, i.e. when at baptism we were baptised into His death, that we should walk in newness of life. See Rom. vi. 4, 5, 6; Col. ii. 12.

21 suffer.] I.e. with Him. See Rom. vii. 17. "If so be that we suffer with Him, that we may be also glorified together;" and cf. Matt. xix. 27, 28.

22 if we deny him, &c.] Matt. x. 33.

23 If we believe not.] Rather, are unfaithful.
II. TIMOTHY. II. [V. 14—19.

14. Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord that they strive not about words to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers.

15. Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

16. But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness.

17. And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymenæus and Philetus.

18. Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

19. Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, We know that he is holy.}

18. The resurrection of the body, always a difficulty in ancient modes of thought, was especially so to those who, with the Essenes amongst the Jews, the Neo-Platonicians, and most of the early sects which afterwards expanded into Gnosticism, had adopted the dualism of the East, and held matter to be evil—sometimes the evil Principle, or his embodiment. Hence they were ready to avail themselves of the other sense of resurrection, the rising of those who were baptized into Christ to newness of life (Rom. vi. 5; Col. ii. 12) and they denied that any further resurrection was to be believed. This error had been early taught in the Christian Church. See 1 Cor. xv. 12.


The foundation of God standeth sure.] Rather, God's firm foundation stands: i.e. the Church, the "great house" of ver. 20, but here designated by its "foundation," because the antithesis is to the baseless fabrics of heresy. Other explanations have been: the doctrine of the resurrection of the body; the promises of God; the fidelity of God; Christ; the Christian faith; the election of God. But the context and the analogy of Eph. ii. 19—22 leave little doubt of the correctness of the first interpretation.

Having this seal.] "This inscription engraved on it." See Zech. iii. 9; Rev. xxi. 14. The inscription is twofold: one clause touching the foreknowledge of God, "The Lord knoweth them that are his," cf. Num. xvi. 5; John x. 14; the other the obedience of man, "Let every one that nameth the name of the Lord depart from iniquity;" and both must combine as the mark of every lively stone built on this foundation. See Matt. vii. 23, "I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity;" words which were probably in the Apostle's mind.

Christ.] Rather, the Lord. The preferable reading is Kuo liv.
And, let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.  
20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some to dishonour.  
21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the master’s use, and prepared unto every good work.  
22 Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.
24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient,  
25 In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance unto the acknowledging of the truth;
26 And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

20. But though the foundation of the Church bears the stamp not only of God’s decrees but of holiness, yet in it, as in every large house, there will be evil and imperfection mingled with the good.

earthb.] Earthenware.
and some to honour, and (but) some to dishonour.] I.e. some for purposes of honour and state, some for trivial and common uses. So are there in God’s Church two classes, though each admitting of degrees. Cf. Matt. xiii. 30, 47.

21. If a man therefore purge himself from these.] “If, then, any one shall have cleansed himself from these,” i.e. from “the vessels to dishonour,” just mentioned. This has been thought to be a precept not to hold communion with evil men in God’s Church, or with those who err in fundamentals; but it is rather, perhaps, a direction to cleanse oneself out of the number and condition of those “vessels to dishonour” by personally abstaining from the evils either of faith or practice which defile them. Cf. Isaiah lxi. 11; 2 Cor. vi. 17.

22. but.] As an instance of such abstinence, “the lusts of youth avoid.” Timothy was still comparatively young (see 1 Tim. iv. 12); but youthful appetites and passions are not extinguished in middle life.

23. But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.
24. And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient,
25. In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance unto the acknowledging of the truth;
26. And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

follow.] “Follow after,” as 1 Tim. vi. 11.

23. But foolish and unlearned questions.] Rather, “The foolish and ignorant questions” which the false teachers (ver. 17) debate “avoid: knowing,” as you do, “that they do gender strifes.”
24. patient.] Rather, forbearing, as in the margin.
25. oppose themselves.] Or “are contending against him.”

peradventure.] Rather, perhaps at some time or other: in His own good time.
the acknowledging.] Rather, the full knowledge of the truth of the Gospel.

26. And that they may recover themselves (margin awake) out of the snare of the devil.] Rather, And that they may wake up and escape out of the snare of the devil.
No one English expression will translate ἀφελέω ἑαυτῶν ἐκ. The verb implies to awake up to sobriety out of a state of intoxication, and ὧδε adds the idea of “so as to escape out of.” The figure would seem to be that of one who had been taken captive in the sleep of inebriety, restored to his faculties, and thus enabled to free himself.

who are taken captive by bim at his will.] Rather, perhaps, who were taken captive by him according to the will of that evil one. See additional note.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on verse 26.

26. There is considerable difficulty in this clause. The two pronouns, bim and bis, are, in the Greek, the first the personal αὐτῶν, the second the demonstrative ἐκείνων, which, therefore, it is thought, must—and no doubt usually would—refer to different persons. 1. Some therefore (as Wetstein and Bengel), explain “him” to be “the servant of God,” ver. 24, and “his will” to be the will of God, i.e. “being captured by God’s servant or minister, in accordance with God’s will”; or, “so as thenceforth to do God’s will.” 2. Others (Aret., Estius) “taken captive by the devil according to God’s will,” i.e. so long as
CHAPTER III.

1 He advertizeth him of the times to come, 6 describeth the enemies of the truth, 10 pronounced unto him his own example, 16 and commendeth the holy scriptures.

T HIS know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come.
2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

3 Without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,
4 Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God;
5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.
6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive

CHAP. III. 1–9. Warning of evil times, evil teachers, and evil men, about to come, and already in the Church.

1. Such announcements as those in ii. 20, 26, must have fallen damp and disappointing on the expectations of many in the first ardour of the Gospel. Vessels for dishonour, even in God’s house; captives taken by Satan at his will, even after the prince of this world had been triumphed over on the Cross; these were facts at variance, doubtless, with the expectations of many believers, but necessary to be known. The warning, therefore, continues.

This know also.] The verb in some good MSS. is in the plural, which might be accounted for by the impression in the writer’s mind that the warning was needed by the whole community. The singular is, however, probably the correct reading.

in the last days.] The time of the Gospel dispensation, which is the last of the Divine dispensations, and is to continue till the consummation of all things. It is clear from ver. 5 that Timothy himself was living in them. See Acts ii. 17, and especially 1 John ii. 18, where the Apostle expressly says that “it is the last time,” and that “we know that it is the last time,” because “even now there are many

antichrists.” So here, “in the last days,” during the Gospel kingdom, when perhaps they might be least expected, “perilous times will come.”

2. lovers of their own selves.] Self-love seems to be placed first, as the root of all the rest.
boasters, proud.] The former vaunting their supposed superiority in words; the latter nourishing the belief of it in their hearts.

3. trucebreakers.] Rather, implausible; those who will not make a truce.

despisers of those that are good.] Rather, haters (lit., not lovers) of the good.

4. heady.] I.e. (as defined by Johnson) “rash;” precipitate, hasty, violent.
bighminded.] Rather, blinded (or puffed up) with pride. See 1 Tim. iii. 6.

but denying the power thereof.] Lit., “having denied,” i.e. although they have denied “its power.”
The enumeration of vices in Rom. i. 29 seq. describes heathenism; this describes corrupt Christianity. Bp. Ellicott.

6. silly women.] In the Greek a dimi-
silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

7 Ever learning, and never able
to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres
withstood Moses, so do these also
resist the truth: men of corrupt
minds, reprobate concerning the faith.

9 But they shall proceed no fur-
ther: for their folly shall be mani-
fest unto all men, as their's also was.

But 'thou hast fully known
my doctrine, manner of life, purpose,
faith, longsuffering, charity, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions, which
came unto me at Antioch, at Ico-
nium, at Lystra; what persecutions
I endured: but out of them all the
Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that will live godly
in Christ Jesus shall suffer per-
secution.

13 But evil men and seducers shall

Egyptian magicians was in their opposition to
the truth, in the complete exposure of their
folly, and possibly (as Bp. Ellicott thinks) in the
 occult arts to which they alike pretended.

10-17. In contrast to the above, exhorta-
tion to Timothy grounded on his privileges,
on the example of St. Paul which he had
followed, and on the pious education which
he had received.


Rather, hast followed, or followed. The reading is doubtful,
whether the perfect or the aorist. If the
former, the sense is, “thou hast followed,
and art following, the example of my doc-
trine,” &c. If the latter, “thou didst follow,
as a disciple,” with perhaps the additional
notion of “accompanying.” The same word
is translated in Luke i. 3, “having had perfect
understanding.” Where see note. Timothy,
and perhaps Timothy only, had been almost
constantly with St. Paul from his second
missionary journey till the time when he was
left by him at Ephesus. (Bp. Wordsworth.)

If writing to almost any one but Timothy, it
would have been necessary to specify this; or
the Syrian Antioch, being by far the best
known, would have been understood.

at Iconium, at Lystra. Acts xiv. 5, 19,
xvi. 3. The coincidences of the Epistles
with the Acts have been pointed out by Baur
and De Wette as suspicious; what would
the same writers have said if instead there
had been discrepancies?

12. Yea. It is the common lot; thou
too must expect thy share.

and all that will live godly. All too who
are minded—whose will is—“to live godly.”
in Christ Jesus. “Out of whom there is
no godliness.” Bengel.

shall suffer persecution. In the literal
sense of persecution from without, this may
be understood as referring to the then ex-
II. TIMOTHY. III.

wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

14. But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them;

15. And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

16. All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable. Rather, perhaps, every Scripture, i.e. passage or book of Scripture being inspired, is also profitable. The word "Scripture," γραφή, is used fifty times in the New Testament, and is in all these places applied to the writings of the Old or New Testament, and to no other. It is clearly a technical word, and must have been so used and understood by St. Paul and by Timothy. Laid here by the context to the Scriptures which Timothy had learnt as a child, it can mean only the writings of the Old Testament; but when applied to writings of the New Testament, as it is by St. Peter to the Epistles of St. Paul (2 Peter iii. 15, 16), it of course carried with it, as belonging also to those books, all the attributes of inspiration, profitability, and the like, which inhered in the word in its application to the Old Testament. Had St. Paul's Epistles not been inspired and also profitable, St. Peter would not have classed them with "the other scriptures."

"Scripture," γραφή, without the article, is always used for a passage, portion, or perhaps book, of the Sacred Writings, expressed more fully in Acts viii. 32, by "the place of the scripture," ἡ περιοχὴ τῆς γραφῆς. It is so probably in the doubtful passage 2 Peter i. 20. When all the Sacred Writings are intended, it is "the Scripture," ἡ γραφή, or, more usually, "the Scriptures," τὰς γραφὰς. "Every Scripture," then, i.e. every passage or book of the Scriptures, which is the accurate rendering of St. Paul's words, is as extensive in meaning as "all Scripture," and more precise.

given by inspiration of God.] Lit., "God-breathed." Cf. 2 Peter i. 21, "Holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." The word does not enable us to establish or to give the preference to any of the theories of the mode of inspiration, but it does seem (as Bp. Ellicott remarks) "fairly either to assume or to enunciate," according to the translation adopted (see below), "this vital truth: that every separate portion of..."
II. TIMOTHY. III. IV.

ration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

the Holy Book is inspired, and forms a living portion of a living and organic whole. While, on the one hand, this expression does not exclude such verbal errors, or, possibly, such trifling historical inaccuracies as man's spirit, even in its most exalted state, may not be wholly exempt from, and human transmission and transcription may have increased, it still does certainly assure us, on the other, that these writings, as we have them, are individually pervaded by God’s Spirit, and warrants our belief that they are (in the words of Clement of Rome, ad Cor. i. 45), “the true utterances of the Holy Ghost, and an assurance of the full inspiration of the Bible.”

The difference of opinion as to the preferable translation of this passage is as old as Origen and Chrysostom. Two renderings are equally grammatical; and the choice, after all that has been written on the subject, can be determined only by the context. 1. “Every Scripture is inspired and profitable for instruction, &c.” 2. “Every Scripture, being inspired” (as it is), “is also profitable for instruction, &c.” The former, that of our own version, has the authority of Chrysostom, apparently, Greg. Nyssa, Estius, Calvin, De Wette, Conybeare, and Howson; the latter, that of Origen, Theodoret, Erasmus, Whitby, Focenot, Rosenmuller, Hutton, Alford, Ellicott, Wordsworth, and the Syriac and Vulgate versions with that of Luther. Even the context is reconcilable with either translation. It is an exhortation to Timothy to continue steadfast in what he believes and teaches, grounded on the excellency and sufficiency for his own salvation and for all the exigencies of his ministry, of the Holy Scriptures which he had been taught as a child. It would not be unsuitable to the Apostle’s purpose to remind Timothy that every such Scripture was inspired as well as adapted to be the instrument for every branch of the ministerial work. But it would, perhaps, be more natural, as the stress of the argument rests on the profitableness of the Scriptures, to assume their inspiration, of which Timothy, as well as Paul, was well assured, and on this to found their sufficiency for all the parts and duties of the ministry. For doctrinal purposes it is immaterial which construction is adopted. The testimony of the passage to the inspiration of all that was included under the name of Scripture, is at least as strong if its inspiration is assumed, as if it is asserted.

for doctrine.] Instruction in the truths and precepts of revealed religion.

for reproof.] Conviction either of error in doctrine or of viciousness of life.

for correction.] Restoration of the weak or erring to the right way.

for instruction.] Lit. “for the training which is in righteousness;” the teaching and exercising the believer in all the parts and duties of the Christian life. Thus, as Bishop Ellicott well enumerates the uses of Holy Scripture, it teaches the ignorant, convicts the evil and prejudiced, corrects the fallen and erring, and trains in righteousness all men, especially those that need bringing to fuller measures of perfection.

CHAPTER IV.

1. He exhorteth him to do his duty with all care and diligence, 6. certifieth him of the nearness of his death, 9. willeth him to come speedily unto him, and to bring Marcus with him, and certain other things which he wrote for, 14. warneth him to beware of Alexander the smith, 16. informeth him what had befallen him at his first answering, 19. and soon after he concluded.

I CHARGE thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom;

had befallen him at his first answering, 19. and soon after he concluded.

before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, &c.] Rather, before God and Christ Jesus, who will hereafter judge the quick and dead, and by his appearing and his kingdom, preach the word. The best MSS. omit the words, “the Lord,” τοῦ κυρίου; and instead of “at his appearing,” κατά τὴν ἐπιφάνειαν αὐτοῦ, read ἐν ἡμέραις καὶ τὴν ἐπιφάνειαν αὐτοῦ. The Apostle in his

3 E 2
II. TIMOTHY. IV.

2 Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;

4 And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I

solemn adjuration to Timothy to proclaim the word, as a herald, before the Lord's second coming, calls to witness God and the great Judge of all men, as well those who have died before as of those who will be alive at His coming; and the glorious advent itself; and the kingdom which it will bring in and establish; thus placing all before him as a motive to diligence and faithfulness.

be instant.] Attentive and earnest. Some (as De Wette, Hutton) translate "Go to (them)," i.e. to their assemblies; a meaning which the word would bear, but which is not only frigid, but would require to be made definite by the addition of "the brethren," "them," or the like.

in season, out of season.] Take opportunity or make it. Cf. Ezek. ii. 4, "whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear." The application of this precept would of course be prudentially modified by such cautions as Matt. vii. 6.

reprove, rebuke, exhort.] Rather, sound, rebuke, &c.; put, that is, to its various uses every scripture which God has inspired, iii. 16.

with all long-suffering and doctrine.] Rather, with all (i.e. with unwearied) patience and teaching.

3. Two further reasons are added; the approach of a season when sound doctrine would be endangered by false teaching, and the Apostle's impending death.

sound doctrine.] Rather, the sound doctrine; which in these Epistles stands opposed especially to those false principles and myths which were gathering around into the more systematic forms of Gnosticism.

but after their own lusts.] I.e. in accordance with their own individual desires and passions. A corrupt will ever choose its own doctrine having. I.e. "because they have itching ears," a prurient longing for novelty and excitement.

5. But watch thou in all things.] "But thou, be thou watchful, and sober in all things." The Greek verb vjhe includes both meanings, and cannot, at least in the present context, be adequately translated by either alone.

make full proof of.] I.e. perform fully.

8. It is for you to do this; for as for me, life's last sacrifice is now beginning.

I am now ready to be offered.] Rather, I am already being offered. Literally, "I am already being poured out as a libation," in allusion to the wine or drink offering poured by the Jews about the altar, and by heathens on the victim, at the sacrifice. Cf. Phil. ii. 17, "You, and if I be offered," poured out as a libation, "upon the sacrifice and service of your faith." Prof. Lightfoot cites the words of the dying Seneca, recorded by Tacitus, Ann. xv. 64, "respergens proximos servorum, addita voce libare se liquorem illum Jovi liberatori."

my departure.] From this life and its trials and duties. Elisha sees here an allusion to the breaking up and departure of guests from a feast; and the verb evwPn is used in Luke xii. 36, "when he shall return from the wedding." Wordsworth suggests the idea of a ship loosing anchor on her voyage to the harbour of eternal rest. But these are illustrations suggested by, rather than belonging to, the simple meaning of "the season of my leaving or departing." Cf. Phil. i. 23, where St. Paul employs the verb, evwPn. He then desired to depart, but felt a confident persuasion that he was to remain and work: now the time of his departure is at hand. It is the language of the same man under different conditions.

7. I have fought a good fight.] This is perhaps too specific: the figure includes all, or
have finished my course, I have kept the faith:
8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.
9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me:
10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica;
Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.
11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministry.
12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.
13 The cloak that I left at Troas

any of the contests in the games. "I have striven the good strife." Ellcott. Cf. I Cor. ix. 25, where, as here, the general idea is further illustrated by the specific instance of the foot-race.

_I have finished my course._] _I.e._ "the race," not of my life only, but of my ministry. Compare the Apostle's words in Acts xx. 24, and observe the harmony between his hopes there and their fulfilment here. The whole passage is eminently Pauline. May not the word here used "finished," τελεθη, be a reminiscence of the last words of the Saviour on the cross, as recorded by St. John (xix. 30), τελεθησοτα, "it is finished!"

_I have kept the faith._] As a precious deposit which was committed to me. See 1 Tim. i. 11, vi. 20.

8. a crown of righteousness.] Rather, the crown of righteousness; the crown, that is, which shall be given for righteousness: as in the games, the crown of the race, the crown of wrestling, is the crown given to the victor in the race, or in wrestling, or the like.

_at that day._] _I.e._ "in that great day," the day of account.

_that love._] In the full meaning of the tense, ἠγαπησάντω, "have loved and are still loving his appearing." A touchstone, says Leo, by which to examine our hearts.

It is a criticism based on ignorance of the facts of the inner life, which sees in this happy confidence of the Apostle a contradiction to the humility of his other Epistles: e.g. Phil. iii. 12-14. Rather it is an evidence of the authenticity of this his latest Epistle, written when martyrdom was imminent. For it is a truth, proved by so many instances as almost to indicate a law of the procedure of the divine grace, that the assurance which has been withheld from God's people in the midst of their ordinary duties and trials, is granted them in the hour of need, and especially at the approach of death. Nor is there any contradiction between the Apostle's expectation of the crown of righteousness and his doctrine of free justification by faith. "Rather," says Calvin, "do these two rightly agree: that man is justified freely by the merits (beneficio) of Christ, and yet that he will receive the reward of works from before (coram) God. For as soon as God receives us into his favour, he holds our works also acceptable, so as to vouchsafe them a reward also, however undeserved."

9-22. Conclusion: miscellaneous requests, information, and greetings.

10. Demas hath forsaken me, &c.] Rather, Demas left me because he loved the present world and went to Thessalonica, which was perhaps his home. He was with St. Paul at Rome during part, at least, of his first imprisonment, being mentioned as joining in greetings to the Colossians (Col. iv. 4); and in the Epistle to Philemon (24) he is named among the Apostle's fellow-labourers. There is no scriptural ground for assuming that this shrinking from danger and duty, sinful though it was, was equivalent to, or ended in, total apostasy, which, however, was the later tradition mentioned by Epiphanius. Demas is perhaps a shortened form of Demetrius.

_Crescens to Galatia._] Eusebius (H. E. iii. 4), Epiphanius (adv. Hær. ii. 1), perhaps Jerome, Theodoret of Mopsuestia, and Theodore, explain Galatia here of European Gaul; and the Churches of Vienne and Mayence claimed Crescens as their founder. It is more commonly understood of the Asiatic Galatia. Nothing more is known of Crescens.

_Titus unto Dalmatia._] A district on the east coast of the Adriatic, and at this time included in the Roman Province of Illyricum. In Dalmatia Titus would be in the neighbourhood of Nicopolis in Epirus, where probably St. Paul (Tit. iii. 12) desired him, under certain circumstances, to meet him.


_for the ministry._] The word had not yet become limited to a technical meaning, and
with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppermith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his works:

15 Of whom be thou ware also; for he hath greatly withstood our words.

16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me: I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge.

may include ministering to the Apostle as well as ministering the word.

For Luke and Mark, see the Introduction to their Gospels.

12. Having mentioned his solitude and the desertion of Demas, St. Paul accounts in this verse and in v. 20 for the absence of others of his fellow-labourers.

And Tychicus. Rather, but Tychicus, who was also profitable for the ministry.

have I sent to Ephesus. Rather, I sent to Ephesus, i.e. "as you know." These words afford no proof that Timothy could not now be at Ephesus. The apostle is not informing Timothy, but accounting for the fact that he is left alone. He may have been sent as bearer of the first Epistle. Some, however, as Welscher and Wordsworth, take the verb, "have I sent," ἀπεστέλα, as the epistolary aorist, which the Greeks used, as the Latins did the imperfect, where we use the present, placing themselves in point of time in the position of the receiver, instead of the writer of the letter. "Tychicus I am sending to Ephesus." And this is certainly possible. Tychicus appears to have been a native of some place in Proconsular Asia (Acts xx. 4). We find him together with Trophimus, also of Asia, among the party who accompanied St. Paul when he commenced his journey from Macedonia to Jerusalem. He may, however, have been left on the way; and he is not named with Trophimus, when St. Paul was accused of bringing Greeks into the Temple (Acts xx. 29). He was again with St. Paul at Rome at his first imprisonment, and was sent by him with Onesimus to Colosse, with the commendation that he was a faithful minister and fellow-servant in the Lord. He was also commissioned, probably, at the same time, to go to Ephesus, and was the bearer of the Epistles to both these Churches. There is a tradition that he became Bishop of Chaldeson.

13. The cloak. The chiton, ῥώμα χαλκία, or better, perhaps, χαλκία πανύλα, was most likely the Latin pannula, a thick upper garment which the approach of winter (v. 21) would make desirable. It has, however, been doubted as early as by Chrysostom, whether the word does not mean a bag or case, perhaps to hold the books.

the books] Probably written on papyrus rolls, and so distinguished from "the parchments." What the books or parchments were must remain merely conjecture; though the latter doubtless contained writing. Plain parchment might be obtained at Rome. They may have been some books of Holy Scripture, which Josephus says were inscribed on parchment. The prepared leather, however, on which the sacred books were written for the use of the synagogues had the hair on one side preserved.

Nothing is known of Carpus; but it may be inferred from this passage that St. Paul had been lately at Tarsus.

14. Alexander the coppersmith. Better perhaps "the smith," as the word χαλκίας was used generically. If this Alexander is the same with him who is mentioned in 1 Tim. i. 20, where he is coupled with Hymenæus, he was an heretic and probably an heretical teacher (2 Tim. ii. 17, 18), as well as a personal opponent of St. Paul.

the Lord reward him. Probably, the Lord will reward him. It is doubtful whether the reading is the optative, ἀντοδομή, or the future indicative, ἀντοδώμητο. The latter has the support of the best and earliest MSS., but may be liable to the suspicion of being substituted for doctrinal reasons to avoid the appearance of an uncharitable prayer. The former is the reading of the great majority of later MSS. and versions. The future seems on the whole the better supported; but the optative, as in our version, would not be the expression of personal animosity, but of zeal for the truth. Cf. 1 Cor. xvi. 21, 22; Gal. v. 12. The Apostle's personal feelings appear in ver. 16.

16. stood with me. Stood forward with me to assist me by advocacy or advice.

The "first answer" has been supposed to mean, 1. The defence made at Caesarea, Acts xxv. 17 seq., which is in the highest degree improbable. 2. The defence alluded to in Phil. 7, during the Apostle's first imprisonment at Rome: at which time, however, Timothy was probably with him, and would not require the information here given. 3. A defence made at Ephesus, at which Alexander had "withstood his words." But Alexander appears rather as an heretical teacher than as an accuser or public prosecutor; and there is no hint else-
II. TIMOTHY. IV.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

where of any imprisonment or trial at Ephesus. This explanation seems due only to a desire to connect this verse with the foregoing. A previous defence at Rome during his present imprisonment with reference to another which was impending or expected. If the words may be taken technically, the "first defence" might be on the first hearing, or "actio prima," after which, if the judge was not satisfied, came an adjournment, "ampliatio." The accused were usually assisted at their trial by an advocate who gave advice, and an "orator" or "patronus" who made the speech for his client. None such stood with Paul. But he was not alone: the tried believer never is alone.

17. *strengthened me.* Perhaps "supplied me with inward strength," ενυπνασασθεὶς με.

That... the preaching might be fully known. Rather, "that the preaching, the proclamation of the Gospel, might be fully performed." If the "first answer," in v. 16, is understood of his defence at Cesarea, or at Rome during his first imprisonment, or at Ephesus, these words would imply that the Lord thus preserved him in order that he might complete his mission to the Gentiles: a sense which would not be consistent with the circumstances of his last imprisonment, and his persuasion that the time of his departure was at hand. But, on the other hand, to proclaim the Gospel in this, his last trial, in the metropolis of the world, in its courts of justice and before its highest magistrates, was, in fact, the full performance and completion of the mission of him who was a "chosen vessel to bear the name of Christ before the Gentiles and kings," Acts ix. 15.

Out of the mouth of the lion. This was so proverbial an expression among Jews for any great and imminent danger, that it is unnecessary to find in it an allusion to Nero, or to Helius Cesaranus whom Nero left with extraordinary powers in Italy while he was in Greece, or to the principal accuser at the Apostle's trial, or to the devil. Cf. Ps. xxii. 13, 21, xxxv. 17, lvii. 4.

18. And the Lord. The Lord: "and" is wanting in the best MSS.

Every evil work. Not here "from sin," but "from all the evils which the devil or man worketh against me," so that they shall do no real or lasting harm. It is faith's application of the petition, "deliver us from evil," in which the same Greek words occur, ἡμᾶς ἄνδρι τοῦ πονηροῦ. So here, ἢνεχαι με ὑπὸ πονηροῦ πάντος ἄργου πονηροῦ.

shall preserve me unto.] Iz. "will bring me safe into." This is not the expression of the Apostle's belief that he will be delivered from the Roman courts and from death, but that He who had saved him from the lesser danger, would save him through all evil, even to the completion of his salvation in heaven.

To whom be glory.] The glory. If the beginning of this verse is a reminiscence of the Lord's Prayer, it seems not improbable that this ascription of praise is also so; in which case the doxology must have been added in very early times to the petitions of that prayer. See on Matt. vi. 13. It is to be observed, however, that the ascription is here to Christ.

19. For Prisca, or Priscilla, and Aquila of Pontus, see on Acts xviii. 2: and for the household of Onesiphorus, see on a Tim. i. 16.

20. Erastus abode at Corinth. Which was his home, if this Erastus was the same with the chamberlain or treasurer (economus) of the city whose salutation St. Paul sends from Corinth to the Roman Christians, (Rom. xvi. 23.) There was one Erastus with St. Paul at Ephesus (Acts xix. 22), whom he sent thence with Timothy into Macedonia. Whether this was the same person is uncertain.

But Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.] Rather, I left at Miletus. Miletum is an error, perhaps a misprint. It is very difficult to suppose any point in St. Paul's previous history at which he could have left Trophimus at Miletus, excepting on the assumption of a second imprisonment at Rome, and a visit to Miletus or its neighbourhood in the interval between the two imprisonments. Trophimus was an Ephesian (Acts xx. 29). St. Paul may have alluded here to his illness, lest it should be inferred, from vv. 10, 11, that he too had deserted him.

For Trophimus see Acts xx. 4.
21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

The second epistle unto Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

21. before winter.] When travelling would be dangerous or difficult.

Eubulus is mentioned here only. It has been thought possible that Pudens may be the friend of the poet Martial, whose marriage with Claudia, a foreign lady, he celebrates in Epigram viii. lib. iv., supposing that other epigrams which are not favourable to the moral character of Pudens were written before his conversion. An inscription found at Colchester mentions a site given by one Pudens for a temple built under the sanction of a British king, Claudius Cogidubnus; and it has been conjectured that this was the same Pudens who was a centurion in the army, and who may have married the daughter of Cogidubnus, whose name would consequently have been Claudia. The Claudia Rufina of Martial was a Briton (xi. 53), and may have received the name of Rufina from Pomponia, the wife of Aulus Plautius, commander in Britain, who was connected with the Rufi family, and was accused of holding foreign superstitions. All this, however, is very uncertain.

Linus is probably the same Roman Christian who became the first Bishop of the Church there, according to Irenæus iii. 3, and Eusebius, iii. 2.

22. The salutation is twofold: to Timothy and to his flock. "The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you" (all).

The subscription, though in this instance probably correct, has no authority.
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO

T I T U S.

CHAPTER I.

1 For what end Titus was left in Crete. 6 How they that are to be chosen ministers ought to be qualified. 11 The mouths of evil teachers to be stopped: 12 and what manner of men they be.

PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness;

2 In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me according to the commandment of God our Saviour;

4 To Titus, mine own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father

Chap. I. 1-4. Address and salutation.

1. Paul, a servant of God.] The only place in which the Apostle uses this designation, which is therefore very unlikely to have been adopted by a forger or imitator.

According to the faith of God's elect.] Rather, for the faith of God's elect: the faith of God's chosen ones, whether converted as yet or not, was the object and end for which Paul was sent.

And the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness.] Rather, and the full knowledge of the truth which is in accordance with godliness, or, as some prefer, "tends towards godliness."

2. Before the world began.] Lit. "before the eternal times," as 1 Tim. i. 9, which see. The promise of eternal life was included in the eternal purpose of God, though it was not revealed till after the creation of man in time and in the various dispensations granted to him. The rendering, "before very ancient times" (i.e. as Calvin paraphrases it, "the many ages which had passed since salvation was promised"), appears a doubtful translation of the Greek, is needlessly at variance with St. Paul's usages in 1 Tim. i. 9; 1 Cor. ii. 7; Eph. iii. 11, and gives a frigid sense.

3. In due times.] Lit. "his own times," i.e. his own appointed times, and therefore fit and "due" because appointed by him. Cf. 1 Tim. ii. 6.

His word.] Is here equivalent to, and substi-

2stituted for, the promise of eternal life; i.e. the Gospel; as usually in St. Paul. See e.g. 2 Cor. iv. 2; Col. i. 25; 1 Thess. ii. 13; 2 Tim. ii. 9. Jerome, Augustin, and some modern commentators understand the personal Word, the second Person of the blessed Trinity. "Manifested," it is argued, can be said only of something pre-existing. But the promise of eternal life is considered by the Apostle as existing in God's counsels before the world began. It is also said, that the verb to "manifest," φανερώ, is specially applied, and almost consecrated, in Scripture to the manifestation of the Godhead in the Incarnation; as 1 Tim. iii. 16; 1 Pet. i. 20; 1 John i. 2. But the word is used by St. Paul still oftener in other connexions: e.g. "Making manifest the savour of his knowledge," 2 Cor. ii. 14. "That the life of Jesus might be made manifest in our body"—"might be made manifest in our mortal flesh," 2 Cor. iv. 10, 11. "That our care might appear" (lit. "be made manifest") "in you," 2 Cor. vii. 12. The connexion of thought here is just as it is in Eph. iii. 1-10. God's purposes and promises of grace, conceived in his eternal counsels, hitherto concealed more or less entirely—"mysteries"—are now manifested; and mainly by the instrumentalities of the preaching which was committed, among others, to St. Paul.

God our Saviour.] Rather, our Saviour. God. See on 1 Tim. i. 1.

4. Mine own son, (ὑγείας.) See 1 Tim. i. 2.

Instead of "in the faith," we have here "after,"
and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee:

6 If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of riot or unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate;

9 Holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may

---

i.e. according to "the common faith," the faith common to both, and in the bonds of which stood Titus's filial relationship to St. Paul. Some explain "common to all men," or "common to Gentile and Jew;" Titus being a Greek.

5-9. Reason for leaving Titus in Crete, and qualifications of the Presbyters whom he was to ordain.

5. For this cause left I thee in Crete.] For Crete, the southernmost island of the Grecian Archipelago, see note on Acts xxvii. 7. There is no record of any visit of St. Paul to Crete excepting the one there narrated. He may have gone there from Ephesus or Corinth during the period of his life embraced in the Acts; but it is far more probable that the visit referred to in the text took place after his first imprisonment at Rome. See Introduction. This island, although famous in the mythology of early Greece, had played no important part in its subsequent history. It had been added to the Roman Empire by Mithridates B.C. 67), and was united in one province with Cyrenaica on the African coast. There are indications of considerable Jewish settlements on this island. Tacitus, indeed, mentions among several traditions of the origin of the Jews, that they came from Crete; perhaps from a confusion between them and the Cherethites or Cherethim, who are supposed to have been Philistine mercenaries. The Septuagint translates these names by Cretans in Ezek. xxv. 15; Zeph. ii. 5; where, too, in v. 6, for "sea-coast" it reads Crete. Jews in Gortyna, a city of Crete, are alluded to in 1 Mac. xv. 29. Josephus mentions the Jews in Crete in connexion with Alexander, the pretended son of Herod (de Bell. Jud. ii. 7, s. 1); and Philo, in the reign of Caligula, speaks of Crete as being, like other islands of the Mediterranean, full of Jews. (Leg. ad Cæs. xxxvi.) Cretes were among the devout Jews who were sojourning at Jerusalem at the day of Pentecost, Acts ii. 11. When, or by whom, Christianity was planted on this island, is quite uncertain. It could hardly have been by St. Paul, unless we suppose some visit previous to his first imprisonment to which no allusion is made in the Acts. But in that case we should rather expect to find some mention of "Brethren" there, when the Apostle touched at the Fair Havens on his way to Rome, Acts xxvii. 8. The directions in this Epistle indicate an imperfectly organised Church, but one which had been in existence long enough to admit irregularities, and to be endangered by false teachers.

5. shouldest set in order.] Rather shouldest further set in order. St. Paul had apparently commenced the organisation of the Cretan Church, and had left Titus to complete it.

6. the husband of one wife.] See on 1 Tim. iii. 2.

having faithful children.] Rather children who are believers, and therefore himself, probably, not a recent proselyte. See 1 Tim. iii. 6. An indication, perhaps, that Christianity had been planted for some time in Crete.

riot.] Profligacy. The word includes the notions of extravagance and of indulgence in vicious pleasure.

or unruly.] For the reason of this requirement see 1 Tim. iii. 5.

7. For a bishop.] See on 1 Tim. iii. 1. Episcopus, overseer, is used in this case with propriety, as the synonym of Presbyter, instead of Elder in ver. 5, because the discharge of the office is here the prominent idea. He who overlooks others ought to be "blameless," having no charge brought against him, as God's steward.

8. a lover of good men.] Rather a lover of good; both of what is good and of those who are good.

9. as he hath been taught.] Lit. "according to the teaching:" which may either mean, as in the text, "according to the teaching which he has received," or, as in the margin, "in his teaching." The former sense seems preferable. It would be almost tautological.
be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, specially they of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre’s sake.

12 One of themselves, even a prophet of their own, said, The Cretans are always liars, evil beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witness is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith;

14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

15 Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

16 They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work rebuke.

10-16. Character of the false teachers whom Titus would have to oppose, and of the Cretans in general.

10. For.] I.e. And there is great need of these qualifications in those who aim to be ordained presbyters at Crete; “for there are many, &c.”

11. who of the circumcision.] I.e. converts from Judaism.

12. a prophet of their own.] The first clause of the quotation is found in Callimachus, an Alexandrian poet of the time of the Ptolemies (Hymn to Zeus 8). The connection in thought between prophet and poet was close: (“cares quia vate sacrò”): but the whole line is said by Jerome to be taken from the Chremmi (χρημάτων) of Epimenides, a prophet-poet, born at Phæstus and living about Gnosus, in Crete, in the sixth century before Christ.

13. This witness.] Rather testimony “is true.” And such was the general opinion as collected from Polybius, Livy, Strabo, Plutarch, and others. The three worst Kappas, or K’s, according to the Greek proverb, were the Kretans, the Kappadocians, and the Kilicians: and “to crence,” according to Suidas, meant “to lie.”

rebuke them.] “Convince them of their error.”

14. Jewish fables.] See on 1 Tim. i. 4.

15. Unto the pure all things are pure.] All things, that is, to which the distinction of clean and unclean has been applied. Cf. Rom. xiv. 14, and 1 Cor. viii. 4-8. Moral impurity is, of course, not in question. Besides the difference of meats, we have other instances of ceremonial distinctions given in Mark vii. 4, 8.

16. They profess that they know God. Probably they laid claim to a higher degree of knowledge, and the terms Gnosis “knowledge” and Gnostic might already be beginning to be used arrogantly by teachers.
who were combining Jewish traditions with Asiatic theories. See Bp. Lightfoot on Colossians.

being abominable,] Not perhaps without a tacit reference to the unclean meats, &c.

which they would call "abominations," the true abominations being to be found in their own lives and hearts.

reprobate.] Rather worthless: tried and found of no worth.

CHAPTER II.

1 Directions given unto Titus both for his doctrine and life. Of the duty of servants, and in general of all Christians.

But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

2 That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

3 The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things;

4 That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children,

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.

7 In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.
9 Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things; not \(\text{answer}-\) ing again;

10 Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity,
and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

Church under the new. The differentia, however, and mark of separation under the Gospel, is zeal for good works.

15. These things.] All that I have been dwelling upon "speak;" and "exhort" the faithful, and "reprove" the disobedient and careless with all authority.

Let no man despise thee.] Not here, as in 1 Tim. iv. 12, on account of "thy youth," but do this with such gravity, earnestness and consistency of conduct, that no one shall have any ground for slighting thy admonitions. Speak so as to command respect.

ADDITIONAL NOTE on ver. 13.

The words τοῦ μεγάλου Θεοῦ καὶ σωτήρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ will also bear the translation "of the great God and of our Saviour Jesus Christ." It must be admitted that the omission of the article before "Saviour," does not necessarily require "God" and "Saviour" to be understood of the same person. The general rule that when two or more attributives, joined by a copulative, are assumed of the same person or thing, the article is inserted before the first and omitted before the others, must be taken with many exceptions. Among the rest, it will not hold good when the latter attributives have in themselves, or by usage, assumed somewhat of the character of a proper name, as was the case early with the appellation "Saviour," and the position of the pronoun "our," ἡμῶν, after σωτήρος, instead of in immediate connexion with Θεοῦ, gives some little weight to the argument for taking the words separately. It is argued, too, that in all other places where "Saviour" is applied to "God," there is a distinction between the Father and the Son, either expressed or implied, instead of an identification. So a few verses further on, iii. 4-6, "God our Saviour,... which be shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour:" and cf. 1 Tim. i. 1, and 1 Tim. ii. 3-5. In the doxology which closes the Epistle of St. Jude (ver. 25), the best MSS. add to "God our Saviour" the words "through Jesus Christ our Lord." And so, apparently, 1 Tim. iv. 10, and Titus i. 3. Hence it is inferred to be more probable than otherwise, that "the great God" and "our Saviour Jesus Christ" are contradistinguished, not identified, here too, and that our version, together with the Vulgate, Syriac and others, is right. On the other hand, there is the all but universal consent of the Greek Fathers, as well before as after the Arian controversy, in interpreting "the great God," as well as "our Saviour," of Jesus Christ. Ignatius, Clement Alex., and Hippolytus appear to have thus understood it, as well as Athanasius, Chrysostom, Theodoret, and Theophylact; and among the Latin Fathers, Cyprian, Jerome, and Primasius. The expression "the blessed hope" seems to point to the Son, who is called "our hope," 1 Tim. i. 1, and "the hope of glory," Col. i. 27. Again, the word "appearance,"—epiphany or manifestation,—is used in five other places by St. Paul, and always for the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, 2 Thess. ii. 8; 1 Tim. vi. 14; 2 Tim. i. 10, 2 Tim. iv. i. 8, and in all these places but 2 Tim. i. 10, for his future coming, as here. (The verb "appeared," however, is used more generally of the Gospel dispensation in Titus ii. 11, iii. 4.) To this it may be added that when in the New Test. the coming in glory is spoken of it is almost always with reference to the Son, and commonly in connection with his humanity, as "the Son of man." See Matt. xvi. 27, xix. 28, xxiv. 30, xxv. 31; Col. iii. 4. Finally, the epithet "great" is nowhere else in the New Testament applied to God the Father; but it might be well used with a special application and emphasis when it is the Son who is spoken of as God. So 1 John v. 20, "his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God and eternal life." On the whole, it seems more probable that the words "great God" as well as "Saviour" apply to Jesus Christ, the appearance of whose glory is the Christian's blessed hope and constraining motive. It has, however, been well said by Dean Alford, who maintained the opposite view, "Which- ever way taken, the passage is just as important a testimony to the divinity of our Saviour: according to the translation, 'our great God and Saviour,' by asserting his possession of deity and right to the appellation of the Highest: according to the other, 'of the great God and of our Saviour,' even more strikingly asserting his equality in glory with the Father in a way which would be blasphemy if predicated of any of the sons of men."
CHAPTER III.

1 Titus is yet further directed by Paul, both concerning the things he should teach, and not teach. 10 He is willed also to reject obstinate heretics: 12 which done, he appointed him both time and place, wherein he should come unto him, and so conclude it.

Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work,

2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men.

3 For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.

4 But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

6 Which he shed on us abundantly.

Chap. III. 1. to principalities and powers.] rather to magistrates, to powers, as the same two words are rendered in Luke xii. 11, from which they may have been taken. The copula "and" is omitted in the best MSS. The Cretans, who had been subjugated to Rome by Metellus, B.C. 67, and whose island now formed part of the province of Cyrene, under a Proconsul with the title of Proconsul, had never lost the remembrance of their democratic institutions, and were impatient and turbulent under foreign rule; an impatience in which the Jewish population doubtless shared.

To obey magistrates.] Rather to be obedient subjects.

to be ready to.] Ready for: not merely to obey, but to pay willing obedience. These words are quoted by Clement of Rome (ad Cor. 3)

2. gentle.] forbearing, patient, as in 1 Tim. iii. 3.

3. For we ourselves who were sometimes.] I.e. I say to all men, "for we ourselves were once as they are now." "Were" is emphatic.

4. And that we are no longer such is due to no merit of our own; it is of God's free grace: not on account of works of righteousness which we have done, but of the love of God for us, and of the means which He has provided in the Gospel for our regeneration, justification, sanctification, and adoption to an inheritance of eternal life. The connexion is clear and natural, and leaves no room for requiring a reference to the Marcionite theory of a God of love.

But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward men appeared.] Rather, But when the goodness and the love to man of our Saviour God appeared. Goodness and philanthropy (the word in the Greek) are equivalent, or nearly so, to "grace" in ii. 11. They occur together, as if from this passage, in Justin Martyr (Dial. cum Tryphone 47), ἡ γὰρ χριστιανία καὶ ἡ φιλανθρωπία. appeared.] See ii. 11 and note at end of that chapter.

5. In this passage, which is a brief but pregnant epitome of the Gospel, the scheme of man's salvation is regarded only from the side on which it is wholly God's work, without taking note of the conditions and qualifications, which, however much they too are God's work, are required from the co-operation of man. The apostle was dwelling on the truth that the change referred to in ver. 3, is not due to ourselves or our own merit, but to God's grace. He therefore had no occasion to allude here to the qualifications or stipulations required at baptism, nor to the faith by which man is justified, nor to "the working out his own salvation," which is one of the instruments by which the Holy Ghost renews us day by day, nor to the holiness which is the character and badge of the heirs of eternal life. All this is needed; but, viewed from God's side, it is not by anything which man has done or could do, but by his own free mercy that God has saved him.

6. Not by works of righteousness which we have done.] Not by works in righteousness which we ourselves did. "We" is emphatic. Not by our own works, even when done in a state of justification.

be saved us.] Placed us in a state of salvation. Those who are thus called out of the world into the Church, made members of Christ, pardoned and justified through faith in him, and have received the promise and earnest of the Spirit, are so far saved. Cf. Acts ii. 47.

by the washing.] rather laver or bath of regeneration, i.e., baptism, which our 27th
TITUS. III. [v. 7—8.

stantly through Jesus Christ our Sa-

vour;

7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

8 This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God might be careful to maintain good works. These things are good and profitable unto men.

Article defines to be "a sign" (an "effectual sign," Art. 25) "of regeneration or new birth." The word "regeneration" ἀνακοινώσεως occurs twice only in the N. T., here and in Matt. xix. 28 (which see), where it is equivalent to "the restitution of all things" (Acts iii. 21); the new birth of this fallen but redeemed world. Here its application is to individuals: the new birth of those who were born in sin and the children of wrath, into the membership of Christ and the family of God with its inheritance of the kingdom of heaven, of which baptism (the bathing or washing in water) is "the means whereby we receive the same and a pledge to assure us thereof." The requisite qualifications of the recipient do not, as has been said, lie in the line of the apostle's argument, which is concerned only with man's salvation considered as the product solely of God's free grace.

and renewing of the Holy Ghost.] I.e. "by the Holy Ghost," the genius of the agent. Some MSS. and the Italic version have "by the Holy Ghost"; and though the weight of authority is against the reading, it accurately expresses the sense. Of the whole clause the construction may either be "he saved us by the washing of regeneration and by the renewing of the Holy Ghost," or "by the washing of regeneration and of the renewing of the Holy Ghost," both are grammatical, and either may be expressed by our version. Doctrinal considerations would rather give the preponderance to the former rendering: for although renewal or renovation by the Holy Ghost is a result and consequent of baptism rightly received, yet it is not, like regeneration, that of which the washing in water is the outward and visible sign. "It seems to mean," says Waterland, "a more particular kind of renewal, namely of the inward frame or disposition of the man." Regeneration, in the person baptized in infancy, must precede renovation or renewal; whereas renewal in the adult convert, may be and should be before, in, and after baptism. Regeneration is the work of the Holy Spirit, in the due use of Baptism which God has ordained. Renewal is the work of the Holy Spirit together with the co-operation of man which God requires. Regeneration is an act once done and never repeated. Renewal is, or should be, perpetual and progressive, "the inward man being renewed day by day." (2 Cor. iv. 16, and cf. the collect for Christmas Day: "that we being regenerate and made thy children by adoption and grace, may daily be renewed by thy Holy Spirit"). Regeneration can never be totally lost; though it may, as a misused privilege, but minister to condemnation. Renewal may be lost.

7. Which be shed on us abundantly.] Literally "richly," "abundantly," i.e. the Holy Ghost. The expression, "shed on us," or "poured out upon us," refers back to the prophecy of Joel ii. 28, and to the visible form of its accomplishment on the day of Pentecost. Acts, ii. 3. 33.

through Jesus Christ our Saviour.] "Through," for the merits and through the mediation of. As at the baptism of the Saviour, so in the regeneration and renovation of the believer, the three Persons of the blessed Trinity are present and concerned.

8. That being justified, &c.] Rather in order that having been justified by his grace, we may in hope become heirs of eternal life. This clause may depend either on "he saved us" in v. 5, or on "he shed on us" in v. 6. The former construction is the more probable. The apostle, having taught that it is of God's own free mercy only that He saved us, or placed us in a state of salvation, and having described the instrumentality by which this great change is effected, the washing of regeneration and the renewing by the Holy Ghost, proceeds to the object and end of it, the inheritance of glory. He has placed us in a state of salvation, in order that having been accounted righteous before Him by His own free grace, not for any deserts of our own, and being entitled thus to all the blessings which accompany righteousness, including the adoption of sons, "we may become heirs of eternal life," not indeed in present possession, but in hope. Cf. Rom. viii. 24, 25. "May become," the reading γενόμεθα is preferable to that of the received text, γενόμαι.

This is a faithful saying.] I.e. this abstract, as it were, of the Gospel comprised in the last four verses.

and these things I will, &c.] More
9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A man that is an heretic after the first and second admonition reject;

11 Knowing that he that is such is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer and  

literally, and about (or respecting) these things I wish you to assert strongly in order that they who have believed God may make it their care to be foremost in good works. Not “believed in God,” i.e. in His existence, unity, Trinity, and the like; but “believed God,” who has revealed this Gospel to us. Their practical holiness, which is so much insisted upon throughout the Pastoral Epistles, is assumed to be the result of a belief in God’s free mercy in calling us into a state of salvation.

these things.] Either “these good works,” or, generally, this kind of teaching which inculcates practice; in either case in opposition to the unprofitable and vain questions in v. 9. The latter sense is perhaps preferable. There would be a feebleness in saying “good works are good and profitable unto men.”

9. avoid.] “Stand aloof from” genealogies. See on 1 Tim. i. 4.

contentions, and strivings about the law.] Lit., “legal disputes,” arising out of interpretations of the law, such as abound in the Talmud, and of which the question (Matt. xxii. 36), “Which is the great commandment in the law?” in the spirit in which it was put, is an example.

10. A man that is an heretic after the first and second admonition reject. After one and a second admonition without effect, shun. Nothing more can be done with him. The word does not carry the idea of excommunication which is suggested by our translation. It is objected that “an heretic” in the sense of one who holds and teaches false doctrine, is a word of later date, and that the use of it here implies that the epistle was written after the Gnostic errors had formed sects and brought the word into common use. But there is nothing to show that a teacher of doctrinal error is here meant. “Heresy” in the New Testament is “a sect,” without even implying that the distinctive character of the sect is a doctrine at all. The Sadducees are called a heresy in Acts v. 17; the Pharisees in Acts xv. 5, xxvi. 5. The “heresies” at Corinth were marked by the names of orthodox teachers, Paul, Apollos, Cephas, and denoted parties but not false doctrine; and St. Paul in writing of them uses “schisms,” σχίσματα, and “heresies,” ἁρεσίαι, as synonymous. See 1 Cor. i. 10, 12; xi. 18, 19. And as “heresy” was “a sect,” so doubtless “a heretic,” (a word which occurs only in this place in the New Testament), would be one who formed or joined a sect. Afterwards as the early sects which formed around various Gnostic tenets became erroneous in doctrine, the word “heresy” soon came to signify a sect holding or teaching erroneous doctrine, and at last the erroneous doctrine itself. A heretic was then a doctrinal sectarian. Meanwhile schism and schismatic which at first were synonymous, or nearly so, with heresy and heretic, retained their first meaning and became appropriate to parties and partisans, who divided the Church, without depraving the truth.

11. Knowing.] By his rejection of your admonition.

12. When I shall send Artemas unto thee or Tychicus. Apparently to take charge of the Cretan Church in the absence of Titus. Of Artemas nothing more is known from Scripture. There is a tradition that he became Bishop of Lystra. For Tychicus, see note on 2 Tim. iv. 12.

be diligent.] Hasten. Many cities bear the name of Nicopolis. The three which have been variously selected as the city mentioned in the text, are 1. Nicopolis in Cilicia, which cannot, however, be made to coincide with any probable theory of St. Paul’s movements. 2. Nicopolis in Thrace on the borders of Macedonia and called in the apocryphal salutation at the end of this epistle, “Nicopolis of Macedonia.” This subscription has no authority, and indeed states the epistle to have been written at Nicopolis, in manifest contradiction to the apostle’s words. This town may have lain in the way of St. Paul’s journey, though there is no assignable reason why he should have designed it as his winter quarters. It was a place of small importance in comparison with 3. Nicopolis in Epirus on the Ambracian Gulf, which, in all probability, is the city to which St. Paul was going. Founded by Augustus to commemorate the victory of Actium, it had become a place of considerable
Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them. 14 And let our's also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful. 15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.
PHILEMON.

INTRODUCTION.

§ I. 1. Occasion of the letter. . . . 819
2. Analysis of its contents. . . . 820
§ II. The rhetoric of the Epistle to Philemon 830

I. 1. Occasion of the Letter.

The attempts which have been made to satisfy the natural curiosity of the readers of this brief but exquisite letter as to most of the persons who are mentioned in it by St Paul have been rather unsuccessful. Almost the only facts which appear with entire historical certainty from the evidence of the letter itself are these—that Philemon stood in the relation of master to Onesimus, his slave; and that Onesimus, who had run away to Rome, was sent back to Philemon by St Paul. It seems, however, in the highest degree probable, from internal as well as external evidence, that we can determine the relationship of other members of the household from which Onesimus had fled. If Onesimus is the slave, Philemon is the husband, Apphia the wife, Archippus the son. It is further evident that Philemon must have been in comfortable, if not affluent, circumstances; that for Christ’s sake he shewed hospitality and love to distressed saints; and that he, as well as Archippus, occupied official positions in the Church, which brought them into relation with St Paul. But when we are told that Philemon, Archippus, Onesimus, were or became

1 By St Jerome Archippus is said to have been Bishop of Colosse. But it would be a more plausible inference from Col. iv. 16, 17, that he was Bishop of Laodicea (Theol. Mops. in loc.). Nor is external testimony altogether wanting to this effect. In the ‘Apostol. Constit.’ (vii. 46) Philemon is spoken of as Bishop of Colosse, Archippus as Bishop of Laodicea (Wieseler, ‘Chronol. d. Apost.’ 450 sqq.). Tillemon says that the Greek Menza make him Bishop of Gaza, but martyred and buried at Colosse. Theodoret mentions that the house of Philemon was still shewn at Colosse, in the fifth century. It was also said that after discharging pastoral—perhaps episcopal—functions at Colosse, he taught at Gaza when Nero was emperor, and laid down his life in the proconsulship of Androcles. The connection of Archippus with Laodicea, and the admonitory

Bishops who occupied certain sees, we suspend our assent—not because the assumption of a regular episcopate at that time involves an anachronism—but because the evidence is imperfect or con-

passage (Col. iv. 17), have given rise to the deeply interesting conjecture that the ‘be zealous’ of our Lord (Rev. iii. 19), addressed to the angel of the Laodicean Church, is the counter-part to the ‘take heed’ of St Paul (‘Colossians and Philemon,’ Bishop Lightfoot, p. 43). There is, however, much force in the objection to this view of the message to Archippus in Colossians. When St Paul writes to a Bishop, he can speak sternly enough of the sins and fail-

ures of ministers (1 Tim. iii. 3–5, v. 20, 21, 22). When he writes to the people, he looks entirely at the better and more hopeful side (see note on 1 Thess. v. 12, 13). It would seem to be ethi-

cally inconsistent with his method to administer a rebuke to a pastor indirectly through his people—a process which might have been felt by Archippus to be wanting in delicacy and consider-


2 The conjecture that Onesimus may have been the Bishop of Ephesus mentioned by Ignatius is scarcely worthy of the contemptuous dismissal which it has received. The date of the Epistle of Ignatius to the Ephesians (prob. A.D. 107) presents no difficulty. The Onesimus of St Paul’s Epistle to Philemon need not have been much more than 70 at that date. (We are unable to find any proof of the idea of some German scholars that the Ep. of Ignatius to the Ephes. implies that their bishop was a young man in A.D. 107.) It only states that the writer’s acquaintance with him was recent (cap. v.). There is certainly something very striking and suggestive in the way in which after mentioning Onesimus, their visible bishop (in earei τριθα

σταγιον), and just afterwards again in junction with three other names, Ignatius goes off with a series of allusions to the Epistle to Philemon (διεξει αυτων, cf. v. 10; δια διακοσμους αυτων, cf. v. 8; Κλησθη λυτρων, cf. τυ ν. 1, 9, 13; προσθεν ηακελευτων αυτων, cf. τυ ν. 8, 9, Ignat. ‘Epist. ad Ephes.’ 11.111.). Such an identification of Onesimus, Bishop of Ephesus, with the Onesimus of St Paul on the part of Ignatius seems not improbable. Onesimus, said in the Roman martyrologies to have been martyred at Rome, is remembered in the Greek Church on Feb. 15, in the Latin on Feb. 16.

3F2
INTRODUCTION TO

fecting. That the letter was delivered by Onesimus is clear, not so much from the subscription which was added at a later period, as from the whole context and nature of the case. What else is certain is mainly this, that the fugitive slave,—thief as well as fugitive,—was converted and apparently baptized by St Paul; that he rendered the Apostle services, deeply felt and recognized; that he was loved by his instructor with a peculiar tenderness, witnessed to by that wealth of pathetic terms of endearment—his son (v. 10); his brother (v. 16); his heart (v. 12); his very second self (v. 17).

2. ANALYSIS OF ITS CONTENTS.

An analysis of this tenderly beautiful Epistle may seem as superfluous as the analysis of an Idyll. Yet such a structural framework may serve to shew that the Apostle had formed no overweening estimate of the weight and strength with which his Epistles impressed contemporary readers (2 Cor. x. 10). The very whirl and rush of words and apparent dislocation of construction is not without its meaning.

i. The Salutation. vv. 1, 2, 3.

ii. The Prelude. vv. 4, 5, 6, 7.

Affectionate introduction.

His thankfulness for his friend, v. 4; caused by what he had heard of Philemon’s true love and faith, v. 5; subject of his prayer, v. 6; beautiful result of Philemon’s goodness, v. 7.

iii. The Request.

This request might be based upon rightful authority, v. 8.

The spiritual generation spoken of in v. 10 is, however, not to be understood of baptism only, but of Christian teaching and instruction. Cf. Clem. Alexandrin. Strom. Lib. 1. "When St Paul so often calls Onesimus his son, his heart, &c., when he says that he was wishing to retain Onesimus with him to minister unto him in the bonds of the Gospel, we must infer that the slave had not only received elementary instruction from the Apostle but had been washed in the sacred laver and admitted to the mystery of the Holy Communion. Otherwise he could not have been considered entirely as a son and as one of the faithful, and designated for such a function in the Church. So that Onesimus was sent back to Philemon not as a mere catechumen but as a perfect and (so to speak) full-grown disciple of Christ" (S. Gentil. Opp. v. 383).

The Apostle prefers to base it
(a) Generally—upon The Great Love.
(b) Specially—upon his own

1. Person,
2. Age,
3. Sufferings,
4. Sufferings for Christ. v. 9.

The request itself—supported by reasons:
(a) Onesimus is St Paul’s spiritual child, v. 10.
(b) As a changed man, he will fulfil the promise of his name, and be useful to Philemon, v. 11.
(c) St Paul loves Onesimus as a second self, v. 12;
(d) has sent him home, when his services would have been most welcome, for a reason connected with Philemon’s highest welfare, vv. 13, 14.
(e) Possible design of God’s overruling Providence in the whole affair, v. 15.
(f) Double affection, natural and spiritual, due to the slave who has become a brother, v. 16.
(g) Affection due to the Apostle as a partner in Christian life and work, v. 17.

The request—Receive him as myself.

iv. The Undertaking and Signature, vv. 18, 19.

The request renewed, v. 20.

v. The Epilogue.

(a) His confidence in Philemon, that he will do more than the request. v. 21.
(b) Happy anticipation of deliverance from custody, and hope of visiting his friend, v. 22.
(c) Joint salutations to Philemon, vv. 23, 24.
(d) Grace be with your spirit.

II. THE RHETORIC OF THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON.

The rhetorical skill and beauty of the Epistle to Philemon was once a favourite subject with Christian commentators and critics. Modern writers, while doing ample justice to the tenderness and pathos of this short letter, have been

THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON. 821

rather disposed to do scanty justice to the style and language. It may be well to examine from this point of view one verse which has been considered especially liable to the charge of laxity of style, and disregard of symmetrical arrangement.

"Hearing of thy love and faith which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints" (v. 5). Some translators in ancient times, and many in later days, would at once accept M. Renan's version, as an equivalent, and, indeed, as a judicious correction—"de ta foi au Seigneur, de ta charité pour tous les saints." Yet those who reverence Scripture may justly maintain that St. Paul's own arrangement of the words has a higher rhetoric, under the guidance of a better wisdom. Let us suppose a writer to have before him two propositions, one of which is of special importance for his immediate purpose. He might be able to bring out that purpose most effectively by beginning and ending his sentence with the motive to which he wished to give prominence. From this point of view, it is instructive to compare the two constructions.

1 Bishop Lightfoot, pp. 334.-335.
2 'L'Antechrist,' p. 96. So the Syriac version (cf. Niemeyer, 'Comment. Hist. Gramm. in Philem.' p. 1; Niemeyer quotes St Matt. xx. 21; Acts xx. 21). Modern paraphrases of the Pauline Epp. often tempt one to apply Melanchthon's bitter but most just saying against the writers of his day to a very different class of people—"The Church has 'unlearnt her own language among the men of culture.'" (Linguam suam dedidit ecclesia inter monachos. Melanchth. Opp. iii. 888.)

temporary letters to the Ephesians and Colossians. In those more elaborate and dogmatic pieces the idea of faith is of principal significance, and in one or other of its aspects is the leading subject of consideration. But in the Epistle to Philemon the writer's great object is to appeal to the principle of Christian humanity, to that true human love which flows from the constraining power of divine love, believed in and accepted. "Love towards the saints," and therefore to the brother for whom he pleaded, is consequently placed in the forefront. It is the first note of the whole strain. Let us conceive the Epistle presented to Philemon, when the delegates first arrive, and the returned fugitive anxiously awaits his master's decision. The letter is received with reverential joy. Philemon listens, or reads, in breathless expectation, and the very first word which falls upon his ear, or meets his eye, after the usual salutation, is—love. It has a force in this place which no other word could supply. St Paul, therefore, places love first; but as he never can forget faith, and Christ as the central object of faith, he puts love first, the object of the love last, faith towards Christ in the middle between the extremes. To translate, or paraphrase the verse in a way which loses sight of this peculiarity, and makes it simply a dislocated way of saying—"the faith which thou hast towards the Lord Jesus, and the love to all the saints"—is to lose the secret of the Apostle's simple rhetoric, and to sacrifice his purpose to a superficial facility.

3 This form of construction is termed epanodos by old writers. The point in the text may be seen more clearly by arranging three passages in parallel columns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>After I heard</th>
<th>Since we heard</th>
<th>Hearing of thy</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. of your faith</td>
<td>1. of your faith</td>
<td>1. love</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. in the Lord</td>
<td>2. in Christ</td>
<td>and faith which thou hast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jesus,</td>
<td>Jesus,</td>
<td>toward the Lord</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. and love</td>
<td>3. and of the love</td>
<td>Jesus,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. unto all the saints.</td>
<td>4. which ye have</td>
<td>4. and toward</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eph. i. 15.</td>
<td>4. to all the saints.</td>
<td>all saints.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Col. i. 4.</td>
<td>Phil. v. 5.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

On the whole question, and on the propriety of reproducing, as far as possible, the order of the original in translating, see Bishop Jebb, 'Sacred Literature,' pp. 345-350. The word all here implies a beautiful argument. "If you are thus beneficent to all the saints, remember that our Onesimus is such. You should receive him that the fountain of a love so exuberant may not seem to be cut off from him only" (S. Gentilius, Opp. v. 386).
It may be well to note some other instances of the Apostle's rhetoric of love. A point comes when he must at last definitely write down the name which was so likely to irritate Philemon. With a subtle tact of infinite delicacy he defers to the last possible moment a name which might set up angry recollections in arms against his plea, until he has prepared the way by a whole series of affecting touches. "For the love's sake, I rather beseech—being such an one as Paul, aged, as it is also a prisoner of Jesus Christ, I beseech thee for my son, whom I have begotten in my bonds—Onesimus" (v. 9, 10). The man who can write with such noble variety is not wanting in the playful touch which so often accompanies true pathos. He plays—shall we say he almost puns?—twice, once upon the meaning, once upon the name, of Onesimus. With what subtle tenderness the Apostle takes the sting out of the slave's two great offences! Onesimus was a fugitive. How winnily St Paul puts it! "Perhaps he was separated" (v. 15).—He had stolen his master's property. "If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought" (v. 18). It is not necessary to go very deeply into the distinctions of Roman law for the Apostle's bond—"I Paul have written with mine own hand." It is a gentle mockery of money business. The note closes in the same unrivalled strain by his asking to have a lodging prepared for him, if he is given as a gift in answer to the prayers of Philemon and his family. Philemon certainly would be ashamed to meet St Paul after having refused to grant him a request which lay so near his heart. The thought of seeing the Apostle would inspire Philemon with hope and joy—the passions which produce especial alacrity in complying with the wishes of those in reference to whom they are felt.

III. Its connection with Roman Slavery.

One of the Epistles of the Captivity—that to the Ephesians—deals with one great department of private family-life, viz. the relation of husband and wife.

1 Bauer, 'Rhetor. Paul.' 1. 240 (quoted by Niemeier). The style of St Paul has never been described as "more candid and reverent freedom than by Melanchthon, who certainly does not suppose that the Apostle "was as far as possible from common sense." "Let those who would take away his doctrine as trivial at least credit Paul with common sense. For, granting that the department of literary art which contains style and rhetoric was in great measure wanting to him, we must allow that he possessed invention and arrangement, which do not so much belong to technical learning as to ordinary judgment. And yet there appear in Paul's style certain unmistakable notes of liberal knowledge. He uses words and figures which are redolent of Greek culture. His forms of reasoning are not without art. For he defines with the air of a man who knows what he is about. He carefully investigates the causes and first origin of the things which he discusses. He sees the points which are against him, and has in an extraordinary degree the power of removing some of these and mitigating others. He possesses another characteristic of genuine literary art. He adds to his arguments epilogues, not mere otiose pieces of composition, but effusions querying with the genuine beat of the affections. And he has the power of intermingling exactly in due proportions those more vehement emotions which are called ῥάθυ with the tender affections which are called ῥήθυ. I, therefore, credit him not only with invention and arrangement, but with one department of rhetorical skill. For in his language there is a weight of its own, and an elegance of its own, though it is interspersed with Hebraisms, which mark the beauty of the composition. Besides, technical composition is wanting, i.e. care and skill in weaving the texture of periods, which is so important in securing perspicuity. But St Paul's style sometimes flows on to an undue length, because it wants the boundary of periods. Sometimes, again, he indicates the argument as if merely by a dot or point, by two or three words, so that the sentence is left imperfect, and, as it were, mutilated. We see Paul almost after the fashion of Thucydides employing a brief rugged style (brevi, cæli, et refracto genere orationis) whose brevity would be more luminous with more care in composition." 2 Dedic. in Ep. ad Rom.,' Opp. iv. pp. 2, 3.

2 Eph. v. 22—33.
THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON.

Nowhere does St Paul proceed more entirely after his general rule of ascending from every particular form of duty to its ideal principle. The conjugal relation has its model in the love of the Incarnate God for His spouse, the Church; its rule is in the prophetic declaration of the long history of human love, uttered by the father of our race at the first bridal. In the brief letter to Philemon, attached to the Epistle to the Colossians, a darker department of the private life of antiquity is touched with the light of the Gospel. The mode of dealing with the question of slavery here is not, indeed, the same as that pursued in treating the question of marriage. But the difference, after all, is not so much in essential principle as in the tone which arises from the different circumstances and starting-points of the two Epistles. Ephesians is a treatise; Philemon is a note. Ephesians is the lyric; Philemon is the Idyll of the New Testament. Nor, again, does the letter before us, like those to the Ephesians and Colossians, advert to the dignity of even the slave's work—to the assurance that a heavenly Master's eye is upon him in the house, in the field, in the vineyard, in the mill, following him with sympathy to the obscure martyrdom of the cross and the dreadful plunge into the lampeys' pool. Yet the essential principles are the same. The salutation, "Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ," lifts the principal subject of this letter into the same high sphere of dogmatic truth from which the other Epistles take their beginning. The motive above all others for the pardon of the slave may well be hinted at in the "Grace and peace." Faintly, if at all, indicated by our translation, "for love's sake," the motive of the great love—of Him who is the Love—is conveyed in the words—"for the Love's sake do I rather beseech thee." (v. 9.)

The Epistle to Philemon cannot be thoroughly understood without some knowledge of the general condition of slavery in the Roman Empire. Possibly in the survey we may find a few illustrative particulars which have escaped the observation of some who have gone over this well-gleaned field.

In every province of the Roman Empire, in the centre of every family, there were to be found at the period of St Paul's ministry, in almost uncounted hordes, "an unhappy condition of men, who endured the weight, without sharing the benefits of society." These slaves were devoted to an all but irremediable misery, and to the vices inseparable from their position. In the rank and teeming soil of slavery vices grew up with irrepressible exuberance. Those which seemed the most contradictory flourished together under the sky which overshadowed the lands that were trodden by these unhappy beings. On the one hand the sensuality, the grossness, the cruelty even in women, the rapacity, the shamelessness which unlimited power breeds in those who habitually move a-

---

1 Gen ii. 24; Ephes. v. 30, 31, 32.
2 Slavery has been defined as "a certain condition," accidentally denoted by a name derived from the hatred felt by other nations for the Scythian race." The word slave probably arose in oriental France in the eighth century, when princes and bishops were rich in Scythian captives. From thence the word extended to general use, and to the modern languages. (Gibbon, ch. lv. Vol. v. p. 291, edit. Milman. See Müller. 'Etymologisches Wörterbuch der englischen Sprache,' s. v. slave.)
3 Eph. vi. 5—8; Col. iii. 22.
4 St Hieron. 'Comment. in Epist. ad Phil.' Tom. vit. p. 644 (edit. Migne).
5 'Think, he seems to say, how much
6 Gen ii. 24; Ephes. v. 30, 31, 32.
7 Slavery has been defined as "a certain condition," accidentally denoted by a name derived from the hatred felt by other nations for the Scythian race." The word slave probably arose in oriental France in the eighth century, when princes and bishops were rich in Scythian captives. From thence the word extended to general use, and to the modern languages. (Gibbon, ch. lv. Vol. v. p. 291, edit. Milman. See Müller. 'Etymologisches Wörterbuch der englischen Sprache,' s. v. slave.)
8 Eph. vi. 5—8; Col. iii. 22.
9 St Hieron. 'Comment. in Epist. ad Phil.' Tom. vit. p. 644 (edit. Migne).
10 'Think, he seems to say, how much
11 Gen ii. 24; Ephes. v. 30, 31, 32.
12 Slavery has been defined as "a certain condition," accidentally denoted by a name derived from the hatred felt by other nations for the Scythian race." The word slave probably arose in oriental France in the eighth century, when princes and bishops were rich in Scythian captives. From thence the word extended to general use, and to the modern languages. (Gibbon, ch. lv. Vol. v. p. 291, edit. Milman. See Müller. 'Etymologisches Wörterbuch der englischen Sprache,' s. v. slave.)
13 Eph. vi. 5—8; Col. iii. 22.
14 St Hieron. 'Comment. in Epist. ad Phil.' Tom. vit. p. 644 (edit. Migne).
15 'Think, he seems to say, how much
16 Gen ii. 24; Ephes. v. 30, 31, 32.
17 Slavery has been defined as "a certain condition," accidentally denoted by a name derived from the hatred felt by other nations for the Scythian race." The word slave probably arose in oriental France in the eighth century, when princes and bishops were rich in Scythian captives. From thence the word extended to general use, and to the modern languages. (Gibbon, ch. lv. Vol. v. p. 291, edit. Milman. See Müller. 'Etymologisches Wörterbuch der englischen Sprache,' s. v. slave.)
18 Eph. vi. 5—8; Col. iii. 22.
Among fellow-creatures who are totally unable to resist the approaches of their lust or the exorbitance of their anger. On the other hand, vices apparently inconsistent with these, of a type uglier and meaner still, flourished and abounded. The restlessness of tyrannical espionage hunted out an assassin in every covering fugitive. A sleepless suspicion hated and despaired the miserable creature whom it had injured. The haughtiest of men and women went to their beds, haunted by the nightly fear of an outbreak among their hundreds of dependents, and of fires to be quenched in pools of blood. "An atmosphere broods over slave-states charged with the fear which springs from the consciousness of a great wrong." Such were the vices which slavery engendered in the hearts of those whom the institution was supposed to profit. The effect upon the slaves themselves is written upon a hundred pages of classical literature, frequently with a cynical unconsciousness. There we read the meanness, the flattery, the cowardice, the suppressed hatred, the impotent bursts of fury, the dexterity in gratifying odious desires, the despair which catches at every villainy and every sensuality as a golden opportunity of enjoyment upon a rapid journey to an inevitable cross. The reflex action upon the masters and their families was immense. The laziness, the lying, the sulkiness, the thievish propensities of the majority of slaves, must have been a perpetual source of irritation to their masters. Onesimus must perpetually have provoked Philemon. He was not only a slave, but a Phrygian, incorrigible except by blows, nervous and cowardly to the last degree, in the estimation of the markets. But even this perpetual exasperation of temper is a trifle compared with the more terrible perils of a deeper contamination. The family ought to be a retreat where "purity reposes in the bosom of order." But the innocence of childhood, and the modesty of youth, were defied by the precocious knowledge of evil which was forced upon them at every turn by the example or by the language of slaves—by the spectacle alike of the vices which such beings resisted, and of the vices which they invited.

Of the total loss of the most elementary rights upon the part of the slaves, a terrible instance occurred, in all probability at the very period of St Paul's first Roman captivity (A.U.C. 814, A.D. 61). A slave in the great Roman household of Pedanius Secundus had assassinated his master, whether from some odious jealousy, or because his liberty was unjustly refused after he had paid the price from his own peculium. The whole household, to the number of 400, was liable to capital punishment. Even Roman society was shaken to its centre by the prospect of such an execution, and the Senate hesitated to carry out the law. In a speech, whose substance is given by Tacitus, Cassius argued in favour of severity. His argument, an appeal to hatred and terror, concluded with the cool assumption that "every great example must be allowed a certain

1 "Phryges serò sapienti"—"Phryges plagiis meliores fami." (Cic. 'pro Flacco').

"Slaves are necessarily irritating," says Channing. "It is a significant fact that the Greek grammarians, with slavery before their eyes, derived the various names for slavery from vices. They found δολος in δολος, δολαδος in δολαρδος, and connected δολος with δολωμαι and των. They were no doubt better acquainted with slavery than etymology." See citations from the 'Etymol. Mag.' in Wallon's great work, 'Histoire de l'Esclavage.'
THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON.

margin for injustice, and that any wrong which might be inflicted upon individuals was more than atoned for by the public benefit." The numbers, the age, the sex, the admitted innocence of very many, were not allowed to weigh against this base and artful special pleading. It is some satisfaction to know that our common humanity asserted itself by one brief start of indignant horror. The execution of the 400 could only be carried out after the issue of an Imperial decree, backed up by a strong body of troops who lined the whole way along which the condemned were dragged to the place of punishment. No doubt there might be, and there were, exceptions to the general darkness of this picture. There are, for instance, monumental inscriptions which attest the existence of sympathy with the slave, and even of true concern for his loss. (Yet a painful suspicion insinuates itself as to some quoted by M. Wallon, note 12, II. 449.) One at least has been found, in which a son prematurely cut off speaks from the stone, and affectionately beseeches the father who survived him to grant the manumission of two slaves who had ministered to him. Yet the poetry of Virgil may be appealed to on the other side. Virgil possessed that tenderness of touch which makes him "the first of the moderns." He sympathized with the free labour of the petty husbandman. One exquisite passage proves that he could understand and feel for the struggles of the poor and virtuous housewife,

—castum ut servare cubile
Conjugis, et possit parvos educere natos.

But evidence seems to be wanting that he ever wasted a sigh upon the abject and shivering slave-girl whom the mistress urged to her unrequited work, while the dreary torch-light glimmered through the shadows of the hour before the winter morning. Later on it is only just to say that the slow progress of social improvement, or the secret infiltration of Christian ideas, produced a more humane spirit. Pliny could have one eloquent human sigh over labour, forced from clogged feet, maimed hands, and branded brows—a labour which contaminated the very soil because it was executed from despair.

But if the slave had no rights, so far as his person and property was concerned, if the terrible principle "nullum caput habet" was absolutely against him as regarded every form of advantage and enjoyment; this remorseless and cast-iron logic ceased to be consistent when it came to be applied to his duties and to his transgressions. When the slave was brought up for punishment, it was discovered that he was human after all. The law was peculiarly severe as regarded the offence which Onesimus had committed in running away. It deviated for a while from the region of fact into the subtle domain of intention; it became casuistical; it pursued the crime of crimes with a pedantic subtility which almost anticipated scholasticism. The slave might have formed the intention of escape, and made some feeble attempts at preparing for future flight: he might then have given up his perilous scheme in despair. He might have crossed the threshold, and then at once in fear or penitence have returned. But repentance, return, restitution, could claim no pardon. The brand was equally to be affixed. There was one glimmering of human dignity in this, which exalted the "chattel personal" above the brute. The cattle could only stray; in virtue of his reasonable soul, every Onesimus was

1 Tacit. 'Annal.' XIV. 42—45. Another terrible instance at an earlier date may be cited. A gallant slave had used a weapon in killing a ferocious boar; he was crucified for the offence. The great Roman orator frigidly observes—"durum hoc fortasse videtur, neque ego in ullam partem dispute." (Cic. 'in Verrem.' v. 3.)

2 This was an example of what the lawyers technically termed manumission 'verbis precatis,' and was tantamount to an instruction left by will to an inheritor. See M. Wallon, Liv. II. ch. x. de l’af franchissement. ' II. 387.

8 Noctem addens operi, fumulasque ad lumina longo
Exercet penso.

'Æneid,' VIII. 411.

In one of his most eloquent passages, Pliny contrasts the old cultivation of the soil by such as Cincinnatus ("gaudente terrâ vovere laureato et triumphali aratro") with servile labour. "At nunc cadem illa vincit pedes, damnata manus, inscriptique vultus exercent; non tamen sūdā tellure quae parentes appellatur colique dicitur ipsa; honore su subjecto, ut non invitā eā et indignante credatur sic fieri." C. Plin. Sec. 'Nat. Hist.' XVIII. 4.
INTRODUCTION TO

capable of being an erro or a fugitius.

All that has been said bears upon the case of Onesimus. In spite of the distinction of Aristotelian, St Paul felt friendship, an affection that was indeed paternal, for the slave whose soul he had awakened by his teaching, and whom he had probably himself baptized. (v. 10.) The stern purity of Christian morality (for Onesimus had been guilty of theft, v. 18), and the scandal which would certainly arise, if encouragement of social disturbance could plausibly be attributed to the Gospel, involved the painful necessity of sending back the fugitive slave to his justly offended master. There was no denying that Onesimus might be subjected to danger. The saying that Phrygians were improved by flogging might be put to a cruelly practical proof. It was possible though certainly it was eminently improbable in a house which was also a Church (v. 2) that a cross might be his lot. It might have been difficult to reconcile Onesimus himself to a return to Colosse. The slaves of various countries were credited or discredited in the market with congenital

The erro was pusillius fugitius — sorte de fugitif au petit pied (M. Wallon, II. 65). The possession of so much aesthetic insight as is evidenced by careful and intent study of pictures was presumptive evidence of this crime. Venerius says of it — "animi potius quam corporis vitium... veluti si... tabulas pictas studiose intueratur."”

1 "Labeo sit errare et fugere jumentum posse; nec tamen errores aut fugitivum esse posse." See quotation from Pomponius in M. Wallon, II. 65.

3 Perhaps, however, justice has scarcely been done by many writers to this great memory. For Aristotle certainly admits the slave’s humanity. "So far forth as he is a slave there is no friendship towards him, but so far forth as he is a man." And he adds with all his heart: " وكيل إذا الإخاء قد كرس في الدينمن کوفورا في بحثك، كلف هلاك ده كال أب في أومن." "Ethic. Nicom., VIII. ii.

4 "Otherwise many would blushingly say—Christianity has been introduced into human life as a solvent of social relations, if slaves are to be taken from their masters. It is a violent and revolutionary thing." St Joan. Chrysost. Proem. in Epist. ad Philerm.

5 The Roman satirist represents such a punishment as inflicted by a peevish mistress simply from caprice:

1 'Comici Phrygas timidos illustrant.' Terrull. 'de Anim. XX. See quotations in Bishop Lightfoot (‘Colossians and Philemon,’ p. 314, note 2). The Cilician, Cappadocian, and Cretan, were called the three bad Ks. (See the vivid passage in M. Wallon, 'Histoire de l'Esclavage,' II. 61, 62.)

6 "om. Θεωρημα για τον ετος καὶ ἐναργη εύθυς, οὐκ εἰν αἰσχρος, Col. iv. q. 9. Note the priority which is given by the position of the first adjective (‘faithful’) to the new relation of Onesimus.

2 Plaut. Capt. II. 3. 456.

3 Fugitium non est quæ praebisset se ad amicum, quem ad precandum persuadet [I. 17, § 4 (Ulp.), D. XXI. 1]. See M. Wallon, 'De l'Esclavage,' II. 239—249.
THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON. 827

may convey a second allusion to another merciful provision of law in the same breath. The Apostle solemnly declares Onesimus to be his son, his spiritual adopted child. But of the various forms of manumission justa, the adoptive stands in the first rank. With the title of son, the rights of domestic and civil life flow in upon the slave, new-born into the common family of humanity. Thus the Apostle seems in one short sentence to plead for the pardon and manumission of Onesimus, the first as his preceptor, the second by declaring him an adopted son (v. 9, 10).

It will be seen how consistently with himself, and with the general character of Christian doctrine, St Paul writes in this Epistle, with its apparently surprising reticence upon the general character of an institution so odious as slavery. Slavery was not abolished by any one single text of the Old or of the New Testament. Under the elder Covenant, it existed from a very ancient date; but was mitigated from the first by such sublime precepts as those of Job (xxxi. 13, 14, 15), and by the softening influence of the Mosaic legislation. Christianity was but carrying Mosaicism to perfection by admitting the slave within the imperial walls of the Church. Under the New Testament it was not consistent with the divine quietness of the Gospel to preach what would have practically been a tremendous social revolution. The word of

2 «Deut. xvi. 10.—17 (observe the "man-servant and maid-servant," vv. 11, 14). The point is put with great power by Mr Goldwin Smith, "Does the Bible sanction American Slavery?" pp. 62 seqq. "In 1 Kings ii. 39, two of the servants of Shimei run away to Achish, king of Gath. This, it is believed, is the sum total of slave disturbances in the annals of the Hebrew nation." Ibid. p. 89. Another contrast between Hebrew and Roman slavery may be found in comparing the incidental notice in Ezra ii. 65, with such statements as those in Plin. 'Nat. Hist.' xxxiv. 47. It would appear from the former that 43,360 persons possessed only 7,237 slaves. We are told by the latter that one man of great opulence left behind him 4,000 slaves.
3 "It is," says S. Gentilis, "one of the objects of this Epistle, as regards what I may call the jura of Christianity, to show that slaves are not technically manumitted nor to be wrested violently from masters, even when these last are Christians." Opp. v. 332.

truth, like Him from whom it came, can afford to be patient, because it is eternal. Certainly we look in vain for any detached text which insists upon emancipation. The Epistle before us, where if anywhere we might expect such an utterance, is studiously without it. The truth is that the whole spirit and genius of the Gospel is infinitely more powerful than any detached fragment of exhortation or command; and the temper and character which it forms is "first pure, then peaceable, gentle and easy to be intreated, full of mercy." One single precept of the Epistle to which the letter to Philemon was attached, wherever it was received as a divine message, carried emancipation in its womb. "Masters! give unto your slaves justice and equity." But the right of the labourer

1 S. James iii. 17. For a masterly assertion of the national duty of emancipating the African slaves, on the ground of giving to others what we had received, see the following passage from a speech which has been pronounced to be the masterpiece of Pitt:

"Allow of this principle as applied to Africa, and I should be glad to know why it might not also have been applied to ancient and uncivilized Britain? Why might not some Roman senator, reasoning on the principles of some honourable gentlemen, and pointing to British barbarians, have predicted with equal boldness, "There is a people that will never rise to civilization—there is a people destined never to be free—a people without the understanding necessary for the attainment of useful arts; depressed by the hand of nature below the level of the human species; and created to form a supply of slaves for the rest of the world?" Might not this have been said, according to the principles which we now hear stated, in all respects as fairly and as truly of Britain herself, at that period of her history, as it can now be said by us of the inhabitants of Africa?

"Had other nations adopted those principles in their conduct towards us; had other nations applied to Great Britain the reasoning which some of the senators of this very island now apply to Africa, ages might have passed without our emerging from barbarism; and we who are enjoying the blessings of British civilization, of British laws, and British liberty, might, at this hour, have been little superior, either in morals, in knowledge, or refinement, to the rude inhabitants of the coast of Guinea."

Pitt's Speeches. 11. 89, sqq. 2 το δικαίον καὶ τὴν ἀνθρώπην. Col. iv. 1. The second word means equity, equalness of treatment, not equality. "When we come to early races who have given their thoughts and feelings literary form, we find this conception of justice, as involving the equalness of action, becoming distinct. Among the Jews, David expressed in words this association of ideas, when,
to his wages, the right of every man to his own person, the right of all to equal treatment by the law, are imbedded in Christian morality. St. Paul’s injunction is almost a satire to a Christian master of slaves. Give the slave “that which is just and equitable,” and he ceases to be a slave. Nor was ultimate emancipation only in the ethical code of Christianity. It was interlaced with almost every fibre of the Church’s dogma and ritual. It was latent in the facts and ideas of Christianity—and indeed of the earlier dispensation when transferred to that happy soil—as the oak is latent in the acorn. The Father whom the Creed teaches us to worship is the common Father of all men. The Creator whom Genesis reveals “hath made of one blood all nations of men.” The dogma of the Incarnation lends dignity to human nature universally, and will not permit the intentional and systematic degradation of any who partake of it. In Baptism, the regenerate brother was gifted with the adoption which was his practical manumission. In the Holy Communion all were one bread and one body. Some of the foremost among the white-robed army of martyrs were slaves. The obscure drudge, the “qualis qualis” of the Roman jurists, sometimes became a Presbyter or Bishop.

It may afford matter for surprise that these premisses were not sooner drawn to their legitimate issue. It appears strange that Christians could have continued to be slaveholders. But the logic which follows ethical principles intermingled with vast masses of concrete social phenomena to their ultimate conclusions is slow in movement. Ex-praying to God to ‘hear the right,’ he said, ‘Let my sentence come forth from thy presence; let thine eyes look upon the things that are equal;’ as also, among early Christians, did Paul, when to the Colossians he wrote, ‘Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equal.’” (Herbert Spencer, ‘Data of Ethics,’ p. 164.)

1 Channing, ‘Remarks on Slavery,’ Works, v. 17.

2 Acts xvii. 16.

3 Consider e.g. the lofty consciousness which inspires the language of Euplius when brought before the Roman magistrate—“Who are you?” demanded Rusticus. Euplius, a slave of Caesar, replied:—“I, too, am a Christian, having been freed once for all by Christ (λυσθενωθης ὑπὸ Χριστοῦ).”—Acta Martyr. S. Justin et Soc. S. Justin. M. Opp. ii. 271. (Edit. Otto.)

experience shews us that gross abuses, public, and even private, may co-exist with virtue and even piety, until the hour arrives, when the eye of conscience is brought to bear upon them. A rude and rapid enfranchisement would have engaged the Church prematurely in a perilous conflict with an interest armed with the threefold adamantine mail of prescription, love of profit, and love of power. It might, for a time, have exposed a society used to forced and servile labour to something like starvation. It would have left on the land in every province of the Roman Empire a helpless population, totally unused to self-guidance, “unfurnished with the instinct of the brute or the educated intelligence of the man.” Centuries of Christian influence were needed to ripen into maturity the seeds of respect for self and for others—the sentiments of dignity and independence, which make communities capable of carrying out upon a large scale the robust and manly morality of social independence inculcated in St. Paul’s earliest letters.

Yet indications are not wanting that the inner meaning of the Epistle to Philemon did not escape the observation of Christendom from the earliest times—that the word which hovered upon the Apostle’s lips, but whose utterance was forbidden for the time by the restraining Spirit, was heard by the inner ear of the Church. Three of these may be briefly mentioned. (1) In the monuments of ancient Rome, the “servus” or “libertas” is very constantly mentioned. It is said that such notices are found in considerably more than half of the extant remains. Yet in a number of Christian inscriptions of a similar nature in Rome, amounting it has been calculated to more than 1100, and all belonging to

1 e.g. In the church, pluralities—in society, duelling and drinking habits.
2 Channing, Works, v. 82.
4 See i Thess. iv. 11, 12; 2 Thess. iii. 11, 12; and Introduction to those Epp.
5 Bishop Lightfoot says with equal truth and beauty that, in the Epistle to Philemon, “the word ‘emancipation’ seems to be trembling on his lips, and yet he does not once utter it.” (‘Colossians and Philemon,’ p. 373.)
THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON. 829

The first six centuries of the Christian era, only about six are cited as making any distinctive reference to this radical division of human life in ancient Rome. This seems to be the result of a primary instinct of the new life in Christ. The slave who received the one great call in a heavenly Lord is his Lord's freeman. In that new sphere where Christ is all and pervades all there is neither bond nor free. True, that St Paul never commanded Philemon to bring Onesimus before the first magistrate, and utter in his presence the two almost sacramental words "liber esto." Yet the thought which inspired the language of St Paul in the Epistle to Philemon—"not now a slave, but above a slave, a brother beloved" (v. 16)—became the thought of the Church, and may often have stayed the hand that traced the sepulchral characters, and inscribed, as it were, the "liber esto" over the slave in death, if it had been deferred in life. (2) The earliest Christian writings agree in tone with the line of St Paul. Thus, among the Apostolic Fathers Ignatius at once prohibits haughtiness or contempt to slaves in a Christian household, and forbids slaves to shew a passionate and precipitate desire for emancipation. (3) As soon as Christianity began to tell directly upon jurisprudence, a rapid series of laws favourable to slaves was passed (A.D. 314 to June 20, A.D. 322). It only remains to say that in philanthropy as in science there are three stages—the prelude, the epoch, and the sequel. The prelude is a period of aspiration, and half-blind guesses. The epoch brings the expression of the truth to its highest point. In the sequel, the principle once fixed in words, is extended and developed in practice. If space permitted, it would be no difficult task to apply the analogy to the influence of Christianity upon slavery. As far as the Epistle to Philemon is concerned, the epoch has come, and the principle is fully in St Paul's mind. The letter is unintelligible without it. In truth, if St Paul does not ask for emancipation, he asks for something more. From that brief note more especially went forth the spirit of manly tenderness and chivalry which was never completely extinct in the worst of times—which has stirred the hearts of men almost equally wherever Christ is named—which has prompted the Bull of Gregory XVI. and the burning pages of Channing—which has not said its latest word even yet, but perpetually pleads for "sweet reasonableness" and peacefulness in the dealings of Christians with their servants. Slavery was a leprosy. The Church was unable to cleanse it at once, and was obliged to touch it for a while. But it was as in the beautiful legend of Catharine of Sienna and the leper whom she tended. The hand that was stricken with the leprosy for a little, grew fairer and whiter than before—when it had laid the leper in his grave.

IV. EXTERNAL TESTIMONY TO THE EPISTLE.

The authenticity of the Epistle to Philemon was probably never very seriously denied: its inspiration was unpopular in certain quarters, external to the Church. It is very necessary to remember that the objections to the inspiration of the letter came from anti-dogmatic, not from dogmatic Christians; that "in the battle of the Creeds," the defenders of the Catholic doctrine are the champions of the Epistle; that "the fierce current of prejudice," stemmed by Jerome, Chrysostom, and Theodore of Mopsuestia, set in from a quarter external to the Church.

1 Given in full by M. Granier de Cassagnac. 'Voyage aux Antilles,' ii. 454—479.
2 S. Jerome states that the arguments used against this Epistle were, either that it was not St Paul's; or, that, if it came from his hand, he was not always inspired. Its subject, they
830 INTRODUCTION TO THE EPISTLE TO PHILEMON.

To the irresistible internal evidence of the genuineness of the Epistle modern criticism has added something in bringing out with fuller evidence the peculiarly Phrygian character of the name of Apphia.

As to external evidence. It is difficult to suppose that the Epistle was not in the mind of Ignatius in writing his Epistle to the Ephesians (see supra, the references to Philemon, tv. 20, 8, 1, 9, 13, 8, 9, in Ignat. 'Epist. ad Ephes.' ii. 111.). The book of Theophilus to Autolycus contains the same remarkable paronomasia which is found here in v. 11. Tertullian says that this Epistle alone was "defended by its own brevity, so as to escape the falsifying hands of Marcion," and proceeds to speak of it as written to one man, like the Epistles to Timothy and Titus. It is expressly quoted from by Origen. It is found in the ancient Muratorian canon.

[Was St Paul personally known to the Colossians, and had he ever been at Colosse before the writing of the Epistles to Colossians and Philemon? argued, proved that it was a commendatory note, not a dogmatic document. Jerome argues that its universal reception by all Churches in the whole world is unaccountable, except on the hypothesis of a Pauline origin. As to apparent triviality and everyday style, he points to such passages as 2 Tim. iv. 13; Galat. v. 12; 1 Cor. vii. 17; with their apparently petty details, outbursts of human feeling, admissions of uncertainty. For the brevity of the letter he refers to the minor Prophets, and concludes his defence by a quaint quotation of Rom. ix. 28, as if the very shortness of Philemon were in consonance with the spirit of the Gospel. (Comment. in Epist. ad Phil., Prol., Opp. vii. 637, 638.)

1 Not Appia, a Roman name, but Apphia, which occurs very frequently in Phrygian inscriptions. See the exhaustive discussion in Bishop Lightfoot (Colossians and Philemon, pp. 306—308). The name of Philemon occurs in connection with Phrygia in the beautiful legend of Philemon and Baucis, but "is not distinctively Phrygian."

2 Thopohyl. 'all Autolyc.' tv. 8, § 1, quoted above.

3 Tertull. 'c. Marcion.' v. 21.

4 In Jerem. xix.

5 See the subject fully discussed in Kirchh. 'Quellensammlung, pp. 205 sqq.

The various reasons for answering this question in the negative have been stated supra (Introduction to Epistle to Colossians, especially tv. 2, and note especially on ii. 1). It may be questioned, however, whether sufficient weight has been attributed to three facts.

1. Acts xvi. 6. As St Paul and Timothy visited Phrygia together, it is probable that they would visit Colosse and Laodicea. Now the salutation in Colossians iv. 15 would seem to imply personal knowledge of the Laodicean Church. But considering the proximity of the two towns (Introduction to Colossians, i. 1), it is unlikely that St Paul should have been present in one without going to the other.

2. St Luke's language in describing the Apostle's second visit to Phrygia some years later is very emphatic ("He went over all the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, confirming all the disciples," Acts xviii. 23). It would scarcely be consistent with so considerable an exception as that of a Church which St Paul looked upon as of sufficient importance for one of his greatest Epistles.

3. Above all, sufficient weight has scarcely been given to various indications supplied by the Epistle to Philemon. Philemon evidently lived at Colosse. St Paul's acquaintance with Philemon's house, and its members (tv. 1, 2), coupled with his description of Onesimus as a Colossian (Coloss. iv. 9) implies some local and personal knowledge. It appears in the highest degree probable that the step which Onesimus took in flying to Rome, and seeking St Paul, was suggested by the impression which had been made upon him by personal reminiscence of the Apostle's teaching and presence at Colosse.

Most, at least, of these points had occurred independently to the writer before studying Bishop Wordsworth's observations. New Testament, ii. 312—315.]

1 'The brethren in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church in his house.'
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO
PHILEMON.

4 He rejoiceth to hear of the faith and love of Philemon, 9 whom he desireth to forgive his servant Onesimus, and lovingly to receive him again.

Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellowlabourer,

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellowsoldier, and to the church in thy house:

PAUL, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, unto

1. Paul, prisoner of Jesus Christ] It will be observed that St Paul does not give himself the title of Apostle in this place. The very first word in which he speaks of himself is pathetic. He refers to his chains no less than five times in this short letter (v.v. 1, 9, 10, 13, 23). He feels it glorious to suffer shame for his Lord’s sake, and blessed to inherit the beatitude of those who are persecuted for righteousness’ sake (Matt. v. 10). He literally fulfils the exhortation of St Peter (1 Pet. iv. 14—16). “To me it seems a loitering thing that he should style himself prisoner of Jesus Christ than Apostle. The Apostles gloried because they were counted worthy to suffer shame for the Name (Acts v. 41); but the authority of bonds is irresistible. He who is about to plead for Onesimus feels that he should plead in such a form that he could not be refused” (S. Hieron. ‘Comm. in Ep. ad Philem.’, who also refers to the close of the Epistle to Gal., vi. 17).

and Timothy the brother] Timothy is joined with St Paul in the opening verse of two other Epistles of the captivity (Phil. i. 1; Col. i. 1). The addition of Timothy’s name would add weight to St Paul’s request.

2. And to Apphia the sister] (1) As regards the form of the name and its certainly Phrygian character, see Bp Lightfoot (‘Colossians and Philemon,’ pp. 306—308). (2) It seems in the highest degree probable that Apphia was Philemon’s wife; probable, but in a lower degree, that Archippus was their son. The mention of a woman between two such men, one the Apostle’s “fellow-labourer” (v. 1), the other his “fellow-soldier” (v. 2), is a noble example of the spirit of the Gospel, and of St Paul’s language, “neither male nor female” (Gal. iii. 28). It is an unobtrusive yet real hint of the elevation of woman, as the whole letter is of the release of the other victim of classical civilization, the slave.

Thus, supported on both sides, she seems to have the place not of her sex but of her worth” (S. Hieron. ‘Comm. in Philem.’ Opp. Tom. iii. 643, ed. Migne). (3) The reading the sister seems preferable to “the beloved,” as in A V. It is superior in uncial authority (A, D, E). (Nearly all the minuscule support “beloved.”) So also Theodorus Mops. in loc.) It is of course conceivable that beloved might have been exchanged for sister from “motives of false delicacy” (Bp Lightfoot). On the other hand, the adj. applied to Philemon might readily have suggested the same prefix to Apphia. The reading “beloved” seems scarcely grave enough for the dignified reserve which St Paul never forgets in his tenderest moments. Above all, the word sister distinctly adds to the meaning. For it shews that Apphia had embraced the Gospel, and was a baptized member of the Church, and thus preserves the line of thought in the sentence, balancing the epithets “fellow-worker,” “fellow-soldier,” applied to Philemon and Archippus. It would be somewhat inconsistent to introduce a mere touch of emotional feeling in a clause apparently constructed with a rather different end in view (see Reiche, ‘Comment. Crit. in loc.’).

our fellowsoldier (γυναῖκα τῇ συνεργῳ δοῦλῃ)] The notion of the spiritual life—more especially as connected with definite ministerial functions—being a warfare, a campaign, a soldier’s life, passed into the New Testament from the Old. Cf. Num. iv. 23, “to war the warfare”—μάχη being an essentially military term, “to march as a soldier to war,” i.e. to perform religious service in the tabernacle [Num. viii. 24; 1 S. ii. 22]. So the host of the regenerate who follow the Priest-King in Ps. cx. are at once priests and warriors (cf. the two sides of the Christian character—priestly consecration and strictly conflict—in Neander, ‘Mem. of Chr. Life,’ ch. iv.), cf. 1 Cor. ix. 7; 2 Cor. x 4; 1 Tim. i. 18; 2 Tim. ii. 4. The “Gospel campaigns” in which Archippus was St Paul’s comrade in
3 Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers,
Hearing of thy love and faith,

Arms may have been those during the Apostle's sojourn at Ephesus (A.D. 54—57). Those who hold that St Paul had a personal connection with Colosse (see Intro. to this Epistle) will also point to Acts xviii. 23.

and to the church in thy house] (1) "thy house" is evidently the house of Philemon, not of Archippus. (2) The worshippers of Christ under one roof are so called by St Paul. We find in Acts (x. 2, xvi. 31, 34) whole households, parents, children, and slaves, admitted into the Christian community. St Paul gives the name of Church to such families, as well as to any ordered assemblage of the faithful, in which when duly formed after the order of Christ, some rule, some are ruled. (3) As vast buildings, publicly consecrated and set apart, were impossible from the nature of the case in the earliest years of Christianity, houses of considerable size were employed for worship—like those of Aquila at Rome, of Nymphas or Philemon at Colosse (Niemeyer, "Comm. Gramm. Hist. in Epist. ad Phil. p. 7")—and the name of Church seems to have been transferred at an early period from the collection of living souls to the building in which they met—something in the same way as ἑορται became an oratory (Acts xvi. 13—16). (See Additional Note at end of this Epistle.) Are we not justified in adopting the beautiful idea of Chrysostom in commenting upon the salutation "to the Church in the house" of Philemon? "He did not omit the slaves here; for he knew that the words of slaves can often change a master's purpose, and especially when they plead for a fellow-servant. Some of them perhaps had stirred up Philemon against Onesimus. He does not permit them there to have any feeling of grudge, as he addresses them with the family. Nor does he give the master just reason for anger. If he had addressed the slaves by name, Philemon probably would have been displeased. See then how prudently he deals. For the word Church does not permit masters to be angry, if they are numbered with slaves. For the Church knows not the distinction of master and slave. Gal. iii. 28" (S. Joann. Chrysost. "Homil. 1. in Epist. ad Philerm., Tom. xi. 705, ed. Migne).

3. Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ] The word grace would be peculiarly touching to Philemon in connection with the plea for Onesimus. To speak to us of grace is to remind us of our sins and of their forgiveness by an infinite compassion. "Think," he seems to say, "how much God hath forgiven thee, how thou art saved by grace. Imitate thy Lord" (S. Joann. Chrysost. "Homil. 1. in Epist. ad Phil."). This verse (and v. 25) exalts philanthropy by bringing it into the highest region of dogma. A prayer like this would be inconceivable from one like St Paul, unless he held the equality of the Father and the Son, and the identity of the operation proceeding from both, exactly as in John v. 19. "It is here shewn that the Nature of the Father and the Son is one, for the Son can give that which the Father gives, and the Father is said to bestow that which the Son bestows" (S. Hieron. in loc. Opp. viii. 644).

4. I thank my God, always making mention of thee at (upon occasion of) my prayers] Jerome observes how at this point we have no longer Paul and Timothy speaking to Philemon and others. He seems to turn aside and speak heart to heart with Philemon (Ut solus Paulus ad solum Philemonem loquitur). For the expression cf. 1 Thess. i. 1, 2. Note how his first word is that glad eucharistic word with which he begins to begin his letters, after the opening salutation (Rom. i. 8; 1 Cor. i. 4; Phil. i. 3, 4; Col. i. 3, 4). The source of his joy ("hearing of thy love and faith") may be compared with that of St John in the Epistle to Gaius (3 John v. 4), which takes its place with the Epistle to Philemon as the only other certainly and strictly private letter in the canon. (For 2 John may be written to a Church, and the Epistles to Timothy and Titus are addressed to rulers of the Church in their official capacity.)

my God] Luther well said (upon the first words of Ps. xxii. 1) that "there is much divinity in pronouns." Such is the character of true faith. It is ever applying personally the promises made to believers generally.

making mention of thee always] Chrysostom here gives us another of his touches of delicate insight. St Paul would not have Philemon think that his letter was only for the slave—that, but for Onesimus, he might never have written at all. See then how Paul indicates other reasons for writing—one here, another in "prepare me also a lodging" (v. 12).

4. 5, 6. The reasons for, and force of, the epanodos or chiasmus in v. 5, have been fully discussed in the Introduction to this Epistle. The connection of these somewhat difficult verses may, in the first place, be given by a paraphrase—"Hearing, as I do, of the faith and the love which thou hast...I thank my God unceasingly, when the recollection of
which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints;
6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.

thee comes to me constantly on occasion of my prayers—prayers which are offered to the end that (connecting ἤτι τῶν προσηνέχοντα πας, ὑ., 4., with δῆσο, ὑ., 6., and taking δῆσο as "a final particle," Donaldson, 53) the manifested communication of thy faith in acts of charity may become effective to Christ Jesus (connecting εἰργάς γίνεται with εἰς X. ἤτι
δῆσο), accompanied, as it will be, with (ἐν) perfect knowledge of all the range of good which is in us as Christians."

5. Hearing of that love and that faith of thine, which thou holdest fast towards the Lord Jesus, and to all the saints.

[love and faith] For the reason of variation of the order of the words in Eph. i. 15; Col. i. 4, see Introduction to this Epistle. Faith and charity are two of God's greatest gifts. Towards the Lord Jesus (πρὸς τὸν Κ. Ἰ.Α.).] The faith which stretches out as it were in aspiration towards the Lord Jesus. The object of faith is not an idea, but a Person.

to all the saints (εἰς πάνας τοὺς ἄγιον) The love which found its appropriate field of exercise at, or in, every spot where the saints are found. (The essential idea of πρὸς is motion onward, with the accus. motion toward. Donaldson, 'Gr. Gr.' 533. ἐς or εἰς (ἐν, the -ε expressive of motion), signifies to or into. Πρὸς is ad-versus rather than apud: εἰς is apud rather than ad-versus. Ibid. 539.)

6. To the end that the communication of thy faith may become effectual to Christ Jesus.

the communication of thy faith (ἡ κοινωνία τῆς πιστεώς σου) The "communication" here mentioned as a result flowing from faith consisted in giving, making the poor saints partakers of practical beneficence and liberality. This meaning is very frequently predominant in the word (Rom. xvi. 26; 2 Cor. viii. 4, ix. 13; Phil. i. 5; κοινωνίας 1 Tim. vi. 18). It probably enters largely into "the fellowship" in Acts ii. 42. It no doubt has the larger sense of liberal distribution, e.g. "the communication of the Holy Ghost," as the conduit of all grace. It is at least included in the "communication of saints" in the Creed ("spectet et hue ea quam in symbolo profitemur sanctorum communio," H. Grotrius. 'Opp. II. 849). That "communication," however, extends to another kind of "communicativeness"—the performing of all Christian offices of love—first, praying with and for one another; secondly, praising God with and for one another, a duty continued mutually betwixt us and the very glorified saints, the saints in rest and joy daily praying for their younger brethren, the Church, and the saints in the camp on earth praising God for those revelations of His grace and glory to their elder brethren." (See Hammond, "Practical Catechism." Lib. v. sect. iv. pp. 330—332.)

may become effectual (εἰργάς, a later form of εἰνάτοις) active, energetic, used of a productive soil. "Faith becomes effectual when it has works." S. James ii. 26" (Chrysost. i. loc.).

to or toward Christ Jesus] This has been understood by many as an indication by St Paul that charity to Christ's saints is charity to Christ Himself. "'Ye have done it unto Me' (Matt. xxv. 40. So Piscat. "Christ receives all that comes from us as to Himself, when well done to our neighbours." Scholiast. Cod. ap. Matt. Among moderns, the same view is taken by Niemeyer. "In proportion as he more deeply understood what good things flowed over to him from the Christian religion, so much the more ready would he be to pay back his debt in doing good to the disciples of Christ." 'Comm. Hist. Grammat. in Philerm.' p. 9.) It may be better to look upon it generally as that ultimate reference to Christ which is the life of all true Christian work and alone renders "communication" energetic. We may apply here, with better reasons, words uttered by St Jerome from a probably mistaken connection of the closing words of the verse: "By what leper and bounds does the language of the Apostle rise to loftier things?"

in perfect knowledge] We have in the word which denotes perfect knowledge, one of the many touches which link this letter with the other Epistles of the captivity. On the importance assigned to knowledge in these Epistles, and the reason for it, see on Col. i. 10. There is no necessity for the forced view of Heinrichs, that in knowledge is tantamount to "that it may be known—se. by enemies of the Gospel—how much good is in Christians."

of all good that is in us (παντὸς δυναμοῦ τοῦ ἐν ᾗ) "πας in sing. without the art. signifies 'every,' or 'every one,' with reference to all the units in a collection, and without making any distinction between one and the other" (Donaldson, 'Gr. Gr.' 354). A living poet speaks of a knowledge of, and appeal to, "the good which is in us" naturally as a source of strength and encouragement.

Rally the good
In the depths of thyself.

(M. Arnold.)
The Apostle seems to mean that a Christian should not merely be in the country of blessings and privileges into which he has entered, as it were, An idler in the land, Contented only to enjoy The things which others understand.

It is his privilege to go on and thoroughly understand the ultimate principles which are the source of the vast range of good which is brought within our reach, and is in us as Christians (not merely "in us Apostles," as S. Jerome's commentary would imply, though not his translation). S. Jerome renders the words as they are in the A.V., "of every good that is in you in Christ Jesus." But he brings out the idea just mentioned so clearly, that his words are worth quoting. "It may happen that a man may have faith, and perfect it by work; but simply and barely, not having perfect knowledge thereof. There are simple folk now-a-days who bring forth fruits of righteousness, and yet have not knowledge of the things which they themselves do. Whence he says 'that the communication of thy faith may be effectual in perfect knowledge of all good that is in us'" (S. Hieron. 'In Ep. ad Phil. v. 646). His observations which follow are not expressly contained in our interpretation, but are deduced from a connection of the words in Christ Jesus with in you; yet they are beautiful and in themselves deeply true. "Philemon, indeed, has the communication of an effective faith and charity in knowledge of all good. If this exists in Apostles, do not let us think it perfect because it exists in them; but that its essence consists in being Christ's; so that all good which is commended in Philemon and taken from the example of Apostles is good from this that it is drawn from the fountain of Christ" ("Inde bonum sit, quia de fonte Christi ducitur." Ibid.).

7. For we have great joy and consolation The reading of the A.V. (χαίρετα) is to be retained. It is supported by the uncials Μ, Α, D, F. It is also most suitable to the context. The other reading (χαίρετα), which means "holy thankfulness of spirit, gratitude" (Blomf.), would seem to be a mere repetition of v. 4. Further, the adj. much with "holy thankfulness" is not very appropriate. The two words "joy and consolation" are joined in 2 Cor. vii. 4. The reading (χαίρετα) may have arisen from a slip of the pen, or have appeared more pious and more consonant with St. Paul's manner (Reiche, 'Comment. Crit.' in loc.).

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ to enjoin thee that which is convenient, Yet for love's sake I rather be-

because the hearts of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother. It is characteristic that in this short Epistle this word (πληρεῖσθαι), so intensely expressive of sympathetic emotion in its most purely human form, occurs thrice (vv. 7, 12, 20). The unfortunate translation of the A.V. has done much to veil the beauty of the letter from ordinary readers. "Philemon had refreshed the inner heart-affections, and the very depths of the souls of the saints by receiving them. And this is an Apostolic idiom, always to use the word bowls, when he desires to shew the fullest love in the mind." (S. Hieron. in loc.). He has spoken elsewhere of "rejoicing with them that do rejoice" (Rom. xii. 15). He seems here to rest and be soothed with those who find rest under Philemon's roof.

are refreshed Or, relieved. "The compound (πληνίστησαι) expresses temporary relief; the simple (πληνίσθαι) final cessation." (Bp Lightfoot). True love is shewn in works of charity (1 John iii. 17, 18), by thee, brother. The simple emphasis, the pathetic music, of this word at the close is well preserved in the A.V. The same position of the same word in Gal. vi. 18 has unfortunately been overlooked. The rhetorical delicacy of the position of the word Onesimus (v. 10) has also been neglected.

8. Wherefore Because of all these proofs of thy love, although having much boldness in Christ Much reason in the sphere of our common business with Christ for enjoining upon you that which is becoming (ἀρετω). It is worthy of notice that this last word, expressive in itself of mere moral fitness and propriety—a word such as he might have occasion to use in an atmosphere external to the Church—is only found in the Epistles of the captivity (Eph. v. 4; Col. iii. 18; Phil. v. 8). [The term corresponds to the Latin officium, and literally implies that which peculiarly concerns us, inasmuch as our duty is our proper business. J. C. Scaliger's definition of officium is jus actionis ad quemcumque statum pertinent. Cf. Cic. XIV. 'ad Attic. Epist.' vii. See S. Gentilis, Opp. v. 169, 370.] The balance and propriety of St. Paul's language in this place is not always understood. St Paul does not say, "I have no right at all to command you," but "authority I have to command your obedience—not, indeed, of earthly rank, but in the sphere of Christ." This mingled tone of command and entreaty is the exact reflex of the mingled respect and affection, which, in his earliest
PHILEMON.

10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds:

Epistle, he claims for the ministerial office (1 Thess. v. 12, 13). There are two spirits which have prevailed in the Christian ministry at different times and in different circumstances—the spirit of the hierarch and the spirit of the religious demagogue. St Paul's tone here shews that he was too humble for the first, too full of gentile dignity for the second. On the subject of St Paul's assertion of authority, see note to 1 Thess. iv. 2. Cf. also infra, v. 21. The argument (vers. 7, 8, 9) is well and pointedly put by Chrysostom: "You refresh others; refresh me, both for Christ's sake and because it is becoming, consonant with right reason, and because love gives."

8. *Yet for the love's sake I rather beseech* (omit *thy*). Probably not on account of the mutual love of Philemon and St Paul—nor "for love's sake" generally—but on account of that love (βα δι πα την άγάπην) which to a Christian is the type and precedent of all, because it is divine. It is quite in accordance with the Apostle's usage ("The Peace," "The Way," "The Wrath," "The Child-bearing," "The Man," "The Woman," "The Name").

being such an one as Paul, an old man, and as it is a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

being such an one as Paul] The expression taken by itself is one of that class which often introduces a vauting self-assertion, especially when followed by the name of the person speaking. It is as if the name, the symbol of the person's individuality, appeared to him for the moment something of irresistible grandeur, likely to impress others as it impresses himself. We may compare the "Ego Hannibal peto pacem" (quoted by Gentil, in loc.), and the "Ego Franciscus Verulusiani sic cogitavi" of Lord Bacon. But St Paul is saved from any such imputation of arrogance by two considerations. (1) His object is purely unselfish. (2) There is a sort of sad half-playfulness about the attributes which follow words usually succeeded by lofty predicates.

an old man] Bp Lightfoot translates "ambassador," on the score of language (cf. Eph. vi. 20). For a defence of "aged," see Additional Note. Bp Lightfoot's instances show that no objection can be made to our here retaining the almost invariable meaning of the word (παπασμος) from St Paul's actual age at the time of writing the Epistle. He was certainly sixty, perhaps a few years more. Labour, sorrow, the storms of ocean and the fires of thought, possible sickness—the sad and solemn maturity which is the portion upon earth of men who believe intensely had done their work. Roger Bacon wrote "me semen" at 52 or 55, and Sir Walter Scott at 55 calls himself sadly "an old grey man and aged" (Bp Lightfoot). In truth, the standard by which old age is measured is pretty much subjective. At an age about fifteen years earlier than that of St Paul at this time (edat. 45), Chateaubriand writes, "Déjà je n'appartenois plus à ces matins qui se consoalent eux-mêmes—je touchais à ces heures du soir qui ont besoin d'être consolees" ("Mon. d'outre Tombe," III. 402). At different periods of life we adopt a different standard. It has been said that forty is the old age of youth, fifty the youth of old age (V. Hugo).

a prisoner of Jesus Christ] This is exactly as in Eph. iii. 1; 2 Tim. i. 8—one whom Christ, or, as we might say in our less intense language, the cause of Christ has brought into bonds and keeps there (διαχώρου X. '1). On the gen. of remote internal relation, frequent with St John and St Paul, see Winer, 'Gramm. of N. T.' Part III. § xxx. pp. 101, 102). The rhetorical force of St Paul's address is admirably given by Chrysostom. But nothing can exceed the paraphrase of Erasmus: "What can Philemon dey to him? He is (1) Paul ('quum Paulum dico non paulum rerum tibi significo'); (2) an old man. Something is ever conceded to age. But there is a new plea now. He is (3) bound, a prisoner. Misfortune adds to the power and pathos of entreaties. But again, he is (4) a prisoner of Jesus Christ. They who profess His doctrine should favour His prisoner. It is impossible to refuse anything to one who unites so many plea." (Who can suppose that Philemon uttered no cry or shed no tears, when he came to this part of the letter?" S. Gentilis.)

10. I beseech thee for my son, whom I begat in my bonds—Onesimus] It is absolutely necessary here to change the order of the words in A.V. in order to preserve anything of the force and point of the Apostle's words. St Paul, with a subtle and exquisite tact, reserves to the last moment a name which abruptly introduced might awaken painful recollections. Not without an affecting introduction will he pronounce the name of the bearer and the subject of this Epistle—Onesimus "(et lait et argumentum," Gentil. 'in Phil.'). So the Vulg. happily, "obseco te de meo filio quem genui in vinculis, Onesimor." For this simple touch of nature compare the way in which the name of Isaac is reserved in the Hebrew and LXX. "Thy
11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him, that is, mine own bowels:

Old Testament (1 Chr. iv. 9); and the beautiful lines in which Sir Tristram anticipates a sorrowful and premature death from the name given to him by his dying mother.

"Tristram art thou called for my death's sake" (M. Arnold, 'Tristram and Isolde'). The further allusion to the word Christ as then pronounced (Ἄχριστος, Ἐχριστός) as if "formerly about Christ," now right Christian), appears to be extremely probable (see Introd.). It is worthy of note that the word was a common name of slaves, and indeed, seems to have been applied to a maid, just like bonne in French. (The one servant in a poor family, consisting of grandmother, husband, wife, and child, is spoken of χήρες, κόρη, Athen. II. p. 55, quoted by M. Wallon, II. 243.) Note St Paul's intense conviction of the remedial and restorative power of the Gospel. In the beginning of the Epistle he speaks of fully developed Christian knowledge as a knowledge not only of a world of glory, but of a world of good in us (vv. 6). In the strength of that conviction he is assured that Onesimus will make good his name; that the unchristian will become Christian, the useless useful. The unprofitableness may refer to theft (v. 18)—like the Latin inutilis, to which Cicero joins an explanatory pernicioseus. 'Invent.' I. 44; cf. the ἄχριστος δουλός, Matt. xxv. 30—certainly not to the idea of some moderns, that Onesimus had been sent to Rome by Philemon upon business, and kept too long by St Paul; for St Paul would then have asked pardon for himself. (Heinrichs, answered by Niemeyer, 'Comment. Hist. Gr. in Philem.' p. 12.) It was the doctrine of the Roman jurists that a year of servitude corrupted a slave through and through; that he was veterarius, veterarius ("sunt autem veterana qua anno continuo in urbe servierunt." See the quotations in Wallon, 'Histoire de l'Esclavage,' I. lxvii, II. 62, 63, 277). St Paul could believe in the moral restoration even of a slave who was a veterarius. He knew that Onesimus was a Christian, and that every Christian is a better man for being so. "Everything shall live whither the river cometh" (Ezek. xlvii. 9).

11. Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but as it is to thee and to me right profitable] The word Onesimus means profitable. The Apostle tenderly and pathetically touches upon this, giving a syno-onym for Onesimus with two different prefixes (Ἄχριστος, Ἐχριστός). To read such latent half-prophecies in names seems to be an incident of human nature (cf. Ruth i. 20). See also the name of Jabez, the Tristram of the
PHILEMON.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel:

with emotion, and the word receive hovering upon his lips (it occurs below, v. 17) have been suspended—my very heart, τα ἡμᾶς συνάγεναι so meum coruum (Plaut., quoted by Gentilici.). For the sentiment cf. "Quicquid officium, in eum contuleris, id tu exstima bis in me ipsum contulisse." Cic. 'Epist.' xiii. 53. The word which we render heart was peculiarly used of children (see many instances in Pricurus and Wetstein. Artemidorus says expressly, οἱ παιδες συνάγεσα λέγοντα, 1. 46, quoted by Niemeyer, in loc. p. 13).

14. Whom I was wishing... but without thy consent I will, or made up my mind (εθυμομαι... ἐκλεγόμαι). We should note the careful distinction between the inchoativa imperfect and the definite isolated action of the aorist. "It implies that a certain thing was going on at a specified time, but excludes the notion that the end of the action was attained" (Donaldson, 'Gk. Gr.' 407). Hence in many cases merges in the idea of frequency in that of incompleteness. (This is not exactly the Hebraizing latent optative of the imp. ρωπ' ημας, Rom. ix. 3. Niemeyer, p. 13.) "What kept floating before my mind as a wish which I could not justify myself in attempting deliberately to turn into fact was to keep Onesimus here with me. What I actually determined was to do nothing without your free and full consent." The scholastic distinction between velletiy (preserved in the French 'veut-ôt') and volition sufficiently explains the thought.

15. that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds which come of the Gospel. 'In thy stead." A delicate assumption of Philemon's tender affection, as well as of the overwhelming obligation under which he lay to St Paul. That obligation extended even to personal ministration, such as might lighten some of the inconveniences of captivity.

in the bonds which come of the Gospel (ἐν τοῖς δυναμοῖς τοῦ εὐαγγελίου). The genus of remote internal relation, 'ob annuntiato nem Christi.' The bonds were not fastened upon him by crime, or ambition, or self-will. Their cause was the Gospel. Commentators have naturally referred to the glowing passages in which Ignatius appeals to his chains. One of these well illustrates the Apostle's meaning here. "My chains exhort you, which I bear about for the sake of Jesus Christ," 'Ep. ad Trallian.' xi. "He is my witness, in whom I am bound." 'Ep. ad Philad.' vii.

14. But without thy will, or assent (χορὶς τῆς σου γνώμης, τε invito) The A.V. translates the Greek word here by mind, as it does also in "these have one mind" (Rev. xvii. 13).

I will, or made up my mind to do nothing (οὐδὲν ἐκλέγομαι). The objective neg. marks the transition from the inner sphere of undecided inclinations to the definite act of determination which conducts to the sphere of fact. This final resolution was, no doubt, the result of several motives. (1) To harbour and retain a slave, who applied to him to become a presbyter, beyond a limited period, would have been distinctly to violate the Roman law. (2) The Apostle might have seemed to inflict a pecuniary loss upon Philemon by depriving him of a "chatel personal," and morally constraining him to put up with the loss by imposing a severe strain upon the bonds of friendship. (3) Onesimus, in the depth and reality of his repentance, saw the duty of returning. What truer piece of restitution was ever made? (4) St Paul was peculiarly "sensitive" as to the scandal which the Church might occasion, if slaves received encouragement to become fugitives (Col. iii. 22, in the Epistle which went off at the same time with this, shews that St Paul thus felt. This feeling did not lessen as time went on, 2 Tim. 1. See the interesting note of Sc. Gentilici, in loc.) that this benefit of thine This good action of thine. should not be as it were of necessity). "It must not wear even the appearance of constraint." (This is the force of ὡς in ὡς καρα ἀκατέναγη. Colossians and Philemon," Bp Lightfoot, p. 342. Commentators aptly quote the words of Pliny—"Vero ne videas non rogare sed cogere."—in the Epistle so often quoted as a parallel to this, Plin. 'Ep.' ix. 21.) "God loveth a cheerful giver." but willingly (καρα ἐκουσώνων) the translation in the LXX. of ἐλεημονήν, "in free will," spontaneity (Fuerst, 'Concord.' 661, who connects it with the Arabic nad-daba), in the middle sense of impelling oneself by one's own will, Num. xv. 3, and, with very slight change of the same word (ἐκουσώνως), Ps. liii. 6 (iv. 6, A.V.). St Jerome from this passage deduces as a conclusion that St Paul held the principle that "nothing in moral action is good which is not voluntary." He applies it to the solution of the question which has been so often asked, "why God did not make men absolutely good?" "God might have made man good, without man's will. But, had He done so, the good would not have been volun-
15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever;

tary, but necessary. But what is necessarily good is not good in the highest sense, and is even relatively and in another point of view evil. Therefore, in leaving us to our own free will, He made us more truly after His image and likeness" (S. Hieron. 'Comment. in Ep. ad Phil.' vii. 649, ed. Migne). It is surely a fair inference from St Paul's lofty view of the necessity of voluntariness to right moral action that the fatalistic conclusions drawn from some passages in his Epistles must be false.

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more

and therefore their sins, frequently turn out for good by God's Providence." (Piscat. 'Analys. Log. Epp. Pauli,' p. 165.) (2) But a second reason for the Apostle's reserve may be found. If he had not so qualified his statement, slaves might have appealed with too much readiness to the example of Onesimus ('Ut si non possuisset forisitan, omnibus servis fugiendum esset, ut apostolici fereint.' S. Hieron. 'Comment. in Phil.' vii. 650). It may be added that nearly throughout this Epistle we enjoy the advantage of finding Jerome and Chrysostom at their best.

for this cause (διὰ τοῦτο) here evidently referring to the following that (ίνα) a few words later, "to this end, that."

be was parted from thee) This word (with avrogd, owsth, v. 18) forms a special characteristic of that rhetoric of the heart of which St Paul was such a master. The slave's flight is put as gently as human language can put it. "It is not, for this cause he fled; but, 'for this cause he was parted; since he wishes to soothe Philemon's anger" (S. Chrysostom. in loc.). Such is the prompting of Christian charity, which will never blacken or exaggerate the faults and sins of any penitent. With this lofty idea of the Providence of God, which made all things work together for the good of Onesimus, contrast the frigid cynicism which could not believe that God cared for such contemptible creatures ("qua vero curtum divina servit." Macrobr. 'Satir.' i. 1)."

for an hour (πρὸς ὥραν) Shakespeare's "little hour." It is used for a very brief space of time in the "one hour" of Matt. xxvi. 40; Rev. xviii. 10, 17, 19: in the same way as here in 2 Cor. vii. 8; Gal. ii. 5; John v. 35 (see Additional Note).

that thou mightest have him fully (less probably, "have him back in return," i.e. for the temporary separation) for ever (ίνα αἰῶνα αἰῶνι αἰῶνι) There may probably be in the word rendered for ever an allusion to that which is written in the Hebrew law about the slavery of "the children of the strangers that sojourned among the Israelites." "For ever ye shall impose slavery upon them" (τοῖς τῶν αἰώνων τοῖς τῶν αἰώνων, Lev. xxv. 46, LXX. So with the Hebrew brother, voluntarily adding himself to bondage, καινὸν τοῖς τοῖς αἰώνων, Deut. xvii. 17; Exod. xxi. 6). Onesimus was to be his master's property—his to have and hold, to enjoy as his possession—"for ever," as the old law said of the slave in permanent servitude. But in how much a deeper and truer sense! To be with him, not only for time, but in eternity, in the eternal.
unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

PHILEMON.

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as myself.

gained both in the time during which he is to enjoy the services of the slave, and in his quality. (S. Joann. Chrysost. in loc.) (For the brother's relation, see 1 Cor. v. 11. Cf. 1 Pet. ii. 17. Jesus called it into existence. Every time the word is used in truth, Christ's commandment is recognized and obeyed, Matt. xxiii. 8.)

most of all to me, but how much more to thee] Most of all (μᾶλλον) to me: then, with a bold oxymoron, more (μᾶλλον), "more than most, if that were possible, to thee."

both in the flesh, and in the Lord] "Flesh" is here used to include circumstances of external condition, such as country, race, and the like. Onesimus had some relations of the kind to Philemon. "In the Lord" would include the whole new sphere of divine life in Christ into which he had been introduced. Ignatius (Epist. ad Trall. xii.) seems to blend a reminiscence of this verse and of v. 10 (see Additional Note).

17. If thou count me therefore (as thou certainly dost) a partner] a partaker in common with me of the love of Christ, in the communion of His Church.

receive him as myself (προσλαβώμενος)] This word would seem to have been in the Apostle's mind since v. 12 (if, as is most probable, it does not occur there). Some commentators (after Gentilius) take it as a picturesque word, expressive of the gently outstretched hand with which we raise and receive the suppliant or fallen. "If those who fly to the brazen statues of kings escape their pursuers, how much more those who fly to the cross of Christ!" (We might, however, if it were so, expect the gen. not the accus.) The word rather means "to take as one's helper or partner, to take to oneself." as myself And who so likely to be received with honour by Philemon as Paul? Aquinas quotes, "Let thy soul love a good servant, and deprive him not of his liberty." Ecclus. vii. 21 ('Comment. in N. T.' fol. cccxii. 1532). At this point, the reader might expect a few decisive words to follow, containing a point-blank claim for the manumission of Onesimus. All has led up to such a denouncement of the story, and we are disappointed at being defrauded of the result. St Paul's reasons for not going further have been examined at length in the Introduction to this Epistle. It may be added that slavery is virtually, in the scholastic sense of the word, abolished in such passages of St Paul as 1 Cor. vii. 23; Eph. vi. 9; Col. iv. 9; Tit. vi. 1; Tit. ii. 9. Niemeyer appositely adds: "Isid. Pelusiot. (Epist. i. 142) felt rightly the spirit of Gospel-teaching on the condition of Chris-
PHILEMON.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee oucht, put that on mine account;
19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.
21 Having confidence in thy obed-

tian slaves. For he wrote to one I on, whose slave had taken shelter with him in terror of his master's wrath. Isidore expressed his astonishment that the man called himself I on's slave, adding, 'I can scarcely suppose that the Christian I on has a slave, seeing that he knows the grace which has made all men free.' (Niemeyer, 'Comment. Hist. Gram.' p. 17.)

16. If be hath wronged thee, or oweth thee oucht.] The form only in this sentence is hypothetical. The inf. (ηδονος), really gives up all doubt upon the question. The case is put as one which is absolutely unquestionable. (Winer, 'Gr. Gr.' Part III, § xli. p. 303—308.) No doubt Onesimus robbed his master when he ran away. The consequence of this is debt at present unpaid. He wronged Philemon once for all, and consequently is in debt. "If he has stolen—as he has done—and so is in debt." For the subtle delicacy of St Paul's rhetoric in avoiding the word stolen, see note on v. 15. Flight and theft were instinctively associated in the minds of Romans as the kindred offences of slaves. In the Code of Justinian the "Tit. de Servis Fugitivis" follows that "De Furto." The warrant with the slave was "furem non esse, fugitivum non esse." Cf. the lines

A pedibus didicere manus peccare protervae.
Non miror furem qui fugitivus erat.
It will be observed that St Paul's teaching was not socialistic. Not private property, but the abstraction of it, was theft in his estimation.

put that on mine account (οδηγησασαι—so Tisch. and Lightfoot—or οδηγησως)] The word is rare. It is only used twice in the New Testament; once here, and again in Rom. v. 13 of the imputation of sin. Into the circle of Hebraistic Greek it comes only in 'Psalter, Salom.' 16, 'Reckon not (αιν ἐληλυθεν) with the sinner unto destruction." Considering the rareness of the word, and the peculiar application of it, can the Apostle be pointing to an imitation of the great imputation? "If He took our infirmities and bare our stripes, the Apostle in like manner puts himself for Onesimus, and pledges himself for his debt." (S. Hieron. vii. 61.) Philemon would receive a magnificent recompense—for a fugitive slave, a brother for ever; for the money he lost, an Apostle as his debtor.

19. I Paul have written with mine own hand, I will repay] St Paul may have written the whole of this letter with his own hand, contrary to his usual practice (S. Hieron. ut supra). What a precious relic, in that case, for Philemon and his family! But it may also be (1) that St Paul's autograph begins with the words (v. 19) 'φων Παύλου, and ends with 'φων ἀποτίσιμος, which would form a legal bond (the ἐγερέω, epistolary in 'Philippians, was used in signatures to bonds); or (2) it may extend to the close of v. 20. "Paul snatched the pen, and to give his letter the value of a real bond, added the words v. 19, 20" (Renan, 'L'Antechrist,' p. 97).

thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.) The word owest beside (προορισθείτε) points back to 'he oweth' (v. 18). "If he owes, as he does, I will pay it. Here is my bond signed—not to say that whatever Onesimus owes you, you owe me as much. Yes! and into the bargain you owe me your very true self, your new life, your better and renewed nature."—"These verses are not to be legally dissected. They are written in a spirit which has at once pathos and even elegant wit. Interp. might have dispensed with long discussions, founded upon the civil law, examining whether the words are to be understood of fidejussio, or expressio, or constitution. He uses, as if in sportive mood, serious terms of law, and pleads himself by his signature as if to a bond." (Niemeyer, 'Comm. Hist. Gr.' p. 17.) Full information on the legal questions mentioned in this note will be found in the commentary of Scipio Gentilis.

20. Yea (οα)] Introducing an affectionate appeal, like our Ab! Cf. Phil. iv. 3.

1] The emphatic I here again shows how completely he identifies himself with Onesimus.

may I have profit of thee (σου ὁνειμυς)] He still plays upon the word Onesimus. The verb to 'have profit' was certainly used with a special reference to parents being helped by their children. "My child! you can do something for me. Do it."

refresh my heart in Christ] We have here a proof of the thoughtful care with which St Paul uses words. He had said that "the hearts of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother" (v. 7). He now seems to point back, and say, "What you have done for others, do for me. You have refreshed other hearts, refresh mine."

21. Having confidence in thy obedience]
22. **But withal prepare me also a lodging:** for I trust that through your prayers I shall be granted unto you.

Those who think it necessary here to apologize for the commanding tone which St. Paul unquestionably uses (Niemeyer, in loc., Kopf, 'ad Rom.' i. 1.), have scarcely considered such passages as 1 Thess. iv. 2; Phil. v. 8 (see notes). The Apostles were not winning demagogues; they were official rulers of the Church (see the "laying on of money at the Apostles' feet," Acts iv. 35). The construction (περιποιήσας, with dativ of the thing confided in; viz. "thy obedience"), found in a few places of the LXX. (2 K. xviii. 20; Prov. xiv. 16; Isai. xxviii. 7.), is in classical Greek lofty or polite. An "I write unto thee" Epistolary arist. knowing that even beyond what I say thou wilt do (μιᾷ ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν) What was the something which lay outside of, beyond and over, the wide range of all which St. Paul had claimed—forgiveness of two great offences on the part of Onesimus, delegation of his debt, his exaltation and ennoblement into a brother? "There were overwhelming reasons why St. Paul should not demand the manumission of Onesimus. The slave would thus have been forced by St. Paul's action into a position in which he would have derived an enormous gain from gross wrong-doing. Philemon, besides, would have been a pecuniary loser without a free and hearty consent. Yet there has been a very general feeling that the word liberty fills St. Paul's heart, hangs upon his lips though uttered, and hovers over his pen though unwritten. ("Paul seems tacitly to desire something of the kind from Philemon. The captivity of Paul was the manumission of Onesimus." Scip. Gentil. in loc. "It is probable that the words 'even beyond what I say' may contain an allusion to a grant of liberty to the slave. Perhaps also they may modestly refer to other matters, such as possibly sending Onesimus back to Rome." Niemeyer, 'Comment. Hist. Gr.' p. 20.)

23. **But further, or also (ἀλλὰ δὲ)** This adverb originally means simply "conjunction." He conjoins and couples this with his other requests (see Donaldson, 'Gr. Gr.' Etymology, p. 50).

be preparing me a lodging (ἐρχόμενοι μου ἐκείνως.) The word (ἐκείνως) in classical Greek always signifies "hospitality," or "the relation of guest-friend," or "the position of a foreigner." By a transference to be found in other languages (e.g. hospitium in Latin), it came to be applied to quarters, either in an inn or a private house. In the New Testament it occurs only here and in Acts xxviii., where its sense is determined by the "hired house" of vs. 30. Several points worthy of notice here occur. (1) If St. Paul's direction here arose from a real anxiety upon the subject of the "lodging" itself, we shall not be likely to suppose that he required much comfort or preparation for an ample retinue. The lodgings, as Jerome happily says, "were for the Apostle rather than for Paul." "He anticipated a large concourse of hearers. This would involve a situation convenient of access; large enough to hold a number of people; in a locality of good report, and undisputed by a troublesome neighbourhood." Jerome further refers to Acts xxviii. 23—30 as a case in point, illustrating St Paul's habit in such matters. "I can hardly think that it was a small house where crowds of Jews came to him constantly" (S. Hieron. vii. 632). (2) St Paul had evidently changed his plans since writing Rom. xv. 24—28. With the verse now we compare Phil. ii. 24. (3) Rhetorically, this request would not tell doubly (a) "Prepare me a lodging, or arrange for me at an inn." No, surely he will be the honoured and beloved guest of Philemon and Apphia. Will not Onesimus be there? And in what position? "It is equivalent to beseeching them not to delay as regarded Onesimus; but, knowing that the Apostle would return, to get rid of every ranking recollection of injury. For great would be the love and authority of Paul present with them, of Paul after the mention of his name and character. Joann Chrysost. 'Epist. ad Philem.' Homil. iii.) (b) St Paul wrote to a true and devoted friend. This simple direction would excite hope and joy, the passions which beyond all others make the human heart unable to refuse anything to those whom it loves (see Bauer, 'Rhetor. Paul.' i. 240).

I hope Hope, in old English, often exclusively means supposition, expectation ("I hope he will be d[id]." Chaucer). The Greek verb (ἐλπίσω) includes both hope (in our present sense) and expectation. In classical Greek it is expectation more than hope. In the New Testament, as here, it is hope rather than expectation.

through your prayers I shall be granted unto you St Paul believed that prayer was imperative as well as emotional—that it had an objective as well as subjective effect. He looked upon their prayers as an instrument by which his deliverance might take place ('Μὴ τῶν προσεύχων ὑμῶν). "Many a brother is saved by a brother's prayer. But an Apostle is granted to the Church's prayers, for the good
23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellowprisoner in Christ Jesus;
24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellowlabourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a servant.

of others (so St Peter, Acts xii. 5—13). And this gift is not so much for the Apostle himself as for those to whom he is sent." (S. Hieron. ut supra.) Cf. Hebr. xiii. 18, 19.
given as a most gracious gift of God.

23, 24. For the names mentioned here, see Epaphras, Col. iv. 12 (Bp Lightfoot, 'Coloss. and Phil.', p. 19). Aristarchus and Mark of the circumcision (Col. iv. 10). Demas and Luke, Gentiles (Col. iv. 14). All these were well known to Philemon. Jesus Justus (Col. iv. 11) is not mentioned. Mark and Luke again appear together. So in 1 Tim. iv. 10, 11 (cf. Col. iv. 10—14). Of the position of Luke's name, Chrysostom quaintly says, "the last is made first." Jerome adds, "whose book, as often as it is read in the Churches, so often his medicine ceaseth not." The contrast between Mark and Demas is striking. See Bp Wordsworth's admirable note.

25. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.” See the dogmatic bearing of prayer to Christ, Introduction to Epistle to Thessalonians. "Your spirit," not "thy spirit." He includes all mentioned in ver. 1, 2. "Grace in the spirit spiritualizes the whole man" (S. Jerome).

ADDITIONAL NOTES

on vv. 2, 9, 15, 16.

2. The Church which is in thy house. This seems to be a fitting place for some further consideration of a subject just indicated at Col. iv. 16. It is sometimes asserted that the word Church is nowhere applied to a material fabric in the New Testament, and that there is no indication of a special place set apart for worship in the sacred volume. This is probably a somewhat hasty dismissal of Acts ii. 46, i Cor. xi. 22. An eminent writer, whose conclusions it is always easier to question than refute, has stated that there is not any clear instance of a separate building set apart for Christian worship within the limits of the Roman empire before the third century,—"though," as he expressly adds, "there may have been rooms set apart for the purpose of worship" (Bp Lightfoot, 'Colossians and Philemon,' p. 243). But it may be asked what were the sepulchral chapels of the catacombs in principle but "separate buildings set apart for Christian worship"? To the present writer it seems clear that Christian authors of very early date recognize such buildings, in some form. (1) S. Clement of Rome, in the genuine Epistle to the Corinthians, devotes two chapters (xl., xli.) to an argument for order in the Christian Church, founded upon the analogy of the Mosaic law. He reasons thus: "We are morally bound to do all things in order, as many as the Lord bade us duly observe, in the prescribed seasons. He bade both the offerings and the liturgical services be carefully carried out, and that they should not be observed carelessly or at random, but at definite hours and seasons. And both 'sabbate (ποιεῖς) and by whom His will is that they be performed, He defined by His most heavenly counsel. Not everywhere are sacrifices of various kinds offered, but in Jerusalem only—and there they are not offered in every place." (edavit dein, οὐκ ἐν ποιίτι τούτω προσφέρεται, κ.α.) The fulness with which the analogy is carried out would be unintelligible, if the venerable writer did not intend to include fixed and appointed places of Christian worship. (2) Ignatius exhorts the Magnesians to come together to the same place (ἐνί τῷ αὐτῷ. Cf. Acts ii. 1) for prayer, and then adds, "One is Jesus Christ...All, therefore, come together as to [one] temple of God, as to one altar, as to one Jesus Christ." (3) Towards the close of the second century, Clement of Alexandria uses the word ἐκκλησία in a way which denotes that it was even then currently applied to a definite building set apart for worship. (4) The edicts of Dio-

1 'Epp. of St Clement of Rome.' Ed. of Bishop Bryennius; Constantinople, 1873. XL XLI. pp. 69—72. The date of the letter is about the year 95.
3 ὁ θυῖος ὁ τῶν ἀλλὰ τοῦ διόρθωμα τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν καλός.

Clem. Alexand. 'Strom.' 7.

On this question, it will be advisable to consult Bingham, 'Antiq. of Christian Church,' VIII. § xiii.—xvii, Vol. I. pp. 230—234. On the whole, after deducting some doubtful passages, Bingham appears to make good his position—that a very singular paradox has been advanced by some learned men in these last
PHILEMON.

843
celian distinctly proclaim the existence of Christian Churches (A.D. 284—306), by or-
dering their demolition. (Gibbon, Milman's edit. Vol. I. 582.) The first erection of them as public recognized places of assembly is traced back by Tilmann to the peace of Severus (A.D. 211). Ibid. I. 569, note 113. Even supposing the historical evidence for the early use of such buildings to be much weaker than it appears to be, the principle is suffi-
ciently established (1) by natural reverence; (2) by the great prominence given to it in the Old Testament; (3) by the sanction bestowed upon the noble evangeline of faith and love by our Lord Himself (Matt. xxvi. 6—13; Luke vii. 37, 38); (4) by the necessary outward development of the Christian life, as the inner beauty shaped and crystal-
lized itself in outward form.

9. Paul, an old man. Some modern scholars prefer to translate πρεσβύτερος "ambassador," pointing to the expression in another Epistle of the captivity ["for which I am an ambassador (πρεσβύτερος) in bonds," Eph. vi. 20]. Nor is it considered necessary to adopt the conjectural reading πρεσβύτερη, as πρεσβύτερος is occasionally used for ambas-
sador (see the learned collection of instances in 'Coloss. and Philem.,' Bp Lightfoot, pp. 338, 339). But (1) the instances given in our note on Philem. v. 9 abundantly justify St Paul's speaking of himself as "an old man" at this date. To which may be added the feeling both of Greeks and Jews upon the subject. Hippocrates defines a man as be-
coming πρεσβύτερος from the fiftieth to the fifty-eighth year of his life (quoted by Bretsch., 'Lex. Man. N. T.' p. 347). The πρεσβύτερος ("treatise of first principles") gives it as the teaching of Juda, son of Thera, that "thirty years is the epoch of human strength, forty that of intelligence; at fifty one is mainly fit to give counsel, at sixty to become old (παλάκη), at seventy to be hoary and
decrepit (παλαιός)" (quoted in "Arb. Rabb. of Rabbi J. Ansprech, p. 547, Paris). (2) In the LXX πρεσβύτερος is the translation of עָלָלָת, which has no other meaning than that of age (once used metaphorically of a nation be-
ages, that for the three first ages the Christians had no distinct places of worship, grounding upon some mistaken passages of Origen, M. Felix, Arnobius, and Lactantius, who say, 'The Christians had no Temple,' which they take for a denial of their having Churches." On the principle implied in having a Church in a house, it has been well observed—"those who were saluted as having a Church in their house who had bestowed and dedicated some part or place within their dwellings, to be an oratory for the Church to assemble in, for per-
formance of divine duties according to the rules of the Gospel." J. Mede, 'Discourse on religious places of Worship.' Works, p. 314. come decrepit from antiquity, Isa. lviii. 6) or of dignity founded upon and resembling age. (3) The pathetic and emotional use of the word is more suitable to the tone of the verse than the somewhat lofty ambasador ("Paulus senex, Vulg.").

15. The Greek anthology contains some touching inscriptions, in which slaves speak of the link of love between them and their as-
ters as subsisting beyond the grave.

...καὶ ὄντες γάρ 
πρὸς μὲν μάκης σῶς ἔγινα, δεσπότα, καὶ παῖς.


Another, accidentally killed by the falling in of the earth upon him, is made to say with exquisite beauty,

οὐ βαρός ἡμιν

'Ean 'Αθηναίοι ὑμῖν τὸν σῶν ὑπ' ἑλεον.

Ibid. 'Ep.' XXIX. ii. 139.

Some readers may wish to have before their eyes for the purpose of comparison the celebrated letter of the younger Pliny to Sabinia-
num. We purposely adopt an old translation, as the admirable rendering of Bp Lightfoot is so widely known.

"Your freedman, whom you lately men-
tioned to me with displeasure, has been with me, and threw himself at my feet with as much submission as he could have fallen at yours. He earnestly requested me, with many tears, and even with all the eloquence of silent sorrow, to intercede for him; in short, he convinced me, by his whole behaviour, that he sincerely repents of his fault. I am persuaded he is thoroughly reformed, because he seems deeply sensible of his guilt. I know you are angry with him, and I know it is not without reason; but clemency can never exert itself more laudably than when there is the most cause for resentment. You once had an affection for this man, and I hope will have again: in the mean while, let me only prevail with you to pardon him. If he should incur your displeasure hereafter, you will have so much the stronger plea in excuse for your anger, as you shew yourself the more exorable to him now. Concede something to his youth, to his tears, and to your own natural mildness of temper; do not make him uneasy any longer, and I will add, too, do not make yourself so; for a man of your benevolence of heart cannot be angry without feeling great unseasoness. I am afraid, were I to join my entreaties with his, I should seem rather to compel, than to request you to forgive him. Yet I will not scruple even to unite mine with his; and in so much the stronger terms, as I have very sharply and severely reproved him, positively threatening never to interpose again in his behalf. But though it was proper to say this to him, in order to make him more fearful of offending, I do not say so to you. I may, perhaps, again have occasion to entrev
PHILEMON.

you upon his account, and again obtain your forgiveness; supposing, I mean, his fault should be such as may become me to intercede, and you to pardon. Farewell." ('Epist. IX. 41. Melmoth's Pliny, II. 137, 138.)

The comparison will be made more complete by adding the sequel:

"Benec facisti quod liberum aliquando tibi carum, reducentibus epistolis meis, in domum, in animum recepisti. Iuvabit hoc te: me certe iuvabit; primum, quod te talem video, ut in ira regi possis: deinde, quod tantum mihi tribuis, ut vel auctoritati meae pareas, vel precibus indulgeas. Igitur et laudo et gratias ago. Simul in posterum moneo, ut te errores tuorum, et si non fuerit qui deprecetur, placabilem praestes. Vale." ('Epist. IX. 24.)

"I greatly approve of your having, in compliance with my letter, received again into your family and favour, a discarded freedman, whom you once admitted into a share of your affection. This placability will afford you, I doubt not, great satisfaction: it certainly, at least, has me, both as a proof that you are capable of being governed in your passion, and as an instance of your paying so much regard to me, as to yield either to my authority, or to my request. You will accept, therefore, at once, both of my applause and my thanks. At the same time, I must advise you to be disposed for the future to pardon the faults of your people, though there should be none to intercede in their behalf. Farewell." (Melmoth's Pliny, II. 141.)

for an hour (μικρό δια τι). There appears to be considerable probability in the conjecture of Gentilis that St Paul here again refers to the Roman Law. A gentle hint is given that Onesimus is not to be considered a fugitive slave. The jurisconsults define the fugitive as "he who leaves his master with the intention of never returning." (So Caesius and Cassius. Leg. xvii. 'Dig. de Edilit. Edict.') "St Paul in his gentle way hints that Onesimus had no such purpose. For first he says above 'he was parted,' as if it was not his own will and intent. Then here 'for an hour.' He wishes the separation of Onesimus to be regarded as a momentary thing, of one little hour. The word πῶρα above ('v. 11) belongs to the same pathetic art as the 'parting for an hour.' For πῶρα is indefinable, so that whilst Onesimus was for a considerable period involved in transgression, the impression is left that the whole thing is merged in the 'little hour,' the intermediate delay of his flight being concealed" (Opp. v. 415).

16. a brother beloved, both in the flesh, and in the Lord. The note of Scipio Gentilis contains an interesting conjecture. "Some understand this as implying that Onesimus and Philemon were both Gentiles, and therefore rightly termed 'brothers in the flesh,' which Paul, who was a Jew, could scarcely say. They are rather called 'brothers in the flesh,' because they belonged to the same race and to the same city of Colosse. For it was usual with the Phrygians to sell their children, and one might be the slave of the other in the civil relation. Nay, why should we not conjecture that Onesimus was the natural brother of Philemon, probably the child of the same father by a different mother, a slave! For such children followed the condition of the mother, and were slaves, even to their own father. (See 'Pauli respons. in Leg. Nat.' 5 ff., de Praec. verbis; si ut aliegas, 'Cod. ad L. Falcid.') And in Livy we find that some thousands of such children, born from Roman soldiers in Spain, were manumitted.... As to St Paul's saying in the Lord, he must refer to the equality of Christian love. This was greater and closer in Onesimus, because he was probably appointed to an ecclesiastical function, like Paul and like Philemon. For he was now designated as a deacon (v. 13) by the Apostle; but as that could not properly be carried out without his master's consent, St Paul in the whole Epistle aims entirely at the point—though latently and with ingenuous reserve—that Philemon should emancipate Onesimus, and allow him to be free, and become a deacon. Neither of these could be done without the consent of his owner. This very matter was the subject of many canonical constitutions. In the Civil Law it is provided that 'no slave, who has been ordained Priest or Deacon, shall become free, if the ordination has taken place without the consent of the master or against his will' (Ex 'Novell. Justin.' 123). All Constitutions and Rubrics are conceived to the same effect, viz. that slaves are not to be ordained without the consent of their masters. The only exception is in one decree ('Concil. Aurel.' Cap. 1.)" (S. Gentilis. 'Opp.' V. 434, 435; 'In Epist. ad Phil.' cap. xlvii.). The statement about the Phrygians enslaving their children is taken from Philostratus (Lib. viii. 'Vit. Apollon.'). who adds that "these nations, and some other barbarians, do not think slavery disgraceful." Whence Cicero exclaims "O nationes natos servituti" (S. Gentilis. ibid. 390). "In the flesh," however, may simply mean "in the sphere of natural feeling," as opposed to "in the sphere of supernatural communion with Christ" (ἐν σαρκὶ...ἐν Κυρίῳ) ("in carne, i.e. quatemus humano more tibi servus est." Beza, quoted by Gentilis, in loc.)
THE BIBLE COMMENTARY.

The Holy Bible,

ACCORDING TO THE AUTHORIZED VERSION, A.D. 1611.

With an Explanatory and Critical Commentary, and a Revision of the Translation.


THE OLD TESTAMENT.

Edited by F. C. COOK, M.A., Canon of Exeter, Preacher at Lincoln's Inn, and Chaplain in Ordinary to the Queen.

Vol. I.—GENESIS, EXODUS, LEVITICUS, NUMBERS, DEUTERONOMY.
Vol. II. — JOSHUA, JUDGES, RUTH, SAMUEL, 1st KINGS.
Vol. III.—2nd KINGS, CHRONICLES, EZRA, NEHEMIAH, ESTHER.
Vol. IV.—JOB, PROVERBS, ECCLESIASTES, SONG OF SOLOMON.
Vol. V.—ISAIAH, JEREMIAH, LAMENTATIONS.
Vol. VI.—EZRA, NEHEMIAH, DANIEL, THE MINOR PROPHETS.

The want of a plain, Explanatory COMMENTARY ON THE BIBLE more complete and accurate than any accessible to English readers having been long felt by men of education, in 1863 the SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS consulted some of the Bishops as to the best way of supplying the deficiency; and the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK undertook to organize a plan for producing such a work, by the co-operation of scholars selected for their biblical learning.

The great object of this Commentary, of which the Old Testament is now completed, is to put the general reader in full possession of whatever information may be requisite to enable him to understand the Holy Scriptures, to give him, as far as possible, the same advantages as the scholar, and to supply him with satisfactory answers to objections resting upon misrepresentation of the text.

It was decided to reprint, without alteration, the Authorized Version from the edition of 1611, with the marginal references and renderings. Special care has been taken to furnish in all cases amended translations of passages proved to be incorrect in our version. The Comment is chiefly explanatory, presenting, in a concise and readable form, the results of learned investigations, carried on in this and other countries during the last half century. When fuller discussions of difficult passages or important subjects are necessary, they are placed at the end of the chapter or of the volume.

The conduct of the work—as general Editor—has been entrusted to the Rev. F. C. COOK, M.A., Canon of Exeter, Preacher at Lincoln's Inn, and Chaplain in Ordinary to the Queen.

The Archbishop of York, in consultation with the Regius Professors of Divinity of Oxford and Cambridge, advises with the general Editor upon questions arising during the progress of the work.

Now Ready. Vols. I. and II. In the Press. Vols. III. and IV.

THE NEW TESTAMENT.

Vol. I.—MATTHEW, MARK, and LUKE.
Vol. II.—JOHN and ACTS.

Vol. III.—EPISTLES OF ST. PAUL.
Vol. IV.—CATHOLIC EPISTLES AND REVELATIONS.

* * * The above books for sale by all booksellers, or will be sent, post or express charges paid, upon receipt of the price by the publishers,

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS,
743 AND 745 BROADWAY, NEW YORK
The Bible Commentary.

Now Complete, in Six Volumes, Royal 8vo.

Half-calf, $7.50; Sheep, $6.50; Cloth, $5.00 per volume.

THE OLD TESTAMENT:

With an Explanatory and Critical Commentary, and a Revision of the Translation,

By BISHOPS AND CLERGY of the ANGLICAN CHURCH

EDITED BY

F. C. COOK, M.A., CANON OF EXETER,

Preacher at Lincoln's Inn and Chaplain in Ordinary to the Queen.

VOLUME I.

LEVITICUS. Rev. Samuel Clark.
NUMBERS. Canon Espin and Rev. J. F. Thrupp.
DEUTERONOMY. Canon Espin, author of "Critical Essays."

VOLUMES II and III.

JOSHUA. Canon Espin.
KINGS, CHRONICLES, EZRA, NEHEMIAH, ESTHER. Canon Rawlinson, author of "First Great Monarchies of the Ancient East."

VOLUME IV.

JOB. Canon Cook.
PROVERBS. Rev. E. H. Plumtre, author of "Christ and Christendom."
ECCLESIASTES. Rev. W. T. Bullock, Secretary to the S. P. G.
SONG OF SOLOMON. Rev. T. Kingsbury.

VOLUME V.


VOLUME VI.

EZEKIEL. Rev. Dr. G. Currey, author of "Ilulien Lectures, 1851."
MINOR PROPHETS. Rev. E. Huxtable, Professor Gandell, Rev. F. Meyrick, Rev. S. Clark, Rev. W. Drake.

* * * The above books for sale by all booksellers, or will be sent, post or express charges paid, upon receipt of the price by the publishers.

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS,
743 and 745 Broadway, New York.
The Bible Commentary.

In the Press, to be completed in 4 vols., royal 8vo. Half calf, $7.50; sheep, $6.50; cloth, $5.00 per volume.

THE NEW TESTAMENT,

With an Explanatory and Critical Commentary, and a Revision of the Translation,

By BISHOPS and CLERGY of the ANGLICAN CHURCH.

EDITED BY F. C. COOK, M.A.,
Canon of Exeter, Preacher at Lincoln's Inn, and Chaplain in Ordinary to the Queen.


ST. MATTHEW AND ST. MARK.
   H. LONGUEVILLE MANSEL, D.D., late Dean of St. Paul's, and the EDITOR.

Vol. II. John and Acts. (Now Ready.)

ST. JOHN............................. B. F. WESTCOTT, D.D., Canon of Peterborough, and Regius Prof. of Divinity at Cambridge.

Vol. III. Epistles of St. Paul. (Now Ready.)

CORINTHIANS...................... T. S. EVANS, Canon of Durham, and Professor of Greek in Durham University.
GALATIANS.......................... J. WAITE, M.A., Vicar of Norham, Northumberland.
PHILIPPIANS, EPHESIANS,
   COLLOSIIANS, THESALONIANS,
   and PHILEMON.................... J. S. HOWSON, D.D., Dean of Chester.
   J. A. JEREMIE, D.D., late Dean of Lincoln.
   CANON WESTCOTT, D.D.
   WM. ALEXANDER, D.D., Lord Bishop of Derry and Raphoe.
PASTORAL EPISTLES................ JOHN JACKSON, D.D., Lord Bishop of London.
HEBREWS......................... W. KAY, D.D.

Vol. IV. Catholic Epistles and Revelations.

EPISTLE OF ST. JAMES.............. ROBERT SCOTT, D.D., Dean of Rochester.
EPISTLES OF ST. JOHN.............. WM. ALEXANDER, D.D., Lord Bishop of Derry and Raphoe.
   J. B. LIGHTFOOT, D.D., Canon of St. Paul's, and Margaret Professor of Divinity at Cambridge.

* * The above books for sale by all booksellers, or will be sent, post or express charges paid, upon receipt of the price by the publishers,

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS,
743 and 745 Broadway, New York.
Critical Notices


There can be no manner of doubt of its great value, or of its eminent success. We have long felt the want of just such a comprehensive and complete Commentary on the Holy Scriptures for our Students of Divinity, our Clergy, and for a large class of general readers. The Editor, the Rev. Canon Cook, has for many years been one of my most highly valued friends. He is an able man; and most of the distinguished contributors are well known to me personally or by reputation.

Horatio Potter.

From Rev. Prof. W. G. T. Shedd, D.D.

I have examined the first volume of The Bible Commentary, and find it a superior work. While it would be premature to pronounce a judgment respecting the manner in which the exposition of passages relating to disputed doctrinal points will be made, there can be no doubt that the Commentary, as a whole, will be firmly evangelical, and that the whole influence of the work will be to strengthen the reader's confidence in Divine Revelation, and put him in a way to popularize it either in the Sabbath-school or the pulpit.

W. G. T. Shedd.

From Rev. Prof. Arthur Cleveland Cox, Bishop of Western New York.

"The Speaker's Commentary" is a feature of the age in which we live. It cannot fail to mark an era in the Scientific Exposition of Scripture for popular ends.

A. Cleveland Cox.

From Rev. Prof. F. D. Huntington, Bishop of Central Avenue Presbyterian Church.

The chief merits of this first volume seem to me to be: 1. A reverential, believing spirit; 2. Thorough learning, not ostentatiously displayed, but always present and indicated in the results of scholarly investigation; 3. Remarkable condensation of matter; 4. Clearness and simplicity of style; 5. A judicious selection of the points of exposition made prominent; 6. Modesty and fair views of the alleged issues between Faith and Modern Science, with a wise handling of objections; 7. A felicitous use of comparative exegesis; 8. A good balance of the critical faculty with spiritual insight.

F. D. Huntington.

From Rev. Howard Crowson, D.D., Pastor of the Fourth Avenue Presbyterian Church.

The Speaker's Commentary fully realizes the expectation of its most hopeful friends. It is pithy and clear, and exhibits the condensed results of the best and latest scholarship. It will do much to put into possession of all, that which hitherto has been the exclusive property of a few erudite investigators. I devoutly thank God for this publication, and expect great things from it for the cause of truth.

Howard Crowson.


The notes themselves are brief, often meagre, and commonly too cursory for the popular need, and seem to be put at a disadvantage by the fuller treatments. But this work will fill a place not wholly occupied by any one that has preceded it, and will add to the scholarly facilities placed within reach of Bible students in our day, for thorough understanding of the word of God.

Each volume of the Speaker's Commentary is complete in itself, and may be had separately (with, $1 per volume; sheep, $0.50; half calf, $0.75. Sent, post-paid, on receipt of price.

The treatment of the great subject of sacrifice, in the introduction to Leviticus, "The Bearings of Egyptian History upon the Pentateuch," and other elaborate articles, will amply repay the reading. And, judging from this volume, we cordially recommend this work, more than a score years ago projected by dignitaries and scholars of the English Church, as well representing the present status of Biblical science.

M. W. Jacobus.

From Rev. Thomas M. Clark, Bishop of Rhode Island.

I have examined "The Bible Commentary," which you are now republishing, with sufficient care to satisfy me that it will probably be the most valuable work of the kind for general use which has ever been produced in the English tongue. The common reader will derive a vast amount of information from its pages, and the most accomplished scholar can read it to advantage.

Thomas M. Clark.

From Rev. Prof. Charles A. Aiken, D.D., LL.D., of Princeton.

As a compendium it will be prized by many who have access to more exhaustive Commentaries, and will furnish helps fresh, solid, and sound to many who have no access to, or leisure for using the more extensive storehouses of Biblical learning.

Charles A. Aiken.

From Rev. Geo. L. Prantlim.

It is evidently the work of thoughtful, devout, and earnest Christian scholars. Its tone and spirit are excellent; and if the whole Commentary is executed in the manner of this first volume, the results will be a most desirable and important addition to our evangelical literature of the Holy Scriptures.

Geo. L. Prantlim.

From the Right Rev. Bishop M. Simpson.

I consider it to be a most valuable contribution to bibli cal literature. It is not designed to be a doctrinal work, or to deduce religious reflections from the text, but simply to explain difficult passages and to meet skeptical objections. This is ably performed in the light of the most recent investigations, and of the most advanced science. Should the other volumes sustain the same high character, the Commentary should be in every well-selected library.

From the Pacific Churchman (San Francisco).

We hope our clergy will all be able to buy it—or what will be better, let their parishioners buy it for them and make them a present of it; they will be simply repaid from the pulpit.

From the Christian Union.

Thank God for this glorious constellation of talent, learning, and piety, combined to elucidate the word of God for the use of those great masses of the people who are not and cannot be scholars.

From the Right Rev. Bishop Scoot.

The notes are brief, comprehensive, and exhaustive, and in the results reached the mind generally rests with us common satisfaction.

From the New York Tribune.

The execution of the work appears to have been successfully accomplished in conformity with the original plan. It exhibits ample learning, remarkable power of illustration, and an earnest desire to support the prevalent oppositions of the Bible amid the sceptical suggestions of modern science.

Each volume of the Speaker's Commentary is complete in itself, and may be had separately (with, $1 per volume; sheep, $0.50; half calf, $0.75. Sent, post-paid, on receipt of price.

Digitized by Google